

This edition of Spenser's poetical works prepared by J. C. Smith and E. de Selincourt contains critical notes by the editors, a glossary, and a biographical and critical essay by E. de Selincourt. To the poems is added the *Correspondence of Spenser and Harvey*, printed from the original editions of 1580.

The wood engraving on the jacket is by Roy Morgan

# The Poetical Works of EDMUND SPENSER

# Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C.4

GLASCOW NEW YORK 10RONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON

HOMBAY CAICUTTA MADRAS KARACHI KUALA LUMPUR

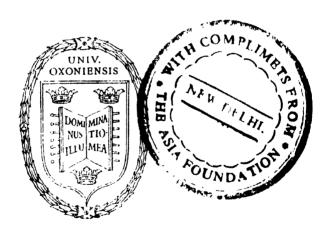
CAPE TOWN IBADAN NAIROBI ACCRA

# The Poetical Works of EDMUND SPENSER

Edited with Critical Notes

By J. C. SMITH and E. DE SELINCOURT

IVith an Introduction by E. DE SELINCOUR'T and a Glossary



London
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
New York Toronto

#### EDMUND SPENSER

Born: London, c. 1552

Died: Westminster, 16 January 1599

This edition of Spenser's Poetical Works was first published in 1912, and reprinted in 1916, 1921, 1924, 1926, 1929, 1932, 1935, 1937, 1940, 1942, 1947, 1948, 1950, 1952, 1957, 1959, 1960, and 1961

# STATE Con PRAL LIBRARY. 56A, B. T. L., Calcutta-50

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

0.8 A.

#### PREFACE.

THE Faerie Queene is here reproduced from the text edited by Mr. J. C. Smith and published by the Clarendon Press in 1909; the text of Spenser's Minor Poems, save for the correction of a few errors, follows my edition of 1910. To the poems has been added the Correspondence of Spenser and Harvey, printed from the original editions of 1580. The Glossary has been compiled by Mr. H. Alexander.

I have prefixed to the volume a biographical and critical essay. My excuse is that of late years the poetry of Spenser has occupied far less attention than is warranted either by its own intrinsic beauty or by its importance as a vital influence upon the development of our literature. Since the publication in 1884 of Grosart's Life of Spenser little has been written in England either to advance our knowledge or to increase our appreciation of his life and work; and I gladly recognize the debt owed by me, as by all students of Spenser, to the valuable researches of American scholars, in particular of Mr. R. A. Neil Dodge, Mr. E. A. Greenlaw, and Mr. P. Long. A full interpretation of his genius, worthy of its theme, is yet to be written.

I wish to record my thanks to Mr. J. C. Smith for reading the proofs of my essay, and to acknowledge my debt to my friend Miss Darbishire of Somerville College for many suggestions made in the course of its composition.

E DE SELINCOURT

Grasmere, Sept. 1912.

## CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION DIOCDADUICAL AND CRITICAL			1	PAG <b>e</b> Vii
INTRODUCTION, BIOGRAPHICAL AND CRITICAL .		•	•	VII
THE FAERIE QUEENE			•	I
DEDICATION TO QUEEN ELIZABETH			•	2
BOOK I. THE LEGENDE OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CRO	SSE,	OR	OF	
HOLINESSE		•	٠	_3
BOOK II. THE LEGEND OF SIR GVYON, OR OF TEMPERAVN		•	•	69
BOOK III. THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITI		•	•	140
APPENDIX. STANZAS OMITTED IN THE SECOND EDITION (15	96)	•	•	210
THE SECOND PART OF THE FAERIE QUEENE				211
BOOK IV. THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TELAMOND, OR OF	FRIE	NDS	HIP	213
BOOK V. THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL, OR OF IVSTICE				276
BOOK VI. THE LEGEND OF S. CALIDORE, OR OF COVRTESI	E			336
BOOK VII. TWO CANTOS OF MVTABILITIE				394
A LETTER OF THE AUTHORS TO SIR WALTER RALEIGH				407
COMMENSATORY VERSES:				
A Vision vpon this conceipt of the Faery Queene .				409
Another of the same	•	•	•	409
To the learned Shepheard	•	•	•	409
Fayre Thamis streame, that from Ludds stately towne		•	•	409
		•	•	409
When stout Achilles heard of Helens rape	•	•	•	410
To looks man a moule, of new denies		•		410
	•	•	•	4.0
DEDICATORY SONNETS:				
To the right honourable Sir Christopher Hatton	•	•	•	410
To the right honourable the Lo. Burleigh			•	410
To the right Honourable the Earle of Oxenford .	•	•	•	410
	•	٠	٠	411
To the right honourable the Earle of Cumberland.	•	•	•	411
To the most honourable and excellent Lo. the Earle of Ess.		•	•	411
To the right Honourable the Earle of Ormond and Ossory		•	•	411
To the right honourable the Lo. Ch. Howard To the right honourable the Lord of Hunsdon	•	•	•	411
To the most renowmed and valiant Lord, the Lord Grey of	: 137:14		•	412
To the right honourable the Lord of Buckhurst .	. ٧٧ 110	on	•	412
To the right honodiable the Pold of DACKDALSE .	•		•	412

m .1 *1.1 11 0' 12 13				_			P	AGE
To the right honourable Sir Fr. W								412
To the right noble Lord and mos				ine, S	ir ion	n Noi	ris	412
To the right noble and valorous kr					rh	•	•	413
To the right honourable and mo						ntesse	of.	4.3
Penbroke				.,			٠.	413
To the most vertuous, and beautiful	ull La	dy, th	e Lac	ly Car	ew			413
To all the gratious and beautifull	Ladies	in th	e Cou	ırt				413
_								
THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER								415
To his Booke								416
TO MAYSTER GABRIELL HARVEY								416
THE GENERALL ARGVMENT OF THE	WHO	LE BO	OKE					419
THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER .								421
								•
COMPLAINTS. CONTAINING SYNDRIE SM	iall P	OEME	s of 1	HE W	ORLDS	VANI	TIE	469
THE RVINES OF TIME								471
THE TEARES OF THE MVSES .								479
Virgils Gnat								486
PROSOPOPOIA: OR MOTHER HUBBE	RDS T	<b>LALE</b>						494
RVINES OF ROME: BY BELLAY								509
MVIOPOTMOS: OR THE FATE OF TH	E Bv	TTERF	LIE					515
VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE								521
THE VISIONS OF BELLAY								523
THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH .						٠.		525
DAPHNAIDA. AN ELEGIE VPON THE I					and V	ERTV	ovs	
Dovglas Howard	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	527
COLIN CLOVTS COME HOME AGAI	NE	•	•	•	•	•	•	535
LOWD OR STATE AND TO THE PARTY OF THE PARTY		r	<b>&gt;_</b>	<b></b>		N.o.		
ASTROPHELL. A PASTORALL ELEGIE AND VALOROVS KNIGHT, SIR PI						ST NO.	BLE	546
						•	•	549
THE MOVENING MUSE OF THESTYL		·			·		•	550
A PASTORALL AEGLOGVE VPON TH						SIDN	EY.	33-
				•	•			554
An ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PASSION,	FOR 1	HIS A	STROP	HILL				556
AN EPITAPH VPON THE RIGHT HONO		LE SI	к Рип	LIP SI	DNEY,	Knic	нт,	
LORD GOVERNOR OF FLYSHING			•			•	٠	558
Another of the Same		•	•	•	•	•	٠	559
AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION		•	•	•	•	•	٠	561
Amoretti. Sonnets I—LXXXIX	٠.	•	•	•	•	•	٠	562
EDITUAL AMION			_	_				570

									ŀ	PAGE
FOWRE HYMNES .		•								585
An Hymne in Honovr	OF	Love								586
An Hymne in Honovr	OF	Beautie	•							59 <b>0</b>
An Hymne of Heavenl	Y	Love				•				593
AN HYMNE OF HEAVENL	Υ .	Beavtie	•			•	•	•		596
PROTHALAMION; OR A DOUBLE MARRIAGE OF THE										
Somerset	•		•	•		•	•	•		600
APPENDIX OF EPIGRAMS	5 A	ND SON	NETS	;						605
SPENSER-HARVEY CORR	ES	PONDEN	CE.							
THREE PROPER, AND WIT two Vniversitie men our English refourm	: t	ouching t	he E	arthqu	uake		rill la	st, an		609
Two other very committee both touching the fo	END	ABLE LE	TTERS	, of t	he sa	me m	ens v	riting		009
Particulars .	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	633
CRITICAL APPENDIX					•	•	•			644
GLOSSARY	•		•	•	•	•				66 <b>1</b>
INDEX OF FIRST LINES					_					721

### INTRODUCTION.

Or Spenser's life something may be learned from official documents and from the writings of his contemporaries, but the most valuable information is to be found in his poetry. The art of an idealist is in a peculiar sense the expression of his mind and character, and of his relation with the world about him; and along with this intimate though often intangible autobiography Spenser has incidentally recorded some details capable of more definite interpretation. From a sonnet written in 1593, the year of his courtship, a year which, he tells us, seems longer

Than al those fourty that my life outwent,

we conjecture that he was born about 1552; from the Prothalamion, where he speaks of

mery London, my most kindly nurse, That to me gave this life's first native sourse; Though from another place I take my name, An house of auncient fame,

we learn that he was born in London, but that his parents were not Londoners. The 'house of auncient fame' with which he was connected was the Spencers of Althorpe, Northampton. Of three of the daughters of Sir John Spencer he hymns the praises in Colin Clouts Come Home Againe, and to each of them he dedicated one of his minor poems, claiming a relationship with them that they seem gladly to have acknowledged.

His mother's name, he tells us, was Elizabeth; his father has been identified with one John Spenser, a gentleman by birth, and a member of the clan of Spensers whose home was in the Pendleton district of north-east Lancashire. But John Spenser had settled in London, and become a free journeyman of the Merchant Taylors Company, living in East Smithfield near the Tower. Here his three children, Edmund the poet, John, and Elizabeth were born. He was evidently in humble circumstances, for when his boys went, as 'pore schollers', to the newly-founded school of the Merchant Taylors, he received bounties for their maintenance from the Nowells,<sup>2</sup> a wealthy Lancashire family; and this generosity was repeated when they proceeded as sizars to Pembroke College, Cambridge. The poet was fortunate in his school. Mulcaster,

<sup>1</sup> ll. 536-71.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Cf. Grosart: Life of Spenser, p. 16, and The Spending of the Money of Robert Nowell.

its first head master, was a keen scholar with a generous conception of the aims of education. 'It is not a mind,' he wrote, 'not a body, that we have to educate, but a man; and we cannot divide him.' The conception derives from the enthusiastic culture of the Renaissance, and something both of the ideal and the practice of the perfect courtier, which Spenser was later to emulate and to portray, must have been instilled into him in early youth. Mulcaster grounded his pupils in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, he trained them daily in music both vocal and instrumental, and was a convinced advocate of the study of the mother tongue, and of the educational value of acting. He presented plays yearly before the court, in which his boys were the actors, and 'by that means taught them good behaviour and audacity'. It is highly probable that Spenser, as among Mulcaster's leading scholars, made his first appearance before the queen as an actor.

At school, too, Spenser acquired some knowledge of French, and made his first experiments as a poet. In 1569 appeared a small volume entitled A Theatre, wherein be represented as wel the miseries and calamities that follow the voluptuous worldlings as also the greate joyes and pleasures which the faithfull do enjoy. An argument both profitable and delectable to all that sincerely love the Word of God. Devised by S. John vander Noodt. It contained translations from Marot's version of one of the canzoni of Petrarch and from some sonnets by Du Bellay, which were afterwards included in Spenser's Complaints of 1591. A few of them were then rewritten, others left as they had stood in 1569, but all are clearly enough from Spenser's hand; and though the lines are often rough and boyish, they anticipate, however faintly, the liquid fluency of his later versi-

fication.

Of his years at Cambridge (1569-76) there is little detail to record. But though, as Dr. Johnson has remarked, 'a scholastic life is very uniform' and would put him 'little in the way of extraordinary casualties', its influence was none the less potent both upon his intellectual development and his subsequent career. During his residence the entry books of Pembroke College refer to him on several occasions as the recipient of allowances, 'aegrotanti', and it is possible that chronic ill-health tended to develop the dreamy and reflective side of his nature. But it does not seem to have affected the avidity of his reading, and it may well be that his bodily infirmities, like Herbert's, 'betrayed him to a lingering book,' and preserved him from the distractions of the world. He is among the most learned of our poets, and if some have been better scholars, none has been more widely read. Of his contemporaries, Ben Jonson, and perhaps Chapman, could rival his knowledge of the classics; but Ben Jonson, as Drummond informs us, 'did neither understand French nor Italiannes', and Spenser was widely conversant with both. His scholarship would be accounted superficial to-day. There are signs enough that, reading his authors for their spirit and matter, he inclined to disregard the

niceties of grammatical structure. Yet in his own time he was accounted a proficient Greek scholar; <sup>1</sup> and in Greek poetry, except the tragedians, so strangely neglected by the Elizabethans, he was well read. But he was attracted rather by the thought than by the art of Greece. He was an enthusiastic student of Plato and Aristotle. By the mystical element in Plato, more particularly as it is revealed in the Symposium, Phaedo, Phaedrus, and parts of the Republic, he was profoundly influenced; and he knew both the originals and the chief Italian commentators upon them, Bembo, Ficino, and Bruno, who gave to Platonic teaching so wide a currency in his time. The poetry of Rome attracted him both by its wealth of material which he could shape to his own purpose, and by virtue of its style. It is significant too that while most Elizabethans turned chiefly to Ovid, Spenser was more vitally affected by the finer art of Virgil.<sup>2</sup>

At Cambridge Spenser formed a deep and lasting friendship with Gabriel Harvey, who was elected Fellow of Pembroke a year after the poet had come into residence, and was among the most notable figures at the University. Biographers of Spenser have wondered at this friendship between men who differed so widely in temperament and ideals, and have inclined to minimize it, or to attribute it to the modesty of the younger and the arrogance of the elder. It is, indeed, easy enough to represent Harvey as a pedantical scholar, vain of his own absurd achievements, an intellectual bully, so censorious that 'he could hardly find it in his heart to commend any man', quarrelsome, forcing his opinions upon men of finer genius than himself, unable to appreciate any art that did not conform to his own mechanical rules, and finally routed and held up to eternal scorn by the nimbler wit of Nashe. But this is mere caricature. Harvey was a scholar of eminence, deeply versed in all that was accounted learning in his day. His lectures on rhetoric drew crowded audiences, and enhanced a reputation that was already assured. His fame was not confined to his own University; Leicester and Sidney held him in high esteem and took a personal interest in his career. He was certainly unpopular. The son of a Suffolk rope-maker, he may well have been resented as an upstart by well-born colleagues who were intellectually his inferiors,3 and his bearing towards them was not conciliatory. He was, moreover, a strong Puritan, and at Cambridge, the hot-bed of those ecclesiastical controversies which harassed the minds of Elizabeth and her advisers, the odium theologicum was peculiarly virulent; so that it is less to be wondered at that Harvey had many enemies than that Still and Preston, who favoured the more moderate party, were ranked among his friends. Harvey's literary theory and practice have

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Bryskett, quoted infra, pp. xxv, xxvi.

Vide Spenser's Belesenheit, von W. Reidner: Leipzig, 1908.

<sup>\*</sup> Vide McKerrow (Nashe, v. 66 f.), who suggests this point, and has influenced my view of Harvey.

often been ridiculed. He followed Ascham in his contempt for 'the rude and beggarly habit of rhyming'; and at a time when contemporary poetry had not yet justified itself, made an attempt to impose classical prosody upon English verse. In this he tried to influence his younger friend, but without any success; for it was not till later, when Spenser came under the spell of Sidney, that he wavered, even momentarily, from following the true bent of his own genius. As to style, Harvey had the taste typical of the Renaissance scholar. Phrases like 'a rarenes of poetic invention', 'lively Hyperbolicall Amplifications', 'rare, queint, and odde in every point, above the reache of a common schollers capacitie'. to be met with in his criticism of Spenser's early and unpublished work, sufficiently indicate that side of Spenser which he was able to appreciate, and also that style which both in his prose and verse he himself attempted to achieve. Like many another minor poet, he thought too well of his own compositions, and the fact that they were written upon a scholastic theory tended only to harden his heart. Naturally, then, he was disappointed with the Shepheardes Calender, and tried to turn his friend from the composition of the Faerie Queene. The obtuseness of his judgement on the 'parcels' of Spenser's masterpiece which were submitted to his criticism is often quoted as his final condemnation. But we do not know what those parcels contained, or whether their contents were in a tentative or in their final form; and in any case this poem, with its interweaving of classic myth and barbaric English legend, and a diction that abounds in archaisms both genuine and spurious, was not inaptly described by an avowed Humanist in his famous phrase, 'Hobgoblin runne away with the garland from Apollo.' And this was his final protest. For when, some ten years later, the first three books were published, he made the amende honorable in a charming poem of welcome to the new venture. In his own day he was accused of vanity in publishing his correspondence with Spenser; yet it is vanity with a difference. Pride in his pupil is perhaps the most pardonable form of vanity in a scholar; and it should not be forgotten, that if these letters reveal an intimacy on which Harvey may well have congratulated himself, they reveal the fact, less pleasing to him, that the triumphs of the pupil had been won in defiance of the literary principles of the master. There can be no doubt that Harvey was both a loyal and a valued friend of Spenser's, that he took the keenest interest in his career, and introduced him to those who were best able to further it; and, if he gave him bad advice on literary matters, in all else he was a sound and judicious counsellor. Spenser at least recognized it. Years later he delighted to refer to Harvey as his 'entire friend', and there is no reason to believe that his opinion ever changed, or that his love was thrown away. This friend-

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> It is worth noting, too, that however wrong in principle, Harvey makes many sound and acute remarks on English quantity; and, in fact, practised the reformed versifying with more success than Spenser.

ship, so long and so loyally maintained with a man whose bitter tongue and cantankerous spirit had alienated many, and who certainly lacked that refinement of temper and sensibility which Spenser always prized, bears witness to his own sweetness of disposition and to the generous tolerance of his mind.

In 1576 Spenser obtained the degree of M.A. and left Cambridge for the society of his Lancashire kinsfolk. Whether this was his first visit to the North, or the renewal of an earlier acquaintance, it is not possible to determine. Some critics have thought that much of his boyhood was spent there, and have read as literal autobiography the account of Colin's youth in the December Ecloque of the Shepheardes Calender. But much of that poem is closely adapted from Clement Marot, and even if the rest recalls the actual pursuits of his own boyhood, there is no local colour which might not have been drawn from the country that lay at the gates of London. His familiarity with the dialect of the North, obvious in the Shepheardes Calender and not unmarked even in the Faerie Queene, could well be attributed in part to his residence there in 1576, in part to the influence of his parents and his schoolmaster, who must have retained, as Northerners do to-day, some traces of the pronunciation and vocabulary of their early home. Of his occupation at this time we only know that he fell in love with a lady whose identity he veils under the name of Rosalind in the Shepheardes Calender. Grosart has triumphantly identified her with one Rose Dinely, but the name, even if correct, is only a label. Other evidence suggests that she was a woman of good family and high spirits, who appreciated the wit and fancy of him whom she styled her 'Segnior Pegaso', but preferred his rival for a husband. Others have questioned the sincerity of Spenser's love, and regarded his allusion to it as mere literary convention. The controversy on the emotional element in the love poetry of the Elizabethan age, conducted for the most part by critics who are not poets, is now become a trifle wearisome. It must readily be admitted on the one hand that much amorous verse was avowedly conventional and ideal, and that Spenser was quite poet enough to feign a passion, even if he never had one. On the other hand, it is obvious that love poetry only became a convention because it corresponded with a universal reality, that few men pass through early manhood without some experience of its depths and of its shallows, and that Spenser, like all poets and lovers of beauty, was by temperament peculiarly susceptible. It was his habit of mind so to rarefy and idealize his personal experience that it gained a permanent shrine in his thought and in his art, and the frame of poetic 'convention' encloses many of the pictures of his own life that are scattered about his verse. Human probability is all on the side of the sincerity of his attachment.

<sup>1</sup> Familiar Letters, infra, p. 625.

This love remained an integral part of his imaginative experience far on into his life, and Rosalind is alluded to with chivalrous devotion in Colin Clouts Come Home Againe. Love is not the only emotion that gains an added beauty when it has become a memory. But whatever the depth of his feeling for Rosalind, and it would be surprising if it were not deep, it did not save him from the dangers and the delights of falling under other spells. The cautious Harvey had soon reason to warn him of the seductions of another 'Rosalindula', perhaps some lady of the court.

For Spenser did not remain long in Lancashire. Possibly in 1577, certainly in 1578, he was in London. Gabriel Harvey had not forgotten him, and had been the means of introducing him to Sidney and Leicester. It seems highly probable that Leicester employed him as a private messenger to friends at a distance, and that in this capacity he paid his first visit, in 1577, to Ireland, where Leicester's father-in-law, Sir Henry Sidney, was then Governor-General.<sup>2</sup> But the greater part of his time seems to have been divided between the houses of Sidney and Leicester at Penshurst and in London.

For one of Spenser's temper and convictions no other introduction could have been so happy. To Leicester he looked up as the recognized political leader of the Puritan faction, the powerful favourite of Elizabeth, who had not yet lost hope that a marriage with the Queen might set the seal upon his fortunes; to Sir Philip Sidney he was soon bound by a closer tie than that of patron and protégé. Though still a young man, Sidney was commonly regarded as the most brilliant figure at that brilliant court. His handsome bearing and his martial courage, his learning and accomplishments, his inflexible uprightness and gravity of demeanour had spread his reputation throughout Europe; and by his countrymen he was proudly recognized as the ideal courtier. Moreover, he was a serious politician. An earnest Protestant, he saw in Roman Catholicism the greatest danger to his country's liberty, and he was persistent in urging upon Elizabeth, against the inaction advocated by Burghley, a bold attack upon the power of Spain. Spenser accepted Sidney's political ideals without reserve, and time only strengthened their hold upon him. In other matters too his sympathy with Sidney was close. The Puritanism of both men was deeply tinged with Platonic mysticism; both set themselves to adapt to modern life the ideals of mediaeval chivalry, and saw in the romance of bygone days a symbol not without inspiration for the battles they had themselves to fight. The soul that was stirred like a trumpet by the rude ballad of Chevy Chase, and later found both delight and intimate expression in Arcadia, had much akin with the poet of the Faerie Oueene. In judgements upon art they were not entirely in accord. Sidney, as the less exuberant poetic genius, was more subservient to

<sup>1</sup> ll. 926-51

year, he had been appointed Clerk of Decrees and Recognizances in the Irish Court of Chancery, and had obtained the lease of the Abbey and Manor of Enniscorthy, in Wexford County. But the Abbey was not long his home, if indeed he ever lived there, for in December 1581, he had relinquished it in favour of one Richard Synot, and in the following month was granted for six years a house in Dublin, valued at five pounds. Later in 1582 the House of Friars, called New Abbey, Co. Kildare. was granted to him to be held on a twenty-one years' lease at a rent of three pounds. In May 1583 'Edmund Spenser of New Abbey' is nominated with some others 'to be a commissioner of musters in the County of Kildare, its crosses and marches, to summon all the subjects of each barony, and there so mustered to assess in warlike apparel, arms, horse, horsemen, and footmen, according to the quantity of their lands and goods, according to the ancient customs and laws of the kingdom and the instructions of the Lords Justices'. In the following two years he performs a similar office. In 1586 he dates a sonnet to Harvey from Dublin: in 1580 he succeeds his friend Ludovick Bryskett as Clerk of the Council of Munster. This Council, with Sir John Norreys as its president, was actively engaged in 'planting' Munster with English colonists, dividing the province into different seigniories to be assigned to different gentlemen undertakers whom the crown was anxious to enrich, and by whose influence the barbarism and destitution of the country should be civilized and turned to prosperity. Prominent among these was Sir Walter Ralegh, who obtained various grants, amounting in all to some forty thousand acres. Spenser himself received the more modest grant of the manor and castle of Kilcolman in the county of Cork. It consisted of 3,028 acres, with six English householders settled under him as cultivators of the land. The date at which he took up his residence at Kilcolman cannot be exactly determined, but his resignation in 1587 of his Clerkship in Dublin, the same year that the lease of his Dublin house ran out, points to that time. The grant was not ratified until 1501, but he was certainly in possession two years before.

Spenser's life during these nine years was not entirely occupied with official business. He had leisure for literary work, and he had now completed the first three books of that great poem on which he had embarked before leaving England. And though he must often have been lonely, and thrown entirely upon his own resources, he was not altogether cut off from the stimulus of congenial society. In Dublin, holding various offices under the crown, was a coterie of Englishmen who loved learning and held Spenser in high repute as scholar and as poet. No biographer of Spenser can leave unquoted the account given by Bryskett, in his Discourse of Civil Life, of a gathering of friends at his cottage near Dublin. Touched with the dignity and courtly grace of the Renaissance

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Vide Reports of Deputy Keeper of Public Records in Ireland, quoted by Buck: New Facts concerning the Life of Spenser (Mod. Lang. Notes, December 1904).

dialogue, it casts a vivid light upon the character of the society into which Spenser was thrown, and upon the part he played in it.

'Yet is there a gentleman in this company,' says Bryskett, 'whom I have had often a purpose to intreate, that as his liesure might serue him, he would youchsafe to spend some time with me to instruct me in some hard points which I cannot of myselfe understand; knowing him to be not onely perfect in the Greek tongue, but also very well read in Philosophie, both morall and naturall. Neuertheless such is my bashfulnes, as I neuer yet durst open my mouth to disclose this my desire unto him, though I have not wanted some hartning thereunto from himselfe. For of loue and kindnes to me, he encouraged me long sithens to follow the reading of the Greeke tongue, and offered me his helpe to make me vnderstand it. But now that so good an oportunitie is offered vnto me, to satisfie in some sort my desire; I thinke I should commit a great fault, not to myselfe alone, but to all this company, if I should not enter my request thus farre, as to move him to spend this time which we have now destined to familiar discourse and conversation, in declaring unto us the great benefits which men obtaine by the knowledge of Morall Philosophie, and in making us to know what the same is, what be the parts thereof, whereby vertues are to be distinguished from vices; and finally that he will be pleased to run ouer in such order as he shall thinke good, such and so many principles and rules thereof, as shall serue not only for my better instruction, but also for the contentment and satisfaction of you al. For I nothing doubt, but that euery one of you will be glad to heare so profitable a discourse and thinke the time very wel spent wherin so excellent a knowledge shal be reuealed unto you, from which every one may be assured to gather some fruit as wel as myselfe. Therefore (said I) turning myselfe to M. Spenser, It is you sir, to whom it pertaineth to shew yourselfe courteous now unto us all and to make vs all beholding unto you for the pleasure and profit which we shall gather from your speeches, if you shall youchsafe to open unto ve the goodly cabinet, in which this excellent treasure of vertues lieth locked up from the vulgar sort. And thereof in the behalfe of all as for myselfe, I do most earnestly intreate you not to say vs nay. Vnto which wordes of mine euery man applauding most with like words of request and the rest with gesture and countenances expressing as much, M. Spenser answered in this manner: Though it may seeme hard for me, to refuse the request made by you all, whom every one alone, I should for many respects be willing to gratifie; yet as the case standeth, I doubt not but with the consent of the most part of you, I shall be excused at this time of this taske which would be laid upon me, for sure I am, that it is not unknowne unto you, that I have alreedy undertaken a work tending to the same effect, which is in beroical verse under the title of a Faerie Queene to represent all the moral vertues, assigning to euery vertue a Knight to be the patron and defender of the same, in whose actions and feates of arms and chiualry the operations of that vertue whereof he is the protector, are to be expressed, and the vices and unruly appetites that oppose themselves against the same, to be beaten down and ouercome. Which work, as I have already well entred into, if God shall please to spare me life that I may finish it according to my mind, your wish (M. Bryskett) will be in some sort accomplished, though perhaps not so effectually as you could desire. And the same may very well serue for my excuse, if at this time I craue to be forborne in this your request, since any discourse, that I might make thus on the sudden in such a subject would be but simple, and little to your satisfactions. For it would require good aduisement and premeditation for any man to undertake the declaration of these points that you have proposed, containing in effect the Ethicke part of Morall Philosophie. Whereof since I have taken in hand to discourse at large in my poeme before spoken, I hope the expectation of that work may serue to free me at this time from speaking in that matter, notwithstanding your motion and all your intreaties. But I will tell you how I thinke by himselfe he may very well excuse my speech, and yet satisfie all you in this matter. I have seene (as he knoweth) a translation made by himselfe out of the Italian tongue of a dialogue comprehending all the Ethick part of Moral Philosophy, written by one of those three he formerly mentioned, and that is by Giraldi vnder the title of a dialogue of civil life. If it please him to bring us forth that translation to be here read among vs, or otherwise to deliuer to us, as his memory may serue him, the contents of the same; he shal (I warrant you) satisfie you all at the ful, and himselfe wil haue no cause but to thinke the time well spent in reviewing his labors, especially in the company of so many his friends, who may thereby reape much profit and the translation happily fare the better by some mending it may receive in the perusing, as all writings else may do by the often examination of the same. Neither let it trouble him that I so turne ouer to him againe the taske he wold haue put me to; for it falleth out fit for him to verifie the principall of all this Apologie, euen now made for himselfe; because thereby it will appeare that he hath not withdrawne himselfe from seruice of the state to liue idle or wholly private to himselfe, but hath spent some time in doing that which may greatly benefit others and hath served not a little to the bettering of his owne mind, and increasing of his knowledge, though he for modesty pretend much ignorance, and pleade want in wealth, much like some rich beggars, who either of custom, or for couetousnes, go to begge of others those things whereof they have no want at home. With this answer of M. Spensers it seemed that all the company were wel satisfied, for after some few speeches whereby they had shewed an extreme longing after his worke of the Faerie Queene, whereof some parcels had been by some of them seene, they all began to presse me to produce my translation mentioned by M. Spenser that it might be perused among them; or else that I should (as near as I could) deliver unto them the contents of the same, supposing that my memory would not much faile me in a thing so studied and advisedly set downe in writing as a translation must be.'

In the early autumn of 1589 Spenser received a visit from Sir Walter Ralegh. Ousted by the Earl of Essex from the favour of Elizabeth, Ralegh thought it prudent to absent himself from court, and he had come to Ireland to look to his Munster estates, and to reflect upon further schemes for the advancement of his country's glory and his own ambitions. Ralegh stands out in the history of the time as perhaps the completest representative of the Elizabethan spirit. Like Sidney he was a brilliant scholar, who took a keen interest in the development of literature, and was anxious to add to his other distinctions that of the patron of artistic genius; like Sidney, though with a difference, he was himself a man of letters; like Sidney he despised the more cautious policy of Burghley, and was eager to strike at the power of Spain by naval enterprise and by the conquest and colonization of lands beyond the seas. But where Sidney had only dreamed, Ralegh had already achieved. Elizabeth had indeed granted to Sidney vast tracts of land in America, but she had

never allowed him to cross the Atlantic; and he had to rest content with the exercise of his martial prowess in the tourney and in single combat, and with the final sacrifice of his life at Zutphen in a barren campaign against Philip in the Netherlands. Ralegh, in the daring spirit of a modern adventurer, had rivalled the exploits of Frobisher and Drake; he had bearded the Spaniards upon the high seas, and pursued the glories of knight errantry in the guise of a buccaneer. He had made persistent and costly efforts to found the colony of Virginia, and had taken an active part in the pursuit of the Armada. And now his presence at Kilcolman stirred all Spenser's youthful ambitions. It was not their first meeting. Both had enjoyed, at the same time, the patronage of Leicester, and Ralegh serving under Grey had been one of the captains appointed to carry out the massacre of the surrendered garrison at Smerwick. now, under Spenser's roof, they were drawn into a closer intimacy. Each confided to the other his literary projects and ambitions, and Ralegh was not slow in recognizing the supreme merits of the Faerie Queene. His own restless energy reawakened in Spenser the desire to push his fortunes at Court. They set sail together, and before the close of the year Spenser was in London. Ralegh, once more in favour, presented him to the queen and he was graciously received. On the first of December the first instalment of the Faerie Queene was entered at the Stationers' Hall. Early in the next year it was published, with the dedication 'to the most mighty and magnificent Empresse Elizabeth, by the grace of God, Queene of England, France, and Ireland; Defender of the Faith, &c., Her most humble servant: Ed. Spenser'.

Not content with the mere dedication of the poem to the queen, Spenser added seventeen sonnets, in which he commended his work to the most powerful men of the day. The list is highly significant; for no poem had ever before been brought by its author to the attention of so august a company. The different language in which he appealed to each for his favour and interest throws much light upon the attitude in which he regarded them. To Sir Christopher Hatton and Lord Burghley he writes as grave counsellors, the pillars of the state, to the Earl of Oxford, the Lord Howard, High Admiral, to Sir John Norreys, as men whose fame he has already eternized, and to Essex as one whose 'heroic parts' will form his future theme. The sonnet to Lord Buckhurst pays fine tribute to 'the lofty numbers and heroick style' of the Induction; he addresses Lord Grey in terms of deep gratitude and personal devotion, and Ralegh as his comrade in song, the 'deare delight' of his sovereign, her soldier and poet. Nor did he forget the memory of him who had first encouraged his art. Sidney was dead; but to 'that most heroick spirit' he pays homage in a sonnet to his sister the Countess of Pembroke. He concludes with addresses to his cousin Lady Carey, and 'to all the gratious and beautiful Ladies in the Court.'

The success of the poem was immediate, and the literary world was not

slow to recognize that the promise of the 'newe poete' was more than fulfilled. For more than a year London seems to have been his headquarters, and here he could enjoy his triumph to the full. It was in the summer of 1590, perhaps, that he paid a prolonged visit to the neighbourhood of Alton in Hampshire, for Aubrey was informed that 'Mr. Spenser lived sometime in these parts, in this delicate sweete aire, where he enjoyed his Muse, and writt good part of his verses'; 1 but in the autumn he would be back again at the centre of culture, on easy terms with all lovers of the arts. Among the ladies of the court he had many friends, and some of them he honoured with the dedication of poems. For the Countess of Pembroke he wrote the Ruines of Time 'to the renowning of the race of the Dudleys and to the eternizing of the chiefe of them late deceased', in particular Sir Philip Sidney. To the Marquesse of Northampton he dedicates Daphnaida, and to each of his cousins, Lady Strange, Lady Compton and Montegle, and Lady Carey, he dedicates a poem, addressing Lady Carey in terms which suggest a special intimacy.

There can be no doubt that Spenser anticipated substantial recognition of his poetic fame in the shape of a post of responsibility under the crown. He had too great a sympathy with the national ideals of Sidney and of Ralegh to desire a mere sinecure; and his bitterest scorn was always directed against those who spent their lives hanging about the court in idleness; but it is clear that he aspired to some office which would give his ambitions a fuller scope than his Munster clerkship. Yet this was not to be. The queen might be personally attracted to Ralegh, as she had been before to Leicester, but she still trusted Burghley, and from Burghley that man had little to hope who appeared at court under the patronage of Leicester, Ralegh, and later of Essex; whilst his unswerving loyalty to his friends, when they were dead or out of favour, did not mark him as the likely recipient of worldly honours. Rather more than a year after his great poem had appeared he received a pension of fifty pounds a year, and with this he had to rest content. His impressions of the darker side of court life, which had disgusted him ten years before, were now intensified. It was probably when he saw that all his hopes were frustrate and that nothing could be gained by a silence intolerable to his impulsive nature, that he collected his volume of Complaints, in which he voices his despair at the neglect of the arts and the degeneracy of the times, and continually attributes them to the sinister influence of Burghley. Among these poems he included his early satire of Mother Hubberds Tale, adding to it that magnificently scornful exposure of the pitiful state of the suitor at court.

Spenser's inability to obtain court preferment has been the cause of many

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> We have no means of determining accurately at what period of Spenser's life this visit was paid; but it is difficult to fit it in to the crowded years before he left for Ireland, and on his second visit to England (1595-6) he wrote little poetry. Hence the summer of 1590 seems the most probable date.

a diatribe against the neglect of literature in general and the stinginess of Elizabeth and Burghley in particular. But apart from the fact that Burghley had good reason to dislike him, this criticism is beside the mark. For why should the man of letters, and above all the poet, expect to receive rewards from a world that has little in common with his peculiar gifts, and to receive them in the form of an appointment which can only divert him from following the true bent of his genius? As a matter of fact. Spenser was treated far better than many poets have been. £50 a year may seem a meagre price for an immortal poem, but the present age can hardly be expected to pay what is, after all, the debt of posterity. Moreover, it must not be forgotten that £50 represents at least £400 of our money to-day. This, as a free gift from the crown to a man who had already been presented with a gentleman's estate in Ireland, and was in no need of court aid, was, at least, a pleasant recognition of his genius. Spenser realized fully enough that the court was no place for a poet to thrive, and that the better side of his nature could only find its realization in retirement with the Muses. Part of the satire in Mother Hubberds Tale is implicitly directed at the poet for going to court; and though to the end of his life there were moments in which he reflected with bitterness upon his unrealized ambitions, it is clear that he became more and more reconciled to his lot. The tone in which Colin Clout explains the reasons for his return 1 is very different from the invective of Mother Hubberds Tale, and the words by which Melibee almost persuades the heroic Sir Calidore to be a shepherd, give voice to what was surely the poet's settled mood.

The time was once, in my first prime of yeares, When pride of youth forth pricked my desire, When I disdain'd among my equall peares To follow sheepe, and shepheards base attire: For further fortune then I would inquire. And leauing home, to roiall court I sought; Where I did sell my selfe for yearely hire, And in the Princes gardin daily wrought: There I beheld such vaineness as I neuer thought. With sight whereof soone cloyd, and long deluded With idle hopes, which them doe entertaine.

With idle hopes, which them doe entertaine,
After I had ten yeares my selfe excluded
From natiue home, and spent my youth in vaine,
I gan my follies to my selfe to plaine,
And this sweet peace, whose lacke did then appeare.
Tho backe returning to my sheepe againe,
I from thenceforth have learn'd to loue more deare
This lowly quiet life, which I inherite here. (vi. ix. 24, 25.)

In London, surrounded by those who enjoyed princely favour and were playing for big stakes, the lesson was harder to learn; but even there the

<sup>1</sup> Colin Clouts Come Home Againe, 660-822.

beauties revealed to his imagination had power to drive away the sullen care which afflicted him

Through discontent of his long fruitlesse staye In princes court, and expectation vayne Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away.

At Kilcolman, by the side of the Mulla, in the country whose beauty he had come to love, he was content. It is as fatal to high poetic achievement to live in the strenuous pursuit of fortune as to be condemned to uninterrupted 'distance from the kind'. In truth, life in Ireland, with occasional visits to England, to quicken and to feed his interest in affairs, and at the same time to make him appreciate more fully the peace that awaited him at home, was a good life for the poet, and he knew it.

To Ireland he returned, probably in the spring of 1591,1 leaving behind

him, ready for publication, his volume of Complaints.

This volume, as we have seen, contains work completed during his stay in London, but it takes us back to his earliest years of authorship. We can safely attribute to his undergraduate days the Visions of du Bellay and the Visions of Petrarch, a mere rehandling of the versions he had written for Van der Noodt. The former are turned with as little change as possible from blank verse to sonnets of Shakespearian form, and a few poems omitted by Van der Noodt are added to the series (6, 8, 13, 14). The latter needed less manipulation, for he had rhymed them in his earlier version; but in four of the first six he had originally kept to the twelve lines of Marot's rendering, and these he expanded to sonnet form; in place of the quatrain which in 1569 closed the series he now added a sonnet of his own rhyme system (abab bebe edde ee). To the same period belongs

<sup>1</sup> The exact time at which Spenser returned to Ireland cannot be determined with certainty. He dated Daphnarda from London 'this first of Jan. 1591', which according to the old style of reckoning, by which the year began with March 25, would mean 1592. On the other hand, Colin Clout is dated from Kilcolman, December 27, 1591. A journey from Ireland could hardly have been made in three days, and we have to choose between regarding either (1) one or other of the dates as a misprint, or (2) the dating of Daphnaida as intentionally according to the new style. or (3) the dating of Colin Clout from Kilcolman as a ruse to fit in with the general conception of the poem. Mr. P. Long has argued ably for the last alternative, but I cannot bring myself to accept it. Though much of the detail and the setting of the poem is undeniably fictitious, its whole spirit suggests to my mind that Spenser had actually returned to Ireland when he wrote it, and was reviewing for Ralegh's pleasure and his own satisfaction his visit to London, its disappointments and consolations. But in any case, Spenser was in London in December 1590, when his Complaints was entered at the Stationers' Hall. The statement, therefore, in my preface to the Minor Poems of Spenser, Clarendon Press, 1910 (p. xvii), that the venture of the publisher was undertaken after Spenser's departure over sea, and that therefore he had no opportunity of correcting the proofs, is justly pointed out by Mr. Long as untenable. It is indeed quite likely that he did not see the proofs, but he cannot have been innocent of the publication of the volume, though its contents suggest reasons why he might wish to appear so; and the Preface contributed by Ponsonby must have been a piece of intentional mystification. SPENSER

the translation of Du Bellay's Antiquitez de Rome, in the Shakespearian form, and soon after, whilst still dominated by the influence of the Pléiade, he must have written his own original sequence, the Visions of the Worlds Vanitie. He was, doubtless, interested in the work of the Pléiade upon its formal side, but he was attracted to their matter also. His natural addiction to allegory was strengthened by his study of their work; and the recurrent themes of the vanity of the world, and the degeneracy of the times, as well as their insistence upon the immortality which verse alone can bestow, had more than a passing effect upon him.

Later than this, and belonging to his early London years, are Virgils Gnat and Mother Hubberds Tale, though Mother Hubberds Tale was specially revised and in part rewritten for publication in 1591. Virgils Gnat was described by Wharton as a 'vague and arbitrary paraphrase' of the pseudo-Virgilian Culex, and certainly it reads more like an original poem than a translation. It is more than half as long again as the Culex, and Spenser, with his love of a fluent and leisurely style, has felt himself free in it to elaborate and expand as his fancy suggested. Already his

soft Muse delights to play, An easie running verse with tender feete,

and in its peculiar use of assonance, alliteration, and the iteration of word and verbal cadence, *Virgils Gnat* is not a little suggestive of the style that Spenser was later to bring to perfection.<sup>1</sup>

Of the political significance of Mother Hubberds Tale I have spoken already. Its poetical importance is even greater. Like the early Visions it is allegorical, but for its inspiration he has turned away from the emblematic devices of the Pléiade to the more comprehensive methods of mediaeval allegory. Caxton's translation of Renard the Fox has supplied him with the plot; its manner shows the further influence of Chaucer. In the Shepheardes Calender he had aimed at the formation of an ideal poetic diction on the model of Chaucer; now he takes the same model upon simpler lines, his object being to write in the familiar style without the richness of allusion, so predominant in his work as a whole, and with only the faintest touch of archaism. 'Simple is the devise and the composition meane,' he tells us. The language is essentially plain, and admirably suited to clear and forcible narrative. And his use of the heroic couplet has all the ease of mastery. But not only is the poem in metre and language Chaucerian, Spenser has here caught successfully something of

will at the same time show the manner in which Spenser expanded his original, and suggest one at least of the sources whence he learnt his musical device of repetition. Cf. p. lxiii, infra.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> A comparison of ll. 377-84 with Culex 237-40

<sup>2</sup> Et Tityos, Latona, tuae memor anxius irae (Implacabilis ira nimis) iacet alitis esca.

lerreor, a tantis insistere, lerreor, umbris, ad Stygias revocatus aquas.

the Chaucerian spirit. The gravely-drawn portrait of the formal priest, who could not read or write:

Of such deep learning little had he neede, Ne yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that breede, Doubts mongst Divines, and difference of texts, From whence arise diversitie of sects, And hateful heresies, of God abhor'd: But this good Sir did follow the plaine word, Ne meddled with their controversies vaine (ll. 386-91).

—as well as the sermon that follows, with its sublime excuse for the neglect of all a pastor's duties by the text All shalbe taught of God, is in the best vein of Chaucerian irony. Like Chaucer too he does not labour his moral, but tells his story vividly and in places with a real humour. But from this he can rise into the manner more essentially characteristic of his own art. His idealism finds voice in the brief appeal against the degradation of poetry and in the picture of the brave courtier, his indignation in the magnificent outburst of invective at the pitiful suitor's state. Mother Hubberds Tale is Spenser's only poem written with a definite satiric purpose; it reveals a combination of qualities which are not commonly attributed to him—a satiric power ranging from the slyest suggestion to savage irony, a shrewd and humorous knowledge of the world, and a certain primitive understanding of both animal and human nature.

The Teares of the Muses and the Ruines of Time are far less interesting. The whole tone of the former, out of touch with the development of poetry which finds such generous if somewhat uncritical recognition only a little later in Colin Clouts Come Home Againe, suggests that it was written at least before Spenser's return from Ireland, and perhaps earlier Passages in it recall the language of Cuddie in October of the Shepheardes Calender, but there is no Piers to give the antidote, and the monotonous harping upon the degeneracy of the times does not ring entirely true. The Ruines of Time also contains early work, and in the 'tragick Pageaunts' with which it closes we have a return to the emblematic art of the early Visions. But from a lament which, for the most part, is conventional both in style and setting, Spenser rises to genuine feeling in his scorn for the 'courting masker' who fawned on the great Leicester in the days of his prosperity, and now that he is dead upbraids his deeds (197-224); and in his tribute to Sidney's memory (281-343) his verse takes on that peculiarly haunting melody in which he is wont to voice an intimate emotion.

Muiopotmos was written in 1590; it seems to have been printed separately in that year and then added to the Complaints. Its tone is very different from the other contents of the book. The lines which Keats borrowed from it as a motto for his first volume:

What more felicitie can fall to creature Than to enjoy delight with libertie? express the spirit in which Spenser wrote it. It is surely a mistake to read into this delicious jeu d'esprit a moral or satirical intention. For once Spenser was not sage nor serious, but simply a poet, spinning for sheer delight in his craft a web of verse as delicate as Arachne's. The fineness of Spenser's art is often shown in his delineation of insects; 1 here his butterfly is exquisitely painted; and so lovely is the garden into which he strays that Milton drew hints from it for his Paradise. Mujopotmos stands with Nymphidia and the fairy scenes of A Midsummer Night's Dream as the most charming of Elizabethan fantasies.

Here and there in Mujopotmos are lines which show that Spenser's love of Chaucer had not waned; and this is still clearer from Daphnaida, which celebrates the mourning of Sir Arthur Gorges for his lost wife. In writing this lament for a lady with whom he had no personal acquaintance he turned to the Boke of the Duchesse, where Chaucer was engaged upon a similar task; and both in his general design and in many details he is indebted to his master.2 But Chaucer's octosyllabics he felt to be unsuited both to the subject and to his own genius. All through the volume of Complaints he had been experimenting in different combinations of the five-foot line: 3 here, in Daphnaida, by transposing the fifth and sixth lines of the verse royal and thus avoiding the couplet ending, he invents a new stanza of singular sweetness and beauty.

Back in Ireland, Spenser settled down once more to the duties of his clerkship, and to the management of his estate. A quarrel with his neighbour, Lord Roche, had troubled him before his departure, and though this was settled, apparently in his favour, at the English courts, another dispute with Roche over three plough-lands, which Spenser was accused of appropriating, converting 'a grete deale of corne growinge thereuppon to his proper use, to the damage of the complainant of two hundred pounds sterling', seems to have gone against him. On the slender evidence before us it is unnecessary to take sides between the disputants. As an Englishman and an uncompromising friend of Grey's Spenser is certain to have been disliked by his more powerful Irish neighbours, and he is not likely to have concealed his own feelings with regard to them. But it is easy to make too much of these petty worries; for it is clear enough that they did not seriously disturb his happiness and peace of mind. The years into which he had now entered show great poetic productiveness. His

<sup>2</sup> Vide Nadal, Daphnaida and the Boke of the Duchesse (Mod. Lang. Assoc. Am.,

vol. xxiii, 1908), where the analogy is elaborately worked out.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. e.g. his description of the gnat as 'a litle noursling of the humid ayre' (Virgils Gnat, 283), and the simile of the shepherd annoyed by gnats (Faerie Queene, 1. i. 23), where his sympathy is all on the side of the insects.

In Mother Hubberds Tale the heroic couplet; in Ruines of Time the rhyme royal; in The Teares of the Muses the six-line decasyllabic (ababcc) (cf. Shepheardes Calender, June and December); in Virgils Gnat and Muiopotmos the ottava rima. in the different sonnet sequences the Shakespearian and the Spenserian sonnet torms

#### SPENSER'S MARRIAGE (1594): THE AMORETTI. XXXV

first work was Colin Clouts Come Home Igaine, 1 in which he recounted his recent experiences.—Ralegh's visit to him at Kilcolman, their journey to London, his reception at court, and his impressions of all he saw there. In no other poem are we more keenly sensible of the subtle charm of Spenser's personality than in this graceful piece of idealized autobiography The form is pastoral: the manner simple and without ornament, but never prosaic, touching the most trivial incident with grace, and capable of rising without violence to express the deepest emotion. It is the triumph of the familiar style in which so few writers have excelled. To write thus is only possible to one who is both artist and gentleman: Pope can do it occasionally, but he is not always a gentleman; so can Cowper, but he is not always an artist. The masters in this kind are Shelley and Spenser. At the same period Spenser collected a small volume of poems commemorative of Sidney, to which he contributed the first-Astrophel, A Pastorall  $E'_{egie}$ —and probably the second; 2 and he was busy upon the second instalment of the Faerie Queene, of which three more books, written, it seems, at the rate of one a year, were practically complete in 1594.

On June 11, 1504, after rather more than twelve months' courtship, he married Elizabeth Boyle, whose home was at Kilcoran, near to the sea strand of Youghal. She was a lady of good family, and kinswoman to Sir Richard Boyle, afterwards created first Earl of Cork.<sup>3</sup> The inner history of this courtship and its consummation is recorded, in idealized

form, in the .Imoretti and Epithalamion.

Modern criticism, which has made so damaging an assault upon the sincerity of Elizabethan sonneteers, could hardly be expected to leave this beautiful sequence unassailed; and the view has lately been advanced that the Amoretti are addressed for the most part to Lady Carey, and hence were written during Spenser's residence in London. But whilst it is possible that some of the sonnets were in the first place inspired by Lady Carey, or indeed by Rosalind or some earlier and still more elusive thame, there is no reason for suspecting the integrity of the series as a whole; and amid much that is borrowed from the stock-in-trade of the French sonneteers, and recounts the emotions incident to every courtship, real

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Corra Clouts Come Home Againe, dated in the dedication to Ralegh, December 1591, was published with Astrophel in 1595, and contains passages which must have been added in that year.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> The Lay of Clorinda, who laments her lost brother, is commonly attributed to the Countess of Pembroke. But if she did write it, she had studied to some purpose the peculiarly Spenserian effects of rhythm and melody. The poem is, moreover, like the introductory elegy, woven into the plan of the volume, and not a separate work, standing by itself, like those that follow. It is more natural, therefore, to believe that Spenser wrote it in her name. For criticism of Astrophel vide supra, p. xiii.

Spenser's wife was first identified by Grosart; vide Life, pp. 198-201.
Mr. P. W. Long, Mod. Lang. Rev. (April 1908), answered by Mr. J. C. Smith

In the same journal (July 1910).

Thus e.g. Sonnet VIII is Shakespearian form, which at least suggests very early composition.

or feigned, there is much also that, to the sympathetic reader at least, seems circumstantial in detail, both in the progress of his suit and in the character of his mistress. Anyhow, it is evident from their publication with the *Epithalamion* that Spenser intended them to be regarded as addressed to his future wife; and if he had been criticized for incorporating in the sequence poems of earlier date, his reply, like Donne's in his *Good Morrow*, would have been

But this; all pleasures fancies be.
If any beauty 1 did see
Which 1 desired and got, 'twas but a dream of thee.

In Astrophel, with more daring poetic licence, he had identified Stella with Sidney's wife, the Lady Francis Walsingham; and it was natural to the Platonist to gather into his present emotion the tribute that he had paid to other women.

The Amoretti are written with an easy and familiar grace, at once clear and melodious, capable of touching into beauty the ordinary changes and chances of the lover's fortune, or of voicing the rarer ecstasy, so typically Spenserian, of the sonnet Most glorious Lord of Lyfe. As a series they are incomplete, for when the lover seems already to have reached the goal venomous tongues cause misunderstanding and separation; and the last four sonnets are in a minor key. The consummation is read in the Epithalamion, the most magnificent lyric ever penned of love triumphant.

The Epithalamion seems to concentrate into itself the essence of Spenser's art. Nowhere else is there a more magic union of the lover's passion with deep religious feeling, of a free and ardent joy with a deep and tender reverence. The style ranges from utter simplicity to highly wrought and richly coloured imagery, and draws alike upon the resources of mediaeval superstition and classic myth. And Spenser's unfailing power over music is here unsurpassed. His intricate stanza form was suggested by the canzoni of Petrarch, but it is all his own. The linked melody of the rhymes, the varying rhythms, the relief of the occasional short line, and the lingering refrain of the final Alexandrine unite in a metrical design sustained throughout with marvellous beauty. This song is Spenser's highest poetic achievement.

In the winter of 1595-6, Spenser was again in London; for the second instalment of the Faerie Queene was entered at the Stationers' Hall on the 20th of January. What hopes of personal advancement he had were now centred in the Earl of Essex, but they can hardly have been sanguine. The influence of Burghley was still unshaken; and Spenser, as walking 'beside the silver-streaming Themmes', he looked up at Essex House, and praised the Spanish victories of the noble peer who was lodged therein, thought less of what he might secure through his new friend than of 'the gifts and goodly grace' that he had gained from Leicester its former owner, the patron of his youth. During

this visit he wrote little poetry. From 'Greenwich, this first of September 1596' he dated the publication of Foure Hymnes, the first two the work of 'the greener times of his youth' and expressive of his Platonic conception of Love and Beauty, the other two added at this time to satisfy the religious scruples of 'the most vertuous ladies, the Ladie Margaret Countesse of Cumberland, and the Ladie Marie Countesse of Warwick'. It is unnecessary to accept literally Spenser's apology for the earlier two Hymnes. The third and fourth books of the Faerie Queene show clearly enough that their Platonism was still a vital part of his creed; and the addition that he now made to them only extends their scope so as to embrace, in a manner perfectly natural to Spenser, the central ideas of Christianity. His deepening experience had taught him that Love and Beauty spiritually conceived are the consummation alike of the Platonic and the Christian taith.

Now also he wrote the Prothalamion, a spousal verse made in honour of the two daughters of the Earl of Worcester. Metrically this poem is, perhaps, as beautiful as his own marriage ode, but it has not a like concentration upon its avowed theme, nor does it voice the same ecstasy of passion. His main energies were probably directed to the composition of his Veue of the Present State of Ireland, for which he had long been collecting materials. In this masterly tract he defends and justifies the character and policy of Grey against his detractors, exposes what seem to him the inevitable results which will follow from the weak and vacillating rule of his successor, Sir John Perrot, and outlines to the home government that method of dealing with the Irish problem which alone could save the English supremacy. Finally, he urges the creation of a Lord Lieutenantship for Ireland; and in suggesting for the office that man 'on whom the eye of England is fixed, and our last hopes now rest', he points clearly to Essex as the only person equal to coping with the situation. Written with a wide knowledge both of the antiquities of the country and its laws and customs, and a full appreciation of its present condition, this pamphlet is as able a plea as could well be penned for a policy of resolute and remorseless suppression. In its lack of sympathy with the Irish, and its failure to understand the real causes of their disaffection, it is typical of the view held by all Elizabethans and by most English statesmen since. It is not surprising that the tract was not sanctioned by the government; it was not entered at the Stationers' Hall till 1598, and then with the proviso 'uppon condicion that hee gett further aucthoritie before yt be prynted'. It did not actually appear till 1633.

Spenser was back again at Kilcolman in the next year (1597). He had resigned his clerkship to the Council of Munster three years before, in favour of Sir Richard Boyle, and was without office until, in September 1598, he was recommended by Elizabeth to be Sheriff

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Grosart suggests with some plausibility that this resignation may have been a family arrangement made at the time of his marriage. (Life, p. 203.)

of Cork, being described in the royal letters as 'a gentleman dwelling in the county of Cork, who is so well known unto you for all his good and commendable parts, being a man endowed with good knowledge in learning, and not unskilful or without experience in the wars'. Spenser had now four children, and his home was becoming increasingly dear to him. In his Veue of the Present State of Ireland he had dwelt upon the natural beauty of the country; in the fragment of a seventh book of the Faerie Queene, all that is left us of his composition at this time, his delight in it finds intimate and characteristic expression. For he lavs his scene at Arlo Hill, and the mountaines and rivers and faire forests' that surround Kilcolman are celebrated in a charming myth as the ancient haunt of Diana and her nymphs. But while he feels its beauty, he is conscious, more than ever before, of the 'heavy hapless curse' that now lies upon the country; and his imagination gains sublimity as it broods over the instability of things on earth. The theme had been recurrent, as a faint undertone, throughout his poetry, in tune to that reflective melancholy which often served to heighten by contrast his keen sense of the joy and the splendour of life; now it became the dominant note of his work. Throughout his life he had escaped from it to the contemplation of an ideal and golden past, now with sure foreboding of the gathering storm that was to overwhelm him he looked forward to

the stedfast rest of all things, firmely stayd Upon the pillours of eternity.

Munster appeared quiet enough, but the Council at Dublin seems fully to have anticipated a combination of Munster with the insurgent North, such as would lead to 'an universal Irish war, intended to shake off all English government'; and what was seen by the Dublin Council is not likely to have escaped the acute observation of Spenser. In his Veuc he had noted how 'all have they eares upright, wayting when the watchwoord shall come that they should all rise generally into rebellion, and cast away the English subjection. To which there nowe litle wanteth? And he had commented thus upon the present lull: 'when they are brought downe to extreme wretchedness, then they creepe a litle perhaps, and suc for grace, till they have gotten some breath and recovered their strength agayne.' In October 1598 these worst fears were realized. Tyrone, who, two months before, had routed the English army near Armagh, sent an expedition into Munster. The whole province rose in insurrection, and in the general destruction Kilcolman was sacked and burnt to the ground. Spenser escaped with his family to Cork, and there was entrusted by Sir John Norreys, the President of the province, with despatches to be delivered to the home government. He left Cork upon the oth of December. and before the 24th he was in London. With the despatch of Sir John Norreys he presented to the queen a statement drawn up by himself, written mostly before his departure, containing 'certayne poynts to be considered of in the recovery of the Realme of Ireland '.¹ The policy that he urges and the tone in which he voices it is the same in this, his last work, as in his longer tract. He must have felt that the present outbreak was only another vindication of the policy of Grey against the weaker efforts at conciliation which had merely courted disaster, and he was doubtless chosen as the messenger to the government at home that he might advise them upon immediate and resolute action. But soon after his arrival at Westminster, Spenser was taken ill. He died on January 16, 1509.

This sudden and dramatic close to the career of a poet who was associated in the public mind with the visionary and the ideal offered an irresistible temptation to the popular imagination, and the legend grew up that Spenser lost a child in the flames at Kilcolman and died in a garret in Westminster, starving and broken-hearted. Ben Jonson, who loved to dilate upon the hard lot that the world meted out to the artist, and warned Drummond from cultivating 'Poetrie, for that she had beggared him, when he might have been a rich lawer, physitian, or marchant', gave his support to the story. But it is probably apocryphal. Spenser's calm and reasoned statement to the queen, penned when the first shock of disaster was upon him, shows little sign of a broken spirit. His friend Camden, indeed, speaks of him as 'inops'. He had never been a rich man; and after his hurried departure from Kilcolman and the burning of his real property he may well have been in temporary want of money. But that the bearer of an important state missive, one who, moreover, had a pension to fall back upon, should have died for lack of bread is inconceivable; and the statement, if it be true, that he 'refused twenty pieces from my lord of Essex, saying that he was sorrie he had no time to spend them', is capable of a very different interpretation. The offer shows clearly that he still had powerful friends able and ready to help him, its refusal that gallant lightness of heart with which an Elizabethan gentleman paid his last debt to nature.

His body was laid in Westminster Abbey, near to Chaucer. His funeral, of which Essex defrayed the cost, was attended by many noblemen and poets, who threw into the open grave elegies written to his memory and the pens with which they wrote them. The queen, in a burst of unwonted generosity, ordered him a monument; but either her own financial prudence, or the peculation of a subordinate, stepped in between her intention and its fulfilment. In 1620 Anne, Countess of Dorset, corrected the oversight. But the true memorial to Spenser is to be read in the work of his successors. He is among the very greatest of our poets, but the significance of his poetry in the history of our literature is even greater than its intrinsic value. He recreated English prosody, giving back to our verse the fluidity and the grace that it had lost since the days of Chaucer, and extending the range of its achievement; he created

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in full, Grosart, Life, pp. 537-55.

English poetic diction, lifting it from anarchy and stiffness, daring greatly, but triumphing whether in the simple or the ornate, widening its scope, but at the same time never failing to give it ease and flexibility, so that language became to him a willing servant, and could voice the subtlest shades of mood or fancy. By means of this rich and varied style, fully expressive of his high seriousness, his spirituality, his inexhaustible sense of beauty, he has exercised a spell that has been potent for three centuries, and none has called so many poets to their vocation.

The greatness of Spenser was fully recognized in his own day, and he was accorded praise from writers widely differing from him in method and ideal. To Shakespeare his 'deep conceit' needed 'no defence'. Even Ben Jonson, who disliked his style, 'would have him read for his matter.' Nashe, the brilliant realist and sworn foe to Gabriel Harvey, could find 'no frailtie' in the fame of 'immortall Spenser but the imputation of this Idiot's friendship'; eulogized him as the 'sum. tot. of whatsoever can be said of sharpe invention and schollership', and called him 'the Virgil of England'.

But the praise that would most have appealed to Spenser came from honest Dekker. 'The abode of the poets in the Insulae Fortunatae,' he tells us,<sup>2</sup> 'are full of pleasant bowers and queint Arboures in all their walkes. In one of which old Chaucer is circled around with all the makers or Poets of his time. Grave Spenser was no sooner entered into this chapell of Apollo but these elders, Fathers of the divine Furie, gave him a Laurer and sung his welcome; Chaucer call'de him his Sonne, and placede him at his right hand. All of them, closing up their lippes in silence and turning all their eares for attention, to heare him sing out the rest of his Faerie Queene's praises.'

The story of Spenser's life is the key to much in that poem which was his crowning achievement. Written for the most part in the wild and solitary country of Ireland, the Facrie Queene is reminiscent of the world from which he was exiled, and expresses his yearning for a fuller life and for an abundance of all the good things that his spirit and senses lacked. But it is also fully charged with his experience during those years. The charm of the country-side and the desolation of mountain and forest, the difficulties and dangers he had to face, the ruffians and the heroest that he encountered, the friends he made, the woman he loved, all find their place in the intricate structure of his poem. Its idealism, heightened by his instinctive desire to escape from a narrow and sordid reality, is thus combined with a realism that bespeaks his sure sense of the imaginative value of all experience that is intensely lived.

If, indeed, the poem in the Passionate Pilgrim, 'If music and sweet poetry agree,'s by Shakespeare. And it seems too good for Barnfield, to whom also it is attributed.
 Dekker: A Knights Conjuring

## THE POETICAL WORKS

OF

## EDMUND SPENSER

# THE FAERIE QUEENE.

Disposed into twelue bookes,

Fashioning

XII. Morall vertues.



LONDON
Printed for VVilliam Ponsonbie.
1596.



TO THE MOST HIGH, MIGHTIE And MAGNIFICENT EMPRESSE RENOVV-MED FOR PIETIE. VER-TVE. AND ALL GRATIOVS GOVERNMENT ELIZABETH BY THE GRACE OF GOD OVEENE OF ENGLAND FRAVNCE AND IRELAND AND OF VIRGI-NIA, DEFENDOVR OF THE FAITH, &c. HER MOST HVMBLE SERVAVNT EDMVND SPENSER DOTH IN ALL HV-MILITIE DEDI-CATE. PRE-SENT AND CONSECRATE THESE HIS LABOVRS TO LIVE VVITH THE ETERNI-TIE OF HER FAME.



# THE FIRST

### BOOKE OF THE

FAERIE OVEENE.

Contayning

## THE LEGENDE OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE,

OR

#### OF HOLINESSE.

As time her taught in lowly Shepheards weeds, Am now enforst a far vnfitter taske,

For trumpets sterne to chaunge mine Oaten reeds.

And sing of Knights and Ladies gentle deeds; Whose prayses having slept in silence long, Me all too meane, the sacred Muse areeds To blazon broad emongst her learned throng: Ficrce warres and faithfull loues shall moralize my song.

Helpe then, O holy Virgin chiefe of nine, Thy weaker Nouice to performe thy will, Lay forth out of thine euerlasting scryne The antique rolles, which there lye hidden still, Of Faerie knights and fairest Tanaquell, Whom that most noble Briton Prince so long Sought through the world, and suffered so much ill.

That I must rue his vndeserued wrong: O helpe thou my weake wit, and sharpen my dull tong.

Lo I the man, whose Muse whilome did maske, And thou most dreaded impe of highest loue, Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell dart At that good knight so cunningly didst roue, That glorious fire it kindled in his hart, Lay now thy deadly Heben bow apart, And with thy mother milde come to mine ayde: Come both, and with you bring triumphant Mart.

In lones and gentle iolhties arrayd, After his murdrous spoiles and bloudy rage

And with them eke, O Goddesse heavenly bright.

Mirrour of grace and Maiestie diuine, Great Lady of the greatest Isle, whose light Like Phabus lampe throughout the world doth

Shed thy faire beames into my feeble eyne, And raise my thoughts too humble and too vile, To thinke of that true glorious type of thine, The argument of mine afflicted stile:

The which to heare, vouchsafe, O dearest dred B. while.

#### Canto I.

#### 

The Patron of true Holinesse, Foule Errour doth defeate: Hypocrisie him to entrappe, Doth to his home entrate.

#### 

,

A Gentle Knight was pricking on the plaine, Y cladd in mightie armes and siluer shielde, Wherein old dints of deepe wounds did remaine.

The cruell markes of many a bloudy fielde; Yet armes till that time did he neuer wield. His angry steede did chide his foming bitt, As much disdayning to the curbe to yield; Full iolly knight he seemd, and faire did sitt, As one for knightly guists and fierce encounters fitt.

2

But on his brest a bloudie Crosse he bore, The deare remembrance of his dying Lord, For whose sweete sake that glorious badge he wore.

And dead as liuing euer him ador'd:
Vpon his shield the like was also scor'd,
For soueraine hope, which in his helpe he b.d:
Right faithfull true he was in deede and word,
But of his cheere did seeme too solemne sad;
Yet nothing did he dread, but euer was ydrad.

Voon a great aduenting he was bond,
That greatest Gloriana to him gaue,
That greatest Glorious Queene of Faccie lond,
To winne him worship, and her grace to haue,
Which of all earthly things he most did craue;
And euer as he rode, his hart did carne

And euer as ne rode, his hart did carne
To proue his paissance in battell braue
Vpon his foe, and his new force to learne;
Vpon his foe, a Dragon horrible and stearne.

A louely Ladie rode him faire beside,
Vpon a lowly Asse more white then snow,
Yet she much whiter, but the same did hide
Vnder a vele, that wimpled was full low,
And ouer all a blacke stole she did throw,
As one that inly mournd: so was she sad,
And heauie sat vpon her palfrey slow:
Seemed in heart some hidden care she had,
And by her in a line a milke white lambe she lad.

So pure an innocent, as that same lambe, She was in life and euery vertuous lore, And by descent from Royall lynage came Of ancient Kings and Queenes, that had of you Their scepters stretcht from East to Westerne shore.

And all the world in their subjection held; Till that infernall feend with foule vprore Forwasted all their land, and them expeld: Whom to auenge, she had this Knight from far compeld.

6

Behind her farre away a Dwarfe did lag,
That laste seemd in being euer last,
Or wearied with bearing of her bag
Of needments at his backe. Thus as they past,
The day with cloudes was suddeme ouercast,
And angry lone an hideous storme of raine
Did poure into his Lemans lap so fast,
That enery wight to shrowd it did constrain,
And this faire couple eke to shroud themselues
were fain.

Enforst to seeke some couert nigh at hand, A shadie groue not far away they spide, That promist ayde the tempest to withstand: Whose loftie trees yelad with sommers pride, Did spred so broad, that heauens light did hide, Not perceable with power of any starre: And all within were pithes and alleies wide, With footing worne, and leading inward farre; Faire harbour that them seemes; so in they entred arre.

.

And foorth they passe, with pleasure forward led,
Ioying to heare the birdes sweete harmony,
Which there as shrouded from the tempest dred,
Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky.
Much can they prayse the trees so straight and
hy.

ny, The sayling Pine, the Cedar proud and tall, The vine-prop Elme, the Poplar neuer dry, The builder Oake, sole king of forrests all, The Aspinegood for staues, the Cypresse funerall.

.9

The Laurell, meed of mightie Conquerours
And Poets sage, the Firre that weepeth still.
The Willow worne of forlorne Paramours,
The Eugh obedient to the benders will,
The Birch for shaftes, the Sallow for the mill,
The Mirrhe sweete bleeching in the bitter wound,
The warlike Beech, the Ash for nothing ill,
The fruitfull Oliue, and the Platane round,
The caruer Holme, the Maple seeldom inward
sound.

ŧο

Led with delight, they thus beguile the wav, Vntill the blustring storme is ouerblowne: When weening to returne, whence they did showne. stray. They cannot finde that path, which first was But wander too and fro in wayes vinknowne, Furthest from end then, when they neerest ftheir owne: That makes them doubt, their wits be not

So many pathes, so many turnings scene, That which of them to take, in diverse doubt

they been.

At last resoluing forward still to fare, Till that some end they finde or in or out. That path they take, that beaten seemd most And like to lead the labyrinth about; [bare, Which when by tract they hunted had throughout,

At length it brought them to a hollow cane, Aimid the thickest woods. The Champion stout Litsoones dismounted from his courser braue. he gaue.

& well aware, quoth then that Ladie milde, Least suddame mischiefe ye too rash prouoke: The danger hid, the place viknowne and wilde, Breedes dreadfull doubts: Oft fire is without smoke.

And perill without show: therefore your stroke Sir knight with-hold, till further triall made. Ah Ladie (said he) shame were to reuoke The forward footing for an hidden shade: Vertue giues her selfe light, through darkenesse for to wade.

Yea but (quoth she) the perill of this place I better wot then you, though now too late To wish you backe returne with foule disgrace, Yet wisedome warnes, whilest foot is in the gate, To stay the steppe, ere forced to retrate. This is the wandring wood, this Errours den, A monster vile, whom God and man does hate: Therefore I read beware Fly fly (quoth then The fearefull Dwarfe:) this is no place for hung

But full of fire and greedy hardiment, The youthfull knight could not for ought be staide, But forth vnto the darksome hole he went, And looked in: his glistring armor made A litle glooming light, much like a shade, By which he saw the vgly monster plaine, Halfe like a serpent horribly displaide, But th'other halfe did womans shape retaine, Most lothsom, filthie, foule, and full of vile disdaine. 15

And as she lay voon the durtie ground, Her huge long taile her den all ouerspred, Yet was in knots and many boughtes vpwound, Pointed with mortall sting. Of her there bred A thousand your ones, white seeking you her poisonous ones, eachone Of sundry shapes, yet all ill fauored: Soone as that vncouth light vpon them shone, Into her mouth they crept, and suddain all were gone.

Their dam vpstart, out of her den effraide, And rushed forth, hurling her hideous taile About her cursed head, whose folds displaid Were stretcht now forth at length without entraile.

She lookt about, and seeing one in mayle Armed to point, sought backe to turne againe; For light she hated as the deadly bale, Ay wont in desert darknesse to remaine,

Where plaine none might her see, nor she see any plaine.

and to the Dwarfe a while his needlesse spere. Which when the valuant Elfe perceiu'd, he lept As Lyon fierce vpon the flying pray, And with his trenchand blade her boldly kept From turning backe, and forced her to stay: Therewith enrag'd she loudly gan to bray, And turning fierce, her speckled taile aduaunst, Threatning her angry sting, him to dismay: Who nought aghast, his mightic hand enhaunst: The stroke down from her head vnto her shoulder glaunst.

Much daunted with that dint, hersence was dazd, Yet kindling rage, her selfe she gathered round, And all attonce her beastly body raizd With doubled forces high aboue the ground: Tho wrapping vp her wrethed sterne around, Lept fierce vpon his shield, and her huge traine All suddenly about his body wound, That hand or foot to stirre he stroue in vaine:

God helpe the man so wrapt in Errours endlesse traine.

His Lady sad to see his sore constraint, Cride out, Now now Sir knight, shew what ye

Add faith vnto your force, and be not faint: Strangle her, else she sure will strangle thee. That when he heard, in great perplexitie, His gall did grate for gricfe and high disdaine, And knitting all his force got one hand free, Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great paine. paine,

That soone to loose her wicked bands did her constraine.

pamphlets and at Eliz hu P.C. Therewith she spewd out of her filthy maw A floud of poyson horrible and blacke.

Full of great lumpes of flesh and gobbets raw, Which stunck so yildly, that it forst him slacke His grasping hold, and from her turne him backe: Her vomit full of bookes and papers was. With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes did

lacke.

And creeping sought way in the weedy gras: Her filthy parbreake all the place defiled has.

As when old father Nilus gins to swell With timely pride about the Acgyptian vale, His fattie waves do fertile slime outwell, And ouerflow each plaine and lowly dale: But when his later spring gins to auale, Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherein there breed

Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly male And partly female of his fruitfull seed: Such vgly monstrous shapes elswhere may no man reed.

The same so sore annoyed has the knight, That welnigh choked with the deadly stinke, His forces faile, ne can no longer fight.

Whose corage when the feend perceiu'd to shrinke. She poured forth out of her hellish sinke

Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents small, Deformed monsters, fowle, and blacke as inke, Which swarming all about his legs did crall, And him encombred sore, but could not hurt

at abastor 1023

As gentle Shepheard in sweete euen-tide. When ruddy Phabus gins to welke in west, High on an hill, his flocke to vewen wide, Markes which do byte their hasty supper best; A cloud of combrous gnattes do him molest, All striuing to infixe their feeble stings, That from their novance he no where can rest. But with his clownish hands their tender wings He brusheth oft, and oft doth mar their murmurings.

Thus ill bestedd, and fearefull more of shame. Then of the certaine perill he stood in, Halfe furious viito his foe he came. Resolv'd in minde all suddenly to win. Or soone to lose, before he once would lin; And strooke at her with more then manly force. That from her body full of filthie sin He raft her hatefull head without remorse; A streame of cole black bloud forth gushed from her corse.

Her scattred brood, soone as their Parent deare They saw so rudely falling to the ground. Groning full deadly, all with troublous feare, Gathred themselves about her body round. Weening their wonted entrance to have found At her wide mouth: but being there withstood They flocked all about her bleeding wound, And sucked up their dying mothers blood, Making her death their life, and eke her hurt

their good. 26

That detestable sight him much amazde, To see th'vnkindly Impes of heaven accurst, Denoure their dam; on whom while so he gazd, Hauing all satisfide their bloudy thurst. Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse burst, And bowels gushing forth: well worthy end Of such as drunke her life, the which them nurst; Now needeth him no lenger labour spend, His foes have slaine themselves, with whom he

should contend.

His Ladie seeing all, that chaunst, from farre Approacht in hast to greet his victorie. And said, Faire knight, borne vider happy starre.

Who see your vanquisht foes before you lye; Well worthy be you of that Armorie, Wherein ye have great glory wonne this day, And proou'd your strength on a strong enimie, Your first aduenture: many such I pray, And henceforth euer wish, that like succeed it may.

Then mounted he yoon his Steede againe, And with the Lady backward sought to wend; That path he kept, which beaten was most plaine,

Ne euer would to any by-way bend, But still did follow one vnto the end,

The which at last out of the wood them brought.

So forward on his way (with God to frend) He passed forth, and new aduenture sought; Long way he trauelled, before he heard of ought.

unchimago

At length they chaunst to meet upon the way An aged Sire, in long blacke weedes velad, His feete all bare, his beard all hoarie gray, And by his belt his booke he hanging had; Sober he seemen, and very sagely sad, And to the ground his eves were lowly bent, Simple in shew, and voyde of malice bad,

And all the way he prayed, as he went. And often knockt his brest, as one that did repent.

le faire the knight saluted, louting low,
Who faire him quited, as that courteous was:
And after asked him, if he did know
Of straunge aduentures, which abroad did pas.
Ah my deare Sonne (quoth he) how should, alas,
Silly old man, that liues in hidden cell,
Bidding his beades all day for his trespas,
Tydings of warre and worldly trouble tell?
With holy father sits not with such things to
mell.

But if of daunger which hereby doth dwell, And homebred cuill ye desire to heare, Of a straunge man I can you tidings tell, That wasteth all this countrey farre and neare. Of such (said he) I chiefly do inquere, And shall you well reward to shew the place, In which that wicked wight his dayes doth

For to all knighthood it is foule disgrace, That such a cursed creature lines so long a space.

Far hence (quoth he) in wastfull wildernesse His dwelling is, by which no liuing wight May euer passe, but thorough great distresse. Now (sayd the Lady) draweth toward night, And well I wote, that of your later fight Ye all forwaried be: for what so strong, But wanting rest will also want of might? The Sunne that measures heauen all day long, At night doth baite his steedes the Ocean wanes emong.

Then with the Sunne take Sir, your timely rest,
And with new day new worke at once begin:
Vitroubled night they say giues counsell best
Right well Sir knight ye haue aduised bin,
(Quoth then that aged man;) the way to win
Is wisely to aduise: now day is spent;
Therefore with me ye may take vp your In
For this same night. The knight was well
content:
So with that godly father to his home they

A little lowly Hermitage it was,
Downe in a dale, hard by a forests side,
Far from resort of people, that did pas
In trauell to and froe: a little wyde
There was an holy Chappell edifyde,
Wherein the Hermite dewly wont to say
His holy things each morne and euentyde:
Thereby a Christall streame did gently play,
Which from a sacred fountaine welled forth
alway.

went.

Arriued there, the little house they fill, Ne looke for entertainement, where none was: Rest is their feast, and all things at their will; The noblest mind the best contentment has. With faire discourse the euening so they pas: For that old man of pleasing wordes had store, And well could file his tongue assmooth as glas; He told of Saintes and Popes, and euermore He strowd an Aue-Mary after and before.

The drouping Night thus creepeth on them fast, And the sad humour loading their eye liddes, As messenger of Morpheus on them cast Sweet slombring deaw, the which to sleepe them biddes.

Vnto their lodgings then his guestes he riddes: Where when all drownd in deadly sleepe he findes,

He to his study goes, and there amiddes
His Magick bookes and artes of sundry kindes,
Hescekes out mighty charmes, to trouble sleepy
mindes.

Then choosing out few wordes most horrible, (Let none them read) thereof did verses frame, With which and other spelles like terrible, He bad awake blacke Plutoes griesly Dame, Andcursed heauen, andspake reprochfull shame Of highest God, the Lord of life and light; A bold bad man, that dar'd to call by name Great Gorgon, Prince of darknesse and dead night, [flight. At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put to

And forth he cald out of deepe darknesse dred Legions of Sprights, the which like little flyes Fluttring about his euer damned hed, A-waite whereto their seruice he applyes, To aide his friends, or fray his enimies: Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo, And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes; The one of them he gaue a message too, The other byhim selfe staide other works to doo.

He making speedy way through spersed ayre, And through the world of waters wide and deepe, To Morpheus house doth hastily repaire. Amid the bowels of the earth full steepe, And low, where dawning day doth neuer peepe, His dwelling is; there Tethys his wet bed Doth euer wash, and Cynthia still doth steepe In siluer deaw his euer-drouping hed, Whiles sad Night ouer him her mantle black doth spred.

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast,
The one faire fram'd of burnisht Yuory,
The other all with siluer ouercast;
And wakefull dogges before them farre do lye,
Watching to banish Care their enimy,
Who oft is wont to trouble gentle Sleepe.
By them the Sprite doth passe in quietly,
And vnto Morpheus comes, whom drowned
deepe [keepe.

In drowsie fit he findes: of nothing he takes

And more, to lulle him in his slumber soft,
A trickling streame from high rocke tumbling
downe

And euer-drizling raine vpon the loft, [sowne Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like the Of swarming Bees, did cast him in a swowne: No other noyse, nor peoples troublous cryes, As still are wont t'annoy the walled towne, Might there be heard: but carelesse Quiet lyes, Wrapt in eternall silence farre from enemyes.

I'he messenger approching to him spake,
But his wast wordes returnd to him in vaine:
So sound he slept, that nought mought him
awake. [paine,
Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with
Whereat he gan to stretch: but he againe
Shooke him so hard, that forced him to speake.
As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine

He mumbled soft, but would not all his silence breake.

43
The Sprite then gan more boldly him to wake, And threatned vnto him the dreaded name Of Hecate: whereat he gan to quake, And lifting vp his lumpish head, with blame Halfe angry asked him, for what he came. Hither (quoth he) me. Irchimago sent, He that the stubborne Sprites can wisely tame.

Is tost with troubled sights and fancies weake,

He that the stubborne Sprites can wisely tame, He bids thee to him send for his intent A fit false dreame, that can delude the sleepers sent.

The God obayde, and calling forth straight way A diuerse dreame out of his prison darke, Deliuered it to him, and downe did lay His heauie head, denoide of carefull carke, Whose sences all were straight benumbd and starke.

He backe returning by the Yuone dore, Remounted vp as light as chearefull Larke, And on his litle winges the dreame he bore In hast vnto his Lord, where he him left afore.

Who all this while with charmes and hidde: artes,

Had made a Lady of that other Spright, And fram'd of liquid ayre her tender partes So liuely, and so like in all mens sight, That weaker sence it could haue rauisht quight The maker selfe for all his wondrous witt, Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight: Her all in white he clad, and ouer it Cast a blacke stole, most like to seeme for Vn fit.

Now when that ydledreame was to him brought Vnto that Elfin knight he bad him fly, Where he slept soundly void of euill thought And with false shewes abuse his fantasy, In sort as he him schooled priully: And that new creature borne without her dew Full of the makers guile, with vsage sly He taught to imitate that Lady trew, Whose semblance she did carrie vnder feigned

Thus well instructed, to their worke they hast And comming where the knight in slomber lay The one vpon his hardy head him plast. And made himdreame of loues and lustfull play That nigh his manly hart did melt away, Bathed in wanton blis and wicked ioy: Then seemed him his Lady by him lay, And to him playnd, how that false winged boy Her chast hart had subdewd, to learne Dame pleasures toy.

And she her selfe of beautic soueraigne Queene Faire Venus seemde vnto his bed to bring Her, whom he waking cuermore did weene To be the chartest flowre, that ay did spring On earthly braunch, the daughter of a king, Now a loose Leman to vile seruice bound: And eke the Graces seemed all to sing, Hymen in Hymen, dauncing all around, Whilst freshest Flora her with Yuic girlonc crownd.

In this great passion of vnwonted lust,
Or wonted feare of doing ought amis,
He started vp. as seeming to mistrust
Some secret ill, or hidden foe of his:
Lo there before his face his Lady is,
Vnder blake stole hyding her bayted hooke.
And as halfe blushing offred him to kis,
With gentle blandishment and louely looke,
Most like that virgin true, which for her knigh.
him took.

All cleane dismayd to see so vncouth sight, And halfe enraged at her shamelesse guise. He thought haue slaine her in his fierce despight: But hasty heat tempring with sufferance wise, He stayde his hand, and gan himselfe aduise To proue his sense, and tempt her faigned truth. Wringing her hands in wemens pitteous wise, Tho can she weepe, to stirre vp gentle ruth, Both for her noble bloud, and for her tender youth.

And said. Ah Sir, my liege Lord and my loue, Shall I accuse the hidden cruell fate. And mightie causes wrought in heaven aboue.

Or the blind God, that doth me thus amate. For hoped loue to winne me certaine hate? Yet thus perforce he bids me do, or die. Die is my dew: yet rew my wretched state

You, whom my hard avenging destinic Hath made judge of my life or death indifferently.

Your owne deare sake forst me at first to leaue My Fathers kingdome, There she stopt with teares :

Her swollen hart her speach seemd to bereaue, And then againe begun, My weaker yeares Captiu'd to fortune and frayle worldly feares, Hy to your faith for succour and sure ayde: Let me not dye in languor and long teares. Why Dame (quoth he) what hath ve thus

What frayes ye, that were wont to comfort me affrayd?

Loue of your selfe, she said, and deare constraint Lets me not sleepe, but wast the wearie night In secret anguish and vnpittied plaint,

Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned quight.

Her doubtfull words made that redoubted knight Suspecther truth: yet since no'vntruth he knew, Her fawning loue with foule disdainefull spight He would not shend, but said, Deare dame I rew, That for my sake vnknowne such griefe vnto you grew.

Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground; For all so deare as life is to my hart, I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound; Nelet vaine feares procure your needlesse smart, Where cause is none, but to your rest depart. Not all content, yet seemd she to appease Her mournefull plaintes, beguiled of her art, And fed with words, that could not chuse but please.

Long after lay he musing at her mood, Muchgrieu'd to thinke that gentle Dame so light. For whose defence he was to shed his blood. At last dull wearmesse of former fight Hauing vrockt a sleepe his irkesome spright, That troublous dreame gan freshly tosse his (delicht:

With bowres, and beds, and Ladies deare But when he saw his labour all was vaine. With that misformed spright he backe returnd againe.

Cant. II.

#### 

The guilefull creat Enchaunter parts The Redcrosse Knight from Truth: Into whose stead faire falshood steps. And workes him wofull ruth.

#### 

By this the Northerne wagoner had set His sevenfold teme behind the stedfast starre, That was in Ocean waves yet never wet, But firme is fixt, and sendeth light from farre To all, that in the wide deepe wandring arre: And chearefull Chaunticlere with his note shrill Had warned once, that *Phabus* fiery carre In hast was climbing up the Easterne hill. Full enuious that night so long his roome did fill.

When those accursed messengers of hell. That feigning dreame, and that faire-forged Spright

Came to their wicked maister, and gan tell Their bootelesse paines, and ill succeeding night:

Who all in rage to see his skilfull might Deluded so, gan threaten hellish pame And sad Proserpines wrath, them to affright. But when he saw his threatning was but vaine. He cast about, and searcht his balefull bookes againe.

Eftsoones he tooke that miscreated faire, And that false other Spright, on whom he spred A seeming body of the subtile aire. Like a young Squire, in loues and lusty-hed His wanton dayes that euer loosely led, Without regard of armes and dreaded fight: Those two he tooke, and in a secret bed, Couered with darknesse and misdeeming night, So slyding softly forth, she turnd as to her ease. Them both together laid, to ioy in vaine delight. Forthwith he runnes with feigned faithfull hast Vnto his guest, who after troublous sights And dreames, gan now to take more sound repast.

Whomsuddenly he wakes with fearefull frights, As one aghast with feends or damned sprights, And to him cals, Rise rise vulnappy Swaine, That here wex old in sleepe, whiles wicked wights [chaine;

Haue knit themselues in Venus shamefull Come see, where your false Lady doth her honour staine.

All in amaze he suddenly vp start
With sword in hand, and with the old man went;
Who soone him brought into a secret part,
Where that false couple were full closely ment
In wanton lust and lewd embracement:
Which when hesaw, he burnt with gealous fire,
The eye of reason was with rage yblent,
And would haue slaine them in his furious ire,
But hardly was restreined of that aged sire.

Returning to his bed in torment great,
And bitter anguish of his guiltie sight,
He could not rest, but did his stout heart eat,
And wast his inward gall with deepe despight,
Yrkesome of life, and too long lingring night.
At last faire Hespens in highest skie

Had spent his lampe, and brought forth dawning light Then yp he rose, and clad him hastily;

The Dwarfe him brought his steed: so both away do fly.

Now when the rosy-finered Morning faire, Weary of aged Tithones saffron bed, Had spred her purple robe through deawy aire,

And the high hils *Tuan* discovered,
The royall virgin shooke off drowsy-hed,
And rising forth out of her baser bowre,
Lookt for her knight, who far away was fled,
And for her Dwarfe, that wont to wait each
houre;

Then gan she waile and weepe, to see that woefull stowre.

And after him she rode with so much speede As herslow beast could make; but all in vaine: For him so far had borne his light-foot steede, Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce disdaine, That him to follow was but fruitlesse paine; Yet she her weary limbes would neuer rest, But euery hill and dale, each wood and plaine Did search, sore grieued in her gentle brest, He so vngently left her, whom she loued best.

But subtill Archimago, when his guests
He saw divided into double parts,
And Vna wandring in woods and forrests,
Th'end of his drift, he praisd his divelish arts
That had such might over true meaning harts;
Yet rests not so, but other meanes doth make,
How he may worke vnto her further smarts:
For her he hated as the hissing snake,
And in her many troubles did most pleasure
take.

\_

He then deuisde himselfe how to disguise;
For by his mightie science he could take
As many formes and shapes in seeming wise,
As euer Proteus to himselfe could make:
Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in lake,
Now like a foxe, now like a dragon fell,
That of himselfe he oft for feare would quake,
And oft would flie away. O who can tell
The hidden power of herbes, and might of
Magicke spell?

11

But now seemde best, the person to put on Of that good knight, his late beguiled guest: In mighty armes he was yelad anon, And siluer shield: vpon his coward brest A bloudy crosse, and on his crauen crest A bounch of haires discolourd diuersly: Full iolly knight he seemde, and well addrest, And when he sate vpon his courser free, Saint George himself ye would haue deemed him to be.

12

But he the knight, whose semblaunt he did beare,

The true Saint George was wandred far away, Stillflying from his thoughts and gealous feare; Will was his guide, and griefe led him astray. At last him chaunst to meete vpon the way A faithlesse Sarazin all arm'd to point, In whose great shield was writ with letters gay Sans foy: full large of limbe and euery ioint He was, and cared not for God or man a point.

-13

He had a faire companion of his way,
A goodly Lady clad in scarlot red,
Purfled with gold and pearle of rich assay,
And like a *Persian* mitre on her hed
She wore, with crownes and owches garnished,
The which her lauish louers to her gaue;
Her wanton palfrey all was ouerspred
With tinsell trappings, wouen like a waue,
Whose bridle rung with golden bels and bosses
braue.

With faire disport and courting dalliaunce. She intertainde her louer all the way:
But when she saw the knight his peare advaunce,

She soone left off her mirth and wanton play,
And bad her knight addresse him to the fray:
His foe was nigh at hand. He prickt with pride
And hope to winne his Ladies heart that day,
Forth spurred fast: adowne his coursers side
The red bloud trickling staind the way, as he
did ride.

1

The knight of the Redrosse when him he spide, Spurring so hote with rage dispiteous, Gan fairely couch his speare, and towards ride: Soone meete they both, both fell and furious, That daunted with their forces hideous, Their steeds do stagger, and amazed stand, And eke themselues too rudely rigorous, Astonicd with the stroke of their owne hand, Do backe rebut, and each to other yeeldeth land.

16

As when two rams stird with ambitious pride, Fight for the rule of the rich fleeced flocke, Their horned fronts so fierce on either side Do meete, that with the terrour of the shocke Astonied both, stand sencelesse as a blocke, Forgetfull of the hanging victory:
So stood these twaine, vimoued as a rocke, Both staring fierce, and holding idely The broken reliques of their former cruelty.

17

The Sarazin sore daunted with the buffe Snatcheth his sword, and ficrcely to him flies; Who well it wards, and quyteth cuff with cuft: Each others equall puissaunce enuics, And through their iron sides with cruell spics Docs seeke to perce: repining courage yields No foote to foe. The flashing fier flies As from a forge out of their burning shields, And streames of purple bloud new dies the verdant fields.

1

Curse on that Crosse (quoth then the Sarazin)
That keepes thy body from the bitter fit;
Dead long ygoe I wote thou haddest bin,
Had not that charme from thee forwarned it:
But yet I warne thee now assured sitt,
And hide thy head. Therewith vpon his crest
With rigour so outrageous he smitt,
Ihat a large share it hewd out of the rest,
And glauncing downe his shield, from blame
him fairely blest.

10

Who thereat wondrous wroth, the sleeping spark
Of native vertue gan eftsoones reviue,
And at his haughtie helmet making mark,
So hugely stroke, that it the steele did rive,
And cleft his head. He tumbling downe alive,
With bloudy mouth his mother earth did kis,
Greeting his grave: his grudging ghost did
strive

With the fraile flesh; at last it flitted is, Whither the soules do fly of men, that liue amis.

20

The Lady when she saw her champion fall, Like the old ruines of a broken towre, Staid not to waile his woefull funerall, But from him fled away with all her powre; Who after her as hastily gan scowre, Bidding the Dwarfe with him to bring away The Sarazins shield, signe of the conqueroure. Her soone he ouertooke, and bad to stay, For present cause was none of dread her to dismay.

21

She turning backe with ruefull countenaunce, Cride, Mercy mercy Sir vouchsafe to show On silly Dame, subject to hard mischaunce, And to your mighty will. Her humblesse low In so ritch weedes and seeming glorious show, Did much emmoue his stout herofcke heart, And said, Deare dame, your suddein ouer-throw

Much rueth me; but now put feare apart, And tell, both who ye be, and who that tooke your part.

22

Melting in teares, then gan she thus lament; The wretched woman, whom vnhappy howre Hath now made thrall to your commandement, Before that angry heauens list to lowre, And fortune false betraide me to your powre Was, (O what now auaileth that I was!) Borne the sole daughter of an Emperour, He that the wide West vnder his rule has, And high hath set his throne, where Tiberis doth pas,

He in the first flowre of my fresnest age,
Betrothed me vnto the onely haire
Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage;
Was neuer Prince so faithfull and so faire,
Was neuer Prince so meeke and debonaire;
But ere my hoped day of spousall shone,
My dearest Lord fell from high honours staire
Into the hands of his accursed fone,
And cruelly was slaine, that shall I euer mone

\_

His blessed body spoild of liuely breath,
Was afterward, I know not how, conuaid
And fro me hid: of whose most innocent death
When tidings came to me vnhappy maid,
O how great sorrow my sad soule assaid.
Then forth I went his woefull corse to find,
And many yeares throughout the world I straid,
A virgin widow, whose deepe wounded mind
With loue, long time did languish as the striken

At last it chaunced this proud Sarazin
To meete me wandring, who perforce me led
With him away, but yet could neuer win
The Fort, that Ladies hold insoueraigne dread.
There lies he now with foule dishonour dead,
Who whiles he liu'de, was called proud Sans foy,
The eldest of three brethren, all three bred
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sans ioy,
And twixt them both was borne the bloudy

bold Sans loy.

In this sad plight, friendlesse, vnfortunate, Now miscrable I Fidessa dwell, Crauing of you in pitty of my state, To do none ill, if please ye not do well. He in great passion all this while did dwell, More busying his quicke eyes, her face to view, Then his dull eares, to heare what she did tell; And said, Faire Lady hart of flint would rew The vndeserued woes and sorrowes, which ye shew.

27

Henceforth in safe assuraunce may ye rest, Hauing both found a new friend you to aid, And lost an old foe, that did you molest: Better new friend then an old foe is said. With chaunge of cheare the seeming simple maid

Let fall her eyen, as shamefast to the earth, And yeelding soft, in that she nought gain-said, So forth they rode, he feining seemely merth, And she coy lookes: so dainty they say maketh derth.

Long time they thus together trauciled,
Till weary of their way, they came at last,
Where grew two goodly trees, that faire did
spred

Their armes abroad, with gray mosse ouercast, And their greene leaves trembling with every blast.

Made a calme shadow far in compasse round:
The fearefull Shepheard often there aghast
Vnder them neuer sat, ne wont there sound
His mery oaten pipe, but shund th'vnlucky
ground.

20

But this good knight soone as he them can spie, For the coole shade him thither hastly got: For golden *Phæbus* now ymounted hie, From fiery wheeles of his faire chariot Hurled his beame so scorching cruell hot, That liuing creature mote it not abide; And his new Lady it endured not. There they alight, in hope themselues to hide From the fierce heat, and rest their weary limbs a tide.

Faire seemely pleasaunce each to other makes, With goodly purposes there as they sit: And in his falsed fancy he her takes
To be the fairest wight, that liued yit; Which to expresse, he bends his gentle wit, And thinking of those braunches greene to frame A girlond for her dainty forehead fit, He pluckt a bough; out of whose rift there came Small drops of gory blond, that trickled downe

the same.

31
Therewith a piteous yelling voyce was heard, Crying, O spare with guilty hands to teare My tender sides in this rough rynd embard, But fly, ah fly far hence away, for feare Least to you hap, that happened to me heare, And to this wretched Lady, my deare loue, O too deare loue, loue bought with death too

Astond he stood, and vp his haire did houe And with that suddein horror could no member moue.

deare.

At last whenas the dreadfull passion
Was ouerpast, and manhood well awake,
Yet musing at the straunge occasion,
And doubting much his sence, he thus bespake;
What voyce of damned Ghost from Limbo lake,
Or guilefull spright wandring in empty aire,
Both which fraile men do oftentimes mistake,
Sends to my doubtfull eares these speaches rare,
And ruefull plaints, me bidding guiltlesse bloud
to spare?

Then groning deepe, Nor damned Ghost, (quoth he,) [speake, Nor guilefull sprite to thee these wordes doth But once a man Fradubio, now a tree, Wretched man, wretched tree; whose nature

weake,
A cruell witch her cursed will to wreake,
Hath thus transformd, and plast in open plaines,
Where *Boreas* doth blow full bitter bleake,
And scorching Sunne does dry my secret vaines:
For though a tree I seeme, yet cold and heat me
paines.

34 y on *Fradubio* then, or man, or tree, uoth then the knight, by whose mischieuous

arts
It thou misshaped thus, as now I see?
It thou misshaped thus, as now I see?
It double griefs afflict concealing harts,
It double griefs afflict concealing harts,
It raging flames who striueth to suppresse.
The author then (said he) of all my smarts,

one Duessa a false sorceresse, hat many errant knights hath brought to s/wretchednesse.

In prime of youthly yeares, when corage hot The fire of lone and ioy of cheualree First kindled in my brest, it was my lot To lone this gentle Lady, whom ye see, Bow not a Lady, but a seeming tree; With whom as once I rode accompanyde, Me chaunced of a knight encountred bee, That had a like faire Lady by his syde, Like a faire Lady, but did fowle Duessa hyde.

36

Whose forged beauty he did take in hand, All other Dames to haue exceeded farre; I in defence of mine did likewise stand, Aline, that did then shine as the Morning starre: So both to battell fierce arraunged arre, In which his harder fortune was to fall Vnder my speare: such is the dye of warre: His Lady left as a prise martiall, Did yield her comely person, to be at my call.

37
38 doubly lou'd of Ladies vnlike faire,
Th'one seeming such, the other such indeede,
One day in doubt I cast for to compare,
Whether in beauties glorie did exceede;
A Rosy girlond was the victors meede:
Soth seemde to win, and both seemde won to bee,
So hard the discord was to be agreede.
Tralissa was as faire, as faire mote bee,

And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as shee.

The wicked witch now seeing all this while
The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway,
What not by right, she cast to win by guile,
And by her hellish science raisd streight way
A foggy mist, that ouercast the day,
And a dull blast, that breathing on her face,
Dimmed her former beauties shining ray,
And with foule vgly forme did her disgrace:
hen was she faire alone, when none was faire
in place.

Then cride she out, Fye, fye, deformed wight, Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth plaine To haue before bewitched all mens sight; O leaue her soone, or let her soone be slaine. Her loathly visage viewing with disdaine, Eftsoones I thought her such, as she me told, And would haue kild her; but with faigned paine, [hold; The fabe witch did my wrathfull hand with-

The false witch did my wrathfull hand with-So left her, where she now is turnd to treen mould.

nould. 40

Thens forth I tooke Duessa for my Dame,
And in the witch vnweeting loyd long time,
Ne ener wist, but that she was the same,
Till on a day (that day is enery Prime,
When Witches wont do penance for their crime)
I chaunst to see her in her proper hew,
Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme:
A filthy foule old woman I did vew,
That ener to hane toucht her, I did deadly rew.

41

Her neather partes misshapen, monstruous, Were hidd in water, that I could not see, But they did seeme more foule and hideous, Then womans shape man would beleeue to bee. Thens forth from her most beastly companie I gan refraine, in minde to slip away, Soone as appeard safe opportunitie: For danger great, if not assur'd decay I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne to stray.

The diuclish hag by chaunges of my cheare
Perceu'd my thought, and drownd in sleepie
night.

With wicked herbes and ointments did besmeare [might, My bodie all, through charmes and magicke That all my senses were bereaued quight: Then brought she me into this desert waste. And by my wretched louers side me pight, Where now enclosd in wooden wals full faste, Banisht from liuing wights, our wearie dayes we waste.

But how long time, said then the Elfin knight, Are you in this misformed house to dwell? We may not chaunge (quoth he) this euil plight, Till we be bathed in a liuing well; That is the terme prescribed by the speil. O how, said he, mote I that well out find, That may restore you to your wonted well? Time and suffised fates to former kynd Shall vs restore, none else from hence may vs vnbynd.

The false Duessa, now Fidessa hight,
Heard how in vaine Fradubio did lament,
And knew well all was true. But the good knight
Full of sad feare and ghastly dreriment,
When all this speech the liuing tree had spent.
The bleeding bough did thrust into the ground.
That from the bloud he might be innocent,
And with fresh clay did close the wooden wound:
Then turning to his Lady, dead with feare her found.

Her sceming dead he found with feigned feare, As all vnweeting of that well she knew, And paynd himselfe with busic care to reare Her out of carelesse swowne. Her eylids blew And dimmed sight with pale and deadly hew At last she vp gan lift: with trembling cheare Her vp he tooke, too simple and too trew, And oft her kist. At length all passed feare, He set her on her steede, and forward forth did beare.

#### Cant. III.

Forsaken Truth long seekes her loue,
And makes the Lyon mylde,
Marres blind Deuotions mart, and fals
In hand of leachour vylde.

Nought is there vnder heau'ns wide hollownesse,
That moues more deare compassion of mind,
Then beautie brought t'vnworthy wretchednesse [vnkind:
Through enuies snares or fortunes freakes
I, whether lately through her brightnesse blind,
Or through alleageance and fast fealtie,

Which I do owe vnto all woman kind, Feele my heart perst with so great agonie, When such I see, that all for pittie I could die.

And now it is empassioned so deepe,
For fairest Vnaes sake, of whom I sing,
That my fraile eyes these lines with teares do
steepe,
To thinke how she through guilefull handeling,
Though true as euer liuing wight was faire,
Though nor in word nor deede ill meriting,
Is from her knight diuoreed in despaire

And her due loues deriu'd to that vile witches share.

Yet she most faithfull Ladie all this while Forsaken, wofull, solitarie mayd Farre from all peoples prease, as in exile, In wildernesse and wastfull deserts strayd, To seeke her knight; who subtilly betrayd Through that late vision, which th' Enchaunter wrought.

Had her abandond. She of nought affrayd, Through woods and wastnesse wide him daily sought;

Yet wished tydings none of him vnto her brought.

One day nigh wearie of the yrkesome way,
From her vnhastie beast she did alight,
And on the grasse her daintie limbes did lay
In secret shadow, farre from all mens sight:
From her faire head her fillet she vndight,
And laid her stole aside. Her angels face
As the great eye of heauen shyned bright,
And made a sunshine in the shadie place;
Did neuer mortall eye behold such heauenly
grace.

It fortuned out of the thickest wood
A ramping Lyon rushed suddainly,
Hunting full greedie after saluage blood;
Soone as the royall virgin he did spy,
With gaping mouth at her ran greedily,
To haue attonce deuour'd her tender corse:
But to the pray when as he drew more ny,
His bloudie rage asswaged with remorse,
And with the sight amazd, forgat his furious
forse.

In stead thereof he kist her wearie feet,
And lickt her lilly hands with fawning tong,
As he her wronged innocence did weet.
O how can beautie maister the most strong,
And simple truth subdue auenging wrong?
Whose yeelded pride and proud submission,
Still dreading death, when she had marked long,
Her hart gan melt in great compassion,
And drizling teares did shed for pure affection.

7
The Lyon Lord of euerie beast in field,
Quoth she, his princely puissance doth abate,
And mightie proud to humble weake does yield,
Forgetfull of the hungry rage, which late
Him prickt, in pittie of my sad estate:
But he my Lyon, and my noble Lord,
How does he find in cruell hart to hate
Her that him lou'd, and euer most adord,
As the God of my life? why hath he me abbord?

Redounding teares did choke th'end of her plaint, Which softly ecchoed from the neighbour wood; And sad to see her sorrowfull constraint The kingly beast vpon her gazing stood; With pittie calmd, downe fell his angry mood. At last in close hart shutting vp her paine, Arose the virgin borne of heauenly brood, And to her snowy Palfrey got againe, To seeke her strayed Champion, if she might attaine.

The Lyon would not leave her desolate,
But with her went along, as a strong gard
Of her chast person, and a faithfull mate
Of her sad troubles and misfortunes hard:
Still when she slept, he kept both watch and
ward.

And when she wakt, he waited diligent, With humble service to her will prepard: Fromher faire eyes he tooke commaundement, And ever by her lookes conceived her intent.

10

Long she thus traueiled through deserts wyde, By which she thought her wandring knight shold pas.

Yet neuer shew of liuing wight espyde;
Till that at length she found the troden gras,
In which the tract of peoples footing was,
Vnder the steepe foot of a mountaine hore;
The same she followes, till at last she has
A damzell spyde slow footing her before,
That on her shoulders sad a pot of water bore.

11

To whom approching she to her gan call,
To weet, if dwelling place were nigh at hand;
But the rude wench her answer'd nought at all,
She could not heare, nor speake, nor vinderstand;
Till seeing by her side the Lyon stand,
With suddaine feare her pitcher downe she

threw,
And fled away: for neuer in that land
Face of faire Ladie she before did vew,
And that dread Lyons looke her cast in deadly

hew.

Full fast she fled, ne euer lookt behynd, As if her life vpon the wager lay, And home she came, whereas her mother blynd Sate in eternall night: nought could she say, But suddaine catching hold, did her dismay With quaking hands, and other signes of feare: Who full of ghastly fright and cold affray, Gan shut the dore. By this arrived there Dame Vna, wearie Dame, and entrance did requere.

Which when none yeelded, her vnruly Page With his rude clawes the wicket open rent, And let her in; where of his cruell rage Nigh dead with feare, and faint astonishment, She found them both in darkesome corner pent; Where that old woman day and night did pray Vpon her beades deuoutly penitent; Nine hundred Pater nosters euery day, And thrise nine hundred Aues she was wont to say.

And to augment her painefull pennance more, Thrise euery weeke in ashes she did sit, And next her wrinkled skin rough suckcloth wore.

And thrise three times did fast from any bit: But now for feare her beads she did forget. Whose needlesse dread for to remoue away, Faire Vna framed words and count nance fit: Which hardly doen, at length she gan them pray,

That in their cotage small, that night she rest her may.

The day is spent, and commeth drowsie night, When enery creature shrowded is in sleepe; Sad Vna downe her laies in wearie plight, And at her feet the Lyon watch doth keepe; In stead of rest, she does lament, and weepe For the late losse of her deare loued knight, And sighes, and grones, and euermore does steepe

Her tender brest in bitter teares all night, All night she thinks too long, and often lookes for light.

Now when Aldeboran was mounted hie Aboue the shynie Cassiopeias chaire, And all in deadly sleepe did drowned lie, One knocked at the dore, and in would fare; He knocked fast, and often curst, and sware, That readie entrance was not at his call: For on his backe a heauy load he bare Of nightly stellths and pillage seuerall, Which he had got abroad by purchase criminall.

17

He was to weete a stout and sturdie thiefe,
Wont to robbe Churches of their ornaments,
And poore mens boxes of their due reliefe,
Which giuen was to them for good intents;
The holy Saints of their rich vestiments
He did disrobe, when all men carelesse slept,
And spoild the Priests of their habiliments,
Whiles none the holy things in safety kept;
Then he by cunning sleights in at the window
crept.

And all that he by right or wrong could find, Vnto this house he brought, and did bestow Voon the daughter of this woman blind, Abessa daughter of Corceca slow, [know. With whom he whoredome vsd, that few did And fed her fat with feast of offerings. And plentie, which in all the land did grow: Ne spared he to give her gold and rings: And now he to her brought part of his stolen things.

Thus long the dore with rage and threats he bet, Yet of those fearefull women none durst rize, The Lyon frayed them, him in to let: He would no longer stay him to aduize, But open breakes the dore in furious wize, And entring is; when that disdainfull beast Encountring fierce, him suddaine doth surprize, And seizing cruell clawes on trembling brest, Vnder his Lordly foot him proudly hath supprest.

Him booteth not resist, nor succour call, His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand, Whostreight him rent in thousand peeces small, And quite dismembred hath: the thirstie land Drunke vp his life; his corse left on the strand. His fearefull friends weare out the wofull night, Ne dare to weepe, nor seeme to vnderstand The heavie hap, which on them is alight, Affraid, least to themselves the like mishappen might.

Now when broad day the world discouered has, Vp Vna rose, vp rose the Lyon eke, And on their former journey forward pas, In wayes vnknowne, her wandring knight to Greeke, seeke. With paines farre passing that long wandring That for his loue refused deitie; Such were the labours of this Lady meeke, Still seeking him, that from her still did flie, Then furthest from her hope, when most she weened nie.

Soone as she parted thence, the fearefull twaine, That blind old woman and her daughter deare Came forth and finding Kirkrapine there slaine, For anguish great they gan to rend their heare, And beat their brests, and naked flesh to teare. And when they both had wept and wayld their fill,

Then forth they ranne like two amazed deare, Halfe mad through malice, and revenging will, To follow her, that was the causer of their ill.

Whom ouertaking, they gan loudly bray, With hollow howling, and lamenting cry, Shamefully at her rayling all the way, And her accusing of dishonesty. That was the flowre of faith and chastity: And still amidst her rayling, she did pray, That plagues, and mischiefs, and long misery Might fall on her, and follow all the way, And that in endlesse error she might ever stray.

But when she saw her prayers nought preuaile, She backe returned with some labour lost; And in the way as she did weepe and waile, A knight her met in mighty armes embost, Yet knight was not for all his bragging bost, But subtill Archimag, that Vna sought By traynes into new troubles to have tost: Of that old woman tydings he besought, If that of such a Ladie she could tellen ought.

Therewith she gan her passion to renew, And cry, and curse, and raile, and rend her heare.

Saving, that harlot she too lately knew. That cause her shed so many a bitter teare, And so forth told the story of her feare: Much seemed he to mone her haplesse chaunce, And after for that Ladie did inquere; Which being taught, he forward gan aduaunce His fair enchaunted steed, and eke his charmed launce.

Ere long he came, where *Vna* traueild slow, And that wilde Champion wayting her besyde: Whom seeing such, for dread he durst not show Himselfe too nigh at hand, but turned wyde Vnto an hill; from whence when she him spyde, By his like seeming shield, her knight by name She weend it was, and towards him gan ryde: Approching nigh, she wist it was the same. And with faire fearefull humblesse towards him shee came.

And weeping said, Ah my long lacked Lord, Where have ye bene thus long out of my sight? Much feared I to have bene quite abhord, Or ought haue done, that ye displeasen might, That should as death vnto my deare hart light: For since mine eye your loyous sight did mis, My chearefull day is turnd to chearelesse night, And eke my night of death the shadow is; But welcome now my light, and shining lampe of blis.

He thereto meeting said, My dearest Dame. Farre be it from your thought, and fro my will. To thinke that knighthood I so much should shame.

As you to leave, that have me loved still, And chose in Faery court of meere goodwill. Where noblest knights were to be found on earth: The earth shall sooner leave her kindly skill To bring forth fruit, and make eternall derth, Then I leave you, my liefe, yborne of heavenly

berth.

And sooth to say, why I left you so long, Was for to seeke aduenture in strange place. Where Archimago said a felon strong To many knights did daily worke disgrace; But knight he now shall neuer more deface: Good cause of mine excuse; that mote ye please Well to accept, and euermore embrace My faithfull seruice, that by land and seas Haue vowd you to defend, now then your plaint appease.

His louely words her seemd due recompence Of all her passed paines: one louing howre For many yeares of sorrow can dispence: A dram of sweet is worth a pound of sowre: She has forgot, how many a wofull stowre For him she late endur'd; she speakes no more Of past: true is, that true love hath no powre To looken backe; his eyes be fixt before. Before her stands her knight, for whom she

toyld so sore.

Much like, as when the beaten marinere, That long hath wandred in the Ocean wide, Oft soust in swelling Tethys saltish teare, And long time having tand his tawney hide With blustring breath of heauen, that none can bide.

And scorching flames of fierce Orions hound, Soone as the port from farre he has espide, His chearefull whistle merrily doth sound, And Nereus crownes with cups; his mates him

pledg around.

Such joy made Vna, when her knight she found; And eke th'enchaunter ioyous seemd no lesse, Then the glad marchant, that does vew from

His ship farre come from watrie wildernesse, He hurles out vowes, and Neptune oft doth

So forth they past, and all the way they spent Discoursing of her dreadfull late distresse, In which he askt her, what the Lyon ment: Who told herall that fell in journey as she went.

33 They had not ridden farre, when they might see One pricking towards them with hastie heat, Full strongly armd, and on a courser free, That through his fiercenesse fomed all with

And the sharpe yron did for anger cat, When his hot ryder spurd his chauffed side; His looke was sterne, and seemed still to threat Cruell reuenge, which he in hart did hyde, And on his shield Sans loy in bloudie lines was

dyde.

When nigh he drew vnto this gentle payre And saw the Red-crosse, which the knight did

He burnt in fire, and gan eftsoones prepare Himselfe to battell with his couched speare. Loth was that other, and did faint through feare, To taste th'vntryed dint of deadly steele; But yet his Lady did so well him cheare, That hope of new good hap he gan to feele; So bent his speare, and spurnd his horse with vron heele.

But that proud Paynim forward came so fierce, And full of wrath, that with his sharp-head speare Through vainely crossed shield he quite did pierce.

And had his staggering steede not shrunke for Through shield and bodie eke he should him

Yet so great was the puissance of his push, That from his saddle quite he did him beare: He tombling rudely downe to ground did rush, And from his gored wound a well of bloud did gush.

Dismounting lightly from his loftie steed, He to him lept, in mind to reaue his life, And proudly said, Lo there the worthic meed Of him, that slew Sansfoy with bloudie knife; Henceforth his ghost freed from repining strife, In peace may passen ouer Lethe lake, When mourning altars purgd with enemies life, The blacke infernall Furies doen aslake:

Life from Sansfoy thou tookst, Sansloy shall from thee take.

Therewith in haste his helmet gan vnlace, Till Vna cride, O hold that heavie hand, Deare Sir, what euer that thou be in place: Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquisht stand Now at thy mercy: Mercie not withstand: For he is one the truest knight aliue, Though conquered now he lie on lowly land, And whilest him fortune fauourd, faire did thriue In bloudie field: therefore of lifehim not depriue.

Her piteous words might not abate his rage. But rudely rending vp his helmet, would Haue slaine him straight: but when he sees his age.

And hoarie head of Archimago old. His hastie hand he doth amazed hold. And halfe ashamed, wondred at the sight: For the old man well knew he, though vntold, In charmes and magicke to have wondrous might.

Ne euer wont in field, ne in round lists to fight.

And said, Why Archimago, lucklesse syre. What doe I see? what hard mishap is this, That hath thee hither brought to taste mine yre?

Or thine the fault, or mine the error is, In stead of foe to wound my friend amis? He answered nought, but in a traunce still lay. And on those guilefull dazed eyes of his The cloud of death did sit. Which doen away, He left him lying so, ne would no lenger stay.

But to the virgin comes, who all this while Amased stands, her selfe so mockt to see By him, who has the guerdon of his guile. For so misfeigning her true knight to bee: Yet is she now in more perplexitie. Left in the hand of that same Paynim bold. From whom her booteth not at all to flie; Who by her cleanly garment catching hold, Her from her Palfrey pluckt, her visage to behold.

But her fierce seruant full of kingly awe And high disdaine, whenas his soueraine Dame So rudely handled by her foe he sawe. With gaping lawes full greedy at him came, And ramping on his shield, did weene the same Haue reft away with his sharpe rending clawes But he was stout, and lust did now inflame His corage more, that from his griping pawes He hath his shield redeem'd, and foorth his swerd he drawes.

O then too weake and feeble was the forse Of saluage beast, his puissance to withstand: For he was strong, and of so mightie corse. As euer wielded speare in warlike hand, And feates of armes did wisely vnderstand. Eftsoones he perced through his chaufed chest With thrilling point of deadly yron brand, And launcht his Lordly hart: with death opprest He roar'd aloud, whiles life forsooke his stubborne brest.

Who now is left to keepe the forlorne maid From raging spoile of lawlesse victors will? Her faithfull gard remou'd, her hope dismaid. Her selfe a yeelded pray to saue or spill. He now Lord of the field, his pride to fill. With foule reproches, and disdainfull spight Her vildly entertaines, and will or nill, Beares her away voon his courser light: Her prayers nought preuaile, his rage is more of might.

And all the way, with great lamenting paine, And piteous plaints she filleth his dull eares. That stony hart could riven have in twaine, And all the way she wets with flowing teares: But he enrag'd with rancor, nothing heares. Her seruile beast yet would not leave her so, But followes her farre off, ne ought he feares, To be partaker of her wandring woe. More mild in beastly kind, then that her beastly

#### Cant. IIII.

#### \$18\$

To sinfull house of Pride, Duessa guides the faithfull knight. Where brothers death to wreak Sanstoy doth chalenge him to fight.

#### 

Young knight, what euer that dost armes pro-And through long labours huntest after fame,

Beware of fraud, beware of ficklenesse, In choice, and change of thy deare loued Dame. Least thou of her beleeue too lightly blame, And rash misweening doe thy hart remoue: For vnto knight there is no greater shame. Then lightnesse and inconstancie in loue: That doth this Redcrosse knights ensample plainly proue.

Who after that he had faire Vna lorne, Through light misdeeming of her loialtie. And false Duessa in her sted had borne. Called Fidess', and so supposd to bee; Long with her traueild, till at last they see A goodly building, brauely garnished, The house of mightie Prince it seemd to bee: And towards it a broad high way that led. All bare through peoples feet, which thither traueiled.

Great troupes of people traueild thitherward Both day and night, of each degree and place, But few returned, having scaped hard, With balefull beggerie, or foule disgrace, Which euer after in most wretched case. Like loathsome lazars, by the hedges lay. Thither Duessa bad him bend his pace: For she is wearie of the toilesome way, And also nigh consumed is the lingring day.

A stately Pallace built of squared bricke. Which cunningly was without morter laid, Whose wals were high but nothing strong, nor

And golden foile all ouer them displaid, That purest skye with brightnesse they dis-

High lifted vp were many loftie towres, And goodly galleries farre ouer laid, Full of faire windowes, and delightfull bowres: And on the top a Diall told the timely howres.

It was a goodly heape for to behould, And spake the praises of the workmans wit; But full great pittie, that so faire a mould Did on so weake foundation euer sit: For on a sandie hill, that still did flit, And fall away, it mounted was full hie, That every breath of heaven shaked it: And all the hinder parts, that few could spie, Were ruinous and old, but painted cunningly.

Arrived there they passed in forth right; For still to all the gates stood open wide. Yet charge of them was to a Porter hight Cald Maluenii, who entrance none denide: Thence to the hall, which was on every side With rich array and costly arras dight: Infinite sorts of people did abide There waiting long, to win the wished sight Of her, that was the Lady of that Pallace bright.

By them they passe, all gazing on them round, And to the Presence mount; whose glorious vew

Their frayle amazed senses did confound: In living Princes court none ever knew Such endlesse richesse, and so sumptuous shew; Ne *Persia* selfe, the nourse of pompous pride Like euer saw. And there a noble crew Of Lordes and Ladies stood on euery side, Which with their presence faire, the place much beautifide.

High aboue all a cloth of State was spred. And a rich throne, as bright as sunny day, On which there sate most braue embellished With royall robes and gorgeous array, A mayden Queene, that shone as Tilans ray, In glistring gold, and peerelesse pretious stone: Yet her bright blazing beautie did assay To dim the brightnesse of her glorious throne. As enuying her selfe, that too exceeding shone.

Exceeding shone, like Phabus fairest childe. That did presume his fathers fire wayne, And flaming mouthes of steedes vnwonted wilde Through highest heaven with weaker hand to rayne:

Proud of such clory and advancement vaine. While flashing beames do daze his feeble eyen, He leaves the welkin way most beaten plaine, And rapt with whirling wheeles, inflames the skven.

With fire not made to burne, but fairely for to shyne.

So proud she shyned in her Princely state. Looking to heaven; for earth she did disdayne, And sitting high; for lowly she did hate: Lo vnderneath her scornefull feete, was layne A dreadfull Dragon with an hideous trayne, And in her hand she held a mirrhour bright, Wherein her face she often vewed fayne And in her selfe-lou'd semblance tooke delight; For she was wondrous faire, as any liuing wight.

Of griesly Pluto she the daughter was, And sad Proserpina the Queene of hell; Yet did she thinke her pearelesse worth to pas That parentage, with pride so did she swell. And thundring love, that high in heaven doth dwell.

And wield the world, she claymed for her syre, Or if that any else did loue excell: For to the highest she did still aspyre. Or if ought higher were then that, did it desyre.

And proud Lucifera men did her call, That made her selfe a Queene, and crownd to Yet rightfull kingdome she had none at all, Ne heritage of native soveraintie. But did vsurpe with wrong and tyrannie Vpon the scepter, which she now did hold: Ne ruld her Realmes with lawes, but pollicie, And strong aduizement of six wisards old, That with their counsels bad her kingdome did vphold.

Soone as the Elfin knight in presence came, And false Duessa seeming Lady faire. A gentle Husher, Vanitie by name Inaire: Made rowme, and passage for them did pre-So goodly brought them to the lowest staire Of her high throne, where they on humble knee Making obeyssance, did the cause declare, Why they were come, her royall state to see, To proue the wide report of her great Maiestee.

With loftie eyes, halfe loth to looke so low, She thanked them in her disdainefull wise, Ne other grace vouchsafed them to show Of Princesse worthy, scarse them bad arise. Her Lordes and Ladies all this while deuise Themselves to setten forth to straungers sight: Some frounce their curled haire in courtly guise. Some prancke their ruffes, and others trimly dight

Their gay attire: each others greater pride does spight.

Goodly they all that knight do entertaine, Right glad with him to haue increast their crew: But to Duess' each one himselfe did paine All kindnesse and faire courtesie to shew: For in that court why lome her well they knew: Yet the stout Faerie mongst the middest crowd Thought all their glorie vaine in knightly vew, And that great Princesse too exceeding prowd. That to strange knight no better countenance allowd.

Suddein vpriseth from her stately place The royall Dame, and for her coche doth call: All hurtlen forth, and she with Princely pace. As faire Aurora in her purple pall, Out of the East the dawning day doth call: So forth she comes: her brightnesse brode doth blaze:

The heapes of people thronging in the hall, Do ride each other, vpon her to gaze: Her glorious glitterand light doth all mens eyes

amaze.

So forth she comes, and to her coche does clyme, Adorned all with gold, and girlonds gay, That seemd as fresh as Flora in her prime, And stroue to match, in royall rich array, Great Iunoes golden chaire, the which they say The Gods stand gazing on, when she does ride To loves high house through heavens braspaued way

Drawne of faire Pecocks, that excell in pride, And full of Argus eyes their tailes dispredden

wide.

τR

But this was drawne of six vnequall beasts, On which her six sage Counsellours did ryde. Taught to obay their bestiall beheasts, With like conditions to their kinds applyde: Of which the first, that all the rest did guyde, Was sluggish Idlenesse the nourse of sin; Vpon a slouthfull Asse he chose to ryde, Arayd in habit blacke, and amis thin, Like to an holy Monck, the seruice to begin.

And in his hand his Portesse still he bare, That much was worne, but therein little red. For of denotion he had little care, Still drownd in sleepe, and most of his dayes

Scarse could be once vphold his heavie hed, To looken, whether it were night or day: May seeme the wayne was very euill led. When such an one had guiding of the way, That knew not, whether right he went, or else astray.

From worldly cares himselfe he did esloyne. And greatly shunned manly exercise. From euery worke he chalenged essoyne, For contemplation sake: yet otherwise, His life he led in lawlesse riotise; By which he grew to grieuous malady: For in his lustlesse limbs through euill guise A shaking feuer raignd continually: Such one was *Idlenesse*, first of this company.

And by his side rode loathsome Gluttony, Deformed creature, on a filthie swyne, His belly was vp-blowne with luxury, And eke with fatnesse swollen were his eyne. And like a Crane his necke was long and fyne, With which he swallowd vp excessive feast, For want whereof poore people oft did pyne: And all the way, most like a brutish beast, He spued vp his gorge, that all did him deteast.

In greene vine leaucs he was right fitly clad; For other clothes he could not weare for heat, And on his head an yuie girland had, From vnder which fast trickled downe the sweat:

Still as he rode, he somewhat still did eat, And in his hand did beare a bouzing can, Of which he supt so oft, that on his seat His dronken corse he scarse vpholden can, In shape and life more like a monster, then a man.

Vnfit he was for any worldly thing,
And eke vnhable once to stirre or go,
Not meet to be of counsell to a king,
Whose mind in meat and drinke was drowned so,
That from his friend he seldome knew his fo:
Full of diseases was his carcas blew,
And a dry dropsie through his flesh did flow:
Which by misdiet daily greater grew:
Such one was Gluttony, the second of that crew.

And next to him rode lustfull Lechery,
Vpon a bearded Goat, whose rugged haire,
And whally eyes (the signe of gelosy,)
Was like the person selfe, whom he did beare:
Who rough, and blacke, and filthy did appeare,
Vnseemely man to please faire Ladies eye;
Yet he of Ladies oft was loued deare,
When fairer faces were bid standen by:
O who does know the bent of womens fantasy?

25

In a greene gowne he clothed was full faire, Which vnderneath did hide his filthinesse, And in his hand a burning hart he bare, Full of vaine follies, and new fanglenesse: For he was false, and fraught with ficklenesse, And learned had to loue with secret lookes, And well could daunce, and sing with ruefunesse,

And fortunes tell, and read in louing bookes, And thousand other wayes, to bait his fleshly hookes.

26

Inconstant man, that loued all he saw,
And lusted after all, that he did loue,
Ne would his looser life be tide to law,
But loyd weake wemens hearts to tempt and
proue

If from their loyall loues he might then moue; Which lewdnesse fild him with reprochfull paine Of that fowle euill, which all men reproue, That rots the marrow, and consumes the braine:

Such one was *Lecherie*, the third of all this traine.

And greedy Auarice by him did ride,
Vpon a Camell loaden all with gold;
Two iron coffers hong on either side,
With precious mettall full, as they might hold,
And in his lap an heape of coine he told;
For of his wicked pelfe his God he made,
And vnto hell him selfe for money sold;
Accursed vsurie was all his trade,
and right and wrong ylike in equall ballaunce
waide.

28

His life was nigh vnto deaths doore yplast, And thred-bare cote, and cobled shoes he ware, Ne scarse good morsell all his life did tast, But both from backe and belly still did spare, To fill his bags, and richesse to compare; Yet chylde ne kinsman liuing had he none To leaue them to; but thorough daily care To get, and nightly feare to lose his owne, He led a wretched life ynto him selfe ynknowne.

20

Most wretched wight, whom nothing might suffise,

Whose greedy lust did lacke in greatest store, Whose need had end, but no end couetise, Whose wealth was want, whose plenty made him pore.

Who had enough, yet wished euer more; A vile disease, and eke in foote and hand A grieuous gout tormented him full sore, That well he could not touch, nor go, nor stand: Such one was Auarice, the fourth of this faire band.

30

And next to him malicious Enuie rode, Vpon a rauenous wolfe, and still did chaw Betweene his cankred teeth a venemous tode, That all the poison ran about his chaw; But inwardly he chawed his owne maw At neighbours wealth, that made him cuer sad; For death it was, when any good he saw, And wept, that cause of weeping none he had, But when he heard of harme, he wexed wondrous glad.

All in a kirtle of discolourd say
He clothed was, ypainted full of eyes;
And in his bosome secretly there lay
An hatefull Snake, the which his taile vptyes
In many folds, and mortall sting implyes.
Still as he rode, he gnasht his teeth, to see
Those heapes of gold with griple Couetyse,
And grudged at the great felicitie
Of proud Lucifera, and his owne companie.

32

He hated all good workes and vertuous deeds, And him no lesse, that any like did vse, And who with gracious bread the hungry feeds, His almes for want of faith he doth accuse; So euery good to bad he doth abuse: And eke the verse of famous Poets witt He does backebite, and spightfull poison spues From leprous mouth on all, that euer writt: Such one vile Enuie was, that fifte in row did sitt.

And him beside rides fierce reuenging Wrath, Vpon a Lion, loth for to be led; And in his hand a burning brond he hath, The which he brandisheth about his hed; His eyes did hurle forth sparkles fiery red, And stared sterne on all, that him beheld, As ashes pale of hew and seeming ded; And on his dagger still his hand he held, Trembling through hasty rage, when choler in him sweld.

His ruffin raiment all was staind with blood, Which he had spilt, and all to rags yrent, Through vnaduized rashnesse woxen wood; For of his hands he had no gouernement, Ne car'd for bloud in his auengement: But when the furious fit was ouerpast, His cruell facts he often would repent; Yet wilfull man he neuer would forecast, How many mischieues should ensue his heedlesse hast.

Full many mischiefes follow cruell Wrath;
Abhorred bloudshed, and tumultuous strife,
Vnmanly murder, and vnthrifty scath,
Bitter despight, with rancours rusty knife,
And fretting griefe the enemy of life;
All these, and many euils moe haunt ire,
The swelling Splene, and Frenzy raging rife,
The shaking Palsey, and Saint Fraunces fire:
Such one was Wrath, the last of this vngodly
tire.

36
And after all, vpon the wagon beame
Rode Salhan, with a smarting whip in hand,
With which he forward lasht the laesie teme,
So oft as Slowth still in the mire did stand.
Huge routs of people did about them band,
Showting for ioy, and still before their way
A foggy mist had couered all the land;
And vnderneath their feet, all scattered lay
Dead sculs and bones of men, whose life had
gone astray.

So forth they marchen in this goodly sort,
To take the solace of the open aire,
And in fresh flowring fields themselues to sport;
Emongst the rest rode that false Lady faire,
The fowle Duessa, next vnto the chaire
Of proud Lucifera, as one of the traine:
But that good knight would not so nigh repaire,
Him selfe estraunging from their ioyaunce
vaine,
Whose fellowship seemd far vnfit for warlike

swaine.

So having solaced themselves a space With pleasaunce of the breathing fields yfed, They backe returned to the Princely Place; Whereas an errant knight in armes ycled, And heathnish shield, wherein with letters red Was writ Sans ioy, they new arrived find: Enflam'd with fury and fiers hardy-hed, He seemd in hart to harbour thoughts vnkind, And nourish bloudy vengeaunce in his bitter mind.

Who when the shamed shield of slaine Sans foy Hespide with that same Faery champions page, Bewraying him, that did of late destroy His eldest brother, burning all with rage He to him leapt, and that same enuious gage Of victors glory from him snatcht away: But th'Elfin knight, which ought that warlike wage,

Disdaind to loose the meed he wonne in fray, And him rencountring fierce, reskewd the noble pray.

Therewith they gan to hurtlen greedily, Redoubted battaile ready to darrayne, And clash their shields, and shake their swords on hy, [traine; That with their sturre they troubled all the Till that great Queene vpon eternall paine Of high displeasure, that ensewen might, Commaunded them their fury to refraine, And if that either to that shield had right, In equall lists they should the morrow next it hight.

Ah dearest Dame, (quoth then the Paynim bold,)
Pardon the errour of enraged wight,
Whomgreat griefe made forget the raines to hold
Of reasons rule, to see this recreant knight,
No knight, but treachour full of false despight
And shamefull treason, who through guile
hath slayn

The prowest knight, that euer field did fight, Euen stout Sans foy (O who can then refrayn?) Whose shield he beares renuerst, the more to heape disdayn.

And to augment the glorie of his guile,
His dearest loue the faire Fidessa loe
Is there possessed of the traytour vile,
Who reapes the haruest sowen by his foe,
Sowen in bloudy field, and bought with woe:
That brothers hand shall dearely well requight
So be, O Queene, you equall fauour showe.
Him litle answerd th'angry Elfin knight:
He neuer meant with words, but swords to
plead his right.

But threw his gauntlet as a sacred pledge, His cause in combat the next day to try: So been they parted both, with harts on edge, To be aueng'd each on his enimy. That night they pas in ioy and iollity, Feasting and courting both in bowre and hall; For Steward was excessiue Gluttonie, That of his plenty poured forth to all; Which doen, the Chamberlain Slowth did to rest them call.

4

Now whenas darkesome night had all displayd Her coleblacke curtein ouer brightest skye, The warlike youthes on dayntie couches layd, Didchace away sweet sleepe from sluggish eye, To muse on meanes of hoped victory. But whenas Morpheus had with leaden mace Arrested all that courtly company, Vp-rose Duessa from her resting place, And to the Paynims lodging comes with silent pace.

45

Whom broad awake she finds, in troublous fit, Forecasting, how his foe he might annoy, And hum amoues with speaches seeming fit: Ah deare Sans ioy, next dearest to Sans foy, Cause of my new griefe, cause of my new ioy, loyous, to see his ymage in mine eye, Andgreeu'd, to thinke how foe did him destroy, That was the flowre of grace and cheualrye; Lo his Fidessa to thy secret faith I flye.

46

With gentle wordes he can her fairely greet, And bad say on the secret of her hart. Then sighing soft, I learne that litle sweet Oft tempred is (quoth she) with muchell smart: For since my brest was launcht with louely dart

Of deare Sansfoy, I neuer loyed howre, But in eternall woes my weaker hart Haue wasted, louing him with all my powre, And for his sake haue felt full many an heavie stowre. At last when perils all I weened past,
And hop'd to reape the crop of all my care,
Into new woes vnweeting I was cast,
By this false faytor, who vnworthy ware
His worthy shield, whom he with guilefull snare
Entrappedslew, and brought to shamefull graue.
Me silly maid away with him he bare,
And euer since hath kept in darksome caue,
For that I would not yeeld, that to Sans-foy
I gaue.

But since faire Sunne hath sperst that lowring clowd,

And to my loathed life now shewes some light, Vnder your beames I will me safely shrowd, From dreaded storme of his disdainfull spight: To you th'inheritance belongs by right Of brothers prayse, to you eke longs his loue. Let not his loue, let not his restlesse spright Be vnreueng'd, that calles to you aboue From wandring Stygian shores, where it doth endlesse moue.

Thereto said he, Faire Dame be nought dismaid For sorrowes past; their griefe is with them Ne yet of present perill be affraid; [gone: For needlesse feare did neuer vantage none, And helplesse hap it booteth not to mone. Dead is Sans-foy, his vitall paines are past, Though greeued ghost for vengeance deepe do grone:

He liues, that shall him pay his dewties last, And guiltie Elfin bloud shall sacrifice in hast.

50

O but I feare the fickle freakes (quoth shee)
Of fortune false, and oddes of armes in field.
Why dame (quoth he) what oddes can euer bee.
Where both do fight alike, to win or yield?
Yea but (quoth she) he beares a charmed shield,
And eke enchaunted armes, that none can perce,
Ne none can wound the man, that does them
wield.

Charmd or enchaunted (answerd he then ferce) I no whit reck, ne you the like need to reherce.

But faire Fidessa, sithens fortunes guile,
Or enimies powre hath now captiued you,
Returne from whence ye came, and rest a while
Till morrow next, that I the Elfe subdew,
And with Sans-foyes dead dowry you endew.
Ay me, that is a double death (she said)
With proud foes sight my sorrow to renew:
Where euer yet I be, my secrete aid
Shall follow you. So passing forth she him obaid.

#### Cant. V.

#### COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

The faithfull knight in equall field subdewes his faithlesse foe, Whom false Duessa saues, and for his cure to hell does goe.

#### \$\interpretation \text{\te\tint{\text{\text{\text{\text{\text{\tinte\tint{\text{\ti}\text{\

The noble hart, that harbours vertuous thought, And is with child of glorious great intent, Can neuer rest, vntill it forth haue brought Th'eternall brood of glorie excellent: Such restlesse passion did all night torment The flaming corage of that Faery knight, Deuizing, how that doughtie turnament With greatest honour he atchieuen might; Still did he wake, and still did watch for dawning light.

At last the golden Orientall gate
Of greatest heauen gan to open faire,
And Phabus fresh, as bridegrome to his mate,
Came dauncing forth, shaking his deawie haire:
And hurld his glistring beames through gloomy
aire. [streight way
Which when the wakeful Elfe perceiu'd,
He started up, and did him selfe prepaire,
In sun-bright armes, and battailous array:
For with that Pagan proud he combat will that
day.

And forth he comes into the commune hall,
Where earely waite him many a gazing eye,
To weet what end to straunger knights may fall.
There many Minstrales maken melody,
To driue away the dull melancholy,
And many Bardes, that to the trembling chord
Can tune their timely voyces cunningly,
And many Chroniclers, that can record
Old loues, and warres for Ladies doen by many
a Lord.

Soone after comes the cruell Sarazin, In wouen maile all armed warily, And sternly lookes at him, who not a pin Does care for looke of liuing creatures eye. They bring them wines of Greece and Araby, And daintie spices fetcht from furthest Ynd, To kindle heat of corage priuily: And in the wine a solemne oth they bynd T'obserue the sacred lawes of armes, that are assynd.

At last forth comes that far renowmed Queene, With royall pomp and Princely maiestie; She is ybrought vnto a paled greene, And placed vnder stately canapee, The warlike feates of both those knights to see. On th'other side in all mens open vew Duessa placed is, and on a tree Sans-foy his shield is hangd with bloudy hew: Both those the lawrell girlonds to the victor dew,

6
A shrilling trompet sownded from on hye,
And vnto battaill bad them selues addresse:
Their shining shieldes about their wrestes they

tye,
And burning blades about their heads do blesse,
The instruments of wrath and heauinesse:
With greedy force each other doth assayle,
And strike so fiercely, that they do impresse
Deepe dinted furrowes in the battred mayle;
The yron walles to ward their blowes are weake
and fraile.

The Sarazin was stout, and wondrous strong, And heaped blowes like yron hammers great: For after bloud and vengeance he did long. The knight was fiers, and full of youthly heat: And doubled strokes, like dreaded thunders threat:

For all for prayse and honour he did fight.
Both stricken strike, and beaten both do beat,
That from their shields forth flyeth firie light,
And helmets hewen deepe, shew marks of
eithers might.

So th'one for wrong, the other striues for right: As when a Gryfon seized of his pray, A Dragon fiers encountreth in his flight, Through widest ayre making his ydle way, That would his rightfull rauine rend away: With hideous horrour both together smight, Andsouceso sore, that they the heauens affray: The wise Southsayer seeing so sad sight, Th'amazed vulgar tels of warres and mortall fight.

So th'one for wrong, the other striues for right, And each to deadly shame would driue his foe: The cruell steele so greedily doth bight In tender flesh, that streames of bloud down flow, [show, With which the armes, that earst so bright did Into a pure vermillion now are dyde: Great ruth in all the gazers harts did grow, Seeing the gored woundes to gape so wyde, That victory they dare not wish to either side.

At last the Paynim chaunst to cast his eye, His suddein eye, flaming with wrathfull fyre. Voon his brothers shield, which hong thereby: Therewith redoubled was his raging yre. And said. Ah wretched sonne of wofull syre. Doest thou sit wayling by black Stygian lake, Whilest here thy shield is hanged for victors hyre, And sluggish german doest thy forces slake, To after send his foe, that him may ouertake?

Goe caytine Elfe, him quickly ouertake, And soone redeeme from his long wandring woe; Goe guiltie ghost, to him my message make, That I his shield have quit from dying foe. Therewith vpon his crest he stroke him so. That twise he reeled, readie twise to fall; End of the doubtfull battell deemed tho The lookers on, and lowd to him gan call The false Duessa, Thine the shield, and I, and all.

Soone as the Faerie heard his Ladie speake, Out of his swowning dreame he gan awake. And quickning faith, that carst was woxen weake, The creeping deadly cold away did shake: Tho mou'd with wrath, and shame, and Ladies

Of all attonce he cast aucaged to bee, And with so'exceeding furie at him strake, That forced him to stoupe voon his knee; Had he not stouped so, he should have cloven bee.

And to him said, Goe now proud Miscreant, Thy selfe thy message doe to german deare, Alone he wandring thee too long doth want: Goe say, his foe thy shield with his doth beare. Therewith his heavie hand he high gan reare, Him to haues laine; when loe a darkesome clowd Vpon him fell: he no where doth appeare, But vanisht is. The Elfe him cals alowd, But answer none receives: the darknes him does shrowd.

In haste Duessa from her place arose, And to him running said, O prowest knight, That ever Ladie to her love did chose, Let now abate the terror of your might, And quench the flame of furious despight, And bloudie vengeance; lo th'infernall powres Couering your foe with cloud of deadly night, Haue borne himhence to Plutoe shalefull bowred. The conquest yours, I yours, the shield, and glory yours.

Not all so satisfide, with greedic eye He sought all round about, his thirstie blade To bath in bloud of faithlesse enemy; Who all that while lay hid in secret shade: He standes amazed, how he thence should fade. At last the trumpets Triumph sound on hie, And running Heralds humble homage made, Greeting him goodly with new victorie, And to him brought the shield, the cause of enmitie.

Where with he goeth to that sougraine Oucene. And falling her before on lowly knee, To her makes present of his service seene: Which she accepts, with thankes, and goodly

Greatly advancing his gay cheualree. Somarcheth home, and by her takes the knight, Whom all the people follow with great glee, Shouting, and clapping all their hands on hight, That all the aire it fils, and flyes to heauen bright.

Home is he brought, and laid in sumptuous bed: Where many skilfull leaches him abide, To salue his burts, that yet still freshly bled. In wine and oyle they wash his woundes wide, And softly can embalme on enery side. And all the while, most heauenly melody About the bed sweet musicke did druide, Him to beguile of gricle and agony: And all the while Duessa wept full bitterly.

As when a wearie traneller that strayes By muddy shore of broad seuen-mouthed Nile, Vnweeting of the perillous wandring wayes, Doth meet a cruell craftie Crocodile. Which in false griefe hyding his harmefull guile, Dothweepefullsore, and sheddeth tender teares: The foolish man, that pitties all this while His mournefull plight, is swallowd vp vnwares, Forgetfull of his owne, that mindes anothers

So wept Duessa vntill euentide.

That shyning lampes in *Ioues* high house were

Then forth she rose, ne lenger would abide, But comes vnto the place, where th'Hethen knight

In slombring swownd nigh voyd of vitall spright, Lay couer'd with inchaunted cloud all day: Whom when she found, as she him left in plight, To wayle his woefull case she would not stay, But to the easterne coast of heauen makes speedy way.

Where griesly Night, with visage deadly sad, That Phabus chearefull face durst neuer vew. And in a foule blacke pitchie mantle clad, She findes forth comming from her darkesome

Where she all day did hide her hated hew. Before the dore her yron charet stood, Alreadie harnessed for journey new: And coleblacke steedes yborne of hellish brood. That on their rustie bits did champ, as they were wood.

Who when she saw Duessa sunny bright, Adornd with gold and iewels shining cleare. She greatly grew amazed at the sight, And th'vnacquainted light began to feare: For neuer did such brightnesse there appeare, And would have backe retyred to her caue, Vntill the witches speech she gan to heare, Saying, Yet O thou dreaded Dame, I craue Abide, till I have told the message, which I haue.

She stayd, and foorth Duessa gan proceede, O thou most auncient Grandmother of all, More old then *love*, whom thou at first didst breede.

Or that great house of Gods cælestiall, Which wast begot in Damogorgons hall, And sawst the secrets of the world vnmade, Why suffredst thou thy Nephewes deare to fall With Elfin sword, most shamefully betrade? Lo where the stout Sansioy doth sleepe in deadly shade.

And him before, I saw with bitter eyes The bold Sansfoyshrinke underneath his speare; And now the pray of fowles in field he lyes, Nor wayld of friends, nor laid on groning beare, That whylome was to me too dearely deare. O what of Gods then boots it to be borne. If old Aveugles sonnes so euill heare? Or who shall not great Nightes children scorne. When two of three her Nephews are so fowle forlorne.

Vp then, vp dreary Dame, of darknesse Queene, Go gather vp the reliques of thy race, Or else goe them auenge, and let be seene, That dreaded Night in brightest day hath place, And can the children of faire light deface. Her feeling speeches some compassion moued In hart, and chaunge in that great mothers face: Yet pittie in her hart was neuer proued

And said, Deare daughter rightly may I rew The fall of famous children borne of mee. And good successes, which their foes ensew: But who can turne the streame of destinee. Or breake the chayne of strong necessitee. Which fast is tyde to loues eternall seat? The sonnes of Day he fauoureth, I see, And by my ruines thinkes to make them great: To make one great by others losse, is bad excheat.

Yet shall they not escape so freely all; For some shall pay the price of others guilt: And he the man that made Sansfoy to fall. Shall with his owne bloud price that he hath spilt. But what art thou, that telst of Nephews kilt? I that do seeme not I, Duessa am. (Quoth she) how ever now in garments gilt. And gorgeous gold arayd I to thee came; Duessa I, the daughter of Deceipt and Shame.

Then bowing downe her aged backe, she kist The wicked witch, saying; In that faire face The false resemblance of Deceipt, I wist Did closely lurke; yet so true-seeming grace It carried, that I scarse in darkesome place Could it discerne, though I the mother bee Of falshood, and root of Duessaes race. O welcome child, whom I have longd to see, And now have seene vnwares. Lo now I go with thee.

Then to her yron wagon she betakes, And with her beares the fowle welfauourd witch: Through mirkesome aire her readie way she makes.

Her twyfold Teme, of which two blacke as pitch. And two were browne, yet each to each vnlich, Did softly swim away, ne euer stampe, Vnlesse she chaunst their stubborne mouths

to twitch:

Then foming tarre, their bridles they would And trampling the fine element, would fiercely

rampe.

So well they sped, that they be come at length Vnto the place, whereas the Paynim lay, Denoid of outward sense, and native strength, Couerd with charmed cloud from vew of day, And sight of men, since his late luckelesse fray. His cruell wounds with cruddy bloud congealed. They binden up so wisely, as they may, And handle softly, till they can be healed: Till then: for euermore she hated, neuer loued. So lay him in her charet, close in night concealed.

And all the while she stood vpon the ground, The wakefull dogs did neuer cease to bay, As giving warning of th'vnwonted sound, With which her yron wheeles did them affray, And her darkegriesly looke them much dismay; The messenger of death, the ghastly Owle With drearie shriekes did also her bewray; And hungry Wolues continually did howle, At her abhorred face, so filthy and so fowle.

3

Thence turning backe in silence soft they stole, And brought the heauic corse with easie pace To yawning gulfe of deepe Auernus hole. By that same hole an entrance darke and bace With smoake and sulphurehiding all the place, Descends to hell: there creature neuer past, That backe returned without heauenly grace; But dreadfull Furies, which their chaines have brast,

And damned sprights sent forth to make ill men aghast.

32

By that same way the direfull dames doe drive. Their mournefull charet, fild with rusty blood, And downe to *Plutoes* house are come biliue: Which passing through, on euery side them stood.

The trembling ghosts with sad amazed mood, Chattring their yron teeth, and staring wide With stonie eyes; and all the hellish brood Of feends infernall flockt on euery side,

To gaze on earthly wight, that with the Night durst ride.

3:

They pas the bitter waues of Acheron,
Where many soules sit wailing woefully,
And come to fiery flood of Phlegelon,
Whereas the damned ghosts in torments fry,
And with sharpe shrilling shrickes doe bootlesse cry,

Cursing high *loue*, the which them thither sent. The house of endlesse paine is built thereby, In which ten thousand sorts of punishment. The cursed creatures doe eternally torment.

.34

Before the threshold dreadfull Cerberus
His three deformed heads did lay along,
Curled with thousand adders venemous,
And lilled forth his bloudie flaming tong:
At them he gan to reare his bristles strong,
And felly gnarre, vntill dayes enemy
Did him appease; then downe his taile he hong
And suffered them to passen quietly:
For she in hell and heauen had power equally.

There was Ixion turned on a wheele, For daring tempt the Queene of heauen to sin; And Sisyphus an huge round stone did reele Against an hill, ne might from lubour lin; There thirstie Tantalus hong by the chin; And Tityus fed a vulture on his maw; Typhaus ioynts were stretched on a gin, Theseus condemned to endlesse slouth by law, And fifty sisters water in leake vessels draw.

36

They all beholding worldly wights in place, Leaue off their worke, ynmindfull of their smart, To gaze on them; who forth by them doe pace, Till they be come vnto the furthest part: Where was a Caue ywrought by wondrous art, Deepe, darke, vneasie, dolefull, comfortlesse, In which sad *Esculapius* farre a part Emprisond was in chaines remedilesse, For that *Hippolytus* rent corse he did redresse.

37

Hippolytus a iolly huntsman was,
That wont in charet chace the forning Bore;
He all his Peeres in beautic did surpas,
But Ladies loue as losse of time forbore:
His wanton stepdame loued him the more,
But when she saw her offred sweets refused
Her loue she turnd to hate, and him before
His father fierce of treason false accused,
And with her gealous termes his open eares
abused.

28

Who all in rage his Sca-god syre besought, Some cursed vengeance on his sonne to cast: From surging gulf two monsters straight were brought,

With dread whereof his chasing steedes aghast, Both charet swift and huntsman our cast. His goodly corps on ragged clifs yrent, Was quite dismembred, and his members

chast
Scattered on enery mountaine, as he went,
That of *Hippolytus* was left no moniment.

20

His cruell stepdame sceing what was donne, Her wicked dayes with wretched knife did end, In death anowing th'innocence of her sonne. Which hearing his rash Syre, began to rend His haire, and hastie tongue, that did offend: Tho gathering vp the relicks of his smart By Dianes meanes, who was Hippolyls frend, Them brought to Esculape, that by his art Did heale themall againe, and ioynedeuery part.

Such wondrous science in mans wit to raine When love auizd, that could the dead reviue. And fates expired could renew againe. Of endlesse life he might him not deprive, But vnto hell did thrust him downe aliue, With flashing thunderbolt ywounded sore: Where long remaining, he did alwaies striue Himselfe with salues to health for to restore, And slake the heavenly fire, that raged evermore.

There auncient Night arriving, did alight From her nigh wearie waine, and in her armes To Æsculapius brought the wounded knight: Whom having softly disarayd of armes. The gan to him discouer all his harmes. Beseeching him with prayer, and with praise, If either salues, or oyles, or herbes, or charmes A fordonne wight from dore of death mote raise.

He would at her request prolong her nephews daies.

Ah Dame (quoth he) thou temptest me in vaine, To dare the thing, which daily yet I rew, And the old cause of my continued paine With like attempt to like end to renew. Is not enough, that thrust from heaven dew Here endlesse penance for one fault I pay, But that redoubled crime with vengeance new Thou biddest me to eeke? Can Night defray The wrath of thundring love, that rules both night and day?

Not so (quoth she) but sith that heavens king From hope of heaven bath thee excluded quight.

Why fearest thou, that canst not hope for thing, And fearest not, that more thee hurten might, Now in the powre of enerlasting Night? Goe to then, O thou farre renowmed sonne Of great Apollo, show thy famous might In medicine, that else bath to thee wonne Great paines, and greater praise, both neuer to be donne.

Her words prenaild: And then the learned leach His cunning hand gan to his wounds to lay, And all things else, the which his art did teach: Which having seene, from thence arose away The mother of dread darknesse, and let stay Aueugles sonne there in the leaches cure, And backe returning tooke her wonted way. To runne her timely race, whilst *Phabus* pure In westerne waves his wearie wagon did recure. High Casar, great Pompey, and fierce Antonius.

45

The false Duessa leaving noyous Night, Returnd to stately pallace of dame Pride: Where when she came, she found the Faery knight

Departed thence, albe his woundes wide Not throughly heald, vnreadie were to ride. Good cause he had to hasten thence away: For on a day his wary Dwarfe had spide, Where in a dongeon deepe huge numbers lay Of caytiue wretched thrals, that wayled night and day.

A ruefull sight, as could be seene with eie: Of whom he learned had in secret wise The hidden cause of their captiuitie. How mortgaging their lives to Couetise. Through wastfull Pride, and wanton Riotise. They were by law of that proud Tyrannesse Proposit with Wrath, and Engles false surmise. Condemned to that Dongeon mercilesse, Where they should live in woe, and die in wretchednesse.

47 POPE There was that great proud king of Babylon, That would compell all nations to adore, And him as onely God to call vpon, Till through celestiall doome throwne out of

Into an Oxe he was transform'd of yore: There also was king Crasus, that enhaunst Hisheart too high through his great riches store; And proud Antiochus, the which advaunst His cursed hand gainst God, and on his altars daunst.

And them long time before, great Numrod was, That first the world with sword and fire warrayd; And after him old Ninus farre did pas In princely pompe, of all the world obayd; There also was that mightie Monarch layd Low vnder all, yet aboue all in pride, That name of native syre did fowle vpbrayd. And would as Ammons sonne be magnifide, Till scornd of God and man a shamefull death he dide.

All these together in one heape were throwne, Like carkases of beasts in butchers stall. And in another corner wide were strowne The antique ruines of the Romaines fall: Great Romulus the Grandsyre of them all. Proud Tarquin, and too lordly Lentulus, Stout Scipio, and stubborne Hanniball, Ambitious Sylla, and sterne Marius,

Amongst these mighty men were wemen mixt, Proud wemen, vame, forgetfull of their yoke: The bold Semiramis, whose sides transhat With sonnes owne blade, her fowle reproches stoke:

Faire Sthenoboxa, that her selfe did choke With wilfull cord, for wanting of her will; High minded Cleopatra, that with stroke Of Aspes sting her selfe did stoutly kill: And thousands moe the like, that did that dongeon fill.

51

Besides the endlesse routs of wretched thralles, Which thither were assembled day by day, From all the world after their wofull falles, Burough wicked pride, and wasted wealthes decay. But most of all, which in that Dongeon lay Fellfrom high Princes courts, or I adies bowres, Where they in idle pompe, or wanton play, Consumed had their goods, and thriftlesse howres,

And lastly throwne themselues into these heavy stowres.

52

Whose case when as the carefull Dwarfe had tould, And made ensample of their mournefull sight Vinto his maister, he no lenger would. There dwell in perill of like painefull plight, But early rose, and ere that dawning light. Discouered had the world to heauen wyde, He by a prime Posterne tooke his flight, That of no enuious eyes he mote be spyde: For doubtlesse death ensewd, if any him descryde.

53

Scarse could be footing find in that lowle way, For many corses, like a great Lay-stall Of murdred men which therein strowed lay, Without remorse, or decent funerall: Which all through that great Princesse pride did fall

And came to shamefull end. And them beside Forth ryding underneath the castell wall, A donghill of dead carkases he spide, The dreadfull spectacle of that sad house of Pride.

i riue.



#### Cant. VI.

#### 

From lawlesse lust by wondrous grace fayre V na is releast: Whom saluage nation does adore, and learnes her wise beheast.

#### 

ı

As when a ship, that flyes faire vider saile, An hidden rocke escaped hath vinwares, That lay in waite her wack for to bewaile, The Marriner yet halfe amazed stares At perill past, and yet in doubt ne dares To roy at his foole-happic ouersight: So doubly is distrest twist roy and cares The dreadlesse courage of this Elfin knight, Hauing escapt so sad ensumples in his sight.

,

Yet sad he was that his too hastic speed The faire Duess' had forst him leaue behind; And yet more sad, that Vna his deare dreed Her truth had staind with treason so vnkind; Yet crime in her could neuer creature find, But for his loue, and for her owne selfe sake, She wandred had from one to other Ynd, Him for to seeke, ne euer would forsake, Till her vnwaresthe herce Sansloy did ouertake.

Who after Archimagoes fowle defeat,
Led her away into a forrest wilde,
And turning wrathfull fire to lustfull heat,
With beastly sin thought her to haue defilde,
And made the vassall of his pleasures vilde.
Yet first he cast by treatie, and by traynes,
Her to perswade, that stubborne fort to yilde:
For greater conquest of hard lone he gaynes,
That workes it to his will, then he that it constraines.

With fawning wordes he courted her a while,
And looking louely, and oft sighing sore,
Herconstant hart did tempt with diuerseguile:
But wordes, and lookes, and sighes she did
abhore,

As rocke of Diamond stedfast euermore. Yet for to feed his fyrie lustfull eye, He snatcht the vele, that hong her face before; Then gan her beautie shine, as brightest skye, And burnt his beastly hart t'efforce her chastitye.

So when he saw his flatt'ring arts to fayle, And subtile engines bet from batteree. With greedy force he gan the fort assayle, Whereof he weend possessed soone to bee, And win rich spoile of ransackt chastetee. Ah heauens, that do this hideous act behold, And heavenly virgin thus outraged see. How can ye vengeance just so long withhold, And hurle not flashing flames vpon that Paynim bold?

tagan

The pitteous maiden carefull comfortlesse, Does throw out thrilling shriekes, and shriek-

The last vaine helpe of womens great distresse. And with loud plaints importuneth the skyes. That molten starres do drop like weeping eyes; And Phæbus flying so most shamefull sight, His blushing face in foggy cloud implyes, And hides for shame. What wit of mortall wight Can now deuise to quit a thrall from such a plight?

Eternall prouidence exceeding thought, Wherenone appeares can make her selfe a way: A wondrous way it for this Lady wrought, From Lyons clawes to pluck the griped pray. Her shrill outcryes and shriekes so loud did bray,

That all the woodes and forestes did resownd; A troupe of Faunes and Satyres far away Within the wood were dauncing in a round. Whiles old Syluanus slept in shady arber sound.

Who when they heard that pitteous strained voice, In hast forsooke their rurall meriment, And ran towards the far rebownded noyce, To weet, what wight so loudly did lament. Vnto the place they come incontinent: Whom when the raging Sarazin espide, A rude, misshapen, monstrous rablement, Whose like he neuer saw, he durst not bide, But got his ready steed, and fast away gan ride.

The wyld woodgods arrived in the place, There find the virgin dolefull desolate, Withruffled rayments, and faire blubbred face, As her outrageous foe had left her late, And trembling yet through feare of former hate; All stand amazed at so vncouth sight, And gin to pittle her vnhappie state, All stand astonied at her beautie bright, In their rude eyes vnworthie of so wofull plight.

She more amaz'd, in double dread doth dwell: And euery tender part for feare does shake: As when a greedie Wolfe through hunger fell A seely Lambe farre from the flocke does take. Of whom he meanes his bloudie feast to make. A Lyon spyes fast running towards him. The innocent pray in hast he does forsake. Which quit from death yet quakes in euery lim With chaunge of feare, to see the Lyon looke so grim.

Such fearefull fit assaid her trembling hart, Ne word to speake, ne ioynt to moue she had: The saluage nation feele her secret smart, And read her sorrow in her count'nance sad: Their frowning forheads with rough hornes yclad.

And rusticke horror all a side doe lay, And gently grenning, shew a semblance glad To comfort her, and feare to put away, Their backward bent knees teach her humbly to obay.

The doubtfull Damzell dare not yet commit Her single person to their barbarous truth, But still twixt feare and hope amazd does sit, Late learnd what harme to hastie trust ensu'th, They in compassion of her tender youth, And wonder of her beautie soueraine, Are wonne with pitty and vnwonted ruth, And all prostrate upon the lowly plaine, Do kisse her feete, and fawne on her with count'nance faine.

Their harts she ghesseth by their humble guise, And yieldes her to extremitie of time; So from the ground she fearelesse doth arise, And walketh forth without suspect of crime: They all as glad, as birdes of toyous Prime, Thence lead her forth, about her dauncing round, Shouting, and singing all a shepheards ryme. And with greene braunches strowing all the ground

Do worship her, as Queene, with oliue girlond cround.

And all the way their merry pipes they sound, That all the woods with doubled Eccho ring, And with their horned feet do weare the ground, Leaping like wanton kids in pleasant Spring. So towards old Syluanus they her bring: Who with the noyse awaked, commeth out, To weet the cause, his weake steps governing And aged limbs on Cypresse stadle stout. And with an yuie twyne his wast is girt about.

15 Far off he wonders, what them makes so glad. Or Bacchus merry fruit they did inuent, Or Cybeles franticke rites have made them mad; They drawing nigh, vnto their God present That flowre of faith and beautie excellent. The God himselfe vewing that mirrhour rare. Stood long amazd, and burnt in his intent: His owne faire Dryope now he thinkes not faire. And Pholoe fowle, when her to this he doth compaire.

The woodborne people fall before her flat, And worship her as Goddesse of the wood: And old Sylvanus selfe bethinkes not, what To thinke of wight so faire, but gazing stood, In doubt to deeme her borne of earthly brood; Sometimes Dame Venus selfe he seemes to sec, But Venus neuer had so sober mood; Sometimes Diana he her takes to bee, But misseth bow, and shaftes, and buskins to her knee.

By vew of her he ginneth to reuiue His ancient loue, and dearest Cyparisse, And calles to mind his pourtraiture aliue, How faire he was, and yet not faire to this, And how he slew with glauncing dart amisse A gentle Hynd, the which the louely boy Did loue as life, aboue all worldly blisse; For griefe whereof the lad n'ould after joy, But pynd away in anguish and selfe-wild annoy.

The wooddy Nymphes, faire Hamadryades Her to behold do thither runne apace, And all the troupe of light-foot Naiades, Flocke all about to see her louely face: But when they vewed have her heavenly grace, They enuie her in their malitious mind, And fly away for feare of fowle disgrace: But all the Satyres scorne their woody kind, And henceforth nothing faire, but her on earth they find.

Glad of such lucke, the luckelesse lucky maid, Did her content to please their feeble eyes, And long time with that saluage people staid, To gather breath in many miseries. During which time her gentle wit she plyes, To teach them truth, which worshipt her in value,

And made her th'Image of Idolatryes; But when their bootlesse zeale she did restraine From her own worship, they her Asse would

worship fayn

It fortuned a noble warlike knight By just occasion to that forrest came. To seeke his kindred, and the lignage right, From whence he tooke his well deserved name: He had in armes abroad wonne muchell fame. And fild far landes with glorie of his might, Plaine, faithfull, true, and enimy of shame, And euer lou'd to fight for Ladies right, But in vaine glorious frayes he litle did delight.

A Satyres sonne yborne in forrest wyld, By straunge aduenture as it did betyde, And there begotten of a Lady myld, Faire Thyamis the daughter of Labryde. That was in sacred bands of wedlocke tyde To Therion, a loose vnruly swayne; Who had more joy to raunge the forrest wyde, And chase the saluage beast with busic payne, Then serue his Ladies loue, and wast in pleasures vayne.

The forlorne mayd did with loues longing burne, And could not lacke her louers company. But to the wood she goes, to serue her turne, And seeke her spouse, that from her still does fly, And followes other game and venery: A Satyre chaunst her wandring for to find, And kindling coles of lust in brutish eye, The lovall links of wedlocke did vabind, And made her person thrall vnto his beastly kind.

So long in secret cabin there he held Her captine to his sensuall desire, Till that with timely fruit her belly sweld, And bore a boy vnto that saluage sire: Then home he suffred her for to retire, For ransome leaving him the late borne childe: Whom till to ryper yeares he gan aspire, He noursled vp in life and manners wilde, Emongst wild beasts and woods, from lawes of men exilde.

For all he taught the tender ymp, was but To banish cowardize and bastard feare: His trembling hand he would him force to put Voon the Lyon and the rugged Beare, And from the she Beares teats her whelps to

And eke wyld roring Buls he would him make To tame, and ryde their backes not made to beare:

And the Robuckes in flight to ouertake, That every beast for feare of him did fly and quake.

Thereby so fearelesse, and so fell he grew,
That his owne sire and maister of his guise
Did often tremble at his horrid vew,
And oft for dread of hurt would him aduise,
The angry beasts not rashly to despise,
Nortoomuch to prouoke; for he would learne
The Lyon stoup to him in lowly wise,
(A lesson hard) and make the Libbard sterne
Leaue roaring, when in rage he for reuenge did
came.

20

And for to make his powre approued more, Wyld beasts in yron yokes he would compell; The spotted Panther, and the tusked Bore, The Pardale swift, and the Tigre cruell; The Antelope, and Wolfe both fierce and fell; And them constraine in equall teme to draw. Such ioy he had, their stubborne harts to quell, And sturdie courage tame with dreadfull aw, That his beheast they feared, as a tyrans law.

27

His louing mother came vpon a day
Vnto the woods, to see her little sonne;
And chaunst vnwares to meet him in the way,
After his sportes, and cruell pastime donne,
When after him a Lyonesse did runne,
That roaring all with rage, did lowd requere
Her children deare, whom he away had wonne:
The Lyon whelpes she saw how he did beare,
And lull in rugged armes, withouten childish
feare.

28

The fearefull Dame all quaked at the sight, And turning backe, gan fast to fly away, Vntill with loue reuokt from vaine affright, She hardly yet perswaded was to stay, And then to him these womanish words gan say;

Ah Satyrane, my dearling, and my joy, For loue of me leaue off this dreadfull play; To dally thus with death, is no lit toy, Go find some other play-fellowes, mine own sweet boy.

20

In these and like delights of bloudy game
He trayned was, till ryper yeares he raught,
And there abode, whilst any beast of name
Walkt in that forest, whom he had not taught
Tofeare his force: and then his courage haught
Desird of forreine foemen to be knowne,
And far abroad for straunge aduentures sought:
In which his might was neuer ouerthrowne,
But through all Faery lond his famous worth
was blown.

39

Yet euermore it was his manner faire,
After long labours and aduentures spent,
Vnto those natiue woods for to repaire,
To see his sire and ofspring auncient.
And now he thither came for like intent;
Where he vnwares the fairest Vna found,
Straunge Lady, in so straunge habiliment,
Teaching the Satyres, which her sat around,
Trew sacred lore, which from her sweet lips did
redound.

31

He wondred at her wisedome heauenly rare, Whose like in womens wit he neuer knew; And when her curteous deeds he did compare, Gan her admire, and her sad sorrowes rew, Blaming of Fortune, which such troubles threw,

And loyd to make proofe of her crueltie On gentle Dame, so hurtlesse, and so trew: Thenceforth he kept her goodly company, And learnd her discipline of faith and veritie.

32

But she all vowd vnto the Redcrosse knight,
His wandring perill closely did lament,
Ne in this new acquaintaunce could delight,
But her deare heart with anguish did torment,
And all her wit in secret counsels spent,
How to escape. At last in privile wise
To Satyrane she shewed her intent;
Who glad to gain such fauour, gan deuise,
How with that pensive Maid he best might
thence arise.

33

So on a day when Satyres all were gone,
To do their seruice to Syluanus old,
The gentle virgin left behind alone
He led away with courage stout and bold.
Too late it was, to Satyres to be told,
Or euer hope recouer her againe:
In vaine he seekes that hauing cannot hold.
So fast he carried her with carefull paine,
That they the woods are past, and come now to
the plaine.

The better part now of the lingring day,
They traueild had, when as they farre espide
A wearie wight forwandring by the way,
And towards him they gan in hast to ride,
To weet of newes, that did abroad betide,
Or tydings of her knight of the Rederosse.
But he them spying, gan to turne aside,
For feare as seemd, or for some feigned losse;
More greedy they of newes, fast towards him do
crosse.

A silly man, in simple weedes forworne, And soild with dust of the long dried way; His sandales were with toilesome trauell torne. And face all tand with scorching sunny ray, As he had traueild many a sommers day, Through boyling sands of Arabie and Ynde; And in his hand a lacobs staffe, to stay His wearie limbes vpon: and eke behind, His scrip did hang, in which his needments he did bind.

The knight approching nigh, of him inquerd Tydings of warre, and of aduentures new; But warres, nor new aduentures none he herd. Then Vna gan to aske, if ought he knew, Or heard abroad of that her champion trew. That in his armour bare a croslet red. Aye me, Deare dame (quoth he) well may I rew To tell the sad sight, which mine eies haue red: These eyes did see that knight both liuing and eke ded.

That cruell word her tender hart so thrild, That suddein cold did runne through every vaine.

And stony horrour all her sences fild With dying fit, that downe she fell for paine. The knight her lightly reared vp againe, And comforted with curteous kind reliefe: Then wonne from death, she bad him tellen plaine The further processe of her hidden griefe; The lesser pangs can beare, who hath endur'd the chiefe.

Then gan the Pilgrim thus, I chaunst this day, This fatall day, that shall I euer rew, To see two knights in trauell on my way (A sory sight) arraung'd in battell new, [hew: Both breathing vengeaunce, both of wrathfull My fearefull flesh did tremble at their strife, To see their blades so greedily imbrew, That drunke with bloud, yet thristed after life: What more? the Redcrosse knight was slaine with Paynim knife.

Ah dearest Lord (quoth she) how might that bee, And he the stoutest knight, that euer wonne? Ah dearest dame (quoth he) how might I see The thing, that might not be, and yet was donne ?

Where is (said Satyrane) that Paynims sonne that him of life, and vs of ioy hath reft? Not far away (quoth he) he hence doth wonne, Foreby a fountaine, where I late him left Wasning his bloudy wounds, that through the steele were cleft.

SPENSER

Therewith the knight thence marched forth in

Whiles Vna with huge heavinesse opprest, Could not for sorrow follow him so fast; And soone he came, as he the place had ghest, Whereas that Pagan proud him selfe did rest, In secret shadow by a fountaine side: Euen he it was, that earst would have supprest Faire Vna: whom when Satyrane espide, With fowle reprechfull words he boldly him defide.

And said, Arise thou cursed Miscreaunt, [train That hast with knightlesse guile and trecherous Faire knighthood fowly shamed, and doest vaunt That good knight of the Rederosse to haueslain: Arise, and with like treason now maintain Thy guilty wrong, or else thee guilty yield. The Sarazin this hearing, rose amain, And catching vp in hast his three square shield. And shining helmet, soone him buckled to the

And drawing nigh him said, Ah misborne Elfe, In cuill houre thy foes thee hither sent. Anothers wrongs to wreake vpon thy selfe: Yet ill thou blamest me, for having blent My name with guile and traiterous intent: That Rederosse knight, perdie, I neuer slew, But had he beene, where earst his armes were lent.

Th'enchaunter vaine his errour should not rew But thou his errour shalt. I hope now prouen trew.

Therewith they gan, both furious and fell, To thunder blowes, and fiersly to assaile Each other bent his enimy to quell, That with their force they perst both plate and And made wide furrowes in their fleshes fraile, That it would pitty any liuing eie. Large floods of bloud adowne their sides did But floods of bloud could not them satisfie: Both hungred after death: both chose to win. or die.

So long they fight, and fell reuenge pursue, That fainting each, themselves to breathen let, And oft refreshed, battell oft renue: As when two Bores with rancling malice met, Their gory sides fresh bleeding fiercely fret, Til breathlesse both them selues aside retire, Where foming wrath, their cruell tuskes they And trample th'earth, the whiles they may

Then backe to fight againe, new breathed and entire.

So fiersly, when these knights had breathed once, They gan to fight returne, increasing more Their puissant force, and cruell rage attonce, With heaped strokes more hugely, then before, That with their drerie wounds and bloudy gore They both deformed, scarsely could be known. By this sad *Vna* fraught with anguish sore, Led with their noise, which through the aire was thrown.

Arriu'd, where they in erth their fruitles bloud had sown.

Whom all so soone as that proud Sarazin
Espide, he gan reuiue the memory
Of his lewd lusts, and late attempted sin,
And left the doubtfull battell hastily,
To catch her, newly offred to his eie:
But Satyrane with strokes him turning, staid,
And sternely bad him other businesse plie,
Then hunt the steps of pure vnspotted Maid:
Wherewith he all enrag'd, these bitter speaches
said.

O foolish faeries sonne, what furie mad
Hath thee incenst, to hast thy dolefull fate?
Were it not better, I that Lady had,
Then that thou hadst repented it too late?
Mostsencelesseman he, that himselfedoth hate,
To loue another. Lo then for thine ayd
Here take thy louers token on thy pate.
So they to fight; the whiles the royall Mayd
Fled farre away, of that proud Paynim sore
afrayd.

But that false Pilgrim, which that leasing told. Being in deed old Archimage, did stay In secret shadow, all this to behold, And much reioyced in their bloudy fray: But when he saw the Damsell passe away He left his stond, and her pursewd apace, In hope to bring her to her last decay. But for to tell her lamentable cace, And eke this battels end, will need another place.



#### Cant. VII.

#### 

The Redcrosse knight is captiue made
By Gyaunt proud opprest,
Prince Arthur meets with V na greatly with those newes distrest.

#### 

What man so wise, what earthly wit so ware, As to descry the crafty cunning traine, By which deceipt doth maske in visour faire, And cast her colours dyed deepe in graine, To seeme like Truth, whose shape she well can faire.

And fitting gestures to her purpose frame, The guiltlesse man with guile to entertaine? Great maistresse of herart was that false Dame, The false Duessa, cloked with Fidessaes name.

Who when returning from the drery Night, She fownd not in that perilous house of Pryde, Where she had left, the noble Rederosse knight, Her hoped pray, she would no lenger bide, But forth she went, to seeke him far and wide. Ere long she fownd, whereas he wearie sate, To rest him selle, foreby a fountaine side, Disarmed all of yron-coted Plate, And by his side his steed the grassy forage ate.

He feedes vpon the cooling shade, and bayes His sweatie forehead in the breathing wind, Which through the trembling leaues full gently

wherein the cherefull birds of sundry kind
Do chaunt sweet musick, to delight his mind:
The Witch approching gan him fairely greet,
And with reproch of carelesnesse vnkind
Vpbrayd, for leauing her in place vnmeet,
With fowle words tempring faire, soure gall
with hony sweet.

Vnkindnesse past, they gan of solace treat, And bathe in pleasaunce of the ioyous shade, Which shielded them against the boyling heat, And with greene boughes decking a gloomy glade,

About the fountaine like a girlond made; Whose bubbling waue did euer freshly well, Ne euer would through feruent sommer fade. The sacred Nymph, which therein wont to dwell, Was out of *Dianes* fauour, as it then befell.

---

The cause was this: one day when *Phoebe* fayre With all her band was following the chace, This Nymph, quite tyr'd with heat of scorching sat downet o rest in middest of the race: [ayre The goddesse wroth gan fowly her disgrace, And bad the waters, which from her did flow, Be such as she her selfe was then in place. Thenceforth her waters waxed dull and slow, And all that drunke thereof, did faint and feeble grow.

Hereof this gentle knight vnweeting was, And lying downe vpon the sandie graile, Drunke of the streame, as cleare as cristall glas; Eftsoones his manly forces gan to faile, And mightie strong was turnd to feeble fraile. His chaunged powres at first themselues not felt, Till crudled cold his corage gan assaile, And chearefull bloud in faintnesse chilldid melt, Which like a feuer fit through all his body swelt.

Yet goodly court he made still to his Dame, I'ourd out in loosnesse on the grassy grownd, Both carelesse of his health, and of his fame: Till at the last he heard a dreadfull sownd, Which through the wood loud bellowing, did\_rebownd,

That all the earth for terrour seemd to shake, And trees did tremble. Th'Elfe therewith astownd,

Vpstarted lightly from his looser make, And his vnready weapons gan in hand to take.

8

But ere he could his armour on him dight, Or get his shield, his monstrous enimy With sturdie steps came stalking in his sight, An hideous Geant horrible and hye, That with his talnesse seemd to threat the skye, The ground eke groned vnder him for dreed; His liuing like saw neuer liuing eye, Ne durst behold: his stature did exceed

Ne durst behold: his stature did exceed
The hight of three the tallest sonnes of mortall
seed.

The greatest Earth his vncouth mother was, And blustring *Eolus* his boasted sire, Who with his breath, which through the world doth pas,

Her hollow womb did secretly inspire, And fild her hidden caues with stormie yre, Thatshe conceiu'd; and trebling the dew time, In which the wombes of women do expire, Brought forth this monstrous masse of earthly slime,

Puft vp with emptie wind, and fild with sinfull

So growen great through arrogant delight Of th'high descent, whereof he was yborne, And through presumption of his matchlesse

All other powres and knighthood he did scorne. Such now he marcheth to this man forlorne, And left to losse: his stalking steps are stayde Vpon a snaggy Oke, which he had torne Out of his mothers bowelles, and it made His mortall mace, wherewith his foemen he dismayde.

That when the knight he spide, he gan aduance With huge force and insupportable mayne, And towardeshim with dreadfull fury praunce; Who haplesse, and eke hopelesse, all in vaine Did to him pace, sad battaile to darrayne, Disarmd, disgrast, and inwardly dismayde,

Disarmd, disgrast, and inwardly dismayde, And eke so faint in euery ioynt and vaine, Through that fraile fountaine, which him feeble made,

That scarsely could he weeld his bootlesse single blade.

The Geaunt strooke so maynly mercilesse,
That could haue ouerthrowne a stony towre,
And were not heauenly grace, that him did blesse.
He had beene pouldred all, as thin as flowre:
But he was wary of that deadly stowre,
And lightly lept from underneath the blow:
Yet so exceeding was the villeins powre,
That with the wind it did him ouerthrow,
And all his sences stound, that still he lay full
low.

As when that diuelish yron Engin wrought In deepest Hell, and framd by Furies skill, With windy Nitre and quick Sulphur fraught, And ramd with bullet round, ordaind to kill, Conceiueth fire, the heauens it doth fill With thundring noyse, and all the ayre doth choke,

That none can breath, nor see, nor heare at will, Through smouldry cloud of duskish stincking smoke,

That th'onely breath him daunts, who hath escapt the stroke.

So daunted when the Geaunt saw the knight, His heauie hand he heaued vp on hye, And him to dust thought to haue battred quight, Vntill Duessa loud to him gan crye; O great Orgoglio, greatest vnder skye, O hold thy mortall hand for Ladies sake, Hold for my sake, and do him not to dye, But vanquisht thine eternall bondslaue make, And me thy worthy meed vnto thy Leman take.

He hearkned, and did stay from further har nes,
To gayne so goodly guerdon, as she stake:
So willingly she came into his armes,
Who her as willingly to grace did take,
And was possessed of his new found make.
Then up he tooke the slombred sencelesse corse,
And ere he could out of his swowne awake,
Him to his castle brought with hastie forse,
And in a Dongeon deepe him threw without
remorse.

16

From that day forth *Duessa* was his deare, And highly honourd in his haughtie eye, He gaue her gold and purple pall to weare, And triple crowne set on her head full hye, And her endowd with royall maiestye: Then for to make her dreaded more of men, And peoples harts with awfull terrour tye, A monstrous beast ybred in filthy fen He chose, which he had kept long time in darksome den.

17

Such one it was, as that renowmed Snake Which great Alcides in Stremona slew, Long fostred in the filth of Lerna lake, Nhose many heads out budding euer new, Did breed him endlesse labour to subdew: But this same Monster much more vgly was; For seuen great heads out of his body grew, An yron brest, and backe of scaly bras, And all embrewd in bloud, his eyes did shine as glas.

18

His tayle was stretched out in wondrous length, That to the house of heanenly gods it raught, And with extorted powre, and borrow'd strength,

Theeuer-burning lamps from thence it brought, And prowdly threw to ground, as things of nought;

And vinderneath his filthy feet did tread The sacred things, and holy heasts foretaught. Vpon this dreadfull Beast with seuenfold head He set the false *Duessa*, for more aw and dread.

19

The wofull Dwarfe, which saw his maisters fall, Whiles he had keeping of his grasing steed, And valiant knight become a caytiue thrall, When all was past, tooke vp his forlorne weed, His mightie armour, missing most at need; His siluer shield, now idle maisterlesse; His poynant speare, that many made to bleed. The ruefull moniments of heauinesse, And with them all departes, to tell his great distresse.

20

He had not trauaild long, when on the way
He wofull Ladie, wofull Vna met,
Fast flying from the Paynims greedy pray,
Whilest Satyrane him from pursuit did let:
Who when her eyes she on the Dwarfe had set,
And saw the signes, that deadly tydings spake,
She fell to ground for sorrowfull regret,
And liuely breath her sad brest did forsake,
Yet might her pitteous hart be seene to pant
and quake.

2 I

The messenger of so vnhappie newes Would faine haue dyde: dead was his hart within,

Yet outwardly some little comfort shewes: At last recouring hart, he does begin To rub her temples, and to chause her chin, And euery tender part does tosse and turne: So hardly he the flitted life does win, Vnto her natiue prison to retourne: Then gins her gricued ghost thus to lament and

mourne.

Ye dreary instruments of dolefull sight, That doe this deadly spectacle behold, Why do ye lenger feed on loathed light, Or liking find to gaze on earthly mould, Sith cruell fates the carefull threeds vnfould, The which my life and loue together tyde? Now let the stony dart of senselesse cold Perce to my hart, and pas through euery side, And let eternall night so sad sight frome hide.

2.3

O lightsome day, the lampe of highest *Ioue*, First made by him, mens wandring wayes to guyde,

When darknesse he in deepest dongeon droue, Henceforth thy hated face for euer hyde, And shut vp heauens windowes shyning wyde: For earthly sight can nought but sorrow breed, And late repentance, which shall long abyde. Mine eyes no more on vanitie shall feed, But seeled vp with death, shall haue their deadly meed.

2.1

Then downe againe she fell vnto the ground; But he her quickly reared vp againe:
Thrise did she sinke adowne in deadly swownd, And thrise he her reviu'd with busic paine:
At last when hie recouer'd had the raine,
And ouer-wrestled his strong enemie,
With foltring tong, and trembling euery vaine,
Tell on (quoth she) the wofull Tragedie,
The which these reliques sad present vnto mine
eie.

Tempestuous fortune hath spent all her spight, And thrilling sorrew throwne his vtmost dart; Thy sad tongue cannot tell more heauy plight. Then that I feele, and harbour in mine hart: Whohath endur'd the whole, can be are each part. If death it be, it is not the first wound, That launched hath my brest with bleeding smart.

Begin, and end the bitter balefull stound; If lesse, then that I feare, more fauour I have found.

Thengan the Dwarfe the whole discourse declare,

The subtill traines of Archimago old;
The wanton loues of false Fidessa faire,
Bought with the bloud of vanquisht Paynim
bold:
The wretched payre transform'd to treen
The house of Pride, and perils round about;
The combatawhich he with Sansioy did hould;
The lucklesse conflict with the Gyant stout,
Wherein captiu'd, of life or death he stood in
doubt.

She heard with patience all vnto the end,
And stroue to maister sorrowfull assay,
Which greater grew, the more she did contend,
And almost rent her tender hart in tway;
And loue fresh coles vnto her fire did lay:
For greater loue, the greater is the losse.
Was neuer Ladie loued dearer day,
Then she did loue the knight of the Redcrosse;
For whose deare sake so many troubles her did
tosse.

At last when feruent sorrow slaked was, She vp arose, resoluing him to find Alue or dead: and forward forth doth pas, All as the Dwarfe the way to her assynd: And enermore in constant carefull mind She fed her wound with fresh renewed bale; Long tost with stormes, and bet with bitter wind,

High ouer hils, and low adowne the dale, She wandred many a wood, and measurd many a vale.

At last she chaunced by good hap to meet A goodly knight, faire marching by the way Together with his Squire, arayed meet: His glitterand armour shined farre away, Like glauncing light of *Phabus* brightest ray; From top to toe no place appeared bare, That deadly dint of steele endanger may: Athwart his brest a bauldrick braue he ware, That shynd, like twinkling stars, with stons most pretious rare.

30
And in the midst thereof one pretious stone

Of wondrous worth, and eke of wondrous mights,
Shapt like a Ladies head, exceeding shone,
Like Hesperus emongst the lesser lights,
And stroue for to amaze the weaker sights;
Thereby his mortall blade full comely hone

Like Hesperus emongst the lesser lights,
And strone for to amaze the weaker sights;
Thereby his mortall blade full comely hong
In yuory sheath, yearu'd with curious slights;
Whose hilts were burnisht gold, and handle
strong

Of mother pearle, and buckled with a golden tong.

His haughtic helmet, horrid all with gold, Both glorious brightnesse, and great terrour bred:

For all the crest a Dragon did enfold With greedle pawes, and ouer all did spred His golden wings: his dreadfull hideous hed Close couched on the beuer, seem'd to throw From flaming mouth bright sparkles fierie red, That suddeine horror to faint harts did show; And scaly tayle was stretcht adowne his backe full low.

Vpon the top of all his loftie crest,
A bunch of haires discolourd diuersly,
Withsprincled pearle, and gold full richly drest,
Did shake, and seem'd to dannee for iollity,
Like to an Almond tree ymounted hye
On top of greene Selinis all alone,
With blossomes braue bedecked daintily;
Whose tender locks do tremble euery one
At euery little breath, that vnder heauen is
blowne.

His warlike shield all closely couer'd was,
Ne might of mortall eye be euer scene;
Not made of steele, nor of enduring bras,
Such earthly mettals soone consumed bene:
But all of Diamond perfect pure and cleene
It framed was, one massic entire mould,
Hewen out of Adamant rocke with engines keene,
That point of speare it neuer percen could,
Ne dint of direfull sword diuide the substance
would.

The same to wight he neuer wont disclose, But when as monsters huge he would dismay, Or daunt vnequall armies of his foes, Or when the flying heauens he would affray; For so exceeding shone his glistring ray, That *Phabus* golden face it did attaint, As when a cloud his beames doth ouer-lay; And siluer *Cynthia* wexed pale and faint, As when her face is staynd with magicke arte constraint.

.

No magicke arts hereof had any might,

Nor bloudie wordes of bold Enchaunters call, But all that was not such, as seemd in sight, Before that shield did fade, and suddeine fall: And when him list the raskall routes appall, Men into stones therewith he could transmew, And stones to dust, and dust to nought at all; And when him list the prouder lookes subdew, He would them gazing blind, or turne to other hew.

36

Ne let it seeme, that credence this exceedes, For he that made the same, was knowne right well

To haue done much more admirable deedes. It *Merlin* was, which whylome did excell All liuing wightes in might of magicke spell: Both shield, and sword, and armour all he wrought

For this young Prince, when first to armes he fell:

But when he dyde, the Faerie Queene it brought To Faerie lond, where yet it may be seene, if sought.

A gentle youth, his dearely loued Squire
His speare of heben wood behind him bare,
Whose harmefull head, thrice heated in thefire,
Had riuen many a brest with pikehead square;
A goodly person, and could menage faire
His stubborne steed with curbed canon bit,
Who vnder him did trample as the aire,
And chauft, that any on his backe should sit;
The yron rowels into frothy fome he bit.

38

When as this knight nigh to the Ladie drew,
With louely court he gan her entertaine;
But when he heard her answeres loth, he knew
Some secret sorrow did her heart distraine:
Which to allay, and calme her storming paine,
Faire feeling words he wisely gan display,
And for her humour fitting purpose faine,
To tempt the cause it selfe for to bewray;
Wherewith emmou'd, these bleeding words she
gan to say.

What worlds delight, or ioy of liuing speach Can heart, so plung'd in sea of sorrowes deepe, And heaped with so huge misfortunes, reach? The carefull cold beginneth for to creepe, And in my heart his yron arrow steepe, Soone as I thinke vpon my bitter bale: Such helplesse harmes yts better hidden keepe. Then rip vp griefe, where it may not auaile, My last left comfort is, my woes to weepe and waile.

4

Ah Ladie deare, quoth then the gentle knight, Wellmay I weene, yourgriefe is wondrous great; For wondrous great griefe groneth in my spright, Whiles thus I heare you of your sorrowes treat. But wofull Ladie let me you intrete, For to vnfold the anguish of your hart: Mishaps are maistred by aduice discrete, And counsell mittigates the greatest smart; Found neuer helpe, who neuer would his hurts impart.

41

O but (quoth she) great griefe will not be tould, And can more easily be thought, then said. Right so; (quoth he) but he, that neuer would, Could neuer: will to might giues greatest aid. But griefe (quoth she) does greater grow displaid, If then it find not helpe, and breedes despaire. Despaire breedes not (quoth he) where faith is staid.

No faith so fast (quoth she) but flesh does paire. Flesh may empaire (quoth he) but reason can repaire.

. pane. 42

His goodly reason, and well guided speach
So deepe did settle in her gratious thought,
That her perswaded to disclose the breach,
Which loue and fortune in her heart had
wrought,
And said; Faire Sir, I hope good hap hath
You to inquire the secrets of my griefe,
Or that your wisedome will direct my thought,
Or that your prowesse can me yield reliefe:
Then heare the storie sad, which I shall tell you
briefe.

The forlorne Maiden, whom your eyes haue seene The laughing stocke of fortunes mockeries, Am th'only daughter of a King and Queene, Whose parents deare, whilest equall destinies Did runne about, and their felicities The fauourable heauens did not enuy, Didspread their rulethrough all the territories, Which Phison and Euphrales floweth by, And Gehons golden waues doe wash continually.

44

Till that their cruell cursed enemy,
An huge great Dragon horrible in sight,
Bred in the loathly lakes of *Tartary*,
With murdrous rauine, and deuouring might
Their kingdome spoild, and countrey wasted
quight:

Themselues, for feare into his iawes to fall, He forst to castle strong to take their flight, Where fast embard in mightie brasen wall, He has them now foure yeres besiegd to make them thrall.

Full many knights aduenturous and stout Haue enterprize that Monster to subdew : From euery coast that heaven walks about, Haue thither come the noble Martiall crew. That famous hard atchieuements still pursew. Yet neuer any could that girlond win. But all still shronke, and still he greater grew: All they for want of faith, or guilt of sin, The pitteous pray of his fierce crueltie have bin.

At last yledd with farre reported praise, Which flying fame throughout the world had spred,

Of doughtieknights, whom Faery landdid raise. That noble order hight of Maidenhed. Forthwith to court of Gloriane I sped, Of Gloriane great Queene of glory bright, Whose kingdomes seat Cleopolis is red. There to obtaine some such redoubted knight. That Parents deare from tyrants powre deliuer might.

It was my chance (my chance was faire and good) There for to find a fresh vnproued knight, Whose manly hands imbrew'd in guiltie blood Had neuer bene, ne euer by his might Had throwne to ground the vnregarded right: Yet of his prowesse proofe he since hath made (I witnesse am) in many a cruell fight; The groning ghosts of many one dismaide Haue felt the bitter dint of his auenging blade.

And ye the forlorne reliques of his powre, His byting sword, and his devouring speare. Which have endured many a dreadfull stowre, Can speake his prowesse, that did earst you

And well could rule: now he hath left you heare, To be the record of his ruefull losse, And of my dolefull disauenturous deare: O heavie record of the good Redcrosse, Where have you left your Lord, that could so well you tosse?

Well hoped I, and faire beginnings had, That he my captive langour should redeeme, Till all vnweeting, an Enchaunter bad His sence abusd, and made him to misdeeme My loyalty, not such as it did seeme; That rather death desire, then such despight. Be judge ye heavens, that all things right esteeme.

How I him lou'd, and loue with all my might, So thought I eke of him, and thinke I thought aright.

Thenceforth me desolate he quite forsooke. To wander, where wilde fortune would me lead. And other bywaies he himselfe betooke, Where neuer foot of liuing wight did tread, That brought not backe the balefull body dead; In which him chaunced false Duessa meete. Mine onely foe, mine onely deadly dread, Who with her witchcraft and misseeming sweete, Inueigled him to follow her desires vnmeete.

At last by subtill sleights she him betraid Vnto his foe, a Gyant huge and tall, Who him disarmed, dissolute, dismaid, Vinwares surprised, and with mightie mall The monster mercilesse him made to fall. Whose fall did neuer foe before behold: And now in darkesome dungeon, wretched thrall.

Remedilesse, for aie he doth him hold; This is my cause of griefe, more great, then may be told.

Ere she had ended all, she gan to faint: But he her comforted and faire bespake, Certes, Madame, ye have great cause of plaint, That stoutest heart, I weene, could cause to quake.

But be of cheare, and comfort to you take: For till I have acquit your captive knight, Assure your selfe, I will you not forsake. His chearefull words reuiu'd her chearelesse spright. feuer right. So forth they went, the Dwarfe them guiding

## Cant. VIII.

## 

Faire virgin to redeeme her deare brings Arthur to the fight: Who slayes the Gyant, wounds the beast, and strips Duessa quight.

## 

Ay me, how many perils doe enfold The righteous man, to make him daily fall? Were not, that heavenly grace doth him vphold, And stedfast truth acquite him out of all. Her loue is firme, her care continuall, So oft as he through his owne foolish pride, Or weaknesse is to sinfull bands made thrall: Else should this Redcrosse knight in bands haue dyde. (thither guide. For whose deliuerance she this Prince doth

They sadly traueild thus, vntill they came Nigh to a castle builded strong and hie: Then cryde the Dwarfe, lo yonder is the same, In which my Lord my liege doth lucklesse lie, Thrall to that Gyants hatefull tyrannie: Therefore, deareSir, your mightiepowres assay. The noble knight alighted by and by From loftie steede, and bad the Ladie stay, To see what end of fight should him befall that day.

So with the Squire, th admirer of his might, He marched forth towards that castle wall; Whose gates he found fast shut, ne liuing wight To ward the same, nor answere commers call. Then tooke that Squire an horne of bugle small, Which hong adowne his side in twisted gold, And tassels gay. Wyde wonders ouer all Of that same hornes great vertues weren told, Which had approued bene in vses manifold.

4

Was neuer wight, that heard that shrilling sound, But trembling feare did feele in euery vaine; Three miles it might be easie heard around, And Ecchoes three answerd it selfe againe: No false enchauntment, nor deceiptfull traine Might once abide the terror of that blast, But presently was voide and wholly vaine: No gate so strong, no locke so firme and fast, But with that percing noise flew open quite, or brast.

5

The same before the Geants gate he blew,
That all the castle quaked from the ground,
And euery dore of freewill open flew.
The Gyant selfe dismaied with that sownd,
Where he with his Duessa dalliance fownd,
In hast came rushing forth from inner bowre,
With staring countenance sterne, as one
astownd,
And staggering steps, to weet, what suddein
Had wrought that horror strange, and dar'd his

6

dreaded powre.

And after him the proud *Duessa* came. High mounted on her manyheaded beast, And euery head with fyric tongue did flame, And euery head was crowned on his creast, And bloudie mouthed with late cruell feast. That when the knight beheld, his mightie shild Vpon his manly arme he soone addrest, And at him fercely flew, with courage fild, And eger greedinesse through euery member thrild.

Therewith the Gyant buckled him to fight, Inflam'd with scornefull wrath and high disdaine, And lifting up his dreadfull club on hight, Allarm'd with ragged snubbes and knottie graine, Him thought at first encounter to haue slaine. But wise and warie was that noble Pere, And lightly leaping from so monstrous maine, Did faire auoide the violence him nere; It booted nought, to thinke, such thunderbolts to beare.

8

Ne shame he thought to shunne so hideous might:
The idle stroke, enforcing furious way,
Missing the marke of his misaymed sight
Did fall to ground, and with his heauie sway
So deepely dinted in the driuen clay,
Thatthree yardes deepe a furrow vp did throw:
The sad earth wounded with so sore assay,
Did grone full grieuous vnderneath the blow,
And trembling with strange feare, did like an
earthquake show.

As when almightie *Ioue* in wrathfull mood,
To wreake the guilt of mortall sins is bent,
Hurles forth his thundring dart with deadly food,
Enrold in flames, and smouldring dreriment,
Through riuen cloudes and molten firmament;
The fierce threeforked engin making way,
Both loftie towres and highest trees hath rent,
And all that might his angrie passage stay,
And shooting in the earth, casts vp a mount of
clay.

His boystrous club, so buried in the ground, He could not rearen vp againe so light, But that the knight him at auantage found, And whiles he stroue his combred clubbe to quight Out of the earth, with blade all burning bright He smote off his left arme, which like a blocke Did fall to ground, depriu'd of natiue might; Large streames of bloud out of the truncked stocke

Forth gushed, like fresh water streame from riven rocke.

11

Dismaied with so desperate deadly wound,
And eke impatient of vnwonted paine,
He loudly brayd with beastly yelling sound,
That all the fields rebellowed againe;
As great a noyse, as when in Cymbrian plaine
An heard of Bulles, whom kindly raged oth sting,
Do for the milkie mothers want complaine,
And fill the fields with troublous bellowing,
The neighbour woods around with hollow
murmur ring.

That when his deare Duessa heard, and saw The euill stownd, that daungerd her estate, Vnto his aide she hastily did draw Her dreadfull beast, who swolne with bloud of

Came ramping forth with proud presumpteous

And threat ned all his heads like flaming brands. But him the Squire made quickly to retrate, Encountring fierce with single sword in hand, And twixt him and his Lord did like a bulwarke stand.

The proud Duessa full of wrathfull spight, And fierce disdaine, to be affronted so, Enforst her purple beast with all her might That stop out of the way to ouerthroe, Scorning the let of so vnequall foe: But nathemore would that courageous swayne To her yeeld passage, gainst his Lord to goe, But with outrageous strokes did himrestraine, And with his bodie bard the way atwixt them twaine.

Then tooke the angrie witch her golden cup, Which still she bore, replete with magick artes; Death and despeyre did many thereof sup, And secret poyson through their inner parts, Th'eternall bale of heavie wounded harts;

Which after charmes and some enchauntments said.

She lightly sprinkled on his weaker parts; Therewith his sturdie courage soone was quayd, And all his senses were with suddeine dread dismayd.

So downe he fell before the cruell beast. Who on his necke his bloudie clawes did seize, That life nigh crusht out of his panting brest: No powre he had to stirre, nor will to rize. That when the carefull knight gan well auise, He lightly left the foe, with whom he fought, And to the beast gan turne his enterprise; For wondrous anguish in his hart it wrought, To see his loued Squire into such thraldome brought.

And high advauncing his bloud-thirstie blade, Stroke one of those deformed heads so sore, That of his puissance proud ensample made; His monstrous scalpe downe to his teeth it tore, And that misformed shape mis-shaped more: A sea of bloud gusht from the gaping wound, That her gay garments staynd with filthy gore, And overflowed all the field around; That ouer shoes in bloud he waded on the

ground.

Thereat he roared for exceeding paine, That to have heard, great horror would have And scourging th'emptie ayre with his long Through great impatience of his grieued hed His gorgeous ryder from her loftie sted Wouldhaue cast downe, and trod in durtie myre, Had not the Gyant soone her succoured; Who all enrag'd with smart and franticke yre. Came hurtling in full fierce, and forst the knight retyre.

The force, which wont in two to be disperst, In one alone left hand he now vnites,

Which is through rage more strong then both were erst:

With which his hideous club aloft he dites, And at his foe with furious rigour smites. That strongest Oake might seeme to ouerthrow: The stroke vpon his shield so heavie lites, That to the ground it doubleth him full low: What mortall wight could cuer beare so monstrous blow?

And in his fall his shield, that couered was. Did loose his vele by chaunce, and open flew: The light whereof, that heavens light did pas, Such blazing brightnesse through the aier threw, That eye mote not the same endure to vew. Which when the Gyaunt spyde with staring eye, He downe let fall his arme, and soft withdrew His weapon huge, that heated was on hye For to have slaine the man, that on the ground did lve.

And eke the fruitfull-headed beast, amaz'd At flashing beames of that sunshiny shield, Became starke blind, and all his senses daz'd, That downe he tumbled on the durtie field, And seem'd himselfe as conquered to yield. Whom when his maistresse proud perceiu'd to fall, Whiles yet his feeble feet for faintnesse reeld, Viito the Gyant loudly she gan call. () helpe Orgoglio, helpe, or else we perish all.

At her so pitteous cry was much amoou'd Her champion stout, and for to ayde his frend, Againe his wonted angry weapon proou'd: But all in vaine: for he has read his end In that bright shield, and all their forces spend Themselves in vaine: for since that glauncing sight.

He hath no powre to hurt, nor to defend; As where th' Almighties lightning brond does light, It dimmes the dazed eyen, and daunts the senses quight.

Whom when the Prince, to battell new addrest, And threatning high his dreadfull stroke did see. His sparkling blade about his head he blest, And smote off quite his right leg by the knee. That downe he tombled: as an aged tree. High growing on the top of rocky clift, Whose hartstrings with keene steele nigh hewen be.

The mightie trunck halfe rent, with ragged rift Doth roll adowne the rocks, and fall with fearefull drift.

Or as a Castle reared high and round, By subtile engine and malitious slight Is vindermined from the lowest ground. And her foundation forst, and feebled quight, At last downe falles, and with her heaped hight Her hastie ruine does more heavie make, And yields it selfe vnto the victours might; Such was this Gyaunts fall, that seemd to shake The stedfast globe of earth, as it for feare did quake.

The knight then lightly leaping to the pray, With mortall steele him smot againe so sore, That headlesse his vnweldy bodie lay. All wallowd in his owne fowle bloudy gore,

Which flowed from his wounds in wondrous

But soone as breath out of his breast did pas, That huge great body, which the Gyaunt bore, Was vanisht quite, and of that monstrous mas Was nothing left, but like an emptie bladder

Whose grieuous fall, when false Duessa spide, Her golden cup she cast vnto the ground, And crowned mitre rudely threw aside; Such percing griefe her stubborne hart did wound.

That she could not endure that dolefull stound, But leaving all behind her, fled away: The light-foot Squireher quickly turnd around, And by hard meanes enforcing her to stay, So brought vnto his Lord, as his deserued pray.

The royall Virgin, which beheld from farre, In pensiue plight, and sad perplexitie, The whole atchieuement of this doubtfull warre, Came running fast to greet his victorie. With sober gladnesse, and myld modestie, And with sweet joyous cheare him thus bespake: Faire braunch of noblesse, flowre of cheualrie, That with your worth the world amazed make, How shall I quite the paines, ye suffer for my sake ?

And you fresh bud of vertue springing fast, Whom these sad eyes saw nigh vnto deaths

What hath poore Virgin for such perill past, Wherewith you to reward? Accept therefore My simple selfe, and seruice euermore: And he that high does sit, and all things see With equal eyes, their merites to restore, Behold what ye this day have done for mee, And what I cannot quite, requite with vsuree.

But sith the heavens, and your faire handeling Haue made you maister of the field this day, Your fortune maister eke with gouerning. And well begun end all so well. I prav. Ne let that wicked woman scape away: For she it is, that did my Lord bethrall, My dearest Lord, and deepe in dongeon lay. Where he his better dayes hath wasted all. O heare, how piteous he to you for any does call.

Forthwith he gaue in charge vnto his Squire, That scarlot whore to keepen carefully: Whiles he himselfe with greedie great desire Into the Castle entred forcibly, Where living creature none he did espye: Then gan he lowdly through the house to call: But no man car'd to answere to his crye. There raignd a solemne silence ouer all. Nor voice was heard, nor wight was seene in bowre or hall.

At last with creeping crooked pace forth came An old old man, with beard as white as

That on a staffe his feeble steps did frame, And guide his wearie gate both too and fro: For his eye sight him failed long ygo, And on his arme a bounch of keyes he bore. The which vnused rust did ouergrow: Those were the keyes of euery inner dore, But he could not them vse, but kept them still in store.

But very vncouth sight was to behold, How he did fashion his vntoward pace, For as he forward moou'd his footing old. So backward still was turnd his wrincled face. Vnlike to men, who euer as they trace. Both feet and face one way are wont to lead. This was the auncient keeper of that place, And foster father of the Gyant dead: His name Ignaro did his nature right aread.

His reuerend haires and holy grauitie
The knight much honord, as beseemed well,
And gently askt, where all the people bee,
Which in that stately building wont to dwell.
Who answerd him full soft, he could not tell.
Againe he askt, where that same knight was

layd,

Whom great Orgoglio with his puissaunce fell Had made his caytiue thrall; againe he sayde, He could not tell: ne euer other answere made.

3

Then asked he, which way he in might pas: He could not tell, againe he answered. Thereat the curteous knight displeased was, And said, Old sire, it seemes thou hast not red How ill it sits with that same siluer hed In vaine to mocke, or mockt in vaine to bee: But if thou be, as thou art pourtrahed With natures pen, in ages graue degree, Aread in grauer wise, what I demaund of thee.

34

His answere likewise was, he could not tell. Whose sencelesse speach, and doted ignorance When as the noble Prince had marked well, He ghest his nature by his countenance, And calmd his wrath with goodly temperance. Then to him stepping, from his arme did reach Those keyes, and made himselfe free enterance. Each dore he opened without any breach; There was no barre to stop, nor foe him to empeach.

There all within full rich arayd he found, With royall arras and resplendent gold. And did with store of euery thing abound, That greatest Princes presence might behold. But all the floore (too filthy to be told) With bloud of guiltlesse babes, and innocents

trew, [fold, Which there were slaine, as sheepe out of the Defiled was, that dreadfull was to vew, And sacred ashes ouer it was strowed new.

26

And there beside of marble stone was built
An Altare, caru'd with cunning imagery,
On which true Christians bloud was often spilt,
And holy Martyrs often doen to dye,
With cruell malice and strong tyranny:
Whose blessed sprites from vnderneath the
stone

To God for vengeance cryde continually, And with great griefe were often heard to grone, That hardest heart would bleede, to heare their piteous mone

Through euery rowne be sought, and euery bowr, But no where could he find that wofull thrall: At last he came vnto an yron doore, That fast was lockt, but key found not at all Emongst that bounch, to open it withall; But in the same a little grate was pight, Through which he sent his voyce, and lowd did call
With all his power to weet if living wight

With all his powre, to weet, if liuing wight Were housed therewithin, whom he enlargen might.

...g.... 38

Therewith an hollow, dreary, murmuring voyce These piteous plaints and dolours did resound; O who is that, which brings me happy chooce Of death, that here lye dying euery stound? Yet liue perforce in balefull darkenesse bound? For now three Moones haue changed thrice their hew, [ground, And haue beene thrice hid vnderneath the

And haue beene thrice hid vnderneath the Since I the heauens chearefull face did vew, O welcome thou, that doest of death bring tydings trew.

Which when that Champion heard, with percing point

Of pitty deare his hart was thrilled sore, Andtrembling horrour ran through euery ioynt, For ruth of gentle knight so fowle forlore: Which shaking off, he rent that yron dore, With furious force, and indignation fell; Where entred in, his foot could find no flore, But all a deepe descent, as darke as hell, That breathed euer forth a filthie banefullsmell.

40

But neither darkenesse fowle, nor filthy bands, Nor noyous smell his purpose could withhold, (Entire affection hateth nicer hands) But that with constant zeale, and courage bold, After long paines and labours manifold, He found the meanes that Prisoner vpto reare; Whose feeble thighes, vnhable to vphold His pined corse, him scarse to light could beare, A ruefull spectacle of death and ghastly drere.

4

His sad dull eyes deepe sunck in hollow pits, Could not endure th'vnwonted sunne to view; His bare thin cheekes for want of better bits, And empty sides deceiued of their dew, Could make a stony hart his hap to rew; His rawbone armes, whose mighty brawned bowrs Werewont to riue steele plates, and helmets hew, Werecleane consum'd, and all his vitall powres Decayd, and all his flesh shronk vp like withered flowres.

Whom when his Lady saw, to him she ran With hasty ioy: to see him made her glad. And sad to view his visage pale and wan, Who earst in flowres of freshest youthwas clad. Tho when her well of teares she wasted had. She said, Ah dearest Lord, what euill starre On you hath fround, and pourd his influence bad. That of your selfe ye thus berobbed arre, And this misseeming hew your manly looks doth marre?

But welcome now my Lord, in wele or woe, Whose presence I have lackt too long a day: And fie on Fortune mine anowed foe. Whose wrathfull wreakes them selues do now

alav.

And for these wrongs shall treble penaunce pay Of treble good: good growes of euils priefe. The chearelesse man, whom sorrow did dismay, Had no delight to treaten of his griefe; His long endured famine needed more reliefe.

Faire Lady, then said that victorious knight, The things, that grieuous were to do, or beare. Them to renew, I wote, breeds no delight: Best musicke breeds †delight in loathing eare : But th'onely good, that growes of passed feare, Is to be wise, and ware of like agein. This dayes ensample hath this lesson deare

Deepe written in my heart with yron pen, That blisse may not abide in state of mortall men.

Henceforth sir knight, take to you wonted

strength.

And maister these mishaps with patient might; Loe where your foe lyes stretcht in monstrous length.

And loe that wicked woman in your sight, The roote of all your care, and wretched plight, Now in your powre, to let her live, or dye. To do her dye (quoth V'na) were despight, And shame t'auenge so weake an enimy; But spoile her of her scarlot robe, and let her fly.

46 So as she bad, that witch they disaraid. And robd of royall robes, and purple pall. And ornaments that richly were displaid: Ne spared they to strip her naked all. Then when they had despoild her tire and call, Such as she was, their eyes might her behold, That her misshaped parts did them appall, A loathly, wrinckled hag, ill fauoured, old, Whose secret filth good manners biddeth not be told.

Her craftie head was altogether bald. And as in hate of honorable eld, Was ouergrowne with scurfe and filthy scald: Her teeth out of her rotten gummes were feld, And her sowre breath abhominably smeld: Her dried dugs, like bladders lacking wind, Hongdowne, and filthy matter from them weld; Her wrizled skin as rough, as maple rind, So scabby was, that would have loathd all womankind.

48 Her neather parts, the shame of all her kind, My chaster Muse for shamedoth blush to write; But at her rompe she growing had behind A foxes taile, with dong all fowly dight; Andekeher feetemost monstrous were in sight: For one of them was like an Eagles claw. With griping talaunts armd to greedy fight, The other like a Beares vneuen paw: More vgly shape yet neuer living creature saw.

Which when the knights beheld, amazd they

And wondred at so fowle deformed wight. Such then (said Vna) as she seemeth here. Such is the face of falshood, such the sight Of fowle Duessa, when her borrowed light Is laid away, and counterfesaunce knowne. Thus when they had the witch disrobed quight. And all her filthy feature open showne. They let her goe at will, and wander waves vnknowne.

She flying fast from heavens hated face, And from the world that her discouered wide. Fled to the wastfull wildernesse apace, From liuing eyes her open shame to hide, And lurkt in rocks and caues long vnespide. But that faire crew of knights, and Vna faire Did in that castle afterwards abide, To rest them selues, and weary powres repaire, Where store they found of all, that dainty was and rare.

## Cant. IX.

## COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

His loues and lignage Arthur tells: The knights knit friendly bands: Sir Treuisan flies from Despayre, Whom Redcrosse knight withstands.

## 

O goodly golden chaine, wherewith yfere The vertues linked are in louely wize: And noble minds of yore allyed were, In braue poursuit of cheualrous emprize, That none did others safety despize, Nor aid enuy to him, in need that stands, But friendly each did others prayse deuize How to aduance with fauourable hands, As this good Prince redeemd the Rederosse knight from bands.

2

Who when their powres, empaird through labour long,

With dew repast they had recured well, And that weake captine wight now wexed strong.

Them list no lenger there at leasure dwell, But forward fare, as their aduentures fell, But ere they parted, Vna faire besought That straunger knight his name and nation tell; Least so great good, as he for her had wrought, Should die vnknown, and buried be in thanklesse thought.

Faire virgin (said the Prince) ye me require A thing without the compas of my wit: For both the lignage and the certain Sire, From which I sprong, from me are hidden yet. For all so soone as life did me admit Into this world, and shewed heauens light, From mothers pap I taken was vnfit: And streight deliuered to a Faery knight. To be vnbrought in gentle thewes and martiall might.

Vnto old *Timon* he me brought byliue, Old *Timon*, who in youthly yeares hath beene In warlike feates th'expertest man aliue, And is the wisest now on earth I weene; His dwelling is low in a valley greene, Vnder the foot of *Rauran* mossy hore, From whence the riuer *Dee* as siluer cleene His tombling billowes rolls with gentle rore: There all my dayes he traind me vp in vertuous lore.

Thither the great Magicien Merlin came,
As was his vse, ofttimes to visit me:
For he had charge my discipline to frame,
And Tutours nouriture to ouersee.
Him oft and oft I askt in priuitie,
Of what loines and what lignage I did spring:
Whose aunswere bad me still assured bee,
That I was some and heire vnto a king,
at the in her just terms the truth to light
should bring.

Well worthy impe, said then the Lady gent, And Pupill fit for such a Tutours hand. But what aduenture, or what high intent Hath brought you hither into Fuery land, Aread Prince Arthur, crowne of Martiall band? Full hard it is (quoth he) to read aright The course of heauenly cause, or vnderstand The secret meaning of th'eternall might,

That rules mens wayes, and rules the thoughts of living wight.

For whither he through fatall deepe foresight Me hither sent, for cause to me vinglest, Or that fresh bleeding wound, which day and night

Whilome doth rancle in my riuen brest,
With forced fury following his behest,
Me hither brought by wayes yet neuer found,
You to haue helpt I hold my selfe yet blest.
Ah curteous knight (quoth she) what secret
wound

Could euer find, to grieue the gentlest hart on ground?

Deare Dame (quoth he) you sleeping sparkes awake,
Whichtroubledonce, into huge flames will grow,
Ne euer will their feruent fury slake,
Till liuing moysture into smoke do flow,
And wasted life do lye in ashes low.
Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire,
But told it flames, and hidden it does glow,
I will reuele, what ye so much desire:
Ah Loue, lay downe thy bow, the whiles I may respire.

It was in freshest flowre of youthly yeares, When courage first does creepe in manly chest, Then first the coale of kindly heat appeares To kindle loue in euery liuing brest; But me had warnd old *Timons* wise behest, Those creeping flames by reason to subdew, Before their rage grew to so great vnrest, As miserable louers vse to rew, Which still were old in wose, whiles were still

Which still wex old in woe, whiles woe still wexeth new.

.

That idle name of loue, and louers life,
As losse of time, and vertues enimy'
I euer scornd, and loyd to stirre vp strife,
In middest of their mournfull Tragedy,
Ay wont to laugh, when them I heard to cry,
And blow the fire, which them to ashes brent:
Their God himselfe, grieu'd at my libertie,
Shot many a dart at me with fiers intent,
But I them warded all with wary gouernment.

T

But all in vaine: no fort can be so strong,
Ne fleshly brest can armed be so sound,
But will at last be wonne with battrie long,
Or vnawares at disauantage found;
Nothing issure, that growes on earthly ground:
And who most trustes in arme of fleshly might,
And boasts, in beauties chaine not to be bound,
Doth soonest fall in disauentrous fight,
And yeeldes his caytiue neck to victours most
despight.

.

Ensample make of him your haplesse ioy,
And of my selfe now mated, as ye see;
Whose prouder vaunt that proud auenging boy
Did soone pluck downe, and curbd my libertie.
For on a day prickt forth with iollitie
Of looser life, and heat of hardiment,
Raunging the forest wide on courser free,
The fields, the floods, the heauens with one
consent

Did seeme to laugh on me, and fauour mine intent.

11

For-wearied with my sports, I did alight
From loftiesteed, and downe to sleepe melayd;
The verdant gras my couch did goodly dight,
And pillow was my helmet faire displayd:
Whiles euery sence the humour sweet embayd,
And slombring soft my hart did steale away,
Me seemed, by my side a royall Mayd
Her daintie limbes full softly down did lay:
So faire a creature yet saw neuer sunny day.

14

Most goodly glee and louely blandishment
She to me made, and bad me loue her deare,
For dearely sure her loue was to me bent,
As when iust time expired should appeare.
But whether dreames delude, or true it were,
Was neuer hart so rauisht with delight,
Ne liuing man like words did euer heare,
As she to me deliuered all that night;
And at her parting said, She Queene of Faeries
hight.

. .

When I awoke, and found her place deuoyd, And nought but pressed gras, where she had lyen, I sorrowed all so much, as earst I ioyd, And washed all her place with watry eyen. From that day forth I lou'd that face diuine; From that day forth I cast in carefull mind, To seeke her out with labour, and long tyne, And neuer vow to rest, till her I find, Nine monethes I seeke in vaine yet ni'll that yow unbind.

16

Thus as he spake, his visage wexed pale,
And chaunge of hew great passion did bewray;
Yet still he stroue to cloke his inward bale,
And hide the smoke, that did his fire display,
Till gentle Vna thus to him gan say;
O happy Queene of Faeries, that hast found
Mongst many, one that with his prowesse may
Defend thine honour, and thy foes confound:
True Loues are often sown, but seldom grow on
ground.

17

Thine, O then, said the gentle Rederosse knight, Next to that Ladi:s loue, shalbe the place, O fairest virgin, full of heauenly light, Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly race, Was firmest fixt in mine extremest case. And you, my Lord, the Patrone of my life, Of that great Queene may well gaine worthy grace:

For onely worthy you through prowes priefe Yf liuing man mote worthy be, to be her liefe.

18

So diversly discoursing of their loves,
The golden Sunne his glistring head gan shew,
Andsadremembraunce now the Prince amoues,
With fresh desire his voyage to pursew:
Als Vna earnd her traveill to renew. [bynd,
Then those two knights, fast friendship for to
And love establish each to other trew,
Gaue goodly gifts, the signes of gratefull mynd,
And eke as pledges firme, right hands together
ioynd.

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of Diamond sure, Embowd with gold and gorgeous ornament, Wherein were closd few drops of liquor pure, Of woodrous worth, and vertue excellent, That any wound could heale incontinent: Which to requite, the Kadrosse knight thim gaue A booke, wherein his Sausours testament

Was writ with golden letters rich and braue; A worke of wondrous grace, and able soules to

saue.

Thus beene they parted, Arthur on his way To seeke his love, and th'other for to fight With Vnaes foe, that all her realme did pray. But she now weighing the decayed plight, And shrunken synewes of her chosen knight. Would not a while her forward course pursew. Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull fight, Till he recouered had his former hew: For him to be yet weake and wearie well she knew.

So as they traueild, lo they gan espy An armed knight towards them gallop fast, That seemed from some feared foe to fly, Or other griesly thing, that him agast. Still as he fled, his eye was backward cast, As if his feare still followed him behind; Als flew his steed, as he his bands had brast, And with his winged heeles did tread the wind.

As he had beene a fole of Pegasus his kind.

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his head To be vnarmd, and curld vncombed heares Vistaring stiffe, dismayd with vincouth dread; Nor drop of bloud in all his face appeares Nor life in limbe: and to increase his feares In fowle reproch of knighthoods faire degree, About his neck an hempen rope he weares, That with his glistring armes does ill agree; But he of rope or armes has now no memoree.

The Redcrosse knight toward him crossed fast, To weet, what mister wight was so dismayd: There him he finds all sencelesse and aghast, That of him selfe he seemd to be afrayd; Whom hardly he from flying forward stayd, Till he these wordes to him deliuer might; Sir knight, aread who hath ye thus arayd, And eke from whom make ye this hasty flight: For neuer knight, I saw in such misseeming plight.

He answerd nought at all, but adding new Feare to his first amazment, staring wide With stony eyes, and hartlesse hollow hew, Astonisht stood, as one that had aspide Infernall furies, with their chaines vntide. Him yet againe, and yet againe bespake The gentle knight; who nought to him replide, But trembling euery ioynt did inly quake, And foltring tongue at last these words seemd forth to shake.

For Gods deare love, Sir knight, do me not stay; For loe he comes, he comes fast after mee. Eftlooking backe would faine haue runne away; But he him forst to stay, and tellen free The secret cause of his perplexitie: Yet nathemore by his bold hartie speach, Could his bloud-frosen hart emboldned bee. But through his boldnesse rather fearedid reach, Yet forst, at last he made through silence suddein breach.

And am I now in safetie sure (quoth he) From him, that would have forced me to dye? And is the point of death now turnd fro mee, That I may tell this haplesse history? Feare nought: (quoth he) no daunger now is nye. Then shall I you recount a ruefull cace, (Said he) the which with this vulucky eye I late beheld, and had not greater grace Me reft from it, had bene partaker of the place.

I lately chaunst (Would I had neuer chaunst) With a faire knight to keepen companes Sir Terwin hight, that well himselfe advanust In all affaires, and was both bold and free, But not so happie as mote happie bee: He lou'd, as was his lot, a Ladie gent, That him againe lou'd in the least degree: For she was proud, and of too high intent, And loyd to see her louer languish and lament.

From whom returning sad and comfortlesse. As on the way together we did fare, We met that villen (God from him me blesse) That cursed wight, from whom I scapt why leare.

A man of hell, that cals himselfe Despaire: Who first vs greets, and after faire areedes Of tydings strange, and of aduentures rare: So creeping close, as Snake in hidden weedes, Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly deedes.

Which when he knew, and felt our feeble harts Embost with bale, and bitter byting griefe, Which love had launched with his deadly darts With wounding words and termes of fouk repriefe

He pluckt from vs all hope of due reliefe, That earst vs held in love of lingring life; Then hopelesse hartlesse, gan the cunning thiefe Perswade vs die, to stint all further strife: To me he lent this rope, to him a matie knife.

\_\_\_\_

With which sad instrument of hastie death,
That wofull louer, loathing lenger light,
A wide way made to let forth living breath.
But I more fearefull, or more luckie wight,
Dismayd with that deformed dismall sight,
Fled fast away, halfe dead with dying feare:
Ne yet assur'd of life by you, Sir knight,
Whose like infirmitie like chaunce may beare:
But God you neuer let his charmed speeches
heare.

How may a man (said he) with idle speach
Be wonne, to spoyle the Castle of his health?
I wote (quoth he) whom triall late did teach,
That like would not for all this worldes wealth:
His subtill tongue, like dropping honny,
mealt'th

Into the hart, and searcheth euery vaine, That ere one be aware, by secret stealth His powre is reft, and weaknesse doth remaine. O neuer Sir desire to try his guilefull traine.

Certes (said he) hence shall I neuer rest,

Till I that treachours art haue heard and tride;
And you Sir knight, whose name mote I request,
Of grace do me vnto his cabin guide.
I that hight Treuisan (quoth he) will ride
Against my liking backe, to doe you grace:
But nor for gold nor glee will I abide
By you, when ye arriue in that same place;
For leuer had I die, then see his deadly face.

Erelong they come, what same wicked wight His dwelling has, low in an hollow caue, Farre vnderneath a craggie clift ypight, Darke, dolefull, drearie, like a greedie graue, That still for carrion carcases doth craue: On top whereof aye dwelt the ghastly Owle, Shrieking his balefull note, which euer draue Farrefrom that hauntall other chearefull fowle; And all about it wandring ghostes did waile and howle.

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees,
Whereon nor fruit, nor leafe was euer seene,
Did hang vpon the ragged rocky knees;
On which had many wretches hanged beene,
Whose carcases were scattered on the greene,
And throwne about the cliffs. Arriued there,
That bare-head knight for dread and dolefull
teene,

Would faine haue fled, ne durst approchen neare, But th'other forst him stay, and comforted in feare.

35

That darkesome caue they enter, where they find That cursed man, low sitting on the ground, Musing full sadly in his sullein mind; His griesic lockes, long growen, and vnbound, Disordred hong about his shoulders round, And hid his face; through which his hollow even

Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound; Hisraw-bonecheekesthrough penurie and pine, Were shronke into his iawes, as he did neuer dine.

110.

His garment nought but many ragged clouts, With thornes together pind and patched was, The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts; And him beside there lay vpon the gras A drearie corse, whose life away did pas, All wallowd in his owne yet luke-warme blood, That from his wound yet welled fresh alas; In which a rustie knife fast fixed stood, And made an open passage for the gushing flood.

Which pitcous spectacle, approuing trew
The wofull tale that *Treussan* had told,
When as the gentle *Redcrosse* knight did vew,
With firie zeale he burnt in courage bold,
Him to auenge, before his bloud were cold,
\*And to the villein said, Thou damned wight,
The author of tl is fact, we here behold,
What iustice can but iudge against thee right,
With thine owne bloud to price his bloud, here
shed in sight?

What franticke fit (quoth he) hath thus distraught Thee, foolish man, so rash a doome to giue? What iustice euer other iudgement taught, But he should die, who merites not to liue? None else to death this man despayring driue, But his owne guiltie mind deseruing death. Is then vnjust to each his due to giue? Or let him die, that loatheth liuing breath? Or let him die at ease, that liueth here vneath?

elemal restin gener world

Who trauels by the wearie wandring way,
To come vnto his wished home in haste,
And meetes a flood, that doth his passage stay,
Is not great grace to helpe him ouer past,
Or free his feet, that in the myre sticke fast?
Most enuious man, that grieues at neighbours
good,

And fond, that ioyest in the woe thou hast, Why wilt not let him passe, that long hathstood Vpon the banke, yet wilt thy selfe not passe the flood? io ''

Herbere does now entoy eternall rest And happie ease, which thou doest want and And further from it daily wanderest: [craue, What if some little paine the passage haue, That makes fraile flesh to feare the bitter waue? Isnot short pame well borne, that brings long ease, And layes the soule to sleepe in quiet graue? Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie seas, Lase after warre, death after life does greatly

At The knight much wondred at his suddeine wit, And said, The terme of life is limited, Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten it; The souldier may not moue from watchfull sted, Nor leaue his stand, vntill his Captaine bed. Who life did limit by almightie doome, (Quoth he) knowes best the termes established; And he, that points the Centonell his roome, Doth heense him depart at sound of morning droome.

Is not his deed, what euer thing is donne, In heauen and carth? did not he all create To the againe? all ends that was begonne. Their times in his eternall booke of fate. Are written sure, and haue their certaine date. Who then can strine with strong necessitie, That holds the world in his still chaunging state, Or shunne the death ordaynd by destinie? When houre of death is come, let none aske whence, nor why.

The lenger life, I wote the greater sin,
The greater sin, the greater punishment:
Allthosegreat battels, which thou boasts to win,
Through strife, and bloud-shed, and auengement,
Now prayed hereafter deare thou shalt repent:

Nowpraysd, hereafter deare thou shalt repent: For hife must life, and bloud must bloud repay. Is not enough thy euill life forespent? For he, that once hath missed the right way, The further he doth goe, the further he doth stray.

Then do no further goe, no further stray, But here lie downe, and to thy rest betake, Th'ill to preuent, that life ensewen may. For what hath life, that may it loued make, And giues not rather cause it to forsake? Feare, sicknesse, age, losse, labour, sorrow, strife, [quake; Paine, hunger, cold, that makes the hart to And euer fickle fortune rageth rife, All which, and thousands mo do make a loath-some life.

Thou wretched man, of death hast greatest need, If in true ballance thou wilt weigh thy state: For neuer knight, that dared warlike deede. More lucklesse disauentures did amate: Witnesse the dongeon deepe, wherein of late Thy life shut vp, for death so oft did call; And though good lucke prolonged hath thy date,

Yetdeath then, would the like mishaps forestall, Into the which hereafter thou maiest happen fall. appeals to ect recentsing

Why then doest thou, O man of sin, desire
To draw thy dayes forth to their last degree?
Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire
High heaped vp with huge iniquitie,
Against the day of wrath, to burden thee?
Is not enough, that to this Ladie milde
Thou falsed last thy faith with periurie,
And sold thy sile to serue Duessa vilde,
With whom in all abuse thou hast thy selfe
defilde?

defilde?

47

Is not he iust, that all this doth behold
From highest heauen, and beares an equal leye?
Shall he thy sins vp m his knowledge fold,
And guiltie be of thine impietie?
Is not his law, Let euery sinner die:
Die shall all flesh? what then must needs be donne,

Is it not better to doe willinglie,
Then linger, till the classe be all out ronne?
Leath is the end of woes: die soone, O facries
sonne.

48 Feets auity

The knight was much comoued with his speach, That as a swords point through his hart did perse,

And in his conscience made a secret breach, Well knowing true all, that he did reherse And to his fresh remembrance did reuerse The vgly vew of his deformed crimes, That all his manly powres it did disperse, As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes, That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted oftentimes.

In which amazement, when the Miscreant Perceiued him to wauer weake and fraile, Whilestrembling horror did his conscience dant, And hellish anguish did his soule assaile, To driue him to despaire, and quite to quaile, He shew'd him painted in a table plaine, The damned ghosts, that doe in torments waile, And thousand feends that doe them endlesse paine

[remaine. With fire and brimstone, which for euer shall

The sight whereof so throughly him dismaid,
That nought but death before his eyes he saw,
And euer burning wrath before him laid,
By righteous sentence of th'Almighties law:
Then gan the villein him to ouercraw,
And brought vnto him swords,ropes,poison,fire,
And all that might him to perdition draw;
And bad him choose, what death he would desire:
For death was due to him, that had prouokt

Gods ire.

51
But when as none of them he saw him take,
11e to him raught a dagger sharpe and keene,
And gaue it him in hand: his hand did quake,
And tremble like a leafe of Aspin greene,
And troubled bloud through his pale face was
seene

To come, and goe with tydings from the hart, As it a running messenger had beene.

At last resolu'd to worke his finall smart, He lifted vp his hand, that backe againe did start.

Which when as Vna saw, through every vaine The crudled cold ran to her well of life, As in a swowne: but soone reliu'd againe, Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed knife, And threw it to the ground, enraged rife, And to him said, Fie, fie, faint harted knight, What meanest thou by this reprochfull strife? Is this the battell, which thou yountst to fight With that fire-mouthed Dragon, horrible and bright?

Come, come away, traile, feeble, fleshly wight, Ne let vaine words bewitch thy manly hart, Ne diuelish thoughts dismay thy constant spright.

In heavenly mercies hast thou not a part?
Why shouldst thou then despeire, that chosen
art?

Where justice growes, there grows eke greater grace,
The which doth quench the brond of hellish And that accurst hand-writing doth deface.
Arise, Sir knight arise, and leaue this cursed

place.

So vp he rose, and thence amounted streight. Which when the carle beheld, and saw his guest Would safe depart, for all his subtill sleight, He chose an halter from among the rest, And with it hung himselfe, vnbid vnblest. But death he could not worke himselfe thereby; For thousand times he so himselfe had drest, Yet nathelesse it could not doe him die, Till he should die his last, that is eternally.

# reguls by a spin recup

## 

Her faithfull knight faire V na brings to house of Holinesse, Where he is taught repentance, and the way to heauenly blesse.

## 

What man is he, that boasts of fleshly might, And vaine accurance of mortality, Which all so soone, as it doth come to fight, Against spirituall foes, yeelds by and by, Or from the held most cowardly doth fly? Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill, That thorough grace hath gained victory. If any strength we haue, it is to ill, But all the good is Gods, both power and eke will.

By that, which lately hapned, <u>Vna saw</u>,
That this her knight was feeble, and too faint;
And all his sinews woxen weake and raw,
Through long enprisonment, and hard constraint,

Which he endured in his late restraint,
That yet he was vofit for bloudie fight:
Therefore to cherish him with diets daint,
She cast to bring him, where he chearen might,
Till he recouered had his late decayed plight.

There was an auntient house not farre away,
Renowmd throughout the world for sacred lore,
And pure vnspotted life: so well they say
It gouernd was, and guided euermore,
Through wisedome of a matrone graue and hore;
Whose onely joy was to relieve the needes
Of wretched soules, and helpe the helpelesse
pote:

All night she spent in hidding of her bedes, And all the day in doing good and godly deedes.

Dame Calia men did her call, as thought
From heaven to come, or thither to arise,
The mother of three daughters, well vpbrought
In goodly thewes, and godly exercise:
The eldest two most sober, chast, and wise,
Fidelia and Spransa virgins were,
Though spousd, yet wanting wedlocks solemnize;
But for the process to a levely fore.

But faire Charissa to a louely fere Was lincked, and by him had many pledges dere. Arnued there, the dore they find fast lockt; For it was warely watched night and day, For feare of many foes: but when they knockt, The Porter opened vnto them streight way: He was an aged syre, all hory gray, With lookes full lowly cast, and gate full slow, Wont on a staffe his feeble steps to stay, Hight Humilia. They passe in stouping low; For streight and narrow was the way, which he did show.

Each goodly thing is hardest to begin,
Eut entred in a spacious court they see,
Both plaine, and pleasant to be walked in,
Where them does meete a francklin faire and
free.

And entertaines with comely courteous glee, His name was Zele, that him right well became, For in his speeches and behauiour hee Did labour liuely to expresse the same, And gladly did them guide, till to the Hall they came.

There fairely them receiues a gentle Squire, Of milde demeanure, and rare courtesie, Right cleanly clad in comely sad attire; In word and deede that shew'd great modestie, And knew his good to all of each degree, Hight Reuerence. He them with speeches meet Does faire entreat; no courting nicetie, But simple true, and eke vnfained sweet, As might become a Squire so great persons to greet.

And afterwards them to his Dame he leades, That aged Dame, the Ladie of the place: Who all this while was busic at her beades: Which doen, she vp arose with seemely grace, And toward them full matronely did pace. Where when that fairest *Vna* she beheld, Whom well she knew to spring from beauenly race.

Her hart with ioy vnwonted inly sweld, As feeling wondrous comfort in her weaker eld.

And her embracing said, O happie earth,
Whereon thy innocent feet doe euer tread,
Most vertuous virgin borne of heauenly herth,
That to redeeme thy woefull parents head,
From tyrans rage, and euer-dying dread,
Hast wandred through the world now long a
day;

Yet ceasest not thy wearie soles to lead, What grace hath thee now hither brought this way?

Or doen thy feeble feet vnweeting hither stray?

Strange thing it is an errant lenight to see Here in this place, or any other wight, That hither turnes his steps. So few there bee, That chose the narrow path, or seeke the right: All keepe the broad high way, and take delight With many rather for to go astray, And be partakers of their euill plight, Then with a few to walke the rightest way; O foolish men, why haste ye to your owne decay?

10

Thy selfe to see, and tyred limbs to rest, O matrone sage (quoth she) I hither came, And this good knight his way with me addrest, Led with thy prayses and broad-blazed fame, That vp to heauen is blowne. The auncient

Dame
Him goodly greeted in her modest guise,
And entertaynd them both, as best became,
With all the court'sies, that she could deuise,
Ne wanted ought, to shew her bounteous or
wise.

Thus as they gan of sundry things deuise, Loe two most goodly virgins came in place, Ylinked arme in arme in louely wise, With countenance demure, and modest grace, They numbred euen steps and equall pace: Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight, Like sunny beames threw from her Christall face,

That could have dazd the rash beholders sight, And round about her head did shine like heavens light.

She was araied all in hilly white,
And in her right hand hore a consequency,
With wine and water fills up to the hight,
In which a Serpent did himselfs enfold,
That horrour made to all, that did behold;
Butshenowhit did chaungeher constant mood:
And in her other hand she fast did hold
A booke, that was both signd and seald with
blood,

Wherein darke things were writ, hard to be vaderstood.

Her younger sister, that Speransa hight, Was clad in blew, that her beseemed well; Not all so chearefull seemed she of sight, As was her sister; whether dread did dwell, Or anguish in her hart, is hard to tell: Vpon her arme a siluer anchor lay, Whereon she leaned euer, as befell: And euer up to heauen, as she did pray, Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarued other way.

•

They seeing Vna, towards her gan wend, Who them encounters with like courtesie; Many kind speeches they betwene them spend, And greatly ioy each other well to see: Then to the knight with shamefast modestie They turne themselues, at Vnaes meeke request, And him salute with well beseeming glee; Who faire them quites, as him beseemed best, And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.

16

Then Vna thus; But she your sister deare; The deare Charissa where is she become? Or wants she health, or busic is elsewhere? Ah no, said they, but forth she may not come: For she of late is lightned of her wombe, And hath encreast the world with one sonne more,

That her to see should be but troublesome. Indeede (quoth she) that should her trouble sore,

But thankt be God, and her encrease so euermore.

ne.

Then said the aged Calia, Deare dame, And you good Sir, I wote that of your toyle, And labourslong, through which ye hither came, Ye both forwearied be: therefore a whyle I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle. Then called she a Groome, that forth him led Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile Of puissant armes, and laid in easie bed; His name was meeke Obedience rightfully ared.

٠8

Now when their wearie limbes with kindly rest, And bodies were refresht with due repast, Faire V na gan Fidelia taire request, Tohaue her knight into her schoolehouse plaste, That of her heauenly learning he might taste, And heare the wisedome of her words diuine. She graunted, and that knight so muchagraste, That she him taught celestiall discipline, And opened his dull eyes, that light mote in

them shine.

And that her sacred Booke, with bloud ywrit, That none could read, except she did them teach,

She vnto him disclosed every whit,
And heavenly documents thereout did preach,
That weaker wit of man could neuer reach,
Of God, of grace, of instice, of free will,
That wonder was to heare her goodly speach:
For she was able, with her words to kill,
And raise againe to life the hart, that she did
thrift.

20

And when she list poure out her larger spright, She would commaund the hastie Sunne tostay, Or backward turne his course from heavens hight;

Sometimes great hostes of men she could dis-Dry-shod to passe, she parts the flouds in tway; And ekehuge mountaines from their natiueses. She would commaund, themse lues to be are away, And throw in raging sea with roaring threat. Almightie God her gaue such powre, and puis-

sance great.

The faithfull knight now grew in litle space, By hearing her, and by her sisters lore, To such perfection of all heauenly grace, That wretched world he gan for to abhore, And mortall life gan loath, as thing forlore, Greeu'd with remembrance of his wicked wayes. And prickt with anguish of his sinnes so sort, That he desirde to end his wretched dayes: So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soule dismayes.

But wise Speranza gaue him comfort sweet, And taught him how to take assured hold Vpon her siluer anchor, as was meet; Else had his sinnes so great, and manifold Made him forget all that Fidelia told. In this distressed doubtfull agonie, When him his dearest Vna did behold, Disdeining life, desiring leaue to die, She found her selfe assayld with great perplexitie.

And came to Calia to declare her smart, Whowellacquainted with that commune plight. Which sinfull horror workes in wounded hart, Her wisely comforted all that she might, With goodly counsell and aduisement right; And streightway sent with carefull diligence. To fetch a Leach, the which had great insight In that disease of grieued conscience, And well could cure the same; His name was Patience.

Who comming to that soule-diseased knight, Could hardly him intreat, to tell his griefe: Which knowne, and all that noyd his heaue spright

Well searcht, eftsoones he gan apply reliefe Of salues and med'cines, which had passing priefe,

And thereto added words of wondrous might:
By which to ease he him recured briefe,
And much asswag'd the passion of his plight,
That he his paine endur'd, as seeming now more
light.

But yet the cause and root of all his ill,
Inward corruption, and infected sin,
Not purg'd nor heald, behind remained still,
And festring sore did rankle yet within,
(lose creeping twixt the marrow and the skin.
Which to extirpe, he laid him priuily
Downe in a darkesome lowly place farre in,
Whereas he meant his corrosiues to apply,
And with streight diet tame his stubborne
malady.

26

In ashes and sackcloth he did array
His daintie corse, proud humors to abate,
And dieted with fasting euery day.
The swelling of his wounds to mitigate,
And made him pray both earely and eke late:
And euer as superfluous flesh did rot
Amendment readie still at hand did wayt,
To pluck it out with pincers firse whot,
That soone in him was left no one corrupted iot.

And bitter *Penance* with an yron whip,

Was wont him once to disple every day:
And sharpe Remorse his hart did pricke and mp,
That drops of bloud thence like a well did play;
And sad Repentance vsed to embay
His bodie in salt water smarting sore,
The filthy blots of sinne to wash away.
So in short space they did to health restore
The man that would not live, but earst lay at

28

deathes dore.

In which his torment often was so great, That like a Lyon he would cry and rore, And rend his flesh, and his owne synewes eat. His owne deare Vna hearing cuermore His ruefull shrickes and gronings, often tore Her guiltlesse garments, and her golden heare, For pitty of his paine and anguish sore; Yet all with patience wisely she did beare; For well she wist, his crime could else be neuer cleare.

20

Whom thus recouer'd by wise Patience,
And trew Repentance they to Vna brought:
Who ioyous of his cured conscience,
Him dearely kist, and fairely eke besought
Himselfe to chearish, and consuming thought
To put away out of his carefull brest.
By this Charissa, late in child-bed brought,
Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest;
To her faire Vna brought this vnacquainted
guest.

She was a woman in her freshest age,
Of wondrous beauty, and of bountie rare,
With goodly grace and comely personage,
That was on earth not easie to compare;
Full of great loue, but Cupids wanton snare
As hell she hated, chast in worke and will;
Her necke and breasts were euer open bare,
That ay thereof her babes might sucke their fill;
The rest was all in yellow upbes arayed still.

. . . . . . . . . 3

A multitude of babes about her hong, Playing their sports, that joyd her to behold, Whom still she fed, whiles they were weake and young,

But thrust them forth still, as they wexed old: And on her head she wore a tyre of gold, Adornd with gemmes and owches wondrous faire,

Whose passing price vneath was to be told; And by her side there sate a gentle paire Of turtle doues, she sitting in an yuorie chaire.

2

The knight and Vna entring, faire her greet, And bid her ioy of that her happie brood; Who them requites with court'sies seeming meet, And entertaines with friendly chearefull mood. Then Vna her besought, to be so good, As in her vertuous rules to schoole her knight, Now after all his torment well withstood, In that sad house of Penaunce, where his spright Had past the paines of hell, and long enduring

night.

33
She was right ioyous of her iust request,
And taking by the hand that Faeries sonne,
Gan him instruct in euery good behest,
Of loue, and righteousnesse, and well to donne,
And wrath, and hatred warely to shonne,
That drew on men Gods hatred, and his wrath,
And many soules in dolours had fordonne:
In which when him she well instructed hath,
From thence to heauen she teacheth him the
ready path.

Wherein his weaker wandring steps to guide, An auncient matrone she to her does call, Whosesoberlookes her wisedome well descride: Her name was Mercie, well knowne ouer all, To be both gratious, and eke liberall: To whom the carefull charge of him she gaue, To lead aright, that he should neuer fall In all his wayes through this wide worldes waue, That Mercy in the end his righteous soule might saue.

The godly Matrone by the hand him beares Forth from her presence, by a narrow way, Scattred with bushy thornes, and ragged breares.

Which still before him she remou'd away, That nothing might his ready passage stay: And euer when his feet encombred were, Or gan to shrinke, or from the right to stray. She held him fast, and firmely did vpbeare, As carefull Nourse her child from falling oft does reare.

Eftsoones vnto an holy Hospitall, That was fore by the way, she did him bring, In which seuen Bead-men that had vowed all Their life to seruice of high heavens king Did spend their dayes in doing godly thing: Their gates to all were open euermore. That by the wearie way were trauciling, And one sate wayting euer them before, To call in commers-by, that needy were and

The first of them that eldest was, and best, Of all the house had charge and gouernement, As Guardian and Steward of the rest: His office was to give entertainement And lodging, vnto all that came, and went: Not vnto such, as could him feast againe, And double quite, for that he on them spent, But such, as want of harbour did constraine: Those for Gods sake his dewty was to entertaine.

The second was as Almner of the place, His office was, the hungry for to feed, And thristy give to drinke, a worke of grace: He feard not once him selfe to be in need, Ne car'd to hoord for those, whom he did breede: The grace of God he layd vp still in store, Which as a stocke he left vnto his seede: He had enough, what need him care for more? And had he lesse, yet some he would give to the pore.

The third had of their wardrobe custodie. In which were not rich tyres, nor garments gay, The plumes of pride, and wings of vanitie. But clothes meet to keepe keene could away, And naked nature seemely to aray; With which bare wretched wights he dayly clad, The images of God in earthly clay; And if that no spare cloths to give be had,

His owns come he would out, and it distribute glad.

The fourth appointed by his office was. Poore prisoners to relieue with gratious ayd, And captines to redeeme with price of bras. From Turkes and Sarazins, which them had stayd: And though they faultie were, yet well he wayd, That God to vs forgiveth every howre Much more then that, why they in bands were And he that harrowd hell with heavie stowre. The faultie soules from thence brought to his heauenly bowre.

The fift had charge sicke persons to attend. And comfort those, in point of death which lay; For them most needeth comfort in the end. When sin, and hell, and death do most dismay The feeble soule departing hence away. All is but lost, that living we bestow, If not well ended at our dying day. O man have mind of that last bitter throw; For as the tree does fall, so lyes it euer low.

The sixt had charge of them now being dead. In seemely sort their corses to engraue, And deck with dainty flowres their bridall bed, That to their heavenly spouse both sweet and braue

They might appeare, when he their soules shall sauc. mould. The wondrous workemanship of Gods owner Whose face he made, all beasts to feare, and gaue All in his hand, even dead we honour should. Ah dearest God me graunt, I dead be not defould.

The seuenth now after death and buriall done, Had charge the tender Orphans of the dead And widowes ayd, least they should be vindone: In face of judgement he their right would plead, Ne ought the powre of mighty men did dread In their defence, nor would for gold or fee Be wonne their rightfull causes downe to tread: And when they stood in most necessitee. He did supply their want, and gaue them euer free.

There when the Elfin knight arrived was, The first and chiefest of the seuen, whose care Was guests to welcome, towardes him did pas: Where seeing Mercie, that his steps vp bare, And alwayes led, to her with reverence rare He humbly louted in meeke lowlinesse, And seemely welcome for her did prepare: For of their order she was Patronesse. Albe Charissa were their chiefest founderesse.

There she awhile him stayes, him selfe to rest, That to the rest more able he might bee: During which time, in every good behest And godly worke of Almes and charitee She him instructed with great industree; Shortly therein so perfect he became, That from the first vnto the last degree, His mortall life he learned had to frame In holy righteousnesse, without rebuke or blame.

46

Thence forward by that painfull way they pas, Forth to an hill, that was both steepe and hy. On top whereof a sacred chappell was, And eke a litle Hermitage thereby, Wherein an aged holy man did lye, That day and night said his deuotion, Ne other worldly busines did apply; His name was heauenly Contemplation; Of God and goodnesse was his meditation.

47

Great grace that old man to him giuen had; For God he often saw from heauens hight, All were his earthly eyen both blunt and bad, And through great age had lost their kindly sight, [spright, Yet wondrous quick and persant was his

Yet wondrous quick and persant was his As Eagles eye, that can behold the Sunne: That hill they scale with all their powre and might,

That his frayle thighes nigh wearie and fordonne

Gan faile, but by her helpe the top at last he wonne.

There they do finde that golly aged Sire, With snowy lockes adowne his shoulders shed, As hoarie frost with spangles doth attire. The mossy braunches of an Oke halfe ded. Each bone might through his body well be red, And euery sinew seene through his long fast: For nought he car'd his carcas long vnfed; His mind was full of spirituall repast, And pyn'd his flesh, to keepe his body low and chast.

Who when these two approching he aspide,
At their first presence grew agrieued sore,
That forst him lay his heauenly thoughts aside;
And had he not that Dame respected more,
Whom highly he did reuerence and adore,
He would not once haue moued for the knight.
They him saluted standing far afore;
Who well them greeting, humbly did requight,
And asked, to what end they clomo that tedious
height.

What end (quoth she) should cause vs take such

Should make his marke, high heauento attaine? Is not from hence the way, that leadeth right Tothat most glorious house, that glistreth bright With burning starres, and euerliuing fire, Whereof the keyes are to thy hand behight By wise Fidelia? she doth thee require, To shew it to this knight, according his desire.

E 1

Thrise happy man, said then the father graue, Whose staggering steps thy steady hand doth lead.

And shewes the way, his sinfull soule to saue. Who better can the way to heaven aread, Then thou thy selfe, that was both borne and bred In heavenly throne, where thousand Angelsshifte? Present before the maiestic diuine, And his auenging wrath to elemencie incline.

**C** 2

Yet since thou bidst, thy pleasure shalbe donne. Then come thou man of earth, and see theway, That neuer yet was seene of Faeries sonne, That neuer leads the traueller astray, But after labours long, and sad delay, Brings them to ioyous rest and endlesse blis. But first thou must a season fast and pray, Till from her bands the spright assoiled is, And haue her strength recur'd from fraile infirmitis.

That done, he leads him to the highest Mount; Such one, as that same mighty man of God, That bloud-red billowes like a walled front On either side disparted with his rod, Till that his army dry-foot through them yod, Dwelt fortie dayes vpon; where writ in stone With bloudy letters by the hand of God, The bitter doome of death and balefull mone He did receive, whiles flashing fire about him shone.

Or like that sacred hill, whose head full hie, Adornd with fruitfull Oliues all arownd, Is, as it were for endlesse memory. Of that deare Lord, who of thereon was fownd, For euer with a flowring girlond crownd: Or like that pleasaunt Mount, that is for ay Through famous Poets verse each where renownd.

On which the thrise three learned Ladies play Their heavenly notes, and make full many a louely lay.

From thence, far off he vnto him did shew A litle path, that was both steepe and long, Which to a goodly Citie led his vew; Whose wals and towres were builded high and strong

Of perle and precious stone, that earthly tong Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell; Too high a ditty for my simple song; The Citic of the great king hight it well, Wherein eternall peace and happinesse doth dwell.

56

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see
The blessed Angels to and fro descend
From highest heauen, in gladsome companee,
And with great 10y into that Citie wend,
As commonly as friend does with his frend.
Whereat he wondred much, and gan enquere,
What stately building durst so high extend
Her loftie towres vnto the starry sphere,
And what vnknowen nation there empeopled
were.

Faire knight (quoth he) Hierusalem that is, The new Hierusalem, that God has built For those to dwell in, that are chosen his, His chosen people purg'd from sinfull guilt, With pretious bloud, which cruelly was spilt On cursed tree, of that vnspotted lam, That for the sinnes of all the world was kilt: Now are they Saints all in that Citie sam, More deare vnto their God, then younglings to their dam.

**c**8

Till now, said then the knight, I weened well, That great Cleopolis, where I have beene, In which that fairest Facrie Queene doth dwell, The fairest Citie was, that might be seene; Andthat bright tower all bull of christall cleene, Panthea, seemed the brightest thing, that was: But now by proofe all otherwise I weene; For this great Citie that does far surpas, And this bright Angels towre quite dims that towre of glas.

50

Most trew, then said the holy aged man;
Yet is Cleopolis for earthly frame.
The fairest peece, that eye beholden can:
And well beseemes all knights of noble name,
That couet in th'immortall booke of fame
To be eternized, that same to haunt,
Anddoen their seruice to that soueraigne Dame,
That glorie does to them for guerdon graunt:
For she is heauenly borne, and heauen may
tustly vaunt.

And thou faireymp, sprong out from English race,
How euer now accompted Elfins sonne,
Well worthy doest thy seruice for her grace,
To aide a virgin desolate foredonne.
But when thou famous victorie hast wonne,

And high emongst all knights hast hong thy shield,

Thenceforth the suit of earthly conquest shonne, And wash thy hands from guilt of bloudy field: For bloud can nought but sin, and wars but

sorrowes yield.

Then seeke this path, that I to thee presage, Which after all to heaven shall thee send; Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage To yonder same Hiernsalem do bend, Where is for thee ordaind a blessed end: For thou emongst those Saints, whom thou doest see,

Shalt be a Saint, and thine owne nations frend And Patrone: thou Saint George shalt called bee, Saint George of mery England, the signe of

victoree.

Vnworthy wretch (quoth he) of so great grace, How dare I thinke such glory to attaine? These that haue it attaind, were in like cace (Quoth he) as wretched, and lin'd in like paine. But deeds of armes must I at last be faine, And Ladies lone to leane so dearely bought? What need of armes, where peace doth ay remaine.

(Said he) and buttailes none are to be fought? As for loose loues are vame, and vanish into nought.

O let me not (quoth he) then turne againe
Backe to the world, whose joyes so fruitlesse

Or streight way on that last long voyage fare,
Or streight way on that last long voyage fare,
That nothing may my present hope empare.
That may not be (said he) ne maist thou yit
Forgo that royall maides bequeathed care,
Who did her cause into thy hand commit,
Till from her cursed foe thou haue her freely
quit.

64

Then shall I soone, (quoth he) so God me grace, Abet that virgins cause disconsolate, And shortly backe returne vnto this place To walke this way in Pilgrims poore estate. But now aread, old father, why of late Didst thou behight me borne of English blood, Whom all a Faeries sonne doen nominate? That word shall I (said he) auouchen good, Sithto thee is vnknowne the cradle of thy brood.

For well I wote, thou springst from ancient race Of Saxon kings, that haue with mightie hand And many bloudie battailes fought in place High reard their royall throne in Britane land, And vanquisht them, vnable to withstand: From thence a Faerie thee vnweeting reft, There as thou slepst in tender swadling band, And her base Elin brood there for thee left. Such men do Chaungelings call, so chaungd by Faeries theft.

Thence she thee brought into this Facric lond, And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde, Where thee a Ploughman all vinceting fond, A he his toylesome teme that way did guyde, And brought thee vp in ploughmans state to byde.

Whereof Georgos he thee gaue to name;
Till prickt with courage, and thy forces pryde,
To Faery court thou cam'st to seeke for fame.
And proue thy puissaunt armes, as seemes thee
best became.

O holy Sire (quoth he) how shall I quight
The many fauours I with thee haue found,
That hast my name and nation red aright,
And taught the way that does to heauen bound?
This said, adowne he looked to the ground?
To haue returnd, but dazed were his eyne,
Through passing brightnesse, which did quite
confound

His feeble sence, and too exceeding shyne. So darke are earthly things compard to things durine.

68
At last whenas himselfe he gan to find,
To V na back he cast him to retire;
Who him awaited still with pensue mind.
Great thankes and goodly meed to that good

He thence departing gaue for his paines hyre So came to Vna, who him loyd to see, And after litle rest, gan him desire, Of her aduenture mindfull for to bee. So leaue they take of  $C\alpha laa$ , and her daughters three.

## Cant. XI.

## cocococococococococococococococo

The knight with that old Dragon fights two dayes incessantly: The third him overthrowes, and gayns most glorious victory.

## 6060606060606060606060606060606060

High time now gan it wex for 1 ma faire, To thinke of those her captine Parents deare, And their forwasted kingdome to repaire: Whereto whenas they now approched neare, Withhartie words her knightshe gan tocheare, And in her modest manner thus bespake; Deare kinght, as deare, as euer knight was deare, That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake, High heauen behold the tedious toyle, ye for me take.

Now are we come vnto my natiue soyle, And to the place, where all our perils dwell; Here haunts that feend, and does his dayly spoyle,

Therefore henceforth be at your keeping well, And euer ready for your focman fell. The sparke of noble courage now awake, And strine your excellent selfe to excell; That shall ye cuermore renowmed make, Aboue all knights on earth, that batteill yndertake.

And pointing forth, lo yonder is (said she)
The brasen towic in which my parents deare
For dread of that huge feend emprisond be,
Whom I from far see on the walles appeare,
Whose-sight my feeblesoule doth greatly cheare:
And on the top of all I do espye
The watchman wayting tydings glad to heare,
That O my parents might I happily
Vito you bring, to ease you of your misery.

With that they heard a roaring hideous sound, That all the ayre with terrour filled wide, And seemd vneath to shake the stedfast ground. Eftsoones that dreadfull Dragon they espide, Where stretch he lay vpon the sunny side Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill. But all so soone, as he from far descride Those glistring armes, that heauen with light did fill,

He rousd himselfe full blith, and hastned them vntill.

Then bad the knight his Lady yede aloofe, And to an hill her selfe with draw aside, From whence she might behold that battailles proof

And eke be safe from daunger far descryde: She him obayd, and turnd a little wyde. Now O thou sacred Muse, most learned Dame, Faire ympe of *Phæbus*, and his aged bride, The Nourse of time, and euerlasting fame, That warlike hands ennoblest with immortall

name;

O gently come into my feeble brest,
Come gently, but not with that mighty rage,
Wherewith the martiall troupes thou doest infest,
And harts of great Herois doest enrage,
That nought their kindled courage may aswage,
Soone as thy dreadfull trompe begins to sownd;
The God of warre with his fiers equipage
Thou doest awake, sleepe neuer he so sownd,
And scared nations doest with horrour sterne
astownd.

Faire Goddesse lay that furious fit aside, Till I of warres and bloudy Mars do sing, And Briton fields with Sarazin bloud bedyde, Twixt that great facry Queene and Paynimking, That with their horrour heauen and earth did

ring.

A worke of labour long, and endlesse prayse: But now a while let downe that haughtiestring. And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse, That I this man of God his godly armes-may

bl<u>aze</u>.

By this the dreadfull Beast drew nigh to hand, Halfe flying, and halfe footing in his hast, That with his largenesse measured much land, And made wide shadow vnder his huge wast; As mountaine doth the valley ouercast. Approching nigh, he reared high afore His body monstrous, horrible, and vast, Which toincrease his wondrous greatnesse more, Was swolne with wrath, and poyson, and with bloudy gore.

And ouer, all with brasen scales was armd, Like plated coate of steele, so couched neare, That nought mote perce, ne might his corse be

With dint of sword, nor push of pointed speare; Which as an Eagle, seeing pray appeare, His aery plumes doth rouze, full rudely dight, So shaked he, that horrour was to heare, For as the clashing of an Armour bright, Such noyse his rouzed scales did send vnto the knight.

.

His flaggy wings when forth he did display, Were like two sayles, in which the hollowwynd Is gathered full, and worketh speedy way: And eke the pennes, that did his pineons bynd, Were like mayne-yards, with flying canuas lynd, With which whenas him list the ayre to beat, And there by force vnwonted passage find, The cloudes before him fled for terrour great, And all the heauens stood still amazed with his threat.

11

His huge long tayle wound vp in hundred foldes, Does ouerspred his long bras-scaly backe, Whose wreathed boughts when euer he vnfoldes.

And thicke entangled knots adowndoes slacke, Bespotted as with shields of red and blacke, It sweepeth all the land behind him farre, And of three furlongs does but litle lacke; And at the point two stings in-fixed arre, Both deadly sharpe, that sharpest steele exceeden farre.

12

But stings and sharpest steele did far exceed The sharpnesse of his cruell rending clawes; Dead was it sure, as sure as death in deed, Whateuer thingdoes touch his rauenous pawes, Or what within his reach he euer drawes. But his most hideous head my toung to tell Does tremble: for his deepe deuouring iawes Wide gaped, like the griesly mouth of hell, Through which into his darkeabisseall rauin fell.

12

And that more wondrous was, in either iaw
Three ranckes of yron teeth enraunged were,
In which yet trickling bloud and gobbets raw
Of late deuoured bodies did appeare,
That sight thereof bred cold congealed feare:
Which to increase, and all atonce to kill,
A cloud of smoothering smoke and sulphur seare
Out of his stinking gorge forth steemed still,
That all the ayre about with smoke and stench
did fill.

14

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining shields, Did burne with wrath, and sparkled liuing fyre; As two broad Beacons, set in open fields, Send forth their flames farre off to euery shyre, And warning giue, that enemies conspyre, With fire and sword the region to inuade; So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous yre: But farre within, as in a hollow glade, Those glaring lampes were set, that made a dreadfull shade.

So dreadfully he towards him did pas, Forelifting vp aloft his speckled brest. And often bounding on the brused gras, As for great joyance of his newcome guest. Ettsoones he gan advance his haughtie crest. As chauffed Bore his bristles doth voreare. And shoke his scales to battell readie drest: That made the Redcrosse knight nigh quake for feare.

As bidding bold defiance to his forman neare.

The knight gan fairely couch his steadie speare. And hercely ran at him with rigorous might: The pointed steele arriving rudely theare. His harder hide would neither perce, nor bight, But glauncing by forth passed forward right; Yet sore amoued with so puissant push, The wrathfull beast about him turned light, And him so rudely passing by, did brush With his long tayle, that horse and man to ground did rush.

Both horse and man vp lightly rose againe. And fresh encounter towards him addrest: But th'idle stroke yet backe recoyld in vaine, And found no place his deadly point to rest. Exceeding rage enflam'd the furious beast, To be auenged of so great despight; For neuer felt his imperceable brest So wondrous force, from hand of living wight; Yet had he prou'd the powre of many a puissant knight.

Then with his wauing wings displayed wyde, Himselfe vp high he lifted from the ground, And with strong flight did forcibly divide The yielding aire, which nigh too feeble found Her flitting partes, and element vnsound, To beare so great a weight: he cutting way With his broadsayles, about himsoared round: At last low stouping with vnweldie sway, Snatcht vp both horse and man, to beare them quite away.

Long he them bore about the subject plaine, So farre as Ewghen bow a shaft may send, Till struggling strong did him at last constraine,

To let them downe before his flightes end: As hagard hauke presuming to contend With hardie fowle, about his hable might, His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend, To trusse the pray too heavie for his flight; Which comming downe to ground, does free it selfe by fight.

He so disseized of his gryping grosse, The knight his thrillant speare againe assayd In his bras-plated body to embosse, And three mensstrength vnto the stroke he layd: Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked, as affrayd, And glauncing from his scaly necke, did glyde Close under his left wing, then broad displayd. The percing steele there wrought a wound full wyde.

That with the vincouth smart the Monster lowdly cryde.

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore, When wintry storme his wrathfull wreck does threat.

The rolling billowes beat the ragged shore, As they the earth would shoulder from her seut, And greedie gulfe does gape, as he would eat His neighbour element in his revenge: Then gin the blustring brethren boldly threat, To move the world from off his stedfast henge, And boystrous battell make, each other to auenge.

The steely head stucke fast still in his flesh, Till with his cruell clawes he snatcht the wood, And quite a sunder broke. Forth flowed fresh A gushing river of blacke coarie blood, That drowned all the land, whereon he stood; The streame thereof would drive a water-mill. Trebly augmented was his furious mood With bitter sense of his deepe rooted ill, That flames of fire he threw forth from his large nosethrill.

His hideous tayle then hurled he about, And therewith all enwrapt the nimble thyes Of his froth-formy steed, whose courage stout Strining to loose the knot, that fast him tyes, Himselfe in streighter bandes too rash implyes, That to the ground he is perforce constrayed To throw his rider: who can quickly ryse From off the earth, with durty bloud distaynd, For that reprochfull fall right lowly he disdaynd.

24

And fiercely tooke his trenchand blade in hand, With which he stroke so furious and so fell. That nothing seemd the puissance could with-

Vpon his crest the hardned yron fell, But his more hardned crest was armd so well, That deeper dint therein it would not make; Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell, That from thenceforth he shund the like to (forsake. take. But when he saw them come, he did them still.

The knight was wrath to see his stroke beguyld, And smote againe with more outrageous might; But backe againe the sparckling steele recoyld, And left not any marke, where it did light; As if in Adamant rocke it had bene pight. The beast impatient of his smarting wound, And of so fierce and forcible despight, Thought with his wings to stye aboue the ground;

But his late wounded wing vnseruiceable found.

26

Then full of griefe and anguish vehement, He lowdly brayd, that like was neuer heard, And from his wide deuouring ouen sent A flake of fire, that flashing in his beard, Him all amazd, and almost made affeard: The scorching flame sore swinged all his face, And through his armour all his bodie seard, That he could not endure so cruell cace, But thought his armes to leaue, and helmet to value.

2

Not that great Champion of the antique world, Whom famous Poetes verses omuch doth vaunt, And hath for twelue huge labours high extold, So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt, When him the poysoned garment did enchaunt With Centaures bloud, and bloudie verses charm'd,

As did this knight twelve thousand dolours daunt, [arm'd,

Whom fyrie steele now burnt, that earst him That erst him goodly arm'd, now most of all him harm'd.

Faint, wearie, sore, emboyled, grieued, brent

With heat, toyle, wounds, armes, smart, and inward fire

That neuer man such mischiefes did torment; Death better were, death did he oft desire, But death will neuer come, when needes require. Whom so dismayd when that his foe beheld, He cast to suffer him no more respire, But gan his sturdie sterne about to weld, And him so strongly stroke, that to the ground him feld.

It fortuned (as faire it then befell)
Behind his backe vnweeting, where he stood,
Of auncient time there was a springing well,
From which fast trickled forth a siluer flood,
Full of great vertues, and for med'cine good.
Whylome, before that cursed Dragon got
That happie land, and all with innocent blood
Defyld those sacred waues, it rightly hot
The well of life, ne vet his vertues had forgot.

For vnto life the dead it could restore, And guilt of sinfull crimes cleane wash away, Those that with sicknesse were infected sore, It could recure, and aged long decay Renew, as one were borne that very day. Both Silo this, and Iordan did excell, And th'English Bath, and eke the german Spau, Ne can Cephuse, nor Hebrus match this well: Into the same the knight backe ouerthrowen,

21

Now gan the golden *Phabus* for to steepe His fieric face in billowes of the west, And his faint steedes watred in Ocean deepe, Whiles from their iournall labours they did rest,

When that infernall Monster, having kest His wearie foe into that living well, Can high advance his broad discoloured brest, Aboue his wonted pitch, with countenance fell, And clapt his yron wings, as victor he did dwell.

22

Which when his pensiue Ladie saw from tarre, Great wee and sorrow did her soule assay, As weening that the sad end of the warre, And gan to highest God entirely pray, That feared chance from her to turne away: With folded hands and knees full lowly bent All nightshe watcht, ne once adowne would lay Her daintie limbs in her sad dreriment, But praying still did wake, and waking did lament.

33

The morrow next gan early to appeare, That Titan rose to runne his daily race; But early ere the morrow next gan reare Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face, Vp rose the gentle virgin from her place, And looked all about, if she might spy Her loued knight to moue his manly pace: For she had great doubt of his safety, Since late she saw him fall before his enemy.

\_3.

At last she saw, where he vpstarted braue
Out of the well, wherein he drenched lay;
As Eagle fresh out of the Ocean waue,
Where he hath left his plumes all hoary gray,
And deckt himselfe with feathers youthly gay,
Like Eyas hauke vp mounts vnto the skies,
His newly budded pineons to assay,
And marueiles at himselfe, still as he flies:
So new this new-borne knight to battell new
did rise.

Whom when the damned feend so fresh did spy. No wonder if he wondred at the sight. And doubted, whether his late enemy It were, or other new supplied knight. He, now to proue his late renewed mucht. High brandishing his bright deaw-burning blade,

Vion his crested scalpe so sore did smite, That to the scull a yawning wound it made: The deadly dint his dulled senses all dismaid.

I wote not, whether the reuenging steele Were hardned with that holy water dew. Wherein he fell, or sharper edge did feele, Or his baptized hands now greater grew; Or other secret vertue did ensew; Lise neuer could the force of fleshly arme, Ne molten mettall in his bloud umbrew: For till that stownd could neuer wight him

Be subtilty, nor slight, nor might, nor mighty

i accruell wound enraged him so sore, That loud he yelled for exceeding paine; As hundred ramping Lyons seem'd to rore, Whom rauenous hunger did thereto constraine: Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine, And therewith scourge the buxome aire so sore, That to his force to yeelden it was faine; Ne ought his sturdiestrokes might stand afore, that high trees ouerthrew, and rocks in peeces

The same aduauncing high aboue his head, With sharpe intended sting so rude him smot, That to the earth him drone, as stricken dead, No living wight would have him life behot: The mortall sting his angry needle shot Qute through his shield, and in his shoulder

Where fast it stucke, ne would there out be got: The griefe thereof him wondrous sore diseasd, Ne might his ranckling paine with patience be appeasd.

But yet more mindfull of his honour deare, Then of the grieuous smart, which him did wring, From loathed soile he can him lightly reare, And stroug to loose the farre infixed sting: Which when in vaine he tryde with struggeling, Inflam'd with wrath, his raging blade he heft, And strooke so strongly, that the knotty string Of his huge taile he quite a sunder cleft, Five ioynts thereof he hewd, and but the stump him left.

Hart cannot thinke, what outrage, and what cryes, With foule enfouldred smoake and flashing fire, The hell-bred beast threw forth vnto the skyes, That all was couered with darknesse dire: Then fraught with rancour, and encorred ire. He cast at once him to auenge for all, And gathering vp himselfe out of the mire, With his vieuen wings did fiercely fall Voon his sunne-bright shield, and gript it fast withall.

Much was the man encombred with his hold, In feare to lose his weapon in his paw, Ne wist yet, how his talants to vnfold; Nor harder was from Cerberus greedie iaw To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw To reaue by strength the griped gage away: Thrise he assayd it from his foot to draw, And thrise in vame to draw it did assay. It booted nought to thinke, to robbe him of his pray.

Tho when he saw no power might prevaile, His trustic sword he cald to his last aid, Wherewith he ficreely did his foe assaile, And double blowes about him stoutly laid, That glauncing fire out of the yron plaid; As sparckles from the Andule vse to fly, When heatinchammers on the wedge are swaid: Therewith at last he forst him to vnty One of his grasping feete, him to defend thereby.

The other foot, fast fixed on his shield, Whenas no strength, nor stroks mote him constraine

To loose, he yet the warlike pledge to yield, He smot thereat with all his might and maine, That nought so wondrous puissance might sustaine:

Vpon the loynt the lucky steele did light. And made such way, that hewd it quite in twaine:

The paw yet missed not his minisht might. But hong still on the shield, as it at first was pight.

For griefe thereof, and diuclish despight, From his infernall fournace forth he threw Huge flames, that dimmedall the heavens light, Enrold in duskish smoke and brimstone blew; As burning Aetna from his boyling stew Doth belch out flames, and rockes in peeces broke, And ragged ribs of mountaines molten new, Enwrapt in coleblacke clouds and filthy smoke, That all the land with stench, and heaven with horror choke.

The heate whereof, and harmefull pestilence So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire A little backward for his best defence, To saue his bodie from the scorching fire. Which he from hellish entrailes did expire. It chaunst (eternall God that chaunce did guide) As he recoyled backward, in the mire His nigh forwearied feeble feet did slide. And downe he fell, with dread of shame sore terrifide.

46 There grew a goodly tree him faire beside, Loaden with fruit and apples rosie red, As they in pure vermilion had beene dide, Whereof great vertues ouer all were red: For happie life to all, which thereon fed, And life eke euerlasting did befall: Great God it planted in that blessed sted With his almightie hand, and did it call The tree of life, the crime of our first fathers fall.

In all the world like was not to be found, Saue in that soile, where all good things did

And freely sprong out of the fruitfull ground, As incorrupted Nature did them sow. Till that dread Dragon all did ouerthrow. Another like faire tree eke grew thereby, Whereof who so did eat, eftsoones did know Both good and ill: O mornefull memory: That tree through one mans fault hath doen vs all to dy.

From that first tree forth flowd, as from a well. A trickling streame of Balme, most soueraine And daintie deare, which on the ground still fell. And overflowed all the fertill plaine. As it had deawed bene with timely raine: Life and long health that gratious ointment

And deadly woundes could heale, and reare againe

The senselesse corse appointed for the graue. Into that same he fell: which did from death him saue.

For nigh thereto the euer damned beast Durst not approch, for he was deadly made, And all that life preserved, did detest: Yet he it oft aduentur'd to inuade. By this the drouping day-light gan to fade, And yeeld his roome to sad succeeding night, Who with her sable mantle gan to shade The face of earth, and wayes of living wight, And high her burning torch set vp in heauen bright.

50

When gentle Vna saw the second fall Of her deare knight, who wearie of long fight. And faint through losse of bloud, mou'd not at

But lay as in a dreame of deepe delight, Besmeard with pretious Balme, whose vertuous might

Did heale his wounds, and scorching heat alay, Againe she stricken was with sore affright, And for his safetie gan deuoutly pray;

And watch the noyous night, and wait for iovous day.

The ioyous day gan carly to appeare, And faire Aurora from the deawy bed Of aged Tithone gan her selfe to reare, With rosie cheekes, for shame as blushing red; Her golden lockes for haste were loosely shed About her eares, when Vna her did marke Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers spred, From heaven high to chase the chearelesse darke; With merry note her loud salutes the mounting

Then freshly vp arose the doughtie knight. All healed of his hurts and woundes wide, And did himselfe to battell readie dight; Whose early foe awaiting him beside To haue deuourd, so soone as day he spyde, When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare, As if late fight had nought him damnifyde, He woxe dismayd, and gan his fate to feare; Nathlesse with wonted rage he him aduaunced neare.

And in his first encounter, gaping wide, He thought attonce him to have swallowd quight, And rusht vpon him with outragious pride; Whohimr'encountring fierce, as hauke in flight, Perforce rebutted backe. The weapon bright Taking aduantage of his open iaw, Ran through his mouth with so importune might, That deepe emperst his darksome hollow maw, And back retyrd, his life bloud forth with all did

So downe he fell, and forth his life did breath, That vanisht into smoke and cloudes swift; So downe he fell, that th'earth him vnderneath Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift; So downe he fell, as an huge rockie clift, Whose false foundation waves have washt away, With dreadfull poyse is from the mayneland rift, And rolling downe, great Neptunedoth dismay; So downe he fell, and like an heaped mountaine

The knight himselfe even trembled at his fall, so huge and horrible a masse it seem'd; And his deare Ladie, that beheld it all, Durst not approach for dread, which she misdeem'd.

But yet at last, when as the direfull feend She saw not stirre, off-shaking vaine affright, She nigher drew, and saw that ioyous end: Then God she praysd, and thankt her faithfull knight,

That had atchieu'd so great a conquest by his might.

## Cant. XII.

## 

Faire V na to the Redcrosse knight betrouthed is with ioy: Though false Duessa it to barre her false sleights doe imploy.

## 

Behold I see the hauen nigh at hand,
To which I meane my wearie course to bend;
Verethe maine shete and beare ypwith the land,
The which afore is fairely to be kend,
And seemeth safe from stormes, that may offend;
There this faire virgin wearie of her way
Must landed be, now at her iourneyes end:
There eke my feeble barke a while may stay,
Till merry wind and weather call her thence
away.

Statsely had Phabus in the glooming East Yet harnessed his firite-footed teeme, Ne reard aboue the earth his flaming creast, When the last deadly smoke aloft did steeme, That signe of last outbreathed life did seeme Ynto the watchman on the castle wall; Whothereby dead that balefull Beast did deeme, And to his Lord and Ladie lowd gan call, To tell, how he had seene the Dragons fatall fall.

V<sub>P</sub>rose with hastie ioy, and feeble speed
That aged Sire, the Lord of all that land,
And looked forth, to weet, if true indeede
Those tydings were, as he did vnderstand,
Which whenas true by tryall he out fond,
He bad to open wyde his brazen gate,
Which long time had bene shut, and out of hond
Proclaymed ioy and peace through all his state;
For dead now was their foe, which them forrayed late.

Then gan triumphant Trompets sound on hie, That sent to heaven the ecchoed report Of their new ioy, and happie victorie Gainst him, that had them long opprest with And fast imprisoned in sieged fort. [tort, Then all the people, as in solemne feast, To him assembled with one full consort, Reioyeng at the fall of that great beast, From whose eternall bondage now they were releast.

Forth came that auncient Lordandaged Queene, Arayd in antique robes downe to the ground, And sad habiliments right well beseene; A noble crew about them waited round Of sage and sober Peres, all grauely gownd; Whom farre before did march a goodly band Of tall young men, all hable armes to sownd, But now they laurell braunches bore in hand; Glad signe of victorie and peace in all their land.

6

Vnto that doughtie Conquerour they came,
And him before themselues prestrating low,
Their Lord and Patroneloud did him proclame,
And at his feet their laurell boughes did throw.
Soone after them all dauncing on a row
The comely virguns came, with girlands dight,
As fresh as flowres in medow greene do grow,
When morning deaw ypon their leaues doth light:
And in their hands sweet Timbrels all vpheld on
hight.

And them before, the fry of children young Their wanton sports and child ish mirth did play, And to the Maydens sounding tymbrels sung In well attuned notes, a loyous lay, And made delightfull musicke all the way, Vntill they came, where that faire virgin stood; As faire Diana in fresh sommers day Behokls her Nymphes, enraung din shadie wood, Some wrestle, some do run, some bathe in christall flood

8

So she beheld those maydens meriment With chearefull vew; who when to her they came,

Themselues to ground with gratious humblesse And her ador'd by honorable name, [bent, Lifting to heauen her euerlasting fame: Then on her head they set a girland greene, And crowned her twix tearnest and twix t game; Who in her selfe-resemblance well beseene, Did seeme such, as she was, a goodly maiden Queene.

And after, all the raskall many ran,
Heaped together in rude rablement,
To see the face of that victorious man:
Whom all admired, as from heauen sent,
And gazd vpon with gaping wonderment.
But when they came, where that dead Dragon lay,
Stretcht on the ground in monstrous large extent,
The sight with ielle feare did them dismay,
Ne durst approch him nigh, to touch, or once
assay.

Some feard, and fled; some feard and well it faynd; One that would wiser seeme, then all the rest, Warnd him not touch, for yet perhaps remaynd Some lingring life within his hollow brest, Or in his wombe might lurke some hidden nest Of many Dragonets, his fruitfull seed; Another said, that in his eyes did rest Yet sparckling fire, and bad thereof take heed; Another said, he saw him moue his eyes indeed.

One mother, when as her foolehardie chyld Did come too neare, and with his talants play, Halfe dead through feare, her litle babe reuyld, And to her gossips gan in counsell say; How can I tell, but that his talants may Yet scratch my sonne, or rend his tender hand? So diuersly themselues in vaine they fray; Whiles some more bold, to measure him nigh stand.

To proue how many acres he did spread of land.

Thus flocked all the folke him round about,
The whiles that hoarie king, with all his traine,
Being arrived, where that champion stout
After his foes defeasance did remaine,
Him goodly greetes, and faire does entertaine,
With princely gifts of yuorie and gold,
And thousand thankes him yeelds for all his
paine.

Then when his daughter deare he does behold, Her dearely doth imbrace, and kisseth manifold.

And after to his Pallace he them brings,

irame.

With shaumes, and trompets, and with Clarious sweet; And all the way the joyous people sings, And with their garments strowes the paued street: Whence mounting up, they find purueyance meet Of all, that royall Princes court became, And all the floore was vnderneath their feet Bespred with costly scarlot of great name, On which they lowly sit, and fitting purpose

What needs me tell their feast and goodly guize, In which was nothing riotous nor vaine? What needs of daintie dishes to deuize, Of comely seruices, or courtly trayne? My narrow leaues cannot in them containe. The large discourse of royall Princes state. Yet was their manner then but bare and plaine; For th'antique world excesse and pride did hate; Such proud luxurious pompe is swollen vp but late.

Then when with meates and drinkes of euery kinde
Their feruent appetites they quenched had,
That auncient Lord gan fit occasion finde,
Of straunge aduentures, and of perils sad,
Which in his trauell him befallen had,
For to demaund of his renowned guest:
Who then with vtt'rance graue, and count'nance sad,

From point to point, as is before exprest, Discourst his voyage long, according his request.

Great pleasure mixt with pittifull regard,
That godly King and Queene did passionate,
Whiles they his pittifull aduentures heard,
That oft they did lament his lucklesse state,
And often blame the too importune fate,
That heapd on him so many wrathfull wreakes:
For neuer gentle knight, as he of late,
So tossed was in fortunes cruell freakes;
And all the while salt teares bedeawd the
hearers cheaks.

Then said that royall Pere in sober wise; Deare Sonne, great beene the eurls, which ye bore From first to last in your late enterprise, That I note, whether prayse, or pitty more: For neuer liung man, I weene, so sore In sea of deadly daungers was distrest; But since now safe ye seised haue the shore, And well arriued are, (high God be blest) Let vs deuize of ease and euerlasting rest.

Ahdearest Lord, said then that doughty knight, Of ease or rest I may not yet deuize; For by the faith, which I to armes haue plight, I bounden am streight after this emprize, As that your daughter can ye well aduize, Backe to returne to that great Faerie Queene, And her to serue six yeares in warlike wize, Gainst that proud Paynim king, that workes her teene:

Therefore I ought craue pardon, till I there have beene.

Vnhappie falles that hard necessitie, (Quoth he) the troubler of my happie peace, And vowed foe of my felicitie; Ne I against the same can justly preace: But since that band ye cannot now release, Nor doen vndo; (for vowes may not be vaine) boone as the terme of those six yeares shall cease.

Ye then shall hither backe returne againe, fhe marriage to accomplish vowd betwixt you twain.

20

Which for my part I couet to performe, In sort as through the world I did proclame, That who so kild that monster most deforme, And him in hardy battaile ouercame, Should haue mine onely daughter to his Dame, And of my kingdome heire apparaunt bee: Therefore since now to thee perteines the same, By dew desert of noble cheualree, Both daughter and eke kingdome, lo I yield to

thee.

Then forth he called that his daughter faire, The fairest Vn' his onely daughter deare, His onely daughter, and his onely heyre; Who forth proceeding with sad sober cheare, As bright as doth the morning starre appeare Out of the East, with flaming lockes bedight, To tell that dawning day is drawing neare, And to the world does bring long wished light; So faire and fresh that Lady shewd her selfe in sight.

22

So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in May; For she had layd her mournefull stole aside, And widow-like sad wimple throwne away, Wherewith her heauenly beautie she did hide, Whiles on her wearie iourney she did ride; And on her now a garment she did weare, All hilly white, withoutten spot, or pride, That seemd like silke and siluer wouen neare, But neither silke nor siluer therein did appeare.

2

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties beame, And glorious light of her sunshyny face To tell, were as to striue against the streame. My ragged rimes are all too rude and bace, Her heauenly lineaments for to enchace. Ne wonder; for her owne deare loued knight, All were she dayly with himselfe in place, Did wonder much at her celestiall sight: Oft had he seene her faire, but neuer so faire dight.

SPENSER

So fairely dight, when she in presence came, She to her Sire made humble reuerence, And bowed low, that her right well became, And added grace vnto her excellence: Who with great wisedome, and graue eloquence Thus gan to say. But eare he thus had said, With flying speede, and seeming great pretence, Came running in, much like a man dismaid, A Messenger with letters, which his message said.

25

All in the open hall amazed stood,
At suddeinnesse of that vnwarie sight,
And wondred at his breathlesse hastie mood.
But he for nought would stay his passage right
Till fast before the king he did alight;
Where falling flat, great humblesse he did make,
And kist the ground, whereon his foot was pight;
Then to his hands that writ he did betake,
Which he disclosing, red thus, as the paper
spake.

26

To thee, most mighty king of Eden faire, Her greeting sends in these sad lines addrest, The wofull daughter, and forsaken heire Of that great Emperour of all the West; And bids thee be aduized for the best, Ere thou thy daughter linck in holy band Of wedlocke to that new vnknowen guest: For he already plighted his right hand Vnto another loue, and to another land.

2.

To me sad mayd, or rather widow sad, He was affiaunced long time before, And sacred pledges he both gaue, and had, False erraunt knight, infamous, and forswore: Witnesse the burning Altars, which he swore, And guiltie heauens of his bold periury, Which though he hath polluted oft of yore, Yet I to them for judgement just do fly, And them conjuret auenge this shamefullinjury.

28

Therefore since mine he is, or free or bond,
Or false or trew, or liuing or else dead,
Withhold, O soueraine Prince, your hasty hond
From knitting league with him, I you aread;
Ne weene my right with strength adowne to
tread.

Through weakenesse of my widowhed, or woe: For truthis strong, her rightfull cause to plead, And shall find friends, if need requireth soe, So bids thee well to fare, Thy neither friend, nor foe, Fidessa.

When he these bitter byting words had red,
The tydings straunge did him abashed make,
That still he sate long time astonished
As in great muse, ne word to creature spake.
At last his solemne silence thus he brake,
With doubtfull eyes fast fixed on his guest;
Redoubted knight, that for mine onely sake
Thy life and honour late aduenturest,
Let pought be hid from me that ought to be

Let nought be hid from me, that ought to be exprest.

30

What meane these bloudy vowes, and idle threats, Throwne out from womanish impatient mind? What heauens? what altars? what enraged heates

Here heaped vp with termes of loue vnkind, My conscience cleare with guilty bands would bind?

High God be witnesse, that I guiltlesse ame. But if your selfe, Sir knight, ye faultie find, Or wrapped be in loues of former Dame, With crime do not it couer, but disclose the

31

To whom the Redcrosse knight this answere sent, My Lord, my King, be nought hereat dismayd, Till well ye wote by graue intendiment, What woman, and wherefore doth me vpbrayd With breach of loue, and loyalty betrayd. It was in my mishaps, as hitherward I lately traueild, that vnwares I strayd Out of my way, through perils straunge and hard;

That day should faile me, ere I had them all declard.

There did I find, or rather I was found Of this false woman, that Fidessa hight, Fidessa hight the falsest Dame on ground, Most false Duessa, royall richly dight, That easie was t' inuegle weaker sight: Who by her wicked arts, and wylle skill, Too false and strong for earthly skill or might, Vnwares me wrought vnto her wicked will, And to my foe betrayd, when least I feared ill.

11

Then stepped forth the goodly royall Mayd, And on the ground her selfe prostrating low, With sober countenaunce thus to him sayd; O pardon me, my soueraigne Lord, to show The secret treasons, which of late I know To haue bene wroght by that false sorceresse. She onely she it is, that earst did throw This gentle knight into so great distresse, That death him did awaite in dayly wretchednesse.

3.4

And now it seemes, that she suborned hath This craftic messenger with letters vaine, To worke new woe and improuided scath, By breaking of the band betwixt vs twaine; Wherein she vsed hath the practicke paine Of this false footman, clokt with simplenesse, Whom if ye please for to discouer plaine, Ye shall him Archimago find, I ghesse, The falsest man aliue; who tries shall find no lesse.

3

The king was greatly moued at her speach, And all with suddein indignation fraight, Bad on that Messenger rude hands to reach. Ettsoones the Gard, which on his state did wait,

Attacht that faitor false, and bound him strait; Who seeming sorely chauffed at his band. As chained Beare, whom cruell dogs do bait, With idle force did faine them to withstand, And often semblaunce made to scape out of their hand.

1 Hand. 36

But they him layd full low in dungeon deepe, And bound him hand and foote with yron chains.

And with continual watch did warely keepe; Who then would thinke, that by his subtile trains

He could escape fowle death or deadly paines? Thus when that Princes wrath was pacifide, He gan renew the late forbidden banes, And to the knight his daughter deare he tyde, With sacred rites and vowes for euer to abyde.

3'

His owne two hands the holy knots did knit,
That none but death for euer can deuide;
His owne two hands, for such a turne most fit,
The housling fire did kindle and prouide,
And holy water thereon sprinckled wide;
At which the bushy Teade a groome did light,
And sacred lampe in secret chamber hide,
Where it should not be quenched day nor
night,

For feare of euill fates, but burnen euer bright.

38

Then gan they sprinckle all the posts with wine, And made great feast to solemnize that day; They all perfumde with frankencense diuine, And precious odours fetcht from far away, That all the house did sweat with great aray: And all the while sweete Musicke did apply Her curious skill, the warbling notes to play, To driue away the dull Melancholy; The whiles one sung a song of loue and iollity.

During the which there was an heauenly noise Heard sound through all the Pallace pleasantly, Like as it had bene many an Angels voice, Singing before th'eternall maiesty, In their trinall triplicities on hye; Yet wist no creature, whence that heauenly sweet Proceeded, yet each one felt secretly Himselfe thereby reft of his sences meet,

40

Great iov was made that day of young and old, And solemne feast proclaimd throughout the

land,
That their exceeding merth may not be told:
Suffice it heare by signes to vinderstand.
The vsuall loyes at knitting of loues band.
Thrise happy man the knight himselfe did hold,
Possessed of his Ladies hart and hand,
And euer, when his eye did her behold,
This heart did seeme to melt in pleasures manifold.

Her ioyous presence and sweet company
In full content he there did long enioy,
Ne wicked enuie, ne vile gealosy
His deare delights were able to annoy:
Yet swimming in that sea of blisfull ioy,
He nought lorgot, how he whilome had
sworne.

Proceeded, yet each **one felt secretly**Himselfe thereby reft of his sences meet,
And rauished with rare impression in his sprite.

In case he could that monstrous beast destroy,
Vinto his Farie Queene backe to returne:
The which he shortly did, and Vna left to
mourne.

42

Now strike your sailes ye iolly Mariners,
For we be come vnto a quiet rode,
Where we must land some of our passengers,
And light this wearie vessell of her lode.
Here she a while may make her safe abode,
Till she repaired haue her tackles spent,
And wants supplide. And then againe abroad
On the long voyage whereto she is bent:
Well may she speede and fairely finish her
intent.

FINIS LIB. I





# THE SECOND

## BOOKE OF THE

FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning,

THE LEGEND OF SIR GVYON.

OR

# Of Temperaunce.

RIGHT well I wote most mighty Soueraine,
That all this famous antique history,
Of some th'aboundance of an idle braine
Will iudged be, and painted forgery,
Rather then matter of iust memory,
Sith none, that breatheth liuing aire, docs
know,

Where is that happy land of Faery, Which I so much do vaunt, yet no where show,

But vouch antiquities, which no body can know.

But let that man with better sence aduize, That of the world least part to vs is red: And dayly how through hardy enterprize, Many great Regions are discouered, Which to late age were neuer mentioned. Who euer heard of th'Indian Peru? Or who in venturous vessell measured The Amazons huge river now found trew? Or fruitfullest Virginia who did euer vew?

Yet all these were, when no man did them know. Yet haue from wisest ages hidden beene:
And later times things more vnknowne shall show.

Why then should witlesse man so much misweene

That nothing is, but that which he hath seene? What if within the Moones faire shining spheare? What if in euery other starre vnseene Of other worldes he happily should heare? He wonder would much more: yet such to some appeare.

Of Faerie lond yet if he more inquire,
By certaine signes here set in sundry place
He may it find; ne let him then admire,
But yield his sence to be too blunt and bace
That no'te without an hound fine footing trace
And thou, O fairest Princesse vnder sky,
In this faire mirrhour maist behold thy face,
And thine owne realmes in lond of Faery,
And in this antique Image thy great auncestry

The which O pardon me thus to enfold
In couert vele, and wrap in shadowes light,
That feeble eyes your glory may behold,
Which else could not endure those beames

But would be dazled with exceeding light. O pardon, and vouchsafe with patient eare The braue aduentures of this Faery knight The good Sir Guyon gratiously to heare, In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly doth appeare.

## Cant. I.

## 

Guyon by Archimage abusd, The Redcrosse knight awaytes, Findes Mordant and Amauia slaine With pleasures poisoned baytes.

## 

ı

That cunning Architect of cancred guile,
Whom Princes late displeasure left in bands,
For falsed letters and suborned wile,
Soone as the Redcrosse knight he understands
To beene departed out of Eden lands,
To serue againe his soueraine Elfin Queene,
His artes he moues, and out of caytiues hands
Himselfe he frees by secret meanes viscene;
His shackles emptie left, him selfe escaped
cleene.

,

And forth he fares full of malicious mind,
To worken mischiefe and auenging woe,
Where euer he that godly knight may find,
His onely hart sore, and his onely foe,
Sith Vna now he algates must forgoe,
Whom his victorious hands did earst restore
To natiue crowne and kingdome late ygoe:
Where she enioyes sure peace for euermore,
As weather-beaten ship arriu'd on happie shore.

Him therefore now the object of his spight
And deadly food he makes: him to offend
By forged treason, or by open fight
He seekes, of all his drift the aymed end:
Thereto his subtile engins he does bend,
His practick wit, and his faire filed tong,
With thousand other sleights: for well he
kend.

His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong; Forhardly could be hurt, who was already stong.

Still as he went, he craftie stales did lay, With cunning traines him to entrap vnware And priuie spials plast in all his way, To weete what course he takes, and how he fare To ketch him at a vantage in his snares. But now so wise and warie was the knight By triall of his former harmes and cares, That he descride, and shonned still his slight The fish that once was caught, new bait val hardly bite.

Nath'lesse th'Enchaunter would not spare he paine,
In hope to win occasion to his will;
Which when he long awaited had in vaine,
He chaungd his minde from one to other ill:
For to all good he enimy was still.
Vpon the way him fortuned to meet,
Faire marching vnderneath a shady hill.
A goodly knight, all armd in harnesse meete
That from his head no place appeared to he

feete.

His carriage was full comely and vpright,
His countenaunce demure and temperate,
But yet so sterne and terrible in sight,
That cheard his friends, and did his foes amate:
He was an Elfin borne of noble state,

And mickle worship in his natiue land; Well could he tourney and in lists debate, And knighthood tooke of good Sir *Huons* hand, When with king *Oberon* he came to Faerie kind.

Him als accompanyd vpon the way
A comely Palmer, clad in blacke attire,
Of ripest yeares, and haires all hoarie gray,
That with a staffe his feeble steps did stire,
Least his long way his aged limbes should tire:
And if by lookes one may the mind aread,
He seemd to be a sage and sober sire,
And euer with slow pace the knight did lead.
Who taught his trampling steed with equall
steps to tread.

Such whenas Archimago them did view,
He weened well to worke some vaccouth wil.
Eftsoones vntwisting his deceiptfull clew,
He gan to weaue a web of wicked guile,
And with faire countenance and flattring stile,
To them approching, thus the knight bespake:
Faire sonne of Mars, that seeke with warlike
spoile,
And great atchieu'ments great your selfe to

make, Vouchsafe to stay your steed for humble misers sake. He stayd his steed for humble misers sake,

And bad tell on the tenor of his plaint; Who feigning then in euery limbe to quake, Through inward feare, and seeming pale and

With piteous mone his percing speach gan paint; Deare Lady how shall I declare thy cace, Whom late I left in langourous constraint? Would God thy selfe now present were in place, To tell this ruefull tale; thy sight could win

thee grace.

Or rather would, O would it so had chaunst, That you, most noble Sir, had present beene, When that lewd ribauld with vile lust aduaunst Layd first his filthy hands on virgin cleene, To spoile her daintie corse so faire and sheene, As on the earth, great mother of vs all, With huing eye more faire was neuer seene, Of chastitie and honour virginal!:

Witnesse ye headens, whom she in vaine to

helpe did call.

Howmay it be, (said then the knight halfewroth.)
That knight should knighthood euer so haue shent?

[troth.]

None but that saw (quoth he) would weene for How shamefully that Maid he did torment. Her looser golden lockes he rudely rent, Anddrewheronthe ground, and his sharpesword Against her snowy brest he fiercely bent, And threatned death with many a bloudie word;

Toung hates to tell the rest, that eye to see abhord.

Therewith amoued from his sober mood,

And lines he yet (said he) that wrought this act, And doen the heavens afford him vitall food? He lives, (quoth he) and boasteth of the fact. Ne yet hath any knight his courage crackt. Where may that treachour then (said he) be found.

Or by what meanes may I his footing tract?

That shall I shew (said he) as sure, as hound The stricken Deare doth chalenge by the bleed-

ing wound.

blubbered

He staid not lenger talke, but with fierce ire And zealous hast away is quickly gone To seeke that knight, where him that craftie Squire Supposd to be. They do arriue anone, Where sate a gentle Lady all alone, With garments rent, and haire discheueled, Wringing her hands, and making piteous mone; Her swollen eyes were much disfigured, And her faire face with teares was fowly

•

The knight approching nigh, thus to her said, Faire Ladie, through foule sorrow ill bedight, Great pittie is to see you thus dismaid, And marre the blossome of your beautie bright: For thy appease your griefe and heauie plight, And tell the cause of your conceiued paine. For if he liue, that hath you doen despight. He shall you doe due recompence againe, Or else his wrong with greater puissance maintains.

15

Which when she heard, as in despightfull wise, She wilfully her sorrow did augment, And offred hope of comfort did despise: Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent, And scratcht her face with ghastly dreriment, Ne would she speake, ne see, ne yet be seene, But hid her visage, and her head downe bent, Either for gricuous shame, or for great teene, As if her hart with sorrow had transfixed beene.

16

Till her that Squire bespake, Madame my liefe, For Gods deare loue be not so wilfull bent, But doe vouchsafe now to receiue reliefe, The which good fortune doth to you present. For what bootes it to weepe and to wayment, When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill increase, And the weake mind with double woe torment? When she her Squire heard speake, she gan appease

Her voluntarie paine, and feele some secret ease.

17

Eftsoone she said, Ah gentle trustic Squire, What comfort can I wofull wretch conceaue, Or why should euer I henceforth desire To see faire heauens face, and life not leaue, sith that false Traytour did my honour reaue? False traytour certes (said the Faeric knight) I read the man, that euer would deceaue A gentle Ladie, or her wrong through might: Death were too little paine for such a foule despight.

18

But now, faire !adie, comfort to you make, And read, who nath ye wrought this shamefull plight:

That short reuenge the man may ouertake, Where so he be, and soone vpon him light. Certes (saide she) I wote not how he hight, But vnder him a gray steede did he wield, Whose sides with dapled circles weren dight; Vpright he rode, and in his siluer shield Heborea bloudie Crosse, that quartred all the field.

Now by my head (said Guyon) much I muse. How that same knight should do so foule amis. Or euer gentle Damzell so abuse: For may I boldly say, he surely is

A right good knight, and true of word vwis: I present was, and can it witnesse well. When armes he swore, and streight did enterpris

Th'aduenture of the Errant damozell, In which he hath great glorie wonne, as I heare tell.

Nathlesse he shortly shall againe be tryde, And fairely quite him of th'imputed blame, Else be ye sure he dearely shall abyde, Or make you good amendment for the same : All wrongs have mends, but no amends of shame.

Now therefore Ladie, rise out of your paine, And see the saluing of your blotted name. Full oth she seemd thereto, but yet did faine: For she was inly glad her purpose so to gaine.

Her purpose was not such, as she did faine. Ne yet her person such, as it was seene, But vnder simple shew and semblant plaine Lurckt false Duessa secretly vnseene, As a chast Virgin, that had wronged beene: So had false Archimago her disguisd, To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad teene; And eke himselfe had craftily deuisd To be her Squire, and do her seruice well aguisd.

Her late forlorne and naked he had found, Where she did wander in waste wildernesse, Lurking in rockes and caues farre under ground, And with greene mosse cou'ring her nakednesse, To hide her shame and loathly filthinesse; Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments And borrow'd beautie spoyld. Her nathelesse Th'enchaunter finding fit for his intents, Did thus reuest, and deckt with due habiliments.

For all he did, was to deceive good knights, And draw them from pursuit of praise and fame, To slug in slouth and sensuall delights, And end their daies with irrenowmed shame. And now exceeding griefe him ouercame, To see the Rederosse thus advaunced hve; Therefore this craftie engine he did frame, Against his praise to stirre vp enmitye Of such, as vertues like mote vnto him allye.

So now he Guyon guides an vncouth way Through woods and mountaines, till they came Into a pleasant dale, that lowly lay Betwixt two hils, whose high heads ouerplast. The valley did with coole shade ouercast, Through midst thereof a little river rold. By which there sate a knight with helme vnlast. Himselfe refreshing with the liquid cold. After his trauell long, and labours manifold.

Loe yonder he, cryde Archimage alowd. That wrought the shamefull fact, which I did shew; And now he doth himselfe in secret shrowd, To flie the vengeance for his outrage dew: But vaine: for ye shall dearely do him rew, So God ye speed, and send you good successe; Which we farre off will here abide to vew. So they him left, inflam'd with wrathfulnesse, That streight against that knight his speare he did addresse.

Who seeing him from farre so fierce to pricke, His warlike armes about him gan embrace, And in the rest his readie speare did sticke: Tho when as still he saw him towards pace, He gan rencounter him in equal race. They bene ymet, both readie to affrap, When suddenly that warriour gan abace His threatned speare, as if some new mishap Had him betidde, or hidden daunger did entrap.

And cryde, Mercie Sir knight, and mercie Lord, For mine offence and heedlesse hardiment, That had almost committed crime abhord, And with reprochfull shame mine honour shent, Whiles cursed steele against that badge I bent, The sacred badge of my Redeemers death, Which on your shield is set for ornament: But his fierce foe his steede could stay vneath, Who prickt with courage kene, did cruell battell breath.

28

But when he heard him speake, streight way he

His error, and himselfe inclyning sayd; Ah deare Sir Guyon, well becommeth you, But me behougth rather to vpbravd, Whose hastie hand so farre from reason strayd, That almost it did havnous violence On that faire image of that heavenly Mayd, That decks and armes your shield with faire defence :

Your court'sie takes on you anothers due offence.

o bene they both attone, and doen vpreare Their beuers bright, each other for to greete; Goodly comportance each to other beare, Andentertaine themselues with court'sies meet. Then sud the *Redarosse* knight, Now mote I weet, Sir *Guyon*, why with so herce saliaunce, And fell intent ye did at earst me meet; For sith I know your goodly gouernaunce, ireat cause, I weene, you guided, or some vncouth chaunce.

ertes (said he) well mote I shame to tell
The fond encheason, that me hither led.
A false infamous faitour late befell
Me for to meet, that seemed ill bested,
And playnd of grieuous outrage, which he red
A knight had wrought against a Ladie gent;
Which to auenge, he to this place me led,
Where you he made the marke of his intent,
And now is fled; foule shame him follow, where
he went.

So can he turne his earnest vnto game,
Through goodly handling and wise temperance.
By this his aged guide in presence came;
Who soone as on that knight his eye did glance,
Let soones of him had perfect cognizance,
Sith him in Faerie court he late auizd;
And said, Faire sonne, God giue you happie
chance,

And that deare Crosse vpon your shield deuizd, Wherewith aboue all knights ye goodly seeme aguizd.

lov may you haue, and enerlasting fame,
Of late most hard atchieu ment by you donne,
For which enrolled is your glorious name
In heauenly Registers aboue the Sunne,
Where you a Saint with Saints your seat haue
wonne:

[marke,

But wretched we, where ye haue left your Must now anew begin, like race to runne; God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy warke. And to the wished hauen bring thy weary barke.

Palmer, (him answered the Rederosse knight)
His be the praise, that this atchieu ment wrought,
Who made my hand the organ of his might;
More then goodwill to me attribute nought:
For all I did, I did but as I ought.
But you, faire Sir, whose pageant next ensewes.

But you, faire Sir, whose pageant next ensewes, Well mote yee thee, as well can wish your thought,

That home ye may report thrise happie newes; For well ye worthie bene for worth and gentle thewes.

So courteous conge both did giue and take, With right hands plighted, pledges of good will. Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make, With his blacke Palmer, that him guided still. Still he him guided ouer dale and hill, And with his steedie staffe did point his way: His race with reason, and with words his will. From foule intemperance he oft did stay, And suffred not in wrath his hastiesteps to stray.

In this faire wize they traucild long yfere,
Through many hard assayes, which did betide;
Of which he honour still away did beare,
And spred his glorie through all countries wide.
At last as chaunst them by a forest side
To passe, for succour from the scorching ray,
They heard a ruefull voice, that dearnly cride
With percing shrickes, and many a dolefull lay;
Which to attend, a while their forward steps
they stay.

But if that carelesse heauens (quoth she) despise
The doome of iust reuenge, and take delight
To see sad pageants of mens miseries,
As bound by them to liue in liues despight,
Yet can they not warne death from wretched
wight. [to mee,
Come then, come soone, come sweetest death
And take away this long lent loathed light:
Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweet the medicines bee,

That long captined soules from wearie thraldome free.

But thou, sweet Babe, whom frowning froward fate Hath made sad witnesse of thy fathers fall, Sith heauen thee deignes to hold in liuing state, Long maist thou liue, and better thriue withall, Then to thy lucklesse parents did befall: Liue thou, and to thy mother dead attest, That cleare she dide from blemish criminal; Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding brest Loe I for pledges leaue. So giue me leaue to rest.

With that a deadly shricke she forth did throw,
That through the wood reecchoed againe,
And after gaue a grone so deepe and low,
That seemd her tender heart was rent in twaine,
Or thrild with point of thorough piercing paine;
As gentle Hynd, whose sides with cruell steele
Through launched, forth her bleeding life does
raine,

Whiles the sad pang approching she does feele, Brayes out her latest breath, and vp her eyes doth seele.

Which when that warriour heard, dismounting straict

From his tall steed, he rusht into the thicke, And soone arrived, where that sad pourtraict Of death and dolour lay, halfe dead, halfe quicke, In whose white alabaster brest did sticke A cruell knife, that made a griesly wound, From which forth gusht a streme of gorebloud thick.

That all her goodly garments staind around, And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassie ground.

Pittifull spectacle of deadly smart, Beside a bubbling fountaine low she lay, Which she increased with her bleeding hart, And the cleane waves with purple gore did ray; Als in her lap a louely babe did play His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew; For in her streaming blood he did embay His litle hands, and tender joynts embrew; Pitifull spectacle, as euer eye did view.

Besides them both, voon the soiled gras The dead corse of an armed knight was spred, Whose armour all with bloud besprinckled was; His ruddie lips did smile, and rosy red Did painthis chearefull cheekes, yet being ded: Seemd to have beene a goodly personage, Now in his freshest flowre of lustic hed, Fit to inflame faire Lady with loues rage. But that fiers fate did crop the blossome of his age.

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did behold, His hart gan wexe as starke, as marble stone, And his fresh bloud did frieze with fearefull cold, That all his senses seemd bereft attone: At last his mightie ghost gan deepe to grone, As Lyon grudging in his great disdaine, Mournes inwardly, and makes to himselfemone, Till ruth and fraile affection did constraine His stout courage to stoupe, and shew his inward paine.

Out of her gored wound the cruell steele He lightly snatcht, and did the floudgate stop With his faire garment: then gan softly feele Her feeble pulse, to proue if any drop Of living bloud yet in her veynes did hop; Which when he felt to moue, he hoped faire To call backe life to her for aken shop; So well he did her deadly wounds repaire,

Which he perceiuing greatly gan reioice, And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart Is meetest med'cine, tempred with sweet voice Ay me, deare Lady, which the image art Of ruefull pitie, and impatient smart, What direfull chance, armd with reuenging fate Or cursed hand hath plaid this cruell part.

Thus fowle to hasten your vntimely date; Speake, O deare Lady speake: help neuer comes too late.

Therewith her dim eie-lids she vp gan rearc, On which the drery death did sit, as sad Aslump of lead, and made darke clouds appeare; But when as him all in bright armour clad Before her standing she espied had, As one out of a deadly dreame affright, She weakely started, yet she nothing drad: Streight downe againe her selfe in great despight

She groueling threw to ground, as hating life and light.

The gentle knight her soone with carefull paine Vplifted light, and softly did vphold: Thriseheher reard, and thrise she sunkeagaine, Till he his armes about her sides gan fold, And to her said; Yet if the stony cold Haue not all seized on your frozen hart, Let one word fall that may your griefe vnfold, And tell the secret of your mortall smart; He oft finds present helpe, who does his griefe impart.

Then casting up a deadly looke, full low Shee sight from bottome of her wounded brest, And after, many bitter throbs did throw With lips full pale and foltring tongue opprest, These words she breathed forth from riuen chest:

Leaue, ah leaue off, what euer wight thou bee, To let a wearie wretch from her dew rest, And trouble dying soules tranquilitee. Take not away now got, which none would give to me.

Ah farre be it (said he) Deare dame fro mee, To hinder soule from her desired rest, Or hold sad life in long captilitee: For all I seeke, is but to haue redrest The bitter pangs, that doth your heart infest. Tell then, O Lady tell, what fatall priefe Hath with so huge misfortune you opprest? That I may cast to compasse your reliefe, That at the last she gan to breath out living aire. | Ordie with you insorrow, and partake your griefe. With feeble hands then stretched forth on hye, As heauen accusing guiltie of her death, And with dry drops congealed in her eye, In these sad words she seem her vitmost breath: Heare then, O man, the sorrowes that vneath My tongue can tell, so farre all sense they pas: Lee this dead corpse, that lies here vnderneath, the gentlest knight, that euer on greene grastical steed with spurs did pricke, the good Sir Mordant was.

Was, (ay the while, that he is not so now)
My Lordmy loue; my deare Lord, my deareloue,
So long as heauens just with equall brow
Vouchsafed to behold vs from aboue,
One day when him high courage did emmoue,
As wont ye knights to seeke aduentures wilde,
He pricked forth, his puissant force to proue,
Me then he left enwombed of this child,
This lucklesse child, whom thus ye see with
bloud defild

Him fortuned (hard fortune ye may ghesse) To come, where vile *Acrasia* does wonne, *Acrasia* a false enchaunteresse,

That manyerrant knights hath foule for donne: Within a wandring Island, that doth ronne And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling is; Faire Sir, if euer there ye trauell, shonne The cursed land where many wend amis, And know it by the name; it hight the *Boure* 

And know it by the name; it hight the Bour of blis.

Her blisse is all in pleasure and delight, Wherewith she makes her louers drunken mad, And then with words and weedes of wondrous mobil.

mignt,
On them she workes her will to vses bad:
My lifest Lord she thus beguiled had;
For he was flesh: (all flesh doth frailtie breed.)
Whom when I heard to beene so ill bestad,
Weakewretch I wrapt my selfein Palmers weed,
And cast to seeke him forth through daunger
and great dreed.

Now had faire Cynthia by euen tournes
Full measured three quarters of her yeare,
And thrise three times had fild her crooked
hornes,

Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbeare, And bad me call *Lucina* to me neare. *Lucina* came: a manchild forth I brought: The woods, the Nymphes, my bowres, my midwiues weare,

Hardhelpe at need. So deare thee babe I bought, Yet nought too deare I deemd, while so my dear I sought.

Him so I sought, and so at last I found,
Where him that witch had thralled to her will,
In chaines of lust and lewd desires ybound,
And so transformed from his former skill,
That me he knew not, neither his owne ill;
Till through wise handling and fairegouernance,
I him recured to a better will,
Purged from drugs of foule intemperance:
Then meanes I gan deuise for his deliuerance.

Which when the vile Enchaunteresse perceiu'd, How that my Lord from her I would reprine, With cup thus charmd, him parting she deceiu'd; Sad verse, gue death to him that death does giue, And losse of lone, to her that loues to line, So sooneas Bacchus with the Nymphedoes lincke: So parted we and on our journey drine, Till comming to this well, he stoupt to drincke: The charme fulfild, dead suddenly he downe did

Which when I wretch, Not one word more she sayd But breaking off the end for want of breath, And slyding soft, as downe to sleepe her layd, And ended all her woe in quiet death. That seeing good Sir Guyon, could vneath From teares abstaine, for griefe his hart did

sincke.

And from so heavie sight his head did wreath, Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate, Which plunged had faire Ladie in so wretched state.

Then turning to his Palmer said, Old syre
Behold the image of mortalitie,
And feeble nature cloth'd with fleshly tyre,
When raging passion with fierce tyrannie
Robs reason of her due regalitie,
And makes it scruant to her basest part:
The strong it weakens with infirmitie,
And with bold furic armes the weakest hart;
The strong through pleasure soonest falles, the
weake through smart.

٤8

But temperance (said he) with golden squire Betwixt them both can measure out a meane, Neither to melt in pleasures whot desire, Nor fry in hartlesse griefe and dolefull teene. Thrise happie man, who fares them both atwerne:

But sith this wretched woman ouercome Of anguish, rather then of crime hath beene, Reserue her cause to her eternall doome, And in the meane vouchsafe her honorable toombe Palmer (quoth he) death is an equall doome
To good and bad, the common line of rest;
But after death the tryall is to come,
When best shall be to them, that lived best:
But both alike, when death hath both supprest,
Religious reverence doth buriall teene,
Which who so wants, wantsso much of his rest:
For all so great shame after death I weene,
As selfe to dyen bad, vnburied bad to beene.

So both agree their bodies to engraue;
The great earthes wombe they open to the sky,
And with sad Cypresse seemely it embraue,
Then couering with a clod their closed eye,
They lay therein those corses tenderly,
And bid them sleepe in euerlasting peace.
But ere they did their vtmost obsequy,
Sir Guyon more affection to increace,

Bynempt a sacred vow, which none should aye releace.

The dead knights word out of his sheath he drew, With which he cut a locke of all their heare, Which medling with their bloud and earth, he threw

Into the graue, and gan deuoutly sweare; Such and such euill God on Guyon reare, And worseand worse young Orphane be thy paine, If I or thou dew vengeance doe forbeare, Till guiltie bloud her guerdon doe obtaine: So shedding many teares, they closd the earth againe.

### Cant. 11.

#### 

Babes bloudie hands may not be clensd: the face of golden Meane. Her sisters two Extremities striue her to banish cleane.

#### 

Thus when Sir Guyon with his faithfull guide Had with due rites and dolorous lament The end of their sad Tragedie vptyde, The litle babe vp in his armes he hent; Who with sweet pleasance and bold blandishment

Gansmyle on them, that rather ought to weepe. As carelesse of his woe, or innocent
Of that was doen, that ruth emperced deepe
In that knights heart, and wordes with bitter
teares did steepe.

Ah lucklesse babe, borne vnder cruell starre, And in dead parents balefull ashes bred, Full litle weenest thou, what sorrowes are Left thee for portion of thy liuelihed, Poore Orphane in the wide world scattered, As budding braunch rent from the natiue tree, And throwen forth, till it be withered: Such is the state of men: thus enter wee Into this life with woe, and end with miserce.

Then soft himselfe inclyning on his knee
Downe to that well, did in the water weene
(So loue does loath disdainfull nicitee)
His guiltie hands from bloudie gore to cleene.
He washt them oft and oft, yet nought they beene
For all his washing cleaner. Still he stroue,
Yet still the litle hands were bloudie seene;
The which him into great amaz'ment droue,
And into diuerse doubt his wauering wonder
cloue.

He wist not whether blot of foule offence
Might not be purgd with water nor with bath;
Or that high God, in lieu of innocence,
Imprinted had that token of his wrath,
To shew how sore bloudguiltinesse he hat'th;
Or that the charme and venim, which they
druncke,

Their bloud with secret filth infected hath, Being diffused through the senselesse truncke, That through the great contagion direfull deadly stunck.

Whom thus at gaze, the Palmer gan to bord With goodly reason, and thus faire bespake; Ye bene right hard amated, gratious Lord, And of your ignorance great maruell make, Whiles cause not well conceiued ye mistake. But know, that secret vertues are infusd In euery fountaine, and in euery lake, Which who hath skill them rightly to haue chusd.

To proofe of passing wonders hath full often vsd.

6

Of those some were so from their source indewd By great Dame Nature, from whose fruitfull pap Their welheads spring, and are with moisture deawd:

Which feedes each liuing plant with liquid sap, And filles with flowres faire Floracs painted lap: But other some by gift of later grace, Or by good prayers, or by other hap, Had vertue pourd into their waters bace, And thenceforth were renownd, and sought from place to place.

frame.

Such is this well, wrought by occasion straunge, Which to her Nymph befell. Vpon a day, As she the woods with bow and shafts did raunge. The hartlesse Hind and Robucke to dismay, Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the way, And kindling fire at her faire burning eye, Inflamed was to follow beauties chace, And chaced her, that fast from him did fly; As Hind from her, so she fled from her enimy.

8

At last when fayling breath began to faint,
And saw no meanes to scape, of shame affrayd,
She set her downe to weepe for sore constraint,
And to *Diana* calling lowd for ayde,
Her deare besought, to let her dye a mayd.
The goddese heard, and suddeine where she sate,
Welling out streames of teares, and quite
dismayd

With stony feare of that rude rustick mate, Transformd her to a stone from stedfast virgins state.

Lo now she is that stone, from whose two heads, As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames do flow,

Yet cold through feare, and old conceived dreads; And yet the stone her semblance seemes to show, Shapt like a maid, that such ye may her know; And yet her vertues in her water byde: For it is chast and pure, as purest snow, Ne lets her waues with any filth be dyde, But euer like her selfe vnstained hath beene tryde.

10

From thence it comes, that this babes bloudy hand

May not be clensd with water of this well:
Ne certes Sir striue you it to withstand,
But let them still be bloudy, as befell,
That they his mothers innocence may tell,
As she bequeathd in her last testament;
That as a sacred Symbole it may dwell
In her sonnes flesh, to minde reuengement,
And be for all chast Dames an endlesse moniment.

1

He hearkned to his reason, and the childe Vptaking, to the Palmer gaue to beare; But his sad fathers armes with bloud defilde, An heauie load himselfe did lightly reare, And turning to that place, in which whyleare He left his loftie steed with golden sell, And goodly gorgeous barbes, him found not theare.

By other accident that earst befell, He is convaide, but how or where, here fits not tell Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he wroth, Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease, And fairely fare on foot, how euer loth; His double burden did him sore disease. So long they traueiled with litle ease, Till that at last they to a Castle came, Built on a rocke adiopning to the seas; It was an auncient worke of antique fame, And wondrous strong by nature, and by skilfull

12

Therein three sisters dwelt of sundry sort,
The children of one sire by mothers three;
Who dying whylome did diuide this fort
To them by equall shares in equall fee:
But strifull minde, and diuerse qualitee
Drew them in parts, and each made others foe:
Still did they striue, and dayly disagree;
The eldest did against the youngest goe,
And both against the middest meant to worken
woe.

14

Where when the knight arriu'd, he was right well

Receiu'd, as knight of so much worth became, Of second sister, who did far excell The other two; Medina was her name, A sober sad, and comely curteous Dame; Who rich arayd, and yet in modest guize, In goodly garments, that her well became, Faire marching forth in honorable wize, Ihm at the threshold met, and well did enterprize.

16

She led him vp into a goodly bowre,
And comely courted with meet modestie,
Ne in her speach, ne in her haulour,
Was lightnesse seene, or looser vanitie,
But gratious womanhood, and grauitie,
Aboue the reason of her youthly yeares:
Her golden lockes she roundly did vptye
In breaded tramels, that no looser heares
Did out of order stray about her daintie eares.

16

Whilest she her selfe thus busily did frame, Seemely to entertaine her new-come guest, Newes hereof to her other sisters came, Who all this while were at their wanton rest, Accourting each her friend with lauish fest: They were two knights of perelesse puissance, And famous far abroad for warlike gest, Which to these Ladies loue did countenaunce, And to his mistresse each himselfe stroue to aduaunce.

He that made loue vnto the eldest Dame, Was hight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man; Yet not so good of deedes, as great of name. Which he by many rash aduentures wan, Since errant armes to sew he first began; More huge in strength, then wise in workes he was,

And reason with foole-hardize ouer ran; Sterne melancholy did his courage pas, And was for terrour more, all armd in shyning bras.

75

But he that lou'd the youngest, was Sans-loy, He that faire Vna late fowle outraged, The most vnuly, and the boldest boy, That euer warlike weapons menaged, And to all lawlesse lust encouraged, Through strong opinion of his matchlesse might: Ne ought he car'd, whom he endamaged By tortious wrong, or whom bereau'd of right. He now this Ladies champion chose for loue to fight.

These two gay knights, vowd to so diuerse loues, Each other does enuic with deadly hate, And dayly warre against his foeman moues, In hope to win more fauour with his mate, And th'others pleasing seruice to abate, To magnifie his owne. But when they heard, How in that place straunge knight arriued late, Both knights and Ladies forth right angry far'd, And fiercely vnto battell sterne themselues prepar'd.

But ere they could proceede vnto the place, Where he abode, themselues at discord fell, And cruell combat ioynd in middle space: With horrible assault, and furie fell, They heapt huge strokes, the scorned life to quell, That all on vprore from her settled seat The house was raysd, and all that in did dwell; Seemd that lowde thunder with amazement great

Did rend the ratling skyes with flames of fouldring heat.

The noyse thereof cald forth that straunger knight, To weet, what dreadfull thing was there in hand; Where when as two braue knights in bloudy

With deadly rancour he enraunged fond, His sunbroad shield about his wrest he bond, And shyning blade vnsheathd, with which he ran

Vnto that stead, their strife to vnderstond;
And at his first arriuall, them began
With goodly meanes to pacifie, well as he can.

He maketh warre, he maketh peace again
And yet his peace is but continuall iarre:
O miserable men, that to him subject arre.

22

But they him spying, both with greedy forse Attonce vpon him ran, and him beset Withstrokes of mortall steele without remorse, And on his shield like yron sledges bet: As when a Beare and Tygre being met In cruell fight on lybicke Ocean wide, Espye a traueiler with feet surbet, Whom they in equall pray hope to deuide, They stint their strife, and him assaile on euery side.

But he, not like a wearie traueilere,
Their sharpe assault right boldly did rebut,
And suffred not their blowes to byte him nere,
But with redoubled buffes them backe did put:
Whose grieued mindes, which choler did englut,
Against themselues turning their wrathfull
spight,

Gan with new rage their shields to hew and cut; But still when Guyon came to part their fight, With heavie load on him they freshly gan to smight.

might.

As a tall ship tossed in troublous seas, Whom raging windes threating tomake the pray Of the rough rockes, do diuersly disease, Meetes two contrary billowes by the way, That her on either side do sore assay, And boast to swallow her in greedy graue; She scorning both their spights, does make wide way.

And with her brest breaking the fomy waue, Does ride on both their backs, and faire her selfe doth saue.

So boldly he him beares, and rusheth forth Betweene them both, by conduct of his blade. Wondrous great prowesse and heroick worth He shewd that day, and rare ensample made. When two so mighty warriours he dismade: Attonce he wards and strikes, he takes and payes.

Now forst to yield, now forcing to inuade, Before, behind, and round about him layes. So double was his paines, so double be his prayse.

26

Straunge sort of fight, three valiaunt knights to see

Three combats iowne in one, and to darraine A triple warre with triple enmittee, All for their Ladies froward loue to gaine, Which gotten was but hate. So loue does raine Instoutest minds and maketh monstrous warre; He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe. And yet his peace is but continual iarre: O miserable men, that to him subject arre.

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious armes, The faire *Medina* with her tresses torne, And naked brest, in pitty of their harmes, Emongst them ran, and falling them betorne, Besought them by the womb, which them had

borne, [deare, And by the loues, which were to them most And by the knighthood, which they sure had sworne,

Their deadly cruell discord to forbeare,
And to her just conditions of faire peace to
heare.

But her two other sisters standing by, Her lowd gainsaid, and both their champions had

Pursew the end of their strong enmity, As ener of their loues they would be glad. Yet she with pitthy words and counsell sad, still strone their stubborne rages to revoke, That at the last suppressing fury mad, They gan abstance from dint of direfull stroke, And hearken to the sober speaches, which she spoke.

Ah puissaunt Lords, what cursed euill Spright, Or fell Erinnys, in your noble harts Her hellish brond hath kindled with despight, And stird you vp to worke your wilfull smarts? Is this the ioy of armes? be these the parts Of glorious knighthood, after bloud to thrust, And not regard dew right and iust desarts? Vame is the vaunt, and victory viniust, That more to mighty hands, then rightfull cause doth trust.

And were there rightfull cause of difference, Yet were not better, faire it to accord, Then with bloud guiltinesse to heape offence, Andmortall vengeaunceioyne to crime abhord? Of the form wrath, fly, O my liefest Lord: Sad be the sights, and bitter fruits of warre, And thousand furies wait on wrathfull sword; Neought the prayse of prowesse more doth marre, Then fowle reuenging rage, and base contentious larre.

But louely concord, and most sacred peace
Doth nourish vertue and fast friendship breeds;
Weake she makes strong, and strong thing does
increace.

Till it the pitch of highest prayse exceeds:
Braue be her warres, and honorable deeds,
By which she triumphes ouer ire and pride,
And winnes an Oliue girlond for her meeds:
Be therefore, O my deare Lords, pacifide,
And this misseeming discord meekely lay aside.

Her gracious wordes their rancour did appall, And suncke so deepe into their boyling brests, That downe they let their cruell weapons fall, And lowly did abase their loftic crests. To her faire presence, and discrete behests. Then she began a treatic to procure, Andstablish termes betwixt doth their requests, That as a law for euer should endure; Which to obserue in word of knights they did assure.

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their league, After their wearie sweat and bloudy toile, She them besought, during their quiet treague, Into her lodging to repaire a while, To rest themselues, and grace to reconcile. They soone consent: so forth with her they fare, [spoile Where they are well received, and made to Themselues of soiled armes, and to prepare Their minds to pleasure, and their mouthes to dainty fare.

And those two froward sisters, their faire loues Came with them eke, all were they wondrous loth,

And fained cheare, as for the time behoues,
But could not colour yet so well the troth,
But that their natures bad appeard in both:
For both did at their second sister grutch,
And inly grieue, as doth an hidden moth
The inner garment fret, not th'vtter touch;
One thought their cheare too litle, th'other
thought too mutch.

Elissa (so the eldest hight) did deeme
Such entertainment base, ne ought would eat,
Neought would speake, but euermore did seeme
As discontent for want of merth or meat;
No solace could her Paramour intreat
Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliance,
But with bent lowring browes, as she would
threat,

She scould, and frownd with froward counte-Vinworthy of faire Ladies comely gouernaunce.

But young Perissa was of other mind, Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light. And quite contrary to her sisters kind; No measure in her mood, no rule of right, But poured out in pleasure and delight; In wine and meats she flowd aboue the bancke, And in excesse exceeded her owne might; In sumptuous tire she ioyd her selfe to prancke, But of her loue too lauish (litle haue she thancke.)

Fast by her side did sit the bold Sans-loy,
Fit mate for such a mincing mineon,
Who in her loosenesse tooke exceeding ioy;
Might not be found a franker franion,
Of her lewd parts to make companion;
But Huddibras, more like a Malecontent,
Did see and grieue at his bold fashion;
Hardly could he endure his hardiment,
Yet still he sat, and inly did him selfe torment.

Betwixt them both the faire Medina sate
With sober grace, and goodly carriage:
With equall measure she did moderate
The strong extremities of their outrage;
That forward paire she euer would asswage,
When they would striue dew reason to exceed;
But that same froward twaine would accourage,
And of her plenty adde vnto their need:
So kept she them in order, and her selfe in heed.

Thus fairely she attempered her feast,
And pleasd them all with meete satietie,
At last when lust of meat and drinke was ceast,
She Guyon deare besought of curtesie,
To tell from whence he came through ieopardic,
And whither now on new aduenture bound.
Who with bold grace, and comely grauitie,
Drawing to him the eyes of all around,
From lofty siege began these words aloud to
sound.

This thy demaund, O Lady, doth reuiue Fresh memory in me of that great Queene, Great and most glorious virgin Queene aliue, That with her soueraigne powre, and scepter shene
All Faery lond does peaceably sustene.

All Faery lond does peaceably sustene.
In widest Ocean she her throne does reare,
That ouer all the earth it may be seene;
As morning Sunne her beames dispredden
cleare,

And in her face faire peace, and mercy doth appeare.

In her the richesse of all heauenly grace
In chiefe degree are heaped vp on hye:
And all that else this worlds enclosure bace
Hath great or glorious in mortall eye,
Adornes the person of her Maiestie;
That men beholding so great excellence,
And rare perfection in mortalitie,
Do her adore with sacred reuerence,
As th'Idole of her makers great magnificence.

To her I homage and my seruice owe, In number of the noblest knights on ground, Mongst whom on me she deigned to bestowe Order of Maydenhead, the most renownd, That may this day in all the world be found: An yearely solemne feast she wontes to make The day that first doth lead the yeare around; To which all knights of worth and courage bold Resort, to heare of straunge aduentures to be told.

There this old Palmer shewed himselfe that day,
And to that mighty Princesse did complaine
Of grieuous mischiefes, which a wicked Fay
Had wrought, and many whelind in deadly
paine.

Whereof he crau'd redresse. My Soueraine, Whose glory is in gracious deeds, and ioyes Throughout the world her mercy to maintaine, Estsoones deuisd redresse for such annoyes; Me all vnfit for so great purpose she employes.

Now hath faire Phæbe with her siluer face
Thrise seene the shadowes of the neather world,
Sith last I left that honorable place,
In which her royall presence is †introld;
Ne euer shall I rest in house nor hold,
Till I that false Acrasia haue wonne;
Of whose fowle deedes, too hidcous to be told,
I witnesse am, and this their wretched sonne,
Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly fordonne.

Tell on, faire Sir, said she, that dolefull tale, From which sad ruth does seeme you to restraine,

That we may pitty such vnhappy bale,
And learne from pleasures poyson to abstaine:
Ill by ensample good doth often gayne.
Then forward he his purpose gan pursew,
And told the storie of the mortall payne,
Which Mordant and Amauia did rew;
As with lamenting eyes him selfe did lately vew.

Nighe was far spent, and now in Ocean deepe Orion, flying fast from hissing snake,
His flaming head did hasten for to steepe,
When of his pitteous tale he end did make;
Whilest with delight of that he wisely spake,
Those guestes beguiled, did beguile their eyes
Of kindly sleepe, that did them ouertake.
At last when they had markt the chaunged
skyes,
They wist their houre was spent; then each to

## Cant. III.

#### 

Vaine Braggadocchio getting Guyons horse is made the scorne Of knighthood trew, and is of fayre Belphabe fowle forlorne.

### 

Soone as the morrow faire with purple beames
Disperst the shadowes of the mistie night,
And Titan playing on the eastern streames,
Gan cleare the deawy ayre with springing light,
Sir Guyon mindfull of his vow yplight,
Vprose from drowsie couch, and him addrest
Vnto the iourney which he had behight:
His puissaunt armes about his noble brest,
And many-folded shield he bound about his
wrest.

Then taking Congs of that virgin pure,
The bloudy-handed babe vnto her truth
Did earnestly commit, and her coniure,
In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth,
And all that gentle noriture ensu'th:
And that so soone as ryper yeares he raught,
He might for memorie of that dayes ruth,
Be called Ruddymans, and thereby taught,
T'auenge his Parents death on them, that had
it wrought.

So forth he far'd, as now befell, on toot,
Sith his good steed is lately from him gone;
Patience perforce; helpelesse what may it boot
To fret for anger, or for griefe to mone?
His Palmer now shall foot no more alone:
Sofortunewrought, as vnder greene woods syde
He lately heard that dying Lady grone,
He left his steed without, and speare besyde,
And rushed in on foot to ayd her, ere she dyde.

The whiles a losell wandring by the way,
One that to bountie neuer cast his mind,
Ne thought of honour euer did assay
His baser brest, but in his kestrell kind
A pleasing vaine of glory vaine did find,
To which his flowing toung, and troublous
spright

Gaue him great ayd, and made him more inclind:

He that braue steed there finding ready dight. Purloynd both steed and speare, and ran away full light. Now gan his hart all swell in iollitie, And of him selfe great hope and helpe conceiu'd,

That puffed vp with smoke of vanitie, And with selfe-loued personage deceiu'd, He gan to hope, of men to be receiu'd For such, as he him thought, or faine would bee:

But for in court gay portaunce he perceiu'd, And gallant shew to be in greatest gree, Eftsoones to court he cast t'auaunce his first

degree.

And by the way he chaunced to espy
One sitting idle on a sunny bancke,
To whom auaunting in great brauery,
As Peacocke, that his painted plumes doth
prancke,

He smote his courser in the trembling flancke, And to him threatned his hart-thrilling speare: The seely man seeing him ryde so rancke, And ayme at him, fell flat to ground for feare, And crying Mercy lowd, his pitious hands gan reare.

Thereat the Scarcrow wexed wondrous prowd, Through fortune of his first aduenture faire, And with big thundring voyce reuyld him lowd; Vile Caytiue, vassall of dread and despaire, Vnworthie of the commune breathed aire, Why liuest thou, dead dog, a lenger day, And doest not vnto death thy selfe prepaire. Dye, or thy selfe my captiue yield for ay; Great fauour I thee graunt, for aunswere thus to stay.

Hold, O deare Lord, hold your dead-doing hand. Then loud he cryde, I am your humble thrall. Ah wretch (quoth he) thy destinies withstand My wrathfull will, and do for mercy call. I giue thee life: therefore prostrated fall, And kisse my stirrup; that thy homage bee. The Miser threw him selfe, as an Offall, Streight at his foot in base humilitee, And cleeped him his liege, to hold of him in fec.

So happy peace they made and faire accord:
Eftscones this liege-mangan to wexe more bold.
And when he felt the folly of his Lord,
In his owne kind he gan him selfe vnfold:
For he was wylie witted, and growne old
In cunning sleights and practick knauery.
From that day forth he cast for to vphold
His idle humour with fine flattery,
And blow the bellowes to his swelling vanity.

Trompart fit man for Braggadocchio, To serue at court in view of vaunting eve: Vaine-glorious man, when fluttring wind does

In his light wings, is lifted vp to skye: The scorne of knighthood and trew cheualrye, To thinke without desert of gentle deed, And noble worth to be advaunced hye: Such prayse is shame; but honour vertues meed Doth beare the fairest flowre in honorable seed.

So forth they pas, a well consorted paire, Till that at length with Archimage they meet: Who seeing one that shone in armour faire. On goodly courser thundring with his feet, Eftsoones supposed him a person meet, Of his revenge to make the instrument: For since the Redcrosse knight he earst did weet, To beene with Guyon knit in one consent, The ill, which earst to him, he now to Guyon

And comming close to Trompart gan inquere Of him, what mighty warriour that mote bee, That rode in golden sell with single spere, But wanted sword to wreake his enmittee. He is a great aduenturer, (said he) That hath his sword through hard assay forgone. And now hath vowd, till he auenged bee, Of that despight, neuer to wearen none; That speare is him enough to doen a thousand

grone.

Th'enchaunter greatly loyed in the vaunt, And weened well ere long his will to win. And both his foen with equal foyle to daunt. Tho to him louting lowly, did begin To plaine of wrongs, which had committed bin By Guyon, and by that false Redcrosse knight, Which two through treason and deceiptfull gin, Had slaine Sir Mordant, and his Lady bright: That mote him honour win, to wreake so foule despight.

Therewith all suddeinly he seemd enraged, And threatned death with dreadfull counte-

As if their lives had in his hand beene gaged; And with stiffe force shaking his mortall launce, To let him weet his doughtie valiaunce. Thus said; Old man, great sure shalbe thy

geaunce If where those knights for feare of dew ven-Do lurke, thou certainly to me areed,

That I may wreake on them their hainous hatefull deed.

Certes, my Lord, (said he) that shall I soone. And give you eke good helpe to their decay, But mote I wisely you aduise to doon; Giue no ods to your foes, but do puruay Your selfe of sword before that bloudy day: For they be two the prowest knights on ground, And oft approu'd in many hard assay, And eke of surest steele, that may be found, Do arme your selfe against that day, them to confound.

Dotard (said he) let be thy deepe aduise; Seemes that through many yeares thy wits thee faile,

And that weake eld hath left thee nothing wise. Else neuer should thy judgement be so fraile, To measure manhood by the sword or maile. Is not enough four quarters of a man, Withouten sword or shield, an host to quaile? Thou little wotest, what this right hand can: Speake they, which have beheld the battailes,

which it wan.

The man was much abashed at his boast; Yet well he wist, that who so would contend With either of those knights on euen coast, Should need of all his armes, him to defend; Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend, When Braggadocchio said, Once I did sweare, When with one sword seuen knights I brought to end.

Thence forth in battell neuer sword to beare, But it were that, which noblest knight on earth doth weare.

Perdie Sir knight, said then th'enchaunter bliue, That shall I shortly purchase to your hond: For now the best and noblest knight aliue Prince Arthur is, that wonnes in Faerie lond: He hath a sword, that flames like burning brond, The same by my deuice I vndertake Shall by to morrow by thy side be fond. At which bold word that boaster gan to quake,

And wondred in his mind, what mote that monster make. He stayd not for more bidding, but away Was suddein vanished out of his sight:

The Northerne wind his wings did broad dis-

At his commaund, and reared him vp light From off the earth to take his aerie flight. They lookt about, but no where could espie Tract of his foot: then dead through great affright

They both nigh were, and each bad other flie: Both fled attonce, ne euer backe returned eie.

Till that they come vnto a forrest greene,
In which they shrowd themselues from causelesse feare; [beene,

Yet feare them followes still, where so they Each trembling leafe, and whistling wind they heare.

As ghastly bug their haire on end does reare: Yet both doe striue their fearfulnesse to faine. At last they heard a horne, that shrilled cleare Throughout the wood, that ecchoed againe, And made the forrest ring, as it would riue in twains.

2

Eftthrough the thicke they heard one rudely rush; With noyse whereof he from his loftie steed Downe fell to ground, and crept into a bush, To hide his coward head from dying dreed. But *Trompart* stoutly stayd to taken heed Of what might hap. Eftsoone the restepped forth A goodly Ladie clad in hunters weed, That seemd to be a woman of great worth,

And by her stately portance, borne of heavenly birth.

22

Her face so faire as flesh it seemed not, But heauenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew, Cleare as the skie, withouten blame or blot, Through goodly mixture of complexions dew; And in her cheekes the vermeill red did shew Like roses in a bed of lillies shed, The which ambrosiall odours from them threw, And gazers sense with double pleasure fed,

Hable to heale the sicke, and to reviue the ded.

In her faire eyes two liuing lamps did flame, Kindled aboue at th'heauenly makers light, And darted fyrie beames out of the same, So passing persant, and so wondrous bright, That quite bereau'd the rash beholders sight: In them the blinded god his lustfull fire To kindle oft assayd, but had no might; For with dredd Maiestie, and awfull ire, She broke his wanton darts, and quenched base desire.

Her iuorie forhead, full of bountie braue,
Like a broad table did it selfe dispred,
For Loue his loftie triumphes to engraue,
And write the battels of his great godhed:
All good and honour might therein be red:
For there their dwelling was. And when she
spake,

Sweet words, like dropping honny she did shed, And twixt the perles and rubins softly brake A silver sound, that heavenly musicke seemd to

make.

25

Vpon her eyelids many Graces sate,
Vnder the shadow of her euen browes,
Working belgards, and amorous retrate,
And euery one her with a grace endowes:
And euery one with meekenesse to her bowes.
So glorious mirrhour of celestiall grace,
And soueraine moniment of mortall vowes,
How shall fraile pen descriue her heauenly face,
For feare through want of skill her beautie to
disgrace?

So faire, and thousand thousand times more faire She seemd, when she presented was to sight, And was yelad, for heat of scorching aire, All in a silken Camus lylly whight, Purfled vpon with many a folded plight, Which all aboue besprinckled was throughout With golden aygulets, that glistred bright, Like twinckling starres, and all the skirt about Was hemd with golden fringe.

27

Below her ham her weed did somewhat traine, Andherstreightlegsmost brauely were embayld In gilden buskins of costly Cordwaine, Allbardwithgolden bendes, which were entayld With curious antickes, and full faire aumayld: Before they fastned were vnder her knee In a rich Iewell, and therein entrayld

The ends of all their knots, that none might see, How they within their fouldings close enwrapped bee.

Like two faire marble pillours they were seene, Which doe the temple of the Gods support, Whomall the people decke with girlands greene, And honour in their festivall resort; Thosesame with stately grace, and princely port She taught to tread, when she her selfe would

But with the wooddie Nymphes when she did play,

Or when the flying Libbard she did chace, She could them nimbly moue, and after fly apace.

And in her hand a sharpe bore-speare she held, And at her backe a bow and quiuer gay, Stuft with steele-headed darts, wherewith she gueld

The saluage beastes in her victorious play, Knit with a golden bauldricke, which forelay Athwart her snowy brest, and did diuide Her daintie paps; which like young fruit in

Now little gan to swell, and being tide, Through her thin weed their places only signifide.

Her yellow lockes crisped, like golden wyre, About her shoulders weren loosely shed, And when the winde emongst them did inspyre, They waued like a penon wide dispred, And low behinde her backe were scattered: And whether art it were, or heedlesse hap, As through the flouring forrest rash she fled, In her rude haires sweet flowres themselues did

And flourishing fresh leaues and blossomes did

enwrap.

Such as Diana by the sandie shore
Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus greene,
Where allthe Nymphes haue her vnwares forlore,
Wandreth alone with bow and arrowes keene,
To seeke her game: Or as that famous Queene
Of Amazons, whom Pyrrhus did destroy,
The day that first of Priame she was seene,
Did shew her selfe in great triumphant ioy,
To succour the weake state of sad afflicted Troy.

32
Such when as hartlesse Trompart did her vew,
He was dismayed in his coward mind,
And doubted, whether he himselfe should shew,
Or fly away, or bide alone behind:
Both feare and hope he in her face did find,
When she at last him spying thus bespake;
Hayle Groome; didst not thou see a bleeding
Hind, [strake?
Whose right haunch earst my stedfast arrow
If thou didst, tell me, that I may her ouertake.

Wherewith reviu'd, this answere forth he threw; O Goddesse, (for such I thee take to bee) For neither doth thy face terrestriall shew, Nor voyce sound mortall; I auow to thee, Such wounded beast, as that, I did not see, Sith earst into this forrest wild I came. But mote thy goodlyhed forgiue it mee, To weet, which of the Gods I shall thee name, That vnto thee due worship I may rightly frame.

To whom she thus; but ere her words ensewed, Vnto the bush her eye did suddein glaunce, In which vaine Braggadocchio was mewed, And saw it stirre: she left her percing launce, And towards gan a deadly shaft aduaunce, Inmindtomarkethebeast. At which sadstowre, Trompart forth stept, to stay the mortall chaunce, Out crying, O what euer heauenly powre, Or earthly wight thou be, withhold this deadly howre.

O stay thy hand, for yonder is no game
For thy fierce arrowes, them to exercize,
But loe my Lord, my liege, whose warlike name
Is farre renownd through many bold emprize
And now in shade he shrowded yonder lies.
She staid: with that he crauld out of his nest,
Forth creeping on his caitiue hands and thies,
And standing stoutly vp, his loftie crest
Did fiercely shake, and rowze, as comming late
from rest.

As fearefull fowle, that long in secret caue
For dread of soaring hauke her selfe hath hid,
Not caring how, her silly life to saue,
She her gay painted plumes disorderid,
Seeing at last her selfe from daunger rid,
Peepes foorth, and soone renewes her natiue
pride;

She gins her feathers foule disfigured Proudly to prune, and set on euery side, So shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she did her hide.

37
So when her goodly visage he beheld,
He gan himselfe to vaunt: but when he vewed
Those deadly tooles, which in her hand she held,
Soone into other fits he was transmewed,
Till she to him her gratious speach renewed;
All haile, Sir knight, and well may thee befall,
As all the like, which honour haue pursewed
Through deedes of armes and prowesse martiall;
All vertue merits praise, but such the most of all,

To whom he thus; O fairest vnder skie,
True be thy words, and worthy of thy praise,
That warlike feats doest highest glorifie.
Therein haue I spent all my youthly daiee.
And many battailes fought, and many fraies
Throughout the world, wher so they might be
found.

Endeuouring my dreadded name to raise Aboue the Moone, that fame may it resound In her eternall trompe, with laurell girland cround.

But what art thou, O Ladie, which doest raunge In this wilde forrest, where no pleasure is, And doest not it for ioyous court exchaunge, Emongst thine equall peres, where happie blis And all delight does raigne, much more then this?

There thou maist loue, and dearely loued bee, Andswim in pleasure, which thou here doest mis; There maist thou best be seene, and best maist

The wood is fit for beasts, the court is fit for thee.

Who so in pompe of proud estate (quoth she)
Does swim, and bathes himselfe in courtly blis,
Does waste his dayes in darke obscuritee,
And in obliuion euer buried is:
Where ease abounds, yt's eath to doe amis;
But who his limbs with labours, and his mind
Behaues with cares, cannot so easie mis.
Abroad in armes, at home in studious kind

Abroad in armes, at home in studious kind Who seekes with painfull toile, shall honor soonest find.

In woods, in waues, in warres she wonts to dwell, And will be found with perill and with paine; Ne can the man, that moulds in idle cell,

Vnto her happie mansion attaine:
Before her gate high God did Sweat ordaine,
And wakefull watches euer to abide:
But easie is the way, and passage plaine
To pleasures pallace; it may soone be spide.
And day and night her dores to all stand open

wide.

In Princes court, The rest she would haue said, But that the foolish man, fild with delight Of her sweet words, that all his sence dismaid, And with her wondrous beautie rauisht quicht, Gan burne in filthy lust, and leaping light, Thought in his bastard armes her to embrace. With that she swaruing backe, her Iauelin bright

Against him bent, and fiercely did menace So turned her about, and fled away apace.

43

Which when the Peasant saw, amazd he stood, And grieued at her flight; yet durst he not Pursew her steps, through wild vnknowen wood; Besides he feard her wrath, and threatned shot Whiles in the bush he lay, not yet forgot: Ne car'd he greatly for her presence vaine, But turning said to Trompart, What foule blot Is this to knight, that Ladie should againe Depart to woods vntoucht, and leaue so proud disdaine?

Perdie (said Trompari) let her passe at will,
Least by her presence daunger mote befall.
For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill)
But that she is some powre celestiall?
For whiles she spake, her great words did apall
My feeble courage, and my hart oppresse,
That yet I quake and tremble ouer all.
And I (said Braggadocchio) thought no lesse,
When first I heard her horne sound with such
ghastlinesse.

45

For from my mothers wombe this grace I have Me given by eternall destinie, That earthly thing may not my courage brave Dismay with feare, or cause one foot to flie, But either hellish feends, or powres on hie: Which was the cause, when earst that horne I heard,

Weening it had beene thunder in the skie, I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard; But when I other knew, my selfe I boldly reard.

46

But now for feare of worse, that may betide, Let vs soone hence depart. They soone agree; So to his steed he got, and gan to ride, As one vnfit therefore, that all might see He had not trayned bene in cheualree. Which well that valiant courser did discerne. For he despysd to tread in dew degree, But chaufd and fom'd, with courage fierce and sterne,

And to be easd of that base burden still did erne.

## Cant. 1111.

## COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

Guyon does Furor bind in chaines, and stops Occasion: Deliuers Phedon, and therefore by Strife is rayld vpon.

## \$

In braue pursuit of honorable deed,
There is I know not what great difference
Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed,
Which vnto things of valorous pretence
Seemes to be borne by natiue influence;
As feates of armes, and loue to entertaine,
But chiefly skill to ride, seemes a science
Proper to gentle bloud; some others faine
To menage steeds, as did this vaunter; but in
vaine.

But he the rightfull owner of that steed, Who well could menage and subdew his pride, The whiles on foot was forced for to yeed, With that blacke Palmer, his most trusty guide; Who suffred not his wandring feet to slide. But when strong passion, or weake fleshlinesse Would from the right way seeke to draw him wide,

Hewould through temperance and stedfastnesse, Teach him the weake to strengthen, and the strong suppresse.

It fortuned forth faring on his way,
He saw from farre, or seemed for to see
Some troublous vorore or contentious fray,

Whereto he drew in haste it to agree.

A mad man, or that feigned mad to bee,
Drew by the haire along ypon the ground,
A handsome stripling with great crueltee,
Whomsore he bett, and gor'd with many a wound,

That cheekes with teares, and sides with bloud did all abound.

And him behind, a wicked Hag did stalke, In ragged robes, and filthy disaray, Her other leg was lame, that she no'te walke, But on a staffe her feeble steps did stay; Her lockes, that loathly were and hoarie gray, Grew all afore, and loosely hong vnrold, But all behind was bald, and worne away, That none thereof could euer taken hold, and when fees ill appeared full of wringslee.

And eke her face ill fauourd, full of wrinckles old.

And euer as she went, her tongue did walke In foule reproch, and termes of vile despight, Prouoking him by her outrageous talke,

To heape more vengeance on that wretched wight; [smite, Sometimes she raught him stones, wherwith to

Sometimes herstaffe, though it her one legwere, Withouten which she could not go vpright; Ne any cuill meanes she did forbeare,

That might him moue to wrath, and indignation

The noble Guyon mou'd with great remorse,
Approching, first the Hag did thrust away,
And after adding more impetuous forse,
His mightie hands did on the madman lay,
And pluckt him backe; who all on fire streight
Against him turning all his fell intent, [way,
With beastly brutish rage gan him assay,
And smot, and bit, and kickt, and scratcht,
and rent,

And did he wist not what in his auengement.

And sure he was a man of mickle might,
Had he had gouernance, it well to guide:
But when the franticke fit inflamd his spright,
His force was vaine and strooke more often wide,
Then at the aymed marke, which he had eide:
And oft himselfe he chaunst to hurt vnwares,
Whilst reason blent through passion, nought
descride,

But as a blindfold Bull at randon fares, And where he hits, nought knowes, and whom he hurts, nought cares.

His rude assault and rugged handeling Straunge seemed to the knight, that aye with foe In faire defence and goodly menaging Of armes was wont to fight, yet nathemoe Was he abashed now not fighting so, But more enfierced through his currish play, Him sternely grypt, and haling to and fro, To ouerthrow him strongly did assay,

But ouerthrew himselfe vnwares, and lower lay.

And being downe the villein sore did beat,
And bruze with clownish fistes his manly face:
And eke the Hag with many a bitter threat,
Still cald vpon to kill him in the place.
With whose reproch and odious menace
The knight emboyling in his haughtie hart,
Knit all his forces, and gan soone vnbrace
Ilis grasping hold: so lightly did vpstart,
And drew his deadly weapon, to maintaine his
part.

Which when the Palmer saw, he loudly cryde,
Not so, O Guyon, neuer thinke that so
That Monster can be maistred or destroyd:
He is not, ah, he is not such a foe,
Assteele can wound, or strength can ouerthroe.
That same is Furor, cursed cruell wight,
That vnto knighthood workes much shame
and woe;

And that same Hag, his aged mother, hight *Occasion*, the root of all wrath and despight.

1

With her, who so will raging Furor tame, Must first begin, and well her amenage: First her restraine from her reprochfull blame, And euill meanes, with which she doth enrage Her franticke sonne, and kindles his courage, Then when she is withdrawen, or strong withstood.

It's eath his idle furie to asswage, And calme the tempest of his passion wood; The bankes are ouerflowen, when stopped is the flood.

Therewith Sir Guyon left his first emprise, And turning to that woman, fast her hent By the hoare lockes, that hong before her eyes, And to the ground her threw: yet n'ould she stent

Her bitter rayling and foule reuilement, Butstill prouok thersonne towreake her wrong; But nathelesse he did her still torment, And catching hold of her vngratious tong, Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and strong.

Then when as vse of speach was from her reft, With her two crooked handes she signes did make,

And beckned him, the last helpe she had left: But he that last left helpe away did take, And both her hands fast bound vnto a stake, That she note stirre. Then gan her sonne to flie Full fast away, and did her quite forsake; But Guyon after him in haste did hie, And soone him ouertooke in sad perplexitie.

14

In his strong armes he stiffely him embraste, Who him gainstriuing, nought at all preuaild: For all his power was vtterly defaste, And furious fits at earst quite weren quaild: Oft he re'nforst, and oft his forces fayld, Yet yield he would not, nor his rancour slacke. Then him to ground he cast, and rudely hayld, And both his hands fast bound behindhis backe, And both his feet in fetters to an yron racke.

т.

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind, Andhundredknotsthatdidhimsoreconstraine: Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind, And grimlygnash, threatning reuenge in vaine; His burning eyen, whom bloudie strakes did staine,

Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes of fire, And more for ranck despight, then for great paine,

Shakt his long lockes, colourd like copper-wire, And bit his tawny beard to shew his raging ire.

10

Thus when as Guyon Furor had captiu'd,
Turning about he saw that wretched Squire,
Whom that mad man of life nigh late depriu'd.
Lying on ground, all soild with bloud and mire:
Whom when as he perceiued to respire,
He gan to comfort, and his wounds to dresse.
Being at last recured, he gan inquire,
Whathardmishaphim brought to such distresse,
And made that caitines threat the threat of

And made that caitiues thral, the thral of wretchednesse.

With hart then throbbing, and with watry eyes, Faire Sir (quoth he) what man can shun the hap, That hidden lyes vnwares him to surpryse? Misfortune waites aduantage to entrap The man most warie in her whelming lap. So me weake wretch, of many weakest one, Vnweeting, and vnware of such mishap, She brought to mischiefe through occasion, Where this same wicked villein did me light you.

18

It was a faithlesse Squire, that was the sourse Of all my sorrow, and of these sad teares, Withwhomfromtenderdug of commune nourse, Attonce I was vpbrought, and eft when yeares More rype vs reason lent to chose our Peares, Our selues in league of vowed loue we knit: In which we long time without gealous feares, Or faultie thoughts continewd, as was fit; And for my part I vow, dissembled not a whit.

10

It was my fortune commune to that age,
To loue a Ladie faire of great degree,
The which was borne of noble parentage,
And set in highest seat of dignitee,
Yet seemd no lesse to loue, then loued to bee:
Long I her seru'd, and found her faithfull still,
Ne euer thing could cause vs disagree:
Loue that two harts makes one, makes eke one
will:

Each strone to please, and others pleasure to fulfill.

20

My friend, hight *Philemon*, I did partake
Of all my loue and all my priuitie;
Who greatly ioyous scenned for my sake,
And gratious to that Ladie, as to mee,
Ne euer wight, that mote so welcome bee,
As he to her, withouten blot or blame,
Ne euer thing, that she could thinke or see,
But vnto him she would impart the same:
O wretched man, that would abuse so gentle
Dame.

21

At last such grace I found, and meanes I wrought, That I that Ladie to my spouse had wonne; Accord of friends, consent of parents sought, Affiance made, my happinesse begonne, There wanted nought but few rites to be donne, Which mariage make; that day too farre did seeme:

Most ioyous man, on whom the shining Sunne Did shew his face, my selfe I did esteeme, And that my falser friend did no lesse ioyous deeme.

22

But ere that wished day his beame disclosd,
He either enuying my toward good,
Or of himselfe to treason ill disposd,
One day vnto me came in friendly mood,
And told for secret how he vnderstood
That Ladie whom I had to me assynd,
Had both distaind her honorable blood,
And eke the faith, which she to me did bynd;
And therfore wisht me stay, till I more truth
should fynd.

The gnawing anguish and sharpe gelosy, Which his sad speech infixed in my brest, Ranckled so sore, and festred inwardly, That my engreeued mind could find no rest, Till that the truth thereof I did outwrest, And him besought by that same sacred band Betwixt vs both, to counsell me the best. He then with solemne oath and plighted hand Assur'd, ere long the truth to let me vnderstand.

2

Ere long with like againe he boorded mee, Saying, he now had boulted all the floure, And that it was a groome of base degree, Which of my loue was partner Paramoure: Who vsed in a darkesome inner bowre Her oft to meet: which better to approue, He promised to bring me at that howre, When I should see, that would me nearer moue, And driue meto withdraw my blind abused loue.

25

This gracelesse man for furtherance of his guile, Did court the handmayd of my Lady deare, Who glad t'embosome his affection vile, Did all she might, more pleasing to appeare. One day to worke her to his will more neare, He woo'd her thus: Pryene (so she hight) What great despight doth fortune to thee beare, Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright, That it should not deface all others lesser light?

26

27

The Maiden proud through prayse, and mad through loue
Him hearkned to, and soone her selfe arayd,
The whiles to me the treachour did remoue
His craftie engin, and as he had sayd,
Me leading, in a secret corner layd,
The sad spectatour of my Tragedie; [playd,
Where left, he went, and his owne false part
Disguised like that groome of base degree,
Whom he had feignd th'abuser of my loue to bee.

28

Eftsoones he came vnto th'appointed place, And with him brought *Pryene*, rich arayd, In *Claribellaes* clothes. Her proper face I not descerned in that darkesome shade, But weend it was my loue, with whom he playd. Ah God, what horrour and tormenting griefe My hart, my hands, mine eyes, and all assayd? Me liefer were ten thousand deathes priefe, Then wound of gealous worme, and shame of such repriefe.

20

I home returning, fraught with fowle despight, And chawing vengeance all the way I went, Soone as my loathed loue appeard in sight, With wrathfull hand I slew her innocent; That after soone I dearely did lament: For when the cause of that outrageous deede Demaunded, I made plaine and euident, Her faultie Handmayd, which that bale did breede.

Confest, how Philemon her wrought to chaunge

her weede.

Which when I heard, with horrible affright
And hellish fury all enragd, I sought
Vpon my selfe that vengeable despight
To punish: yet it better first I thought,
Towreakemy wrath on him, that first it wrought.
To Philemon, fulse faytour Philemon
I cast to pay, that I so dearely bought;
Of deadly drugs I gaue him drinke anon,
And washt away his guilt with guiltie potion.

2

Thus heaping crime on crime, and gricfe on griefe,
To losse of loue adioyning losse of frend,
I meant to purge both with a third mischiefe,
And in my woes beginner it to end:
That was Pryene; she did first offend,
She last should smart: with which cruell intent,
When I at her my murdrous blade did bend,
She fled away with ghastly dreriment,
And I pursewing my fell purpose, after went.

33

Fearegaue her wings, and rage enforst my flight;
Through woods and plaines so long I did her
chace,

Till this mad man, whom your victorious might Hath now fast bound, me met in middle space, As I her, so he me pursewd apace, And shortly ouertooke: I, breathing yre, Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace, And with my heat kindled his cruell fyre; Which kindled once, his mother did more rage inspyre.

Betwixt them both, they haue me doen to dye, Through wounds, and strokes, and stubborne handeling,

That death were better, then such agony, As griefe and furie vnto me did bring; Of which in me yet stickes the mortall sting, That during life will neuer be appeasd. When he thus ended had his sorrowing, SaidGuyon, Squire, sore haue ye beenediseasd; But all your hurts may soone through temperance be easd.

asu.

Then gan the Palmer thus, Most wretched man,
That to affections does the bridle lend;
In their beginning they are weake and wan,
But soone through suff'rance grew to fearefull
end; [contend:
Whiles they are weake betimes with them
For when they once to perfect strength dogrow,
Strong warres they make, and cruell battry bend
Gainst fort of Reason, it to ouerthrow:
Wrath, gelosie, griefe, loue this Squire haue

layd thus low.

Wrath, gealosie, griefe, loue do thus expell:
Wrath is a fire, and gealosie a weede,
Griefe is a flood, and loue a monster fell;
The fire of sparkes, the weede of little seede,
The flood of drops, the Monster filth did breede:
But sparks, seed, drops, and filth do thus delay;
The sparks soone quench, the springing seed
outweed,

The drops dry vp, and filth wipe cleane away: So shall wrath, gealosie, griefe, loue dye and

decay.

Vnlucky Squire (said *Guyon*) sith thou hast Falne into mischiefe through intemperaunce, Henceforth takeheedeofthat thou now hast past, And guide thy wayes with warie gouernaunce, Least worse betide thee by some later chaunce. But read how art thou nam'd, and of what kin. *Phedon* I hight (quoth he) and do aduaunce Mine auncestry from famous *Coradin*, Who first to rayse our house to honour did begin.

Thus as he spake, lo far away they spyde A varlet running towards hastily, Whose flying feet so fast their way applyde, That round about a cloud of dust did fly, Which mingled all withsweate, did dim his eye. Hesooneapproched, panting, breathlesse, whot, And all so soyld, that none could him descry; His countenaunce was bold, and bashed not For Guyons lookes, but scornefull eyglaunce at him shot.

.38

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield, On which was drawen faire, in colours fit, A flaming fire in midst of bloudy field, And round about the wreath this word was writ, Burnt I do burne. Right well beseemed it, To be the shield of some redoubted knight; And in his hand two darts exceeding flit, And deadly sharpe he held, whose heads were dight

In poyson and in bloud, of malice and despight.

.30

When he in presence came, to Guyon first He boldly spake, Sir knight, if knight thou bee, Abandon this forestalled place at erst, For feare of further harme, I counsell thee, Or bide the chaunce at thine owne ieoperdie. The knight at his great boldnesse wondered, And though he scornd his idle vanitie, Yet mildly him to purpose answered; For not to grow of nought he it coniectured.

40

Varlet, this place most dew to me I deeme, Yielded by him, that held it forcibly. But whence should come that harme, which thou doest seeme
Tothreat to him, that mindshis chaunce t'abye? Perdy (said he) here comes, and is hard by A knight of wondrous powre, and great assay, That neuer yet encountred enemy, But did him deadly daunt, or fowle dismay; Nethou for better hope, if thou his presence stay.

How hight he then (said Guyon) and from whence?

Pyrochles is his name, renowmed farre For his bold feats and hardy confidence, Full oft approu'd in many a cruell warre, The brother of Cymachles, both which arre The sonnes of old Acrales and Despight, Acrales sonne of Phlegelon and Iarre; But Phlegeton is sonne of Herebus and Night; But Herebus sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

42

So from immortall race he does proceede,
That mortall hands may not withstand his
might,
Drad for his derring do, and bloudy deed;
Franklin bloud and spills is his delicht.

Drad for his derring do, and bloudy deed; For all in bloud and spoile is his delight. His am I Alin, his in wrong and right, That matter make for him to worke vpon And stirre him vp to strife and cruell fight. Fly therefore, fly this fearefull stead anon, Least thy foolhardize worke thy sad confusion.

4.3

His be that care, whom most it doth concerne, (Said he) but whither with such hasty flight Art thou now bound? for well mote I discerne Great cause, that carries thee soswift and light. My Lord (quoth he) mesent, and streight behight To seeke Occasion, where so she bee: For he is all disposd to bloudy fight, And breathes out wrath and hainous crueltie; flard is his hap, that first fals in his reopardic.

Madman (said then the Palmer) that does seeke Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife;

She comes vnsought, and shonned followes eke. Happy, who can abstaine, when Rancour rife Kindles Reuenge, and threats his rusty knife; Woe neuer wants, where euery cause is caught, And rash Occasion makes vnquiet life.

Then loe, where bound she sits, whom thou hast sought,

(Said Guyon,) let that message to thy Lord be brought.

45

That when the varlet heard and saw, streight way

He wexedwondrous wroth, and said, Vileknight, That knights and knighthood doest with shame vpbray,

And shewst th'ensample of thy childish might, With silly weake old woman thus to fight. Great glory and gay spoile sure hast thou got, Andstoutly prou'd thy puissaunce herein sight; That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wot, And with thy bloud abolish so reprochfull blot.

...

With that one of his thrillant darts he threw, Headed with ire and vengeable despight; The quiuering steele his aymed end well knew, And to his brest it selfe intended right: But he was warie, and ere it empight In the meant marke, aduaunst his shield

atweene, On which it seizing, no way enter might, But backerebounding, left the forckheadkeene; Eftsoones he fled away, and might no where be seene.



# Cant. V.

#### 

Pyrochles does with Guyon fight, And Furors chayne unbinds: Of whom sore hurt, for his reuenge Atin Cymochles finds.

### 

1

Who euer doth to temperaunce apply
His stedfast life, and all his actions frame,
Trust me, shall find no greater enimy,
Then stubborne perturbation, to the same;
To which right well the wise do giue that name,
For it the goodly peace of stayed mindes
Does ouerthrow, and troublous warre proclame:
His owne woes authour, who so bound it findes,
As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully vnbindes.

2

After that varlets flight, it was not long, Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon spide One in bright armse sembatteiled full strong, That as the Sunny beames do glaunceand glide Vpon the trembling wave, so shined bright, Androundabouthim threwforthsparkling fire, That seemd him to enflame on euery side: His steed was bloudy red, and fomed ire, When with the maistring spur he did him roughly stire.

Approching nigh, he neuer stayd to greete, Ne chaffar words, prowd courage to prouoke, But prickt so fiers, that vnderneath his feete The smouldring dust did round about him smoke,

Both horse and man nigh able for to choke; And fairly couching his steele-headed speare, Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke; It booted nought Sir Guyon comming neare To thinke, such hideous puissaunce on foot to

4

But lightly shunned it, and passing by,
With his bright blade did smite at him so fell,
That the sharpe steele arriving forcibly
On his broad shield, bit not, but glauncing fell
On his horse necke before the quilted sell.
And from the head the body sundred quight.
So him dismounted low, he did compell
On foot with him to matchen equall fight;
The truncked beast fast bleeding, did him fowly
dight.

Sore bruzed with the fall, he slow vprose,
And all enraged, thus him loudly shent;
Disleall knight, whose coward courage chose
To wreake it selfe on beast all innocent,
And shund the marke, at which it should be
ment, [hood fraile;
Thereby thine armes seeme strong, but manSo hast thou oft with guile thine honour blent;
But litle may such guile thee now auaile,
If wonted force and fortune do not much me faile.

6

With that he drewhis flaming sword, and strooke At him so fiercely, that the vpper marge Of his seuenfolded shield away it tooke, And glauncing on his helmet, made a large And open gash therein: were not his targe, That broke the violence of his intent, The weary soule from thence it would discharge; Nathelesse so sore a buff to him it lent, That made him reele, and to his brest his beuer bent.

Exceeding wroth was Guyon at that blow,
And much ashamd, that stroke of liuing arme
Shouldhim dismay, and makehim stoup so low,
Though otherwise it did him litle harme:
Tho hurling high his yron braced arme,
He smote so manly on his shoulder plate,
That all his left side it did quite disarme;
Yet there the steele stayd not, but inly bate
Deepe in his flesh, and opened wide a red floodgate.

Deadly dismayd, with horrour of that dint *Pyrochles* was, and grieued eke entyre; Yet nathemore did it his fury stint, But added flame vnto his former fire, That welnigh molt his hart in raging yre, Ne thenceforth his approued skill, to ward, Or strike, or hurtle round in warlike gyre, Remembred he, ne car'd for his saufgard, But rudely rag'd, and like a cruell Tygre far'd.

He hewd, and lasht, and foynd, and thundred blowes,

And euery way did seeke into his life, Neplate, ne male could ward so mighty throwes, But yielded passage to his cruell knife. But Guyon, in the heat of all his strife, Was warie wise, and closely did awayt Auauntage, whilest his foe did rage most rife; Sometimes a thwart, sometimes he strooke him strayt,

And falsed oft his blowes, t'illude him with such bayt.

Like as a Lyon, whose imperiall powre A prowd rebellious Vnicorne defies, T'auoide the rash assault and wrathfull stowre Of his fiers foe, him to a tree applies, And when him running in full course he spies, He slips aside; the whiles that furious beast His precious horne, sought of his enimies, Strikes in the stocke, ne thence can be releast, But to the mighty victour yields a bounteous feast.

With such faire slight him Guyon often faild,
Till at the last all breathlesse, wearie, faint
Him spying, with fresh onset he assaild,
And kindling new his courage seeming queint,
Strooke him so hugely, that through great
constraint

He made him stoup perforce vnto his knee And do vnwilling worship to the Saint, That on his shield depainted he did see; Such homage till that instant neuer learned hee.

12

Whom Guyon seeing stoup, pursewed fast
The present offer of faire victory,
And soone his dreadfull blade about he cast,
Wherewith he smote his haughty crest so hye,
That streight on ground made him full low to
lye;

Then on his brest his victour foote he thrust, With that he cryde, Mercy, do me not dye, Ne deeme thy force by fortunes doome vniust, That hath (maugre her spight) thus low me laid in dust.

Eftsoones his cruell hand Sir Guyon stayd,
Tempring the passion with aduizement slow,
And maistring might on enimy dismayd:
For th'equall dye of warre he well did know;
Then to him said, Liue and allegaunce owe,
To him that giues thee life and libertie,
And henceforth by this dayes ensample trow,
That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardrie
Do breede repentaunce late, and lasting infamic.

So vp he let him rise, who with grim looke And count'naunce sterne vpstanding, gan to grind

Hisgrated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke His sandy lockes, long hanging downe behind, Knotted in bloud and dust, for griefe of mind, That he in ods of armes was conquered; Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find, That him so noble knight had maistered, Whose bounty more then might, yet both he wondered.

Which Guyon marking said, Be nought agrieu'd, Sir knight, that thus ye now subdewed arre: Was neuer man, who most conquestes atchieu'd, But sometimes had the worse, and lost by warre, Yet shortly gaynd, that losse exceeded farre: Losse is no shame, nor to be lesse then foe, But to be lesser, then himselfe, doth marre Both loosers lot, and victours prayse alsoe. Vaine others ouerthrowes, who selfe doth ouerthrowe.

Fly, O Pyrochles, fly the dreadfull warre, That in thy selfe thy lesser parts do moue, Outrageous anger, and woe-working iarre, Direfull impatience, and hart murdring loue; Those, those thy foes, those warriours farremoue, Which thee to endlesse bale captived lead. But sith in might thou didst my mercy proue, Of curtesie to me the cause aread,

That thee against me drew with so impetuous dread.

Dreadlesse (said he) that shall I soone declare: It was complaind, that thou hadst done great tort

Vnto an aged woman, poore and bare, And thralled her in chaines with strong effort, Voide of all succour and needfull comfort: That ill beseemes thee, such as I thee see, To worke such shame. Therefore I thee exhort, To chaunge thy will, and set Occasion free, And to her captine sonne yield his first libertee.

Thereat Sir Guyon smilde, And is that all (Said he) that thee so sore displeased hath? Great mercy sure, for to enlarge a thrall, Whose freedome shall thee turne to greatest

Nath'lesse now quench thy whot emboyling Loe there they be: to thee I yield them free.

Thereat he wondrous glad, out of the path Did lightly leape, where he them bound did see. And gan to breake the bands of their captilitee.

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe vntyde, Before her sonne could well assoyled bee. She to her vse returnd, and streight defyde Both Guyon and Pyrochles: th'one (said shee) Bycause he wonne; the other because hee Was wonne: So matter did she make of nought,

To stirre vp strife, and do them disagree: But soone as Furor was enlargd, she sought To kindle his quencht fire, and thousand causes wrought.

20

It was not long, ere she inflam'd him so, That he would algates with Pyrochles fight. And his redeemer chalenged for his foe. Because he had not well mainteind his right, But yielded had to that same straunger knight: Now gan Pyrochles wex as wood, as hee, And him affronted with impatient might: So both together fiers engrasped bee, Whiles Guyon standing by, their vncouth strife

does see.

Him all that while Occasion did prouoke Against Pyrochles, and new matter framed Vpon the old, him stirring to be wroke Of his late wrongs, in which she oft him blamed Forsuffering such abuse, as knighthoodshamed, And him dishabled quite. But he was wise Ne would with vaine occasions be inflamed; Yet others she more vrgent did deuise: Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

Their fell contention still increased more. And more thereby increased Furors might, That he his foe has hurt, and wounded sore, And him in bloud and durt deformed quight. His mother eke, more to augment his spight, Now brought to him a flaming fire brond, Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning bright, Had kindled: that she gave into his hond. That armd with fire, more hardly he mote him withstond.

Tho gan that villein wex so fiers and strong, That nothing might sustaine his furious forse; He cast him downe to ground, and all along Drew him through durt and myre without remorse.

And fowly battered his comely corse, That Guyon much disdeignd so loathly sight. At last he was compeld to cry perforse, Helpe, O Sir Guyon, helpe most noble knight, To rid a wretched man from hands of hellish wight.

The knight was greatly moued at his plaint, And gan him dight to succour his distresse, Till that the Palmer, by his graue restraint, Him stayd from yielding pitifull redresse; And said, Deare sonne, thy causelesse ruth represse,

Ne let thy stout hart melt in pitty vayne: He that his sorrow sought through wilfulnesse, And his foe fettred would release agayne, Deserues to tast his follies fruit, repented payne.

Guyon obayd; So him away he drew
From needlesse trouble of renewing fight
Already fought, his voyage to pursew.
But rash Pyrochles varlet, Altin hight,
When late he saw his Lord in heauy plight,
Vnder Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to fall,
Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in sight,
Fled fast away, to till his funerall
Vnto his brother, whom Cymochles men did call.

26

He was a man of rare redoubted might, Famous throughout the world for warlike prayse, And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilous fight: Full many doughtie knights he in his dayes Had doen to death, subdewde in equall frayes, Whose carkases, for terrour of his name, Offowksandbeasteshemade the pitecus prayes, Andhong their conquered armes for more d. fame On gallow trees, in honour of his dearest Dame.

27

His dearest Dame is that Enchaunteresse, The vile Acrasia, that with vaine delightes, And idle pleasures in her Bowre of Blisse, Does charme her louers, and the feeble sprightes

Can call out of the bodies of fraile wightes: Whom then she does transforme to monstrous

hewes,

And horribly misshapes with vgly sightes, Captiu'd eternally in yron mewes,

And darksom dens, where *Titan* his face neuer shewes.

There Atin found Cymochles solourning,
To serve his Lemans love: for he, by kind,
Was given all to lust and loose living,
When ever his fiers hands he free mote find:
And now he has pourd out his idle mind
In daintie delices, and lavish ioyes,
Having his warlike weapons cast behind,
And flowes in pleasures, and vaine pleasing
toyes,

Mingled emongst loose Ladies and lasciuious boyes.

---

And ouer him, art striuing to compaire With nature, did an Arber greene dispred, Framed of wanton Yuie, flouring faire, Through which the fragrant Eglantine didspred His pricking armes, entrayld with roses red, Which daintie odours round about them threw, And all within with flowres was garnished, That when myld Zephyrus emongst them blew, Did breath out bounteous smels, and painted colors shew.

30
And fast beside, there trickled softly downe
A gentle streame, whose murmuring wave did

play

piay
Emongst the pumy stones, and made a sowne,
To lull him soft a sleepe, that by it lay;
The weare Trauciler, wandring that way,
Therein did often quench his thristy heat,
And then by it his wearie limbes display,
Whiles creeping slomber made him to forget
His former paine, and wypt away his toylsom
sweat.

cat. 31

And on the other side a pleasaunt groue
Was shot vp high, full of the stately tree,
That dedicated is t'Olympicke loue,
And to his sonne Alcides, whenas hee
Gaynd in Nemea goodly victoree;
Therein the mery birds of euery sort
Chaunted alowd their chearefull harmonie:
And made emongst themselues a sweet consort,
That quickned the dull spright with musicall
comfort.

There he him found all carclesly displayd, In secret shadow from the sunny ray, On a sweet bed of lillies softly layd, Amidst a flocke of Damzels fresh and gay, That round about him dissolute did play Their wanton follics, and light meriment; Euery of which did loosely disaray Her vpper parts of meet habiliments, And shewd them naked, deckt with many ornaments.

And euery of them stroue, with most delights, Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew; Some framd faire lookes, glancing like euening lights,

Others sweet words, dropping like honny dew; Some bathed kisses, and did soft embrew The sugred licour through his melting lips: One boastes her beautie, and does yeeld to vew Her daintie limbes aboue her tender hips; Another her out boastes, and all for tryall strips.

34

He, like an Adder, lurking in the weeds, Hiswandring thought in deepe desire does teepe, And his fraile eye with spoyle of beautie feedes; Sometimes he falsely faines himselfe to sleepe, Whiles through their lids his wanton eies do peepe,

To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,
Whereby close fire into his heart does creepe:
So, them deceiues, deceiu'd in his deceipt,
Made drunke with drugs of deare voluptuous
receipt.

Atin arriving there, when him he spide, Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade. Fiercely approching, to him lowdly cride, Cymochles; oh no, but Cymochles shade. In which that manly person late did fade, What is become of great Acrates sonne? Or where hath he hong vp his mortall blade, That hath so many haughtie conquests wonne? Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne?

Then pricking him with his sharpe-pointed dart, He said; Vp, up, thou womanish weake

That here in Ladies lap entombed art. Vnmindfull of thy praise and prowest might, And weetlesse eke of lately wrought despight, Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on senselesse ground, And groneth out his vtmost grudging spright, Through many a stroke, and many a streaming wound.

Calling thy helpe in vaine, that here in joyes art dround.

Suddeinly out of his delightfull dreame The man awoke, and would have questiond more:

But he would not endure that wofull theame For to dilate at large, but vrged sore With percing words, and pittifull implore, Him hastie to arise. As one affright With hellish feends, or Furies mad vprore, He then vprose, inflam'd with fell despight, An I called for his armes; for he would algates fight.

They bene ybrought; he quickly does him dight, And lightly mounted, passeth on his way, Ne Ladies loues, ne sweete entreaties might Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay; For he has vowd, to beene aueng'd that day, (That day it selfe him seemed all too long:) On him, that did Pyrochles deare dismay: So proudly pricketh on his courser strong, And Atin are him pricks with spurs of shame and wrong.



## Cant. VI.

#### 

Guyon is of immodest Merth led into loose desire, Fights with Cymochles, whiles his brother burnes in furious fire.

### 

A Harder lesson, to learne Continence In ioyous pleasure, then in grieuous paine: For sweetnesse doth allure the weaker sence So strongly, that vneathes it can refraine From that, which feeble nature couets faine: But griefe and wrath, that be her enemics, And foes of life, she better can restraine: Yet vertue vauntes in both their victories, And Guyon in them all shewes goodly maisteries.

Whom bold Cymochles trauelling to find, With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him The wrath, which Atin kindled in his mind. Came to a riuer, by whose vtmost brim Wayting to passe, he saw whereas did swim A long the shore, as swift as glaunce of eye, A litle Gondelay, bedecked trim With boughes and arbours wouen cunningly, That like a litle forrest seemed outwardly.

And therein sate a Ladie fresh and faire, Making sweet solace to her selfe alone; Sometimes she sung, as loud as larke in aire, Sometimes she laught, that nigh her breth was

Yet was there not with her else any one, That might to her moue cause of meriment: Matter of merthenough, though there were none. She could deuise, and thousand waics inuent, To feede her foolish humour, and vaine iolliment.

Which when farre off Cymochles heard, and saw, He loudly cald to such, as were a bord, The little barke vnto the shore to draw, And him to ferrie ouer that deepe ford: The merry marriner vnto his word Soone hearkned, and her painted bote streightway [Lord Turnd to the shore, where that same warlike She in receiu'd; but Atin by no way She would admit, albe the knight her much did pray.

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did slide,
More swift, then swallow sheres the liquid skie,
Withouten oare or Pilot it to guide,
Or winged canuas with the wind to flie,
Only she turn'd a pin, and by and by
It cut away vpon the yielding waue,
Ne cared she her course for to apply:
For it was taught the way, which she would
haue,

And both from rocks and flats it selfe could wisely saue.

And all the way, the wanton Damzell found
New merth, her passenger to entertaine:
For she in pleasant purpose did abound,
And greatly ioyed merry tales to faine,
Of which a store-house did with her remaine,
Yet seemed, nothing well they her became;
For all her words she drownd with laughter
vaine,

And wanted grace in vtt'ring of the same, That turned all her pleasance to a scoffing game.

And other whiles vaine toyes she would deuize As her fantasticke wit did most delight, Sometimes her head she fondly would aguize With gaudie girlonds, or fresh flowrets dight About her necke, or rings of rushes plight; Sometimes to doe him laugh, she would assay To laugh at shaking of the leaues light, Or to behold the water worke, and play About her litle frigot, therein making way.

Her light behauiour, and loose dalliaunce Gaue wondrous great contentment to the knight,

That of his way he had no souenaunce, Nor care of vow'd reuenge, and cruell fight, But to weake wench did yeeld his martiall might.

So easie was to quench his flamed mind With one sweet drop of sensuall delight, So easie is, t'appease the stormie wind Of malice in the calme of pleasant womankind.

Diverse discourses in their way they spent,
Mongst which Cymochles of her questioned,
Both what she was, and what that vsage ment,
Which in her cot she daily practised.
Vaine man (saidshe) that wouldest be reckoned
A straunger in thy home, and ignoraunt
Of Phædria (for so my name is red)
Of Phædria, thine owne fellow seruaunt;
For thou to serue Acrasia thy selfe doest vaunt.

In this wide Inland sea, that hight by name
The Idle lake, my wandring ship I row,
That knowesher port, and thithersailes by ayme,
Ne care, ne feare I, how the wind do blow,
Or whether swift I wend, or whether slow:
Both slow and swift a like do serue my tourne,
Ne swelling Neptune, ne loud thundring Ioue
Canchaungemy cheare, or make me euer mourne;
My litle boat can safely passe this perilous
bourne.

They were farre past the passage, which he spake, And come vinto an Island, waste and voyd, That flotted in the midst of that great lake, There her small Gondelay her port did make, And that gay paire issuing on the shore Disburdned her. Their way they forward take Into the land, that lay them faire before, Whose pleasaunce she himshew'd, and plentifull great store.

It was a chosen plot of fertile land,
Emongst wide waues set, like a litle nest,
As if it had by Natures cunning hand
Bene choisely picked out from all the rest,
And laid forth for ensample of the best:
Nodaintie flowre or herbe, that growe son ground,
No arboret with painted blossomes drest,
Andsmelling sweet, but there it might be found
To bud out faire, and her sweet smels throw all
around.

No tree, whose braunches did not brauely spring; No braunch, whereon a fine bird did not sit: No bird, but did her shrill notes sweetly sing; No song but did containe a louely dit: Trees, braunches, birds, and songs were framed fit.

For to allure fraile mind to carelesse ease. Carelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake wit Was ouercome of thing, that did him please; So pleased, did his wrathfull purpose faire appease.

Thus when she had his eyes and senses fec Withfalse delights, and fild with pleasuπ svane, Into a shadie dale she soft him led, And laid him downe vpon a grassie plaine; And her sweet selfe without dread, or disdaine, She set beside, laying his head disarm'd In her loose lap, it softly to sustaine, Where soone heslumbred, fearing not be harm'd, The whiles with a loud lay she thus him sweetly charm'd.

Behold, O man, that toilesome paines doest take, The flowres, the fields, and all that pleasant growes.

How they themselues doe thine ensample make, Whiles nothing enuious nature them forth throwes

Out of her fruitfull lap; how, no man knowes, They spring, they bud, they blossome fresh and faire. [showes;

And deck the world with their rich pompous
Yet no man for them taketh paines or care,
Yet no man to them can his carefull paines
compare.

The lilly, Ladie of the flowring field,
The Flowre-deluce, her louely Paramoure,
Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labours yield,
Andsoneleaueoffthistoylesomeweariestoure;
Loe loe how braue she decks her bounteous

With silken curtens and gold couerlets,
Therein to shrowd her sumptuous Belamoure,
Yetneitherspinnes nor cardes, ne cares nor frets,
But to her mother Nature all her care she lets.

ľ

Why then dost thou, O man, that of them all Art Lord, and eke of nature Soueraine, Wilfully make thy selfe a wretched thrall, And wastthy ioyous houres in needlesse paine, Seeking for daunger and aduentures vaine? What bootes it all to haue, and nothing vse? Whoshallhim rew, that swimming in themaine Will die for thirst, and water doth refuse? Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present pleasures chuse.

By this she had him lulled fast a sleepe,
That of no worldly thing he care did take;
Then she with liq ors strong his eyes did steepe,
That nothing should him hastily awake:
So she him left, and did her selfe betake
Vnto her boat againe, with which she cleft
The slouthfull waue of that great griesly lake;
Soone she that Island farre behind her left,
And now is come to that same place, where first
she weft.

By this time was the worthy Guyon brought Vnto the other side of that wide strond, Where she was rowing, and for passage sought: Him needed not long call, she soone to hond Her ferry brought, where him she byding fond, With his sad guide; himselfe she tooke a boord, But the Blacke Palmer suffred still to stond, Ne would for price, or prayers once affoord, To ferry that old man ouer the perlous foord.

2

Guyon was loath to leaue his guide behind,
Yet being entred, might not backe retyre
For the flit barke, obaying to her mind,
Forth launched quickly, as she did desire,
Ne gaue him leaue to bid that aged sire
Adieu, but nimbly ran her wonted course
Through the dull billowes thicke as troubi
mire,

[for:

Whom neither wind out of their seat cou Nor timely tides did driue out of their sluggi sourse.

2

And by the way, as was her wonted guize, Her merry fit she freshly gan to reare, And did of ioy and iollitie deuize, Her selfe to cherish, and her guest to cheare The knight was courteous, and did not forbeat Her honest merth and pleasaunce to partake But when he saw her toy, and gibe, and gear And passe the bonds of modest merimake, Her dalliance he despisd, and follies did forsake

22

Yet she still followed her former stile,
And said, and did all that mote him delight,
Till they arriued in that pleasant Ile,
Where sleeping late she left her other knight
But when as Guyon of that land had sight,
He wist himselfe amisse, and angry said;
Ah Dame, perdie ye haue not doen me right
Thus to mislead me, whiles I you obaid;
Melitle needed from my right way to haue straid.

23

Faire Sir (quoth she) be not displeasd at all; Who fares on sea, may not commaund his way, Ne wind and weather at his pleasure call: The sea is wide, and easie for to stray; The wind vnstable, and doth neuer stay. But here a while ye may in safety rest, Till season serue new passage to assay; Better safe port, then be in seas distrest. Therewith she laught, and did her earnest end in iest.

24

But he halfe discontent, mote nathelesse
Himselfe appease, and issewd forth on shore:
The ioyes whereof, and happie fruitfulnesse,
Such as he saw, she gan him lay before,
And all though pleasant, yet she made much
more:

[Spring.

The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly The trees did bud, and earely blossomes bore, And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing, And told that gardins pleasures in their caroling

And she more sweet, then any bird on bough, Would oftentimes emongst them beare a part, And striue to passe (as she could well enough) Their natiue musicke by her skilfull art: So did she all, that might his constant hart Withdraw from thought of warlike enterprize, And drowne in dissolute delights apart. Where noyse of armes, or vew of martiall guize Might not reuiue desire of knightly exercize.

But he was wise, and warie of her will. And euer held his hand voon his hart: Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill. As to despise so courteous seeming part, That gentle Ladie did to him impart, But fairely tempring fond desire subdewd, And euer her desired to depart. She list not heare, but her disports poursewd,

And euer bad himstay, till time the tide renewd.

And now by this, Cymochles howre was spent, That he awoke out of his idle dreme. And shaking off his drowzie dreriment, Gan him auize, how ill did him beseeme, In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme. And quench the brond of his conceived ire. Tho vp he started, stird with shame extreme, Ne staied for his Damzell to inquire. But marched to the strond, there passage to require.

And in the way he with Sir Guyon met, Accompanyde with *Phædria* the faire. Estsoones he gan to rage, and inly fret, Crying, Let be that Ladie debonaire, Thou recreant knight, and soone thy selfe prepaire

To battell, if thou meane her loue to gaine: Loe, loe alreadie, how the fowles in aire Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtaine Thy carcasse for their pray, the guerdon of thy

paine.

And therewithall he fiercely at him flew, And with importune outrage him assayld; Who soone prepard to field, his sword forth

And him with equall value counteruayld: Their mightie strokes their haberieons dis-

And naked made each others manly spalles; The mortall steele despiteously entayld Deepe in their flesh, quite through the yron falles.

That a large purples treme adown their giambeux | Does yeeld vnto his foe a pleasant victory. SPENSER

Cymochles, that had neuer met before So puissant foe, with enuious despight His proud presumed force increased more. Disdeigning to be held so long in fight; Sir Guyon grudging not so much his might, As those vnknightly raylings, which he spoke. With wrathfull fire his courage kindled bright, Thereof deuising shortly to be wroke. And doubling all his powres, redoubled every stroke.

Both of them high attonce their hands enhaunst, And both attonce their huge blowes downe did

Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglaunst, And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away ; But Guyons angry blade so fierce did play On th'others helmet, which as Titan shone. That quite it cloue his plumed crest in tway, And bared all his head vnto the bone; Wherewith astonisht, still he stood, as senselesse stone.

Still as he stood, faire Phædria, that beheld That deadly daunger, soone atweene them ran; And at their feet her selfe most humbly feld, Crying with pitteous voice, and count'nance wan

Ah well away, most noble Lords, how can Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous sight, To shed your lives on ground? wo worth the man.

That first did teach the cursed steele to bight In his owne flesh, and make way to the liuing

spright.

If euer loue of Ladie did empierce Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place, Withhold your bloudie hands from battelf fierce, And sith for me ye fight, to me this grace Both yeeld, to stay your deadly strife a space. They stayd a while: and forth she gan proceed: Most wretched woman, and of wicked race, That am the author of this hainous deed, And cause of death betweene two doughtie knights doe breed.

But if for me ye fight, or me will serue, Not this rude kind of battell, nor these armes Are meet, the which doe men in bale to sterue, And dolefull sorrow heape with deadly harmes: Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes: Another warre, and other weapons I Doe loue, where loue does give his sweet alarmes. Without bloudshed, and where the enemy

Debatefull strife, and cruell enmitie
The famous name of knighthood fowly shend;
But louely peace, and gentle amitie,
And in Amours the passing houres to spend,
The mightie martiall hands doe most commend:
Of loue they euer greater glory bore,
Then of their armes: Mars is Cupidoes frend,
And is for Venus loues renowmed more,
Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he did
of yore.

Therewith she sweetly smyld. They though full bent

To proue extremities of bloudie fight, Yet at her speach their rages gan relent, And calme the sea of their tempestuous spight, Such powre haue pleasing words: such is the might

Of courteous clemencie in gentle hart. Now after all was ceast, the Facry knight Besought that Damzell suffer him depart, And yield him readie passage to that other part.

37

She no lesse glad, then he desirous was
Of his departure thence; for of her ioy
And vaine delight she saw he light did pas,
A foe of folly and immodest toy,
Still solemne sad, or still disdainfull coy,
Delighting all in armes and cruell warre,
That her sweet peace and pleasures did annoy,
Troubled with terrour and vnquiet iarre,
That she well pleased was thence to amoue him
farre.

Tho him she brought abord, and her swift bote Forthwith directed to that further strand; The which on the dull waues did lightly flote And soone arrived on the shallow sand, Where gladsome Guyon salied forth to land, And to that Damzell thankes gaue for reward. Vpon that shore he spied Alin stand, There by his maister left, when late he far'd In Phedrias flit barke ouer that perlous shard.

Well could he him remember, sith of late
He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made;
Streight gan he him reuile, and bitter rate,
As shepheards curre, that in darke euenings
shade

Hath tracted forth some saluage beastes trade; Vile Miscreant (said he) whither doest thou flie The shame and death, which will thee soone inuade?

What coward hand shall doe thee next to die, That art thus foully fled from famous enemie?

With that he stiffely shooke his steelehead dart: But sober Guyon, hearing him so raile, Though somewhat moued in his mightie hart, Yct with strong reason maistred passion fraile, And passed fairely forth. He turning taile, Backeto the strond retyrd, and therestill stayd, Awaiting passage, which him late did faile; The whiles Cymochles with that wanton mayd The hastie heat of his auowd reuenge delayd.

41

Whylest there the varlet stood, he saw from farre An armed knight, that towards him fast ran, He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre His forlorne steed from him the victour wan; He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint, and wan.

And all his armour sprinckled was with bloud, And soyld with durtie gore, that no man can Discerne the hew thereof. He neuer stood, But bent his hastie course towards the idle flood.

12

The varlet saw, when to the flood he came, How without stop or stay he fiercely lept, And deepe him selfe beducked in the same, That in the lake his loftic crest was steept, Ne of his safetic seemed care he kept, But with his raging armes he rudely flasht The waues about, and all his armour swept, That all the bloud and fifth away was washt, Yet still he bet the water, and the billowes dasht.

42

Atin drew nigh, to weet what it mote bee; For much he wondred at that vncouth sight; Whom should he, but his owne deare Lord, there see,

His owne deare Lord *Pyrochles*, in sad plight, Readie to drowne himselfe for fell despight. Harrow now out, and well away, he cryde, What dismall day hath lent this cursed light, To see my Lord so deadly damnifyde? *Pyrochles*, O *Pyrochles*, what is thee betyde?

44

I burne, I burne, I burne, then loud he cryde, O how I burne with implacable fire. Yetnought can quench mine inly flaming syde, Nor sea of licour cold, nor lake of mire, Nothing but death can doe me to respire. Ah be it (said he) from Pyrochles farre After pursewing death once to require, Or think, that ought those puissant hands may marre:

Death is for wretches borne vnder vnhappie starre.

Perdie, then is it fit for me (said he)
That am, I weene, most wretched man aliue,
Burning in flames, yet no flames can I see,
And dying daily, daily yet reuiue:
O Atin, helpe to me last death to giue.
The varlet at his plaint was grieued so sore,
That his deepe wounded hart in two did riue,
And his owne health remembring now no more,
Did follow that ensample, which he blam'd afore.

46
Into the lake he lept, his Lord to ayd,
(So Loue the dread of daunger doth despise)
And of him catching hold him strongly stayd
Fromdrowning. But more happiehe, then wise
Of that seas nature did him not auise.
The waues thereof so slow and sluggish were,
Engrost with mud, which did them foule agrise,
That euery weightie thing they did ypbeare,
Ne ought mote euer sinke downe to the bottome
there.

Whiles thus they strugled in that idle waue,
And stroue in vaine, the one himselfe to drowne,
The other both from drowning for to saue,
Lo, to that shore one in an auncient gowne,
Whose hoarie locks great grauitie did crowne,
Holding in hand a goodly arming sword,
By fortune came, led with the troublous sowne:
Wheredrenched deepehe found in that dull ford
The carefull scruant, striuing with his raging
Lord.

Him Atin spying, knew right well of yore,
And loudly cald, Helpe helpe, O Archimage;
To saue my Lord, in wretched plight forlore;
Helpe with thy hand, or with thy counsell sage:
Weake hands, but counsell is most strong in age.
Him when the old man saw, he wondred sore,
To see Pyrochles there so rudely rage:
Yet sithens helpe, he saw, he needed more

Yet sithens helpe, he saw, he needed more Then pittie, he in hast approched to the shore.

And cald, Pyrochles, what is this, I see?

What hellish furie hath at earst thee hent? Furious euer I thee knew to bee, Yet neuer in this straunge astonishment. These flames, these flames (he cryde) do me torment.

What flames (quoth he) when I thee present see, In daunger rather to be drent, then brent? Harrow, the flames, which me consume (said hee)

Ne can be quencht, within my secret bowels bee. That nought but desert wildernesse shew'd all

That cursed man, that cruell feend of hell, Furor, oh Furor hath me thus bedight:
His deadly wounds within my liuers swell,
And his whot fire burnes in mine entrails bright,
Kindled through his infernall brond of spight,
Sith late with him I batteil vaine would boste;
That now I weene loues dreaded thunder light
Does scorchnot halfe so sore, nor damned ghoste
In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste.

Which when as Archimago heard, his griefe
He knew right well, and him attonce disarmd:
Then searcht his secret wounds, and made a
priefe

Of euery place, that was with brusing harmd, Or with the hidden fire too inly warmd. Which done, he balmes and herbes thereto applyde,

And euermore with mighty spels them charmd, That in short space he has them qualifyde, And him restor'd to health, that would haue algates dyde.

## Cant. VII.

## 

Guyon findes Mammon in a delue, Sunning his threasure hore: Is by him tempted, and led downe, To see his secret store.

### 

As Pilot well expert in perilous waue,
That to a stedfast starre his course hath bent,
When foggy mists, or cloudy tempests haue
The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,
And couer'd heauen with hideous dreriment,
Vpon his card and compas firmes his eye,
The maisters of his long experiment,
And to them does the steddy helme apply,
Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward fly:

So Guyon having lost his trusty guide,
Late left beyond that Ydle lake, proceedes
Yet on his way, of none accompanide;
And euermore himselfe with comfort feedes,
Of his owne vertues, and prayse-worthy deedes
So long he yode, yet no adventure found,
Whichfame of her shrilltrompet worthy reedes:
For still he traveild through wide wastfull
ground,

The second have dearet wilderness shewid all

At last he came vnto a gloomy glade, [light, Couer'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens Whereas he sitting found in secret shade An vncouth, saluage, and vnciuile wight. Of griesly hew, and fowle ill fauour'd sight: His face with smoke was tand, and eyes were

His head and beard with sout were ill bedight, His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have beene

In smithes fire-spitting forge, and nayles like clawes appeard.

His yron coate all ouergrowne with rust, Was vnderneath enucloped with gold, Whose glistring glosse darkned with filthy dust, Well yet appeared, to have beene of old A worke of rich entayle, and curious mould, Wouen with antickes and wild Imagery: And in his lap a masse of covne he told. And turned vpsidowne, to feede his eye And couctous desire with his huge threasury.

And round about him lay on euery side Great heapes of gold, that neuer could be spent: Of which some were rude owre, not purifide Of Mulcibers devouring element; Some others were new driven, and distent Into great Ingoes, and to wedges square; Some in round plates withouten moniment: But most were stampt, and in their metall bare The antique shapes of kings and kesars straunge and rare.

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright And hast he rose, for to remoue aside Those pretious hils from straungers enuious [wide.

And downe them poured through an hole full Into the hollow earth, them there to hide. But Guyon lightly to him leaping, stayd His hand, that trembled, as one terrifyde; And though him selfe were at the sight dismayd, Yet him perforce restrayed, and to him doubtfull sayd.

What art thou man, (if man at all thou art) That here in desert hast thine habitaunce. And these rich heapes of wealth doest hide apart From the worldeseye, and from her right vsaunce? Thereat with staring eyes fixed askaunce In great disdaine, he answerd; Hardy Elfe, That darest vew my direfull countenaunce, I read thee rash, and heedlesse of thy selfe, To trouble my still seate, and heapes of pretious pelfe.

God of the world and worldlings I me call, Great Mammon, greatest god below the skye. That of my plenty poure out vnto all. And vnto none my graces do enuye: Riches, renowme, and principality. Honour, estate, and all this worldes good. For which men swinck and sweat incessantly. Fro me do flow into an ample flood. And in the hollow earth haue their eternall brood.

Wherefore if me thou deigne to serue and sew, At thy commaund lo all these mountaines bee; Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew All these may not suffise, there shall to thee Tentimes somuch benumbred francke and free. Mammon(saidhe)thy godheades vaunt is vaine. And idle offers of thy golden fee; To them, that couet such eve-glutting gaine.

Proffer thygiftes, and fitter servaunts entertaine.

Me ill besits, that in der-doing armes, And honours suit my vowed dayes do spend, Vntothy bounteous baytes, and pleasing charmes, Withwhich weakemen thou witchest, to attend: Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend, And low abase the high heroicke spright. That ioves for crownes and kingdomes to contend: (delight ·

Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes be my Those be the riches fit for an aduent'rous knight.

Vaine glorious Elfe (said he) doest not thou weet. That money can thy wantes at will supply? Sheilds, steeds, and armes, and all things for thee meet

It can puruay in twinckling of an eye; And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply. Do not I kings create, and throw the crowne Sometimes to him, that low in dust doth ly? And him that raignd, into his rown e thrust downe.

And whom I lust, do heape with glory and renowne?

All otherwise (said he) I riches read, And deeme them roote of all a squietnesse; First got with guile, and then, reseru'd with dread.

And after spent with pride and lauishnesse, Leauing behind them griefe and heauinesse. Infinite mischiefes of them do arize, Strife, and debate, bloudshed, and bitternesse. Outrageous wrong, and hellish couetize, That noble heart as great dishonour deth despize.

Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine; But real nes and rulers thou doest both confound,

And loyall truth to treason doest incline; Witnesse the guiltlesse bloud pourd oft on ground,

The crowned often slaine, the slayer cround, The sacred Diademe in peeces rent,

And purple robe gored with many a wound; Castles surprizd, great cities sackt and brent: So mak'st thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull gouernement.

Long were to tell the troublous stormes, that tosse
The private state, and make the life vnsweet:
Who swelling sayles in Caspian seadoth crosse,
And in frayle wood on Adrian gulfe doth fleet,
Doth not, I weene, so many euils meet.
Then Mannion wexing worth. And why then

Then Mammon wexing wroth, And why then, said,

Are mortall men so fond and vadiscreet, So euill thing to seeke vnto their ayd, And hauing not complaine, and hauing it vpbraid?

Indeede (quothhe) through fow le intemperaunce,
Frayle men are oft capitu'd to couetise:
But would they thinke, with how small
allowaunce

Vatroubled Nature doth her selfe suffise, Such superfluities they would despise, Which withsad cares empeach our natiue ioyes: At the well head the purest streames arise: But mucky filth his braunching armes annoyes, And with vncomely weedes the gentle waue accloyes.

The antique world, in his first flowring youth, Found no defect in his Creatours grace, But with glad thankes, and vnreproued truth, The gifts of soueraigne bountie did embrace: Like Angels life was then mens happy cace; But later ages pride, like corn-fed steed, Abusd her plenty, and fat swolne encreace To all licentious lust, and gan exceed [need. The measure of her meane, and natural] first

Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe Of hisgreat Grandmother with steele to wound, And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe, With Sacriledge to dig. Therein he found Fountaines of gold and siluer to abound, Of which the matter of his huge desire And pompous pride eftsoones hed did compound; Then auarice gan through his veines inspire Hisgreed of flames, and kindled life-deuouring fire.

18

Sonne (said he then) let be thy bitter scorne, And leaue the rudenesse of that antique age To them, that liu'd therein in state forlorne; Thou that doest liue in later times, must wage Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage. If then thee list my offred grace to vse, Take what thou please of all this surplusage; If thee list not, leaue haue thou to refuse: But thing refused, do not afterward accuse.

10

Me list not (said the Elfin knight) receaue
Thing offred, tiil I know it well be got,
Ne wote I, but thou didst these goods bereaue
From rightfull owner by vnrighteous lot,
Or that bloud guiltinesse or guile them blot.
Perdy (quoth he) yet neuer eye did vew,
Ne toung did tell, ne hand these handled not,
But safe I haue them kept in secret mew,
From heauens sight, and powre of all which
them pursew.

What secret place (quoth he) can safely hold So huge a masse, and hide from heauens eye? Or where ast thou thy wonne, that so muchgold Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery? Come thou (quoth he) and see. So by and by Through that thicke couert he him led, and

A darkesome way, which no man could descry, That deepe descended through the hollow ground,

And was with dread and horrour compassed around.

At length they came into a larger space, That stretcht it selfe into an ample plaine, Through which a beaten broad high way did

That streight did lead to *Plutoes* griesly raine: By that wayes side, there sate infernall Payne, And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife: The one in hand an yron whip did straine, The other brandished a bloudy knife, And both did gnash their teeth, and both did threaten life.

On thother side in one consort there sate, Cruell Reuenge, and rancorous Despight, Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate, But gnawing Gealosic out of their sight Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight, And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly, And found no place, where safe he shroud him might,

Then auarice gan through his veines inspire
Hisgreedv flames, and kindled life-deuouring fire.

Lamenting Sorrow did in darknesse lye,
And Shame his vgly face did hide from liuing eye.

And ouer them sad Horrour with grim hew, Did alwayes sore, beating his yron wings; And after him Owles and Night-rauens flew The hatefull messengers of heavy things, Of death and dolour telling sad tidings: Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clift, A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings. That hart of flint a sunder could have rift: Which having ended, after him she flyeth swift.

All these before the gates of Pluto lay. By whom they passing, spake vnto them

But th'Elfin knight with wonder all the way Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thought. At last him to a litle dore he brought, That to the gate of Hell, which gaped wide, Was next adioyning, ne them parted ought: Betwixt them both was but a litle stride, That did the house of Richesse from hell-mouth

diuide.

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care, Day and night keeping wary watch and ward, For feare least Force or Fraud should vnaware Breakein, and spoile the treasure there in gard: Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thither-ward Approch, albe his drowsie den were next; For next to death is Sleepe to be compard: Therefore his house is vnto his annext: Here Sleep, there Richesse, and Hel-gate them both betwext.

So soone as Mammon there arriv'd, the dore To him did open, and affoorded way: Him followed eke Sir Guyon euermore. Ne darkenesse him, ne daunger might dismay. Soone as he entred was, the dore streight way Did shut, and from behind it forth there lept An vgly feend, more fowle then dismall day, The which with monstrous stalke behind him

And euer as he went, dew watch vpon him kept.

Well hoped he, ere long that hardy guest, If euer couetous hand, or lustfull eye. Or lips he layd on thing, that likt him best, Or euer sleepe his eye-strings did vntye, Should be his pray. And therefore still on hye He ouer him did hold his cruell clawes. Threatning with greedy gripe to do him dye And rend in peeces with his rauenous pawes, If euer he transgrest the fatall Stygian lawes.

That houses forme within was rude and strong, Like an huge caue, hewne out of rocky clift, From whose rough vaut the ragged breaches hong.

Embost with massy gold of glorious gift, And with rich metall loaded euery rift. That heavy ruine they did seeme to threat: And ouer them Arachne high did lift Her cunning web, and spred her subtile net. Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more

blacke then let.

Both roofe, and floore, and wals were all of gold, But ouergrowne with dust and old decay. And hid in darkenesse, that none could behold The hew thereof: for vew of chearefull day Did neuer in that house it selfe display, But a faint shadow of vncertain light: Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away: Oras the Moone cloathed with clowdy night, Does shew to him, that walkes in feare and sad affright.

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene. But huge great yron chests and coffers strong All bard with double bends, that none could

Them to efforce by violence or wrong; On every side they placed were along. But all the ground with sculs was scattered, And dead mens bones, which round about were flong,

Whose liues, it seemed, whilome there were

And their vile carcases now left vnburied.

They forward passe, ne Guyon yet spoke word, Till that they came vnto an yron dore, Which to them opened of his owne accord. And shewd of richesse such exceeding store. As eye of man did neuer see before; Ne euer could within one place be found, Though all the wealth, which is, or was of yore, Could gathered be through all the world around, And that aboue were added to that vnder ground.

The charge thereof vnto a couetous Spright Commaunded was, who thereby did attend, And warily awaited day and night, From other couetous feends it to defend, Who it to rob and ransacke did intend. Then Mammon turning to that warriour, said; Loe here the worldes blis, loe here the end. To which all men do ayme, rich to be made: Such grace now to be happy, is before thee laid.

Certes (said he) I n'ill thine offred grace, Ne to be made so happy do intend: Another blis before mine eyes I place, Another happinesse, another end.

To them, that list, these base regardes I lend: But I in armes, and in atchieuements braue, Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend, And to be Lord of those, that riches haue, Then them to haue my selfe, and be their seruile sclaue.

34

Thereat the feend his gnashing teeth did grate, And grieu'd, so long to lacke his greedy pray; For well he weened, that so glorious bayte Would tempt his guest, to take thereof assay: Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away, More light then Culuer in the Faulcons fist. Eternall God thee saue from such decay. But whenas Manmon saw his purpose mist, Him to entrap vnwares another way he wist.

Thence forward he him led, and shortly brought Vnto another rowme, whose dore forthright, To him did open, as it had beene taught: Therein an hundred raunges weren pight, And hundred fornaces all burning bright; By euery fornace many feends did bide, Deformed creatures, horrible in sight, And euery feend his busie paines applide, To melt the golden metall, ready to be tride.

36

One with great bellowes gathered filling aire, And with forst wind the fewell did inflame; Another did the dying bronds repaire With yron toungs, and sprinckled oft the same With liquid waues, fiers *Vulcans* rage to tame, Who maistring them, renewd his former heat; Some scumd the drosse, that from the metall came;

Some stird the molten owre with ladles great: And euery one did swincke, and euery one did sweat.

But when as earthly wight they present saw, Glistring in armes and battailous aray, From their whot worke they did themselues withdraw

To wonder at the sight: for till that day,
They neuer creature saw, that came that way.
Their staring eyes sparckling with feruent fire,
And vgly shapes did nigh the man dismay,
That were it not for shame, he would retire,
Till that him thus bespake their soueraigne
Lord and sire.

38

Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall eye, That liuing eye before did neuer see: The thing, that thou didst craue so earnestly, Toweet, whence all the wealth late shewd by mee, Proceeded, lo now is reueald to thee. Here is the fountaine of the worldes good: Now therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee, Auise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood. Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be withstood.

Suffise it then, thou Money God (quoth hee)
That all thine idle offers I refuse.
All that I need I haue; what needeth mee
To couet more, then I haue cause to vse?
With such vaine shewes thy worldlings vile abuse:

But giue me leaue to follow mine emprise.

Mammon was much displeasd, yet no'te he chuse,
But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise,
And thence him forward led, him further to
entise.

40

He brought him through a darksome narrow strait,

To a broad gate, all built of beaten gold:
The gate was open, but therein did wait
A sturdy villein, striding stiffe and bold,
As if that highest God defie he would;
In his right hand an yron club he held,
But he himselfe was all of golden mould,
Yet had bothlife and sence, and well could weld
That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes he
queld.

Disdayne he called was, and did disdaine
To be so cald, and who so did him call:
Sternewashis looke, and full of stomacke vaine,
His portaunce terrible, and stature tall,
Far passing th'hight of men terrestriall;
Like an huge Gyant of the Titans race,
That made him scorne all creatures great and
small,

And with his pride all others powre deface:
More fit amongst blacke fiendes, then men to
haue his place.

Soone as those glitterand armes he did espye, That with their brightnesse made that darknesse light,

His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye, And threaten batteill to the Faery knight; Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight, Till Mamnon did his hasty hand withhold, And counseld him abstaine from perilous fight: For nothing might abash the villein bold, Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated mould.

So having him with reason pacifide, And the fiers Carle commaunding to forbeare. He brought him in. The rowme was large and

As it some Gyeld or solemne Temple weare: Many great golden pillours did vpbeare The massy roofe, and riches huge sustayne, And euery pillour decked was full deare With crownes and Diademes, and titles vaine, Which mortall Princes wore, whiles they on earth did rayne.

A route of people there assembled were, Of every sort and nation vnder skye. Which with great vprore preaced to draw nere To th'ypper part, where was advaunced hye A stately siege of soueraigne maiestye; And thereon sat a woman gorgeous gay, And richly clad in robes of royaltye, That neuer earthly Prince in such aray His glory did enhaunce, and pompous pride display.

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to bee. That her broad beauties beam great brightnes Through the dim shade, that all men might it Yet was not that same her owne native hew. But wrought by art and counterfetted shew, Thereby more louers vnto her to call; Nath'lesse most heauenly faire in deed and vew She by creation was, till she did fall; Thenceforth she sought for helps, to cloke her

crime withall. There, as in glistring glory she did sit, She held a great gold chaine ylincked well, Whose vpper end to highest heaven was knit, And lower part did reach to lowest Hell: And all that preace did round about her swell,

To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby To clime aloft, and others to excell:

That was Ambition, rash desire to stv. And euery lincke thereof a step of dignity.

Some thought to raise themselves to high degree. By riches and varighteous reward. Some by close shouldring, some by flatteree; Others through friends, others for base regard; And all by wrong wayes for themselues prepard. Those that were vp themselves, kept others low, Those that were low themselves, held others hard.

Ne suffred them to rise or greater grow. But every one did strive his fellow downe to throw.

48

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire, What meant that preace about that Ladies throne.

And what she was that did so high aspire. Him Mammon answered: That goodly one. Whom all that folke with such contention. Do flocke about, my deare, my daughter is; Honour and dignitie from her alone Deriued are, and all this worldes blis For which ye men do striue: few get, but many mis.

And faire Philotime she rightly hight. The fairest wight that wonneth vnder skye, But that this darksome neather world her light Doth dim with horrour and deformitie, Worthy of heaven and hye felicitie. From whence the gods have her for enuy thrust: But sith thou hast found fauour in mine eye. Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust, That she may thee advance for workes and merites just.

Gramercy Mammon (said the gentle knight) For so great grace and offred high estate; But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight, Vnworthy match for such immortall mate My selfe well wote, and mine vnequall fate; And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight, And loue arowd to other Lady late, That to remove the same I have no might: To chaunge loue causelesse is reproch to warlike knight.

Mammon emmoued was with inward wrath; Yet forcing it to faine, him forth thence led Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path, Into a gardin goodly garnished With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not

be red: Not such, as earth out of her fruitfull woomb

Throwes forth to men, sweet and well sauoured, But direfulldeadly blacke both leafe and bloom. Fit to adorne the dead, and decke the drery

toombe.

There mournfull Cypresse grewing reatest store, And trees of bitter Gall, and Heben sad, Dead sleeping Poppy, and blacke Hellebore, Cold Coloquintida, and Tetra mad, Mortall Samnitis, and Cicuta bad, With which th'vniust Atheniens made to dy Wise Socrates, who thereof quaffing glad Pourd out his life, and last Philosophy To the faire Critias his dearest Belamy.

The Gardin of Proserpina this hight; And in the midst thereof a siluer seat. With a thicke Arber goodly ouer dight, In which she often vsd from open heat Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat. Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree, With braunches broad dispred and body great, Clothe lwith leaves, that none the wood mote see And loaden all with fruit as thicke as it might

Their fruit were golden apples glistring bright, That goodly was their glory to behold, On earth like neuer grew, ne liuing wight Like euer saw, but they from hence were sold; For those, which Hercules with conquest bold Got from great Ailas daughters, hence began, And planted there, did bring forth fruit of gold: And those with which th' Eubæan young man

Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out ran.

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit, With which Acontius got his louer trew, Whom he had long time sought with fruitlesse suit:

Here eke that famous golden Apple grew, The which emongst the gods false Ate threw; For which th' Idean Ladies disagreed, Till partiall Paris dempt it Venus dew. And had of her, faire Helen for his meed. That many noble Greekes and Trojans made to bleed.

The warlike Elfe much wondred at this tree, Sofaire and great, that shadowed all the ground, And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee. Didstretch themselves without the vtmost bound Of this great gardin, compast with a mound, Which ouer-hanging, they themselves did steepe, In a blacke flood which flow'd about it round; That is the river of Cocytus deepe.

In which full many soules do endlesse waile and weepe.

Which to behold, he clomb up to the banke, And looking downe, saw many damned wights, In those sad waves, which direfull deadly stanke, Plonged continually of cruell Sprights. That with their pitteous cryes, and yelling shrights,

They made the further shore resounden wide: Emongst the rest of those same ruefull sights, One cursed creature he by chaunce espide, That drenched lay full deepe, under the Garden side.

Deepe was he drenched to the vpmost chin, Yet gaped still, as coueting to drinke Of the cold liquor, which he waded in, And stretching forth his hand, did often thinke To reach the fruit, which grew vpon the brincke: But both the fruit from hand, and floud from

Did flie abacke, and made him vainely swinke: The whiles he steru'd with hunger and with

He daily dyde, yet neuer throughly dyen couth.

The knight him seeing labour so in vaine. Askt who he was, and what he ment thereby: Who groning deepe, thus answerd him againe: Most cursed of all creatures vnder skye. Lo Tantalus, I here tormented lye: Of whom high *love* wont whylome feasted bee. Lo here I now for want of food doe dve: But if that thou be such, as I thee see, Of grace I pray thee, give to eat and drinke to

Nay, nay, thou greedie Tantalus (quoth he) Abide the fortune of thy present fate, And vnto all that live in high degree, Ensample be of mind intemperate, To teach them how to vse their present state. Then gan the cursed wretch aloud to cry, Accusing highest *love* and gods ingrate, And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly, As authour of vniustice, there to let him dye.

He lookt a little further, and espyde Another wretch, whose carkasse deepe was drent

Within the river, which the same did hyde: But both his hands most filthy feculent. Aboue the water were on high extent. And faynd to wash themselves incessantly: Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent. But rather fowler seemed to the eye: So lost his labour vaine and idle industry.

The knight him calling, asked who he was, Who lifting up his head, him answerd thus: I Pilate am the falsest Judge, alas, And most vniust, that by vnrighteous And wicked doome, to leves despiteous Deliuered vp the Lord of life to die. And did acquite a murdrer felonous; The whiles my hands I washt in puritie. The whiles my soule was soyld with foule iniquitie.

Infinite moe, tormented in like paine He there beheld, too long here to be told: Ne Mammon would there let him long remaine, For terrour of the tortures manifold In which the damned soules he did behold, But roughly him bespake. Thou fearefull foole, Why takest not of that same fruit of gold, Ne sittest downe on that same siluer stoole, To rest thy wearie person, in the shadow coole.

All which he did, to doe him deadly fall In frayle intemperance through sinfull bayt; To which if he inclined had at all, That dreadfull feend, which did behind him

Wouldhim haue rent in thousand peeces strayt: But he was warie wise in all his way, And well perceived his deceiptfull sleight, Ne suffred lust his safetie to betray; So goodly did beguile the Guyler of the pray.

And now he has so long remained there, That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and

For want of food, and sleepe, which two vpbeare, Like mightie pillours, this fraile life of man, That none without the same enduren can. For now three dayes of men were full outwrought,

Since he this hardie enterprize began: For thy great Mammon fairely he besought, Into the world to guide him backe, as he him brought.

The God, though loth, yet was constraind t'obay, For lenger time, then that, no living wight Below the earth, might suffred be to stay: So backe againe, him brought to liuing light. But all so soone as his enfeebled spright Gan sucke this vitall aire into his brest, As ouercome with too exceeding might, The life did flit away out of her nest, And all his senses were with deadly fit opprest.



## Cant. VIII.

### 

Sir Guvon laid in swowne is by Acrates sonnes despovld. Whom Arthur soone hath reskewed And Paynim brethren foyld.

### 

And is there care in heauen? and is there loue In heavenly spirits to these creatures bace. That may compassion of their euils moue? There is: else much more wretched were the cace Of men, then beasts. But Oth'exceeding grace Of highest God, that loues his creatures so, And all his workes with mercy doth embrace, That blessed Angels, he sends to and fro, To serue to wicked man, to serue his wicked foe.

How oft do they, their siluer bowers leaue. To come to succour vs, that succour want? How oft do they with golden pineons, cleaue The flitting skyes, like flying Pursuiuant, Against foule feends to aide vs millitant? They for vs fight, they watch and dewly ward, And their bright Squadrons round about vs

And all for loue, and nothing for reward: O why should heavenly God to men have such regard?

During the while, that Guyon did abide In Mammons house, the Palmer, whom whyleare That wanton Mayd of passage had denide, By further search had passage found elsewhere, And being on his way, approched neare, Where Guyon lay in traunce, when suddenly

He heard a voice, that called loud and cleare, Come hither, come hither, O come hastily; That all the fields resounded with the ruefull cry.

The Palmer lent his eare vnto the noyce, To weet, who called so importunely: Againe he heard a more efforced voyce. That bad him come in haste. He by and by His feeble feet directed to the cry; Which to that shadie delue him brought at last, Where Mammon earst did sunne his threasury: There the good Guyon he found slumbring fast In senselesse dreame; which sight at first him sore aghast.

Beside his head there sate a faire young man, Of wondrous beautie, and of freshest yeares, Whose tender bud to blossome new began, And flourish faire aboue his equal peares: His snowy front curled with golden heares, Like Phæbus face adornd with sunny rayes, Divinely shone, and two sharpe winged sheares. Decked with diverse plumes, like painted layes, Were fixed at his backe, to cut his averie wates.

Like as Cupido on Idaan hill, When having laid his cruell bow away, And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill The world with murdrous spoiles and bloudie pray,

With his faire mother he him dights to play, And with his goodly sisters, Graces three; The Goddesse pleased with his wanton play, Suffers her selfe through sleepe beguild to bee, The whiles the other Ladies mind their merry glee.

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was Through fear and wonder, that he nought could say,

Till him the child bespoke, Long lackt, alas, Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay, Whiles deadly fit thy pupill doth dismay; Behold this heavie sight, thou reverend Sire, But dread of death and dolour doe away: For life ere long shall to her home retire, And he that breathlesse seemes, shal corage bold respire.

The charge, which God doth vnto me arret, Of his deare safetie, I to thee commend; Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forget The care thereof my selfe vnto the end, But euermore him succour, and defend Against his foe and mine: watch thou I pray: For eaill is at hand him to offend. So having said, eftsoones he gan display His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

The Palmer seeing his left empty place, And his slow eyes beguiled of their sight, Woxe sore affraid, and standing still a space, Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight; At last him turning to his charge behight. With trembling hand his troubled pulsegan try; Where finding life not yet dislodged quight, He much reioyst, and courd it tenderly, As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny. Bad therefore I him deeme, that thus lies dead

10

At last he spide, where towards him did pace Two Paynim knights, all armd as bright as skie, And them beside an aged Sire did trace, And farre before a light-foot Page did flie, That breathed strife and troublous enmitie: Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old. Who meeting earst with Archimago slie. Foreby that idle strond, of him were told, That he, which earst them combatted, was Guyon bold.

Which to auenge on him they dearely vowd, Where ever that on ground they mote him fund; False Archimage prought their courage prowd, And stryfull Atin in their stubborne mynd Coles of contention and whot vengeance tynd. Now bene they come, whereas the l'almer sate. Keeping that slombred corse to him assynd: Well knew they both his person, sith of late With him in bloudie armes they rashly did debate.

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage, That sire he foule bespake. Thou dotard vile. That with thy brutenesses hendst thy comelyage. Abandone soone, I read, the caitine spoile Of that same outcast carkasse, that erewhile Made it selfe famous through false trechery, And crown dhis coward crest with knightly stile: Loe where he now inglorious doth lye, To prove he lived ill, that did thus foully dye.

To whom the Palmer fearelesse answered; Certes, Sir knight, ye bene too much to blame. Thus for to blot the honour of the dead. And with foule cowardize his carkasse shame, Whose liuing hands immortalize his name. Vile is the vengeance on the ashes cold, And enuie base, to barke at sleeping fame: Was neuer wight, that treason of him told; Your selfe his prowesse prou'd and found him fiers and bold.

Then said Cymochles; Palmer, thou doest dote, Ne canst of prowesse, ne of knighthood deeme, Saue as thou seest or hearst. But well I wote, That of his puissance tryall made extreeme; Yet gold all is not, that doth golden seeme, Ne all good knights, that shake well speare and shield:

The worth of all men by their end esteeme, And then due praise, or due reproch them yield: on field.

т :

Good or bad (gan his brother fierce reply)
What doe I recke, sith that he dyde entire?
Or what doth his bad death now satisfy
The greedy hunger of reuenging ire,
Sith wrathfull hand wrought not herownedesire?
Yet since no way is left to wreake my spight,
I will him reaue of armes, the victors hire,
And of that shield, more worthy of good knight;
For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour bright?

16

Faire Sir, said then the Palmer suppliaunt,
For knighthoods loue, do not so foule a deed,
Ne blame your honour with so shamefull vaunt
Of vile reuenge. To spoile the dead of weed
Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes exceed;
But leaue these relicks of his liuing might,
To decke his herce, and trap his tomb-blacke
steed. [dight,

What herce or steed (said he) should he haue But be entombed in the rauen or the kight?

17

With that, rude hand vpon his shield he laid, And th'other brother gan his helme vnlace, Both fiercely bent to haue him disaraid; Till that they spide, where towards them didpace. An armed knight, of bold and bounteous grace, Whose squire bore after him an heben launce, And couerd shield. Wellkendhimso farrespace Th'enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce, When vnder him he saw his Lybian steed to praunce.

18

And to those brethren said, Rise rise by liue, And vnto battell doe your selues addresse; For yonder comes the prowest knight aliue, Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and nobilesse, That hath to Paynim knights wrought great distresse,

And thousand Sar'zins foully donne to dye. That word so deepedid in their harts impresse, That both eftsoones vpstarted furiously, And gan themselues prepare to battell greedily.

10

But fierce *Pyrochles*, lacking his owne sword, The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine, And *Archimage* besought, him that afford, Which he had brought for *Braggadocchio* vaine. So would I (said th'enchaunter) glad and faine Beteeme to you this sword, you to defend, Orought thatelseyourhonourmight maintaine, Rut that this weapons powre I well haue kend. To be contrarie to the worke, which ye intend.

20

For that same knights ownesword this is of yore Which Merlin made by his almightie art Forthat hisnoursling, when he knighthoodswore, Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart. The metall first he mixt with Medawart, That no enchauntment from his dint might saue; Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart, And seuen times dipped in the bitter waue Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it gaue.

21

The vertue is, that neither steele, nor stone The stroke thereof from entrance may defend; Ne euer may be vsed by his fone, Ne forst his rightfull owner to offend, Ne euer will it breake, ne euer bend. Wherefore Morddure it rightfully is hight. In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend The same to thee, against his lord to fight. For sure it would deceive thy labour, and thy might.

22

Foolish old man, said then the Pagan wroth, That weenest words or charmes may force withstond:

Sooneshalt thou see, and then beleeue for troth, That I can carue with this inchaunted brond His Lordsowne flesh. Therewith out of his hond That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht away, And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond; So readie dight, fierce battaile to assay, And match his brother proudin battailous array.

22

By this that straunger knight in presence came, And goodly salued them; who nought againe Him answered, as courtesie became, Butwithsterneloo'es, and stomachous disdaine, Gauesignesofgrudge and discontentment vaine: Then turning to the Palmer, he gan spy Where at his feete, with sorrowfull demaine And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye, In whose dead face he red great magnanimity.

24

Said he then to the Palmer, Reuerend syre, Whatgreat misfortune hath betidd this knight? Or did his life her fatall date expyre, Or did he fall by treason, or by fight? How euer, sure I rew his pitteous plight. Not one, nor other, (said the Palmer graue) Hath him befalne, but cloudes of deadly night A while his heauie eylids couer'd haue, And all his senses drowned in deepe senselesse waue.

Which, those his cruell foes, that stand hereby, Making aduantage, to reuenge their spight, Would him disarme, and treaten shamefully, Vnworthy vsage of redoubted knight. But you, faire Sir, whose honorable sight Doth promise hope of helpe, and timely grace, Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight, And by your powre protect his feeble cace. First praise of knighthood is, foule outrage to deface.

26

Palmer, (said he) no knight so rude, I weene, As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost: Ne was there euer noble courage seene, That in aduauntage would his puissance bost: Honour is least, where oddes appeareth most. May be, that better reason will asswage The rash reuengers heat. Words well dispost Haue secret powre, t'appease inflamed rage: If not, leaue vnto me thy knights last patronage.

27

Tho turning to those brethren, thus bespoke, Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might It seemes, iustwrongstovengeancedoe prouoke, To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming knight,

Mote ought allay the storme of your despight, And settle patience in so furious heat? Not to debate the chalenge of your right, But for this carkasse pardon I entreat, Whom fortune hath alreadie laid in lowest seat.

25

To whom Cymochles said; For what art thou, That mak'st thy selfe his dayes-man, to prolong The vengeance prest? Or who shall let me now, On this vile bodie from to wreake my wrong, And make his carkasse as the outcast dong? Why should not that dead carrion satisfie The guilt, which if he liued had thus long, His life for due reuenge should deare able? The trespasse still doth liue, albe the person die.

20

Indeed (then said the Prince) the euill donne Dyes not, when breath the bodie first doth leaue, But from the grandsyre to the Nephewes sonne, And all his seed the curse doth often cleaue, Till vengeance vtterly the guilt bereaue: So streightly God doth iudge. But gentle knight,

That doth against the dead his hand vpreare, His honour staines with rancour and despight, And great disparagment makes to his former might. Pyrochles gan reply the second time, And to him said, Now felon sure I read, How that thou art partaker of his crime: Therefore by Termagaunt thou shalt be dead. With that his hand, more sad then lomp of lead, Volifting high, he weened with Mordaure.

30

His owne good sword Morddure, to cleaue his head.

The faithfull steele such treason no'uld endure.

But swaruing from the marke, his Lords life did assure.

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,
That horse and man it made to reele aside;
Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his sell:
For well of yore he learned had to ride,
But full of anger fiercely to him cride;
False traitour miscreant, thou broken hast
The law of armes, to strike foe vndefide.
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt taste
Right sowre, and feele the law, the which thou
hast defast.

With that his balefull speare he fiercely bent Against the Pagans brest, and therewith thought His cursed life out of her lodge haue rent: But ere the point arrived, where it ought, That seuen-fold shield, which he from Guyon brought

He cast betwene to ward the bitter stound:
Through all those foldes the steelehead passage
wrought | ground

And through his shoulder pierst; wherwith to He groueling fell, all gored in his gushing wound.

22

Which when his brother saw, fraught with great griefe

And wrath, he to him leaped furiously,
And fowly said, By Mahoune, cursed thiefe,
That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt aby.
Then hurling vp his harmefull blade on hye,
Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,
That from his saddle forced him to fly:

Else mote it needes downe to his manly brest Haue cleft his head in twaine, and life thence dispossest.

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse, Wantinghissword, when he on footshould fight: His single speare could doe him small redresse, Against two foes of so exceeding might, The least of which was match for any knight. And now the other, whom he earst did daunt, Had reard himselfe againe to cruell fight, Three times more furious, and more puissaunt, Vnmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignoraunt

So both attonce him charge on either side, With hideous strokes, and importable powre, That forced him his ground to trauerse wide, And wisely watch to ward that deadly stowre: For in his shield, as thicke as stormie showre, Their strokes did raine, yet did he neuer quaile, Ne backward shrinke, but as a stedfast towre. Whom foe with double battry doth assaile, Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids them nought auaile.

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay, Till that at last, when he advantage spyde, His poinant speare he thrust with puissant sway At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was wyde, That through his thigh the mortall steele did gryde:

He swaruing with the force, within his flesh Did breake the launce, and let the head abyde: Out of the wound the red bloud flowed fresh, That vnderneath his feet soone made a purple

plesh.

Horribly then he gan to rage, and rayle, Cursing his Gods, and himselfe damning deepe: Als when his brother saw the red bloud rayle Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe, For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe, And said, Caytiue, cursse on thy cruell hond, That twise hath sped; yet shall it not thee keepe From the third brunt of this my fatall brond: Loe where the dreadfull Death behind thy backe doth stond.

W th that he strooke, and th'other strooke with all, That nothing seem'd mote beare so monstrous

The one voon his couered shield did fall, Andglauncing downe would not his owner by te: But th'other did vpon his troncheon smyte, Which hewing quite a sunder, further way It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte, The which dividing with importune sway, It seizd in his right side, and there the dint did stay.

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme flood, Red as the Rose, thence gushed grieuously; That when the Paynim spyde the streaming blood.

Gaue him great hart, and hope of victory. On th'other side, in huge perplexity, The Prince now stood, having his weapon broke; Nought could he hurt, but still at ward did ly: Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke Cymochles twise, that twise him forst his foot reuoke.

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse. Sir Guyons sword he lightly to him raught, And said; Faire Son, great God thy right hand blesse.

To vse that sword so wisely as it ought. Glad was the knight, and with fresh courage

fraught.

When as againe he armed felt his hond; Then like a Lion, which hath long time saught His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond Emongst the shepheard swaynes, then wexeth wood and yond.

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes On either side, that neither mayle could hold, Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes: Now to *Pyrochles* many strokes he told; Eft to Cymochles twise so many fold: Then backe againe turning his busic hond, Them both attonce compeld with courage bold, To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond: And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not both withstond.

As saluage Bull, whom two fierce mastiues bayt, When rancour doth with rage him once engore, Forgets with warie ward them to awayt, But with hisdreadfull hornes them drives afore, Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the flore, Breathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine, That all the forrest quakes to heare him rore: So rag'dPrince Arthur twixthis foemen twaine, That neither could his mightie puissancesustaine.

But euer at Pyrochles when he smit. Who Guyons shield cast euer him before, Whereon the Faery Queenespourtract was writ, His hand relented, and the stroke forbore, And his deare hart the picture gan adore, Which oft the Paynimsau'd from deadly stowre. But him henceforth the same can saue no more; For now arrived is his fatall howre. That no'te auoyded be by earthly skill or powre.

For when Cymochles saw the fowle reproch, Which them appeached, prickt with guilty shame, And inward griefe, he fiercely gan approch, Resolu'd to put away that loathly blame, Or dye with honour and desert of fame; And on the hauberk stroke the Prince so sore, That quite disparted all the linked frame, And pierced to the skin, but bit no more, Yet made him twise to reele, that neuer moou'd afore.

Whereat renfierst with wrath and sharpe regret, He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade. That it empierst the Pagans burganet,

And cleaning the hard steele, did deepe inuade Into his head, and cruell passage made Ouite through his braine. He tombling downe

on ground. Breathd out his ghost, which to th'infernall

shade Fast flying, there eternall torment found.

For all the sinnes, wherewith his lewd life did 46

Which when his german saw, the stony feare Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd. Ne thenceforth life ne courage did appeare, But as a man, whom hellish feends have frayd. Long tremblingstill hestood: at last thus sayd; Traytour what hast thou doen? how ever may Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swavd Against that knight: Harrow and well away,

After sowicked deed whyliu'st thou lenger day?

With that all desperate as loathing light, And with reuenge desiring soone to dye, Assembling all his force and vtmost might, With his owne sword he fierce at him did flye. Andstrooke, and found, and lasht outrageously. Withouten reason or regard. Well knew The Prince, with patience and sufferaunce sly So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew:

Tho when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew.

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye, That nothing may with stand his stormy stowre, The cloudes, as things affrayd, before him flye; But all so soone as his outrageous powre Is layd, they fiercely then begin to shoure, And as in scorne of his spent stormy spight, Now all attonce their malice forth do poure; So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in fight, And suffred rash Pyrochles wast his idle might.

At last when as the Sarazin perceiu'd. How that straunge sword refusd, to serue his need. [deceiu'd. But when he stroke most strong, the dint He flong it from him, and devoyd of dreed, Vpon him lightly leaping without heed, Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,

Thinking to ouerthrow and downe him tred: But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast, And through his nimble sleight did vnder him down cast.

Nought booted it the Paynim then to striue For as a Bittur in the Eagles claw. That may not hope by flight to scape aliue. Still waites for death with dread and trembling

So he now subject to the victours law, Did not once moue, nor vpward cast his eye For vile disdaine and rancour, which did gnaw His hart in twaine with sad melancholy. As one that loathed life, and yet despise to dye.

But full of Princely bounty and great mind. The Conquerour nought cared him to slay, But casting wrongs and all reuenge behind More glory thought to give life, then decay, And said, Paynim, this is thy dismall day; Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreaunce. And my trew liegeman yield thy selfe for av Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce. And all thy wrongs will wipe out of my souenaunce.

Foole (said the Pagan) I thy gift defye, But vse thy fortune, as it doth befall, And say, that I not ouercome do dye, But in despight of life, for death do call. Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet withall, That he so wilfully refused grace; Yet sith his fate so cruelly did fall, His shining Helmet he gan soone vnlace. And left his headlesse body bleeding all the place.

By this Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt. Life having maistered her sencelesse foe: And looking up, when as his shield he lakt, And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe: But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe Had lost, he by him spide, right glad he grew, And said, Deare sir, whom wandring to and fro I long have lackt, I joy thy face to vew; Firme is thy faith, whom daunger neuer fro me drew.

But read what wicked hand hath robbed mee Ofmygoodswordandshield? The Palmerglad, With so fresh hew vprising him to see, Him answered; Faire sonne, be no whit sad For want of weapons, they shall soone be had. So gan he to discourse the whole debate. Which that straunge knight for him sustained had.

And those two Sarazins confounded late, Whose carcases on ground were horribly prostrate.

. . . . .

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens trew, His hart with great affection was embayd, And to the Prince bowing with reuerence dew, As to the Patrone of his life, thus sayd; MyLord, my liege, by whose most gratious ayd I liue this day, and see my foes subdewd, What may suffise, to be for meede repayd Of so great graces, as ye haue me shewd, But to be euer bound

=1

To whom the Infant thus, Faire Sir, what need Good turnes be counted, as a seruile bond, To bind their doers, to receive their meede? Are not all knights by oath bound, to withstond

Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond?

Suffise, that I haue done my dew in place. So goodly purpose they together fond, Of kindnesse and of curtcous aggrace; The whiles false Archimage and Alin fled apace.

# Cant. IX.

# 

The house of Temperance, in which doth sober Alma dwell, **50** Wl Besiegd of many foes, whom straunger knightes to flight compell.

#### 

т

Of all Gods workes, which do this world adorne, There is no one more faire and excellent, Then is mans body both for powre and forme, Whiles it is kept in sober gouernment; But none then it, more fowle and indecent, Distempredthrough misrule and passions bace: It growes a Monster, and incontinent Doth loose his dignitie and natiue grace. Behold, who list, both one and other in this place.

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,
The Briton Prince recou'ring his stolne sword,
And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere
Forth passed on their way in faire accord,
Till him the Prince with gentle court did bord;
Sir knight, mote I of you this curt'sie read,
To weet why on your shield so goodly scord
Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head?
Full liuely is the semblaunt, though the substance dead.

Faire Sir (said he) if in that picture dead Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew, What mote ye weene, if the trew liuely-head Of that most glorious visage ye did vew? But if the beautie of her mind ye knew, That is her bountie, and imperiall powre, Thousand times fairer then her mortall hew, O how great wonder would your thoughts deuoure,

And infinite desire into your spirite poure!

4

She is the mighty Queene of Faerie,
Whose faire retrait I in my shield do beare;
She is the flowre of grace and chastitie,
Throughout theworld renowmed far and neare,
My liefe, my liege, my Soueraigne, my deare,
Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,
And with her light the earth enlumines cleare;
Far reach her mercies, and her prayses farre,
As well in state of peace, as puissaunce in warre.

Thrise happy man, (said then the *Briton* knight) Whom gracious lot, and thy great valiaunce Hauemadetheesouldierofthat Princesse bright, Which with her bounty and glad countenance Doth blesse her scruaunts, and them high aduaunce.

How may straunge knight hope euer to aspire, By faithfull service, and meet amenance, Vnto such blisse? sufficient were that hire For losse of thousand lives, to dye at her desire.

Said Guyon, Noble Lord, what meed so great, Or grace of earthly Prince so soueraine, But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat Ye well may hope, and easely attaine? But were your will, her sold to entertaine, And numbred be mongst knight sof Maydenlud Great guerdon, well I wote, should your emaine And in her fauour high be reckoned, As Arliegall, and Sophy now beene honored.

Certes (then said the Prince) I God auow,
That sith I armes and knighthood first die
plight,

My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now, To serue that Queene with all my powre and

might.

Now hath the Sunne with his lamp-burning light Walkt round about the world, and I no lesse Sith of that Goddesse I have sought the sight Yet no where can her find: such happinesse Heauen doth to meenuy, and for une fauour lesse

Fortune, the foe of famous cheuisaunce Seldome (said Guyon) yields to vertue aide, But in her way throwes mischiefe and mischaunce.

Whereby hercourse is stopt, and passage staid But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid, But constant keepe the way, in which ye stand: Which were it not, that I am else delaid With hard aduenture, which I haue in hand, I labour would to guide you through all Faery land.

iiu.

Gramercy Sir (said he) but mote I weete, What straunge aduenture do ye now pursew? Perhaps my succour, or aduizement meete Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew. Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles, Which to auenge, the Palmer him forth drew From Faery court. So talked they, the whiles They wasted had much way, and measurd many miles.

And now faire *Phæbus* gan decline in hast His weary wagon to the Westerne vale, Whenas they spide a goodly castle, plast Foreby a riuer in a pleasaunt dale, Which choosing for that euenings hospitale, They thither marcht: but when they came in sight,

And from their sweaty Coursers did auale, They found thegates fast barred longerenight, And euery loup fast lockt, as fearing foes despight.

Which when they saw, they weened fowler eproch Was to them doen, their entrance to forstall, Till that the Squire gan nigher to approch; And wind his horne vnder the castle wall, That with the noise it shooke, as it would fall: Etsoones forth looked from the highest spire The watch, and lowd vnto the knights did call, To weete, what they so rudely did require. Who gently answered, They entrance did desire.

12

Fly fly, good knights, (said he) fly fast away
If that your liues ye loue, as meete ye should;
Fly fast, andsaue your selues from neare decay,
Here may ye not haue entraunce, though we
would:

We would and would againe, if that we could; But thousand enemies about vs raue, And with long siege vs in this castle hould: Seuen yeares this wize they vs besieged haue, And many good knights slaine, that haue vs sought to saue. Thus as he spoke, loe with outragious cry
A thousand villeins round about them swarmd
Out of the rockes and caues adioyning nye,
Vile caytiue wretches, ragged, rude, deformd,
All threatning death, all in straunge manner
armd.

Some with vnweldy clubs, some with long speares, Some rusty kniues, some staues in fire warn.d. Sterne was their looke, like wild amazed steares, Staring with hollow eyes, and stiffe vpstanding

heares.

Ficrsly at first those knights they did assaile, And droue them to recoile: but when againe They gaue fresh charge, their forces gan to faile, Vinhable their encounter to sustaine; For with such puissaunce and impetuous maine Those Champions broke on them, that forst them fly. [swaine]

Like scattered Sheepe, whenas the Shepheards
A Lyon and a Tigre doth espye,

With greedy pace forth rushing from the forest

nye.

A while they fled, but soone returnd againe
With greater fury, then before was found;
And euermore their cruell Capitaine
Sought with his raskall routs t'enclose them

round,
And ouerrun to tread them to the ground.
But soone the knights with their bright-burning blades [found,

Broke their rude troupes, and orders did con-Hewing and slashing at their idle shades; For though they bodies seeme, yet substance

from them fades.

As when a swarme of Gnats at euentide
Out of the fennes of Allan do arise,
Their murmuring small trompets sounden wide,
Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,
That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies;
Ne man nor beast may rest, or take repast,
For their sharpe wounds, and noyous iniuries,
Till the fierce Northerne wind with blustring blast
Doth blow them quite away, and in the Ocean
cast.

Thus when they had that troublous rout disperst, Vnto the castle gate they come againe, And entraunce crau'd, which was denied erst. Now when report of that their perilous paine, And combrous conflict, which they didsustaine, Came to the Ladies eare, which there did dwell, She forth issewed with a goodly traine Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well, And entertained them right fairely, as befoll

Alma she called was, a virgin bright;
That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage,
Yet was she woo'd of many a gentle knight,
And many a Lord of noble parentage,
That sought with her to lincke in marriage:
For she was faire, as faire mote euer bee,
And in the flowre now of her freshest age;
Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,
That euen heauen reioyced her swecte face to

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,
Thatfromhershouldertoherheele downeraught,
The traine whereof loos far behind her strayd,
Braunched with gol l and pearle, most richly
wrought.

And borne of two faire Damsels, which were taught

That service well. Her yellow golden heare Was trimly wouen, and in tresses wrought, Ne other tyre she on her head did weare, But crowned with a garland of sweete Rosiere.

20

Goodly she entertaind those noble knights,
And brought them vp into her castle hall;
Where gentle court and gracious delight
She to them made, with mildnesse virginall,
Shewing her selfe both wise and liberall:
There when they rested had a season dew,
They her besought of fauour speciall,
Of that faire Castle to affoord them vew;
She graunted, and them leading forth, the
same did shew.

21

First she them led vp to the Castle wall,
That was so high, as foe might not it clime,
And all so faire, and fensible withall,
Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,
But of thing like to that \*Egyptian\* slime,
Whereofking Nine\* whilome built \*Babell\* towre;
But O great pitty, that no lenger time
So goodly workemanship should not endure:
Some it must turne to earth; no earthly thing
is sure.

22

The frame thereof seemd partly circulare, And part triangulare, O worke diuine; Those two the first and last proportions are, The one imperfect, mortall, fœminine; Thosher immortall, perfect, masculine, and twixt them both a quadrate was the base Proportioned equally by seuen and nine; Nine was the circle set in heavens place, All which compacted made a goodly diapase.

4 1 MM 23

There in two gates were placed seemly well:
The one before, by which all in did pas,
Did th'other far in workmanship excell;
For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,
But of more worthy substance fram'd it was;
Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,
That when it locked, none might thorough pas,
And when it opened, no man might it close,
Still open to their friends, and closed to their

24

Of hewen stone the porch was fairely wrought, Stone more of valew, and more smooth and fine,

Then let or Marble far from Ireland brought; Ouer the which was cast a wandring vine, Enchaced with a wanton yuie twine. And ouer it a faire Portcullis hong, Which to the gate directly did incline, With comely compasse, and compacture strong, Neither vnseemely short, nor yet exceeding long.

25

Within the Barbican a Porter sate,
Day and night duely keeping watch and ward,
Nor wight, nor word mote passe out of the gate,
But in good order, and with dew regard;
Vtterers of secrets he from thence debard,
Bablers of folly, and blazers of crime.
His larumbell might lowd and wide be hard,
When cause requird, but neuer out of time;
Early and late it rong, at euening and atprime.

26

And round about the porch on euery side
Twise sixteen warders sat, all armed bright
In glistring steele, and strongly fortifide:
Tall yeomen seemed they, and of great might,
And were enraunged ready, still for fight.
By them as Alma passed with her guestes,
They did obeysaunce, as beseemed right,
And then againe returned to their restes:
The Porter eke to her did lout with humble
gestes.

27

Thence she them brought into a stately Hall, Wherein were many tables faire dispred, And ready dight with drapets festiuall, Against the viaundes should be ministred, At th'upper end there sate, yelad in red Downe to the ground, a comely personage, That in his hand a white rod menaged, He Steward was hight Diet; rype of age, And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

And through the Hall there walked to an. Iro A jolly yeoman, Marshall of the same, Whose name was Appetite; he did bestow Both guestes and meate, when euer in they

And knew them how to order without blame. As him the Steward bad. They both attone Did dewty to their Lady, as became; Who passing by, forth led her guestes anone Into the kitchin rowme, ne spard for nicenesse

none.

It was a vaut youilt for great dispence, With many raunges reard along the wall; And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence

The smoke forth threw. And in the midst of all There placed was a caudron wide and tall, Voon a mighty furnace, burning whot, More whot, then Aetn', or flaming Mongiball: For day and night it brent, ne ceased not, So long as any thing it in the caudron got.

But to delay the heat, least by mischaunce It might breake out, and set the whole on fire, There added was by goodly ordinaunce, An huge great paire of bellowes, which did styre Continually, and cooling breath inspyre. About the Caudron many Cookes accoyld, With hookes and ladles, as need did require; The whiles the viandes in the vessell boyld They did about their businesse sweat, and sorely toyld.

The maister Cooke was cald Concoction, A carefull man, and full of comely guise: The kitchin Clerke, that hight Digestion, Did order all th'Achates in seemely wise, And set them forth, as well he could deuise. The rest had severall offices assind, Some to remove the scum, as it did rise; Others to beare the same away did mind; And others it to vse according to his kind.

But all the liquour, which was fowle and wast. Not good nor seruiceable else for ought, They in another great round vessell plast, Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought: And all the rest, that noyous was, and nought, By secret wayes, that none might it espy, Was close conuaid, and toth back-gate brought, That cleped was Port Esquiline, whereby It was auoided quite, and throwne out privily.

Which goodly order, and great workmans skill Whenas those knights beheld, with rare delight, And gazing wonder they their minds did fill; For neuer had they seene so straunge a sight. Thence backe againefaire Alma led them right. And soone into a goodly Parlour brought, That was with royall arras richly dight, In which was nothing pourtraked, nor wrought,

Not wrought, nor pourtrahed, but easie to be thought.

And in the midst thereof vpon the floure, A louely beur of faire Ladies sate, Courted of many a iolly Paramoure, The which them did in modest wise amate. And eachone sought his Lady to aggrate: And eke emongst them litle Cupid playd His wanton sports, being returned late From his fierce warres, and having from him layd His cruell bow, wherewith he thousands hath dismayd.

Diverse delights they found them selves to please;

Somesong in sweet consort, some laught for ioy, Some plaid withstrawes, some idly sat at ease; But other some could not abide to toy, All pleasaunce was to them griefe and annoy: This fround, that faund, the third for shame did blush.

Another seemed enuious, or coy, Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush: But at these straungers presence euery one did hush.

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place They all attonce out of their seates arose. And to her homage made, with humble grace: Whom when the knights beheld, they gan dispose Themselves to court, and each a Damsell chose: The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light, That was right faire and fresh as morning rose, But somwhat sad, and solemne eke in sight, As if some pensiue thought constraind her gentle spright.

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold Was fretted all about, she was arayd; And in her hand a Poplar braunch did hold: To whom the Prince in curteous manner said Gentle Madame, why beene ye thus dismaid, And your faire beautie do with sadnesse spill? Liues any, that you hath thus ill apaid? Or doen you loue, or doen you lacke your will? What euer be the cause, it sure beseemes you ill

Faire Sir, (said she halfe in disdainefull wise,) How is it, that this mood in me ye blame, And in your selfe do not the same aduise? Him ill beseemes, anothers fault to name, That may vnwares be blotted with the same: Pensiue I yeeld I am, and sad in mind, Through great desire of glory and of fame; Ne ought I weene are ye therein behind, That haue twelue moneths sought one, yet no where can her find.

The Prince was inly moued at her speach,
Well weeting trew, what she had rashly told;
Yet with faire semblaunt sought to hide the
breach,

Which chaunge of colour did perforce vnfold, Now seeming flaming whot, now stony cold. Tho turning soft aside, he did inquire, What wight she was, that Poplar braunch did

hold:

It answered was, her name was *Prays-desire*, That by well doing sought to honour to aspire.

The whiles, the Faerie knight did entertaine Another Damsell of that gentle crew, That was right faire, and modest of demaine, But that too oft she chaung'd her natiue hew: Straunge was hertyre, and all her garment blew, Closeround about her tuckt with many a plight: Vpon her fist the bird, which shonneth vew, And keepes in couerts close from liuing wight, Did sit, as yet ashamd, how rude Pan did her dight.

So long as Guyon with her commoned,
Vnto the ground she cast her modest eye,
And euer and anone with rosic red
The bashfull bloud her snowy cheekes did dye,
That her became, as polisht yuory,
Which cunning Craftesmanshandhathouerlayd
With faire vermilion or pure Castory.
Great wonder had the knight, to see the mayd
So straungely passioned, and to her gently sayd,

Faire Damzell, seemeth, by your troubled cheare,
That either me too bold ye weene, this wise
You to molest, or other ill to feare
That in the secret of your hart close lyes,
From whence it doth, as cloud from sea arise.
If it be I, of pardon I you pray;
But if ought else that I mote not deuise,
I will, if please you it discure, assay,
To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame, Held downe her head, the whiles her louely face The flashing bloud with blushing cid inflame, Andthe strong passion mard her modest grace, That Guyon meruayld at her vncouth cace: Till Alma him bespake, Why wonder yee Faire Sir at that, which ye so much embrace? She is the fountaine of your modestee; You shamefast are, but Shamefastnesse it selfe is shee.

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,
And turnd his face away; but she the same
Dissembled faire, and faynd to ouersee.
Thus they awhile with court and goodly game,
Themselues did solace each one with his Dame,
Till that greatLadie thence away them sought,
To vew her castles other wondrous frame.
Vp to a stately Turret she them brought,
Ascending by ten steps of Alablaster wrought.

That Turrets frame most admirable was,
Like highest heauen compassed around,
And lifted high aboue this earthly masse,
Which it suruew'd, as hils doen lower ground;
But not on ground mote like to this be found,
Notthat, which antique Cadmus whylomebuilt
In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;
Nor that proud towre of Troy, though richly
guilt,

From which young Hectors bloud by cruell Greekes was spilt.

The roofe hereof was arched ouer head,
And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily;
Two goodly Beacons, set in watches stead,
Therein gaue light, and flam'd continually:
For they of liuing fire most subtilly
Were made, and set in siluer sockets bright,
Couer'd with lids deuiz'd of substance sly,
That readily they shut and open might.
Owho can tell the prayses of that makers might!

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell
This parts great workmanship, and wondrous
powre,
That all this other worlds worke doth excell,

And likest is vnto that heauenly towre,
That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre.
Thereinwere diuerse roomes, and diuerse stages,
But three the chiefest, and of greatest powre,
In which there dwelt three honorable sages,
The wisest men, I weene, that liued in their ages

48 Not he, whom Greece, the Nourse of all good arts, By Phabus doome, the wisest thought alive, Might be compar'd to these by many parts: Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did survive Three ages, such as mortall men contriue. By whose aduise old Priams cittie fell, With these in praise of pollicies mote striue. These three in these three roomes did sundry dwell.

And counselled faire Alma, how to governe well.

The first of them could things to come foresee: The next could of things present best aduize; The third things past could keepe in memoree, So that no time, nor reason could arize, But that the same could one of these comprize. For thy the first did in the forepart sit, That nought mote hinder his quicke prejudize: He had a sharpe foresight, and working wit,

That neuer idle was, ne once could rest a whit.

His chamber was dispainted all within, With sundry colours, in the which were writ Infinite shapes of things dispersed thin; Some such as in the world were neuer yit, Ne can deuized be of mortall wit; Some daily seene, and knowen by their names, Such as in idle fantasies doe flit: Infernall Hags, Centaurs, feendes, Hippodames, Apes, Lions, Ægles, Owles, fooles, louers, children, Dames.

And all the chamber filled was with flyes, Which buzzed all about, and made such sound, That they encombred all mens eares and eyes, Like many swarmes of Bees assembled round, After their hiues with honny do abound: All those were idle thoughts and fantasies, Deuices, dreames, opinions vnsound, Shewes, visions, sooth-sayes, and prophesics; And all that fained is, as leasings, tales, and hes.

Emongst them all sate he, which wonned there, That hight Phantastes by his nature trew; A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote appere, Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew, That him full of melancholy did shew; Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring eyes, That mad or foolish seemd: one by his vew Mote deeme him borne with ill disposed skyes, When oblique Saturne sate in the house of agonyes.

Whom Alma having shewed to her guestes, Thence brought them to the second roome, whose wals

Were painted faire with memorable gestes, Of famous Wisards, and with picturals Of Magistrates, of courts, of tribunals, Of commen wealthes, of states, of pollicy, Of lawes, of iudgements, and of decretals: All artes, all science, all Philosophy, And allthat in the world was a yethought wittily.

Of those that roome was full, and them among There sate a man of ripe and perfect age, Who did them meditate all his life long, That through continuall practise and vsage, He now was growne right wise, and wondrous

Great pleasure had those stranger knights, to see His goodly reason, and graue personage, That his disciples both desir'd to bee; But Alma thence them led to th'hindmost roome of three.

That chamber seemed ruinous and old, And therefore was remoued farre behind, Yet were the wals, that did the same vphold, Right firme and strong, though somewhat they declind:

And therein sate an old oldman, halfe blind. And all decrepit in his feeble corse, Yet lively vigour rested in his mind, And recompenst him with a better scorse: Weake body well is chang'd for minds redoubled forse.

This man of infinite remembrance was, And things foregone through many ages held, Which he recorded still, as they did pas, Ne suffred them to perish through long eld, Asall thingselse, the which this world doth weld, But laid them vp in his immortall scrine, Where they for euer incorrupted dweld: The warres he well remembred of king Nine, Of old Assaracus, and Inachus diuine.

The yeares of Nestor nothing were to his, Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liu'd; For he remembred both their infancies: Ne wonder then, if that he were depriu'd Of native strength now, that he them surviv'd. His chamber all was hangd about with rolles, And old records from auncient times deriu'd, Some made in books, some in long parchment scrolles.

That were all worme-eaten, and full of canker

Amidst them all he in a chaire was set,
Tossing and turning them withouten end;
But for he was vnhable them to fet,
A litle boy did on him still attend,
To reach, when euer he for ought did send;
And oft when things were lost, or laid amis,
That boy them sought, and vnto him did lend.
Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is,
And that old man Eunnestes, by their propertis.

59

The knights there entring, did him reuerence dew

And wondred at his endlesse exercise,
Then as they gan his Librarie to vew,
And antique Registers for to auise,
There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize,
An auncient booke, hight Briton moniments,
That of this lands first conquest did deuize,
And old diuision into Regiments,
Till it reduced was to one mans governments.

60

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke, That hight Antiquitie of Faerie lond, In which when as he greedily did looke, Th'off-spring of Eluesand Faries there he fond, As it deliuered was from hond to hond: Whereat they burning both with feruent fire, Their countries auncestry to vnderstond, Crau'd leaue of Alma, and that aged sire, Toread those bookes; who gladly graunted their desire.

# Cant. X.

## 

A chronicle of Briton kings, from Brute to V thers rayne. And rolles of Elfin Emperours, till time of Gloriane.

#### COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

Who now shall give vnto me words and sound, Equall vnto this haughtie enterprise? Or who shall lend me wings, with which from ground

My lowly verse may loftily arise,
And lift it selfe vnto the highest skies?
More ample spirit, then hitherto was wount,
Here needes me, whiles the famous auncestries
Of my most dreaded Soueraigne I recount,
By which all earthly Princes she doth farre
surmount.

Ne vnder Sunne, that shines so wide and faire, Whenceall that liues, does borrow life and light, Liues ought, that to her linage may compaire, Which though from earth it be deriued right, Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to heauens hight, And all the world with wonder ouerspred; A labour huge, exceeding farre my might: How shall fraile pen, with feare disparaged, Conceiue such soueraine glory, and great bountihed?

Argument worthy of Maonian quill,
Or rather worthy of great Phabus rote,
Whereon the ruines of great Ossa hill,
And triumphes of Phlegraan Ioue he wrote,
That all the Gods admird his loftie note.
But if some relish of that heauenly lay
His learned daughters would to me report,
To decke my song withall, I would assay,
Thy name, O soueraine Queene, to blazon farre
away.

Thy name O soueraine Queene, thy realme and race,

From this renowmed Prince deriued arre, Who mightily upheld that royall mace, Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended farre From mightie kings and conquerours in warre, Thy fathers and great Grandfathers of old, Whose noble deedes about the Northernestarre Immortall fame for cuer hath enrold; As in that old mans booke they were in order told.

The land, which warlike Britons now possesse, And therein haue their mightie empire raysd, In antique times was saluage wildernesse, Vnpeopled, vnmanurd, vnprou'd, vnpraysd, Ne was it Island then, ne was it paysd Amid the *Ocean* waues, ne was it sought Of marchants farre, for profits therein praysd, But was all desolate, and of some thought By sea to haue bene from the *Cellicke* maynland brought.

Ne did it then deserue a name to haue, Till that the venturous Mariner that way Learninghisship from those white rocks to saue, Which all along the Southerne sea-coast lay, Threatning vnheedie wrecke and rash decay, Forsafeties sake that same his sea-marke made, And namd it Albion. But later day Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade, Gan more the same frequent, and further to inuade.

But farre in land a saluage nation dwelt, Of hideous Giants, and halfe beastly men, That neuer tasted grace, nor goodnesse felt, But like wild beasts lurking in loathsome den. And flying fast as Roebucke through the fen. All naked without shame, or care of cold, By hunting and by spoiling lived then; Of stature huge, and eke of courage bold, That sonnes of men amazd their sternnesse to behold.

But whence they sprong, or how they were begot, Vneath is to assure: vneath to wene That monstrous error, which doth some assot, That Dioclesians fiftie daughters shene Into this land by chaunce have driven bene. Where companing with feends and filthy Sprights,

Through vaine illusion of their lust vnclene. They brought forth Giants and such dreadfull

As farre exceeded men in their immeasurd mights.

They held this land, and with their filthinesse Polluted this same gentle soyle long time: That their owne mother loathd their beastlinesse.

And gan abhorre her broods vnkindly crime, All were they borne of her owne natiue slime, Vntill that Brutus anciently deriu'd From royall stocke of old Assaracs line, Driven by fatall error, here arriv'd, And them of their vniust possession depriu'd.

But ere he had established his throne, And spred his empire to the vtmost shore, He fought great battels with his saluage fone; In which he them defeated euermore, And many Giants left on groning flore; That well can witnesse yet vnto this day The westerne Hogh, besprincled with the gore Of mightie Goëmot, whom in stout fray Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

And eke that ample Pit, yet farre renownd, For the large leape, which Debon did compell Coulin to make, being eight lugs of grownd; Into the which returning backe, he fell, But those three monstrous stones doe most excell Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion, Whose father *Hercules* in Fraunce did quell, Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention, At bold Canutus; but of him was slaine anon. Where he an end of battell, and of life did make.

12

In meed of these great conquests by them got. Corineus had that Prouince vtmost west, To him assigned for his worthy lot. Which of his name and memorable gest He called Cornewaile, yet so called best: And Debons shavre was, that is Deuonshyre: But Canute had his portion from the rest. The which he cald Canutium, for his hyre: Now Cantium, which Kent we commenly inquire.

Thus Brute this Realme vnto his rule subdewd, And raigned long in great felicitie, Lou'd of his friends, and of his foes eschewd, He left three sonnes, his famous progeny, Borne of faire Inogene of Italy; Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state, And Locrine left chiefe Lord of Britany. At last ripe age bad him surrender late His life, and long good fortune vnto finall fate.

Locrine was left the soueraine Lord of all; But Albanact had all the Northrene part, Which of himselfe Albania he did call: And Camber did possesse the Westerne quart, Which Severne now from Logris doth depart: And each his portion peaceably enloyd, Newasthereoutwardbreach, norgrudgeinhart, That once their quiet government annoyd, But each his paines to others profit still employd.

Vntill a nation straung, with visage swart, And courage fierce, that all men did affray, Which through the world then swarmd in every

And overflow'd all countries farre away, Like Noves great flood, with their importune

This land inuaded with like violence, And did themselues through all the North display:

Vntill that Locrine for his Realmes defence, Did head against them make, and strong munifience.

He them encountred, a confused rout, Foreby the River, that whylome was hight The auncient Abus, where with courage stout He them descated in victorious fight, And chaste so fiercely after fearfull flight, That forst their Chieftaine, for his safeties sake, (Their Chieftaine Humber named was aright) Vnto the mightie streame him to betake,

The king returned proud of victorie. And insolent wox through vnwonted ease. That shortly he forgot the ieopardie. Which in his land he lately did appease. And fell to vaine voluptuous disease: He lou'd faire Ladie Estrild, lewdly lou'd. Whose wanton pleasures him too much did please,

That quite his hart from Guendolene remou'd. From Guendolene his wife, though alwaics faith-

full prou'd.

The noble daughter of Corineus Would not endure to be so vile disdaind, But gathering force, and courage valorous, Encountred him in battell well ordaind. In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind: But she so fast pursewd, that him she tooke, And threw in bands, where he till death remaind: Als his faire Leman, flying through a brooke, She ouerhent, nought moued with her piteous looke.

But both her selfe, and eke her daughter deare, Begotten by her kingly Paramoure, The faire Sabrina almost dead with feare, She there attached, farre from all succoure; The one she slew in that impatient stoure. But the sad virgin innocent of all. Adowne the rolling river she did poure, Which of her name now Seuerne men do call: Such was the end, that to disloyall loue did fall.

Then for her sonne, which she to Locrin bore, Madan was young, vnmeet the rule to sway. In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store, Till ryper yeares he raught, and stronger stay: During which time her powre she did display Through all this realme, the glorie of her sex, And first taught men a woman to obay: But when her sonne to mans estate did wex. She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger yex.

Tho Madan raignd, vnworthie of his race For with all shame that sacred throne he fild: Next Memprise, as vnworthy of that place, In which being consorted with Manild For thirst of single kingdome him he kild. But Ebranck salued both their infamies With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild In Henault, where yet of his victories Braue moniments remaine, which yet that land enuies.

An happie man in his first dayes he was, And happie father of faire progeny: For all so many weekes as the yeare has. So many children he did multiply: Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply Their minds to praise, and cheualrous desire: Those germans did subdew all Germany,

Of whom it hight; but in the end their Sire With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to

retire.

Which blot his sonne succeeding in his seat, The second Brute, the second both in name. And eke in semblance of his puissance great, Right well recur'd, and did away that blame With recompence of euerlasting fame. He with his victour sword first opened The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame, And taught her first how to be conquered: Since which, with sundrie spoiles she hath beene ransacked.

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania. And let the marsh of Estham bruges tell. What colour were their waters that same day. And all the moore twixt Eluersham and Dell. With bloud of Henalois, which therein fell. How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see The greene shield dyde in dolorous vermell? That not Scuith guiridh it mote seeme to bee. But rather y Scuith gogh, signe of sad crueltee.

His sonne king Leill by fathers labour long, Enjoyd an heritage of lasting peace. And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong. Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease, But taught the land from wearie warres to cease. Whose footsteps Bladud following, in arts Exceld at Athens all the learned preace, From whence he brought them to these saluage parts. And with sweet science mollifide their stub-

borne harts.

Ensample of his wondrous faculty, Behold the boyling Bathes at Cairbadon. Which seeth with secret fire eternally, And in their entrails, full of quicke Brimston. Nourish the flames, which they are warm'd vpon, That to their people wealth they forth do well. And health to euery forreine nation: Yet he at last contending to excell The reach of men, through flight into fond

mischief fell.

Next him king Leyr in happie peace long raind, But had no issue male him to succeed, But three faire daughters, which were well yptraind,

In all that seemed fit for kingly seed:
Mongst whom his realme he equally decreed
To haue diuided. Tho when feeble age
Nigh to his vtmost date he saw proceed,
He cald his daughters; and with speeches sage
Inquyrd, which of them most did loue her
parentage.

rentage.

The eldest Gonorill gan to protest,
That she much more then her owne life himlou'd:
And Regan greater loue to him profest,
Then all the world, when euer it were proou'd;
But Cordeill said she lou'd him, as behoou'd:
Whose simple answere, wanting colours faire
To paint it forth, him to displeasance moou'd,
That in his crowne he counted her no haire,
But twixt the other twaine his kingdome whole
did shaire.

So wedded th'one to Maglan king of Scots,
And th'other to the king of Cambria,
Andtwixthemshayrdhisrcalme by equalllots:
But without dowre the wise Cordelia
Was sent to Aganip of Celtica.
Their aged Syre, thus eased of his crowne,
A private life led in Albania,
With Gonorill, long had in great renowne,
That nought him griev'd to bene from rule
deposed downe.

But true it is, that when the oyle is spent,
The light goes out, and weeke is throwne away;
So when he had resigned his regiment,
His daughter gan despise his drouping day,
And wearie waxe of his continual stay.
Tho to his daughter Regan he repayrd,
Who him at first well vsed euery way;
But when of his departure she despayrd,
Herbountie she abated, and his cheare empayrd.

The wretched man gan then auise too late,
That loue is not, where most it is profest,
Too truely tryde in his extreamest state;
At last resolu'd likewise to proue the rest,
He to Cordelia him selfe addrest,
Who with entire affection him receau'd,
As for her Syre and king her seemed best;
And after all an army strong she leau'd,
To war on those, which him had of his realme
bereau'd.

\_\_\_\_

So to his crowne she him restor'd againe,
In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,
And after wild, it should to her remaine:
Who peaceably the same long time did weld:
And all mens harts in dew obedience held:
Till that her sisters children, woxen strong
Through proud ambition, against her rebeld,
And ouercommen kept in prison long,
Till wearie of that wretched life, her selfe she
hong.

Then gan the bloudie brethren both to raine:
But fierce Cundah gan shortly to enuie
Hisbrother Morgan, prickt with proud disdaine,
To haue a pere in part of soueraintie,
And kindling coles of cruell enmitie,
Raisd warre, and him in battell ouerthrew:
Whence as he to those woodie hils did flie,
Which hight of him Glamorgan, there him slew:
Then did he raigne alone, when he none equal knew.

His sonne Riuallo his dead roome did supply, In whosesad timebloud did from heaven raine: Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cæcily In constant peace their kingdomes did containe, After whom Lago, and Kinmarke did raine, And Gorbogud, till farre in yeares he grew: Then his ambitious sonnes vnto them twaine Arraught the rule, and from their father drew, Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison threw.

But O, the greedy thirst of royall crowne,
That knowes no kinred, nor regardes no right,
Stird Porrex vp to put his brother downe;
Who vnto him assembling forreine might,
Made warre on him, and fell him selfe in fight:
Whose death t'auenge, his mother mercilesse,
Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,
Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,
And with most cruell hand him murdred pittilesse.

Here ended Brutus sacred progenie, Which had seuen hundred yeares this scepter borne,

With high renowme, and great felicitie;
The noble braunch from th'antique stocke was
torne

Through discord, and the royall throne forlorne: Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent, Whilest each of *Brutus* boasted to be borne, That in the end was left no moniment Of *Brutus*, nor of Britons glory auncient.

Then vp arose a man of matchlesse might, And wondrous wit to menage high affaires, Who stird with pitty of the stressed plight Of this sad Realme, cut into sundry shaires By such, as claymd themselues *Brutes* rightfull haires,

Gathered the Princes of the people loose, To taken counsell of their common cares; Who with his wisedom won, him streight did

Their king, and swore him fealty to win or loose.

Then made he head against his enimies,
And Ymner slew, of Logris miscreate;
Then Ruddoe and proud Stater, both allyes,
This of Albanie newly nominate,
And that of Cambry king confirmed late,
He ouerthrew through his owne valiaunce;
Whose countreis he redus'd to quiet state,
And shortly brought to civill gouernaunce,
Now one, which earst were many, made through
variaunce.

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men say Were vnto him reueald in vision, By which he freed the Traueilers high way, The Churches part, and Ploughmans portion, Restraining stealth, and strong extortion; The gracious Numa of great Britanie: For till his dayes, the chiefe dominion By strength was wielded without pollicie; Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignitic.

Donuallo dyde (for what may liue for ay?)
And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse both;
That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,
The recompence of their periured oth,
And ransackt Greece well tryde, when they were
wroth;

Besides subjected Fraunce, and Germany, Which yet their praysesspeake, all be they loth, And inly tremble at the memory Of Brennus and Bellinus, kings of Britany.

Next them did Gurgun, great Bellinus sonne In rule succeede, and eke in fathers prayse; He Easterland subdewd, and Danmarke wonne, And of them both did foy and tribute raise, The which was dew in his dead fathers dayes: He also gaue to fugitiues of Spayne, Whom he at sea found wandring from their

A seate in *Ireland* safely to remayne, [wayes, Which they should hold of him, as subject to

Britayne.

After him raigned Guitheline his hayre,
The iustest man and trewest in his dayes,
Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,
A woman worthy of immortall prayse,
Which for this Realme found many goodly layes,
And wholesome Statutes to her husband
brought;

Her many deemd to haue beene of the Fayes, As was Aegerie, that Numa tought; Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd

and thought.

Her sonne Sisillus after her did rayne,
And then Kimarus, and then Danius;
Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustaine,
Who, had he not with wrath outrageous,
And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous
And mightie deeds, should matched haue the
best:

As well in that same field victorious Against the forreine *Morands* he exprest; Yet liues his memorie, though carcas sleepe in rest.

Fiue sonnes he left begotten of one wife, All which successively by turnes did raine; First Gorboman a man of vertuous life; Next Archigald, who for his proud disdaine, Deposed was from Princedome soueraine, And pitteous Elidure put in his sted; Who shortly it to him restord againe, Till by his death he it recovered; But Peridure and Vigent him disthronized.

In wretched prison long he did remaine,
Till they outraigned had their vtmost date,
And then therein reseized was againe,
And ruled long with honorable state,
Till he surrendred Realme and life to fate.
Thenall the sonnes of these fiue brethren raynd
By dew successe, and all their Nephewes late,
Euenthriseeleuen descents the crowne retaynd,
Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

46
He had two sonnes, whose eldest called Lud
Left of his life most famous memory,
And endlesse moniments of his great good:
The ruin'd wals he did reædifye
Of Troynouant, gainst force of enimy,
And built that gate, which of his name is hight,
By which he lyes entombed solemnly.
He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,
Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his might.

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane their Eme Was by the people chosen in their sted, Who on him tooke the royall Diademe, And goodly well long time it gouerned, Till the prowd Romanes him disquieted, And warlike Casar, tempted with the name Of this sweet Island, neuer conquered, And enuying the Britons blazed fame, (O hideous hunger of dominion) hither came.

48

Yet twise they were repulsed backe againe, And twise renforst, backe to their ships to fly, The whiles with bloud they all the shore did staine.

And the gray *Ocean* into purple dy:
Ne had they footing found at last perdie,
Had not *Androgeus*, false to natiue soyle,
And enuious of Vncles soueraintie,
Betrayd his contrey vnto forreine spoyle:
Nought else, but treason, from the first this land
did foyle.

49

So by him Casar got the victory,
Through great bloudshed, and many a sadassay,
In which him selfe was charged heauily
Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,
But lost his sword, yet to be seene this day.
Thenceforth this land was tributarie made
T'ambitious Rome, and did their rule obay,
Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd;
Yet oft the Briton kings against them strongly
swayd.

Next him Tenantius raigned, then Kimbeline, What time th'eternall Lord in fleshly slime Enwombed was, from wretched Adams line To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime: O ioyous memorie of happy time, That heauenly grace so plenteously displayd; (O too high ditty for my simple rime.) Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd; For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

51

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour,
An army brought, and with him battell fought,
In which the king was by a Treachetour
Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought:
Yet ceased not the bloudy fight for ought;
For Aruirage his brothers place supplide,
Both in his armes, and crowne, and by that
draught

Did driue the Romanes to the weaker side, That they to peace agreed. So all was pacifide.

Was neuer king more highly magnifide,
Nor dred of Romanes, then was Arnirage,
For which the Emperour to him allide
His daughter Genuiss' in marriage:
Yet shortly he renounst the vassalage
Of Rome againe, who hither hastly sent
Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage
Forwasted all, till Genuissa gent
Perswaded him to ceasse, and her Lord to relent.

5 2

He dyde; and him succeeded Marius,
Who ioyd his dayes in great tranquillity,
Then Coyll, and after him good Luclus,
That first received Christianitie,
The sacred pledge of Christes Euangely;
Yet true it is, that long before that day
Hither came Ioseph of Arimathy,
Whobrought with him the holygrayle, (they say)
And preacht the truth, but since it greatly did
decay.

54

This good king shortly without issew dide, Whereof great trouble in the kingdome grew, That did her selfe in sundry parts diuide, And with her powre her owne selfe ouerthrew, Whilest Romanes dayly did the weake subdew: Which seeing stout Bunduca, vp arose, And taking armes, the Britons to her drew; With whom she marched streight against her focs,

And them vnwares besides the Seuerne did enclose.

55

There she with them a cruell battell tride, Not with so good successe, as she deseru'd; By reason that the Captaines on her side, Corrupted by *Paulinus*, from her sweru'd: Yet such, as were through former flight preseru'd,

Gathering againe, her Host she did renew, And with fresh courage on the victour seru'd: But being all defeated, saue a few, Rather then fly, or be captiu'd her selfe she slew.

O famous moniment of womens prayse,
Matchable either to Semiramis,
Whom antique history so high doth raise,
Or to Hypsiphil' or to Thomiris:
Her Host two hundred thousand numbred is;
Who whiles good fortune fauoured her might,
Triumphed oft against her enimis;
And yet thousand programs is hopered fight

And yet though ouercome in haplesse fight, She triumphed on death, in enemies despight. ... 5

Her reliques Fulgent hauing gathered, Fought with Seuerus, and him ouerthrew; Yet in the chace was slaine of them, that fled: So made them victours, whom he did subdew. Then gan Carausius tirannize anew, And gainst the Romanes bent their proper

powre,
But him Allectus treacherously slew,
And took on him the robe of Emperoure:

Nath'lesse the same enioyed but short happy howre:

- 58

For Asclepiodate him ouercame,

And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne, Without or robe, or rag, to hide his shame. Then afterwards he in his stead did rayne; But shortly was by Coyll in battell slaine: Who after long debate, since Lucles time, Was of the Britons first crownd Soueraine: Then gan this Realme renewe her passed prime: He of his name Coylchester built of stone and lime.

50

Which when the Roman's heard, they hither sent Constantius, a man of mickle might, With whom king Coyll made an agreement, And to him gaue for wife his daughter bright, Faire Helena, the fairest liuing wight; Who in all godly thewes, and goodly prayse Did far excell, but was most famous hight For skill in Musicke of all in her dayes, Aswell in curious instruments, as cunning layes.

60

Of whom he did great Constantine beget,
Who afterward was Emperour of Rome;
To which whiles absent he his mind did set,
Octavius here lept into his roome,
And it vsurped by vnrighteous doome:
But he his title iustifide by might,
Slaying Traherne, and hauing ouercome
The Romane legion in dreadfull fight:
So settled he his kingdome, and confirmed his right.

6

But wanting issew male, his daughter deare He gaue in wedlocke to Maximian, And him with her made of his kingdome heyre, Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan. Till murdred by the friends of Gratian; Then gan the Hunnes and Picts inuade this land.

During the raigne of *Maximinian*; Who dying left none heire them to withstand, But that they ouerran all parts with easie hand. 62

The weary *Britons*, whose war-hable youth Was by *Maximian* lately led away, With wretched miseries, and woefull ruth, Were to those Pagans made an open pray, And dayly spectacle of sad decay:

Whom Romane warres, which now foure hundred yeares.

And more had wasted, could no whit dismay; Till by consent of Commons and of Peares, They crownd the second *Constantine* with ioyous teares.

Who having oft in battell vanquished ThosespoilefullPicts, and swarming Easterlings, Long time in peace his Realme established, Yet oft annoyd with sundry bordragings Of neighbour Scots, and forrein Scatterlings, With which the world did in those dayes abound: Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings From sea to sea he heapt a mightie mound, Which from Alcluid to Panuelt did that border

bound.

Three sonnes he dying left, all vnder age; By meanes whereof, their vncle Vortigere Vsurpt the crowne, during their pupillage; Which th'Infants tutors gathering to feare, Them closely into Armorick did beare: Fordread of whom, and for those Picts annoyes, He sent to Germanie, straunge aid to reare, From whence eftsoones arriued here three hoyes Of Saxons, whom he for his safetie imployes.

60

Two brethren were their Capitains, which hight Hengist and Horsus, well approu'd in warre, And both of them men of renowmed might; Who making vantage of their civill larre, And of those forreiners, which came fromfarre, Grew great, and got large portions of land, That in the Realmecre long they stronger arre, Then they which sought at first their helping hand,

And Vortiger enforst the kingdome to aband.

66

But by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne, He is againe vnto his rule restord, And Hengist seeming sad, for that was donne, Received is to grace and new accord, Through his faire daughters face, and flattring word;

Soone after which, three hundred Lordes he slew Of British bloud, all sitting at his bord; Whose dolefull moniments who list to rew, Th'eternall markes of treason may at Stonheng vew. 67
By this the sonnes of Constantine, which fled,

Ambrose and Vther did ripe years attaine, And here arriving, strongly challenged The crowne, which Vortiger did long detaine: Who flying from his guilt, by them was slaine, And Hengist eke soone brought to shamefull

Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,
Tillthat through poyson stopped was his breath;
So now entombed lyes at Stoneheng by the
heath.

After him Vther, which Pendragon hight, Succeding There abruptly it did end, Without full point, or other Cesure right, As if the rest some wicked hand did rend, Or th'Authour selfe could not at least attend To finish it: that so vntimely breach

The Prince him selfe halfe seemeth to offend, Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach, And wonder of antiquitie long stopt his speach.

At last quite rauisht with delight, to heare The royall Ofspring of his natiue land, Crydeout, Deare countrey, Ohow dearely deare Ought thy remembraunce, and perpetuall band Be to thy foster Childe, that from thy hand Did commun breath and nouriture receaue? How brutish is it not to vnderstand, How much to her we owe, that all vs gaue, That gaue vnto vs all, what euer good we haue.

But Guyon all this while his booke did read, Ne yet has ended: for it was a great And ample volume, that doth far excead My leasure, so long leaues here to repeat: It told, how first Prometheus did create A man, of many partes from beasts deriued, And then stole fire from heauen, to animate His worke, for which he was by low depriued Of life him selfe, and hart-strings of an Ægle riued.

That man so made, he called *Elfe*, to weet Quick, the first authour of all Elfin kind: Who wandring through the world with wearie feet,
Did in the gardins of *Adonis* find
A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mind
To be no earthly wight, but either Spright,
Or Angell, th'authour of all woman kind;
Therefore a *Fay* he her according hight,
Of whom all *Faeryes* spring, and fetch their lignage right.

Of these a mightie people shortly grew,
And puissaunt kings, which all the world
warrayd,

And to them selves all Nations did subdew:
The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,
Was Elfin; him all India obayd,
And all that now America men call:
Next him was noble Elfinan, who layd
Cleopolis foundation first of all:
But Elfiline enclosed it with a golden wall.

His sonne was Elfinell, who ouercame
The wicked Gobbelines in bloudy field:
But Elfant was of most renowmed fame,
Who all of Christall did Panthea build:
Then Elfan, who two brethren gyants kild,
The one of which had two heads, th' other three:
Then Elfinor, who was in Magick skild;
He built by art vpon the glassy See
A bridge of bras, whose sound heauens thunder
seem'd to bee.

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd, And all their Ofspring, in their dew descents, Euen seuen hundred Princes, which maintaynd Withmightiedeedes their sundry gouernments; That were too long their infinite contents Here to record, ne much materiall: Yet should they be most famous moniments, And braue ensample, both of martiall, And ciuill rule to kings and states imperiall.

After all these Elficless did rayne,
The wise Elficless in great Maiestie,
Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,
And with rich spoiles and famous victorie,
Did high aduaunce the crowne of Faery:
He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon
The eldest brother did vintinely dy;
Whose emptie place the mightic Oberon
Doubly supplide, in spousall, and dominion.

Great was his power and glorie ouer all,
Which him before, that sacred seate d.d fill,
That yet remaines his wide memoriall:
He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,
Him to succeede therein, by his last will:
Fairer and nobler liueth none this howre,
Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill;
Therefore they Glorian call that glorious flowre
Long mayst thou Glorian liue, in glory and
great powre.

Beguild thus with delight of nouelties, And naturall desire of countreys state, So long they red in those antiquities, That how the time was fled, they quite forgate, Till gentle Alma seeing it so late, Perforce their studies broke, and them be-

To thinke, how supper did them long awaite. So halfe vnwilling from their bookes them

brought.

And fairely feasted, as so noble knights she ought.

# Cant. XI.

## 

The enimies of Temperaunce besiege her dwelling place: Prince Arthur them repelles, and fowle Maleger doth deface.

#### 

What warre so cruell, or what siege so sore, As that, which strong affections do apply Against the fort of reason euermore To bring the soule into captiuitie: Their force is fiercer through infirmitie Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage, And exercise most bitter tyranny Vpon the parts, brought into their bondage: No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.

But in a body, which doth freely yeeld His partes to reasons rule obedient, And letteth her that ought the scepter weeld, All happy peace and goodly gouernment Is setled there in sure establishment: There Alma like a virgin Oueene most bright. Doth florish in all beautie excellent: And to her guestes doth bount eous banket dight, Attempred goodly well for health and for delight.

Early before the Morne with cremosin ray, The windowes of bright heaven opened had, Through which into the world the dawning day Might looke, that maketh every creature glad, Vprose Sir Guyon, in bright armour clad, And to his purposed iourney him prepar'd: With him the Palmer eke in habit sad, Him selfe addrest to that adventure hard: So to the rivers side they both together far'd. And covetous aspectes, all cruell enimies.

Where them awaited ready at the ford The Ferriman, as Alma had behight, With his well rigged boate: They go abord, And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forth-

Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight. And fast the land behind them fled away. But let them pas, whiles wind and weather right Doserue their turnes: here I a while must stav. To see a cruell fight doen by the Prince this day.

For all so soone, as Guyon thence was gon Vpon his voyage with his trustie guide, That wicked band of villeins fresh begon That castle to assaile on euery side, And lay strong siege about it far and wide. So huge and infinite their numbers were, That all the land they under them did hide: So fowle and vgly, that exceeding feare Their visages imprest, when they approched neare.

Them in twelue troupes their Captain did dispart And round about in fittest steades did place, Where each might best offend his proper part. And his contrary object most deface, As every one seem'd meetest in that cace. Seuen of the same against the Castle gate, In strong entrenchments he did closely place, Which with incessaunt force and endlesse hate, They battred day and night, and entraunce did

The other fiue, fiue sundry wayes he set, Against the fiue great Bulwarkes of that pile, And vnto each a Bulwarke did arret. T'assayle with open force or hidden guile, In hope thereof to win victorious spoile. They all that charge did feruently apply, With greedie malice and importune toyle, And planted there their huge artillery, With which they dayly made most dreadfull battery.

The first troupe was a monstrous rablement Of fowle misshapen wights, of which some were Headedlike Owles, with beckes vncomely bent, Others like Dogs, others like Gryphons dreare, And some had wings, and some had clawes to

And every one of them had Lynces eyes, And every one did bow and arrowes beare: All those were lawlesse lustes, corrupt enuies, Those same against the bulwarke of the Sight Did lay strong siege, and battailous assault, Ne once did yield it respit day nor night, But soone as Tilan gan his head exault, And soone againe as he his light with hault, Their wicked engins they against it bent: That is each thing, by which the eyes may fault, But two then all more huge and violent, Beautie, and money, they that Bulwarke sorely rent.

The second Bulwarke was the *Hearing* sence, Gainst which the second troupe dessignment makes:

Deformed creatures, in straunge difference, Some having heads like Harts, some like to Snakes.

Some like wildBores laterouzd out of the brakes; Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamies, Leasings, backbytings, and vaine-glorious crakes.

Bad counsels, prayses, and false flatteries.

All those against that fort did bend their batteries.

Likewise that same third Fort, that is the Smell Of that third troupe was cruelly assayd: Whose hideousshapes were like to feends of hell, Somelike to hounds, somelike to Apes, dismayd, Some like to Puttockes, all in plumes arayd: All shap't according their conditions, For by those vgly formes weren pourtrayd, Foolish delights and fond abusions, Which do that sence besiege with light illusions.

And that fourth band, which cruell battry bent, Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the *Tast*, Was as the rest, a grysie rablement, Some mouth'd like greedy Oystriges, some fast Like loathly Toades, some fashioned in the wast Like swine; for so deformd is luxury, Surfeat, misdiet, and vnthriftie wast, Vaine feasts, and idle superfluity: All those this sences Fort assayle incessantly.

But the fift troupe most horrible of hew,
And fierce of force, was dreadfull to report:
ForsomelikeSnailes, somedid like spyders shew,
And some like vgly Vrchins thicke and short:
Cruelly they assayled that fift Fort,
Armed with darts of sensuall delight,
With stings of carnall lust, and strong effort
Of feeling pleasures, with which day and night
Against that same fift bulwarke they continued
fight.

Phusthese twelue troups with dreadfull puissance Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay, And euermore their hideous Ordinance Vpon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play, That now it gan to threaten neare decay: And euermore their wicked Capitaine Prouoked them the breaches to assay, Somtimes with threats, somtimes with hope of gaine.

Which by the ransack of that peece they should attaine.

On th'other side, th'assieged Castles ward
Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,
And many bold repulse, and many hard
Atchieuement wrought with perill and with
paine,

That goodly frame from ruine to sustaine: And those two brethren Giants did defend The walles so stoutly with their sturdie maine, That neuer entrance any durst pretend, But they to direfull death their groning ghosts did send.

The noble virgin, Ladie of the place, Was much dismayed with that dreadfull sight. For neuer was she in so cuill cace, Till that the Prince sceing her wofull plight, Gan her recomfort from so sad affright, Offring his seruice, and his dearest life For her defence, against that Carle to fight, Which was their chiefe and th'author of that strife:

She him remercied as the Patrone of her life.

Eftsoones himselfe in glitterand armes he dight, And his well proued weapons to him hent; So taking courteous conge he behight, Those gates to be vnbar'd, and forth he went. Faire mote he thee, the prowest and most gent. That euer brandished bright steele on hye: Whom soone as that vnruly rablement, With his gay Squire issuing did espy, They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling cry.

And therewith all attonce at him let fly
Their fluttring arrowes, thickeas flakes of snow,
And round about him flocke impetuously,
Like a great water flood, that tombling low
From the high mountaines, threats to ouerflow
With suddein fury all the fertile plaine,
And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw
A downe the streame, and all his vowes make
vaine,
[sustaine.]

Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may

Vpon his shield their heaped hayle he bore, And with his sword disperst the raskall flockes, Which fled a sunder, and him fell before, As withered leaves drop from their dried

When the wroth Western wind does reaue their And vnder neath him his courageous steed. The fierce Spumador trode them downelikedocks, The fierce Spumador borne of heavenly seed: Such as Laomedon of Phabus race did breed.

Which suddeine horrour and confused cry, When as their Captaine heard, in haste he vode. The cause to weet, and fault to remedy; Vpon a Tygre swift and fierce he rode. That as the winde ran vnderneath his lode. Whileshis long legsnighraught vnto the ground; Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode, But of such subtile substance and vnsound, That like a ghost he seem'd, whose graueclothes were vnbound.

And in his hand a bended bow was seene. And many arrowes vnder his right side, All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene, Headed with flint, and feathers bloudie dide, Such as the *Indians* in their quiuers hide; Those could be well direct and streight as line. And bid them strike the marke, which he had eyde,

Ne was there salue, ne was there medicine. That mote recure their wounds: so inly they did tine.

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke. His bodie leane and meagre as a rake, And skin all withered like a dryed rooke, Thereto as cold and drery as a Snake, That seem'd to tremble euermore, and quake: All in a canuas thin he was bedight, And girded with a belt of twisted brake. Vpon his head he wore an Helmet light. Made of a dead mans skull, that seem'd a ghastly sight.

Maleger was his name, and after him, There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags, With hoarie lockes all loose, and visage grim; Their feet vnshod, their bodies wrapt in rags, And both as swift on foot, as chased Stags; And yet the one her other legge had lame, Which with a staffe, all full of litle snags She did support, and Impotence her name: But th'other was Impatience, arm'd with raging flame.

Soone as the Carle from farre the Prince espyde, Glistring in armes and warlike ornament. His Beast he felly prickt on either syde,

And his mischieuous bow full readie bent. With which at him a cruell shaft he sent: But he was warie, and it warded well Voon his shield, that it no further went, But to the ground the idle quarrell fell:

Then he another and another did expell.

Which to preuent, the Prince his mortall speare Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did

To be auenged of that shot whyleare: But he was not so hardie to abide That bitter stownd, but turning quicke aside His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare: Whom to pursue, the Infant after hide. So fast as his good Courser could him beare, But labour lost it was, to weene approch him neare.

For as the winged wind his Tigre fled, That vew of eye could scarse him ouertake. Ne scarse his feet on ground were seene to tred: Through hils and dales he speedie way did make.

Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake, And in his flight the villein turn'd his face, (As wonts the Tartar by the Caspian lake, When as the Russian him in fight does chace) Vnto his Tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace, Still as the greedy knight nigh to him drew, And oftentimes he would relent his pace, That him his foe more fiercely should pursew: Who when his vncouth manner he did vew. He gan auize to follow him no more, But keepe his standing, and his shafte eschew, Vntill he quite had spent his perlous store, And then assayle him fresh, ere he could shift for more.

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe, And to him brought, fresh battell to renew: Which he espying, cast her to restraine From yielding succour to that cursed Swaine, And her attaching, thought her hands to tye; But soone as him dismounted on the plaine, That other Hag did farre away espy Binding her sister, she to him ran hastily.

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent, Him backwardouerthrew, and downe him stayd With their rude hands and griesly graplement. Till that the villein comming to their ayd, Vpon him fell, and lode vpon him layd; Full litle wanted, but he had him slaine, And of the battell balefull end had made, Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine, And commen to his reskew, ere his bitter bane.

30 - 4) 11/4

So greatest and most glorious thing on ground May often need the helpe of weaker hand; So feeble is mans state, and life vnsound, That in assurance it may neuer stand, Till it dissolued be from earthly band. Proofe be thou Prince, the prowest man aliue, And noblest borne of all in *Britayne* land; Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely driue, That had not grace thee blest, thou shouldest not surviue.

31

The Squire arriving, fiercely in his armes Snatcht first the one, and then the other Iade, His chiefest lets and authors of his harmes, Andthemperforcewithheldwiththreatned blade, Least that his Lord they should behind inuade; The whiles the Prince prickt with reprochfull shame,

As one awakt out of long slombring shade, Reuiuing thought of glorie and of fame, Vnited all his powres to purge himselfe from blame.

Like as a fire, the which in hollow caue
Hathlong bene vnderkept, and downe supprest,
With murmurous disdaine doth inly raue,
And grudge, in so streight prison to be prest,
At last breakes forth with furious vnrest,
And striues to mount vnto his natiue seat;
All that did earst it hinder and molest,
It now deuoures with flames and scorching heat,
And carries into smoake with rage and horror
great.

So mightily the Briton Prince him rouzd
Out of his hold, and broke his caitiue bands,
And as a Beare whom angry curres haue touzd,
Hauing off shakt them, and escapt their hands,
Becomes more fell, and all that him withstands
Treads downe and ouerthrowes. Now had
the Carle

Alighted from his Tigre, and his hands Discharged of his bow and deadly quar'le, To seize vpon his foe flat lying on the marle. SPENSER Which now him turnd to disauantage deare; For neither can he fly, nor other harme, But trust vnto his strength and manhood meare. Sith now he is farre from his monstrous swarme, And of his weapons did himselfe disarme. The knight yet wrothfull for his late disgrace. Fiercely aduaunst his valorous right arme, And him so sore smote with his yron mace, That groueling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

Well weened he, that field was then his owne,
And all his labour brought to happie end,
When suddein vp the villein ouerthrowne,
Out of his swowne arose, fresh to contend,
And gan himselfe to second battell bend,
As hurt he had not bene. Thereby there lay
An huge great stone, which stood vpon one end,
And had not bene remoued many a day;
Some land-marke seem'd to be, or signe of
sundry way.

26

The same he snatcht, and with exceeding sway Threw at his foe, who was right well aware To shunne the engin of his meant decay; It booted not to thinke that throw to beare, But ground he gaue, and lightly leapt areare: Eft fierce returning, as a Faulcon faire That once hath failed of her souse full neare, Remounts againe into the open aire, And vnto better fortune doth her selfe prepaire

So braue returning, with his brandisht blade, He to the Carle himselfe againe addrest, And strooke at him so sternely, that he made An open passage through his riuen brest, That halfe the steele behind his back did rest; Which drawing backe, he looked euermore When the hart bloud should gush out of his chest,

Or his dead corse should fall vpon the flore; But his dead corse vpon the flore fell nathemore.

38

Ne drop of bloud appeared shed to bee, All were the wounde so wide and wonderous, Thatthrough his carkasseone might plainely see Halfe in a maze with horror hideous, And halfe in rage, to be deluded thus, Againe through both the sides he strooke him quight.

That made his spright to grone full piteous Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright, But freshly as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

39 Thereat he smitten was with great affright, And trembling terror did his hart apall, Ne wist he, what to thinke of that same sight. Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all; He doubted, least it were some magicall Illusion, that did beguile his sense, Or wandring ghost, that wanted funerall, Or aerie spirit vnder false pretence. Or hellish feend raysd vp through diuelish science.

His wonder farre exceeded reasons reach. That he began to doubt his dazeled sight, And oft of error did himselfe appeach: Flesh without bloud, a person without spright, Wounds without hurt, a bodiewithout might, That could doe harme, yet could not harmed

That could not die, yet seem'd a mortall wight, That was most strong in most infirmitee; Like did he neuer heare, like did he neuer see.

A while he stood in this astonishment, Yet would he not for all his great dismay Giue ouer to effect his first intent. And th'vtmost meanes of victorie assay, Or th'vtmost issew of his owne decay. His owne good sword Morddure, that neuer fayld

At need, till now, he lightly threw away, And his bright shield, that nought him now

And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

Twixt his two mightie armes him vo he snatcht. And crusht his carkasse so against his brest, That the disdainfull soule he thence dispatcht, And th'idle breath all vtterly exprest: Tho when he felt him dead, a downe he kest The lumpish corse vnto the senselesse grownd: Adowne he kest it with so puissant wrest, That backe againe it did aloft rebound, And gaue against his mother earth a gronefull sownd.

As when *Ioues* harnesse-bearing Bird from hie Stoupes at a flying heron with proud disdaine, The stone-dead quarrey fals so forciblie. That it rebounds against the lowly plaine, A second fall redoubling backe againe. Then thought the Princeall perill sure was past, And that he victor onely did remaine; No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast Gan heap huge strokes on him as ere he downe was cast.

44

Nigh his wits end then woxe th'amazed knight. And thought his labour lost and trauell vaine. Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight: Yet life he saw, and felt his mightie maine. That whiles he marueild still, did still him paine: For thy he gan some other wayes aduize. How to take life from that dead-living swaine. Whom still he marked freshly to arize From th'earth, and from her wombe new spirits to reprize.

He then remembred well, that had bene sayd, Howth' Earthhismother was, and first him bore: She eke so often, as his life decayd. Did life with vsury to him restore, And rayed him vp much stronger then before. So soone as he vnto her wombe did fall; Therefore to ground he would him cast no more. Ne him commit to grave terrestriall. But beare him farre from hope of succour vauall.

Tho vp he caught him twixt his puissant hands, And having scruzd out of his carrion corse The lothfull life, now loosd from sinfull bands, Vpon his shoulders carried him perforse Aboue three furlongs, taking his full course, Vntill he came vnto a standing lake; Him thereinto he threw without remorse, Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsake; So end of that Carles dayes, and his owne paines did make.

Which when those wicked Hags from farre did spy.

Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands. And th'one of them with dreadfull yelling cry, Throwing away her broken chaines and bands, And having quencht her burning fier brands, Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lake: But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands. One of *Malegers* cursed darts did take, So riu'd her trembling hart, and wicked end did make.

48

Thus now alone he conquerour remaines: Tho comming to his Squire, that kept his steed, Thought to have mounted, but his feeble vaines Him faild thereto, and serued not his need, Through losse of bloud, which from his wounds did bleed.

That he began to faint, and life decay: But his good Squire him helping vp with speed, With stedfast hand upon his horse did stay. And led him to the Castle by the beaten way.

Where many Groomes and Squiers readie were, To take him from his steed full tenderly. And eke the fairest Alma met him there With balme and wine and costly spicery, To comfort him in his infirmity: Eftsoones she caused him up to be conuayd, And of his armes despoyled easily. In sumptuous bed she made him to be layd, And all the while his wounds were dressing, by hun stavd.

# Cant. XII.

## 

Guvon, by Palmers governance, passing through perils great, Doth overthrow the Bowre of blisse. and Acrasie defeat.

#### 

Now gins this goodly frame of Temperance Fairely to rise, and her adorned hed To pricke of highest praise forth to aduance, Formerly grounded, and fast setteled On firme foundation of true bountihed: And this braue knight, that for that vertue fights.

Now comes to point of that same perilous sted. Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall delights. Mongst thousand dangers, and ten thousand magick mights.

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has, Ne euer land beheld, ne liuing wight, Ne ought saue perill, still as he did pas: The when appeared the third Morrow bright, Vpon the waves to spred her trembling light, An hideous roaring farre away they heard, That all their sense, filled with affright, And streight they saw the raging surges reard Vp to the skyes, that them of drowning made affeard.

Said then the Boteman, Palmer stere aright, And keepe an euen course; for yonder way We needes must passe (God do vs well acquight,)

That is the Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say, That deepe engorgeth all this worldes pray: Which having swallowd vp excessively, He soone in vomit vp againe doth lay, And belcheth forth his superfluity. That all the seas for feare do seeme away to fly, At last them driven hath to this despairefull drift.

On th'other side an hideous Rocke is pight, Of mightie Magnes stone, whose craggie clift Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight. Ouer the waves his rugged armes doth lift, And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift On who so commeth nigh; yet nigh it drawes All passengers, that none from it can shift: For whiles they fly that Gulfes deuouring iawes, They on this rock are rent, and sunck in helplesse wawes.

Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes, Vntill they nigh vnto that Gulfe arrive, Wherestreamemore violent and greedy growes: Then he with all his puissance doth striue To strike his oares, and mightily doth drive The hollow vessell through the threatfull wave, Which gaping wide, to swallow them aliue, In th'huge abysse of his engulfing graue, Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terror raue.

They passing by, that griesly mouth did see, Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe, That seem'd more horrible then hell to bee. Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe. Through which the damned ghosts doen often

Backe to the world, bad livers to torment: But nought that falles into this direfull deepe, Ne that approcheth nigh the wide descent, May backe returne, but is condemned to be drent.

On th'other side, they saw that perilous Rocke, Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate. On whose sharpe clifts the ribs of vessels broke, Andshiueredships, which had bene wrecked late, Yet stuck, with carkasses exanimate Of such, as having all their substance spent In wanton ioyes, and lustes intemperate, Did afterwards make shipwracke violent, Both of their life, and fame for euer fowly blent.

For thy, this hight The Rocke of vile Reproch, A daungerous and detestable place, To which nor fish nor fowle did once approch, But yelling Meawes, with Seagulles hoarse and

And Cormoyrants, with birds of rauenous race, Which still sate waiting on that wastfull clift, For spoyle of wretches, whose vnhappie cace, After lost credite and consumed thrift,

The Palmer seeing them in safetie past,
Thus said; Behold th'ensamples in our sights,
Of lustfull luxurie and thriftlesse wast:
What now is left of miserable wights,
Which spent their looser daies in lewd delights,
But shame and sad reproch, here to be red,
By these rent reliques, speaking their ill plights?
Let all that liue, hereby be counselled,
To shunne Rocke of Reproch, and it as death to
dred.

So forth they rowed, and that Ferryman With his stiffeoares did brush the sea so strong, That the hoare waters from his frigot ran, And the light bubbles daunced all along, Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong. At last farre off they many Islands spy, On euery side floting the floods emong: Then said the knight, Loe I the land descry, Therefore old Syre thy course do thereunto apply.

That may not be, said then the Ferryman
Least we vnweeting hap to be fordonne:
For those same Islands, seeming now and than,
Are not firme lande, nor any certein wonne,
But straggling plots, which to and fro do ronne
In the wide waters: therefore are they hight
The wandring Islands. Therefore doe them
shonne;

For they have oft drawne many a wandring wight

Into most deadly daunger and distressed plight.

# change as scen.

Yet well they seeme to him, that farre doth vew, Both faire and fruitfull, and the ground dispred With grassie greene of delectable hew, And the tall trees with leaues apparelled, Aredeckt with blossomes dyde in white and red, That mote the passengers thereto allure; But whosoeuer once hath fastened His foot thereon, may neuer it recure, But wandreth euer more vncertein and vnsure.

As th'Isle of Delos whylome men report
Amid th' Aegœan sea long time did stray,
Ne made for shipping any certaine port,
Till that Latona traueiling that way,
Flying from Iunoes wrath and hard assay,
Of her faire twins was there deliuered,
Which afterwards did rule the night and day;
Thenceforth it firmely was established,
And for Apolloes honor highly herried.

They to him hearken, as beseemeth meete,
And passe on forward: so their way does ly,
That one of those same Islands, which doe fleet
In the wide sea, they needes must passen by,
Which seemd so sweet and pleasant to the eye,
That it would tempt a man to touchen there:
Vpon the banck they sitting did espy
A daintie damzell, dressing of her heare,
By whom a litle skippet floting did appeare.

She them espying, loud to them can call,
Bidding them nigher draw vnto the shore;
For she had cause to busie them withall;
And therewith loudly laught: But nathemore
Would they once turne, but kept on as afore;
Which when she saw, she left her lockes vndight,

And running to her boat withouten ore From the departing land it launched light, And after them did driue with all her power and might.

Whom ouertaking, she in merry sort
Them gan to bord, and purpose diuersly,
Now faining dalliance and wanton sport,
Now throwing forth lewd words immodestly;
Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly
Her to rebuke, for being loose and light
Which not abiding, but more scornefully
Scoffing at him, that did her iustly wite,
She turnd her bote about, and from them rowed
quite.

That was the wanton Phædria, which late
Did ferry him ouer the Idle lake:
Whom nought regarding, they kept on their
gate,
And all her vaine allurements did forsake,
When them the wary Boateman thus bespake;
Here now behoueth vs well to auyse,
And of our safetie good heede to take;
For here before a perlous passage lyes,
Where many Mermayds haunt, making false
melodies.

But by the way, there is a great Quicksand, And a whirlepoole of hidden ieopardy, Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an euen hand; For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly Scarse had he said, when hard at hand theyspy That quicksand nigh with water couered; But by the checked waue they did descry

τ8

It plaine, and by the sea discoloured: It called was the quicksand of *Vnthriftyhed*.

19 They passing by, a goodly Ship did see. Laden from far with precious merchandize, And brauely furnished, as ship might bee. Which through great disauenture, or mesprize, Her selfe had runne into that hazardize: Whose mariners and merchants with much toyle, Labour'd in vaine, to have recur'd their prize, And the rich wares to saue from pitteous spoyle. But neither toyle nor trauell might her backe recoyle.

On th'other side they see that perilous Poole, That called was the Whirlebook of decay. In which full many had with haplesse doole Beene suncke, of whom no memorie did stay: Whose circled waters rapt with whirling sway, Like to a restlesse wheele, still running round, Did couet, as they passed by that way To draw their boate within the vtmost bound Of his wide *Labyrinth*, and then to have them dround.

But th'heedfull Boateman strongly forth did stretch

His brawnie armes, and all his body straine, That th'vtmost sandy breach they shortly fetch, Whiles the dred daunger does behind remaine. Suddeine they see from midst of all the Maine, The surging waters like a mountaine rise, And the great sea puft vp with proud disdaine, To swell aboue the measure of his guise, As threatning to deuoure all, that his powre despise.

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore Outragiously, as they enraged were, Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before His whirling charet, for exceeding feare: For not one puffe of wind there did appeare, That all the three thereat woxe much afrayd, Vnweeting, what such horrourstraungedidreare. Eftsoones they saw an hideous hoast arrayd, Of huge Sea monsters, such as liuing sence dismayd.

Most vgly shapes, and horrible aspects. Such as Dame Nature selfe mote feare to see, Or shame, that euer should so fowle defects From her most cunning hand escaped bee; All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee: Spring-headed Hydraes, and sea-shouldring Whales.

Great whirlpooles, which all fishes make to flee. Bright Scolopendraes, arm'd with siluer scales, Mighty Monoceros, with immeasured tayles.

The dreadfull Fish, that hath deseru'd the name Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew, The griesly Wasserman, that makes his game The flying ships with swiftnesse to pursew, The horrible Sea-sature, that doth shew His fearefull face in time of greatest storme. Huge Ziffius, whom Mariners eschew No lesse, then rockes, (as trauellers informe.) And greedy Rosmarines with visages deforme.

All these, and thousand thousands many more, And more deformed Monsters thousand fold. With dreadfull noise, and hollow rombling rore. Came rushing in the fomy waves enrold Which seem'd to fly for feare, them to behold: Ne wonder, if these did the knight appall; For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold, Be but as bugs to fearen babes withall, Compared to the creatures in the seas entrall.

Feare nought, (then said the Palmer well auiz'd;) For these same Monsters are not these in deed, But are into these fearefull shapes disguiz'd By that same wicked witch, to worke vs dreed, And draw from on this journey to proceede. The lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye, He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed. And all that dreadfull Armie fast gan flye Into great Tethys bosome, where they hidden lye.

Quit from that daunger, forth their course thev And as they went, they heard a ruefull cry Of one, that wayld and pittifully wept,

That through the sea the resounding plaints did fly: At last they in an Island did espy

A seemely Maiden, sitting by the shore, That with great sorrow and sad agony. Seemed some great misfortune to deplore, And lowd to them for succour called euermore.

Which Guyon hearing, streight his Palmer bad, To stere the boate towards that dolefull Mayd, That he might know, and ease her sorrow sad: Who him auizing better, to him sayd; Faire Sir, be not displeasd, if disobayd: For ill it were to hearken to her cry; For she is inly nothing ill apayd, But onely womanish fine forgery, Yourstubborne hart t'affect with fraile infirmity.

To which when she your courage hath inclind Through foolish pitty, then her guilefull bayt She will embosome deeper in your mind, And for your ruine at the last awayt. The knight was ruled, and the Boatemanstrayt Held on his course with stayed stedfastnesse, Ne cuer shruncke, ne euer sought to bayt His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse, But with his oares did sweepe the watry wildernesse.

And now they nigh approched to the sted,
Where as those Mermayds dwelt: it was a still
And calmy bay, on th'one side sheltered
With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill,
On th'other side an high rocke toured still,
That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they
made,

And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill:
There those five sisters had continuall trade,
And vsd to bath themselves in that deceiptfull
shade.

They were faire Ladies, till they fondly striu'd With th'Heliconian maides for maistery; Of whom they ouer-comen, were depriu'd Of their proud beautie, and th'one moyity Transform'd to fish, for their bold surquedry, But th'ypper halfe their hew retained still, And their sweet skill in wonted melody; Which euer after they abusd to ill, T'allure weake trauellers, whom gotten they did kill.

So now to *Guyon*, as he passed by,
Their pleasaunt tunes they sweetly thus applide;

O thou faire sonne of gentle Faery,
That art in mighty armes most magnifide
Aboue all knights, that euer battell tride,
O turne thy rudder hither-ward a while:
Here may thy storme-bet vessell safely ride;
This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,
The worlds sweet In, from paine and wearisome turmoyle.

With that the rolling sea resounding soft, In his big base them fitly answered, And on the rocke the waues breaking aloft, A solemne Meane vnto them measured. The whiles sweet Zephirus lowd whisteled His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony; Which Guyons senses softly tickeled, That he the boateman bad row easily, Andlethim heare some part of their rare melody.

But him the Palmer from that vanity,
With temperate aduice discounselled,
That they it past, and shortly gan descry
The land, to which their course they leueled;
When suddeinly a grosse fog ouer spred
With his dull vapour all that desert has,
And heauens chearefull face enueloped,
That all things one, and one as nothing was,
And this great Vniuerse seemd one confused

Thereat they greatly were dismayd, ne wist How.to direct their way in darkenesse wide, But feard to wander in that wastfull mist, For tombling into mischiefe vnespide. Worse is the daunger hidden, then descride. Suddeinly an innumerable flight Ofharmefuil fowlesaboutthem fluttering, cride, Andwiththeir wickedwings them oft didsmight, And sore annoyed, groping in that griesly night.

Euen all the nation of vnfortunate
And fatall birds about them flocked were,
Such as by nature men abhorre and hate,
The ill-faste Owle, deaths dreadfull messengere,
The hoars Night-rauen, trump of c'olefull drere,
The lether-winged Bat, dayes enimy,
The ruefull Strich, still waiting on the bere,
The Whistlershrill, that who so heares, doth dy,
Tae hellish Harpies, prophets of sad destiny.

All those, and all that else does horrour breed, About them flew, and fild their sayles with feare: Yet stayd they not, but forward did proceed, Whiles th'one did row, and th'other stifly steare;

Till that at last the weather gan to cleare, And the faire land it selfe did plainly show. Said then the Palmer, Lo where does appeare The sacred soile, where all our perils grow; Therefore, Sir knight, your ready armes about you throw.

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke, The whiles the nimble boate so well her sped, That withher crooked keele the lands he strooke, Then forth the noble Guyon sallied, And his sage Palmer, that him gouerned; But th'other by his boate behind did stay. They marched fairly forth, of nought ydred, Both firmely armd for euery hard assay, With constancy and care, gainst daunger and dismay.

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing Of many beasts, that roard outrageously, As if that hungers point, or Venus sting Had them enraged with fell surquedry; Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily, Vntill they came in vew of those wild beasts: Who all attonce, gaping full greedily, And rearing fiercely their vpstarting crests, Ran towards, to deuoure those vnexpected guests.

4

But soone as they approcht with deadly threat, The Palmer ouer them his staffe vpheld, Hismighty staffe, that could all charmes defeat: Eftsoones their stubborne courages were queld. And high aduaunced crests downe meekely feld, In stead of fraying, they them selues did feare, And trembled, as them passing they beheld: Such wondrous powredid in that staffe appeare, All monsters to subdew to him, that did it beare.

41

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly, Of which Caduceus whilome was made, Caduceus the rod of Mercury, With which he wonts the Stygian realmes

inuade,

Through ghastly horrour, and eternall shade; Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage, And *Oreus* tame, whom nothing can perswade, And rule the *Furyes*, when they most do rage: Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer

sage.

42

Thence passing forth, they shortly do arriue, Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate; A place pickt out by choice of best aliue, That natures worke by art can imitate: In which what cuer in this worldly state Is sweet, and pleasing vnto liuing sense, Or that may dayntiest fantasic aggrate, Was poured forth with plentifull dispence, Andmade there to abound with lauish affluence.

43

Goodly it was enclosed round about,
Aswell their entred guestes to keepe within,
As those viruly beasts to hold without;
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin;
Nought feard their force, that fortilage to win,
But wisedomes power, and temperatures might,
By which the mightlest things efforced bin:
And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce
light,

Rather for pleasure, then for battery or fight.

Yt framed was of precious yuory,
That seemd a worke of admirable wit;
And therein all the famous history
Of *Iason* and *Medwa* was ywrit;
Her mighty charmes, her furious louing

Her mighty charmes, her furious louing fit, His goodly conquest of the golden fleece, His falsed faith, and loue too lightly flit, The wondred *Argo*, which in venturous peece

First through the Euxine seas bore all the flowr of Greece.

Ye might haue seene the frothy billowes fry Vnder the ship, as thorough them she went, That seemd the waues were into yuory, Or yuory into the waues were sent; And other where the snowy substaunce sprent With vermell, like the boyes bloud therein shed, A pitcous spectacle did represent, And otherwhiles with gold besprinkeld; Yt seemd th'enchaunted flame, which did

It seemd th'enchaunted flame, which die Creusa wed.

reusa mea.

46

All this, and more might in that goodly gate Be red; that euer open stood to all, Which thither came: but in the Porch there sate

A comely personage of stature tall, And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall, That trauellers to him seemd to entize; His looser garment to the ground did fall, And flew about his heeles in wanton wize, Not fit for speedy pace, or manly exercize.

4

They in that place him Genius did call:
Not that celestiall powre, to whom the care
Of life, and generation of all
That liues, pertaines in charge particulare,
Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,
And straunge phantomes doth let vs oft forsee,
And oft of secret ill bids vs beware:
That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see,
Yeteach doth in him selfe it well perceiue to bee.

48

Therefore a God him sage Antiquity
Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call:
But\_this same was to that quite contrary,
The foe of life, that good enuyes to all,
That secretly doth vs procure to fall,
Through guilefull semblaunts, which he makes
vs see.

He of this Gardin had the gouernall, And Pleasures porter was deuizd to bee, Holding a staffe in hand for more formalitee. With diuerse flowres he daintily was deckt,
And strowed round about, and by his side
A mighty Mazer bowle of wine was set,
As if it had to him bene sacrifide;
Wherewith all new-come guests he gratifide:
So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by:
But he his idle curtesie defide,
And ouerthrew his bowle disdainfully;
And broke his staffe, with which he charmed semblants sly.

Thus being entred, they behold around
A large and spacious plaine, on every side
Strowed with pleasauns, whose faire grassy
ground

Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide With all the ornaments of Floraes pride, Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride Did decke her, and too lauishly adorne, When forth from virgin bowre she comes in th'early morne.

Thereto the Heauens alwayes Iouiall,
Lookt on them louely, still in stedfast state,
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall,
Their tender buds or leaues to violate,
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate
T'afflict the creatures, which therein did dwell,
But the milde aire with season moderate
Gently attempred, and disposd so well,
That still it breathed forthsweet spirit and holesome smell.

More sweet and holesome, then the pleasaunt

Of Rhodope, on which the Nimphe, that bore A gyaunt babe, her selfe for gricfe did kill; Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of yore Faire Daphne Phabus hart with loue did gore; Or Ida, where the Gods lou'd to repaire, When euer they their heauenly bowres forlore; Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses faire; OrEden selfe, if ought with Eden mote compaire.

Much wondred Guyon at the faire aspect
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight
To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect,
But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,
Bridling his will, and maistering his might:
Till that he came vnto another gate;
No gate, but like one, being goodly dight
With boughes and braunches, which did broad
dilate

Their clasping armes, in wanton wreathings intricate.

So fashioned a Porch with rare deuice, Archt ouer head with an embracing vine, Whosebouncheshanging downe, seemed to entice All passers by, to tast their lushious wine, And did themselues into their hands incline, As freely offering to be gathered: Some deepe empurpled as the Hyacint, Some as the Rubine, laughing sweetly red, Some like faire Emeraudes, not yet well ripened.

And them amongst, some were of burnisht gold, So made by art, to beautifie the rest, Whichdidthemseluesemongst the leaues enfold, As lurking from the vew of couetous guest, That the weake bowes, with so rich load opprest, Did bow adowne, as ouer-burdened. Vnder that Porch a comely dame did rest, Clad in faire weedes, but fowle disordered, And garments loose, that seemd vnmeet for womanhed.

In her left hand a Cup of gold she held,
And with her right the riper fruit did reach,
Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,
Into her cup she scruzd, with daintie breach
Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,
That so faire wine presse made the wine more
sweet:

Thereof she vsd to give to drinke to each, Whom passing by she happened to meet: It was her guise, all Straungers goodly so to greet.

So she to Guyon offred it to tast;
Who taking it out of her tender hond.
The cup to ground did violently cast,
That all in peeces it was broken fond,
And with the liquor stained all the lond:
Whereat Excesse exceedingly was wroth,
Yet no'te the same amend, ne yet withstond,
But suffered him to passe, all were she loth;
Who nought regarding her displeasure forward
goth.

There the most daintie Paradise on ground, It selfe doth offer to his sober eye, In which all pleasures plenteously abound, And none does others happinesse enuye: The painted flowres, the trees vpshooting hye, The dales for shade, the hilles for breathing space,

The trembling groues, the Christall running by; And that, which all faire workes doth most

The art, which all that wrought, appeared in no place.

One would have thought, (so cunningly, the rude, And scorned parts were mingled with the fine,) That nature had for wantonesse ensude Art, and that Art at nature did repine; So striuing each th' other to vndermine. Each did the others worke more beautifie: So diff'ring both in willes, agreed in fine: So all agreed through sweete diversitie, This Gardin to adorne with all varietie.

And in the midst of all, a fountaine stood, Of richest substaunce, that on earth might bee. So pure and shiny, that the siluer flood Through every channell running one might see: Most goodly it with curious imageree Was ouer-wrought, and shapes of naked boyes, Of which some seemd with lively iollitee, To fly about, playing their wanton toyes, Whilest others did them selues embay in liquid ioyes.

And ouer all, of purest gold was spred, A trayle of yuie in his natiue hew: For the rich mettall was so coloured, That wight, who did not well auis'd it vew, Would surely deeme it to be yuie trew: Low his lasciulous armes adown did creepe, That themselves dipping in the silver dew, Their fleecy flowres they tenderly did steepe, Which drops of Christall seemd for wantones to weepe.

Infinit streames continually did well Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to sec, The which into an ample lauer fell, And shortly grew to so great quantitie, That like a little lake it seemd to bee; Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight, That through the waves one might the bottom

All pau'd beneath with Iaspar shining bright, That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle vpright.

63

And all the margent round about was set, With shady Laurell trees, thence to defend The sunny beames, which on the billowes bet, And those which therein bathed, mote offend. As Guyon hapned by the same to wend, Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde, Which therein bathing, seemed to contend, And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde, Their dainty parts from vew of any, which them eyde.

64

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight Aboue the waters, and then downe againe Her plong, as ouer maistered by might. Where both awhile would couered remaine. And each the other from to rise restraine: The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a vele. So through the Christall waves appeared plaine: Then suddeinly both would themselves vnhele. And th'amarous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes reuele.

As that faire Starre, the messenger of morne, His deawy face out of the sea doth reare: Or as the Cyprian goddesse, newly borne Of th'Oceans fruitfull froth, did first appeare: Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare Christalline humour dropped downe apace. Whom such when Guyonsaw, he drew himneare, And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace, His stubborne brest gan secret pleasaunce to

embrace.

The wanton Maidens him espying, stood Gazing a while at his vnwonted guise; Then th'one her selfe low ducked in the flood, Abasht, that her a straunger did a vise: But th'other rather higher did arise, And her two lilly paps aloft displayd, And all, that might his melting hart entise To her delights, she vnto him bewrayd: The rest hid vnderneath, him more desirous

made.

With that, the other likewise vp arose, And her faire lockes, which formerly were bownd Vp in one knot, she low adowne did lose: Which flowing long and thick, her cloth'd arownd.

And th'vuorie in golden mantle gownd: So that faire spectacle from him was reft, Yet that, which reft it, no lesse faire was found: So hid in lockes and waves from lookers theft. Nought but her louely face she for his looking left.

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall, That blushing to her laughter gaue more grace, And laughter to her blushing, as did fall: Now when they spide the knight to slacke his

Them to behold, and in his sparkling face The secret signes of kindled lust appeare, Their wanton meriments they did encreace, And to him beckned, to approch more neare, And shewd him many sights, that courage cold could reare.

•

69 On which when gazing him the Palmer saw, He much rebukt those wandring eyes of his, And counseld well, him forward thence did

Now are they come nigh to the *Boure of blis*Of her fond fauorites so nam'd amis:
When thus the Palmer; Now Sir, well auise;
For here the end of all our trauell is:
Here wonnes Acrasia, whom we must surprise,
Else she will slip away, and all our drift despise.

70

Eftsoones they heard a most melodious sound, Of all that mote delight a daintie care, Such as attonce might not on liuing ground, Saue in this Paradise, be heard elswhere: Right hard it was, for wight, which did it heare, To read, what manner musicke that mote bee: For all that pleasing is to liuing care, Was there consorted in one harmonee, Birdes, voyces, instruments, windes, waters, all agree.

71

The ioyous birdes shrouded in chearefull shade, Their notes vnto the voyce attempred sweet; Th'Angelicall soft trembling voyces made To th'instruments diuine respondence meet: The siluer sounding instruments did meet With the base nurmure of the waters fall: The waters fall with difference discreet, Now soft, now loud, vnto the wind did call: The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.

72

There, whence that Musick seemed heard to bee, Was the faire Witch her selfe now solacing, With a new Louer, whom through sorceree And witchcraft, she from farredid thither bring: There she had him now layd a slombering. In secret shade, after long wanton ioyes: Whilst round about them pleasauntly did sing Many faire Ladies, and lascinious boyes, That euer mixt their song with light licentious toyes.

And all that while, right ouer him she hong, With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight, As seeking medicine, whence she was stong, Or greedily depasturing delight:
And oft inclining downe with kisses light, For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd, And through his humid eyes did sucke his

Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd: Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his cases he rewd.

spright,

The whiles some one did chaunt this louely lay; Ah see, who so faire thing doest faine to see, In springing flowre the image of thy day; Ah see the Virgin Rose, how sweetly shee Doth first peepe forth with bashfull modestee, That fairer seemes, the lesse ye see her may; Lo see soone after, how more bold and free

Lo see soone after, how more bold and free Her bared bosome she doth broad display; Loe see soone after, how she fades, and falles away.

So passeth, in the passing of a day, Of mortall life the leafe, the bud, the flowre, Ne more doth flourish after first decay, That earst was sought to decke both bed and bowre.

Of many a Ladie, and many a Paramowre:
Gather therefore the Rose, whilest yet is prime,
Forsoonecomes age, that willher pridedeflowre:
dather the Rose of loue, whilest yet is time,
Whilest louing thou mayst loued be with equall
crime.

He ceast, and then gan all the quire of birdes Their diuerse notes t'attune vnto his lay, As in approuance of his pleasing words. The constant paire heard all, that he did say, Yet swarued not, but kept their forward way, Throughmany couert groucs, and thickets close, In which they creeping did at last display That wanton Ladie, with her louer lose, Whose sleepie headshe in her lap did soft dispose.

Vpon a bed of Roses she was layd,
As faint through leat, or dight to pleasant sin,
And was arayd, or rather disarayd,
All in a vele of silke and siluer thin,
That hid no whit her alablaster skin,
Butrathershewdmore white, if more might bee:
More subtile web \*Arachne\* cannot spin,
Nor the fine nets, which oft we wouen see
Of scorched deaw, do not in th'aire more lightly
flee

Her snowy brest was bare to readic spoyle Of hungry cies, which n'ote therewith be fild, Andyet through languour of her late sweet toyle, Few drops, more cleare then Nectar, forth distild,

That like pure Orient perles adowne it trild And her faire eyes sweet smyling in delight, Moystened their fierie beames, with which she thrild

Fraile harts, yet quenched not; like starry light Which sparckling on the silent waues, does seeme more bright.

The young man sleeping by her, seemd to bee Some goodly swayne of honorable place, That certes it great pittle was to see Him his nobilitie so foule deface; A sweet regard, and amiable grace, Mixed with manly sternnesse did appeare Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face, And on his tender lips the downy heare Did now but freshly spring, and silken blossomes beare.

80 ... : 31 - : - - - -

His warlike armes, the idle instruments Of sleeping praise, were hong vpon a tree, And his braue shield, full of old moniments. Was fowly ra'st, that none the signesmight see; Ne for them, he for honour cared hee, Ne ought, that did to his aduauncement tend, But in lewd loues, and wastfull luxuree, His dayes, his go ods, his bodie he did spend O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend.

81

The noble Elfe, and carefull Palmer drew Sonighthem, minding nought, but lustfull game, That suddein forth they on them rusht, and threw

A subtile net, which onely for the same
The skilfull Palmer formally did frame.
So held them vnder fast, the whiles the rest
Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.
The faire Enchauntresse, so vnwares opprest,
Tryde all her arts, and all her sleights, thence
out to wrest.

- 8:

And eke her louer stroue: but all in vaine;
For that same net so cunningly was wound,
That neither guile, nor force might it distraine.
They tooke them both, and both them strongly
bound [found:
In captiue bandes, which there they readie
But her in chaines of adamant he tyde;
For nothing else might keepe her safe and
sound;

But *Verdant* (so he hight) he soone vntyde, And counsellsage in steed thereof to himapplyde.

But all those pleasant bowresand Pallace braue, Guyon broke downe, with rigour pittilesse; Ne ought theirgoodly workmanship might saue Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse, But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse: Their groues he feld, their gardins did deface, Their arbers spoyle, their Cabinets suppresse, Their banket houses burne, their buildings race, And of the fairest late, now made the fowlest

place. 84
Then led they her away, and eke that knight
They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad:
Thewaythey came, the same retourn'd they right,
Till they arrived, where they lately had [mad.
Charm'd those wild-beasts, that rag'd with furie
Which now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,
As in their mistresse reskew, whom they lad;
But them the Palmer soone did pacify.

Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes, which there did ly.

85

Said he, These seeming beasts are men indeed, Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed thus.

Whylome her louers, which her lusts did feed, Now turned into figures hideous, According to their mindes like monstruous. Sad end (quoth he) of life intemperate, And mournefull meed of ioyes delicious: But Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate, Let them returned be vnto their former state.

80

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe them strooke.

Andstreight of beasts they comely men became; Yet being men they did vnmanly looke, And stared ghastly, some for inward shame, And some for wrath, to see their captine Dame: But one aboue the rest in speciall, That had an hog been elate, hight Grille by name, Repined greatly, and did him miscall, That had from hoggish forme him brought to naturall.

87

Said Guyon, See the mind of beastly man,
That hath so soone forgot the excellence
Of his creation, when he life began,
That now he chooseth, with vile difference,
To be a beast, and lacke intelligence.
To whom the Palmer thus, The donghill kind
Delights in filth and foule incontinence:
Let Grill be Grill, and haue his hoggish mind,
But let vs hence depart, whilest wether serues and wind.



# THE THIRD

# BOOKE OF THE

FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning,

THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS.

OR

Of Chastitie.

It falls me here to write of Chastity,
That fairest vertue, farre aboue the rest;
For which what needs me fetch from Faery
Forreine ensamples, it to haue exprest?
Sith it is shrined in my Soueraines brest,
And form'd so liuely in each perfect part,
That to all Ladies, which haue it profest,
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart,
If pourtrayd it might be by any liuing art.

But liuing art may not least part expresse, Nor life-resembling pencill it can paint, All were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles: His dædale hand would faile, and greatly faint.

And her perfections with his error taint:
Ne Poets wit, that passeth Painter farre
In picturing the parts of beautie daint,
So hard a workmanship aduenture darre,
For fear through want of words her excellence
to marre.

How then shall I, Apprentice of the skill,
That whylome in diuinest wits did raine,
Presume so high to stretch mine humble
quill?

Yet now my lucklesse lot doth me constraine Hereto perforce. But O dred Soueraine Thus farre forth pardon, sith that choicest wit

Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure plaine That I in colourd showes may shadow it, And antique praises vnto present persons fit.

But if in liuing colours, and right hew, Your selfe you couet to see pictured, Who can it doe more liuely, or more trew, Then that sweet verse, with Nectar sprinckeled, In which a gracious seruant pictured His Cynthia, his heauens fairest light? That with his melting sweetnesse rauished, And with the wonder of her beames bright, My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

But let that same delitious Poet lend
A little leaue vnto a rusticke Muse
To sing his mistresse prayse, and let him mend,
If ought amis her liking may abuse:
Ne let his fairest Cynthia refuse,
In mirrours more then one her selfe to see,
But either Gloriana let her chuse,
Or in Belphabe fashioned to bee:
In th'one her rule, in th'other her rare chastitee.

# Cant. I.

#### 

Guyon encountreth Britomart, faire Florimell is chaced: Duessaes traines and Malecastaes champions are defaced.

#### 

I

The famous Briton Prince and Faerie knight, After long wayes and perilous paines endured, Hauing their wearie limbes to perfect plight Restord, and sory wounds right well recured, Of the faire Alma greatly were procured, To make there lenger soiourne and abode; But when thereto they might not be allured, Fromseekingpraise, and deeds of armes abrode, They courteous conge tooke, and forth together yode.

But the captiu'd Acrasia he sont,
Because of trauell long, a nigher way,
With a strong gard, all reskew to preuent,
And her to Faerie court safe to conuay,
That her for witnesse of his hard assay,
Vnto his Faerie Queene he might present:
But he him selfe betooke another way,
To make more triall of his hardiment,
And seeke aduentures, as he with Prince Arthur

went.

3

Long so they trauelled through wastefull wayes,
Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did

wonne,
To hunt for glorie and renowmed praise;
Full many Countries they did ouerronne,
From the vprising to the setting Sunne,
And many hard aduentures did atchicue;
Of all the which they honour euer wonne,
Seeking the weake oppressed to relieue,
And to recouer right for such, as wrong did
grieue.

At last as through an open plaine they yode, They spide a knight, that towards pricked faire, And him beside an aged Squire there rode, That seem'd to couch vnder his shield three-

As if that age bad him that burden spare, And yield it those, that stouter could it wield: He them espying, gan himselfe prepare, And on his arme addresse his goodly shield That bore a Lion passant in a golden field.

Which seeing good Sir Guyon, deare besought
The Prince of grace, to let him runne that turne.
He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught
His poinant speare, and sharpely gan to spurne
Hiis fomy steed, whose ficrie feete did burne
The verdant grasse, as he thereon did tread;
Ne did the other backe his foot returne,
But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
And bent his dreadfull speare against the others
head.

6

They bene ymet, and both their points arrived, But Guyon drove so furious and fell, That seem'd both shield and plate it would

That seem'd both shield and plate it would have rived:

Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his sell,
But made him stagger, as he were not well:
But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware,
Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell,
Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare,
That mischieuous mischance his life and limbes
did spare.

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke; For neuer yet, sith warlike armes he bore, Andshiueringspeareinbloudiefield first shooke, He found himselfe dishonored so sore. Ah gentlest knight, that euer armour bore, Let not thee grieue dismounted to haue beene, And broughttoground, that neuer wast before; For not thy fault, but secret powre vnseene, That speare enchaunted was, which layd thee on the greene.

But weenedst thou what wight thee ouerthrew. Much greater griefe and shamefuller regret For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew, That of a single damzell thou wert met On equall plaine, and there so hard beset; Euen the famous Britomari it was, Whomstraungeaduenturedidfrom Britainefet, To seeke her louer (loue farre sought alas,) Whose image she had seene in Venus looking glas.

Full of disdainefull wrath, he fierce vprose,
For to reuenge that foule reprochfull shame,
And snatching his bright sword began to close
With her on foot, and stoutly forward came;
Die rather would he, then endure that same.
Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare
His toward perill and vntoward blame,
Which by that new rencounter he should reare:
For death sate on the point of that enchaunted
speare.

10

And hasting towards him gan faire perswade,
Not to prouoke misfortune, nor to weene
His speares default to mend with cruell blade;
For by his mightic Science he had seene
The secret vertue of that weapon keene,
That mortall puissance mote not withstond:
Nothing on earth mote alwaies happie beene.
Great hazard were it, and aduenture fond,
To loose long gotten honour with one euill hond.

11

By such good meanes he him discounselled, From prosecuting his reuenging rage; And eke the Prince like treaty handeled, His wrathfull will with reason to asswage, And laid the blame, not to his carriage, But to his starting steed, that swaru'd asyde, And to the ill purueyance of his page, That had his furnitures not firmely tyde: So is his angry courage fairely pacifyde.

Thus reconcilement was betweene them knit.

Through goodly temperance, and affection chaste,
And either vowd with all their power and wit,
To let not others honour be defaste,
Of friend or foe, who euer it embaste,
Ne armes to beare against the others syde:
In which accord the Prince was also plaste,
And with that golden chaine of concord tyde.
So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere did ryde.

,

O goodly vsage of those antique times, In which the sword was scruant vnto right; When not for malice and contentious crimes, But all for praise, and proofe of manly might, The martiall brood accustomed to fight: Then honour was the meed of victoric, And yet the vanquished had no despight: Let later age that noble vse enuic, Vile rancour to auoid. and cruell surquedrie.

Long they thus trauelled in triendly wise,
Through countries waste, and eke well edifyde
Seeking aduentures hard, to exercise
Their puissance, whylome full dernely tryde:
At length they came into a forrest wyde,
Whose hideous horror and sad trembling sound
Full griesly seem'd: Therein they long didryde.

Whose nideous norror and sad tremoing sound Full griesly seem'd: Therein they long didryde, Yet tract of liuing creatures none they found, Saue Beares, Lions, and Buls, which romed them around.

them around.

All suddenly out of the thickest brush, Vpon a milk-white Palfrey all alone, A goodly Ladie did foreby them rush, Whose face did seeme as cleare as Christall

And cke through feare as white as whales bone:
Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,
Which fled so fast, that nothing mote him hold,
A.d scarse them leasure gaue, her passing to
behold.

16

Still as she fled, her eye she backward threw, As fearing euill, that pursewd her fast; And her faire yellow locks behind her flew, Loosely disperst with puffe of euery blast: All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast. His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dispred, At sight whereof the people stand aghast: But the sage wisard telles, as he has red, That it importunes death and dolefull drerihed.

So as they gazed after her a while,
Lo where a gricsly Foster forth did rush,
Breathing out beastly lust her to defile:
His tyreling iade he fiercely forth did push,
Through thicke and thin, both ouer banke and
bush

In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke, That from his gorie sides the bloud did gush: Large were his limbes, and t rrible his looke, And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare he shooke.

18

Which outrage when those gentleknights did see, Full of great enuie and fell gealosy, They stayd not to auise, who first should bee, But all spurd after fast, as they mote fly, To reskew her from shamefull villany. The Prince and Giyon equally byliue Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame aliue: But after the foule foster Timias did strive.

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant mind, Would not so lightly follow beautics chace, Ne reckt of Ladies Loue, did stay behind, And them awayted there a certaine space, Toweetif they would turne backe to that place: But when she saw them gone, she forward went, As lay her iourney, through that perlous Pace, With stedfast courage and stout hardiment; Ne euill thing she fear'd, ne cuill thing she ment.

20

At last as nigh out of the wood she came, A stately Castle farre away she spyde, To which her steps directly she did frame. That Castle was most goodly edifyde, And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest syde: But faire before the gate a spatious plaine, Mantled with greene, itselfe did spredden wyde, On which she saw sixek nights, that diddarraine Fierce battell against one, with cruell might and maine.

19

Mainly they all attonce vpon him laid, And sore beset on euery side around, That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dismaid,

Ne cuer to them yielded foot of ground All had he lost much bloud through many a wound.

But stoutly dealt his blowes, and euery way To which he turned in his wrathfull stound, Made them recoile, and fly from dred decay, That none of all the sixe before, him durst assay.

2

Like dastard Curres, that having at a bay
The saluage beast embost in wearie chace,
Dare not aduenture on the stubborne pray,
Ne byte before, but rome from place to place,
To get a snatch, when turned is his face.
In such distresse and doubtfull icopardy,
When Britomart him saw, she ran a pace
Vnto his reskew, and with earnest cry,
Bad those same sixe forbeare that single enimy.

2:

But to her cry they list not lenden eare, Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse,

But gathering him round about more neare, Their direfull rancour rather did encreasse; Till that sherushing through the thickest preasse, Perforce disparted their compacted gyre, And soone compeld to hearken vnto peace: Tho gan she myldly of them to inquyre The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre. 24

Whereto that single knight did answere frame; These sixe would me enforce by oddes of might, To chaunge my liefe, and loue another Dame, That death me liefer were, then such despight, So vnto wrong to yield my wrested right: For I loue one, the truest one on ground, Nelistmechaunge; sheth 'Errant Damzellhight, Forwhose dearesake full many a bitterstownd, I haue endur'd, and tasted many a bloudy wound.

25

Certes (said she) then bene ye sixe to blame, To weene your wrong by force to iustifie: For knight to leaue his Ladie weregreat shame, That faithfull is, and better were to die. All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamie, Then losse of loue to him, that loues but one; Ne may loue be compeld by maisterie; For soone as maisterie comes, sweet loue anone Taketh his nimble wings, and soone away is gone.

26

Then spake one of those sixe, There dwelleth here Within this eastle wall a Ladie faire, Whose soueraine beautie hath no living perc. Thereto so bounteous and so debonaire, That neuer any mote with her compaire. She hath ordaind this law, which we approue, That euery knight, which doth this way repaire, In case he haue no Ladie, nor no loue, Shall doe vnto her scruice neuer to remoue.

27

But if he haue a Ladie or a Loue,
Then must he her forgoe with foule defame,
Or else with vs by dint of sword approue,
That she is fairer, then our fairest Dame,
As did this knight, before ye hither came.
Perdie (said Britomart) the choise is hard:
But what reward had he, that ouercame?
He should aduaunced be to high regard,
(Said they) and haue our Ladies loue for his
reward.

- 0

Therefore aread Sir, if thou haue a loue.
Loue haue I sure, (quoth she) but Lady none;
Yet will I not fro mine owne loue remoue,
Ne to your Lady will I seruice done,
But wreake your wrongs wrought to this
knight alone,

And proue his cause. With that her mortall speare

She mightily auentred towards one,
And downe him smot, ere well aware he weare,
Then to the next she rode, and downe the next
did beare.

Ne did she stay, till three on ground she layd That none of them himselfe could rear eagaine, The fourth was by that other knight dismayd, All were he wearie of his former paine, That now there do but two of six remaine; Which two did vield, before she did them smight. Ah (said she then) now may ye all see plaine, That truth is strong, and trew loue most of might, That for his trusty scruaunts doth so strongly

Too well we see, (said they) and proue too well Our faulty weaknesse, and your matchlesse might: For thy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell, Which by her owne law to your lot doth light, And we your liege men faith vnto you plight. So ynderneath her feet their swords they mard, And after her besought, well as they might, To enter in, and reape the dew reward: She graunted, and then in they all together far'd.

Long were it to describe the goodly frame. And stately port of Castle Ioyeous, (For so that Castle hight by commune name) Where they were entertaind with curteous And comely glee of many gracious Faire Ladies, and of many a gentle knight, Who through a Chamber long and spacious, Eftsoones them brought vnto their Ladiessight, That of them cleeped was the Lady of delight.

But for to tell the sumptuous aray Of that great chamber, should be labour lost: For living wit, I weene, cannot display The royall riches and exceeding cost, Of every pillour and of every post; Which all of purest bullion framed were, And with great pearles and pretious stones embost.

That the bright glister of their beames cleare Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did

These straunger knights through passing, forth were led

Into an inner rowme, whose rovaltee And rich purueyance might vneath be red; Mote Princes place beseeme so deckt to bee. Which stately manner when as they did see, The image of superfluous riotize, Exceeding much the state of meane degree, They greatly wondred, whence so sumptuous guize [deuize.

Might be maintayed, and each gan diversely l

The wals were round about apparelled With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure. In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed The loue of Venus and her Paramoure The faire Adonis, turned to a flowre. A worke of rare deuice, and wondrous wit. First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre. Which her assayd with many a feruent fit, When first her tender hart was with his beautie

Then with what sleights and sweet allurements she Entyst the Boy, as well that art she knew, And wooed him her Paramoure to be: Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew, To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew; Now leading him into a secret shade From his Beauperes, and from bright heauens vew.

Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade, Or bathe him in a fountaine by some couert glade.

And whilst he slept, she ouer him would spred Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes, And her soft arme lay vnderneath his hed, And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes; Andwhilest hebath'd, withher two crafty spyes, She secretly would search each daintie lim. And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes, And fragrant violets, and Pances trim. And euer with sweet Nectarshedidsprinklehim.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away, And loyd his loue in secret vnespyde. But for she saw him bent to cruell play, To hunt the saluage beast in forrest wyde. Dreadfull of daunger, that mote him betyde, She oft and oft aduiz'd him to refraine From chase of greater beasts, whose brutish pryde Motebreedehimscathvnwares: butallinvaine; For who can shun the chaunce, that dest'ny doth crdaine?

Lo. where beyond he lyeth languishing, Deadly engored of a great wild Bore. And by his side the Goddesse groueling Makes for him endlesse mone, and euermore With her soft garment wipes away the gore, Which staines his snowy skin with hatefull hew: But when she saw no helpe might him restore. Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew, Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it lively grew.

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize, And round about it many beds were dight, As whilome was the antique worldes guize, Some for vntimely ease, some for delight, As pleased them to vse, that vse it might: And all was full of Damzels, and of Squires, Dauncing and reueling both day and night, And swimming deepe in sensuall desires, And Cupid still emongst them kindled lustfull fires.

And all the while sweet Musicke did diuide Her looser notes with *Lydian* harmony; And all the while sweet birdes thereto applide Their daintie layes and dulcet melody, Ay caroling of loue and iollity, That wonder was to heare their trim consort. Which when those knights beheld, withscorne-

full eye,
They sdeigned such lasciulous disport,
And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wanton sort.

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew.

Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed, That glistred all with gold and glorious shew, As the proud *Persian* Queenes accustomed: She seemd a woman of great bountihed, And of rare beautie, sauing that askaunce Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed, Did roll too lightly, and too often glaunce, Without regard of grace, or comely amenaunce.

Long worke it were, and needlesse to deuize Their goodly entertainement and great glee: She caused them be led in curteous wize Into a bowre, disarmed for to bee, And cheared well with wine and spiceree: The Redcrosse Knight was soone disarmed there, But the braue Mayd would not disarmed bee, But onely vented up her unbriere, And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

As when faire Cynthia, in darkesome night, Is in a noyous cloud enueloped,
Where she may find the substaunce thin and light, [hed Breakes forth her siluer beames, and her bright Discouers to the world discomfited;
Of the poore traueller, that went astray, With thousand blessings she is heried; Such was the beautie and the shining ray, Withwhichfaire Britomartgauelight vnto the day.

And eke those six, which lately with her fought, Now were disarmd, and did them selues present Vnto her vew, and company vnsoght; For they all seemed curteous and gent, And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent, Which had them traynd in all ciuilitee, And goodly taught to tilt and turnament; Now were they liegemen to this Lady free, And her knights seruice ought, to hold of her in fee.

The first of them by name Gardane hight, A iolly person, and of comely vew; The second was Farlane, a bold knight, And next to him Iocanie did ensew; Bascianie did him selfe most curteous shew; But fierce Bacchanie seemd too fell and keene; And yet in armes Nocianie greater grew: All were faire knights, and goodly well beseene, But to faire Britomari they all but shadowes beene.

For she was full of amiable grace,
And manly terrour mixed therewithall,
That as the one stird vp affections bace,
So th'other did mens rash desires apall,
And hold them backe, that would in errour fall;
As he, that hath espide a vermeill Rose,
To which sharpe thornes and breres the way
forstall,

Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose, But wishing it far off, his idle wish doth lose.

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight,
All ignoraunt of her contrary sex,
(For she her weend a fresh and lusty knight)
She greatly gan enamoured to wex,
And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex:
Her fickle hart conceiued hasty fire,
Like sparkes of fire, which fall in sclender flex,
That shortly brent into extreme desire,
And ransackt all her veines with passion entire.

48

Eftsoones she grew to great impatience
And into termes of open outrage brust,
That plaine discouered her incontinence,
Ne reckt she, who her meaning did mistrust;
For she was giuen all to fleshly lust,
And poured forth in sensuall delight,
That all regard of shame she had discust,
And meet respect of honour put to flight:
So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathly
sight.

Faire Ladies, that to loue captived arre, And chaste desires do nourish in your mind. Let not her fault your sweet affections marre, Ne blot the bounty of all womankind; 'Mongst thousands good one wanton Dame to

find:

Emongst the Roses grow some wicked weeds: For this was not to loue, but lust inclind; For loue does alwayes bring forth bounteous deeds.

And in each gentle hart desire of honour breeds.

Nought so of loue this looser Dame did skill, But as a coale to kindle fleshly flame. Giuing the bridle to her wanton will, And treading vnder foote her honest name: Such loue is hate, and such desire is shame. Still did sae roue at her with crafty glaunce Of her false eyes, that at her hart did ayme, And told her meaning in her countenaunce; But Britomart dissembled it with ignoraunce.

Supper was shortly dight and downe they sat, Where they were serued with all sumptuous fare, Whiles fruitfull Ceres, and Lyœus fat Pourd out their plenty, without spight or spare: Nought wanted there, that dainty was and rare; And aye the cups their bancks did ouerflow, And ave betweene the cups, she did prepare Way to her loue, and secret darts did throw; But Britomart would not such guilfull message

So when they slaked had the feruent heat Of appetite with meates of enery sort. The Lady did faire Britomart entreat, Her to disarme, and with delightfull sport To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort, But when she mote not thereunto be wonne, (For she her sexe vnder that straunge purport Did vse to hide, and plaine apparaunce shonne:) In plainer wise to tell her grieuaunce she begonne.

And all attonce discouered her desire With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, and piteous griefe,

The outward sparkes of her in burning fire; Which spent in vaine, at last she told her briefe, That but if she did lend her short reliefe. And do her comfort, she mote algates dye. But the chaste damzell, that had never priefe Of such malengine and fine forgerie. Did easily beleeue her strong extremitie.

Full easie was for her to have beliefe, Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe. And by long triall of the inward griefe, Wherewith imperious loue her hart did vexe, Could judge what paines do louing harts perplexe.

Who meanes no guile, be guiled soonest shall, And to faire semblaunce doth light faith annexe; The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers call, Into his hidden net full easily doth fall.

For thy she would not in discourteise wise, Scorne the faire offer of good will profest; For great rebuke it is, loue to despise, Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request: But with faire countenaunce, as beseemed best. Her entertaynd; nath'lesse she inly deemd Her loue too light, to wooe a wandring guest: Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd That from like inward fire that outward smoke had steemd.

Therewith a while she her flit fancy fed. Till she mote winne fit time for her desire, But yet her wound still inward freshly bled. And through her bones the false instilled fire Did spred it selfe, and venime close inspire. Tho were the tables taken all away, And euery knight, and euery gentle Squire Gan choose his dame with Basciomani gay. With whom he meant to make his sport and courtly play.

Some fell to daunce, some fell to hazardry, Some to make loue, some to make meriment, As diverse wits to divers things apply; And all the while faire Malecasta bent Her crafty engins to her close intent. By this th'eternall lampes, wherewith high *loue* Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent, And the moist daughters of huge Atlas stroue Into the Ocean deepe to drive their weary droue.

High time it seemed then for every wight Them to betake vnto their kindly rest; Eftsoones long waxen torches weren light, Vnto their bowres to guiden euery guest: Tho when the Britonesse saw all the rest Auoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile, And safe commit to her soft fethered nest, Where through long watch, and late dayes weary toile,

She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did quite assoile.

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe Yshrowded was, and euery mortall wight Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe, Faire Malecasta, whose engrieued spright Could find no rest in such perplexed plight, Lightly arose out of her wearie bed, And vinder the blacke vele of guilty Night, Her with a scarlot mantle couered, That was with gold and Ermines faire enueloped.

60

Then panting soft, and trembling euerie ioynt, Her fearfull feete towards the bowreshe moued; Where she for secret purpose did appoynt To lodge the warhke mayd vnwisely loued, And to her bed approching, first she prooued, Whether she slept or wakt, with her soft hand She softly felt, if any member mooued, And lent her wary care to vndeistand, If any puffe of breath, or signe of sence she fond.

61

Which whenas none she fond, with easie shift, For feare least her vnwares she should abrayd, Th'embroderd quilt she lightly vp did lift, And by her side her selfe she softly layd, Of euery finest fingers touch affrayd; Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake, But inly sigh'd. At last the royall Mayd Out of her quiet slomber did awake, And chaungd her weary side, the better ease to take.

6:

Where feeling one close couched by her side, She lightly lept out of her filed bod, And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride The loathed leachour. But the Dame halfe ded Through suddein feare and ghastly drerihed, Did shrieke alowd, that through the house it rong,

And the whole family therewith adred,
Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,
And to the troubled chamber all in armes did
throng.

62

And those six Knights that Ladies Champions, And eke the Redcrosse knight ran to the stownd, Halfearmd and halfe vnarmd, with themattons: Where when confusedly they came, they found Their Lady lying on the sencelesse grownd; On th'other side, they saw the warlike Mayd All in her snow-white smocke, with locks vnlownd,

Threatning the point of her auenging blade, That with so troublous terrour they were all dismayde.

64

About their Lady first they flockt around, Whom having laid in comfortable couch, Shortly they reard out of her frosen swownd; And afterwards they gan with fowle reproch Tostirre vpstrife, and troublous contecke broch: But by ensample of the last dayes losse, None of them rashly durst to her approch, Ne in so glorious spoile themselues embosse; Her succourd eke the Champion of the bloudy Crosse.

But one of those sive knights, Gardante hight, Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene, Which forth he sent with felonous despight, And fell intent against the virgin sheene: The mortall steele stayd not, till it was seene To gore her side, yet was the wound not deepe, But lightly rased her soft silken skin, That drops of purple bloud thereout did weepe, Which did her lilly smock with staines of vermeil steepe.

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew, And with her flaming sword about her layd, That none of them foule mischiefe could eschew, But with her dreadfull strokes were all dismayd: Here, there, and euery where about her swayd Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abide; And eke the Rederosse knight gaue her good

Ay ioyning foot to foot, and side to side, That in short space their foes they have quite terrifide.

67

Tho whenas all were put to shamefull flight,
The noble Britomartis her arayd,
And her bright armes about her body dight:
For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,
Where so loose life, and so vigentle trade
Was vsd of Knights and Ladies seeming gent:
So earely ere the grosse Earthes grycsy shade
Was all disperst out of the firmament,
They tooke their steeds, and forth vpon their iourney went.

## Cant. II.

#### 

The Redcrosse knight to Britomart describeth Artegall:

The wondrous myrrhour, by which she in love with him did fall.

#### 

1

Here haue I cause, in men iust blame to find,
That in their proper prayse too partiall bee,
And not indifferent to woman kind,
To whom no share in armes and cheualrie
They do impart, ne maken memorie
Of their braue gestes and prowesse martiall;
Scarse do they spare to one or two or three,
Rowmeintheirwrits; yet thesame writing small
Does all their deeds deface, and dims their
glories all.

2

But by record of antique times I find,
That women wont in warres to beare most sway,
And to all great exploits them selues inclind:
Of which they still the girlond bore away,
Till enuious Men fearing their rules decay,
Gan coyne streight lawes to curb their liberty;
Yet sith they warlike armes haue layd away,
They haue exceld in artes and pollicy,
That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke
t'enuy.

Of warlike puissaunce in ages spent,
Be thou faire Britomart, whose prayse I write,
But of all wisedome be thou precedent,
O soueraigne Queene, whose prayse I would
endite,

Endite I would as dewtie doth excite;
But ah my rimes too rude and rugged arre,
When in so high an obiect they do lite,
And striuing, fit to make, I feare do marre:
Thy selfe thy prayses tell, and make them
knowen farre.

She trauelling with Guyon by the way,
Of sundry things faire purpose gan to find,
T'abridg their iourney long, and lingring day;
Mongst which it fell into that Faeries mind,
To aske this Briton Mayd, what vncouth wind,
Brought herinto those parts, and what inquest
Made her dissemble her disguised kind:
Faire Lady she him seemd, like Lady drest,
But fairest knight aliue, when armed was her
hrest.

Thereat she sighing softly, had no powre To speake a while, ne ready answere make, But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,

As if she had a feuer fit, did quake, And euery daintie limbe with horrour shake; And euer and anone the rosy rcd, Flasht through her face, as it had been a flake Of lightning, through bright heauen fulmined; At last the passion past she thus him answered.

f

Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre I taken was from nourses tender pap, I haue beene trained vp in warlike stowre, To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap The warlike ryder to his most mishap; Sithence I loathed haue my life to lead, As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap, To finger the fine needle and nyce thread; Me leuer were with point of foemans speare be dead.

7

All my delight on deedes of armes is set,
To hunt out perils and aduentures hard,
By sea, by land, where so they may be met,
Onely for honour and for high regard,
Without respect of richesse or reward.
For such intent into these parts I came,
Withouten compasse, or withouten card,
Far fro my natiue soyle, that is by name
The greater Britaine, here to seeke for prayse
and fame.

8

Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond Do many famous Knightes and Ladies wonne, And many straunge aduentures to be fond, Of which great worth and worship may be wonne;

Which I to proue, this voyage haue begonne. But mote I weet of you, right curteous knight, Tydings of one, that hath vnto me donne Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight, The which I seeke to wreake, and Arthegall he hight.

The word gone out, she backe againe would call. As her repenting so to haue missayd, But that he it vp-taking ere the fall, Her shortly answered; Faire martiall Mayd Certes ye misauised beene, t'vpbrayd A gentle knight with so vnknightly blame: For weet ye well of all, that euer playd At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game, The noble Artheeall hath euer borne the name.

For thy great wonder were it, if such shame Should euer enter in his bounteous thought, Or euer do, that mote deseruen blame: The noble courage neuer weeneth ought, That may vnworthy of it selfe be thought. Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware, Least that too farre ye haue your sorrow sought:

You and your countrey both I wish welfare, And honour both; for each of other worthy are.

.

The royall Mayd woxe inly wondrous glad,
To heare her Loue so highly magnifide,
And ioyd that euer she affixed had,
Her hart on knight so goodly glorifide,
How euer finely she it faind to hide:
The louing mother, that nine monethes did
beare,

In the deare closet of her painefull side, Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare, Dothnot somuch reioyce, asshereioyced theare.

12

But to occasion him to further talke,
To feed her humour with his pleasing stile,
Her list in strifull termes with him to balke,
And thus replide, How euer, Sir, ye file
Your curteous tongue, his prayses to compile,
It ill beseemes a knight of gentle sort,
Such as ye haue him boasted, to beguile
A simple mayd, and worke so haynous tort,
In shame of knighthood, as I largely can report.

13

Let be therefore my vengeaunce to disswade, And read, where I that favtour false may find. Ah, but if reason faire might you perswade, To slake your wrath, and mollifie your mind, (Said he) perhaps ye should it better find: For hardy thing it is, to weene by might, That man to hard conditions to bind, Or euer hope to match in equall fight, Whose prowesse paragon saw neuer liuing wight.

14

Ne soothlich is it easie for to read,
Where now on earth, or how he may be found;
For he ne wonneth in one certaine stead,
But restlesse walketh all the world around,
Ay doing things, that to his fame redound,
Defending Ladies cause, and Orphans right,
Where so he heares, that any doth confound
Them comfortlesse, through tyranny or might;
So is his soueraine honour raisde to heavens
hight.

His feeling words her feeble sence much pleased, And softly sunck into her molten hart; Hart that is inly hurt, is greatly eased Withhope of thing, that may allegge his smart; For pleasing words are like to Magick art, That doth the charmed Snake in slomber lay: Such secret ease felt gentle Britomart, Yet list the same efforce with faind gainesay;

So dischord oft in Musick makes the sweeter lay.

And said, Sir knight, these idle termes forbeare, And sith it is vneath to find his haunt, Tell me some markes, by which he may appeare, If chaunce I him encounter parauaunt; For perdie one shall other slay, or daunt: What shape, what shield, what armes, what steed, what steed, And what so else his person most may vaunt?

And what so else his person most may vaunt? All which the *Rederosse* knight to point ared, And him in euery part before her fashioned.

Yet him in euery part before she knew,
How euer list her now her knowledge faine,
Sith him whilome in *Britaine* she did vew,
To her reuealed in a mirrhour plaine,
Whereof did grow her first engraffed paine;
Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did tast,
That but the fruit more sweetnesse did containe,
Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote wast,
And yield the pray of loue to lothsome death at
last.

18

By strange occasion she did him behold,
And much morestrangely gan to loue his sight,
As it in bookes hath written bene of old.
In Deheubarth that now South-wales is hight,
Whattimeking Ryenceraign'd, and dealed right,
The great Magitian Merlin had deuiz'd,
By his deepe science, and hell-dreaded might,
A looking glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,
Whose vertues through the wyde world soone
were solemniz'd.

. 19

It vertue had, to shew in perfect sight,
What euer thing was in the world contaynd,
Betwixt the lowest earth and heauens hight,
So that it to the looker appertaynd;
What euer foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,
Therein discouered was, ne ought mote pas,
Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd;
For thy it round and hollow shaped was,
Like to the world it selfe, and seem'd a world of
glas.

Who wonders not, that reades so wonderous worke?

But who does wonder, that has red the Towre, Wherein th'Ægyptian Phao long did lurke From all mens vew, that none might her discoure.

Vet she might all men vew out of her bowre? Great Ptolomæe it for his lemans sake Ybuilded all of glasse, by Magicke powre, And also it impregnable did make; Yet when his loue was false, he with a peaze it brake.

21

Such was the glassie globe that Merlin made, And gaue vnto king Ryence for his gard, That neuer foes his kingdome might inuade, But he it knew at home before he hard Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd. It was a famous Present for a Prince, And worthy worke of infinite reward, That treasonsould bewray, and foes conuince; Happie this Realme, had it remained euer stace.

22

One day it fortuned, faire Britomart
Into her fathers closet to repayre;
For nothing he from her reseru'd apart,
Being his onely daughter and his hayre:
Wherewhenshe hadespyde that mirrhour fayre,
Her selfe a while therein she vewd in vaine;
Tho her auizing of the vertues rare,
Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe
Her to bethinke of, that mote to her selfe pertaine.

23

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts
Imperious Loue hath highest set his throne,
And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts
Of them, that to him buxome are and prone:
So thought this Mayd (as maydens vse to done)
Whom fortune for her husband would allot,
Not that she lusted after any one;
For she was pure from blame of sinfull blot.
Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that
same knot.

24

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize, Through whose bright ventayle lifted upon hye His manly face, that did his foes agrize, And friends to termes of gentle truce entize. Lookt foorth, as *Phæhus* face out of the east, Betwixt two shadie mountaines doth arize; Portly his person was, and much increast Throughhis Heroicke grace, and honorable gest

25

His crest was couered with a couchant Hound, And all his armour seem'd of antique mould, But wondrous massie and assured sound, And round about yfretted all with gold, In which there written was with cyphers old, Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win. And on his shield enueloped seuenfold He bore a crowned litle Ermilin, That deckt the azure field with her faire pouldred skin.

26

The Damzell well did vew his personage,
And liked well, ne further fastned not,
But went her way; ne her vnguilty age
Did weene, vnwares, that her vnlucky lot
Lav hidden in the bottome of the pot;
Of hurt vnwist most daunger doth redound:
But the false Archer, which that arrow shot
So slyly, that she did not feele the wound,
Did smyle full smoothly at her weetlesse wofull
stound.

27

Thenceforth the feather in her loftie crest, Ruffed of loue, gan lowly to auaile, And her proud portance, and her princely gest, Withwhichsheearsttryumphed,nowdidquaile: Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile She woxe; yet wist she neither how, nor why, She wist not, silly Mayd, what she did aile, Yet wist, she was not well at ease perdy, Yet thought it was not loue, but some melancholy.

2

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew
Defast the beautie of the shining sky,
And reft from men the worlds desired vew,
She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye;
But sleepe full farre away from her did fly:
In stead thereof sad sights, and sorrowes deepe
Kept watch and ward about her warily,
Thatnoughtshe did but wayle, and often steepe
Her daintie couch with teares, which closely she
did weepe.

2

And if that any drop of slombring rest
Did chaunce to still into her wearie spright,
When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest,
Streight way with dreames, and with fantasticke sight

Of dreadfull things the same was put to flight. That oft out of her bed she did astart, As one with vew of ghastly feends affright: Tho gan she to renew her former smart, And thinke of that faire visage, written in her hort.

One night, when she was tost with such vnrcst, Her aged Nurse, whose name was Glauce hight. Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest, Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight, And downe againe in her warme bed her dight; Ah my deare daughter, ah my dearest dread, What vncouth fit (said she) what euill plight Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead Chaunged thy liuely cheare, and liuing made thee dead?

31
For not of nought these suddeine ghastly feares All night afflict thy naturall repose, And all the day, when as thine equall peares Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose, Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose, Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spred Abroad thy fresh youthes fairest flowre, but lose Both leafe and fruit, both too vntimely shed, As one in wilfull bale for euer buried.

22

The time, that mortall men their weary cares
Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
And euery riuer eke his course forbeares,
Then doth this wicked euill thee infest,
And riue with thousand throbs thy thrilled
brest;

Like an huge Actn' of deepe engulfed griefe, Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest, Whence forth it breakes in sighes and anguish rife,

As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused strife.

Aye me, how much I feare, least loue it bee; But if that loue it be, as sure I read By knowen signes and passions, which I see, Be it worthy of thy race and royall sead, Then I auow by this most sacred head Of my deare foster child, to ease thy griefe, And win thy will: Therefore away doe dread; For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe Shall me debarre, tell me therefore my liefest liefe.

So hauing said, her twixt her armes twaine She straightly straynd, and colled tenderly, And euery trembling ioynt, and euery vaine She softly felt, and rubbed busily, To doe the frosen cold away to fly; And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare She oft did bath, and oft againe did dry; And euer her importund, not to feare To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

The Damzell pauzd, and then thus fearefully; Ah Nurse, what needeth thee to eke my paine? Is not enough, that I alone doe dye, But it must doubled be with death of twaine? For nought for me but death there doth remaine.

O daughter deare (said she) despaire no whit; For neuer sore, but might a salue obtaine: That blinded God, which hath ye blindly smit, Another arrow hath your louers hart to hit.

But mine is not (quoth she) like others wound; For which no reason can find remedy. Was neuer such, but mote the like be found, (Said she) and though no reason may apply Salue to your sore, yet loue can higher stye, Thenreasonsreach, and oft hath wondersdonne. But neither God of loue, nor God of sky Can doe (said she) that, which cannot be donne. Things oft impossible (quoth she) seeme, ere beconne.

These idle words (said she) doe nought asswage Mystubbornesmart, but more annoyance breed, For no no vsuall fire, no vsuall rage It is, O Nurse, which on my life doth feed, And suckes the bloud, which from my hart doth bleed.

But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed. Nor Prince, nor percit is, whose loue hathgryde My feeble brest of late, and launched this wound wyde.

Nor man it is, nor other living wight;
For then some hope I might vnto me draw,
But th'only shade and semblant of a knight,
Whose shape or person yet I neuer saw,
Hath me subjected to loues cruell law:
The same one day, as me misfortune led,
I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,
And pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,
Vnwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed.

Sithens it hath infixed faster hold
Within my bleeding bowels, and so sore
Nowranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould,
That all mine entrailes flow with poysnous gore,
And th'vlcer groweth daily more and more;
Ne can my running sore find remedic,
Other then my hard fortune to deplore,
And languish as the leafe falne from the tree,
Till death make one end of my dayes and miserie.

Daughter (said she) what need ye be dismayd, Or why make ye such Monster of your mind? Of much more vncouth thing I was affrayd; Of filthy lust, contrarie vnto kind: But this affection nothing straunge I find; For who with reason can you aye reproue, To loue the semblant pleasing most your mind, And yield your heart, whence ye cannot remoue?

No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of loue.

Not so th' Arabian Myrrhe did set her mind;
Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart,
But lou'd their natiue flesh against all kind,
And to their purpose vsed wicked art:
Yet playd Pasiphae a more monstrous part,
That lou'd a Bull, and learnd a beast to bee;
Such shamefull lusts who loaths not, which
depart

From course of nature and of modestie? Sweet loue such lewdnes bands from his faire companie.

But thine my Deare (welfare thy heart my deare)
Though strange beginning had, yet fixed is
On one, that worthy may perhaps appeare;
And certes seemes bestowed not amis:
Ioy thereof haue thou and eternall blis.
With that vpleaning on her elbow weake,
Her alablaster brest she soft did kis,
Which all that while she felt to pant and quake,
As it an Earth-quake were; at last she thus
bespake.

Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease; For though my loue be not so lewdly bent, As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease My raging smart, ne ought my flume relent, But rather doth my helpelesse griefe augment For they, how euer shamefull and vnkind, Yet did possesse their horrible intent: Short end of sorrowes they thereby did find; So was their fortune good, though wicked were their mind.

But wicked fortune mine, though mind be good, Can haue no end, nor hope of my desire, But feed on shadowes, whiles I die for food, And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire Affection, I doe languish and expire. I fonder, then Cephisus foolish child, Who hauing vewed in a fountaine shere His face, was with the loue thereof beguild; I fonder loue a shade, the bodie farre exild.

Nought like (quoth she) for that same wretched boy

Was of himselfe the idle Paramoure;
Both loue and louer, without hope of ioy,
For which he faded to a watry flowre.
But better fortune thine, and better howre,
Which lou'st the shadow of a warlike knight;
No shadow, but a bodie hath in powre:
That bodie, wheresoeuer that it light,
May learned be by cyphers, or by Maricke

May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke might.

But if thou may with reason yet represse
The growing euill, ere it strength haue got,
And thee abandond wholly doe possesse,
Against it strongly striue, and yield thee not,
Till thou in open field adowne be smot.
But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
So that needs loue or death must be thy lot,
Then I auow to thee, by wrong or right
To compasse thy desire, and find that loued

To compasse thy desire, and find that loued knight.

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright
Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd
In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might;
And the old-woman carefully displayd
The clothes about her round with busic ayd;
So that at last a little creeping sleepe
Surprisd her sense: She therewith well apayd,
The drunken lampedowne in the oyle didsteepe,
And set her by to watch, and set her by to
weepe.

Earely the morrow next, before that day His ioyous face did to the world reueale, They both vprose and tooke their readie way Vnto the Church, their prayers to appeale, With great deuotion, and with litle zeale: For the faire Damzell from the holy herse Herloue-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale; And that old Dame said many an idle verse, Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reuerse.

Returned home, the royall Infant fell
Into her former fit; for why, no powre
Nor guidance of her selfe in her did dwell.
But th'aged Nurse her calling to her bowre,
Had gathered Rew, and Sauine, and the flowre
Of Camphora, and Calamint, and Dill,
All which she in a earthen Pot did poure,
And to the brim with Colt wood did it fill,
And many drops of milke and bloud through it
did spill.

Then taking thrise three haires from off her head, Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace. And round about the pots mouth, bound the thread.

And after having whispered a space Certaine sad words, with hollow voice and bace, She to the virgin said, thrise said she it: Come daughter come, come; spit vpon my face, Spit thrise vpon me, thrise vpon me spit : Th'vneuen number for this businesse is most fit.

That sayd, her round about she from her turnd, She turned her contrarie to the Sunne, Thrise she her turnd contrary, and returnd, All contrary, for she the right did shunne. And euer what she did, was streight vndonne. So thought she to vndoe her daughters loue: But loue, that is in gentle brest begonne, No idle charmes so lightly may remoue, That well can witnesse, who by triall it does

proue.

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd auayle, Ne slake the furie of Ler cruell flame. But that she still did waste, and still did wayle, That through long languour, and hart-burning brame

She shortly like a pyned ghost became, Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond. That when old Glaucesaw, for feare least blame Of her miscarriage should in her be fond, She wist not how t'amend, nor how it to withstond.

# Cant. III.

## 

Merlin bewrayes to Britomart, the state of Artegall. And shewes the famous Progeny which from them springen shall.

## 

Most sacred fire, that burnest mightily In living brests, ykindled first aboue, Emongst th'eternall spheres and lamping sky, And then ce pour dinto men, which men call Loue; Not that same, which doth base affections moue In brutish minds, and filthy lust inflame, But that sweet fit, that doth true beautie loue, And choseth vertue for his dearest Dame, Whence spring all noble deeds and neuer dying fame:

Well did Antiquitie a God thee deeme. That ouer mortall minds hast so gre. t might, To order them, as best to thee doth seeme, And all their actions to direct aright: The fatall purpose of divine foresight, Thou doest effect in destined descents. Through deepe impression of thy secret might. And stirredst vp th'Heroes high intents. Which the late world admyres for wondrous moniments.

But thy dread darts in none doe triumph more. Ne brauer proofe in any, of thy powre Shew'dst thou, then in this royall Maid of yore. Making her seeke an vnknowne Paramoure. From the worlds end, through many a bitter stowre:

From whose two lovnes thou afterwards did Most famous fruits of matrimoniall bowre, Which through the earth haue spred their liuing prayse.

That fame in trompe of gold eternally displayes.

Begin then, O my dearest sacred Dame, Daughter of Phabus and of Memorie. That doest ennoble with immortall name The warlike Worthies, from antiquitie, In thy great volume of Eternitie: Begin, O Clio, and recount from hence My glorious Soueraines goodly auncestrie, Till that by dew degrees and long protense. Thou have it lastly brought vnto her Excellence.

Full many wayes within her troubled mind. Old Glauce cast, to cure this Ladies griefe: Fullmany waics she sought, but none could find, Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsell, that is chiefe

And choisest med'cine for sicke harts reliefe: For thy great care she tooke, and greater feare. Least that it should her turne to foule repriefe, And sore reproch, when so her father deare Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune heare.

At last she her auisd, that he, which made That mirrhour, wherein the sicke Damosell Sostraungely vewed her straunge louers shade. To weet, the learned Merlin, well could tell, Under what coast of heaven the man did dwell. And by what meanes his loue might best be wrought:

For though beyond the Africk Ismaell Or th'Indian Peru he were, she thought Him forth through infinite endeuour to haue sought.

Forthwiththemselues disguising both instraunge And base attyre, that none might them bewray, To Maridunum, that is now by chaunge Of name Cayr-Merdin cald, they tooke their

There the wise Merlin whylome wont (they say)
Tomake his wonne, low vnderneath the ground,
In a deepe delue, farre from the vew of day,
That of no liuing wight he mote be found,
When so he counseld with his sprights encompast round.

And if thou euer happen that same way
To trauell, goe to see that dreadfull place:
It is an hideous hollow caue (they say)
Vnder a rocke that lyes a little space
From the swift Barry, tombling downe apace,
Emongst the woodie hilles of Dynewowe:
But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace,
To enter into that same balefull Bowre,
For fear the cruell Feends should thee vnwares

deuowre.

But standing high aloft, low lay thine eare, And there such ghastly noise of yron chaines, And brasen Caudrons thou shaltrombling heare, Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines

Doe tosse, that it will stonne thy feeble braines, And oftentimes great grones, and grieuous

Whentoo hugetoile and labour them constraines: And often times louds trokes, and ringing sounds From vnder that deepe Rocke most horribly rebounds.

The cause some say is this: A litle while Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend, A brasen wall in compas to compile About Cairmardin, and did it commend Vnto these Sprights, to bring to perfect end. During which worke the Ladie of the Lake, Whom long he lou'd, for him in hast did send, Who thereby forst his workemen to forsake, Them bound till his returne, their labour not to slake.

Inthemeanetimethroughthatfalse Ladiestraine, He was surprisd, and buried vnder beare, Ne euer to his worke returnd againe:
Nath'lesse those feends may not their worke

forbeare,
So greatly his commaundement they feare,
But there doe toyle and trauell day and night,
Vntill that brasen wall they vp doe reare:
For Merlin had in Magicke more insight,
Then euer him before or after liuing wight.

For he by words could call out of the sky Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him obay:

The land to sea, and sea to maincland dry, And darkesome night he eke could turne to day: Iluge hostes of men he could alone dismay, And hostes of men of meanest things could frame,

When so him list his enimies to fray: That to this day for terror of his fame, The feends do quake, when any him to them does name.

And sooth, men say that he was not the sonne Of mortall Syre, or other liuing wight, But wondrously begotten, and begonne By false illusion of a guilefull Spright, On a faire Ladie Nonne, that whilome hight Matilda, daughter to Pubidius, Who was the Lord of Mathrauall by right, And coosen vnto king Ambrosius:

Whence he indued was with skill so maruellous.

They here ariuing, staid a while without,
Ne durst aducature rashly in to wend,
But of their first intent gan make new dout
For dread of daunger, which it might portend:
Vntill the hardie Mayd (with loue to frend)
First entering, the dreadfull Mage there found
Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,
And writing strange characters in the ground,
With which the stubborn feends he to his seruice
bound.

He nought was moued at their entrance bold: For of their comming well he wist afore, Yet list them bid their businesse to vnfold, As if ought in this world in secret store Were from him hidden, or vnknowne of yore. Then Glauce thus, Let not it thee offend, That we thus rashly through thy darkesome dore.

Vnwares haue prest: for either fatall end, Or other mightie cause vs two did hither send.

16
He bad tell on; And then she thus began.

Now haue three Moones with borrow'd brothers light, [wan, Thrice shined faire, and thrice seem'd dim and Sith a sore euill, which this virgin bright Tormenteth, and doth plonge in dolefull plight, First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote bee, Or whence it sprong, I cannot read aright: But this I read, that but if remedee

Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see.

Therewith th'Enchaunter softly gan to smyle
At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well,
That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
And to her said, Beldame, by that ye tell,
More need of leach-craft hath your Damozell,
Then of my skill: who helpe may haue elsewhere.

In vaine seekes wonders out of Magicke spell. Th'old woman wox half blanck, those words to heare:

And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare.

And to him said, If any leaches skill,
Or other learned meanes could haue redrest
This my deare daughters deepe engraffed ill,
(crtes I should be loth thee to molest:
But this sad euill, which doth her infest,
Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
And housed is within her hollow brest,
That either scemes some cursed witches deed,
Or euill spright, that in her doth such torment
breed.

The wisard could no lenger beare her bord,
But brusting forth in laughter, to her sayd;
Glauce, what needs this colourable word,
To cloke the cause, that hath it selfe bewrayd?
Ne ye faire Britomartis, thus arayd,
More hidden are, then Sunne in cloudy vele;
Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,
Hath hither brought, for succour to appele:
The which the powres to thee are pleased to
reuele.

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe descryde, Was all abasht, and her pure yuory Into a cleare Carnation suddeine dyde; As faire Aurora rising hastily, Doth by her blushing tell, that she did lye Il night in old Tithonus frosen bed, Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly. But her old Nourse was nought dishartened, But vauntage made of that, which Merlin had ared.

And sayd, Sith then thou knowest all our griefe, (For what doest not thou know?) of grace I pray,

Pitty our plaint, and yield vs meet reliefe. With that the Prophet still awhile did stay, And then his spirite thus gan forth display; Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore Hast learn'd to loue, let no whit thee dismay The hard begin, that meets thee in the dore, And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth sore.

22

For so must all things excellent begin,
And eke enrooted deepe must be that Tree,
Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin,
Till they to heauens hight forth stretched bee.
For from thy wombe a famous Progenie
Shall spring, out of the auncient *Troian* blood,
Which shall reviue the sleeping memorie
Of those same antique Peres the heauens brood,
Which Greeke and Asian rivers stained with
their blood.

Renowmed kings, and sacred Emperours,
Thy fruitfull Ofspring, shall from thee descend;
Braue Captaines, and most mighty warriours,
That shall their conquests through all lands
extend,

And their decayed kingdomes shall amend: The feeble Britons, broken with long warre, They shall vpreare, and mightily defend Against their forrein foe, that comes from farre, Till vniuersall peace compound all civill iarre.

24

It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye, Glauncing vinwares in charmed looking glas, But the streight course of heauenly destiny, Led with eternall prouidence, that has Guided thy glaunce, to bring his will to pas: Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill, To loue the prowest knight, that euer was. Therefore submit thy wayes vinto his will, And do by all dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.

But read (said Glauce) thou Magitian

What meanes shall she out seeke, or what wayes take?

How shall she know, how shall she find the man?

Or what needs her to toyle, sith fates can make Way for themselues, their purpose to partake? Then Merlin thus; Indeed the fates are firme, And may not shrinck, though all the world do shake:

Yet ought mens good endeuours them confirme, And guide the heavenly causes to their constant terme.

The man whom heauens haue ordaynd to bee The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall: He wonneth in the land of Fayerce, Yet is no Fary borne, ne sib at all To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall, And whilome by false Faries stolne away, Whiles yet in infant cradle he did crall; Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day, But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay.

But sooth he is the sonne of Gorloss. And brother vnto Cador Cornish king. And for his warlike feates renowmed is. From where the day out of the sea doth spring, Vntill the closure of the Euening.

From thence, him firmely bound with faithfull

To this his native soyle thou backe shalt bring, Strongly to aide his countrey, to withstand The powre of forrein Paynims, which inuade thy land.

Great aid thereto his mighty puissaunce, And dreaded name shall give in that sad day: Where also proofe of thy prow valiaunce Thouthenshaltmake, t'increase thy louers pray. Long time ye both in armes shall be are great sway, Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call, And his last fate him from thee take away. Too rathe cut off by practise criminall Of secret foes, that him shall make in mischiefe fall.

With thee yet shall he leave for memory Of his late puissaunce, his Image dead, That living him in all activity To thee shall represent. He from the head Of his coosin Constantius without dread Shall take the crowne, that was his fathers right, And therewith crownehimselfe in th'others stead: Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might, Against his Saxon foes in bloudy field to fight.

Like as a Lyon, that in drowsie caue Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he shake. And comming forth, shall spredhis banner braue Ouer the troubled South, that it shall make The warlike Mertians for feare to quake: Thrise shall he fight with them, and twise shall

But the third time shall faire accordaunce make: And if he then with victorie can lin. He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly

In.

His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him succeede In kingdome, but not in felicity; Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed, And with great honour many battels try: But at the last to th'importunity Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield. But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily Auenge his fathers losse, with speare and shield, And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

Behold the man, and tell me Britomart.

If ay more goodly creature thou didst see; How like a Gyaunt in each manly part Beares he himselfe with portly maiestee, That one of th'old Heroes seemes to bee: He the six Islands, comproundiall In auncient times vnto great Britainee. Shall to the same reduce, and to him call Their sundry kings to do their homage severall.

All which his sonne Careticus awhile Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppresse Vntill a straunger king from vnknowne soyle Arriving, him with multitude oppresse; Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne, Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse, Shall ouerswim the sea with many one Of his Norueyses, to assist the Britons fone.

He in his furie all shall ouerrunne. And holy Church with faithlesse hands deface, That thy sad people vtterly fordonne, Shall to the vtmost mountaines fly apace: Was neuer so great wast in any place, Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men: For all thy Cities they shall sacke and race, And the greene grasse, that groweth, they shall bren,

That even the wild beast shall dy in staruedden.

Whiles thus thy Britons do in languour pine, Proud *Etheldred* shall from the North arise. Seruing th'ambitious will of Augustine, And passing Dee with hardy enterprise, Shall backerepulse the valiaunt Brockwell twise And Bangor with massacred Martyrs fill; But the third time shall rew his foolhardise: For Cadwan pittying his peoples ill. Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons kill.

But after him, Cadwallin mightily On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall wreake: Ne shall auaile the wicked sorcery Of false Pellite, his purposes to breake. But him shall slay, and on a gallowes bleake Shall give th'enchaunter his vnhappy hire; Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake, From their long vassalage gin to respire, And on their Paynim foes auenge their ranckled

Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate. Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have slaine, Offricke and Osricke, twinnes vnfortunate, Both slaine in battell vpon Layburne plaine, Together with the king of Louthiane. Hight Adin, and the king of Orkeny, Both joynt partakers of their fatall paine: But Penda, fearefull of like desteny, Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and sweare fealty.

Him shall he make his fatall Instrument. T'afflict the other Saxons vnsubdewd; He marching forth with fury insolent Against the good king Oswald, who indewd With heavenly powre, and by Angels reskewd, All holding crosses in their hands on hye. Shall him defeate withouten bloud imbrewd: Of which, that field for endlesse memory, Shall Heuenfield be cald to all posterity.

Where at Cadwallin wroth, shall forth issew, And an huge hoste into Northumber lead, With which he godly Oswald shall subdew, And crowne with martyrdome his sacred head.

Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like dread, With price of silver shall his kingdome buy. And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread, Shall tread adowne, and do him fowly dye, But shall with gifts his Lord Cadwallin pacify.

Then shall Cadwallin dye, and then the raine Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye; Ne shall the good Cadwallader with paine, Or powre, be hable it to remedy, When the full time prefixt by destiny, Shalbe expired of Britons regiment. For heaven it selfe shall their successe enuy, And them with plagues and murrins pestilent Consume, till all their warlike puissaunce be spent.

Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills Of dying people, during eight yeares space, Cadwallader not yielding to his ills. From Armoricke, where long in wretched He liu'd, returning to his native place, Shalbe by vision staid from his intent: For th'heauens haue decreed, to displace The Britons, for their sinnes dew punishment,

And to the Saxons over-give their government.

42

Then woe, and woe, and euerlasting woe, Be to the Briton babe, that shalbe borne, To liue in thraldome of his fathers foe; Late King, now captine, late Lord, now forlorne, The worlds reproch, the cruell victors scorne, Banisht from Princely bowre to wastfull wood: O who shall helpe me to lament, and mourne The royall seed, the antique Troian blood, Whose Empire lenger here, then euer any stood.

The Damzell was full deepe empassioned, Both for his griefe, and for her peoples sake, Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned, And sighing sore, at length him thus bespake, Ah but will heavens fury neuer slake, Nor vengeaunce huge relent it selfe at last? Will not long misery late mercy make, But shall their name for euer be defast, And quite from of the earth their memory be rast?

Nay but the terme (said he) is limited, That in this thraldome Britons shall abide, And the just revolution measured. That they as Straungers shalbe notifide. For twise four chundreth yeares shalbe supplide. Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee. And their importune fates all satisfide: Yet during this their most obscuritee, Their beames shall oft breake forth, that men them faire may see.

For Rhodoricke, whose surname shalbe Great, Shall of him selfe a braue ensample shew, That Saxon kings his friendship shall intreat; And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew The saluage minds with skill of just and trew; Then Griffyth Conan also shall vp reare His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew Of native courage, that his foes shall feare, Least backe againe the kingdome he from them should beare.

Ne shall the Saxons sclues all peaceably Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons wonne

First ill, and after ruled wickedly: For ere two hundred yeares be full outronne, There shall a Rauen far from rising Sunne, With his wide wings vpon them fiercely fly, And bid his faithlesse chickens ouerronne The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty, In their auenge, tread downe the victours surquedry.

Yet shall a third both these, and thine subdew; There shall a Lyon from the sea-bord wood Of Neustria come roring, with a crew Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood, Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood, That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend Th'vsurped crowne, as if that he were wood, And the spoile of the countrey conquered Emongst his young ones shall diuide with bountyhed.

4

Tho when the terme is full accomplished,

There shall a sparke of fire, which hath long-

Bene in his ashes raked vp, and hid,
Be freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
Of Mona, where it lurked in exile; [flame,
Which shall breake forth into bright burning
And reach into the house, that beares the stile
Of royall maiesty and soueraigne name;
So shall the Briton bloud their crowne againe
reclame.

40

Thenceforth eternall vnion shall be made Betweene the nations different afore, And sacred Peace shall louingly perswade The warlike minds, to learne her goodly lore, And ciule armes to exercise no more: Then shall a royall virgin raine, which shall Stretch her white rod ouer the Belgicke shore, And the great Castle smite so sore with all, That it shall make him shake, and shortly learne to fall.

50

But yet the end is not. There Merlin stayd, As ouercomen of the spirites powre, Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd, That secretly he saw, yet note discoure: Which suddein fit, and halfe extatick stoure When the two fearefull women saw, they grew Greatly confused in behauioure; At last the fury past, to former hew Hee turndagaine, and chearefull looks (as earst) did shew.

- 5

Then, when them schoes they well instructed had Of all, that needed them to be inquird, They both conceiuing hope of comfort glad, With lighter hearts vnto their home retird: Where they in secret counsell close conspird, How to effect so hard an enterprize, And to possesse the purpose they desird: Now this, now that twixt them they did deuise, And diuerse plotsdid frame, to maske in strange disguise.

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit Conceiu'd a bold deuise, and thus bespake; Daughter, I deeme that counsell aye most fit. That of the time doth dew aduauntage take; Ye see that good king Vther now doth make Strong warre vpon the Paynim brethren, hight Octa and Oza, whom he lately brake Beside Cayr Verolame, in victorious fight, That now all Britanie doth burne in armes bright.

16.

That therefore nought our passage may empeach, Let vs in feigned armes our sclues disguize, And our weake hands (whom need new strength shall teach)

The dreadfull speare and shield to exercize: Ne certes daughter that same warlike wize I weene, would you misseeme; for ye bene tall, And large of limbe, t'atchieue an hard emprize, Ne ought ye want, but skill, which practize small

Will bring, and shortly make you a mayd Martiall.

5.1

And sooth, it ought your courage much inflame, To heare so often, in that royall hous, From whence to none inferiour ye came, Bards tell of many women valorous Which haue full many feats aduenturous Performd, in paragone of proudest men: The bold Bunduca, whose victorious Exploitsmade Rome to quake, stout Guendolen. Renowned Martia, and redoubted Emmilen.

55

And that, which more then all the rest may sway,
Late dayes ensample, which these eyes beheld,
In the last field before Meneuia
Which Vther with those forrein Pagans held.
I saw a Saxon Virgin, the which feld
Great Vlfin thrise you the bloudy plaine,
And had not Carados her hand withheld
From rash reuenge, she had him surely slaine,
Yet Carados himselfe from her escapt with paine.

56

Ah read, (quoth Britomart) how is she hight? Faire Angela (quoth she) men do her call, No whit lesse faire, then terrible in fight: She hath the leading of a Martiall And mighty people, dreaded more then all The other Saxons, which do for her sake And loue, themselues of her name Angles call. Therefore faire Infant her ensample make Vnto thy selfe, and equall courage to thee take.

For harty words so deepe into the mynd Of the young Damzell sunke, that great desire Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd, And generous stout courage did inspire, That she resolu'd, vnweeting to her Sire, Aduent'rous knighthood on her selfe to don, Andcounseld withher Nourse, her Maidesattire To turne into a massy habergeon, And bad her all things put in readinesse anon.

58

Th'old woman nought, that needed, did omit; But all things did conucniently puruay: It fortuned (so time their turne did fit) A band of Britons ryding on forray Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray Of Saxon goods, emongst the which was seene A goodly Armour, and full rich aray, Which long'd to Angela, the Saxon Queene, All fretted round with gold, and goodly well bescene.

The same, with all the other ornaments,
King Ryence caused to be hanged hy
In his chiefe Church, for endlesse moniments
Of his successe and gladfull victory:
Of which her selfe auising readily,
In th'euening late old Glauce thither led
Faire Britomart, and that same Armory
Downe taking, her therein apparcled,
Well as she might, and with braue bauldrick
garnished.

Beside those armes there stood a mighty speare, Which Bladud made by Magick art of yore, And vsd the same in battell aye to beare; Sith which it had bin here preseru'd in store, For his great vertues proued long afore: For neuer wight so fast in sell could sit, But him perforce vnto the ground it bore: Both speare she tooke, and shield, which hong by it:

30th speare and shield of great powre, for her purpose fit.

Thus when she had the virgin all arayd, Another harnesse, which did hang thereby, About her selfe she dight, that the young Mayd She might in equall armes accompany, And as her Squire attend her carefully: Tho to their ready Steeds they clombe full light,

And through back wayes, that none might them espy,

Couered with secret cloud of silent night, Themselues they forth conuayd, and passed forward right. 62

Ne rested they, till that to Faery lond
They came, as Merlin them directed late:
Where meeting with this Rederosse knight, she
Of diuerse things discourses to dilate, [fond
But most of Arthegall, and his estate.
At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part:
Then each to other well affectionate,
Friendship professed with vnfained hart,
The Rederosse knight diuerst, but forth rode
Britomart.

## Cant. IIII.

### €15€3€15€15€15€15€15€15€15€15€15€15€15€15

Bold Marinell of Britomart, Is throwne on the Rich strond: Faire Florimell of Arthur is Long followed, but not fond.

#### 

1

Where is the Antique glory now become, That whilome wont in women to appeare? Where be the braue atchieuements doen by some?

Where be the battels, where the shield and speare,

And all the conquests, which them high did reare, That matter made for famous Poets verse, And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare? Bene they all dead, and laid in dolefull herse? Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reuerse?

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore: But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake: For all too long I burne with enuy sore, To heare the warlike feates, which Homerespake Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake Of Greekish bloud so oft in Troian plaine; But when I read, how stout Debora strake Proud Sisera, and how Camill' hath slaine The huge Orsilochus, I swell with great disdaine.

Yet these, and all that else had puissaunce, Cannot with noble *Britomart* compare, Aswell for glory of great valiaunce, As for pure chastitie and vertue rare, That all her goodly deeds do well declare. Well worthy stock, from which the branches sprong,

That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare, As thee, O Queene, the matter of my song, Whose lignage from this Lady I deriue along. .

Who when through speaches with the Redcrosse knight.

She learned had th'estate of Arthegall,
And in each point her selfe informd aright,
A friendly league of loue perpetuall
She with him bound, and Congé tooke withall.
Then he forth on his iourney did proceede,
To seeke aduentures, which mote him befall,
And win him worship through his warlike deed,
Whichalwayes of his paines hemade the chiefest
meed.

But Britomart kept on her former course,
Ne euer dofte her armes, but all the way
Grew pensiue through that amorous discourse,
By which the Redcrosse knight did earst display
Her louers shape, and cheualrous aray;
A thousand thoughts she fashioned in her mind,
And in her feigning fancie did pourtray
Him such, as fittest she for loue could find,
Wise, warlike, personable, curteous, and kind.

6

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound she fed,

And thought so to beguile her grieuous smart; But so her smart was much moregrieuous bred, And the deepe wound more deepe engord her hart,

That nought but death her dolour mote depart. So forth she rode without repose or rest, Searching all lands and each remotest part, Following the guidance of her blinded guest, Till that to the sea-coast at length she her addrest.

There she alighted from her light-foot beast,
And sitting downe vpon the rocky shore,
Bad her old Squire vnlace her lofty creast;
Tho hauing vewd a while the surges hore,
That gainst the craggy clifts did loudly rore,
And in their raging surquedry disdaynd,
That the fast earth affronted them so sore,
And their deuouring couetize restraynd,
Thereat she sighed deepe, and after thus complaynd.

Huge sea of sorrow, and tempestuous griefe, Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long, Far from the hoped hauen of reliefe, Why do thy cruell billowes beat so strong, Andthymoystmountaineseachonothersthrong, Threatning to swallow vp my fearefull life? O do thy cruell wrath and spightfull wrong At length allay, and stint thy stormy strife, Which in these troubled bowels raignes, and rageth rife.

For else my feeble vessell crazd, and crackt Through thy strong buffets and outrageous blowes.

Cannot endure, but needs it must be wrackt On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes, The whiles that loue it steres, and fortune rowes; Loue my lewd Pilot hath a restlesse mind And fortune Boteswaine no assuraunce knowes, But saile withouten starres gainst tide and wind:

How can they other do, sith both are bold and blind?

Thou God of winds, that raignest in the seas,
That raignest also in the Continent,
At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,
The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,
Vnto the gladsome port of her intent:
Then when I shall my selfe in safety see,
A table for eternall moniment
Of thy great grace, and my great ieopardee,
Great Neptune, I auow to hallow unto thee.

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,
She shut vp all her plaint in priuy griefe;
For her great courage would not let her weepe,
Till that old Glauce gan with sharpe repriefe,
Her to restraine, and giue her good reliefe,
Through hope of those, which Merlin had her
told

Should of her name and nation be chiefe, And fetch their being from the sacred mould Of her immortall wombe, to be in heaven enrold.

12

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde, Where farre away one all in armour bright, With hastie gallop towards her did ryde; Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight Her Helmet, to her Courser mounting light: Her former sorrow into suddein wrath, Both coosen passions of distroubled spright, Conuerting, forth she beates the dustie path; Loue and despight attonce her courage kindled hath.

As when a foggy mist hath ouercast
The face of heauen, and the cleare aire engrost,
The world in darkenesse dwels, till that at last
The watry Southwinde from the seabord cost
Vyblowing, doth disperse the vapour lo'st,
And poures it selfe forth in a stormy showre;
So the faire Britomart hauing disclo'st
Her clowdy care into a wrathfull stowre,
The mist of griefe dissolu'd, did into vengeance
powre.

Iftsoones her goodly shield addressing faire. That mortall speare she in her hand did take. And vnto battell did her selfe prepaire. The knight approching, sternely her bespake: Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make By this forbidden way in my despight, Ne doest by others death ensample take, I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might, east afterwards it be too late to take thy flight.

Ithrild with deepe disdaine of his proud threat. She shortly thus; Fly they, that need to fly; Words fearen babes. I meane not thee entreat To passe; but maugre thee will passe or dy. Ne lenger stayd for th'other to reply But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly

Strongly the straunge knight ran, and sturdily Strooke her full on the brest, that made her

downe Decline her head, and touch her crouper with her crowne.

But she againe him in the shield did smite With so fierce furie and great puissaunce, That through his threesquare scuchin percing quite,

And through his mayled hauberque, by mischaunce

The wicked steele through his left side did Him so transfixed she before her bore Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce, Till sadly soucing on the sandie shore,

He tombled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

Like as the sacred Oxe, that carelesse stands With gilden hornes, and flowry girlonds crownd, Proud of his dying honor and deare bands, Whiles th'altars fume with frank incense around, All suddenly with mortall stroke astownd, Dothgroueling fall, and with his streaming gore Distaines the pillours, and the holy grownd, And the faire flowres, that decked him afore; So fell proud Marinell vpon the pretious shore.

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament, But forward rode, and kept her readie way Along the strond, which as she ouer-went, She saw bestrowed all with rich aray Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay, And all the grauell mixt with golden owre; Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay For gold, or perles, or pretious stones an howre, But them despised all; for all was in her powre. SPENSER

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment, Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare: His mother was the blacke-browd Cymoent, The daughter of great Nereus, which did beare This warlike sonne vnto an earthly peare, The famous Dumarin; who on a day Finding the Nymph a sleepe in secret wheare, As he by chaunce did wander that same way, Was taken with her loue, and by her closely lay.

There he this knight of her begot, whom borne She of his father Marinell did name. And in a rocky caue as wight forlorne, Long time she fostred vp, till he became A mightie man at armes, and mickle fame Didget through great aduentures by him donne: For neuer man he suffred by that same Rich strond to trauell, whereas he did wonne, But that he must do battell with the Seanymphes sonne.

An hundred knights of honorable name He had subdew'd, and them his vassals made, That through all Farie lond his noble fame Now blazed was, and feare did all inuade, That none durst passen through that perilous glade.

And to aduance his name and glorie more, Her Sea-god syre she dearely did perswade, T'endowher sonne with threasure and richstore, Boue all the sonnes, that were of earthly wombes ybore.

The God did graunt his daughters deare demaund, To doen his Nephew in all riches flow; Eftsoones his heaped waves he did commaund. Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw All the huge threasure, which the sea below Had in his greedie gulfe deuoured deepe, And him enriched through the ouerthrow Andwreckesofmanywretches, which didweepe, And often waile their wealth, which he from them did keepe.

Shortly vpon that shore there heaped was, Exceeding riches and all pretious things. The spoyle of all the world, that it did pas The wealth of th'East, and pompe of Persian kings;

Gold, amber, yuorie, perles, owches, rings, And all that else was pretious and deare, The sea vnto him voluntary brings, That shortly he a great Lord did appeare, As was in all the lond of Faery, or elsewheare.

Thereto he was a doughtie dreaded knight,
Tryde often to the scath of many deare,
That none in equal arms him matchen
might,

The which his mother seeing, gan to feare Least his too haughtie hardines might reare Some hard mishap, in hazard of his life: For thy she oft him counseld to forbeare The bloudie battell, and to stirre vp strife, But after all his warre, to rest his wearie knife.

25

And for his more assurance, she inquir'd
One day of *Proteus* by his mightic spell,
(For *Proteus* was with prophecie inspir'd)
Her deare sonnes destinie to her to tell,
And the sad end of her sweet *Marinell*.
Who through foresight of his eternall skill,
Bad her from womankind to keepe him well:
For of a woman he should haue much ill,
A virgin strange and stout him should dismay,
or kill.

26

For thy she gaue him warning euery day,
The loue of women not to entertaine;
A lesson too too hard for liuing clay,
From loue in course of nature to refraine:
Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,
And euer from faire Ladies loue did fly;
Yet many Ladies faire did oft complaine,
That they for loue of him would algates dy:
Dy, who so list for him, he was loues enimy.

27

But ah, who can deceive his destiny,
Or weene by warning to anoyd his fate?
That when he sleepes in most security,
And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,
And findeth dew effect or soone or late.
So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.
His mother bad him womens loue to hate,
For she of womans force did feare no horme;
So weening to haue arm'd him, she did quite
disarme.

28

This was that woman, this that deadly wound, That Proteus prophecide should him dismay, The which his mother vainely did expound, To be hart-wounding loue, which should assav To bring her sonne vnto his last decay. So tickle be the termes of mortall state, And full of subtile sophismes, which do play With double senses, and with false debate, T'approue the vnknowen purpose of eternall tate.

29

Too true the famous Marinell it fownd, Whothrough late triall, on that wealthy Strond Inglorious now lies in senselesse swownd, Through heauy stroke of Britomartis hond. Which when his mother deare did understond, And heauy tydings heard, whereas she playd Amongst her watry sisters by a pond, Gathering sweet daffadillyes, to haue made Gay girlonds, from the Sun their forheads faire to shade:

-

Eftsoones both flowres and girlonds farre away She flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent, To sorrow huge she turnd her former play, And gamesom merth to grieuous dreriment: She threw her selfe downe on the Continent, Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne, Whiles all her sisters did for her lament, Withyelling outcries, and with shricking sowne; And euery one did teare her girlond from her crowne.

Soone as she vp out of her deadly fit
Arose, she bad her charet to be brought,
And all her sisters, that with her did sit,
Bad eke attonce their charets to be sought;
Tho full of bitter griefe and pensiue thought;
She to her wagon clombe; clombe all the rest,
And forth together went, with sorrow fraught.
The waues obedient to their beheast,
Them yielded readie passage, and their rage
surceast.

32

Great Neptune stood amazed at their sight, Whileson his broad round backe they softly slid And eke himselfe mournd at their mournfull plight,

Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet did For great compassion of their sorrow, bid Ilis mightie waters to them buxome bee: Eftsoones the roaring billowes still abid, And all the griesly Monsters of the See Stood gaping at their gate, and wondred them to see.

.3.3

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray,
Drew the smooth charet of sad Cymoent;
They were all taught by Triton, to obay
To the long raynes, at her commaundement:
As swift as swallowes, on the waues they went,
That their broad flaggie finnes no forme did reare,
Ne bubbling roundell they behind them sent;
The rest of other fishes drawen weare,
Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did
sheare.

34
Soone as they bene arriu'd vpon the brim
Of the Rich strond, their charets they forlore,
And let their temed fishes softly swim
Along the margent of the fomy shore, [sore
Least they their finnes should bruze, and surbate
Their tender feet vpon the stony ground:
And comming to the place, where all in gore
And cruddy bloud enwallowed they found
The lucklesse Marinell, lying in deadly swound;

His mother swowned thrise, and the third time Could scarce recourred be out of her paine; Had she not bene deuoyd of mortall slime, She should not then haue bene reliu'd againe, But soone as life recouered had the raine, She made so piteous mone and deare wayment, That the hard rocks could scarse from teares refraine,

And all her sister Nymphes with one consent Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad complement.

Deare image of my selfe (she said) that is, The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne, Is this thine high aduauncement, O is this Th'immortall name, with which thee yet vnborne

Thy Gransire *Nereus* promist to adorne? Now lyest thou of life and honor reft; Now lyest thou a lumpe of earth forlorne, Ne of thy late life memory is left, Ne can thy irreuocable destiny be weft?

Fond Proteus, father of false prophecis, And they more fond, that credit to thee giue, Not this the worke of womans hand ywis, That so deepe wound through these deare members driue.

I feared loue: but they that loue do liue, But they that die, doe neither loue nor hate. Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgiue, And to my selfe, and to accursed fate

The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisedome bought too late.

O what auailes it of immortall seed
To beene ybred and neuer borne to die?
Farre better I it deeme to die with speed,
Then waste in woe and wailefull miserie.
Who dyes the vtmost dolour doth abye,
But who that liues, is left to waile his losse:
So life is losse, and death felicitie.
Sad life worse then glad death: and greater
crosse [engrosse.
Tosee friends graue, then dead the graue selfe to

But if the heauens did his dayes enuie, And my short blisse maligne, yet mote they well Thus much afford me, ere that he did die That the dim eyes of my deare *Marinell* I mote haue closed, and him bed farewell, Sith other offices for mother meet They would not graunt.

Yet maulgre them farewell, my sweetest sweet; Farewell my sweetest sonne, sith we no more shall meet.

Thus when they all had sorrowed their fill, They softly gan to search his griesly wound: And that they might him handle more at will, They himdisarm'd, and spredding on the ground Their watchet mantles frindgd with siluerround, They softly wipt away the gelly blood From th'orifice; which hauing well ypbound, They pourd in soueraine balme, and Nectar good.

Good both for earthly med'cine, and for heauenly food.

Tho when the lilly handed Liagore,
(This Liagore whylome had learned skill
In leaches craft, by great Appolloes lore,
Sith her whylome vpon high Pindus hill,
He loued, and at last her wombe did fill
With heauenly seed, whereof wise Paonsprong)
Did feele his pulse, she knew their staied still
Some litle life his feeble sprites emong;
Which to his mother told, despeire she from her
flong.

Tho vp him taking in their tender hands,
They easily vnto her charet beare:
Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
And strow with flowres the lamentable beare:
Then all the rest into their coches clim,
And through the brackish waues their passage
sheare:

Vpon great Neptunes necke they softly swim, And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre
Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,
Like to thicke cloudes, that threat a stormy
showre.

And vauted all within, like to the sky,
In which the Gods do dwell eternally:
There they him laid in easie couch well dight;
And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply
Salues to his wounds, and medicines of might:
For Tryphon of sea gods the soueraine leach is hight.

The whiles the Nymphes sit all about him round, Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight; And oft his mother vewing his wide wound, Cursed the hand, that did so deadly smight Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight. But none of all those curses overtooke The warlike Maid, th'ensample of that might, But fairely well she thriu'd, and well did brooke Her noble deeds, ne her right course for ought forsooke.

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew, To bring to passe his mischieuous intent,

Now that he had her singled from the crew Ofcourteousknights, the Prince, and Faerygent, Whom late in chace of beautie excellent She left, pursewing that same foster strong; Of whose foule outrage they impatient, And full of fiery zeale, him followed long, To reskew her from shame, and to reuenge her wrong.

. ....В.

Through thick and thin, through mountaines and through plains.

Those two great champions did attonce pursew
The fearefull damzell, with incessant paines:
Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew
Ot hunter swift, and sent of houndes trew.
At last they came vnto a double way,
Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskew,
Themselues they did dispart, each to assay,
Whether more happie were, to win so goodly
pray.

47

But Timias, the Princes gentle Squire,
That Ladies loue vnto his Lord forlent,
And with proud enuy, and indignant ire,
After that wicked foster fiercely went.
So beene they three three sundry wayes ybent.
But fairest fortune to the Prince befell,
Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did repent,
To take that way, in which that Damozell
Was fled afore, affraid of him, as feend of hell.

48

At last of her farre off he gained vew:
Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,
And euer as he nigher to her drew,
So euermore he did increase his speed,
And of each turning still kept warie heed:
Aloud to her he oftentimes did call,
To doe away vaine doubt, and needlesse dreed:
Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
Many meeke wordes, to stay and comfort her
withall.

But nothing might relent her hastie flight; So deepe the deadly feare of that foule swaine Was earst impressed in her gentle spright: Likeasa fearefull Doue, which through theraine, Of the wide aire her way does cut amaine, Hauing farre off espyde a Tassell gent, Which after her his nimble wings doth straine, Doubleth her haste for feare to be for-hent, And with her pineons cleaues the liquid firmament.

With no lesse haste, and eke with no lesse dreed,
That fearefull Ladie fled from him, that ment
To her no euill thought, nor euill deed;
Yet former feare of being fowly shent,
Carried her forward with her first intent:
And though oft looking backward, well she

Her selfe freed from that foster insolent, And that it was a knight, which now her sewd, Yet she no lesse the knight feard, then that villein rude.

His vncouth shield and straunge armes her dismayd.

Whose like in Faery lond were seldome seene, That fast she from him fled, no lesse affrayd, Then of wilde beastes if she had chased beene: Yet he her followd still with courage keene, So long that now the golden Hesperus Was mounted high in top of heauen sheene, And warnd his other brethren ioyeous, To light their blessed lamps in loues eternall hous.

All suddenly dim woxe the dampish ayre,
And griesly shadowes couered heauen bright,
That now with thousand starres was decked
fayre;

Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull sight, And that perforce, for want of lenger light, He mote surcease his suit, and lose the hope Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte His wicked fortune, that had turnd aslope, And cursed night, that reft from him so goodly scope.

Tho when her wayes he could no more descry, But to and fro at disauenture strayd; Like as a ship, whose Lodestarre suddenly Couered with cloudes, her Pilot hath dismayd; His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd, And from his loftie steed dismounting low, Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he layd Vpon the grassie ground, to sleepe a throw; The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his pillow.

But gentle Sleepe enuyde him any rest; In stead thereof sad sorrow, and disdaine Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest, And thousand fancies bet his idle braine With their light wings, the sights of semblants vaine:

Oft did he wish, that Lady faire mote bee His Faery Queene, for whom he did complaine: Or that his Faery Queene were such, as shee: And euer hastie Night he blamed bitterlie.

-

Night thou foule Mother of annoyance sad, Sister of heauie death, and nourse of woe, Which wast begot in heauen, but for thy bad And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below, Where by the grim floud of *Cocytus* slow Thy dwelling is, in *Herebus* blacke hous, (Blacke *Herebus* thy husband is the foe Of all the Gods) where thou vngratious, Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horrour hideous.

56

What had th'eternall Maker need of thee,
The world in his continuall course to keepe,
That doest all things deface, ne lettest see
The beautie of his worke? Indeed in sleepe
The slouthfull bodie, that doth loue to steepe
Hislustlesse limbes, and drowne hisbaser mind,
Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygiandeepe
Calles thee, his goddesse in his error blind,
And great Dame Natures handmaide, chearing
euery kind.

57

But well I wote, that to an heauy hart Thou art the root and nurse of bitter cares, Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts: In stead of rest thou lendest rayling teares, In stead of sleepe thousendest troublous feares, And dreadfull visions, in the which aliue The drearie image of sad death appeares: So from the wearie spirit thou doest driue Desired rest, and men of happinesse depriue.

58

Vnder thy mantle blacke there hidden lye,
Light-shonning theft, and traiterous intent,
Abhorred bloudshed, and vile felony,
Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent;
Foule horror, and eke hellish dreriment:
All these I wote in thy protection bee,
And light doe shonne, for feare of being shent:
For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee,
And all that lewdnesse loue, doe hate the light
to see.

For day discouers all dishonest wayes,
And sheweth each thing, as it is indeed:
The prayses of high God he faire displayes
And his large bountie rightly doth areed.
Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed,
Which darknesse shall subdew, and heauen
win:

Truth is his daughter; he her first did breed, Most sacred virgin, without spot of sin. Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth begin.

60

O when will day then turne to me againe, And bring with him his long expected light? O Tilan, haste to reare thy ioyous waine: Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames bright, And chase away this too long lingring night, Chase her away, from whence she came, to hell. She, she it is, that hath me done despight: There let her with the damned spirits dwell, And yeeld her roome to day, that can it gouerne well.

٨t

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare, In restlesse anguish and vnquiet paine: And earely, ere the morrow did vpreare His deawy head out of the *Ocean* maine, He vp arose, as halfe in great disdaine, And clombe vnto his steed. So forth he went, With heauie looke and lumpish pace, that plaine

In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent His steed eke seem'd t'apply his steps to his

intent.

# Cant. V.

### 

Prince Arthur heares of Florimell: three fosters Timias wound, Belphebe finds him almost dead, and reareth out of sownd.

### 

.

Wonder it is to see, in diuerse minds,
How diuersly loue doth his pageants play,
And shewes his powre in variable kinds:
The baser wit, whose idle thoughts alway
Are wont to cleaue vnto the lowly clay,
It stirreth vp to sensuall desire,
And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day:
But in braue sprite it kindles goodly fire,
That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

Ne suffereth it vncomely idlenesse,
In his free thought to build her sluggish nest:
Ne suffereth it thought of vngentlenesse,
Euer to creepe into his noble brest,
But to the highest and the worthiest
Lifteth it vp, that else would lowly fall:
It lets not fall, it lets it not to rest:
It lets not scarse this Prince to breath at all,
But to his first poursuit him forward still doth
call.

Who long time wandred through the forrest wyde,

To finde some issue thence, till that at last He met a Dwarfe, that seemed terrifyde With some late perill, which he hardly past, Or other accident, which him aghast; Of whom he asked, whence he lately came, And whither now he trauelled so fast: Forsoreheswat, and running through that same Thicke forest, was bescratcht, and both his feet nigh lame.

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,
The Dwarfe him answerd, Sir, ill mote I stay
To tell the same. I lately did depart
From Faery court, where I haue many a day
Serued a gentle Lady of great sway,
And high accompt through out all Elfin land,
Who lately left the same, and tooke this way:
Her now I seeke, and if ye vnderstand
Which way she fared hath, good Sir tell out of
hand.

What mister wight (said he) and how arayd?
Royally clad (quoth he) in cloth of gold,
As meetest may beseeme a noble mayd;
Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrold,
A fairer wight did neuer Sunne behold,
And on a Palfrey rides more white then snow,
Yet she her selfe is whiter manifold:
The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
Is, that she is the fairest wight aliue, I trow.

Now certes swaine (said he) such one I weene. Fast flying through this forest from her fo, A foule ill fauoured foster, I haue seene; Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho, But could not stay; so fast she did forcgoc, Carried away with wings of speedy feare. Ah dearest God (quoth he) that is great woe, And wondrous ruth to all, that shall it heare. But can ye read Sir, how I may her find, or where?

Perdy me leuer were to weeten that, (Said he) then ransome of the richest knight, Or all the good that euer yet I gat:
But froward fortune, and too forward Night Such happinesse did, maulgre, to me spight, And fro me reft both life and light attone.
But Dwarfe aread, what is that Lady bright, That through this forest wandreth thus alone; For of her errour straunge I haue great ruth and mone.

That Lady is (quoth he) where so she bee,
The bountiest virgin, and most debonaire,
That euer liuing eye I weene did see;
Liues nonethis day, that may with her compare
In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
The goodly ornaments of beautie bright;
And is ycleped Florimell the faire,
Faire Florimell belou'd of many a knight,
Yet she loues none but one, that Marinell is
hight.

A Sea-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight, Of my deare Dame is loued dearely well; In other none, but him, she sets delight, All her delight is set on Marinell; But he sets nought at all by Florimell: For Ladies loue his mother long ygoe Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell.

But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe He is yslaine, which is the ground of all our woe.

Fiue dayes there be, since he (they say) was

slaine,
And foure, since Florimell the Court for-went,
And vowed neuer to returne againe,
Till him aliue or dead she did inuent.
Therefore, faire Sir, for loue of knighthood gent,
And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may
By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,
Or succour her, or me direct the way;
Do one, or other good, I you most humbly pray.

So may ye gaine to you full great renowme,
Of all good Ladies through the world so wide,
And haply in her hart find highest rowme,
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide:
At least eternall meede shall you abide.
To whom the Prince; Dwarfe, comfort to thee
take,

For till thou tidings learne, what her betide, I here auow thee neuer to forsake.

Ill weares he armes, that nill them vse for Ladies sale.

т.

So with the Dwarfe he backe return'd againe, To seeke his Lady, where he mote her find; But by the way he greatly gan complaine The want of his good Squire late left behind, For whom he wondrous pensiue grew in mind, For doubt of daunger, which mote him betide; For him he loued aboue all mankind, Hauing him trew and faithfull euer tride, And bold, as euer Squire that waited by knights side.

Who all this while full hardly was assayd
Of deadly daunger, which to him betid;
For whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd,
After that foster fowle he fiercely rid,
To bene auenged of the shame, he did
To that faire Damzell: Him he chaced long
Through the thicke woods, wherein he would
haue hid

His shamefull head from his auengement strong, And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong.

Nathlesse the villen sped him selfe so well, Whetherthroughswiftnesse of his speedy beast, Or knowledge of those woods, where he did dwell.

That shortly he from daunger was releast, And out of sight escaped at the least; Yet not escaped from the dew reward Of his bad deeds, which dayly he increast, Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard The heavy plague, that for such leachours is prepard.

For soone as he was vanisht out of sight, His coward courage gan emboldned bee, And cast t'auenge him of that fowle despight, Which he had borne of his bold enimee. Tho to his brethren came: for they were three Vngratious children of one gracelesse sire, And vnto them complained, how that he Had vsed bene of that foolehardy Squire; So them with bitter words he stird to bloudy ire.

16

Forthwith themselues with their sadinstruments
Of spoyle and murder they gan arme byliue,
And with him forth into the forest went,
To wreake the wrath, which he did earst reuiue
In their sterne brests, on him which late did
driue

Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight: For they had vow'd, that neuer he aliue Out of that forest should escape their might; Vile rancour their rude harts had fild with such despight.

17

Within that wood there was a couert glade, Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne, Through which it was vneath for wight to wade; And now by fortune it was ouerflowne:

By that same way they knew that Squire vnknowne

Mote algates passe; for thy themselues they set There in await, with thicke woodsouer growne, And all the while their malice they did whet With cruell threats, his passage through the ford to let.

18 • fortunal on their desired

It fortuned, as they deuized had,
The gentle Squire came ryding that same way,
Vnweeting of their wile and treason bad,
And through the ford to passen did assay;
But that fierce foster, which late fled away,
Stoutly forth stepping on the further shore,
Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,
Till he had made amends, and full restore
For all the damage, which he had him doen afore

10

With that at him a quiu'ring dart he threw, With so fell force and villeinous despighte, That through his haberieon the forkehead flew, And through the linked may lesc empierced quite, But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite: That stroke the hardy Squire did sore displease, But more that him he could not come to smite; For by no meanes the high banke he could sease, But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine disease.

And still the foster with his long bore-speare
Him kept from landing at his wished will;
Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,
And fethered with an vulucky quill;
The wicked steele stayd not, till it did light
In his left thigh, and deepely did it thrill:
Exceeding griefe that wound in him empight,
But more that with his foes he could not come
to fight.

At last through wrath and vengeaunce making way,

He on the bancke arriu'd with mickle paine, Where the third brother him did sore assay, And droue at him with all his might and maine A forrest bill, which both his hands did straine; But warily he did auoide the blow, And with his speare requited him againe,

That both his sides were thrilled with the throw.

And a large streame of bloud out of the wound did flow.

He tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite

The bitter earth, and bad to let him in Into the balefull house of endlesse night, Where wicked ghosts do waile their former sin. Tho gan the battell freshly to begin; For nathemore for that spectacle bad, Did th'other two their cruell vengeaunce blin, But both attonce on both sides him bestad, And load ypon him layd, his life for to haue had.

2

Tho when that villain he auiz'd, which late Affrighted had the fairest Florimell, Full of fiers fury, and indignant hate, To him he turned, and with rigour fell Smote him so rudely on the Pannikell, That to the chin he cleft his head in twaine: Downe on the ground his carkas groueling fell; His sinfull soule with desperate disdaine, Out of her fleshly ferme fled to the place of paine.

24

That seeing now the onely last of three,
Who with that wicked shaft him wounded had,
Trembling with horrour, as that did foresee
The fearcfull end of his auengement sad,
Through which he follow should his brethren
bad,

His bootelesse bow in feeble hand vpcaught, And therewith shot an arrow at the lad; Which faintly fluttring, scarce his helmet raught,

And glauncing fell to ground, but him annoyed naught.

With that he would have fled into the wood;
But Timias him lightly ouerhent,
Right as he entring was into the flood,
And strooke at him with force so violent,
That headlesse him into the foord he sent:
The carkas with the streame was carried downe,
But th'head fell backeward on the Continent.
So mischief fel vpon the meaners crowne;
They three be dead with shame, the Squire liues
with renowne.

He liues, but takes small ioy of his renowne; For of that cruell wound he bled so sore, That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne; Yet still the bloud forth gusht in so great store, That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore. Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest Squire aliue, Else shall thy louing Lord thee see no more, But both of comfort him thou shalt depriue, And eke thy selfe of honour, which thou didst atchiue.

27

Prouidence heauenly passeth liuing thought, And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way; For loe great grace or fortune thither brought Comfort to him, that comfortlesse now lay. In those same woods, ye well remember may, How that a noble hunteresse did wonne, She, that base Braggadochio did affray, And made him fast out of the forrest runne; Belphabe was her name, as faire as Phabus sunne.

28

She on a day, as she pursewd the chace Of some wild east, which with her arrowes keene

She wounded had, the same along did trace By tract of bloud, which she had freshly seene, To haue besprinckled all the grassy greene; By the great persue, which she there perceau'd, Well hoped she the beast engor'd had beene, Andmade more hast, the life to haue bereau'd: But ah, her expectation greatly was deceau'd.

20

Shortly she came, whereas that woefull Squire With bloud deformed, lay in deadly swownd: In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire, The Christall humour stood congealed rownd; His locks, like faded leaues fallen to grownd, Knotted with bloud, in bounches rudely ran. And his sweete lips, on which before that stownd The bud of youth to blossome faire began, Spoild of their rosie red, were woxen pale and

30

Saw neuer liuing eye more heauy sight,
That could haue made a rocke of stone to rew.
Or riue in twaine: which when that Lady bright
Besides all hope with melting eyes did vew,
All suddeinly abasht she chaunged hew,
And with sterne horrour backward gan to start:
But when she better him beheld, she grew
Full of soft passion and vnwonted smart:
The point of pitty perced through her tender
hart.

Meekely she bowed downe, to weete if life
Yet in his frosen members did remaine,
And feeling by his pulses beating rife,
That the weake soule her seat did yet retaine,
She cast to comfort him with busie paine:
His double folded necke she reard ypright,
And rubd his temples, and each trembling
vaine;

His mayled haberieon she did vndight, And from his head his heavy burganet did light

Into the woods thenceforth in hast she went,
To seeke for hearbes, that mote him remedy;
For she of hearbes had great intendiment,
Taught of the Nymphe, which from her infancy
Her nourced had in trew Nobility:
There, whether it diuine Tobacco were,
Or Panachæa, or Polygony,
She found, and brought it to her patient deare
Who al this while lay bleeding out his hartbloud neare.

Thesoueraigne weedebetwixt two marbles plaine She pownded small, and did in peeces bruze, And then atweene her lilly handes waine, Into his wound the iuyee thereof did scruze, And round about, as she could well it vze, The flesh therewith she suppled and did steepe, T'abate all spasme, and soke the swelling bruze, And after having searcht the intuse deepe, She with her scarfe did bind the wound from cold to keepe.

By this he had sweete life recur'd againe,
And groning inly deepe, at last his eyes,
His watry eyes, drizling like deawy raine,
He vp gan lift toward the azure skies,
From whence descend all hopelesse remedies:
Therewith he sigh'd, and turning him aside,
The goodly Mayd full of diuinities,
And gifts of heauenly grace he by him spide,
Her bow and gilden quiuer lying him beside.

Mercy deare Lord (said he) what grace is this, That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight, To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis, To comfort me in my distressed plight? Angell, or Goddesse do I call thee right? What seruice may I do vnto thee meete, That hast from darkenesse me returnd to light, And with thy heauenly salues and med'cines sweete,

Hast drest my sinfull wounds? I kisse thy blessed feete.

Thereat she blushing said, Ah gentle Squire, Nor Goddesse I, nor Angell, but the Mayd, And daughter of a woody Nymphe, desire No seruice, but thy safety and ayd; Which if thou gaine, I shalbe well apayd. Wemortallwights whose liues and fortunes bee To commun accidents still open layd, Are bound with commun bond of frailtee, To succour wretched wights, whom we captued see.

By this her Damzels, which the former chace Had vndertaken after her, arriu'd, As did Belphabe, in the bloudy place, And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriu'd Of life, whom late their Ladies arrow ryu'd: For thy the bloudy tract they follow fast, And euery one to runne the swiftest stryu'd; But two of them the rest far ouerpast, And where their Lady was, arriued at the last.

Where when they saw that goodly boy, with blood
Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wownd,
They wondred much, and shortly enderstood,
How him in deadly case their Lady fownd,
And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.

Eftsoones his warlike courser, which was strayd Farre in the woods, whiles that he lay in swownd, [stayd, She made those Damzels search, which being They did him set thereon, and forth with them

conuayd.

39
Into that forest farre they thence him led, Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant glade, With mountaines round about enuironed, And mighty woods, which did the valley shade, And like a stately Theatre it made, Spreading it selfe into a spatious plaine. And in the midst a little riuer plaide Emongst the pumystones, which seemd to plaine With gentle murmure, that his course they did restraine.

Beside the same a dainty place there lay, Planted with mirtle trees and laurels greene, In which the birds song many a louely lay Of gods high prayse, and of their loues sweet teene.

As it an earthly Paradize had beene: In whose enclosed shadow there was pight A faire Pauilion, scarcely to be seene, The which was all within most richly dight, Thatgreatest Princes liuing it mote well delight.

Thither they brought that wounded Squire, and layd

In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest,
He rested him a while, and then the Mayd
His ready wound with better salues new drest;
Dayly she dressed him, and did the best
His grieuous hurt to garish, that she might,
That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,
And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:
It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight

O foolish Physick, and vnfruitfull paine,
That heales vp one and makes another wound:
She his hurt thigh to him recur'd againe,
But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,
Through an vnwary dart, which did rebound
From her faire eyes and gracious countenaunce.
What bootes it him from death to be vnbound,
To be captiued in endlesse duraunce

Of sorrow and despaire without aleggeaunce?

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole, So still his hart woxe sore, and health decayd: Madnesse to saue a part, and lose the whole. Still whenas he beheld the heauenly Mayd, Whiles dayly plaisters to his wound she layd, So still his Malady the more increast, The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dismayd.

Ah God, what other could he do at least, But loue so faire a Lady, that his life releast?

Long while he stroue in his courageous brest, With reason dew the passion to subdew, And loue for to dislodge out of his nest: Still when her excellencies he did vew, Her soueraigne bounty, and celestiall hew, The same to loue he strongly was constraind: But when his meane estate he did reuew,

He from such hardy boldnesse was restraind, And of his lucklesse lot and cruell loue thus plaind.

Vnthankfull wretch (said he) is this the meed, With which her soueraigne mercy thou doest quight?

Thy life she saued by her gracious deed, But thou doest weene with villeinous despight, To bot her honour, and her heauenly light. Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light: Faire death it is to shonne more shame, to dy: Dye rather, dy, then euer loue disloyally.

But if to loue disloyalty it bee,
Shall I then hate her, that from deathes dore
Me brought? ah farre be such reproch fro mee.
What can I lesse do, then her loue therefore,
Sith I her dew reward cannot restore?
Dye rather, dye, and dying do her serue,
Dying her serue, and liuing her adore;
Thy life she gaue, thy life she doth deserue:
Dye rather, dye, then euer from her seruice
swerue.

B'. foolish boy, what bootes thy seruice bace I'o her, to whom the heauens do serue and sew? Thou a meane Squire, of meeke and lowly place, She heauenly borne, and of celestiall hew. How then? of all loue taketh equall vew: And doth not highest God vouchsafe to take The loue and seruice of the basest crew? If she will not, dye meekly for her sake; Dye rather, dye, then euer so faire loue forsake.

Thus warreid he long time against his will,
Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last,
To yield himselfe vnto the mighty ill:
Which as a victour proud, gan ransack fast
His inward parts, and all his entrayles wast,
That neither bloud in face, nor life in hart
It left, but both did quite drye vp, and blast;
As percing leuin, which the inner part
Of euery thing consumes, and calcineth by art.

Which seeing faire Belphæbe can to feare, Least that his wound were inly well not healed, Or that the wicked steele empoysned were: Litle she weend, that loue he close concealed; Yet still he wasted, as the snow congealed, When the bright sunne his beams thereon doth beat:

Yet neuer he his hart to her reuealed, But rather chose to dye for sorrow great, Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

She gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare,
To do him ease, or do him remedy:
Many Restoratiues of vertues rare,
And costly Cordialles she did apply,
To mitigate his stubborne mallady:
But that sweet Cordiall, which can restore
A loue-sick hart, she did to him enuy;
To him, and to all th'vnworthy world forlore
She did enuy that soueraigne salue, in secret
store.

That dainty Rose, the daughter of her Morne, More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre The girlond of her honour did adorne: Ne suffred she the Middayes scorching powre, Ne the sharp Northerne wind thereon to showre,

But lapped vp her silken leaues most chaire, When so the froward skye began to lowre: But soone as calmed was the Christall aire, She did it faire dispred, and let to florish faire.

Eternall God in his almighty powre, To make ensample of his heavenly grace, In Paradize whilome did plant this flowre. Whence he it fetcht out of her natiue place. And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace, That mortall men her glory should admire: In gentle Ladies brest, and bounteous race Of woman kind it fairest flowre doth spire, And beareth fruit of honour and all chast desire.

Faire ympes of beautie, whose bright shining beames

Adorne the world with like to heavenly light. And to your willes both royalties and Realmes Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous

With this faire flowre your goodly girlonds dight,

Of chastity and vertue virginall, That shall embellish more your beautie bright. And crowne your heades with heavenly coronall, Such as the Angels weare before Godstribunall.

To youre faire selues a faire ensample frame, Of this faire virgin, this Belphabe faire, To whom in perfect loue, and spotlesse fame Of chastitie, none liuing may compaire: Ne poysnous Enuy justly can empaire The prayse of her fresh flowring Maidenhead; For thy she standeth on the highest staire Of th'honorable stage of womanhead, That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity, Nathlesse she was so curteous and kind, Tempred with grace, and goodly modesty, That seemed those two vertues stroue to find The higher place in her Heroick mind: So striuing each did other more augment, And both encreast the prayse of woman kind, And both encreast her beautie excellent; So all did make in her a perfect complement.



# Cant. VI.

### 

The birth of faire Belphæbe and Of Amoret is told. The Gardins of Adonis fraught With pleasures manifold.

### 

Well may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while Ye wonder, how this noble Damozell So great perfections did in her compile, Sith that in saluage forests she did dwell, So farre from court and royall Citadell, The great schoolmistresse of all curtesy: Seemeth that such wild woods should far expell All ciuill vsage and gentility, And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

But to this faire Belphabe in her berth The heavens so favourable were and free, Looking with myld aspect vpon the earth, In th' Horoscope of her nativitee, That all the gifts of grace and chastitee On her they poured forth of plenteous horne; love laught on Venus from his soueraigne see. And Phabus with faire beames did her adorne, And all the Graces rockt her cradle being borne.

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew, And her conception of the ioyous Prime, And all her whole creation did her shew Pure and vnspotted from all loathly crime, That is ingenerate in fleshly slime. So was this virgin borne, so was she bred, So was she trayned vp from time to time, In all chast vertue, and true bounti-hed Till to her dew perfection she was ripened.

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee, The daughter of Amphisa, who by race A Faerie was, yborne of high degree, She bore Belphæbe, she bore in like cace Faire Amoretta in the second place: These two were twinnes, and twixt them two did share

The heritage of all celestiall grace. That all the rest it seem'd they robbed bare Of bountie, and of beautie, and all vertues

It were a goodly storie, to declare,
By what straunge accident faire Chrysogone
Conceiu'd these infants, and how themshe bare,
In this wild forrest wandring all alone,
After she had nine moneths fulfild and gone:
For not as other wemens commune brood,
They were enwombed in the sacred throne
Of her chaste bodie, nor with commune food,
As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall
blood.

f

But wondrously they were begot, and bred Through influence of th'heauens fruitfull ray, As it in antique bookes is mentioned. It was vpon a Sommers shynie day, When Titan faire his beames did display, In a fresh fountaine, farre from all mens vew, She bath'd her brest, the boyling heat t' allay; She bath'd with roses red, and violets blew, And all the sweetest flowres, that in the forrest grew.

7

Till faint through irksome wearinesse, adowne Vpon the grassie ground her selfe she layd To sleepe, the whiles a gentleslombring swowne Vpon her fell all naked bare displayd; The sunne-beames bright vpon her body playd, Being through former bathing mollifide, And pierst into her wombe, where they embayd With so sweet sence and secret power vnspide, That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

8

Miraculous may seeme to him, that reades So straunge ensample of conception; But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades Of all things liuing, through impression Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion, Doe life conceiue and quickned are by kynd: So after Nilus invndation, Infinite shapes of creatures men do fynd,

Infinite shapes of creatures men do tynd, Informed in the mud, on which the Sunne hath shynd.

Great father he of generation
Is rightly cald, th'author of life and light;
And his faire sister for creation
Ministreth matter fit, which tempred right
With heate and humour, breedes the liuing
wight.

Sosprong these twinnes in wombc of Chrysogone, Yet wist she nought thereof, but sore affright, Wondred to see her belly so vpblone, Which still increast, till she her terme had full

outgone.

...

Whereof conceiuing shame and foule disgrace, Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard, She fled into the wildernesse a space, Till that vnweeldy burden she had reard, And shund dishonor, which as death she feard: Where wearie of long trauell, downe to rest Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard; There a sad cloud of sleepe her ouerkest, And seized euery sense with sorrow sore opprest.

11

It fortuned, faire *Venus* hauing lost
Her little sonne, the winged god of loue,
Who forsomelight displeasure, which him crost,
Was from her fled, as flit as ayerie Doue,
And left her blisfull bowre of ioy aboue,
(So from her often he had fled away,
When she for ought him sharpely did reproue,
And wandred in the world in strange aray,
Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might
him bewray.)

12

Him for to seeke, she left her heauenly hous, The house of goodly formes and faire aspects, Whence all the world deriues the glorious Features of beautie, and all shapes select, With which high God his workmanship hath deckt;

And scar hed euery way, through which his

Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect: She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things Vnto the man, that of him tydings to her brings.

13

First she himsought in Court, where most he vsed Whylome to haunt, but there she found him not; But many there she found, which sore accused His falsehood, and with foule infamous blot His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot: Ladies and Lords she euery where mote heare Complayning, how with his empoysned shot Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare, And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare.

14

She then the Citties sought from gate to gate, And euery one did aske, did he him see; And euery one her answerd, that too late He had him seene, and felt the crueltie Of his sharpe darts and whot artillerie; And euery one threw forth reproches rife Of his mischieuous deedes, and said, That hee Was the disturber of all ciuill life, The enimy of peace, and author of all strife.

Then in the countrey she abroad him sought, And in the rurall cottages inquired, Where also many plaints to her were brought, Howhetheir heedlesse harts with loue had fyred, And his false venim through their veines

inspyred; And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes, which

Keeping their fleecie flockes, as they were hyred, She sweetly heard complaine, both how and what Her some had to them doen; yet she did smile thereat.

16

But when in none of all these she him got, She gan auize, where else he mote him hyde: At last she her bethought, that she had not Yetsought the saluage woods and forrests wyde, In which full many louely Nymphes abyde, Mongst whom might be, that he did closely lye, Or that the loue of some of them him tyde: For thy she thither cast her course t'apply, To search the secret haunts of *Dianes* company.

17

Shortly vnto the wastefull woods she came, Whereasshe found the Goddesse with her crew, After late chace of their embrewed game, Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew, Some of them washing with the liquid dew From off their dainty limbes the dustie sweat, And soyle which did deforme their liuely hew; Others lay shaded from the scorching heat; The rest vpon her persongaueattendance great.

τ8

She hauing hong vpon a bough on high Her bow and painted quiuer, had vnlaste Her siluer buskins from her nimble thigh, And her lancke loynes vngirt, and brests vnbraste,

After her heat the breathing cold to taste; Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright Embreaded were for hindring of her haste, Now loose about her shoulders hong vndight, And were with sweet Ambrosia all besprinckled light.

Soone as she *Venus* saw behind her backe, She was asham'd to be so loose surprized, Andwoxehalfewrothagainst herdamzelsslacke, That had not her thereof before auized, But suffred her so carelesly disguized Be ouertaken. Soone her garments loose Vpgath'ring, in her bosome she comprized, Well as she might, and to the Goddesse rose, Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her enclose.

20

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet, And shortly asked her, what cause her brought Into that wildernesse for her vnmeet, From her sweete bowres, and beds with pleasures fraught:

That suddein change she strange aduentur thought.

To whom halfe weeping, she thus answered, That she her dearest sonne *Cupido* sought, Who in his frowardnesse from her was fled; That she repented sore, to haue him angered.

2

Thereat Diana gan to smile, in scorne
Of her vaine plaint, and to her scoffing sayd;
Great pittie sure, that ye be so forlorne
Of your gay sonne, that giues ye so good ayd
To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd.
But she was more engrieued, and replide;
Faire sister, ill beseemes it to ypbrayd
A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride;
The like that mine, may be your paine another
tide.

As you in woods and wanton wildernesse Your glory set, to chace the saluage beasts, So my delight is all in ioyfulnesse, In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts: And ill becomes you with your loftic creasts, To scorne the ioy, that *loue* is glad to seeke; We both are bound to follow heauens beheasts, And tend our charges with obeisance meeke: Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to eeke.

23

And tell me, if that ye my sonne haue heard, Tolurke emongst your Nymphes in secret wize; Or keepe their cabins: much I am affeard, Least he like one of them him selfe disguize, And turne his arrowes to their exercize: So may he long himselfe full easie hide: For he is faire and fresh in face and guize, As any Nymph (let not it be enuyde.) So saying euery Nymph full narrowly she eyde.

24

But Phabe therewith sore was angered,
And sharply said; Goe Dame, goe seeke your
boy,

Where you him lately left, in Mars his bed; He comes not here, we scorne his foolish ioy, Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy: But if I catch him in this company, By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy The Gods doe dread, he dearely shall abye: Ile clip his wanton wings, that he no more shall fiv.

Whom when as Venus saw so sore displeased, She inly sory was, and gan relent, What she had said: so her she soone appeased, With sugred words and gentle blandishment, Which as a fountaine from her sweet lips went, And welled goodly forth, that in short space She was well pleasd, and forth her damzels sent, Through all the woods, to search from place to place.

If any tract of him or tydings they mote trace.

26

To search the God of loue, her Nymphes she sent Throughout the wandring forrest every where: And after them her selfe eke with her went To seeke the fugitiue, both farre and nere, So long they sought, till they arrived were In that same shadie covert, whereas lay Faire Crysogone in slombry traunce whilere: Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say) Yuwares had borne two babes, as faire as springing day.

Vawares she them conceiu'd, vnwares she bore: She bore withouten paine, that she conceiued Withouten pleasure: ne her need implore Lucinaes aide: which when they both perceiued,

They were through wonder nigh of sense bereaued.

And gazing each on other, nought bespake: At last they both agreed, her seeming grieued Out of her heauy swowne not to awake, But from her louing side the tender babes to take.

28

Vp they them tooke, each one a babe vptooke, And with them carried, to be fostered; Dame Phabe to a Nymph her babe betooke, To be vpbrought in perfect Maydenhed, And of her selfe her name Belphabe red: But Venus hers thence farre away conuayd, To be vpbrought in goodly womanhed, And in her litle loues stead, which was strayd, Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her dismayd.

20

She brought her to her ioyous Paradize, Where most she wonnes, when she on earth does dwel.

So faire a place, as Nature can deuize:
Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,
Or it in Gnidus be, I wote not well;
But well I wote by tryall, that this same
All other pleasant places doth excell,
And called is by her lost louers name,
The Gardin of Adonis, farre renowmd by fame.

30

In that same Gardin all the goodly flowres, Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautifie, And decks the girlonds of her paramoures, Are fetcht: there is the first seminarie Of all things, that are borne to liue and die, According to their kindes. Long worke it were, Here to account the endlesse progenie Of all the weedes, that bud and blossome there; But so much as doth need, must needs be counted here.

31

It sited was in fruitfull soyle of old, And girt in with two walles on either side; The one of yron, the other of bright gold, That none might thorough breake, nor ouerstride:

And double gates it had, which opened wide, By which both in and out men moten pas; Th'one faire and fresh, the other old and dride: Old Genius the porter of them was, Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

22

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend,
All that to come into the world desire;
A thousand thousand naked babes attend
About him day and night, which doe require,
That he with fleshly weedes would them attire:
Such as him list, such as eternall fate
Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,
And sendeth forth to liue in mortall state,
Till they againe returne backe by the hinder gate.

33

After that they againe returned beene,
They in that Gardin planted be againe;
And grow afresh, as they had neuer seene
Fleshly corruption, nor mortall paine.
Some thousand yeares so doen they there
remaine;

And then of him are clad with other hew, Or sent into the chaungefull world againe, Till thither they returne, where first they grew: So like a wheele around they runne from old to new.

34

Ne needs there Gardiner to set, or sow,
To plant or prune: for of their owne accord
All things, as they created were, doe grow,
And yet remember well the mightie word,
Which first was spoken by th'Almightie lord,
That bad them to increase and multiply:
Ne doe they need with water of the ford,
Or of the clouds to moysten their roots dry;
For in themselues eternall moisture they imply.

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred, And vncouth formes, which none yet euer knew. And euery sort is in a sundry bed Set by it selfe, and ranckt in comely rew: Some fit for reasonable soules t'indew. Some made for beasts, some made for birds to

And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew In endlesse rancks along enraunged were, That seem'd the Ocean could not containe them

there.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent Into the world, it to replenish more; Yet is the stocke not lessened, nor spent, But still remaines in euerlasting store, As it at first created was of yore. For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes, In hatefull darkenesse and in deepe horrore, An huge eternall Chaos, which supplyes The substances of natures fruitfull progenyes.

All things from thence doe their first being fetch, And borrow matter, whereof they are made, Which when as forme and feature it does ketch, Becomes a bodie, and doth then inuade The state of life, out of the griesly shade. That substance is eterne, and bideth so, Ne when the life decayes, and forme does fade, Doth it consume, and into nothing go, But chaunged is, and often altred to and fro.

The substance is not chaunged, nor altered, But th'only forme and outward fashion; For every substance is conditioned To change her hew, and sundry formes to don, Meet for her temper and complexion: For formes are variable and decay, By course of kind, and by occasion; And that faire flowre of beautie fades away, As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

Great enimy to it, and to all the rest, That in the Gardin of Adonis springs. Is wicked Time, who with his scyth addrest, Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly things.

And all their glory to the ground downe flings. Where they doe wither, and are fowly mard: He flyes about, and with his flaggy wings Beates downe both leaves and buds without regard.

Ne euer pittie may relent his malice hard.

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,

To see so faire things mard, and spoyled quight: And their great mother Venus did lament The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight: Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight, When walking through the Gardin, them she spyde.

Yet no'te she find redresse for such despight. For all that lives, is subject to that law: All things decay in time, and to their end do draw.

But were it not, that Time their troubler is. All that in this delightfull Gardin growes, Should happie be, and have immortall blis, For here all plentic, and all pleasure flowes, And sweet love gentle fitsemongst them throwes, Without fell rancor, or fond gealosie; Franckly each paramour his leman knowes, Each bird his mate, ne any does enuie Their goodly meriment, and gay felicitie.

There is continuall spring, and haruest there Continuall, both meeting at one time: [beare, For both the boughes doe laughing blossomes And with fresh colours decke the wanton Prime, And eke attonce the heavy trees they clime, Which seeme to labour vnder their fruits lode: The whiles the ioyous birdes make their pastime Emongst the shadie leaves, their sweet abode, And their true loues without suspition tell abrode.

Right in the middest of that Paradise, There stood a stately Mount, on whose round top A gloomy groue of mirtle trees did rise, flop, Whose shadie boughes sharpe steele did neuer Nor wicked beasts their tender buds did crop, But like a girlond compassed the hight, And from their fruitfull sides sweet gum did

That all the ground with precious deaw bedight, Threw forth most dainty odours, and most

sweet delight.

And in the thickest couert of that shade, There was a pleasant arbour, not by art, But of the trees owne inclination made, Which knitting their rancke braunches part to

With wanton yuie twyne, entrayld athwart, And Eglantine, and Caprifole emong, Fashiond aboue within their inmost part, That nether Phæbus beams could through wrong. them throng,

Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them any

And all about grew euery sort of flowre, To which sad louers were transformd of yore; Fresh Hyacinthus, Phæbus paramoure, And dearest loue. Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore, Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late, Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate, To whom sweet Poets verse hath given endlesse date.

46

There wont faire Venus often to enjoy Her deare Adonis ioyous company, And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton boy; There yet, some say, in secret he does ly, Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery, By her hid from the world, and from the skill Of Stygian Gods, which doe her loue enuy; But she her selfe, when euer that she will, Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her

And sooth it seemes they say: for he may not For euer die, and euer buried bee In balefull night, where all things are forgot; All be he subject to mortalitie, Yet is eterne in mutabilitie. And by succession made perpetuall, Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie: For him the Father of all formes they call: Therefore needs mote he liue, that living gives to all.

loying his goddesse, and of her enjoyd:

Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,

There now he liueth in eternall blis,

Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd: For that wilde Bore, the which him once an-She firmely hath emprisoned for ay, That her sweet loue his malice mote auoyd, In a strong rocky Caue, which is they say, Hewen vnderneath that Mount, that none him losen may.

There now he liues in euerlasting ioy, With many of the Gods in company, Which thither haunt, and with the winged boy Sporting himselfe in safe felicity: Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty Ransackt the world, and in the wofull harts Of many wretches set his triumphes hye, Thither resorts, and laying his sad darts Aside, with faire Adonis playes his wanton parts.

And his true loue faire Psyche with him playes, Faire Psyche to him lately reconcyld, After long troubles and vnmeet vpbraves, With which his mother Venus her reuyld, And eke himselfe her cruelly exvld: But now in stedfast loue and happy state She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld. Pleasure, that doth both gods and menaggrate, Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Psyche late.

Hither great Venus brought this infant faire, The younger daughter of Chrysogonee. And vnto Psyche with great trust and care Committed her, yfostered to bee, And trained up in true feminitee: Who no lesse carefully her tendered, Then her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom shee Made her companion, and her lessoned In all the lore of loue, and goodly womanhead.

In which when she to perfect ripenesse grew. Of grace and beautie noble Paragone, She brought her forth into the worldes vew, To be th'ensample of true loue alone, And Lodestarre of all chaste affectione, To all faire Ladies, that doe live on ground. To Faery court she came, where many one Admyrd her goodly haueour, and found His feeble hart wide launched with loues cruell wound.

But she to none of them her love did cast, Saue to the noble knight Sir Scudamore, To whom her louing hart she linked fast In faithfull loue, t'abide for euermore, And for his dearest sake endured sore, Sore trouble of an hainous enimy; Who her would forced haue to haue forlore Her former loue, and stedfast loialty, As ye may elsewhere read that ruefull history.

But well I weene, ye first desire to learne,

What end vnto that fearefull Damozell, Which fled so fast from that same foster Whom with his brethren Timias slew, befell: That was to weet, the goodly Florimell; Who wandring for to seeke her louer deare. Her louer deare, her dearest Marinell, Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare, And from Prince Arthur fled with wings of idle feare.

## Cant. VII.

### 

The witches sonne loues Florimell: she flyes, he faines to die. Satyrane saues the Squire of Dames from Gyants tyrannie.

### 

Like as an Hynd forth singled from the heard, That hath escaped from a rauenous beast, Yet flyes away of her owne feet affeard, And euery leafe, that shaketh with the least Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast; So fled faire Florimell from her vaine feare, Long after she from perill was releast: Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare

Did seeme to be the same, which she escapt whyleare.

All that same euening she in flying spent,
And all that night her course continewed:
Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,
Nor wearinesse to slacke her hast, but fled
Euer alike, as if her former dred
Were hard behind, her readie to arrest:
And her white Palfrey hauing conquered
The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
Perforce her carried, where euer he thought best.

So long as breath, and hable puissance
Did natiue courage vnto him supply,
His pace he freshly forward did aduaunce,
And carried her beyond all icopardy,
But nought that wanteth rest, can long abv.
He hauing through incessant trauell spent
His force, at last perforce a downe did ly,
Ne foot could further moue: The Lady gent
Thereat wassuddeinstrooke with great astonishment.

And forst t'alight, on foot mote algates fare,
A traueller vnwonted to such way:
Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That fortune all in equall launce doth sway,
And mortall miseries doth make her play.
So long she trauelled, till at length she came
To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
A little valley, subject to the same,
All couerd with thick woods, that quite it ouercame.

Through the tops of the high trees she aid descry A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light, Reeking aloft, vprolled to the sky: Which, chearefull signe did send vnto her sight. That in the same did wonne some liuing wight. Eftsoones her steps she thereunto applyde, And came at last in weary wretched plight Vnto the place, to which her hope did guyde, To find some refuge there, and rest her weary syde.

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes
In homely wize, and wald with sods around,
In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes,
And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes;
So choosing solitarie to abide,

Far from all neighbours, that her deuilish deedes

And hellish arts from people she might hide, And hurt far off vnknowne, whom cuer she enuide.

The Damzell there arriving entred in;
Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found,
Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin:
Who soone as she beheld that suddein stound,
Lightly vpstarted from the dustie ground,
And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
Stared on her awhile, as one astound,
Ne had one word to speake, for great amaze,
But shewd by outward signes, that dread her
sence did daze.

8
At last turning her fcare to foolish wrath,
She askt, what deuill had her thither brought,
And who she was, and what vnwonted path
Had guided her, vnwelcomed, vnsought?
To which the Damzell full of doubtfull thought,
Her midly answer'd; Beldame be not wroth
With silly Virgin by aduenture brought
Vnto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
That craue but rowne to rest, while tempest
ouerblo'th.

With that adowne out of her Christall eyne
Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,
That like two Orient pearles, did purely shyne
Vpon her snowy cheeke; and therewithall
She sighed soft, that none so bestiall,
Nor saluage hart, but ruth of her sad plight
Would make to melt, or pitteously appall;
And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight
In mischiefe, was much moued at so pitteous
sight.

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyse, With womanish compassion of her plaint, Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes, And bidding her sit downe, to rest her faint And wearie limbs a while. She nothing quaint Nor s'deignfull of so homely fashion, Sith brought she was now to so hard constraint, Sate downe vpon the dusty ground anon, Aglad of that small rest, as Bird of tempest gon.

11

Tho gan she gather vp her garments rent,
And her loose lockes to dight in order dew,
With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament;
Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,
She was astonisht at her heauenly hew,
And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,
But or some Goddesse, or of Dianes crew,
And thought her to adore with humble spright;
T'adorething so diuine as beauty, were but right.

12

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
A laesie loord, for nothing good to donne,
But stretched forth in idlenesse alwayes,
Ne euer cast his mind to couet prayse,
Or ply him selfe to any honest trade,
But all the day before the sunny rayes
He vs'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade:
Such laesinesse both lewd and poore attonce
him made.

13

He comming home at vndertime, there found The fairest creature, that he euer saw, Sitting beside his mother on the ground; The sight whereof did greatly him adaw, And his base thought with terrour and with aw So inly smot, that as one, which had gazed On the bright Sunne vnwares, doth soone withdraw

His feeble eyne, with too much brightnesse dazed,

Sostared he on her, and stood long while amazed.

7.1

Softly at last he gan his mother aske, What mister wight that was, and whence deriued,

That in so straunge disguizement there did maske,

And by what accident she there arriued:
But she, as one nigh of her wits depriued,
With nought but ghastly lookes him answered,
Like to a ghost, that lately is reuiued
From Stygian shores, where late it wandered;
So both at her, and each at other wondered.

15

But the faire Virgin was so meeke and mild,
That she to them vouchsafed to embace
Her goodly port, and to their senses vild,
Her gentle speach applide, that in short space
She grew familiare in that desert place.
During which time, the Chorle through her so
kind

And curteise vse conceiu'd affection bace, And cast to loue her in his brutish mind; No loue, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind.

16

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent, And shortly grew into outrageous fire; Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment, As vnto her to vtter his desire; His caytiue thought durst not so high aspire, But with soft sighes, and louely semblaunces, He ween'd that his affection entire She should aread; many resemblaunces To her hemade, and many kind remembraunces.

17

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring, Whose sides empurpled were with smiling red, And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing His mistresse prayses, sweetly caroled, Girlonds of flowres sometimes for her faire hed He finewould dight; sometimes the squirell wild He brought to her in bands, as conquered To be her thrall, his fellow seruant vild; All which, she of him tooke with countenance meeke and mild.

18

But past awhile, when she fit season saw
To leaue that desert mansion, she cast
In secret wize her selfe thence to withdraw,
For feare of mischiefe, which she did forecast
Might be by the witch or that her sonne compast:

Her wearie Palfrey closely, as she might, Now well recourred after long repast, In his proud furnitures she freshly dight, His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

And earely ere the dawning day appeard,
She forth issewed, and on her iourney went;
She went in perill, of each noyse affeard,
And of each shade, that did it selfe present;
For still she feared to be ouerhent,
Of that vile hag, or her vnciuile sonne.
Who when too late awaking, well they kent,
That their faire guest was gone, they both
begonne [vndonne.
To make exceeding mone, as they had bene

But that lewd louer did the most lament For her depart, that euer man did heare; He knockt his brest with desperate intent, Andscratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare: That his sad mother seeing his sore plight, Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare, Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight, And loue to frenzy turnd, sith loue is franticke hight.

All waves she sought, him to restore to plight, With herbs, with charms, with counsell, and with teares.

But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell

Asswage the fury, which his entrails teares: So strong is passion, that no reason heares. Tho when all other helpes she saw to faile, She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares And by her deuilish arts thought to preuaile, To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall bale.

Eftsoones out of her hidden caue she cald An hideous beast, of horrible aspect, That could the stoutest courage have appald; Monstrous mishapt, and all his backe was spect With thousand spots of colours queint elect, Thereto so swift, that it all beasts did pas: Like neuer yet did liuing eye detect; But likest it to an Hyena was,

That feeds on womens flesh, as others feede on

It forth she cald, and gaue it streight in charge, Through thicke and thin her to pursew apace, Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large, Till her he had attaind, and brought in place, Or quite deuourd her beauties scornefull grace. The Monster swift as word, that from her went, Went forth in hast, and did her footing trace So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent, And passing speede, that shortly he her ouerhent.

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide, No need to bid her fast away to flie; That vgly shape so sore her terrifide, That it she shund no lesse, then dread to die, And her flit Palfrey did so well apply His nimble feet to her conceived feare, That whilest his breath did strength to him supply.

From perill free he her away did beare: But when his force gan faile, his pace gan wex areare.

25

Which whenas she perceiu'd, she was dismayd At that same last extremitie tull sore, And of her safetic greatly grew afrayd; And now she can approach to the sea shore, As it befell, that she could flie no more, But yield her selfe to spoile of greedinesse. Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore, From her dull horse, in desperate distresse, And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sickernesse.

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled From dread of her reuenging fathers hond: Nor halfe so fast to saue her maidenhed. Fled fearefull Daphne on th' Ægæan strond, As Florimell fled from that Monster youd, To reach the sea, ere she of him were raught: For in the sea to drowne her selfe she fond, Rather then of the tyrant to be caught: Thereto feare gaue her wings, and neede her courage taught.

It fortuned (high God did so ordaine) As she arrived on the roring shore, In minde to leape into the mighty mainc, A little boate lay houing her before, In which there slept a fisher old and pore, The whiles his nets were drying on the sand: Into the same she leapt, and with the ore Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand: So safetie found at sea, which she found not at land.

The Monster ready on the pray to sease, Was of his forward hope deceived quight; Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas, But greedily long gaping at the sight, At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight, And tell the idle tidings to his Dame: Yet to avenge his devilish despight, He set vpon her Palfrey tired lame, And slew him cruelly, ere any reskew came.

And after having him embowelled, To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight To passe that way, as forth he trauelled; It was a goodly Swaine, and of great might, As ever man that bloudy field did fight; But in vaine sheows, that wont yong knights bewitch.

And courtly services tooke no delight, But rather lovd to be, then seemen sich: For both to be and seeme to him was labour lich. Jo

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane,
That raungdabroad to seeke aduentures wilde,
As was his wont in forrest, and in plaine;
He was all armd in rugged steele vnfilde,
As in the smoky forge it was compilde,
And in his Scutchin bore a Satyres hed:
He comming present, where the Monster vilde
Vpon that milke-white Palfreyes carkas fed,
Vnto his reskew ran, and greedily him sped.

There well perceiu'd he, that it was the horse, Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride, That of that feend was rent without remorse: Much feared he, least ought did ill betide Tothat faire Mayd, the flowreof womens pride; For her he dearely loued, and in all His famous conquests highly magnifide: Besides her golden girdle, which did fall From her in flight, he found, that did him sore apall.

Full of sad feare, and doubtfull agony,
Fiercely he flew ypon that wicked feend,
And with huge strokes, and cruell battery
Him forst to leaue his pray, for to attend
Him selfe from deadly daunger to defend:
Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh
He did engraue, and muchell bloud did spend,
Yet might not do him dye, but aye more fresh
And fierce he still appeard, the more he did him
thresh.

He wist not, how him to despoile of life,
Ne how to win the wished victory,
Sith him he saw still stronger grow through
strife,

And him selfe weaker through infirmity;
Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously
Hurling his sword away, he lightly lept
Vpon the beast, that with great cruelty
Rored, and raged to be vnder-kept:
Yet he perforce him held, and strokes vpon him
hept.

As he that striues to stop a suddein flood,
And in strong banckes his violence enclose,
Forceth it swell aboue his wonted mood,
And largely ouerflow the fruitfull plaine,
That all the countrey seemes to be a Maine,
And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne:
The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine,
To see his whole yeares labour lost so soone,
For which to God he made so many an idle
boone.

So him he held, and did through might amate: So long he held him, and him bet so long, That at the last his fiercenesse gan abate, And meekely stoup vnto the victour strong: Who to auenge the implacable wrong, Which he supposed donne to Florimell, Sought by all meanes his dolour to prolong. Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell: His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore About her sclender wast, he tooke in hand, And with it bound the beast, that lowd did rore For great despight of that vnwonted band, Yet dared not his victour to withstand, But trembled like a lambe, fled from the pray, And all the way him followd on the strand, As he had long bene learned to obay; Yet neuer learned he such seruice, till that day.

Thus as he led the Beast along the way,
He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse,
Fast flying on a Courser dapled gray,
From a bold knight, that with great hardinesse
Her hard pursewd, and sought for to suppresse;
She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,
Whom she did meane to make the thrall of her
desire.

38
Which whenas Salyrane beheld, in hast
He left his captine Beast at liberty,
And crost the nearest way, by which he cast
Her to encounter, ere she passed by:
But she the way shund nathemore for thy,
But forwardgallopt fast; which when hespyde,
His mighty speare he couched warily,
And at her ran: she hauing him descryde,
Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her lode
aside.

Jay Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare A trembling Culuer, hauing spide on hight An Egle, that with plumy wings doth sheare The subtile ayre, stouping with all his might, The quarrey throwes to ground with fell despight,

And to the battell doth her selfe prepare:
So ran the Geauntesse vnto the fight;
Her firie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
And with blasphemous bannes high God in
peeces tare.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace, Wherewith she many had of life depriued, But ere the stroke could seize his aymed place, His speareamids her sun-broad shield arriued; Yet nathemore the steele a sunder riued, All were the beame in bignesse like a mast, Ne her out of the stedfast sadle driued, But glauncing on the tempred mettall, brast Inthousand shiuers, and so forth besideher past.

41

HerSteeddidstagger with that puissaunt strooke; But she no more was moued with that might, Then it had lighted on an aged Oke; Or on the marble Pillour, that is pight Vpon the top of Mount Olympus hight, For the braue youthly Champions to assay, With burning charet wheeles it nigh to smite: But who that smites it, mars his ioyous play, And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

42

Yet therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne regard Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest, Which on his helmet martelled so hard, That made him low incline his lofty cr.st, And bowd his battred visour to his brest: Wherewith he was so stund, that he n'ote ryde, But reeled to and fro from East to West: Which when his cruel enimy espyde, She lightly vnto him adioyned side to syde;

43

And on his collar laying puissant hand, Out of his wauering seat him pluckt perforse, Perforse him pluckt, vnable to withstand, Or helpe himselfe, and laying thwart her horse, In loathly wise like to a carion corse, She bore him fast away. Which when the knight,

That her pursewed, saw, with great remorse He neare was touched in his noble spright, And gan encrease his speed, as she encreast her

flight.

Whom when as nigh approching she espyde,
She threw away her burden angrily;
For she list not the battell to abide,
But made her selfe more light, away to fly:
Yet her the hardy knight pursewd so nye,
That almost in the backe he oft her strake:
But still when him at hand she did espy,
She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did
make;

But when he stayd, to flight againe she did her take.

...

By this the good Sir Salyrane gan wake Out of his dreame, that did him long entraunce, And seeing none in place, he gan to make Exceeding mone, and curst that cruellchaunce, Which reft from him so faire a cheuisaunce: At length he spide, whereas that wofull Squire, Whom he had reskewed from captiuaunce Of his strong foe, lay tombled in the myre, Vnable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.

Al

To whom approching, well he mote perceiue In that foule plight a comely personage, And louely face, made fit for to deceiue Fraile Ladies hart with loues consuming rage, Now in the blossome of his freshest age: He reard him vp, and loosd his yron bands, And after gan inquire his parentage, And how he fell into that Gyaunts hands, And who that was, which chaced her along the lands.

Then trembling yet through feare, the Squire

bespake,

That Geauntesse Argante is behight,
A daughter of the Titans which did make
Warreagainst heauen, and heaped hilson hight,
To scale theskyes, and put Ioue from his right:
Hersire Typhæus was, who mad throughmerth,
And drunke with bloud of men, slaine by his
might,

Through incest, her of his owne mother Earth Whilome begot, being but halfe twin of that berth.

4

For at that berth another Babe she bore,
To weet the mighty Ollyphant, that wrought
Great wreake to many errant knights of yore,
And many hath to foule confusion brought.
These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing
thought)

Whiles in their mothers wombe enclosed they were,

Ere they into the lightsome world were brought, In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere, And in that monstrous wise did to the world appere.

So liu'd they euer after?
Gainst natures law, and good behauioure:
But greatest shame was to that maiden twin,
Who not content so fowly to deuoure
Her natiue flesh, and staine her brothers bowre,
Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,
And suffred beasts her body to deflowre:
So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre,
Yet all that might not slake her sensuall desyre.

But ouer all the countrey she did raunge.

To seeke young men, to quench her flaming thrust.

And feed her fancy with delightfull chaunge: Whom so she fittest finds to serue her lust. Through her maine strength, in which she most doth trust.

She with her brings into a secret Ile. Where in eternall bondage dve he must. Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile, And in all shamefull sort him selfe with her defile.

Me seely wretch she so at vauntage caught. After she long in waite for me did lye, And meant vnto her prison to have brought, Her lothsome pleasure there to satisfye; That thousand deathes me leuer were to dye, . Then breake the vow, that to faire Columbell I plighted haue, and yet keepe stedfastly: As for my name, it mistreth not to tell : Call me the Squyre of Dames, that me beseemeth

But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing saw That Geauntesse, is not such, as she seemed. But a faire virgin, that in martiall law, And deedes of armes aboue all Dames is deemed, And aboue many knights is eke esteemed. For her great worth; She Palladine is hight: She you from death, you me from dread redeemed.

Ne any may that Monster match in fight, But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight.

Her well beseemes that Quest (quoth Satyrane) Butread, thou Sauyre of Dames, what vow is this, Which thou vpon thy selfe hast lately ta'ne? That shall I you recount (quoth he) ywis, So be ye pleased to pardon all amis. That gentle Lady, whom I loue and serue, After long suit and weary seruicis, Did aske me, how I could her loue deserve. And how she might be sure, that I would neuer swerue.

I glad by any meanes her grace to gaine, Bad her commaund my life to saue, or spill. Eftsoones she bad me, with incessaunt paine To wander through the world abroad at will. And euery where, where with my power or skill I might do seruice vnto gentle Dames, That I the same should faithfully fulfill. And at the twelve monethes end should bring their names games.

So well I to faire Ladies seruice did,

And found such fauour in their louing hartes. That ere the yeare his course had compassid. Three hundred pledges for my good desartes. And thrise three hundred thanks for my good partes

I with me brought, and did to her present: Which when she saw, more bent to eke my smartes.

Then to reward my trusty true intent. She gan for me deuise a gricuous punishment.

To weet, that I my trauell should resume, And with like labour walke the world around. Ne euer to her presence should presume, Till I so many other Dames had found, The which, for all the suit I could propound, Would me refuse their pledges to afford, But did abide for euer chast and sound. Ah gentle Squire (quoth he) tell at one word, How many foundst thou such to put in thy record?

In deed Sir knight (said he) one word may tell All, that I euer found so wisely stayd: For onely three they were disposd so well, And yet three yeares I now abroad haue strayd. To find them out. Mote I (then laughing sayd The knight) inquire of thee, what were these three,

The which thy proffred curtesie denayd? Or ill they seemed sure auizd to bee, Or brutishly brought vp, that neu'r did fashions see.

The first which then refused me (said hee) Certes was but a common Courtisane, Yet flat refusd to haue a do with mee, Because I could not give her many a Iane. (Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane) The second was an holy Nunne to chose, Which would not let me be her Chappellane, Because she knew, she said, I would disclose Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose.

The third a Damzell was of low degree, Whom I in countrey cottage found by chaunce: Full little weened I, that chastitee Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce, Yet was she faire, and in her countenance Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion. Long thus I woo'd her with dew observance. In hope vnto my pleasure to haue won; And pledges; as the spoiles of my victorious But was as farre at last, as when I first begon.

Safe her, I neuer any woman found,
That chastity did for it selfe embrace,
But were for other causes firme and sound;
Either for want of handsome time and place,
Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.
Thus am I hopelesse euer to attaine
My Ladies loue, in such a desperate case,
But all my dayes am like to wast in vaine,
Seeking to match the chaste with th'vnchaste
Ladies traine.

6

Perdy, (said Satyrane) thou Squire of Dames, Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand, To get small thankes, and therewith many blames.

That may emongst Alcides labours stand. Thence backe returning to the former land, Where late he left the Beast, he ouercame, He found him not; for he had broke his band, And was return'd againe vnto his Dame, To tell what tydings of faire Florimell became.

#### Cant. VIII.

#### 

The Witch creates a snowy Lady, like to Florimell, Who wrongd by Carle by Proteus sau'd, is sought by Paridell.

#### 

So oft as I this history record,
My hart doth melt with meere compassion,
To thinke, how causelesse of her owne accord
This gentle Damzell, whom I write vpon,
Should plonged be in such affliction,
Without all hope of comfort or reliefe,
That sure I weene, the hardest hart of stone,
Would hardly find to aggravate her griefe;
For misery craues rather mercie, then repriefe.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late, Had so enranckled her malitious hart, That she desyrd th'abridgement of her fate, Or long enlargement of her painefull smart. Now when the Beast, which by her wicked art Late forth she sent, she backe returning spyde, Tyde with her broken girdle, it a part Ofherrichspoyles, whom he hadearst destroyd, She weend, and wondrous gladnesse to her hart applyde.

And with it running hast'ly to her sonne, Thought with that sight him much to haue reliued;

Who thereby deeming sure the thing as donne His former griefe with furie fresh reuiued, Much more then earst, and would haue algates rived

The hart out of his brest: for sith her ded He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriued Quite of all hope, wherewith he long had fed His foolish maladie, and long time had misled.

.

With thought whereof, exceeding mad he grew, And in his rage his mother would haue slaine, Had she not fled into a secret mew, Where she was wont her Sprights to entertaine The maisters of her art: there was she faine To call them all in order to her ayde, And them coniure vpon eternall paine, To counsell her so carefully dismayd, How she might heale her sonne, whose senses were decayd.

By their aduise, and her owne wicked wit, She there deniz'd a wondrous worke to frame. Whose like on earth was neuer framed yit, That euen Nature selfe enuide the same, And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame. The thing it selfe. In hand she boldly tooke To make another like the former Dame, Another Florimell, in shape and looke. So liuely and so like, that many it mistooke.

The substance, whereof she the bodic made, Was purest snow in massic mould congeald, Which she had gathered in a shadie glade Of the *Riphacan* hils, to her reueald By errant Sprights, but from all men conceald: The same she tempred with fine Mercury, And virgin wex. that neuer yet was seald, And mingled them with perfect vermily, That like a liuely sanguine it seem'd to the eye.

In stead of eyes two burning lampes she set
In siluer sockets, shyning like the skyes,
And a quicke mouing Spirit did arret
To stirre and roll them, like a womans eyes
In stead of yellow lockes she did deuise,
With golden wyre to weaue her curled head
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thrise
As Florimells faire haire: and in the stead
Oflife, she put a Spright to rule the carkasse dead.

A wicked Spright yfraught with fawning guile, And faire resemblance aboue all the rest. Which with the Prince of Darknesse fell somewhile.

From heavens blisse and everlasting rest: Him needed not instruct, which way were best Himselfe to fashion likest Florimell, Ne how to speake, ne how to vse his gest. For he in counterfeisance did excell.

And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing

well.

Him shaped thus, she deckt in garments gay, Which Florimell had left behind her late, That who so then her saw, would surely say, It was her selfe, whom it did imitate. Or fairer then her selfe, if ought algate Might fairer be. And then she forth her brought

Vnto her sonne, that lay in feeble state: Who seeing her gan streight vpstart, and thought

She was the Lady selfe, whom he so long had sought.

The fast her clipping twixt his armes twaine, Extremely loyed in so happie sight, And soone forgot his former sickly paine: But she, the more to seeme such as she hight, Coyly rebutted his embracement light; Yet still with gentle countenaunce retained. Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight: Him long she so with shadowes entertained, As her Creatresse had in charge to her ordained.

Till on a day, as he disposed was To walke the woods with that his Idole faire. Her to disport, and idle time to pas, In th'open freshnesse of the gentle aire, A knight that way there chaunced to repaire: Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine, That deedes of armes had euer in despaire, Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting vaine His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

He seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight, Decked with many a costly ornament, Much merueiled thereat, as well he might, And thought that match a fowle disparagement: His bloudie speare eftsoones he boldly bent Against the silly clowne, who dead through feare, Fell streight to ground in great astonishment; Villein (said he) this Ladie is my deare, Dy, if thou it gainesay: I will away her beare.

The fearefull Chorle durst not gainesay, nor door But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray: Who finding litle leasure her to wooe, On Trombarts steed her mounted without stay. And without reskew led her quite away. Proud man himselfe then Braggadocchio deemed. And next to none, after that happie day, Being possessed of that spoyle, which seemed The fairest wight on ground, and most of men esteemed.

But when he saw himselfe free from poursute, He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame, With termes of loue and lewdnesse dissolute: For he could well his glozing speaches frame To such vaine vses, that him best became: But she thereto would lend but light regard, As seeming sory, that she euer came Into his powre, that vsed her so hard,

To reaue her honor, which she more then life prefard.

Thus as they two of kindnesse treated long, There them by chaunce encountred on the way An armed knight, vpon a courser strong, Whose trampling feet vpon the hollow lay Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray That Capons courage: yet he looked grim, And fain'd to cheare his Ladie in dismay: Who seem'd for feare to quake in every lim, And her to saue from outrage, meekely prayed him.

Fiercely that stranger forward came, and nigh Approching, with bold words and bitter threat, Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high To leave to him that Lady for excheat, Or bide him battell without further treat. That challenge did too peremptory seeme, And fild his senses with abashment great: Yet seeing nigh him icopardy extreme,

He it dissembled well, and light seem'd to esteeme.

Saying, Thou foolish knight, that weenst with words

To steale away, that I with blowes have wonne, And brought through points of many perilous swords:

But if thee list to see thy Courser ronne, Or proue thy selfe, this sad encounter shonne, And seeke else without hazard of thy hed. At those proud words that other knight begonne

To wexe exceeding wroth, and him ared To turne his steede about, or sure he should be

Sith then (said Braggadocchio) needes thou wilt Thy dayes abridge, through proofe of puissance, Turne we our steedes, that both in equall tilt May meet againe, and each take happie chance. This said, they both a furlongs mountenance Retyrd their steeds, to ronne in euen race: But Braggadocchio with his bloudie lance Once hauing turnd, no more returnd his face, But left his loue to losse, and fled himselfe apace.

10

The knight him seeing fly, had no regard Him to poursew, but to the Ladie rode, And hauing her from Trompart lightly reard, Vpon his Courser set the louely lode, And with her fled away without abode. Well weened he, that fairest Florimell It was, with whom in company he yode, And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell; So made him thinke him selfe in heauen, that was in hell.

20

But Florimell her selfe was farre away,
Driuen to great distresse by Fortune straunge,
And taught the carefull Mariner to play,
Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to
chaunge

The land for sea, at randon there to raunge: Yet there that cruell Queene auengeresse, Not satisfide so farre her to estraunge From courtly blisse and wonted happinesse, Did heape on her new waues of weary wretchednesse.

21

For being fled into the fishers bote,
For refuge from the Monsters crueltie,
Long so she on the mightie maine did flote,
And with the tide droue forward careleslie;
For th'aire wasmilde, and cleared was the skie,
And all his windes Dan Aeolus did keepe,
From stirring vp their stormy enmitie,
As pittying to see her waile and weepe;
But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

22

At last whendroncke with drowsinesse, he woke, And saw his drouer driue along the streame, He was dismayd, and thrise his breast he stroke, For maruell of that accident extreame; But when he saw that blazing beauties beame, Which with rare light his bote did beautifie, He marueild more, and thought he yet did dreame

Not well awakt, or that some extasie Assorted had his sense, or dazed was his eic. 22

But when her well auizing, he perceiued
To be no vision, nor fantasticke sight,
Great comfort of her presence he conceiued,
And felt in his old courage new delight
To gin awake, and stirre his frozen spright:
Tho rudely askt her, how she thither came.
Ah (said she) father, I note read aright,
What hardmisfortune brought me to the same;
Yet am I glad that here I now in safety am.

2.5

But thou good man, sith farre in sea we bee, And the great waters gin apace to swell, That now no more we can the maine-land see, Haue care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well, Least worse on sea then vs on land befell. Thereat th'old man did nought but fondly grin, And said, his boat the way could wisely tell: But his deceiptfull eyes did neuer lin, To looke on her faire face, and marke her snowy skin.

25

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh,
Infixt such secret sting of greedy lust,
That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,
And kindled heat, that soone in flame forth
brust:

The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust. Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand Whereill became him, rashly would haue thrust, But she with angry scorne him did withstond, Andshamefully reproued for his rudenesse fond.

26

But he, that neuer good nor maners knew, Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme; Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew. The inward smoke, that did before but steeme, Broke into open fire and rage extreme, And now he strength gan adde vnto his will, Forcing to doe, that did him fowle misseeme: Beastly he threw her downe, ne car'd to spill Her garments gay with scales of fish, that all did fill.

27

The silly virgin stroue him to withstand, All that she might, and him in vaine reuild: Shestruggled strongly both with foot and hand, To saue her honor from that villaine vild, And cride to heauen, from humane helpe exild. Oye braue knights, that boast this Ladies loue, Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild Of filthy wretch? well may shee you reproue Of falshood or of slouth, when most it may behoue.

But if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete, Or thou, Sir Peridure, her sorie state, How soone would yee assemble many a fleete, To fetch from sea, that ye at land lost late; Towres, Cities, Kingdomes ye would ruinate, In your auengement and dispiteous rage, Ne ought your burning fury mote abate; But if Sir Calidore could it presage, No liuing creature could his cruelty asswage.

20

But sith that none of all her knights is nye, See how the heauens of voluntary grace, And soueraine fauour towards chastity, Doe succour send to her distressed cace: So much high God doth innocence embrace. It fortuned, whilest thus she stifly stroue, And the wide sea importuned long space Withshrilling shriekes, *Proteus* abroad did roue, Along the formy waues driuing his finny droue.

30

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore, And hath the charge of Neptunes mightie heard; An aged sire with head all frory hore, And sprinckled frost vpon his deawy beard: Who when those pittifull outcries he heard, Through all the seas so ruefully resound, His charet swift in haste he thither steard, Which with a teeme of scaly Photas bound Was drawne vpon the waues, that fomed him around.

- 3

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote, That went at will, withouten carde or sayle, He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which smote

Deepe indignation and compassion frayle
Into his hart attonce: streight did he hayle
The greedy villein from his hoped pray,
Of which he now did very litle fayle,
And with his staffe, that driues his Heard astray,
Him bet so sore, that life and sense did much
dismay.

22

The whiles the pitteous Ladie vp did ryse, Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle, Andblubbred face with teares of her faire eyes: Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle, To saue her selfe from that outrageous spoyle. But when she looked vp, to weet, what wight Had her from so infamous fact assoyld, For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight, Downe in her lap she hid her face, and loudly shright.

3

Her selfe not saued yet from daunger dred She thought, but chaung'd from one to other feare;

Like as a fearefull Partridge, that is fled From the sharpe Hauke, which her attached neare.

And fals to ground, to seeke for succour theare, Whereas the hungry Spaniels she does spy, With greedy iawes her readie for to teare; In such distresse and sad perplexity Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see thereby.

34

But he endeuoured with speeches milde
Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,
Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was, her told.
Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
Ne to recomfort her at all preuayld;
For her faint heart was with the frozen cold
Benumbd so inly, that her wits nigh fayld,
And all her senses with abashment quite were
quayld.

Her vp betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
And with his frory lips full softly kist,
Whiles the cold ysickles from his rough beard
Dropped adowne vpon her yuorie brest:
Yet he himselfe so busily addrest,
That her out of astonishment he wrought,
And out of that same fishers filthy nest
Remouing her, into his charet brought,
And there with many gentle termes her faire
besought.

But that old leachour, which with bold assault That beautie durst presume to violate, He cast to punish for his hainous fault; Then tooke he him yet trembling sith of late, And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate The virgin, whom he had abusde so sore: So drag'd him through the waues in scornefull state.

And after cast him vp, vpon the shore; But *Florimell* with him vnto his bowre he bore.

37

His bowre is in the bottome of the maine, Vnder a mightie rocke, gainst which do raue The roaring billowes in their proud disdaine, That with the angry working of the waue, Therein is eaten out an hollow caue, [keene That seemes rough Masons hand with engines Had long while laboured it to engraue: There was his wonne, ne liuing wight was seene, Saue one old Nymph, hight Panope to keepe it cleane.

Thither he brought the sory Florimell,
And entertained her the best he might
And Panope her entertaind eke well.
As an immortall mote a mortall wight,
To winne her liking vnto his delight:
With flattering words he sweetly wooed her,
And offered faire gifts t'allure her sight,
But she both offers and the offerer
Despysde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

Daily he tempted her with this or that,
And neuer suffred her to be at rest:
But euermore she him refused flat,
And all his fained kindnesse did detest,
So firmely she had sealed vp her brest.
Sometimes he boasted, that a God he hight:
But she a mortall creature loued best:
Then he would make himselfe a mortall wight;
But then she said she lou'd none, but a Faerie knight.

Then like a Faerie knight himselfe he drest; For euery shape on him he could endew: Then like a king he was to her exprest, And offred kingdomes vnto her in vew, To be his Leman and his Ladie trew: But when all this he nothing saw preuaile, With harder meanes he cast her to subdew, Andwith sharpe threates her often did assaile, So thinking for to make her stubborne courage quaile.

To dreadfull shapes he did himselfe transforme, Now like a Gyant, now like to a feend, Then like a Centaure, then like to a storme, Raging within the waues: thereby he weend Her will to win vnto his wished end. But when with feare, nor fauour, nor with all He else could doe, he saw himselfe esteemd, Downe in a Dongeon deepe he let her fall, And threatned there to make her his eternall thrall.

Eternall thraldome was to her more liefe,
Then losse of chastitie, or chaunge of loue:
Die had she rather in tormenting griefe,
Then any should of falsenesse her reproue,
Or loosenesse, that she lightly did remoue.
Most vertuous virgin, glory be thy meed,
Andcrowneofheauenlypraisewith Saintsaboue,
Where most sweet hymnes of this thy famous

42

Are still emongst them song, that far my rymes exceed.

Fit song of Angels caroled to bee;
But yet what so my feeble Muse can frame,
Shall be t'aduance thy goodly chastitee,
And to enroll thy memorable name,
In th'heart of euery honourable Dame,
That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
And be partakers of thy endlesse fame.
It yrkes me, leaue thee in this wofull state,
To tell of Satyrane, where I him left of late.

Who having ended with that Squire of Dames A long discourse of his adventures vaine, The which himselfe, then Ladies more defames, And finding not th' Hyena to be slaine, With that same Squire, returned backe againe To his first way. And as they forward went, They spyde a knight faire pricking on the plaine, As if he were on some adventure bent, And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

Sir Satyrane him towards did addresse,
To weet, what wight he was, and what his
quest:
And comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to gesse

Both by the burning hart, which on his brest He bare, and by the colours in his crest, That Paridell it was. Tho to him yode, And him saluting, as beseemed best, Gan first inquire of tydings farre abrode; And afterwardes, on what aduenture now he rode.

Who thereto answering, said; The tydings bad, Which now in Faerie court all men do tell, Which turned hath great mirth, to mourning sad,

Is the late ruine of proud Marinell,
And suddein parture of faire Florimell,
To find him forth: and after her are gone
All thebraue knights, that doen in arms excell,
To sauegard her, ywandred all alone;
Emongst the rest my lot (vnworthy) is to be one.

Ah gentle knight (said then Sir Satyrane)
Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,
That hast a thanklesse seruice on thee ta'ne,
And offrest sacrifice vnto the dead:
For dead, I surely doubt, thou maist aread
Henceforth for euer Florimell to be,
That all the noble knights of Maydenhead,
Which her ador'd, may sore repent with me,
And all faire Ladies may for euer sory be.

Which words when *Paridell* had heard, his hew Gan greatly chaunge, and seem'd dismayd to hee:

Then said, Faire Sir, how may I weene it trew, That ye doe tell in such vncertaintee? Or speake ye of report, or did ye see [sore? Iust cause of dread, that makes ye doubt so For perdie else how mote it euer bee, That euer hand should dare for to engore Her noble bloud? the heauens such crueltie

abhore.

These eyes did see, that they will euer rew
T'haue seene, (quoth he) when as a monstrous
beast

The Palfrey, whereon she did trauell, slew, And of his bowels made his bloudie feast: Which speaking token sheweth at the least Her certaine losse, if not her sure decay: Besides, that more suspition encreast, I found her golden girdle cast astray, Distaynd with durt and bloud, as relique of the Dray.

Aye me, (said *Paridell*) the signes be sad, And but God turne the same to good soothsay, That Ladies safetie is sore to be drad:

Yet will I not forsake my forward way, Till triall doe more certaine truth bewray. Faire Sir (quoth he) well may it you succeed, Ne long shall *Satyrane* behind you stay, But to the rest, which in this Ouest proceed

But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed My labour adde, and be partake of their speed.

Yenoble knights (said then the Squire of Dames)
Well may ye speed in so praiseworthy paine:
But sith the Sunne now ginnes to slake his
beames.

In deawy vapours of the westerne maine,
And lose the teme out of his weary waine,
Mote not mislike you also to abate
Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
Both light of heauen, and strength of menrelate:
Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your

52
That counsell pleased well; so all yfere
Forth marched to a Castle them before,
Where soone arriving, they restrained were
Of readie entrance, which ought euermore
To errant knights be commun: wondrous sore
Thereat displeasd they were, till that young
Squire

Ganthem informe the cause, why that same dore Was shut to all, which lodging did desire:
The which tolet you weet, will further time require.

#### Cant. IX.

#### 

Malbecco will no straunge knights host, For peeuish gealosie: Paridell giusts with Britomart: Both shew their auncestrie.

#### 

I

Redoubted knights, and honorable Dames,
To whom I leuell all my labours end,
Right sore I feare, least with vnworthy blames
This odious argument my rimes should shend,
Or ought your goodly patience offend,
Whiles of a wanton Lady I do write,
Which with her loose incontinence doth blend
The shyning glory of your soueraigne light,
And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse
knight.

,

But neuer let th'ensample of the bad Offend the good: for good by paragone Of euill, may more notably be rad, Aswhiteseemesfairer,machtwith blackeattone; Ne all are shamed by the fault of one: For lo in heauen, whereas all goodnesse is, Emongst the Angels, a whole legione Of wicked Sprights did fall from happy blis; What wonder then, if one of women all did mis?

Then listen Lordings, if ye list to weet
The cause, why Salyrane and Paridell
Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,
Into that Castle (as that Squire does tell.)
Therein a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell,
That has no skill of Court nor courtesie,
Ne cares, what men say of him ill or well;
For all his dayes he drownes in priuitie,
Yet has full large to liue, and spend at libertie.

But all his mind is set on mucky pelfe,
To hoord vp heapes of euill gotten masse,
For which he others wrongs, and wreckes him-

Yet is he lincked to a louely lasse,
Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpasse,
The which to him both far vnequall yeares,
And also far vnlike conditions has;
For she does joy to play emongst her peares,
And to be free from hard restraint and gealous
feares.

But he is old, and withered like hav, Vnfit faire Ladies service to supply: The privile guilt whereof makes him alway Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy Voon her with his other blincked eve: Ne suffreth he resort of living wight Approch to her, ne keepe her company. But in close bowre her mewes from all mens sight.

Depriu'd of kindly joy and naturall delight.

Malbecco he, and Hellenore she hight, Vnfitly yokt together in one teeme. That is the cause, why neuer any knight Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme Such, as no doubt of him he neede misdeeme. Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smile, and say ; Extremely mad the man I surely deeme. That weenes with watch and hard restraint to

A womans will, which is disposd to go astray.

In vaine he feares that, which he cannot shonne: For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes Can guilen Argus, when she list misdonne? It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes. Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyes, That can withhold her wilfull wandring feet; But fast good will with gentle curtesyes, And timely service to her pleasures meet May her perhaps containe, that else would algates fleet.

Then is he not more mad (said Paridell) That hath himselfe vnto such service sold, In dolefull thraldome all his dayes to dwell? For sure a foole I do him firmely hold, That loues his fetters, though they were of gold. But why do we deuise of others ill. Whiles thus we suffer this same dotard old. To keepe vs out, in scorne of his owne will, And rather do not ransack all, and him selfe kill?

Nay let vs first (said Salyrane) entreat

The man by gentle meanes, to let vs in, And afterwardes affray with cruell threat, Ere that we to efforce it do begin: Then if all fayle, we will by force it win, And eke reward the wretch for his mesprise, As may be worthy of his haynous sin. That counsell pleasd: then Paridell did rise.

Whereat soft knocking, entrance he desyrd. The good man selfe, which then the Porter playd.

Him answered, that all were now retyrd Vnto their rest, and all the keyes conuavd Vnto their maister, who in bed was lavd. That none him durst awake out of his dreme; And therefore them of patience gently prayd. Then Paridell began to chaunge his theme, And threatned him with force and punishment extreme.

But all in vaine; for nought mote him relent, And now so long before the wicket fast They wayted, that the night was forward spent. And the faire welkin fowly ouercast, Gan blowen vp a bitter stormy blast, With shoure and hayle so horrible and dred, That this faire many were compeld at last. To fly for succour to a little shed. The which beside the gate for swine was ordered.

It fortuned, soone after they were gone. Another knight, whom tempest thither brought, Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone, Like as the rest, late entrance deare besought; But like so as the rest he prayd for nought, For flatly he of entrance was refusd, Sorely thereat he was displeasd, and thought How to auenge himselfe so sore abusd, And evermore the Carle of curtesie accused.

But to anoyde th'intollerable stowre, He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare. And to that shed, to shrowd him from the showre.

He came, which full of guests he found why lcare, So as he was not let to enter there: Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth, And swore, that he would lodge with them y fere, Or them dislodge, all were they liefe or loth; And so defide them each, and so defide them both.

Both were full loth to leave that needfull tent, And both full loth in darkenesse to debate; Yet both full liefe him lodging to haue lent, And both full liefe his boasting to abate; But chiefly Paridell his hart did grate, To heare him threaten so despightfully, As if he did a dogge to kenell rate, That durst not barke; and rather had he dy, And to the Castle gate approcht in quiet wise. Then when he was defide, in coward corner ly.

The hastily remounting to his steed, He forth issew'd; like as a boistrous wind, Which in th'earthes hollow caues hath long bin hid.

And shut vp fast within her prisons blind, Makes the huge element against her kind To moue, and tremble as it were agast, Vntill that it an issew forth may find; Then forth it breakes, and with his furious blast Confounds both land and seas, and skyes doth ouercast.

16

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and met

Together with impetuous rage and forse, That with the terrour of their fierce affret, They rudely droue to ground both man and horse. That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse. But *Paridell* sore brused with the blow, Could not arise, the counterchaunge to scorse, Till that young Squire him reared from below; Then drew he his bright sword, and gan about him throw.

17

But Salyrane forth stepping, did them stay
And with faire treatie pacifide their ire,
Then when they were accorded from the fray,
Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
To heape on him dew vengeaunce for his hire.
They bene agreed, and to the gates they goe
To burne the same with vnquenchable fire,
And that vncurteous Carle their commune foe
To do fowle death to dye, or wrap in grieuous
woe.

18

Malbecco seeing them resolu'd in deed
To flame the gates, and hearing them to call
For fire in earnest, ran with fearefull speed,
And to them calling from the castle wall,
Besought them humbly, him to beare with all,
As ignoraunt of seruants bad abuse,
And slacke attendaunce vnto straungers call.

And slacke attendaunce vnto straungers call.

The knights were willing all things to excuse,
Though nought beleu'd, and entraunce late did
not refuse.

10

They bene ybrought into a comely bowre, Andseru'd of all things that mote needfull bee; Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre, And welcomde more for feare, then charitee; But they dissembled, what they did not see, And welcomed themselues. Each gan vndight Their garments wet, and weary armour free, To dry them selues by Vulcanes flaming light, Andeke their lately bruzedparts to bring in plight.

20

And eke that straunger knight emongst the rest Was for like need enforst to disaray:
Tho whenas vailed was her loftie crest,
Her golden locks, that were in tramels gay
Vpbounden, did them selues adowne display,
And raught vnto her heeles; like sunny beames,
That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
Their vapour vaded, shew their golden gleames,
And through the persant aire shoote forth their
azure streames.

21

She also dofte her heauy haberieon,
Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde,
And her well plighted frock, which she did won
To tucke about her short, when she did ryde,
She low let fall, that flowd from her lanck syde
Downe to her foot, with carelesse modestee.
Then of them all she plainly was espyde,
To be a woman wight, vnwist to bee,
The fairest woman wight, that euer eye did see.

22

Like as *Minerua*, being late returnd From slaughter of the Giaunts conquered; Where proud *Encelade*, whose wide nosethrils burnd

With breathed flames, like to a furnace red, Transfixed with the speare, downe tombled ded From top of *Hemus*, by him heaped hye; Hath loosd her helmet from her lofty hed, And her *Gorgonian* shield gins to vntye From her left arme, to rest in glorious victorye.

23

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were With great amazement of so wondrous sight. And each on other, and they all on her Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright Had them surprised. At last auizing right, Her goodly personage and glorious hew, Which they so much mistooke, they tooke delight In their first errour, and yet still anew With wonder of her beauty fed their hungry vew.

24

Yet note their hungry vew be satisfide,
But seeing still the more desir'd to see,
And euer firmely fixed did abide
In contemplation of diuinitie:
But most they meruaild at her cheualree,
And noble prowesse, which they had approued,
That much they faynd to know, who she mote
bee;

To dry them selues by Vulcanes flaming light, Yet none of all them her thereof amoued, Andeke their lately bruzed parts to bring in plight. Yet euery one her likte, and euery one her loued

And Paridell though partly discontent With his late fall, and fowle indignity, Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent, Through gracious regard of her faire eye, And knightly worth, which he too late did try, Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight; Then they Malbecco prayd of curtesy, That of his Lady they might haue the sight, And company at meat, to do them more delight.

26

But he to shift their curious request, Gan causen, why she could not come in place; Her crased health, her late recourse to rest, And humid euening ill for sicke folkes cace: But none of those excuses could take place; Ne would they eate, till she in presence came. She came in presence with right comely grace, And fairely them saluted, as became, And shewd her selfe in all a gentle curteous Dame.

They sate to meat, and Salyrane his chaunce Was her before, and Paridell besyde;
But he him selfe sate looking still askaunce, Gainst Britomart, and euer closely eyde
Sir Salyrane, that glaunces might not glyde:
But his blind eye, that syded Paridell,
All his demeasaure from his sight did hyde:
On her faire face so did he feede his fill,
And sent close messages of loue to her at will.

28

And euer and anone, when none was ware, With speaking lookes, that close embassage bore,

He rou'd at her, and told his secret care: For all that art he learned had of yore. Ne was she ignoraunt of that lewd lore, But in his eye his meaning wisely red, And with the like him answerd euermore: She sent at him one firie dart, whose hed Empoisnedwas with priuy lust, and gealous dred.

20

He from that deadly throw made no defence. But to the wound his weake hart opened wyde; The wicked engine through false influence, Past through his eyes, and secretly did glyde Into his hart, which it did sorely gryde. But nothing new to him was that same paine, Ne paine at all; for he so oft had tryde The powre thereof, and lou'd so oft in vaine, That thing of course he counted, loue to entertaine.

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate
His inward griefe, by meanes to him well
knowne,
Now Bacchus fruit out of the siluer plate

Now Bacchus fruit out of the siluer plate He on the table dasht, as ouerthrowne, Or of the fruitfull liquor ouerflowne, And by the dauncing bubbles did diuine, Or therein write to let his loue be showne; Which well she red out of the learned line, A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

21

And when so of his hand the pledge she raught, The guilty cup she fained to mistake, And in her lap did shed her idle draught, Shewing desire her inward flame to slake: By such close signes they secret way did make Vnto their wils, and one eyes watch escape; Two eyes him needeth, for to watch and wake, Who louers will deceiue. Thus was the ape, By their faire handling, put into Malbeccoes cape.

Now when of meats and drinks they had their fill, Purpose was moued by that gentle Dame, Vnto those knights aduenturous, to tell Of deeds of armes, which vnto them became, And euery one his kindred, and his name. Then Paridell, in whom a kindly pryde Of graciousspeach, and skill his words to frame Abounded, being glad of so fit tyde Him to commend to her, thus spake, of all well eyde.

Troy, that art now nought, but an idle name, And in thine ashes buried low dost lie, Though whilome far much greater then thy fame.

Before that angry Gods, and cruell skye Vpon thee heapt a direfull destinie, What boots it boast thy glorious descent, And fetch from heauen thy great Genealogie, Sith all thy worthy prayses being blent, Their of-spring hath embaste, and later glory shent.

Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome That warre was kindled, which did Troyinflame, And stately towres of Ilion whilome Brought vnto balefull ruine, was by name Sir Paris far renowmd through noble fame, Who through great prowesse and bold hardinesse,

From Lacedæmon fetcht the fairest Dame, That euer Greece did boast, or knight possesse, Whom Venus to him gaue for meed of worthinesse.

Faire Helene, slowre of beautie excellent,
And girlond of the mighty Conquerours,
That madest many Ladies deare lament
The heauie losse of their braue Paramours,
Which they far off beheld from Troian toures,
And saw the fieldes of faire Scamander strowne
With carcases of noble warrioures,
Whose fruitlesse liues were vnder furrow

And Xanthus sandy bankes with bloud all ouerflowne.

From him my linage I deriue aright,
Who long before the ten yeares siege of Troy,
Whiles yet on Ida he a shepheard hight,
On faire Oenone got a louely boy,
Whom for remembraunce of her passed ioy,
She of his Father Parius did name;
Who, after Greekes did Priams realme destroy,
Gathred the Troian reliques sau'd from flame,
And with them sayling thence, to th'Isle of
Paros came.

That was by him cald *Paros*, which before Hight *Nausa*, there he many yeares did raine, And built *Nausicle* by the *Pontick* shore, The which he dying left next in remaine To *Paridas* his sonne.

From whom I *Paridell* by kin descend; But for faire Ladies loue, and glories gaine, My natiue soile haue left, my dayes to spend In sewing deeds of armes, my liues and labours

end.

38
Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell
Of Troian warres, and Priams Citie sackt,
The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,
She was empassiond at that piteous act,
With zelous enuy of Greekes cruell fact,
Against that nation, from whose race of old
She heard, that she was lineally extract:
For noble Britons sprong from Troians bold,
And Troynouant was built of old Troyes ashes

Then sighing soft awhile, at last she thus:

O lamentable fall of famous towne,
Which raignd so many yeares victorious,
And of all Asie bore the soueraigne crowne,
In onesad night consumd, and throwen downe:
What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne,
And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at
euening late?

Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
Hath found another partner of your payne:
For nothing may impresse so deare constraint,
As countries cause, and commune toes disdayne.

But it it should not grieue you, backe agayne To turne your course, I would to heare desyre, What to Aeneas fell; sith that men sayne He was not in the Cities wofull fyre Consum'd, but did him selfe to saietie retyre.

Anchyses sonne begot of Venus faire,
(Said he,) out of the flames for safegard fled,
And with a rennant did to sea repaire,
Where he through fatall errour long was led
Full many yeares, and weetlesse wandered
From shore to shore, emongst the Lybickes ands,
Ere rest he found. Much there he suffered,
And many perils past in forreine lands,
To saue his people sad from victours vengefull
hands.

At last in Latium he did arriue,
Where he with cruell warre was entertaind
Of th'inland folke, which sought him backe to
driue,
Till he with the Latius was a controled.

Till he with old Latinus was constraind,
To contract wedlock: (so the fates ordaind.)
Wedlock contract in bloud, and eke in blood
Accomplished, that many deare complaind:
The riuall slaine, the victour through the flood
Escaped hardly, hardly praisd his wedlock good.

Yet after all, he victour did suruiue,
And with Latinus did the kingdome part.
But after, when both nations gan to striue,
Into their names the title to conuart,
His sonne Iūlus did from thence depart,
With all the warlike youth of Troians bloud,
And in long Alba plast his throne apart,
Where faire it florished, and long time stoud,
Till Romulus renewing it, to Rome remoud.

There there (said Britomart) a fresh appeard
The glory of the later world to spring,
And Troy againe out of her dust was reard,
To sit in second seat of soueraigne king,
Of all the world vnder her gouerning.
But a third kingdome yet is to arise,
Out of the Troians scattered of-spring,
That in all glory and great enterprise,
Both first and second Troy shall dare to equalise.

45 It Troynouant is hight, that with the waves

Of wealthy Thamis washed is along, Voon whose stubborne neck, whereat he raues With roring rage, and sore him selfe does throng, That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong, She fastned hath her foot, which standes so hv. That it a wonder of the world is song In forreine landes, and all which passen by Beholding it from far, do thinke it threates the skve.

The Trolan Brute did first that Citie found, And Hygate made the meare thereof by West, And Ouert gate by North: that is the bound Toward the land; two rivers bound the rest. So huge a scope at first him seemed best, To be the compasse of his kingdomes seat: So huge a mind could not in lesser rest. Ne in small meares containe his glory great, That Albion had conquered first by warlike feat.

Ah fairest Lady knight, (said Paridell) Pardon I pray my hecdlesse ouersight, Who had forgot, that whilome I heard tell From aged Mnemon; for my wits bene light. Indeed he said (if I remember right.) That of the antique Troian stocke, there grew Another plant, that raught to wondrous hight, And far abroad his mighty branches threw, Into the vtmost Angle of the world he knew.

For that same Brute, whom much he did aduaunce In all his speach, was Sylutus his sonne, Whom having slaine, through luckles arrowes glaunce

He fled for feare of that he had misdonne, Or else for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne, And with him led to sea an youthly trayne, Where wearie wandring they long time did

And many fortunes prou'd in th'Ocean mayne, And great aduentures found, that now were long to sayne.

40

At last by fatall course they driven were Into an Island spatious and brode. The furthest North, that did to them appeare Which after rest they seeking far abrode; Found it the fittest soyle for their abode. Fruitfull of all things fit for living foode, But wholy wast, and void of peoples trode, Saue an huge nation of the Geaunts broode, That fed on living flesh, and druncke mens vitall blood.

Whom he through wearie wars and labours long. Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold: In which the great Goemagot of strong Corineus, and Coulin of Debon old Were ouerthrowne, and layd on th'earth full Which quaked vnder their so hideous masse, A famous history to be enrold

In eucrlasting moniments of brasse, That all the antique Worthies merits far did passe.

His worke great Troynouant, his worke is eke Faire Lincolne, both renowmed far away, That who from East to West will endlong seeke. Cannot two fairer Cities find this day, Except Cleopolis: so heard I say Old Mnemon. Therefore Sir, I greet you well Your countrey kin, and you entirely pray

Of pardon for the strife, which late befell Betwixt vs both vnknowne. So ended Paridell.

But all the while, that he these speaches spent, Voon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore, With vigilant regard, and dew attent, Fashioning worlds of fancies euermore In her fraile wit, that now her quite forlore: The whiles vnwares away her wondring eye, And greedy eares her weake hart from her hore:

Which he perceiuing, euer priuily In speaking, many false belgardes at her let fly.

So long these knights discoursed diversly, Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment, Which they had past with mickle icopardy, That now the humid night was farforth spent, And heavenly lampes were halfendeale ybrent: Which th'old man seeing well, who too long thought Euery discourse and euery argument, Which by the houres he measured, besought Them go to rest. So all vnto their bowres were brought.

#### Cant. X.

#### 

Paridell rapeth Hellenore
Malbecco her pursewes:
Findes emongst Satyres, whence with him
To turne she doth refuse.

#### 

The morow next, so soone as *Phæbus* Lamp Bewrayed had the world with early light, And fresh *Aurora* had the shady damp Out of the goodly heauen amoued quight, Faire *Britomart* and that same *Faerie* knight Vprose, forth on their iourney for to wend: But *Paridell* complaynd, that his late fight With *Britomart*, so sore did him oftend,

That ryde he could not, till his hurts he did amend.

So forth they far'd, but he behind them stayd,
Maulgre his host, who grudged grieuously,
To house a guest, that would be needes obayd,
And of his owne him left not liberty:
Might wanting measure moueth surquedry.
Two things he feared, but the third was death;
That fierce youngmans vnruly maistery;
His money, which he lou'd as liuing breath;
And his faire wife, whom honest long he kept
vneath.

But patience perforce he must abie,
What fortune and his fate on him will lay,
Fond is the feare, that findes no remedie;
Yet warily he watcheth euery way,
By which he fearch euill happen may:
So th'euill thinkes by watching to preuent;
Ne doth he suffer her, nor night, nor day,
Out of his sight her selfe once to absent.
So doth he punish her and eke himselfe torment

But Paridell kept better watch, then hee, A fit occasion for his turne to find: False loue, why do men say, thou canst

And in their foolish fancie feigne thee blind, That with thy charmes the sharpest sight doest bind.

And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free. And seest euery secret of the mind; Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee; All that is by the working of thy Deitee. So perfect in that art was Paridell,
That he Malbeccoes halfen eye did wyle,
His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well,
And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguyle,
Both eyes and hart attonce, during the whyle
That he there soiourned his wounds to heale;
That Cupid selfe it seeing, close did smyle,
To weet how he her loue away did steale,
And bad, that none their ioyous treason should
reueale.

6

The learned louer lost no time nor tyde,
That least auantage mote to him afford,
Yet bore so faire a saile, that none espyde
His secret drift, till he her layd abord.
When so in open place, and commune bord,
He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach
He courted her, yet bayted euery word,
That his vngentle hoste n'ote him appeach
Of vile vngentlenesse, or hospitages breach.

But when apart (if euer her apart)
He found, then his false engins fast he plyde,
And all the sleights vnbosomd in his hart;
He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde,
And cast himselfe on ground her fast besyde.
Tho when againe he him bethought to liue,
He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,
Saying, but if she Mercie would him giue
That he mote algates dye, yet did his death
forgiue.

And otherwhiles with amorous delights,
And pleasing toyes he would her entertaine,
Now singing sweetly, to surprise her sprights,
Now making layes of loue and louers paine,
Bransles, Ballads, virelayes, and verses vaine;
Oft purposes, oft riddles he deuysd,
And thousands like, which flowed in his
braine.

With which he fed her fancie, and entysd To take to his new loue, and leaue her old despysd.

And euery where he might, and cuery while
He did her seruice dewtifull, and sewed
At hand with humble pride, and pleasing guile,
So closely yet, that none but she it vewed,
Who well perceiued all, and all indewed.
Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,
With which he many weake harts had subdewed

Of yore, and many had ylike misled: What wonder then, if she were likewise carried?

No fort so fensible, no wals so strong,
But that continuall battery will rine,
Or daily siege through dispuruayance long,
And lacke of reskewes will to parley driue;
And Peece, that vnto parley eare will giue,
Will shortly yeeld it selfe, and will be made
The vassall of the victors will byliue:
That stratageme had oftentimes assayd
This crafty Paramoure, and now it plaine displayd.

1

For through his traines he her intrapped hath, That she her loue and hart hath wholy sold To him, without regard of gaine, or scath, Or care of credite, or of husband old, Whomshe hath vow'd todub a faire Cucquold. Nought wants but time and place, which shortly shee

Deuized hath, and to her louer told. It pleased well. So well they both agree; So readie rype to ill, ill wemens counsels bee.

12

Darke was the Euening, fit for louers stealth, When chaunst *Malbecco* busic be elsewhere, She to his closet went, where all his wealth Lay hid: thereof she countlesse summes did reare,

The which she meant away with her to beare; The rest she fyr'd for sport, or for despight; As Hellene, when she saw aloft appeare The Troiane flames, and reach to heavens hight Did clap her hands, and joyed at that dolefull sight.

13

This second Hellene, faire Dame Hellenore,
The whiles her husband ranne with sory haste,
Toquenchthe flames, which she had tyn'd before,
Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste;
And ranne into her louers armes right fast;
Where streight embraced, she to him did cry,
And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were past;
For loe that Guest would beare her forcibly,
And meant to rauish her, that rather had to dy.

14

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd, And readie seeing him with her to fly, In his disquiet mind was much dismayd: But when againe he backward cast his eye, And saw the wicked fire so furiously Consume his hart, and scorch his Idoles face, He was therewith distressed diuersly, Ne wist he how to turne, nor to what place; Was neuer wretched man in such a wofull cace.

15

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd, And left the fire; loue money ouercame: But when he marked, how his money burnd, Ile left his wife; money did loue disclame: Both was he loth to loose his loued Dame, And loth to leaue his liefest pelfe behind, Yet sith he n'ote saue both, he sau'd that same, Which was the dearest to his donghill mind, The God of his desire, the loy of misers blind.

16

Thus whilest all things in troublous vprore were, And all men busie to suppresse the flame, The louing couple need no reskew feare, But leasure had, and libertie to frame Their purpost flight, free from all mens reclame; And Night, the patronesse of loue-stealth faire, Gaue them safe conduct, till to end they came: So bene they gone yfeare, a wanton paire Of louers loosely knit, where list them to repaire.

17

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were,

Malbecco seeing, how his losse did lye,
Out of the flames, which he had quencht
whylere

Into huge waues of griefe and gealosye Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye, Twixt inward doole and felonous despight; He rau'd, he wept, he stampt, he lowd did cry, And all the passions, that in man may light, Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his caytiue spright.

18

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward griefe,
And did consume his gall with anguish sore,
Still when he mused on his late mischiefe,
Then still the smart thereof increased more,
And seem'd more grieuous, then it was before:
At last when sorrow he saw booted nought,
Ne griefe might not his loue to him restore,
He gan deuise, how her he reskew mought,
Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused
thought.

19

At last resoluing, like a pilgrim pore,
To search herforth, where so she might be fond,
And bearing with him treasure in close store,
The rest he leaues in ground: So takes in hond
To seeke her endlong, both by sea and lond.
Long he her sought, he sought her farre and

And every where that he mote vnderstond, Of knights and ladies any meetings were, And of eachone he met, he tydings did inquere. \_\_\_

But all in vaine, his woman was too wise, Euer to come into his clouch againe, And he too simple euer to surprise The iolly Paridell, for all his paine. One day, as he forpassed by the plaine With weary pace, he farre away espide A couple, seeming well to be his twaine, Which houed close vnder a forrest side, Asif they lay in wait, or else themselues did hide.

Well weened he, that those the same mote bee, And as he better did their shape auize, Him seemed more their manner did agree; For th'one was armed all in warlike wize, Whom, to be Paridell he did deuize; And th'other all yelad in garments light, Discolour'd like to womanish disguise, He did resemble to his Ladie bright;

And euer his faint hart much earned at the sight.

And euer faine he towards them would goe, But yet durst not for dread approchen nie, But stood aloofe, vnweeting what to doe; Till that prickt forth with loues extremitie, That is the father of foule gealosy, He closely nearer crept, the truth to weet: But, as he nigher drew, he easily Might scerne, that it was not his sweetestsweet, Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet.

But it was scornefull Braggadocchio,
That with his seruant Trompart houerd there,
Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe:
Whom such when as Malbecco spyed clere,
He turned backe, and would haue fled arere;
Till Trompart ronning hastily, him did stay,
And bad before his soueraine Lord appere:
That was him loth, yet durst he not gainesay,
And conming him before, low louted on the lay.

2.1

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
As if he could haue kild him with his looke,
Thatto theground him meckely made to bowe,
And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,
That euery member of his bodie quooke.
Said he, Thou man of nought, what doest thou
here,

Vnfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke, Where I expected one with shield and spere, To proue some deedes of armes ypon an equall pere 25

The wretched man at his imperious speach, Was all abasht, and low prostrating, said; Good Sir, let not my rudenesse be no breach Vnto your patience, ne be ill ypaid; For I vnwares this way by fortune straid, A silly Pilgrim driuen to distresse, That seeke a Lady, There he suddein staid, Andid therest with grieuous sighes suppresse, While teares stood in his eies, few drops of bitternesse.

What Ladie, man? (said Trompart) take good hart.

hart,
And tell thy griefe, if any hidden lye;
Was neuer better time to shew thy smart,
Then now, that noble succour is thee by,
That is the whole worlds commune remedy.
That cheareful word his weake hart much did
cheare,

And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply, That bold he said; O most redoubted Pere, Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace to heare.

Then sighing sore, It is not long (said hee)
Sith I enjoyd the gentlest Dame aliue;
Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,
But shame of all, that doe for honor striue,
By treacherous deceipt did me depriue;
Through open outrage he her bore away,
And with fowle force vnto his will did driue,
Which all good knights, that armes do beare
this day,

Arebound for to reuenge, and punish if they may.

28

And you most noble Lord, that can and dare Redresse the wrong of miserable wight, Cannot employ your most victorious speare In better quarrell, then defence of right, And for a Ladie gainst a faithlesse knight; So shall your glory be aduaunced much, And all faire Ladies magnife your might, And eke my selfe, albe I simple such, Your worthy paine shall well reward with guerdon rich.

With that out of his bouget forth he drew Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt; But he on it lookt scornefully askew, As much disdeigning to be so misdempt, Or a war-monger to be basely nempt; And said; Thy offers base I greatly loth, And eke thy words vincourteous and vinkempt: I tread in dust thee and thy money both, That, were it not for shame, So turned from him worth. But Trompart, that his maisters humor knew,
In lofty lookes to hide an humble mind,
Was inly tickled with that golden vew,
And in his eare him rounded close behind:
Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the wind,
Waiting aduauntage on the pray to sease;
Till Trompart lowly to the ground inclind,
Besought him his great courage to appease,
And pardon simple man, that rash did him
displease.

Bigge looking like a doughtie Doucepere,
At last he thus; Thou clod of vilest clay,
I pardon yield, and with thy rudenesse beare;
But weete henceforth, that all that golden pray,
And all that else the vaine world vaunten may,
I loath as doung, ne deeme my dew reward:
Fame is my meed, and glory vertues pray.
But minds of mortall men are muchell mard,
And mou'd amisse with massie mucks vnmeet
regard.

32
And more, I graunt to thy great miserie
Gratious respect, thy wife shall backe be sent,
And that vile knight, who euer that he bee,
Whichhaththy Ladyreft, and knighthoodshent,
By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly dent
The bloud hath of so many thousands shed,
I sweare, ere long shall dearely it repent;
Nehe twixtheauen and earth shall hide his hed,
But soone he shall be found, and shortly doen
be ded.

The foolish man thereat woxe wondrous blith, As if the word so spoken, were halfe donne, And humbly thanked him a thousand sith, That had from death to life him newly wonne. The forththe Boaster marching, braue begonne His stolen steed to thunder furiously, As if he heauen and hell would ouerronn And all the world confound with cruelty, That much Malbecco loyed in his iollity.

Thus long they three together traueiled,
Through many a wood, and many an vncouth
way,

To seeke his wife, that was farre wandered: But those two sought nought, but the present

\_ pray,

To weete the treasure, which he did bewray, On which their cies and harts were wholly set, With purpose, how they might it best betray; For sith the houre, that first he did them let The same behold, therewith their keene desires were whet.

It fortuned as they together far'd,
They spide, where Paridell came pricking fast
Vpon the plaine, the which himselfe prepar'd
Togiust with that braue straunger knight a cast,
As on aduenture by the way he past;
Alone he rode without his Paragone;
For having filcht her bels, her vp he cast
To the wide world, and let her fly alone,
He nould be clogd. So had he serued many one.

The gentle Lady, loss at randon left, [wide The greene-wood long did walke, and wander At wilde aduenture, like a forlorne weft, Till on a day the Satvres her espide Straying alone withouten groome or guide; Her vp they tooke, and with them home herled, With them as housewife cuer to abide, To milk their gotes, and make them cheese and bred,

And euery one as commune good her handeled

That shortly she Malbecco has forgot,
And eke Sir Paridell, all were he deare;
Who from her went to seeke another lot,
And now by fortune was arriued here,
Where those two guilers with Malbecco were:
Soone as the oldman saw Sir Paridell,
He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
Ne word he had to speake, his griefe to tell,
But to him louted low, and greeted goodly well.

38
And after asked him for Hellenore,
I take no keepe of her (said Paridell)
She wonneth in the forrest there before.
So forth he rode, as his aduenture fell;
The whiles the Boaster from his loftie sell
Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend;
But thefresh Swaynewouldnot his leasuredwell,
But went his way; whom when he passed kend,
He vp remounted light, and after faind to wend.

Perdy nay (said Malbecco) shall ye not:
But let him passe as lightly, as he came:
For litle good of him is to be got,
And mickle perill to be put to shame.
But let vs go to seeke my dearest Dame,
Whom he hath left in yonder forrest wyld:
For of her safety in great doubt I am,
Least saluage beastes her person haue despoyld:
Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine haue toyld.

They all agree, and forward them addrest:
Ah but (said craftie *Trompart*) weete ye well,
That yonder in that wastefull wildernesse
Hugemonsters haunt, and many dangers dwell;
Dragons, and Minotaures, and feendes of hell,
And many wilde woodmen, which robbe and

All trauellers; therefore aduise ye well, Before ye enterprise that way to wend: One may his iourney bring too soone to euill end.

41

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,
And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,
Their counsell crau'd, in daunger imminent.
Said Trompart, You that are the most opprest
With burden of great treasure, I thinke best
Here for to stay in safetie behind;
My Lord and I will search the wide forrest.
That counsell pleased not Malbeccoes mind;
For he was much affraid, himselfe alone to find.

42

Then is it best (said he) that ye doe leaue Your treasure here in some securitie, Either fast closed in some hollow greaue, Or buried in the ground from ieopardie, Till we returne againe in safetie:

As for vs two, least doubt of vs ye haue, Hence farre away we will blindfolded lie, Ne priuie be vnto your treasures graue. It pleased: so he did. Then they march forward braue.

41

Now when amid the thickest woods they were, They heard a noyse of many bagpines shrill, And shrieking Hububs them approching nere, Which all the forrest did with horror fill: Thatdreadfullsound the boasters hart did thrill, With such amazement, that in haste he fled, Ne euer looked backe for good or ill, And after him eke fearefull Trompart sped; The old man could not fly, but fell to ground halfe ded.

44

Yet afterwards close creeping, as he might, He in a bush did hide his fearefull hed, The iolly Salyres full of fresh delight, Camedauncing forth, and with themnimbly led Faire Hellenore, with girlonds all bespred, Whom their May-lady they had newly made: She proud of that new honour, which they red, And of their louely fellowship full glade, Daunst liuely, and her face did with a Lawrell shade.

The silly man that in the thicket lay Saw all this goodly sport, and grieued sore, Yet durst he not against it doe or say, But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore, To see th'vnkindnesse of his Hellenore. All day they daunced with great lustihed, Andwiththeirhornedfeet thegreene grasse wore, The whiles their Gotes vivon the brouzes fed, Till drouping Phabus gan to hide his golden hed.

46

Tho vp they gan their merry pypes to trusse, And all their goodly heards did gather round, But euery Salyre first did giue a busse To Hellenore: so busses did abound. Now gan the humid vapour shed the ground With perly deaw, andth'Earthesgloomy shade Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin round, That euery bird and beast awarned made, To shrowd themselues, whiles sleepe their senses did inuade.

47

Which when Malbecco saw, out of his bush Voon his hands and feete he crept full light, And like a Gote emongst the Gotes did rush, That through the helpe of his faire hornes on hight,

And misty dampe of misconceiuing night, And eke through likenesse of his gotish beard, He did the better counterfeite aright: So home he marcht emongst the horned heard, That none of all the Salyres himespyde or heard.

48

At night, when all they went to sleepe, he vewd, Whereas his louely wife emongst them lay, Embraced of a Salyre rough and rude, Who all the night did minde his ioyous play: Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day, That all his hart with gealosie did swell; But yet that nights ensample did bewray, That not for nought his wife them louedso well. When one so oft a night did ring his matins bell.

49

So closely as he could, he to them crept,
When wearie of their sport to sleepe they fell,
And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,
Ile whispered in her eare, and did her tell,
That it was he, which by her side did dwell.
And therefore prayd her wake, to heare him
plaine.

As one out of a dreame not waked well, She turned her, and returned backe againe: Yet her for to awake hedid the more constraine.

At last with irkesome trouble she abrayd; And then perceiuing, that it was indeed Her old Malbecco, which did her vpbrayd, With loosenesse of her loue, and loathly deed, She was astonisht with exceeding dreed. And would have wakt the Salyre by her syde; But he her prayd, for mercy, or for meed, To saue his life, ne let him be descryde, But hearken to his lore, and all his counsell hyde.

Tho gan he her perswade, to leave that lewd And loathsome life, of God and man abhord, And home returne, where all should be renewd Withperfect peace, and bandes of freshaccord, And she receiv'd againe to bed and bord, As if no trespasse euer had bene donne: But she it all refused at one word. And by no meanes would to his will be wonne. But chose emongst the iolly Satyres still to wonne.

He wooed her, till day spring he espyde; But all in vaine: and then turnd to the heard. Who butted him with hornes on euery syde, And trode downe in the durt, where his hore beard

Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard. Early before the heavens fairest light Out of the ruddy East was fully reard, The heardes out of their foldes were loosed

And he emongst the rest crept forth in sory plight.

53 So soone as he the Prison dore did pas. He ran as fast, as both his feete could beare, And neuer looked, who behind him was, Ne scarsely who before: like as a Beare That creeping close, amongst the hiues to reare An hony combe, the wakefull dogs espy, And him assayling, sore his carkasse teare, That hardly he with life away does fly, Ne stayes, till safe himselfe he see from leopardy.

Ne stayd he, till he came vnto the place, Where late his treasure he entombed had, Where when he found it not (for Trompart bace Had it purloyned for his maister bad:) With extreme fury he became quite mad, And ran away, ran with himselfe away: That who so straungely had him seene bestad, With vpstart haire, and staring eyes dismay, From Limbolake him late escaped sure would say.

High ouer hilles and ouer dales he fled, As if the wind him on his winges had borne. Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he sped His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne: Griefe, and despight, and gealosie, and scorne Did all the way him follow hard behind, And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne. So shamefully forlorne of womankind: That as a Snake, still lurked in his wounded mind.

Still fled he forward, looking backward still, Ne stayd his flight, nor fearefull agony, Till that he came vnto a rockie hill. Ouer the sea, suspended dreadfully, That living creature it would terrify, To looke adowne, or voward to the hight: From thence he threw himselfe dispitcously, All desperate of his fore-damned spright, That seem'd no helpe for him was left in living sight.

But through long anguish, and selfe-murdring thought

He was so wasted and forpined quight, That all his substance was consum'd to nought, And nothing left, but like an acry Spright, That on the rockes he fell so flit and light. That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all, But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light; Whence he with crooked clawes so long did crall, That at the last he found a caue with entrance small.

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth there Resolu'd to build his balefull mansion. In drery darkenesse, and continual feare Of that rockes fall, which euer and anon Threates with huge ruine him to fall vpon, That he dare neuer sleepe, but that one eye Still ope he keepes for that occasion: Ne euer rests he in tranquillity, The roring billowes beat his bowre so boystrously.

Ne euer is he wont on ought to feed, But toades and frogs, his pasture poysonous, Which in his cold complexion do breed A filthy bloud, or humour rancorous, Matter of doubt and dread suspitious, That doth with curelesse care consume the hart, Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious, Croscuts the liver with internal smart, And doth transfixe the soule with deather eternall dart.

Yet can he neuer dye, but dying liues,
And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,
That death and life attonce vnto him giues.
And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.
There dwels he euer, miserable swaine,
Hatefull both to him selfe, and euery wight;
Where he through priny griefe, and horrour
vaine,

Is woxen so deform'd, that he has quight Forgot he was a man, and Gealosie is hight.

#### Cant. XI.

#### 

Britomart chaceth Olly phant, findes Scudamour distrest: Assayes the house of Busyrane, where Loues spoyles are exprest.

#### construction and a second contraction of the second contraction of the

.

O hatefull hellish Snake, what furie furst Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine. Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst. And fostred vp with bitter milke of tine, Fowle Gealosic, that turnest loue diuine To ioylesse dread, and mak'st the louing hart With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine, And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart? Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art.

O let him far be banished away,
And in his stead let Loue for euer dwell,
Sweet Loue, that doth his golden wings embay
In blessed Nectar, and pure Pleasures well,
Vntroubled of vile feare, or bitter fell.
And yefaire Ladies, that your kingdomes make
In th'harts of men, them gouerne wisely well,
And of faire Britomart ensample take,
That was as trew in loue, as Turtle to her make.

Who with Sir Salvrane, as earst ye red,
Forth ryding from Malbeccoes hostlesse hous,
Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled
From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous
And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus;
It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare
Of that Argante vile and vitious,
From whom the Squire of Dames was reft
whylere:

This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse ought were.

For as the sister did in feminine
And filthy lust exceede all woman kind,
So he surpassed his sex masculine,
In beastly vse that I did euer find;
Whom when as Britomart beheld behind
The fearefull boy so greedily pursew,
She was emmoued in her noble mind,
T'employ her puissaunce to his reskew,
And pricked fiercely forward, where she him did

Ne was Sir Salyrane her far behinde,
But with like fiercenesse did ensew the chace:
Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone resinde
Ilis former suit, and from them fled apace;
They after both, and boldly bad him bace,
And each did striue the other to out-goe,
But he them both outran a wondrous space,
For he was long, and swift as any Roe,
And now made better speed, t'escape his feared
foe.

6
It was not Salyrane, whom he did feare,
But Britomart the flowre of chastity;
For he the powre of chast hands might not
beare,

Deare,
But alwayes did their dread encounter fly
And now so fast his feet he did apply,
That he has gotten to a forrest neare,
Where he is shrowded in security.
The wood they enter, and search enery where,
They searched diuersely, so both diuided were.

Faire Britomart so long him followed,
That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,
By which there lay a knight all wallowed
Vion the grassy ground, and by him neare
His haberieon, his helmet, and his speare;
A little off, his shield was rudely throwne,
On which the winged boy in colours cleare
Depeincted was, full easie to be knowne,
And he thereby, where euer it in field was
showne.

His face vpon the ground did groueling ly, As if he had bene slombring in the shade. That the braue Mayd would not for courtesy, Out of his quiet slomber him abrade, Nor seeme too suddeinly him to inuade: Still as she stood, she heard with grieuous throb

Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made, And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob, That pitty did the Virgins hart of patience rob. At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes
He said; O soueraigne Lord that sit'st on hye,
And raignst in blis emongst thy blessed Saintes,
How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty,
So long vnwreaked of thine enimy?
Orhast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed?
Or doth thy justice sleepe, and silent ly?
What booteth then the good and righteous deed,
If good nesse find no grace, nor righteousnesse
no meed?

If good find grace, and righteousnesse reward, Why then is Amoret in caytiue band, with that more bounteous creature neuer far'd On foot, ypon the face of liuing land? Or if that heauenly justice may withstand. The wrongfull outrage of vnrighteous men, Why then is Busirane with wicked hand Suffred, these seuen monethes day in secret den My Lady and my loue so cruelly to pen?

My Lady and my loue is cruelly pend
In dolefull darkenesse from the year of

In dolefull darkenesse from the vew of day, Whilest deadly torments do her chast brest rend,

And the sharpe steele doth rine her hart in tway, All for she Scudamore will not denay. Yet thou vile man, vile Scudamore art sound, Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay; Ynworthy wretch to tread ypon the ground, For whom so faire a Lady feeles so sore a wound.

12

There an huge heape of singultes did oppresse His strugling soule, and swelling throbs em-

His foltring toung with pangs of drerinesse, thoking the remnant of his plaintife speach, As if his dayes were come to their last reach. Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly fit, Threatning into his life to make a breach, Both with great ruth and terrour she was smit, Fearing least from her cage the wearie soule would fit.

Tho stooping downe she him amoued light; Whotherewithsomewhatstarting, ypganlooke, And seeing him behind a straunger knight, Whereas no liuing creature he mistooke, With great indignaunce he that sight forsooke, And downe againe himselfe disdainefully Abi:cting, th'earth with his faire forhead strooke:

Which the bold Virgin seeing, gan apply Fit medcine to his griefe, and spake thus courtesly. Ah gentle knight, whose deepe conceiued griefe Well seemes t'exceede the powre of patience, Yet if that heauenly grace some good reliefe You send, submit you to high prouidence, And euer in your noble hart prepense, That all the sorrow in the world is lesse, Then vertues might, and values confidence, For who nill bide the burden of distresse, Must not here thinke to liue: for life is wretchednesse.

Therefore, faire Sir, do comfort to you take,
And freely read, what wicked felon so
Hathoutrag'dyou, and thruldyour gentle make.
Perhaps this hand may helpe to ease your woe,
And wreake your sorrow on your cruell foe,
At least it faire endeuour will apply.
Those feeling wordes so neare the quicke did
goe.

That vp his head he reared easily, And leaning on his elbow, these few wordes let

What boots it plaine, that cannot be redrest, And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse care, Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest. Ne worldly price cannot redeeme my deare, Out of her thraldome and continual feare? For he the tyraunt, which her hath in ward

By strong enchauntments and blacke Magicke leare, Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard, And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her

gard.

There he tormenteth her most terribly,
And day and night afflicts with mortall paine
Because to yield him love she doth deny,
Once to me yold, not to be yold againe:
But yet by torture he would her constraine
Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest;
Till so she do, she must in doole remaine,
Ne may by living meanes be thence relest:
What boots it then to plaine, that cannot be
redrest?

With this sad hersall of his heauy stresse,
The warlike Damzell was empassiond sore,
Andsaid; Sirknight, your cause is not more;
For nothing so much pitty doth implore,
As gentle Ladies helplesse misery.
But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,
I will with proofe of last extremity,
Deliuer her fro thence, or with her for you dy.

Ah gentlest knight aliue, (said *Scudamore*)
What huge heroicke magnanimity
Dwels in thy bounteous brest? what couldst
thou more.

If she were thine, and thou as now am I? O spare thy happy dayes, and them apply To better boot, but let me dye, that ought; More is more losse: one is enough to dy. Life is not lost, (said she) for which is bought Endlesse renowm, that more then death is to be sought.

2

Thus she at length perswaded him to rise,
And with her wend, to see what new successe
Mote him befall ypon new enterprise;
His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse,
She gathered yp and did about him dresse,
And his forwandred steed vnto him got:
So forth they both yfere make their progresse,
And march not past the mountenaunce of a shot.
Till they arriu'd, whereas their purpose they did
plot.

Therethey dismounting, drew their weapons bold And stoutly came vnto the Castle gate; Whereas no gate they found, them to withhold, Nor ward to wait at morne and euening late, But in the Porch, that did them sore amate, A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke, And stinking Sulphure, that with griesly hate And dreadfull horrour did all entraunce choke. Enforced them their forward footing to revoke.

22

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd,
Ne in that stownd wist, how her selfe to beare;
For daunger vaine it were, to haue assayd
That cruell element, which all things feare,
Ne none can suffer to approchen neare:
And turning backe to Scudamour, thus sayd;
What monstrous enmity prouoke we heare,
Foolhardy as th'Earthes children, the which
made

Battell against the Gods? so we a God inuade.

23

Daunger without discretion to attempt,
Inglorious and beastlike is: therefore Sir
knight,

Aread what course of you is safest dempt,
And how we with our foe may come to fight.
This is (quoth he) the dolorous despight,
Which earst to you I playnd: for neither may
This fire be quencht by any wit or might,
Ne yet by any meanes remou'd away,
Sa mighty be the contracts which the

So mighty be th'enchauntments, which the

same do stay.

2.

What is there else, but cease these fruitlesse paines,
And leaue me to my former languishing?

Faire Amoret must dwell in wicked chaines,
And Scudamore here dye with sorrowing.
Perdy not so; (said she) for shamefull thing
It were t'abandon noble cheuisaunce,
For shew of perill, without venturing:
Rather let try extremities of chaunce,
Thenenterprised prayse for dread to disauaunce.

--

Therewith resolu'd to proue her vtmost might, Her ample shield she threw before her face, And her swords point directing forward right, Assayld the flame, the which eftsoones gaue place,

And did it selfe divide with equall space,
That through she passed; as a thunder bolt
Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth displace
The soring clouds into sad showres ymolt;
So to her yold the flames, and did their force
revolt.

Whom whenas Scudamour saw past the fire, Safe and vntoucht, he likewise gan assay, With greedy will, and enuious desire, And bad the stubborne flames to yield him way:

But cruell Mulciber would not obay
His threatfull pride, but did the more augment
His mighty rage, and with imperious sway
Him forst (maulgre) his fiercenesse to relent.
And backe retire, all scorcht and pitifully brent.

With huge impatience he inly swelt,
More for great sorrow, that he could not pas.
Then for the burning torment, which he felt,
That with fell woodnesse he efferced was,
And wilfully him throwing on the gras,
Didbeatandbounsehishead and brestfullsore;
The whiles the Championesse now entred has
The vtmost rowme, and past the formest dore,
The vtmost rowme, abounding with all precious
store.

For round about, the wals yelothed were With goodly arras of great maiesty, Wouen with gold and silke so close and nere, That the rich metall lurked priuily, As faining to be hid from enuious eye; Yet here, and there, and euery where vnwares It shewd it selfe, and shone vnwillingly; Like a discolourd Snake, whose hidden snares Through the greene gras his long bright burnisht backe declares.

And in those Tapets weren fashioned Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire feate. And all of loue, and all of lusty-hed, As seemed by their semblaunt did entreat: And eke all Cupids warres they did repeate. And cruell battels, which he whilome fought Gainst all the Gods, to make his empire great : Besides the huge massacres, which he wrought On mighty kings and kesars, into thraldome brought.

Therein was writ, how often thundring Ioue Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart, And leaving heavens kingdome, here did roue In straunge disguize, to slake his scalding

Now like a Ram, faire Helle to peruart, Now like a Bull, Europa to withdraw: Ah, how the fearefull Ladies tender hart Did lively seeme to tremble, when she saw The huge seas vnder her t'obay her seruaunts law.

Soone after that into a golden showre Him selfe he chaung'd faire Danaë to vew. And through the roofe of her strong brasen

Did raine into her lap an hony dew, The whiles her foolish garde, that little knew Of such deceipt, kept th'yron dore fast bard, And watcht, that none should enter nor issew; Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the ward.

Whenas the God to golden hew him selfe transfard.

Then was he turnd into a snowy Swan, To win faire Leda to his louely trade: () wondrous skill, and sweet wit of the man, That her in daffadillies sleeping made, Fromscorchingheather daintie limbes to shade: Whiles the proud Bird ruffing his fethers wyde, And brushing his faire brest, did her inuade: The slept, yet twixt her eyelids closely spyde, How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his pryde.

Then shewd it, how the Thebane Semelee Deceiu'd of gealous Iuno, did require To see him in his soueraigne maiestee, Armd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire. Whence dearely she with death bought her desire.

But faire Alcmena better match did make, loying his loue in likenesse more entire; Three nights in one, they say, that for her sake He then did put, her pleasures lenger to partake.

34 Twise was he seene in soaring Eagles shape, And with wide wings to beat the buxome ayre, Once, when he with Asterie did scape, Againe, when as the Trojane boy so faire He snatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare: Wondrous delight it was, there to behould, How the rude Shepheards after him did stare. Trembling through feare, least down he fallen should.

And often to him calling, to take surer hould.

In Salyres shape Antiopa he snatcht: And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd: A shepheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht: And like a Serpent to the Thracian mayd. Whiles thus on earth great Ioue these pageaunts playd,

The winged boy did thrust into his throne. And scoffing, thus vnto his mother sayd, Lo now the heavens obey to me alone, And take me for their love, whiles love to earth is gone.

And thou, faire Phabus, in thy colours bright Wast there enwouen, and the sad distresse, In which that boy thee plonged, for despight, That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantonnesse, When she with Mars was mount in joyfulnesse: For thy he thrild thee with a leaden dart, To love faire Daphne, which thee loved lesse: Lesse she thee lou'd, then was thy just desart, Yet was thy loue her death, and her death was thy smart.

So louedst thou the lusty Hyacinct. So louedst thou the faire Coronis deare: Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct, Yet both in flowres do liue, and loue thee beare. The one a Paunce, the other a sweet breare: For griefe whereof, ye mote haue liuely seene The God himselfe rending his golden heare, And breaking quite his gyrlond ever greene. With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne.

The sonne of Climene he did repent, Who bold to guide the charet of the Sunne, Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent, And all the world with flashing fier brent; So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame. Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content, Forst him eftsoones to follow other game. And loue a Shepheards daughter for his dearest Dame.

.

He loued Isse for his dearest Dame,
And for her sake her cattell fed a while,
And for her sake a cowheard vile became,
The seruant of Adnetus cowheard vile,
Whiles that from heauen he suffered exile.
Long were to tell each other louely fit,
Now like a Lyon, hunting after spoile,
Now like a Stag, now like a faulcon flit:
All which in that faire arraswas most liuely writ.

Next vnto him was Neptune pictured,
In his diuine resemblance wondrous lyke:
His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed
Dropped with brackish deaw; his three-forkt
Pyke [stryke

He stearnly shooke, and therewith fierce did The raging billowes, that on euery syde They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke.

That his swift charet might have passage wyde, Which foure great *Hippodames* did draw in temewise tyde.

lis sea-horses did seeme to short amayne,
And from their nosethrilles blow the brynic
streame, [agayne,

streame, [agayne, That made the sparckling waues to smoke Andflamewithgold, but the white fomycreame, Didshine with siluer, and shoot for this beame. The God himselfe did pensiue seeme and sad, And hong adowne his head, as he did dreame: For priny loue his brest empierced had, Ne ought but deare Bisallis ay could make him glad.

He loued eke Iphimedia dearc.

And Acolus faire daughter Arne hight,
For whom he turnd him selfe into a Steare,
And fed on fodder, to beguile her sight.
Also to win Deucalions daughter bright,
He turnd him selfe into a Dolphin fayre;
And like a winged horse he tooke his flight,
To snaky-locke Medusa to repayre,
On whom he got faire Pegasus, that flitteth in
the ayre.

Next Saturne was, (but who would euer weene, That sullein Saturne euer weend to loue? Yet loue is sullein, and Saturnlike seene, As he did for Erigone it proue,)
That to a Centaure did him selfe transmoue. So proou'd it eke that gracious God of wine, When for to compasse Philliras hard loue, He turnd hims-lfe into a fruitfull vine, And into her faire bosome made his grapes decline.

44

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,
Andgentlepangues, with which he maked meeke
The mighty Mars, to learne his wanton playes:
How oft for Venus, and how often eek
For many other Nymphes he sore did shreek,
With womanish teares, and with vnwarlike
Priuily moystening his horrid cheek. [smarts,
There was he painted full of burning darts,
And many wide woundes launched through his
inner parts.

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)
His owne deare mother, (ah why should he so?)
Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,
That he might tast the sweet consuming wee,
Which he had wrought to many others moe.
But to declare the mournfull Tragedyes,
And spoiles, wherewith he all the ground did
strow,

More eath to number, with how many eyes
High heauen beholds sad louers nightly
theeueryes.

Kings Queenes, Lords Ladies, Knights and Damzels gent

Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort, And mingled with the raskall rablement, Without respect of person or of port, To shew Dan Cupids powre and great effort: And round about a border was entrayld, Of broken bowes and arrowes shiuered short, And a long bloudy river through them rayld. So liuely and so like, that living sence it fayld.

And at the vpper end of that faire rowme,
There was an Altar built of pretious stone,
Of passing valew, and of great renowme,
On which there stood an Image all alone,
Ofmassy gold, which with his ownelight shone;
And wings it had with sundry colours dight,
More sundry colours, then the proud Pauone
Beares in his boasted fan, or Iris bright,
When her discolourd bow she spreds through
heauen bright.

Blindfold he was, and in his cruell fist A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold. With which he shot at randon, when him list, Some headed with sad lead, some with pure gold;

(Ah man beware, how thou those darts behold)
A wounded Dragon vnder him did ly,
Whose hideous tayle his left foot die enfold,
And with a shaft was shot through either eye,
That no man forth might draw, ne no man

remedye.

And vnderneath his feet was written thus, Vnto the Victor of the Gods this bee:
And all the people in that ample hous Did to that image bow their humble knee, And oft committed fowle Idolatree. That wondrous sight faire Britomart amazed, Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie, But euermore and more vpon it gazed, The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile sences dazed.

Tho as she backward cast her busic eye,
To search each secret of that goodly sted,
Ouer the dore thus written she did spye
Be bold: she oft and oft it ouer-red,
Yet could not find what sence it figured:
But what so were therein or writ or ment,
She was no whit thereby discouraged
From prosecuting of her first intent,
But forward with bold steps into the next
roome went.

51

Much fairer, then the former, was that roome, And richlier by many partes arayd: For not with arras made in paincfull loome, But with pure gold it all was ouerlayd, Wrought with wilde Antickes, which their follies playd,

In the rich metall, as they living were:

A thousand monstrous formes therein were
made.

Such as false love doth oft vpon him weare, For love in thousand monstrous formes doth oft appeare.

And all about, the glistring walles were hong With warlikespoiles, and with victorious prayes, Of mighty Conquerours and Captaines strong, Which were whilome captitued in their dayes Tocruellloue, and wrought their ownedecayes: Their swerds and speres were broke, and hauberques rent:

And their proud girlonds of tryumphant bayes Troden in dust with fury insolent, To shew the victors might and mercilesse intent.

The warlike Mayde beholding earnestly
The goodly ordinance of this rich place,
Did greatly wonder, ne could satisfie
Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space,
But more she meruaild that no footings trace,
Nor wight appear'd, but wastefull emptinesse,
And solemne silence ouer all that place:
Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to
possesse [fulnesse.
So rich purueyance, ne them keepe with care-

And as she lookt about, she did behold,
How ouer that same dore was likewise writ,
Be bold, be bold, and enery where Be bold,
That muchshe muz'd, yet could not construe it
By any ridling skill, or commune wit.
At last she spyde at that roomes vpper end,
Another yron dore, on which was writ,
Be not too bold; whereto though she did bend
ler earnest mind, yet wist not what it might
intend.

Thus she there waited vntill eventyde, Yet living creature none she saw appeare: And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde, From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenesse dreare:

Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for feare Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse Her heauy eyes with natures burdein deare, But drew her selfe aside in sickernesse, And her welpointed weapons did about her dresse.

#### Cant. XII.

#### 

The maske of Cupid, and th'enchaunted Chamber are displayd. Whence Britomart redeemes faire Amoret, through charmes decayd.

#### 

Tho when as chearelesse Night yeouered had Faire heauen with an vniuersall cloud, That euery wight dismayd with darknesse sad, In silence and in sleepe themselues did shroud, She heard a shrilling Trompet sound aloud, Signe of nigh battell, or got victory; Nought therewith daunted was her courage proud,

But rather stird to cruell enmity, Expecting euer, when some foe she might descry.

With that, an hideous storme of winde arose, With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt, And an earth-quake, as if it streight would lose The worlds foundations from his centre fixt; A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt Ensewd, whose noyance fild the fearefull sted, From the fourth houre of night vntill the sixt; Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred, Though much emmou'd, but stedfast still perseuered.

All suddenly a stormy whirlwind blew
Throughout the house, that clapped euery dore,
With which that yron wicket open flew,
As it with mightie leuers had bene tore:
And forth issewd, as on the ready flore
Of some Theatre, a graue personage,
That in his hand a branch of laurell bore,
With comely haueour and count'nance sage,
Yclad in costly garments, fit for tragicke Stage.

Proceeding to the midst, he still did stand, As if in mind he somewhat had to say, And to the vulgar beckning with his hand, In signe of silence, as to heare a play, By liuely actions he gan bewray Some argument of matter passioned; Which doen, he backe retyred soft away, And passing by, his name discouered, Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

The noble Mayd, still standing all this vewd,
And merueild at his strange intendiment;
With that a ioyous fellowship issewd
Of Minstrals, making goodly meriment,
With wanton Bardes, and Rymers impudent,
All which together sung full chearefully
A lay of loues delight, with sweet concent:
After whom marcht a iolly company,
In manner of a maske, enranged orderly.

6

The whiles a most delitious harmony,
In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to
sound,

That the rare sweetnesse of the melody
The feeble senses wholly did confound,
Andthefrailesoule indeepedelightnighdround:
And when it ceast, shrill trompets loud did bray,
That their report !id farre away rebound,
And when they ceast, it gan againe to play,
The whiles the maskers marched forth in trim
aray.

The first was Fancy, like a louely boy,
Of rare aspect, and beautie without peare;
Matchable either to that ympe of Troy,
Whom Iouedid loue, and chose his cup to beare,
Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare
To great Alcides, that when as he dyde,
He wailed womanlike with many a teare,
And euery wood, and euery valley wyde
He fild with Hylas name; the Nymphes eke
Hylas cryd-

- 8

His garment neither was of silke nor say, But painted plumes, in goodly order dight, Like as the sunburnt *Indians* do aray Their tawney bodies, in their proudest plight: As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine and light.

That by his gate might easily appeare; For still he far'd as dauncing in delight, And in his hand a windy fan did beare, That in the idle aire he mou'd still here and there.

Q

And him beside marcht amorous Desyre, Whoseemdofriperyeares, then th'other Swaine, Yet was that other swayne this elders syre, Andgauehim being, commune to them twaine: His garment was disguised very vaine, And his embrodered Bonet sat awry; Twixt both his hands few sparkes he close did straine.

Which still he blew, and kindled busily, That soone they life conceiu'd, and forth in flames did fly.

annes did ny.

Next after him went *Doubt*, who was yclad In a discolour'd cote, of straunge disguyse, That at his backe a brode Capuccio had, And sleeues dependant *Albanese*-wyse: He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes, And nicely trode, as thornes lay in his way, Or that the flore to shrinke he did auyse, And on a broken reed he still did stay His feeble steps, which shrunke, when hard theron he lay.

Withhim went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged weed, Made of Beares skin, that him more dreadfull made,

Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need Straunge horrour, to deforme hisgriesly shade; A net in th'one hand, and a rustie blade In th'other was, this Mischiefe, that Mishap; With th'one his foes he threatned to inuade, With th'other he his friends ment to enwrap: For whom he could not kill, he practizd to entrap.

Next him was Feare, all arm'd from top to toe, Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby, But feard each shadow mouing to and fro, And his owne armes when glittering hedidspy, Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly, As ashes pale of hew, and wingyheeld; And euermore on daunger fixt his eye, Gainst whom he alwaies bent a brasen shield, Which his right hand vnarmed fearefully did wield.

With him went Hape in rancke, a handsome Mayd,

Mayd,
Of chearefull looke and louely to behold;
In silken samite she was light arayd,
And her faire lockes were wouen vp in gold;
She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold
An holy water Sprinckle, dipt in deowe,
With which she sprinckled fauours manifold,
On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe,
Great liking vnto many, but true loue to feowe.

1.4

And after them Dissemblance, and Suspect Marcht in one rancke, yet an vnequall paire: For she was gentle, and of milde aspect, Courteous to all, and seeming debonaire, Goodly adorned, and exceeding faire: Yet was that all but painted, and purloynd, And her bright browes were deckt with borrowed haire:

Her deedes were forged, and her words false covnd,

And alwaies in her hand two clewes of silke she twynd.

But he was foule, ill fauoured, and grim, Vnder his eyebrowes looking still askaunce; And euer as Dissemblance laught on him, He lowrd on her with daungerous eyeglaunce; Shewing his nature in his countenance; His rolling eyes did neuer rest in place, But walkt each where, for feare of hid mischaunce,

Hol ling a lattice still before his face, Through which he still did peepe, as forward he did pace.

Next him went Griefe, and Fury matcht yfere; Gruefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,
Downehanging hisdull head with heauy chere,
Yet inly being more, then seeming sad:
A paire of Pincers in his hand he had,
With which he pinched people to the hart,
That from thenceforth a wretched life they lad,
In wilfull languor and consuming smart,
Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours
dart.

But Fury was full ill appareiled
In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare,
With ghastly lookes and dreadfull drerihed;
For from her backe her garments she did teare,
And from her head oft rent her snarled heare:
In her right hand a firebrand she did tosse
About her head, still roming here and there;
As a dismayed Deare in chace embost,
Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way lost.

18

After them went Displeasure and Pleasance, He looking lompish and full sullein sad, And hanging downe his heauy countenance; She chearefull fresh and full of ioyance glad, As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad; That euill matched paire they seemd to bee An angry Waspe th'one in a viall had Th'other in hers an hony-lady Bee; Thus marched these sixe couples forth in faire degree.

10

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame, Led of two grysie villeins, th'one Despight, The other cleped Cruelly by name: She dolefull Lady, like a dreary Spright, Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night, Had deathes owne image figurd in her face, Full of sad signes, fearefull to liuing sight; Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace, And with her feeble feet did moue a comely pace.

20

Her brest all naked, as net iuory,
Without adorne of gold or siluer bright,
Wherewith the Craftesman wonts it beautify,
Of her dew honour was despoyled quight,
And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight)
Entrenched deepe with knife accursed keene,
Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright,
(The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene,
That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowy
cleene.

21

At that wide orifice her trembling hart
Was drawne forth, and in siluer basin layd,
Quite through transfixed with a deadly dart,
And in her bloud yet steeming fresh embayd:
Andthose two villeins, which her steps vpstayd,
When her weake feete could scarcely her sustaine.

And fading vitall powers gan to fade, Her forward still with torture did constraine, And euermore encreased her consuming paine.

22

Next after her the winged God himselfe Came riding on a Lion rauenous, Taught to obay the menage of that Elfe, That man and beast with powre imperious Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous: His blindfold eyes he bad a while vnbind, That his proud spoyle of that same dolorous Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kind; Which seene, he much reioyced in his cruell mind.

Of which full proud, himselfe vp rearing hye, He looked round about with sterne disdaine; And did survay his goodly company: And marshalling the euill ordered traine. With that the darts which his right hand did straine.

Full dreadfully he shooke that all did quake, And clapt on hie his coulourd winges twaine. That all his many it affraide did make: Tho blinding him againe, his way he forth did

take.

Behinde him was Reproch, Repentance, Shame; Reproch the first, Shame next, Repent behind: Repentance feeble, sorrowfull, and lame: Reproch despightfull, carelesse, and vnkind; Shame most ill fauourd, bestiall, and blind: Shame lowrd, Repentance sigh'd, Reproch did scould:

Reproch sharpe stings, Repentance whips en-Shame burning brond-yrons in her hand did hold: All three to each vnlike, yet all made in one

mould.

And after them a rude confused rout Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read: Emongst them was sterne Strife, and Anger Vinquiet Care, and fond Vnthriftihead, [stout, Lewd Losse of Time, and Sorrow seeming dead, Inconstant Chaunge, and false Disloyallie, Consuming Riotise, and guilty Dread Of heavenly vengeance, faint Infirmitie, Vile Pouertie, and lastly Death with infamie.

There were full many moe like maladies, Whose names and natures I note readen well: So many moe, as there be phantasies In wavering wemens wit, that none can tell, Or paines in loue, or punishments in hell; All which disguized marcht in masking wise, About the chamber with that Damozell, And then returned, having marched thrise, Into the inner roome, from whence they first did

So soone as they were in, the dore streight way Fast locked, driven with that stormy blast, Which first it opened; and bore all away. Then the braue Maid, which all this while was

In secret shade, and saw both first and last, Issewed forth, and went vnto the dore. To enter in, but found it locked fast: It vaine she thought with rigorous vprore For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore.

Where force might not availe, there sleights and

She cast to vse, both fit for hard emprize; For thy from that same roome not to depart Till morrow next, she did her selfe auize. When that same Maskeagaine should forth arize. The morrow next appeard with ioyous cheare. Calling men to their daily exercize, Then she, as morrow fresh, her selfe did reare

Out of her secret stand, that day for to out

weare.

All that day she outwore in wandering, And gazing on that Chambers ornament. Till that againe the second euening Her couered with her sable vestiment. Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath blent:

Then when the second watch was almost past, That brasen dore flew open, and in went Bold Britomart, as she had late forecast, Neither of idle shewes, nor of false charmes

aghast.

So soone as she was entred, round about She cast her eies, to see what was become Of all those persons, which she saw without: But lo, they streight were vanisht all and some, Ne liuing wight she saw in all that roome, Saue that same woefull Ladie, both whose hands Were bounden fast, that did her ill become. And her small wastgirt round with yron bands, Vnto a brasen pillour, by the which she stands.

And her before the vile Enchaunter sate. Figuring straunge characters of his art. With living bloud he those characters wrate, Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart. Seeming transfixed with a cruell dart. And all perforce to make her him to loue. Ah who can loue the worker of her smart? A thousand charmes he formerly did proue: Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast heart remoue.

Soone as that virgin knight he saw in place, His wicked bookes in hast he ouerthrew, Not caring his long labours to deface, And fiercely ronning to that Lady trew, A murdrous knife out of his pocket drew, The which he thought, for villeinous despight, In her tormented bodie to embrew: But the stout Damzell to him leaping light, His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his might.

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,
The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,
And turning to her selfe his fell intent,
Vinwares it strooke into her snowie chest,
That hittle drops empurpled her faire brest.
Exceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew,
Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest,
And hercely forth her mortall blade she drew,
Togiuehimtherewardforsuchvile outrage dew.

So mightily she smote him, that to ground
He fell halfe dead; next stroke him should
haue slaine,

had not the Lady, which by him stood bound, Dernely vnto her called to abstaine, From doing him to dy. For else her paine Should be remedilesse, sith none but hee, Whichwroughtit, could the same recure againe. Therewith she staydher hand, lothstayd to bee; For life she him enuyde, and long'd reuenge to see.

And to him said, Thou wicked man, whose meed For so huge mischiefe, and vile villany Is death, or if that ought do death exceed, Be sure, that nought maysaue thee from to dy, But if that thou this Dame doe presently Restore vnto her health, and former state; This doe and liue, else die vndoubtedly.

He glad of life, that lookt for death but late, Did yield himselfe right willing to prolong his date.

And rising vp, gan streight to ouerlooke
Those cursed leaues, his charmes backe to

Full dreadfull things out of that balefull booke He red, and measur'd many a sad verse, That horror gan the virgins hart to perse, And her faire locks vp stared stife on end, Hearing him those same bloudy lines reherse; And all the while he red, she did extend Her sword high ouer him, if ought he did offend.

Anon she gan perceiue the house to quake, And all the dores to rattle round about; Yet all that did not her dismaied make, Nor slacke her threatfull hand for daungers dout,

But still with stedfast eye and courage stout Abode, to weet what end would come of all. At last that mightie chaine, which round about Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall, And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces small.

The cruell steele, which thrild her dying hart,
Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord,
And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart
Her bleeding brest, and riuen bowels gor'd,
Was closed vp, as it had not bene bor'd,
And euery part to safety full sound,
As she were neuer hurt, was soone restor'd:
Tho when she felt her selfe to be vnbound,
And perfect hole, prostrate she fell vnto the
ground.

Before faire Britomart, she fell prostrate, Saying, Ah noble knight, what worthy meed Can wretched Lady, quit from wofull state, Yield you in liew of this your gratious deed? Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed, Euen immortall praise, and glory wyde, Which I your vassall, by your prowesse freed, Shall through the world make to be notifyde, And goodly well aduance, that goodly well was tryde.

But Britomart vprearing her from ground, Said, Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene For many labours more, then I haue found, This, that in safety now I haue you scene, And meane of your deliuerance haue beene: Henceforth faire Lady comfort to you take, And put away remembrance of late teene; In stead thereof know, that your louing Make, Hathnolesse griefe endured for your gentle sake.

She much was cheard to heare him mentiond, Whom of all living wights she loued best. Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond Vpon th'enchaunter, which had her distrest So sore, and with foule outrages opprest: With that great chaine, wherewith not long you lie bound that pitteous Lady prisoner, now relect.

Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so, And captiue with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

Returning backe, those goodly roomes, which erst

She saw so rich and royally arayd,
Now vanisht vtterly, and cleane subuerst
She found, and all their glory quite decayd,
That sight of such a chaunge her much dismayd.
Thence forth descending to that perlous Porch,
Those dreadfull flames she also found delayd,
And quenched quite, like a consumed torch,
That erst all enters wont so cruelly to scorch.

More casie issew now, then entrance late She found: for now that fained dreadfull flame. Which chokt the porch of that enchaunted gate, And passage bard to all, that thither came, Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same, And gaue her leave at pleasure forth to passe. Th'Enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud did

To have efforst the love of that faire lasse.

44

But when the victoresse arrived there. Where late she left the pensife Scudamore, With her owne trusty Squire, both full of Neither of them she found where she them lore.

Thereat her noble hart was stonisht sore: But most faire Amorel, whose gentle spright Now gan to feede on hope, which she before Conceived had, to see her owne deare knight, Seeing his worken ow wasteddeepe engrieued was. I Being thereof beguyld was fild with new affright.

But he sad man, when he had long in drede Awayted there for Britomarts returne, Yet saw her not nor signe of her good speed, His expectation to despaire did turne, Misdeeming sure that her those flames did burne: And therefore gan aduize with her old Squire, Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did mourne, Thence to depart for further aide t'enquire: Where let them wend at will, whilest here I doe respire.

Stanzas 43-45 were first inserted in the 1596 quarto, displacing the following stanzas which concluded Book III in the first edition.

At last she came vnto the place, where late She left Sir Scudanour in great distresse, Twixt dolour and despight halfe desperate, Of his loues succour, of his owne redresse, And of the hardie Britomarts successe: There on the cold earth him now thrown she found. In wilfull anguish, and dead heavinesse, And to him cald; whose voices known sound Soon as he heard, himself he reared light from ground.

There did he see, that most on earth him loyd, His dearest love, the comfort of his dayes Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd And wearied his life with dull delayes: Straight he vpstarted from the loathed layes, And to her ran with hasty egernesse, Like as a Deare, that greedily embayes In the coole soile, after long thirstinesse, Which he in chace endured hath, now nigh breathlesse.

Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes twaine And streightly did embrace her body bright, Her body, late the prison of sad paine, Now the sweet lodge of loue and deare delight: But she faire Lady ouercommen quight Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt, And in sweete rauishment pourd out her spright No word they spake, nor earthly thing they felt, But like two senceles stocks in long embracement dwelt.

Had ye them seene, ye would have surely thought, That they had beene that faire Hermaphrodile, Which that rich Romane of white marble wrought, And in his costly Bath causd to bee site: So seemd those two, as growne together quite, That Britomart halfe enuying their blesse, Was much empassiond in her gentle sprite, And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse, In vaine she wisht, that fate n'ould let her yet possesse.

Thus doe those lovers with sweet counternayle, Each other of loues bitter fruit despoile But now my teme begins to faint and fayle, All woxen weary of their journall toyle: Therefore I will their sweatie yokes assoyle At this same furrowes end, till a new day: And ye faire Swayns, after your long turmoyle, Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure play; Now cease your worke; to morrow is an holy day.

# THE SECOND PART OF THE

FAERIE QVEENE.

Containing
THE FOVRTH,
FIFTH, AND

By Ed. Spenser

SIXTH BOOKES.



Imprinted at London for VVilliam
Ponfonby. 1596



# THE FOVRTH

### BOOKE OF THE

FAERIE QVEENE.

## Containing

The Legend of CAMBEL and TELAMOND,

OR

#### OF FRIENDSHIP.

The rugged forhead that with graue foresight Welds kingdomes causes, and affaires of state, My looser rimes (I wote) doth sharply wite, For praising loue, as I haue done of late, And magnifying louers deare debate; By which fraile youth is oft to follie led, Through false allurement of that pleasing baite,

That better were in vertues discipled, Then with vaine poemes weeds to have their fancies fed.

Such ones ill iudge of loue, that cannot loue, Ne in their frosen hearts feele kindly flame: For thy they ought not thing vnknowne reproue.

Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame, For fault of few that haue abusd the same. For it of honor and all vertue is

The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres of fame.

That crowne true louers with immortall blis, The meed of them that loue, and do not liue amisse.

Which who so list looke backe to former ages, And call to count the things that then were donne.

Shall find, that all the workes of those wise sages.

And braue exploits which great Heroes wonne, In loue were either ended or begunne: Witnesse the tather of Philosophie, Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne, Of loue full manie lessons did apply, The which these Stoicke censours cannot well deny.

To such therefore I do not sing at all,
But to that sacred Saint my soueraigne
Queene,

In whose chast breast all bountie naturall, And treasures of true loue enlocked beene, Boue all her sexe that euer yet was seene; To her I sing of loue, that loueth best, And best is lou'd of all aliue I weene: To her this song most fitly is addrest,

The Queene of loue, and Prince of peace from heaven blest.

Which that she may the better deigne to heare, Do thou dred infant, Venus dearling doue, From her high spirit chase imperious feare, And vse of awfull Maiestie romoue: In sted thereof with drops of melting loue, Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee gotten From thy sweete smyling mother from aboue, Sprinckleherheart, and haughtie courages often, That she may hearke to loue, and reade this lesson often.

#### Cant. I.

#### 

Fayre Britomart saues Amoret, Duessa discord breedes Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour: Their fight and warlike deedes.

#### 

Of louers sad calamities of old,
Full many piteous stories doe remaine,
But none more piteous euer was ytold,
Then that of Amorets hart-binding chaine,
And this of Florimels vnworthie paine:
The deare compassion of whose bitter fit
My softened heart so sorely doth constraine,
That I with teares full oft doe pittie it,
And oftentimes doe wish it neuer had bene writ.

For from the time that Scudamour her bought In perilous fight, she neuer ioyed day, A perilous fight when hewith force her brought From twentie Knights, that did him all assay: Yet fairely well he did them all dismay: And with great glorie both the shield of loue, And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away, Whom hauing wedded as did him behoue, A new vnknowen mischiefe did from him remoue.

For that same vile Endauntour Busyran,
The very selfe same day that she was wedded,
Amidst the bridale feast, whilest euery man
Surcharg'd with wine, were heedlesse and ill
hedded,

All bent to mirth before the bride was bedded, Brought in that mask of loue which late was showen:

And there the Ladie ill of friends bestedded, By way of sport, as oft in maskes is knowen. Conueyed quite away to liuing wight vnknowen. As well became a knight, and did to her all honor.

Seuen moneths he so her kept in bitter smart, Because his sinfull lust she would not serue, Vntill such time as noble *Britomart* Released her, that else was like to sterue, Through cruell knife that her deare heart did kerue.

And now she is with her vpon the way,
Marching in louely wise, that could deserue
No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay
To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell The diuerse vsage and demeanure daint, That each to other made, as oft befell. For Amoret right fearefull was and faint, Lest she with blame her honor should attaint, That euerie word did tremble as she spake, Andeuerie looke was coy, and wondrous quaint, And euerie limbe that touched her did quake: Yet could she not but curteous countenance to her make.

For well she wist, as true it was indeed,
That her liues Lord and patrone of her health
Right well deserued as his duefull meed,
Her loue, her seruice, and her vtmost wealth.
All is his iustly, that all freely dealth:
Nathlesse her honor dearer then her life,
Shesoughttosaue, asthing reseru'd from stealth;
Die had she leuer with Enchanters knife,
Then to be false in loue, profest a virgine wife.

Thereto her feare was made so much the greater
Through fine abusion of that Briton mayd:
Who for to hide her fained sex the better,
And maske her wounded mind, both did and
savd

Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,
That well she wist not what by them to gesse,
For other whiles to her she purpos made
Of loue, and otherwhiles of lustfulnesse,
That much she feard his mind would grow to
some excesse.

His will she feard; for him she surely thought To be a man, such as indeed he seemed, And much the more, by that he lately wrought, When her from deadly thraldome he redeemed, For which no seruice she too much esteemed, Yetdreadof shame, and doubt of fowle dishonor Made her not yeeld so much, as due she deemed. Yet Britomari attended duly on her, As well become a knight and did to herall heror.

It so befell one evening, that they came Vnto a Castell, lodged there to bee, Where many a knight, and many a louely Dame Was then assembled, deeds of armes to see: Amongst all which was none more faire then shee.

That many of them mou'd to eye her sore. The custome of that place was such, that her Which had no loue nor lemman there in store, Should either winne him one, or lye without the dore.

Amongst the rest there was a jolly knight, Who being asked for his love, auow'd That fairest Amoret was his by right. And offred that to justifie alowd. The warlike virgine seeing his so prowd And boastfull chalenge, wexed inlie wroth, But for the present did her anger shrowd: And sayd, her love to lose she was full loth. But either he should neither of them haue, or both.

So foorth they went, and both together giusted; But that same younker soone was overthrowne, And made repent, that he had rashly lusted For thing vnlawfull, that was not his owne: Yetsince he seemed valiant, though vnknowne, She that no lesse was courteous then stout, Cast how to salue, that both the custome showner Were kept, and yet that Knight not locked out, That seem'd full hard t'accord two things so far in dout.

The Seneschall was cal'd to deeme the right, Whom she requir'd, that first fayre Amoret Might be to her allow'd, as to a Knight, That did her win and free from chalenge set: Which straight to her was yeelded without let. Then since that strange Knights love from him was quitted,

She claim'd that to her selfe, as Ladies det, He as a Knight might justly be admitted: So none should be out shut, sith all of loues were fitted.

With that her glistring helmet she vnlaced; Which doft, her golden lockes, that were vp bound

Still in a knot, vnto her heeles downe traced, And like a silken veile in compasse round About her backe and all her bodie wound: Like as the shining skie in summers night, Whattimethedayes with scorchingheat abound, Is creasted all with lines of firie light, That it prodigious seemes in common peoples sight.

14

Such when those Knights and Ladies all about Beheld her, all were with amazement smit. And every one gan grow in secret dout Of this and that, according to each wit: Some thought that some enchantment faygned it:

Some, that Bellona in that warlike wise To them appear'd, with shield and armour fit: Some that it was a maske of strange disguise: Sodiuersely each one did sundrie doubts deuise.

But that young Knight, which through her gentle deed

Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd. Ten thousand thankes did yeeld her for her meed.

And doubly ouercommen, her ador'd: So did they all their former strife accord; And eke favre Amoret now freed from feare, More franke affection did to her afford. And to her bed, which she was wont forbeare, Now freely drew, and found right safe assurance theare.

Where all that night they of their loues did treat, And hard adventures twixt themselves alone, That each the other gan with passion great, And griefull pittic privately bemone. The morow next so soone as Titan shone. They both vprose, and to their waies them dight: Long wandred they, yet neuer met with none, That to their willes could them direct aright, Or to them tydings tell, that mote their harts delight.

Lo thus they rode, till at the last they spide Two armed Knights, that toward them did pace, And ech of them had ryding by his side A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space. But Ladies none they were, albee in face And outward shew faire semblance they did beare:

For ynder maske of beautie and good grace, Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were, That mote to none but to the warie wise appeare.

18

The one of them the false Duessa hight, That now had chang'd her former wonted hew: For she could d'on so manie shapes in sight, As euer could Cameleon colours new; So could she forge all colours, saue the trew. The other no whit better was then shee, But that such as she was, she plaine did shew; Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might bee, And dayly more offensive vnto each degree.

\*\*

Her name was Ale, mother of debate,
And all dissention, which doth dayly grow
Amongst fraile men, that many a publike state
And many a private oft doth overthrow.
Her false Duessa who full well did know,
To be most fit to trouble noble knights,
Which hunt for honor, raised from below,
Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,
Where she in darknes wastes her cursed daies
and nights.

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is, There whereas all the plagues and harmes

Which punish wicked men, that walke amisse: It is a darksome delue farre vnder ground, With thornes and barren brakes enuirond round.

That none the same may easily out win; Yet many waies to enter may be found, But none to issue forth when one is in: For discord harder is to end then to begin.

2

And all within the riuen walls were hung
With ragged monuments of times forepast,
All which the sad effects of discord sung:
There were rentrobes, and brokenscepters plast,
Altars defyl'd, and holy things defast,
Disshiuered speares, and shields ytorne in
twaine,

Great cities ransackt, and strong castles rast, Nations captiued, and huge armies slaine: Of all which ruines there some relicks did remaine.

There was the signe of antique Babylon,
Of fatall Thebes, of Rome that raigned long,
Of sacred Salem, and sad Ilion,
For memorie of which on high there hong
The golden Apple, cause of all their wrong,
For which the three faire Goddesses did striue:
There also was the name of Nimrod strong,
Of Alexander, and his Princes fiue,
Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had
got aliue.

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,
The which amongst the Lapithees befell,
And of the bloodie feast, which sent away
So many Centaures drunken soules to hell,
That vnder great Alcides furie fell:
And of the dreadfull discord, which did driue
The noble Argonauts to outrage fell,
That each of life sought others to depriue,
All mindlesse of the Golden fleece, which made
them striue.

2.

And eke of private persons many moe,

That were too long a worke to count them all;

Some of sworne friends, that did their faith
forgoe;

torgoe;
Some of borne brethren, prov'd vnnaturall;
Some of deare louers, foes perpetuall:
Witnesse their broken bandes there to be seene,
Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled all;
The moniments whereof there byding beene,
As plaine as at the first, when they were fresh
and greene.

Such was her house within; but all without, The barren ground was full of wicked weedes, Which she her selfe had sowen all about, Now growen great, at first of little seedes, Theseedes of euill wordes, and factious deedes; Which when to ripenesse due they growen arre, Bring foorth an infinite increase, that breedes Tumultuous trouble and contentious iarre, The which most often end in bloudshed and in warre.

And those same cursed seedes doe also scrue
To her for bread, and yeeld her liuing food:
For life it is to her, when others sterue
Through mischieuous debate, and deadly feood.
That she may such their life and drinke their

That she may sucke their life, and drinke their blood, Withwhichshe from her childhood had benefed.

For she at first was borne of hellish brood, And by infernall furies nourished, That by her monstrous shape might easily be red.

Her face most fowle and filthy was to see,
With squinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,
And loathly mouth, vinmeete a mouth to bee.
That nought but gall and venim comprehended,
And wicked wordes that God and man offended:
Her lying tongue was in two parts diuided,
And both the parts did speake, and both
contended;

And as her tongue, so was her hart discided.

That neuer thoght one thing, but doubly stil

was guided.

Als as she double spake, so heard she double,
With matchlesse eares deformed and distort,
Fild with false rumors and seditious trouble,
Bred in assemblies of the vulgar sort,
That still are led with euery light report.
And as her eares so eke her feet were odde,
And much vnlike, th'one long, the other short,
And both misplast; that when th'one forward yode,

The other backe retired, and contrarie trode.

Likewise vnequall were her handes twaine. That one did reach, the other pusht away, That one did make, the other mard againe, And sought to bring all things vnto decay; Whereby great riches gathered manie a day, She in short space did often bring to nought. And their possessours often did dismay. For all her studie was and all her thought, How she might ouerthrow the things that Concord wrought.

So much her malice did her might surpas, That even th'Almightie selfe she did maligne, Because to man so mercifull he was, And vnto all his creatures so benigne, Sith she her selfe was of his grace indigne: For all this worlds faire workmanshipshe tride, Vnto his last confusion to bring. And that great golden chaine quite to divide, With which it blessed Concord hath together tide.

Such was that hag, which with Duessa roade, And seruing her in her malitious vse. To hurt good knights, was as it were her baude, To sell her borrowed beautie to abuse. For though like withered tree, that wanteth

She old and crooked were, yet now of late, As fresh and fragrant as the floure deluce She was become, by chaunge of her estate, And made full goodly ioyance to her new found

Her mate he was a iollie youthfull knight, That bore great sway in armes and chiualrie, And was indeed a man of mickle might: His name was Blandamour, that did descrie His fickle mind full of inconstancie. And now himselfe he fitted had right well, With two companions of like qualitie. Faithlesse Duessa, and false Paridell, That whether were more false, full hard it is to tell.

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew, From farre espide the famous Britomart, Like knight aduenturous in outward vew, With his faire paragon, his conquests part, Approching nigh, eftsoones his wanton hart Was tickled with delight, and lesting sayd; Lo there Sir Paridel, for your desart, Good lucke presents you with yond louely mayd.

For pitie that ye want a fellow for your ayd.

By that the louely paire drew nigh to hond: Whom when as Paridel more plaine beheld. Albee in heart he like affection fond. Yet mindfull how he late by one was feld, That did those armes and that same scutchion

weld. He had small lust to buy his love so deare, But answerd, Sir him wise I neuer held, That having once escaped perill neare.

Would afterwards afresh the sleeping euill reare.

This knight too late his manhood and his might. I did assay, that me right dearely cost, Ne list I for reuenge prouoke new fight, Ne for light Ladies loue, that soone is lost. The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be crost, Take then to you this Dame of mine (quoth hee) And I without your perill or your cost, Will chalenge youd same other for my fee: So forth he fiercely prickt, that one him scarce could see.

The warlike Britonesse her soone addrest. And with such vncouth welcome did receaue Her fayned Paramour, her forced guest, That being forst his saddle soone to leaue, Him selfe he did of his new loue deceaue: And made him selfe thensample of his follie. Which done, she passed forth not taking leaue, And left him now as sad, as whilome iollie, Well warned to beware with whom he dar'd to dallie.

Which when his other companie beheld, They to his succour ran with readie ayd: And finding him vnable once to weld, They reared him on horsebacke, and vpstayd, Till on his way they had him forth conuayd: And all the way with wondrous griefe of mynd, And shame, he shewd him selfe to be dismayd, More for the love which he had left behynd. Then that which he had to Sir Paridel resynd.

Nathlesse he forth did march well as he might, And made good semblance to his companie, Dissembling his disease and euill plight; Till that ere long they chaunced to espie Two other knights, that towards them did ply With speedie course, as bent to charge them new.

Whom when as Blandamour approching nie, Perceiu'd to be such as they seemd in vew, He was full wo, and gan his former grieferenew.

For th'one of them he perfectly descride,
To be Sir Scudamour, by that he bore
The God of loue, with wings displayed wide,
Whom mortally he hated euermore,
Both for his worth, that all men did adore,
And eke because his loue he wonne by right:
Which when he thought, it grieued him full
sore,

That through the bruses of his former fight, He now vnable was to wreake his old despight.

40

For thy he thus to Paridel bespake,
Faire Sir, of friendship let me now you pray,
That as I late aduentured for your sake,
The hurts whereof me now from battell stay,
Ye will me now with like good turne repay,
And iustifie my cause on yonder knight.
Ah Sir (said Paridel) do not dismay
Your selfe for this, my selfe will for you fight,
As ye haue done for me: the left hand rubs
the right.

41

With that he put his spurres vnto his steed, With speare in rest, and toward him did fare, Like shaft out of a bow preuenting speed. But Scudamour was shortly well aware Of his approch, and gan him selfe prepare Him to receive with entertainment meete. So furiously they met, that either bare The other downe vnder their horses feete, That what of them became, themselves did scarsly weete.

42

As when two billowes in the Irish sowndes, Forcibly driuen with contrarie tydes
Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes
With roaring rage; and dashing on all sides,
That filleth all the sea with forne, diuydes
The doubtfull current into diuers wayes:
Sofell those two in spight of both their prydes,
But Scudamour himselfe did soone vprayse,
And mounting light his foe for lying long
vpbrayes.

Who rolled on an heape lay still in swound,
All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle
Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground,
Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle.
Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle,
With busic care they stroue him to awake,
And doft his helmet, and vndid his mayle:
So much they did, that at the last they brake
His slomber, yet so mazed, that he nothing
spake.

Which when as Blandamour beheld, he sayd, False faitour Scudamour, that hast by slight Andfoule advantage this good Knight dismayd, A Knight much better then thy selfe behight, Well falles it thee that I am not in plight This day, towreake the dammage by theedonne: Such is thy wont, that still when any Knight Is weakned, then thou doest him ouerronne: So hast thou to thy selfe false honour often wonne.

He little answer'd, but in manly heart
His mightic indignation did forbeare,
Which was not yet so secret, but some part
Thereof did in his frouning face appeare:
Like as a gloomic cloud, the which doth beare
An hideous storme, is by the Northerne blast
Quite ouerblowne, yet doth not passe so cleare,
But that it all the skie doth ouercast
With daryless dred and threatene all the world

With darknes dred, and threatens all the world to wast.

Ah gentle knight, then false Duessa sayd, Why do ye striue for Ladies loue so sore, Whose chiefe desire is loue and friendly aid Mongst gentle Knights to nourish euermore? Ne be ye wroth Sir Scudamour therefore, That she your loue list loue another knight, Ne do your selfe dislike a whit the more; For Loue is free, and led with selfe delight, Ne will enforced be with maisterdome or might.

So false Duessa, but vile Ate thus;
Both foolish knights, I can but laugh at both,
That striue and storme with stirre outrageous,
For her that each of you alike doth loth,
And loues another, with whom now she goth
In louely wise, and sleepes, and sports, and
playes;

Whilest both you here with many a cursed oth, Sweareshe is yours, and stirre up bloudie frayes, To win a willow bough, whilest other weares the bayes.

Vile hag (sayd Scudamour) why dost thou lye? And falsly seekst a vertuous wight to shame? Fond knight (sayd she) the thing that with this eye

I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same? Then tell (quoth Blandamour) and feare no blame,

Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre who so it heares. Is aw (quoth she) a stranger knight, whose name I wote not well, but in his shield he beares (That well I wote) the heads of many broken speares.

I saw him haue your Amoret at will,
I saw him kisse, I saw him her embrace,
I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill,
All manie nights, and manie by in place,
That present were to testife the case.
Which when as Scudamour did heare, his heart
Was thrild withinward griefe, as when in chace
The Parthian strikes a stag with shiuering dart,
The beast astonisht stands in middest of his
smart.

So stood Sir Scudamour, when this he heard, Ne word he had to speake for great dismay, But lookt on Glauce grim, who woxe afeard of outrage for the words, which she heard say, Albee vntrue she wist them by assay. But Blan lamour, whenas he did espie Hischaunge of cheere, that anguish did bewray, He woxe full blithe, as he had got thereby, And gan thereat to triumph without victorie.

Lo recreant (sayd he) the fruitlesse end
Ofthy vaine boast, and spoile of loue misgotten,
Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost

And all true louers with dishonor blotten, All things not rooted well, will soone be rotten. Fy fy false knight (then false *Duessa* cryde) Vnworthy life that loue with guile hast gotten, Be thou, where euer thou do go or ryde, Loathed of ladies all, and of all knights defyde.

But Sculamour for passing great despight
Staid not to answer, scarcely did refraine,
But that in all those knights and ladies sight,
He for reuenge had guiltlesse Glauce slaine:
But being past, he thus began amaine;
False traitour squire, false squire, of falsest
knight, [abstaine,
Why doth mine hand from thine auenge
Whose Lord hath done my loue this foule
despight?
Why do I not it wreake, on thee now in my
might?

Discourteous, disloyall Britomart,
Vintrue to God, and vinto man vinust,
What vengeance due can equall thy desart,
That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust
Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust?
Let vglv shame and endlesse infamy
Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust.
Yet thou false Squire his fault shalt deare aby,
And with thy punishment his penance shalt
supply.

The aged Dame him seeing so enraged, Wasdeadwith feare, nathlesse as needer equired, His flaming furie sought to haue assuaged With sober words, that sufferance desired, Till time the tryall of her truth expyred: And euermore sought Britomart to cleare. But he the more with furious rage was fyred, And thrise his hand to kill her did vpreare, And thrise he drew it backe: so did at last forbeare.

## Cant. 11.

#### 

Blandamour winnes fulse Florinull, Paridell for her striues, They are accorded: Agape doth lengthen her sonnes llues.

#### 

Firebrand of hell first tynd in Phlegeton,
Bythousandfuries, and from thence out throwen
Into this world, to worke confusion,
And set it all on fire by force vnknowen,
Is wicked discord, whose small sparkes once
blowen

None but a God or godlike man can slake; Suchaswas Orpheus, that when strifewas growen Amongst those famous ympes of Greece, did take His siluer Harpe in hand, and shortly friends them make.

Or such as that celestiall Psalmist was,
That when the wicked feendhis Lord tormented,
With heauenly notes, that did all other pas,
The outrage of his furious fit relented.
Such Musicke is wise words with time concented,
To moderate stifle minds, disposd to striue:
Such as that prudent Romane well inuented,
What time his people into partes did riue,
Them reconcyld againe, and to their homes did
driue.

Such vs'd wise Glauce to that wrathfull knight,
To calme the tempest of his troubled thought:
Yet Blandamour with termes of foule despight,
And Paridell her scornd, and set at nought,
As old and crooked and not good for ought.
Both they vnwise, and warelesse of the euill,
That by themselues vnto themselues is wrought,
Through that false witch, and that foule aged
dreuill,

The one a feend, the other an incarnate deuill.

With whom as they thus rode accompanide, They were encountred of a lustie Knight, That had a goodly Ladie by his side, To whom he made great dalliance and delight. It was to weete the bold Sir Ferraugh hight, He that from Braggadocchio whilome reft The snowy Florimell, whose beautie bright Made him seeme happie tor so glorious theft; Yet was it in due triall but a wandring weft.

Which when as Blandamour, whose fancie light Was alwaies flitting as the wauering wind, After each beautie, that appeard in sight, Beheld, eftsoones it prickt his wanton mind With sting of lust, that reasons eye did blind, That to Sir Paridell these words he sent; Sir knight why ride ye dumpish thus behind, Since so good fortune doth to you present Sofayreaspoyle, tomake you ioyous meriment?

6

But Paridell that had too late a tryall
Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine,
List not to hearke, but made this faire denyall;
Last turne was inne, well proued to my paine,
This now be yours, God send you better gaine.
Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in scorne,
Fiercely forth prickt his steed as in disdaine,
Against that Knight, ere he him well could
torne:

By meanes whereof he hath him lightly ouerborne.

Who with the sudden stroke astonisht sore, Vpon the ground a while in slomber lay; The whiles his loue away the other bore, And shewing her, did Paridell vpbray; Lo sluggish Knight the victors happie pray: So fortune friends the bold: whom Paridell Seeing so faire indeede, as he did say, His hart with secret enuic gan to swell, And inly grudge at him, that he had sped so well.

8

Nathlesse proud man himselfe the other deemed, Hauing so peerelesse paragon vgot:
For sure the fayrest Florimell him seemed, To him was fallen for his happie lot, Whose like aliue on earth he weened not: Therefore he her did court, did serue, did wooe, With humblest suit that he imagine mot, And all things did deuise, and all things dooe. That might her loue prepare, and liking win theretoo.

She in regard thereof him recompenst
With golden words, and goodly countenance,
And such fond fauours sparingly dispenst:
Sometimes himblessing with a light eye-glance,
And coy lookes tempring with loose dalliance;
Sometimes estranging him in sterner wise,
That hauing cast him in a foolish trance,
He seemed brought to bed in Paradise,
And prou'dhimselfemostfoole, inwhat he seem'd
most wise.

So great a mistresse of her art she was, And perfectly practiz'd in womans craft, That though therein himselfe he thought to pas, And by his false allurements wylie draft Had thousand women of their loue beraft, Yet now he was surpriz'd: for that false spright, Which that same witch had in this forme engraft.

Was so expert in every subtile slight, That it could overreach the wivest earthly wight.

11

Yet he to her did dayly seruice more,
And dayly more deceued was thereby;
Yet Paridell him enuied therefore,
As seeming plast in sole felicity:
So blind is lust, false colours to descry.
But Ale soone discouering his desire,
And finding now fit opportunity
To stirre vp strife, twixt loue and spight and ire.
Did privily put coles vnto his secret fire.

12

By sundry meanes thereto she prickt him forth.

Now with remembrance of those spightfull speaches.

Now with opinion of his owne more worth. Now with recounting of like former breaches Made in their friendship, as that Hag him teaches:

And euer when his passion is allayd,
She it reuiues and new occasion reaches:
That on a time as they together way'd.
He made him open chalenge, and thus boldly sayd.

Too boastfull Blandamour, too long I beare
The open wrongs, thou doest me day by day:
Well know'st thou, when we friendship first did
sweare,

The couenant was, that euery spoyle or pray Should equally be shard betwixt vs tway: Where is my part then of this Ladie bright, Whom to thy selfe thou takest quite away? Render therefore therein to me my right. Oranswere for thy wrong, as shall fall out in fight

Exceeding wroth thereat was Blandamour. And gan this bitter answere to him make : Too foolish Paridell, that fayrest floure Wouldstgatherfaine, and yet no paines wouldst But not so easie will I her forsake: This handher wonne, this hand shall her defend. With that they gan their shiuering speares to shake,

And deadly points at eithers breast to bend. Forgetfull each to have bene euer others frend.

Their firie Steedes with so vntamed forse Did beare them both to fell auenges end. That both their speares with pitilesse remorse. Through shield and mayle, and haberieon did wend.

And in their flesh a griesly passage rend, That with the furie of their owne affret. Each other horse and man to ground did send: Where lying still a while, both did forget The perilous present stownd, in which their lives were set.

\ when two warlike Brigandines at sea. With murdrous weapons arm'd to cruell fight, Doe meete together on the watry lea. They stemme ech other with so fell despight, That with the shocke of their owne heedlesse might.

Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh a sonder; They which from shore behold the dreadfull sight Offlashing fire, and heare theordenance thonder, Do greatly stand amaz'd at such vnwonted wonder.

At length they both vpstarted in amaze, As men awaked rashly out of dreme; And round about themselves a while did gaze, Till seeing her, that Florimell did seme, In doubt to whom she victorie should deeme, Therewith their dulled sprights they edgd anew, Anddrawing both their swords with rage extreme, Like two mad mastiffes each on other flew, And shields did share, and mailes did rash, and helmes did hew.

So furiously each other did assayle As if their soules they would attonce have rent Out of their brests, that streames of blouddidrayle Adowne, as if their springs of life were spent; Thatallthegroundwithpurplebloudwassprent, And all their armours staynd with bloudiegore, Yet scarcely once to breath would they relent, So mortall was their malice and so sore, Become of fayned friendship which they vow'd

afore.

And that which is for Ladies most besitting, To stint all strife, and foster friendly peace, Was from those Dames so farre and so vnfitting,

As that in stead of praying them surcease, They did much more their cruelty encrease; Bidding them fight for honour of their love. And rather die then Ladies cause release. With which vaine termes so much they did them moue,

That both resolu'd the last extremities to proue.

There they I weene would fight vntill this day. Had not a Squire, even he the Squire of Dames, By great adventure trauelled that way: Who seeing both bent to so bloudy cames. And both of old well knowing by their names, Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their debate: And first laide on those Ladiesthousand blames. That did not seeke t'appease their deadly hate, But gazed on their harmes, not pittying their estate.

And then those Knights he humbly did beseech, To stay their hands, till he a while had spoken: Who lookt a little vp at that his speech, Yet would not let their battell so be broken, Both greedie fiers on other to be wroken. Yet he to them so earnestly did call, And them conjur'd by some well knowen token, That they at last their wrothfull hands let fall. Content to heare him speake, and glad to rest withall.

First he desir'd their cause of strife to see: They said, it was for love of Florimell. Ah gentle knights (quoth he) how may that bee, And she so farre astray, as none can tell. Fond Squire, full angry then sayd Paridell, Seest not the Ladie there before thy face? He looked backe, and her aduizing well, Weend as he said, by that her outward grace, That fayrest Florimell was present therein place.

Glad man was he to see that ioyous sight, For none aliue but joy'd in Florimell, And lowly to her lowting thus behight; Fayrest of faire, that fairenesse doest excell, This happie day I have to greete you well, In which you safe I see, whom thousand late Misdoubted lost through mischiefe that befell; Long may you live in health and happie state. She litle answer'd him, but lightly did aggrate.

Then turning to those Knights, he gan a new; And you Sir Blandamour and Paridell,
That for this Ladie present in your vew,
Haue rays'd this cruell warre and outrage fell,
Certes me seemes bene not aduised well,
But rather ought in friendship for her sake
To ioyne your force, their forces to repell,
That seeke perforce her from you both to take,
And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph
to make.

25

Thereat Sir Blandamour with countenancesterne, All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake; A read thou Squire, that I the man may learne, That dare fro me thinke Florimell to take. Not one (quoth he) but many doe partake Herein, as thus. It lately so befell, That Satyran a girdle did vptake, Well knowne to appertaine to Florimell, Which for her sake he wore, as him beseemed well.

26

But when as she her selfe was lost and gone, Full many knights, that loued her like deare, Thereat did greatly grudge, that he alone That lost faire Ladies ornament should weare, And gan therefore close spight to him to beare: Which he to shun, and stop vile enuies sting, Hath lately caus'd to be proclaim'd each where A solemne feast, with publike turneying, To which all knights with them their Ladies are to bring.

2

And of them all she that is fayrest found, Shall have that golden girdle for reward, And of those Knights who is most stout on ground.

Shall to that fairest Ladie be prefard.
Since therefore she her selfe is now your ward,
To you that ornament of hers pertaines,
Against all those, that chalenge it to gard,
Andsaue her honour with your ventrous paines:
That shall you win more glory, then ye here find
gaines.

28

When they the reason of his words had hard, They gan abate the rancour of their rage, And with their honours and their loues regard. The furious flames of malice to asswage. Tho each to other did his faith engage, Like faithfull friends thenceforth to ioyne in one With all their force, and battell strong to wage Gainst all those knights, as their professed fone, That chaleng'd ought in Florimell, saue they alone.

20

So well accorded forth they rode together In friendly sort, that lasted but a while; And of all old dislikes they made faire weather, Yet all was forg'd and spred with golden foyle. That vnder it hidde hate and hollow guyle. Ne certes can that friendship long endure, How euer gay and goodly be the style, That doth ill cause or euill end enure: For vertue is the band, that bindeth harts most

20

Thus as they marched all in close disguise
Of fayned loue, they chaunst to ouertake
Two knights, that lincked rode in louely wise,
As if they secret counsels did partake;
And each not farre behinde him had his make,
To weete, two Ladies of most goodly hew,
Thattwixt themselues did gentle purpose make,
Vnmindfull both of that discordfull crew,
The which with speedie pace did after them
pursew.

Who as they now approched nigh at hand, Deeming them doughtie as they did appeare, They sent that Squire afore, to vnderstand, What mote they be: who viewing them more

Returned readie newes, that those same weare Two of the prowest Knights in Faery lond; And those two Ladies their two louers deare, Couragious Cambell, and stout Triamond, With Canacce and Cambine linckt in louely bond.

32

Whylome as antique stories tellen vs,
Those two were foes the fellonest on ground.
And battell made the dreddest daungerous,
That euer shrilling trumpet did resound;
Though now their acts be no where to be found,
As that renowmed Poet them compyled,
With warlike numbers and Heroicke sound,
Dan Chaucer, well of English vndefyled,
On Fames eternall beadroll worthie to be fyled.

33

But wicked Time that all good thoughts doth waste, And workes of noblest wits to nought out

weare,
That famous moniment hath quite defaste,
And robd the world of threasure endlesse deare,
The which mote haue enriched all vs heare.
O cursed Eld the cankerworme of writs,
How may these rimes, so rude as doth appeare,
Hope to endure, sith workes of heauenly wits
Are quite deuourd, and brought to nought by
little hits?

34 Then pardon, O most sacred happie spirit, That I thy labours lost may thus reviue. And steale from thee the meede of thy due merit.

That none durst euer whilest thou wast aliue. And being dead in vaine yet many striue: Ne dare I like, but through infusion sweete ()f thine owne spirit, which doth in me surviue, I follow here the footing of thy feete, That with thy meaning so I may the rather meete.

Cambelloes sister was fayre Canacee. That was the learnedst Ladie in her dayes. Well seene in euerie science that mote bee. And euery secret worke of natures wayes, In wittie riddles, and in wise soothsayes, In power of herbes, and tunes of beasts and burds ;

And, that augmented all her other prayse, She modest was in all her deedes and words. And wondrous chast of life, yet lou'd of Knights and Lords.

Full many Lords, and many Knights her loued, Yet she to none of them her liking lent, Ne euer was with fond affection moued, But rul'd her thoughts with goodly gouerne-

For dread of blame and honours blemishment: And eke vnto her lookes a law she made. That none of them once out of order went. But like to warie Centonels well stayd, Still watcht on euery side, of secret foes affrayd.

So much the more as she refusd to loue, So much the more she loued was and sought. That oftentimes vnquiet strife did moue Amongsther louers, and great quarrels wrought, That oft for her in bloudic armes they fought. Which whenas Cambell, that was stout and wise. Perceiu'd would breede great mischiefe, he bethought

How to preuent the perill that mote rise, And turne both him and her to honour in this wise.

One day, when all that troupe of warlike wooers Assembled were, to weet whose she should bee, All mightie men and dreadfull derring dooers, (The harder it to make them well agree) Amongst them all this end he did decree; That of them all, which love to her did make, They by consent should chose the stoutest three, That with himselfe should combat for her sake, And of them all the victour should his sister take.

39 Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was bold, And courage full of haughtie hardiment. Approved oft in perils manifold, Which he atchieu'd to his great ornament: But yet his sisters skill vnto him lent Most confidence and hope of happie speed, Conceived by a ring, which she him sent. That mongst the manie vertues, which we reed, Had power to staunch al wounds, that mortally did bleed.

Well was that rings great vertue knowen to all, That dread thereof, and his redoubted might Did all that youthly rout so much appall, That none of them durst vndertake the fight; More wise they weend to make of loue delight. Then life to hazard for faire Ladies looke, And yet vncertaine by such outward sight, Though for her sake they all that perill tooke, Whether she would them loue, or in her liking brooke.

Amongst those knights there were three brethren bold.

Three bolder brethren neuer were yborne, Borne of one mother in one happie mold, Borne at one burden in one happie morne, Thrise happie mother, and thrise happie morne, That bore three such, three such not to be fond; Her name was Agape whose children werne All three as one, the first hight Priamond, The second Dyamond, the youngest Triamond.

Stout Priamond, but not so strong to strike, Strong Diamond, but not so stout a knight, But Triamond was stout and strong alike: On horsebacke vsed Triamond to fight, And Priamond on foote had more delight. But horse and foote knew Diamond to wield: With curtaxe vsed Diamond to smite. And Triamond to handle speare and shield, But speare and curtaxe both vsd Priamond in field.

These three did loue each other dearely well, And with so firme affection were allyde, As if but one soule in them all did dwell, Which did her powre into three parts diuyde; Like three faire branches budding farreandwide, That from one roote deriu'd their vitall sap: And like that roote that doth her life divide. Their mother was, and had full blessed hap, These three so noble babes to bring forth at one clap.

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill Of secret things, and all the powres of nature, Which she by art could vse vnto her will, And to her seruice bind each liuing creature, Through secret vnderstanding of their feature. Thereto she was right faire, when so her face She list discouer, and of goodly stature; But she as Fayes are wont, in priuie place Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests wyld

to space.

There on a day a noble youthly knight Seeking aduentures in the saluage wood, Did by great fortune get of her the sight, As she sate carelesse by a cristall flood, Combing her golden lockes, as seemd her good: And vnawares vpon her laying hold, That stroue in vaine him long to haue withstood,

Oppressed her, and there (as it is told)
Got these three louely babes, that prov'd three
champions bold.

46

Which she with her long fostred in that wood, Till that to ripenesse of mans state they grow: Thenshewing forth signes of their fathers blood, They loued armes, and knighthood didensew, Seeking aduentures, where they anie knew. Which when their mother saw, she gan to dout Their safetie, least by searching daungers new, And rash prouoking perils all about, Their days mote be abridged through their corage stout.

Therefore desirous th'end of all their dayes
To know, and them t'enlarge with long extent,
By wondrous skill, and many hidden wayes,
To the three fatall sisters house she went.
Farre vnder ground from tract of liuing went,
Downe in the bottome of the deepe Abysse,
Where Demogorgon in dull darkenesse pent,
Farre from the view of Gods and heauens blis,
The hideous Chaos keepes, their dreadfull dwelling is.

There she them found, all sitting round about The direfull distaffe standing in the mid, And with vnwearied fingers drawing out The lines of life, from liuing knowledge hid. Sad Clotho held the rocke, the whiles the thrid By griesly Lachesis was spun with paine, That cruell Atropos eftsoones vndid, With cursed knife cutting the twist in twaine: Most wretched men, whose dayes depend on thrids so vaine.

She them saluting, there by them sate still, Beholding how the thrids of life they span: And when at last she had beheld her fill, Trembling inheart, and looking pale and wan, Her cause of comming she to tell began. To whom fierce Atropos, Bold Fay, that durst Come see the secret of the life of man, Well worthie thou to be of love accurst, And eke thy childrens thrids to be a sunder burst.

Whereat she sore affrayd, yet her besought To graunt her boone, and rigour to abate, That she might see her childrens thrids forth brought,

And know the measure of their vtmost date, To them ordained by eternall fate. Which Clotho graunting, shewed her the same: That when she saw, it did her much amate, To see their thrids so thin, as spiders frame, And eke so short, that seemd their ends out shortly came.

51

She then began them humbly to intreate. To draw them longer out, and better twine, That so their liues might be prolonged late. But *Lachesis* thereat gan to repine, And sayd, Fond dame that deem'st of things diuine

As of humane, that they may altred bee, And chaung'd at pleasure for those impes of thine.

Not so; for what the Fates do once decree, Not all the gods can chaunge, nor *Ioue* him self can free.

Thensince (quothshe) the terme of each mans life. For nought may lessened nor enlarged bee, Graunt this, that when yeshred with fatall knife. His line, which is the eldest of the three, Which is of them the shortest, as I see, Eftsoones his life may passe into the next; And when the next shall likewise ended bee, That both their liues may likewise be annext. Vnto the third, that his may so be trebly wext.

They graunted it; and then that carefull Fay Departed thence with full contented mynd; And comming home, in warlike fresh aray Them found all three according to their kynd. But unto them what destinie was assynd, Or how their liues were eekt, she did not tell: But euermore, when she fit time could fynd, She warned them to tend their safeties well. Andloue each other deare, what euer them befell.

So did they surely during all their dayes, And neuer discord did amongst them fall; Which much augmented all their other praise. And now t'increase affection naturall, In loue of Canacee they ioyned all: Vponwhich ground this same great battell grew, Great matter growing of beginning small; The which for length I will not here pursew, But rather will reserve it for a Canto now.

### Cant. III.

## 

The battell twixt three brethren with Cambell for Canacee: Cambina with true friendships bond doth their long strife agree.

### 

1

O why doe wretched men so much desire,
To draw their dayes vnto the vtmost date,
And doe not rather wish them soone expire,
Knowing the miscrie of their estate,
And thousand perills which them still awate,
Tossing them like a boate amid the mayne,
That euery houre they knocke at deathes gate?
And he that happie seemes and least in payne,
Yet is as nigh his end, as he that most doth
playne.

Therefore this Fay I hold but fond and vaine. The which in seeking for her children three Long life, thereby did more prolong their paine.

Yet whilest they liued none did euer see More happie creatures, then they seem'd to bee,

Nor more ennobled for their courtesie, That made them dearely lou'd of each degree; Ne more renowmed for their cheualrie, That made them dreaded much of all men farre and nie.

These three that hardie chalenge tooke in hand, For Canacce with Cambell for to fight:
The day was set, that all might vnderstand, And pledges pawnd the same to keepe a right, That day, the dreddest day that liuing wight Did euer see vpon this world to shine, So soone as heauens window shewed light, These warlike Champions all in armour shine, Assembled were in field, the chalenge to define.

SPENSER

The field with listes was all about enclos'd,
To barre the prease of people farre away;
And at th'one side sixe iudges were dispos'd,
To view and deeme the deedes of armes that
day;

And on the other side in fresh aray,
Favre Canacee vpon a stately stage
Was set, to see the fortune of that fray,
And to be seene, as his most worthie wage,
That could her purchase with his liues aduen

tur'd gage.

Then entred Cambell first into the list,
With stately steps, and fearelesse countenance
As if the conquest his he surely wist.
Soone after did the brethren three aduance,
In braue aray and goodly amenance,
Withscutchinsgiltandbanners broaddisplayd:
And marching thrise in warlike ordinance,
Thrise lowted lowly to the noble Mayd,
The whiles shril trompets and loud clarions
sweetly playd.

Which doen the doughty chalenger came forth, All arm'd to point his chalenge to abet: Gainst whom Sir Priamond with equall worth, And equall armes himselfe did forward set. A trompet blew; they both together met, With dreadfull force, and furious intent, Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret, As if that life to losse they had forelent, And cared not to spare, that should be shortly spent.

Right practicke was Sir Priamond in fight,
And throughlyskild in vse of shield and speare
Ne lesse approued was Cambelloes might,
Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare,
That hard it was to weene which harder were.
Full many mightic strokes on either side
Were sent, that seemed death in them to beare,
But they were both so watchfull and well eyde,
That they auoyded were, and vainely by did
slyde.

Yet one of many was so strongly bent By Priamond, that with vnluckie glaunce Through Cambels shoulder it vnwarely went, That forced him his shield to disaduaunce: Much was he grieued with that gracelesse chaunce.

Yet from the wound no drop of bloud there fell, But wondrous paine, that did the more enhaunce

His haughtie courage to advengement fell: Smart daunts not mighty harts, but makes them more to swell.

With that his poynant speare he fierce auentred, With doubled force close vnderneath his shield, That through the mayles into his thigh it entred.

And there arresting, readie way did yield. For bloud to gush forth on the grassie field; That he for paine himselfe n'ote right vpreare, But too and fro in great amazement reel'd, Like an old Oke whose pith and sap is seare. At puffe of euery storme doth stagger here and theare.

Whom so dismayd when Cambell had espide, Againe he droue at him with double might, That nought mote stay the steele, till in his

The mortall point most cruelly empight: Where fast infixed, whilest he sought by slight It forth to wrest, the staffe a sunder brake, And left the head behind: with which despight He all enrag'd, his shiuering speare did shake, And charging him a fresh thus felly him bespake.

Lo faitour there thy meede vnto thee take, The meede of thy mischalenge and abet: Not for thine owne, but for thy sisters sake, Haue I thus long thy life vnto thee let: But to forbeare doth not forgiue the det. The wicked weapon heard his wrathfull vow, And passing forth with furious affret, Pierst through his beuer quite into his brow, That with the force it backward forced him to bow.

Therewith a sunder in the midst it brast, And in his hand nought but the troncheon left, The other halfe behind yet sticking fast, Out of his headpeece Cambell fiercely reft. And with such furie backe at him it heft, That making way vnto his dearest life, His weasand pipe it through his gorget cleft: Thence streames of purple bloud issuing rife, Let forth his wearie ghost and made an end of strife.

His wearie ghost assoyld from fleshly band, Did not as others wont, directly fly Vnto her rest in Plutoes griesly land, Ne into ayre did vanish presently, Ne chaunged was into a starre in sky: But through traduction was eftsoones derived, Like as his mother prayd the Destinie Into his other brethren, that survived. In whom he liu'd a new, of former life depriued.

Whom when on ground his brother next beheld. Though sad and sorie for so heavy sight, Yet leave vnto his sorrow did not yeeld. But rather stird to vengeance and despight, Through secret feeling of his generous spright. Rusht fiercely forth, the battell to renew, As in reuersion of his brothers right; And chalenging the Virgin as his dew. His foe was soone addrest: the trompets freshly

blew.

With that they both together fiercely met. As if that each ment other to deuoure; And with their axes both so sorely bet. That neither plate nor mayle, whereas their They felt, could once sustaine the hideous But rived were like rotten wood a sunder, Whilest through their rifts the ruddie bloud did showre

And fire did flash, like lightning after thunder, That fild the lookers on attonce with ruth and

As when two Tygers prickt with hungers rage. Haue by good fortune found some beasts fresh spoyle,

On which they weene their famine to asswage, And gaine a feastfull guerdon of their toyle, Both falling out doe stirre vp strifefull broyle, And cruell battell twixt themselves doe make, Whiles neither lets the other touch the soyle, But either sdeignes with other to partake: So cruelly these Knights stroug for that Ladies sake.

Full many strokes, that mortally were ment. The whiles were enterchaunged twixt them two; Yet they were all with so good wariment Or warded, or anoyded and let goe, That still the life stood fearelesse of her foe: Till Diamond disdeigning long delay Of doubtfull fortune wavering to and fro, Resolu'd to end it one or other way: And heav'd his murdrous axe at him with mighty sway.

The dreadfull stroke in case it had arrived, Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment) The soule had sure out of his bodie rived, And stinted all the strife incontinent. But Cambels fate that fortune did preuent: For seeing it at hand, he swaru'd asyde. And so gaue way vnto his fell intent : Who missing of the marke which he had eyde, Was with the force nigh feld whilst his right foot did slyde.

IQ

As when a Vulture greedie of his pray, Through hunger long, that hart to him doth lend. Strikes at an Heron with all his bodies swav. That from his force seemes nought may it defend; The warie fowle that spies him toward bend His dreadfull souse, anoydes it shunning light. And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend, That with the weight of his owne weeldlesse miøht.

He falleth nigh to ground, and scarse recouereth flight.

Which faire aduenture when Cambello spide, Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recower, From daungers dread to ward his naked side, He can let driue at him with all his power, And with his axe him smote in euill hower, That from his shoulders quite his head he reft: The headlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that stower, Stood still a while, and his fast footing kept, Till feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly slept.

They which that piteous spectacle beheld, Were much amaz'd the headlesse tronke to see Stand vp so long, and weapon vaine to weld, Vnweeting of the Fates divine decree, For lifes succession in those brethren three. For notwithstanding that one soule was reft, Yet, had the bodie not dismembred bee, It would have lived, and revived eft; But finding no fit seat, the lifelesse corse it left.

Itleft; butthatsamesoule, which therein dwelt, Streight entring into Triamond, him fild With double life, and griefe, which when he felt, As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild With point of steele, that close his hartbloud spild,

He lightly lept out of his place of rest, And rushing forth into the emptie field, Against Cambello fiercely him addrest; Who him affronting soone to fight was readie prest.

Well mote ye wonder how that noble Knight, After he had so often wounded beene, Could stand on foot, now to renew the fight. But had ye then him forth aduauncing seene, Some newborne wight ye would him surely

So fresh he seemed and so fierce in sight; Like as a Snake, whom wearie winters teene Hath worne to nought, now feeling sommers [dight. might.

Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth him

All was through vertue of the ring he wore. The which not onely did not from him let One drop of bloud to fall, but did restore His weakned powers, and dulled spirits whet, Through working of the stone therein vset. Else how could one of equal might with most, Against so many no lesse mightie met, Once thinke to match three such on equal cost, Three such as able were to match a puissant host.

Yet nought thereof was Triamond adredde, Ne desperate of glorious victorie. But sharpely him assayld, and sore bestedde, With heapes of strokes, which he at him let

As thicke as hayle forth poured from the skie: He stroke, he soust, he foynd, he hewd, he

And did his yron brond so fast applie, That from the same the fierie sparkles flasht, As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke are dasht.

Much was Cambello daunted with his blowes. So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent, That he was forst from daunger of the throwes Backe to retire, and somewhat to relent, Till th'heat of his fierce furie he had spent: Which when for want of breath gan to abate. He then afresh with new encouragement Did him assayle, and mightily amate, As fast as forward erst, now backward to retrate.

Like as the tide that comes fro th'Ocean mayne. Flowes up the Shenan with contrarie forse, And ouerruling him in his owne rayne, Drives backe the current of his kindly course, And makes it seeme to haue some other sourse: But when the floud is spent, then backe againe His borrowed waters forst to redisbourse, He sends the sea his owne with double gaine, And tribute eke withall, as to his Soueraine.

Thus did the battell varie to and fro, With diverse fortune doubtfull to be deemed: Now this the better had, now had his fo; Then he halfe vanquisht, then the other seemed, Yet victors both them selues alwayes esteemed. And all the while the disentrayled blood Adowne their sides like litle rivers stremed, That with the wasting of his vitall flood, Sir Triamond at last full faint and feeble stood.

But Cambell still more strong and greater grew, Ne felt his blood to wast, ne powres emperisht, Through that ringsvertue, that with vigour new, Still when as he enfeebled was, him cherisht, And all his wounds, and all his bruses guarisht, Like as a withered tree through husbands toyle Is often seene full freshly to haue florisht, And fruitfull apples to haue borne awhile, As fresh as when it first was planted in thesoyle.

.30

Through which aduant age, in his strength herose, And smote the other with so wondrous might, That through the seame, which did his hauberk close.

Into his throate and life it pierced quight, That downe he fell as dead in all mens sight: Yet dead he was not, yet he sure did die, As all men do, that lose the liuing spright: So did one soule out of his bodie flie Vnto her natiue home from mortall miserie.

31

But nathelesse whilst all the lookers on Him dead behight, as he to all appeard, All vnawares he started vp anon, As one that had out of a dreame bene reard, And fresh assayld his foe, who halfe affeard Of th'vncouth sight, as he some ghost had seene, Stood still amaz'd, holding his idle sweard; Till hauing often by him stricken beene, IIe forced was to strike, and saue him selfe from teene.

32

Yet from thenceforth more warily he fought, As one in feare the Stygian gods t'offend, Ne followd on so fast, but rather sought Him selfe to saue, and daunger to defend, Then life and labour both in vaine to spend. Which *Triannord* perceiuing, weened sure He gan to faint, toward the battels end, And that he should not long on foote endure, A signe which did to him the victorie assure.

33

Whereof full blith, eftsoones his mightie hand He heav'd on high, in mind with that same blow To make an end of all that did with stand: Which Cambell seeing come, was nothing slow Him selfe to saue from that so deadly throw: And at that instant reaching forth his sweard Closevnderneath his shield, that scarce didshow, Stroke him, as he his hand to strike vpreard. In th'arm-pit full, that through both sides the wound appeard.

3,

Yet still that direfull stroke kept on his way, And falling heavie on Cambelloss crest, Strooke him so hugely, that in swowne he lay, And in his head an hideous wound imprest: And sure had it not happily found rest Vpon the brim of his brode plated shield, It would have cleft his braine downe to his brest. So both at once fell dead vpon the field, And each to other seemd the victorie to yield.

35

Which when as all the lookers on beheld,
They weened sure the warre was at an end,
And Iudges rose, and Marshals of the field
Broke vp the listes, their armes away to rend;
And Canacce gan wayle her dearest frend.
All suddenly they both vpstarted light,
The oncout of the swownd, which him did blend,
The other breathing now another spright,
And fiercely each assayling, gan afresh to fight.

36

Long while they then continued in that wize, As if but then the battell had begonne: Strokes, wounds, wards, weapons, all they did despise,
Ne either car'd to ward, or perill shonne,

Desirous both to haue the battell donne; Ne either cared life to saue or spill, Ne which of them did winne, ne which were wonne.

So wearie both of fighting had their fill, That life it selfe seemd loathsome, and long safetie ill.

37

Whilst thus the case in doubtfull ballance hong, Visure to whether side it would incline, Andallmenseyesand hearts, which thereamong Stood gazing, filled were with rufull tine, And secret feare, to see their fatall fine, All suddenly they heard a troublous noyes, That seemd some perilous tumult to desine, Confusd with womenscries, and shouts of boyes. Such as the troubled Theaters of times annoyes.

38

Thereat the Champions both stood still a space, To weeten what that sudden clamour ment; Lo where they spyde with speedie whirling pace, One in a charet of straunge furniment, Towards them driuing like a storme out sent. The charet decked was in wondrous wize, With gold and many a gorgeous ornament, After the Persian Monarks antique guize, Such as the maker selfe could best by art deuize.

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell)
Of two grim lyons, taken from the wood,
In which their powre all others did excell;
Now made forget their former cruell mood,
T'obey their riders hest, as seemed good.
And therein sate a Ladie passing faire
And bright, that seemed borne of Angels brood,
And with her beautie bountie did compare,
Whether of them in her should haue the greater
share.

Thereto she learned was in Magicke leare, And all the artes, that subtill wits discouer, Hauing therein bene trained many a yeare, And well instructed by the Fay her mother, That in the same she farre exceld all other. Who vnderstanding by her mightie art, Of th'euill plight, in which her dearest brother Now stood, came forth in hast to take his part, And pacifie the strife, which causd so deadly smart.

And as she passed through th'vnruly preace
Of people, thronging thicke her to behold,
Her angrie teame breaking their bonds of peace,
Great heapes of them, like sheepe in narrow
fold,

For hast did ouer-runne, in dust enrould, That thorough rude confusion of the rout, Some fearing shriekt, some being harmed hould, Some laught for sport, some did for wonder shout,

And some that would seeme wise, their wonder turnd to dout.

In her right hand a rod of peace shee bore,
About the which two Serpents weren wound.
Entrayled mutually in louely lore,
And by the tailes together firmely bound,
And both were with one oliue garland crownd,
Like to the rod which Maias sonne doth wield,
Wherewith the hellish fiends he doth confound.
And in her other hand a cup she hild,
The which was with Nepenthe to the brim
vpfild.

Nepenthe is a drinck of souerayne grace,
Deuized by the Gods, for to asswage
Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chace,
Which stirs vp anguish and contentious rage:
In stead thereof sweet peace and quiet age
It doth establish in the troubled mynd.
Few men, but such as sober are and sage,
Are by the Gods to drinck thereof assynd;
But such as drinck, eternall happinesse do fynd.

Such famous men, such worthies of the earth.

As *loue* will haue aduaunced to the skie,

And there made gods, though borne of mortall
berth.

For their high merits and great dignitie, Are wont, before they may to heauen flie, To drincke hereof, whereby all cares forepast Are washt away quite from their memorie. So did those olde Heroes hereof taste, Before that they in blisse amongst the Gods were plaste.

Much more of price and of more gratious powre Is this, then that same water of Ardenne, The which Rinaldo drunck in happie howre, Described by that famous Tuscane penne: For that had might to change the hearts of men Fro loue to hate, a change of euill choise: But this doth hatred make in loue to brenne And heauy heart with comfort doth reioyce. Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld his

voice?

At last arriving by the listes side,
Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile,
Which straight flewope, and gaue her way to ride.
Eftsoones out of her Coch she gan auaile,
And pacing fairely forth, did bid all haile,
First to her brother, whom she loued deare,
That so to see him made her heart to quaile:
And next to Cambell, whose sad ruefull cheare
Made her to change her hew, and hidden loue
t'appeare.

They lightly her requit (for small delight
They had as then her long to entertaine,)
And eft them turned both againe to fight,
Which when shesaw, down con the bloudy plaine
Herselfeshe threw, and teares gan shedamaine;
Amongst her teares immixing prayers meeke,
And with her prayers reasons to restraine
From blouddy strife, and blessed peace to seeke,
By all that vnto them was deare, did them
beseeke.

But when as all might mought with them preuaile, Shees mote them lightly with her powrefull wand. Then suddenly as if their hearts did faile, Their wrathfull blades downe fell out of their hand.

And they like men astonisht still did stand.
Thus whilest their minds were doubtfully distraught.

And mighty spirites bound with mightier band, Her golden cup to them for drinke she raught, Whereof full glad for thirst, ech drunk an harty draught. Of which so soone as they once tasted had, Wonder it is that sudden change to see: Instead of strokes, each other kissed glad, And louely haulst from feare of treason free, And plighted hands for euer friends to be. When all men saw this sudden change of things, So mortall foes so friendly to agree, For passing joy, which so great maruaile brings.

They all gan shout aloud, that all the heaven rings.

....

All which, when gentle Canacee beheld, In hast she from her lofty chaire descended, To weet what sudden tidings was befeld: Where when she saw that cruell war so ended, And deadly foes so faithfully affrended, In louely wise she gan that Lady greet, Which had so great dismay so well amended, And entertaining her with curt'sies meet, Profest to her true friendship and affection sweet.

Thus when they all accorded goodly were,
The trumpets sounded, and they all arose,
Thence to depart with glee and gladsome chere.
Those warlike champions both together chose,
Homeward to march, themselues there to
repose,

And wise Cambina taking by her side Faire Canacee, as fresh as morning rose, Vnto her Coch remounting, home did ride, Admir'd of all the people, and much glorifide.

Where making ioyous feast theire daies they spent

In perfect loue, deuoide of hatefull strife,
Allide with bands of mutuall couplement;
For Triamond had Canacee to wife,
With whom he ledd a long and happie life;
And Cambel tooke Cambina to his fere,
The which as life were each to other liefe.
So all alike did loue, and loued were,
That since their days such louers were not found
elswhere.



## Cant. IIII.

### 

Satyrane makes a Turneyment
For loue of Florimell:
Britomart winnes the prize from all,
And Artegall doth quell.

#### 

It often fals, (as here it earst befell)
That mortall foes doe turne to faithfull frends,
Andfriends profest are chaungd to foemen fell:
The cause of both, of both their minds depends,
And th'end of both likewise of both their ends.
For enmitie, that of no ill proceeds,
But of occasion, with th'occasion ends;
And friendship, which a faint affection breeds
Without regard of good, dyes like ill grounded seeds.

That well (me seemes) appeares, by that of late Twixt Cambell and Sir Triamond befell, As els by this, that now a new debate Stird vp twixt Scudamour and Paridell, The which by course befals me here to tell: Who hauing those two other Knights espide Marching afore, as ye remember well, SentforththeirSquiretohauethembothdescride, And eke those masked Ladies riding them beside.

Who backe returning, told as he had seene, That they were doughtie knights of dreaded name:

And those two Ladies, their two loues vnseene; And those two Ladies, their two loues vnseene; And therefore wisht them without blot or blame, To let them passe at will, for dread of shame But *Blandamour* full of vainglorious spright, And rather stird by his discordfull Dame, Vpon them gladly would haueprov'dhismight, But that he yet was sore of his late lucklesse fight.

Yet nigh approching, he them fowle bespake, Disgracing them, him selfe thereby to grace, As was his wont, so weening way to make To Ladies loue, where so he came in place, And with lewd termes their louers to deface. Whosesharpeprouokement them incenst so sore, That both were bent t'auenge his vsage base. Andgantheir shieldsaddresse them selues afore: For euill deedes may better then bad words be bore.

But faire Cambina with perswasions myld, Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode, That for the present they were reconcyld, And gan to treate of deeds of armes abrode, And strange aduentures, all the way they rode:

Amongst the which they told, as then befell, Of that great turney, which was blazed brode, For that rich girdle of faire Florimell,

The prize of her, which did in beautie most excell.

To which folke-mote they all with one consent, Sith each of them his Ladie had him by, Whose beautie each of them thought excellent, Agreed to trauell, and their fortunes try. So as they passed forth, they did espy One in bright armes, with ready speare in rest, That toward them his course seem'd to apply, Gainst whom Sir Paridell himselfe addrest, Him weening, ere he nigh approcht to haue represt.

Which th'other seeing, gan his course relent, And vaunted speare eftsoones to disaduaunce, As if he naught but peace and pleasure ment, Now falne into their fellowship by chance, Whereat they shewed curteous countenaunce. So as he rode with them accompanide. His rouing eie did on the Lady glaunce, Which Blandamour had riding by his side Whom sure he weend, that he some wher tofore had eide.

It was to weete that snowy Florimell, Which Ferrau late from Braggadochio wonne, Whom he now seeing, her remembred well, How having reft her from the witches sonne, He soone her lost: wherefore he now begunne To challenge her anew, as his owne prize, Whom formerly he had in battell wonne, And proffer made by force her to reprize, Which scornefull offer, Blandamour gan soone despize.

And said, Sir Knight, sith ye this Lady clame, Whom he that hath, were loth to lose so light, (For so to lose a Lady, were great shame) Yee shall her winne, as I have done in fight: And lo shee shall be placed here in sight, Together with this Hag beside her set, That who so winnes her, may her haue by

But he shall haue the Hag that is ybet, And with her alwaies ride, till he another get.

That offer pleased all the company, So Florimell with Ate forth was brought, At which they all gan laugh full merrily: But Braggadochio said, he neuer thought For suchan Hag, that seemed worse then nought, His person to emperill so in fight. But if to match that Lady they had sought Another like, that were like faire and bright, His life he then would spend to justifie his right

At which his vaine excuse they all gan smile, As scorning his vnmanly cowardize: And Florimell him fowly gan reuile, That for her sake refus'd to enterprize The battell, offred in so knightly wize. And Ate eke prouokt him privily, With love of her, and shame of such mesprize. But naught he car'd for friend or enemy, For in base mind nor friendship dwels nor enmity.

But Cambell thus did shut vp all in iest, Braue Knights and Ladies, certes ye doe wrong To stirre vp strife, when most vs needeth rest, That we may vs reserve both fresh and strong, Against the Turneiment which is not long. When who so list to fight, may fight his fill, Till then your challenges ye may prolong; And then it shall be tried, if ye will, Whether shall have the Hag, or hold the Lady still.

They all agreed, so turning all to game, And pleasaunt bord, they past forth on their

And all that while, where so they rode or came, That masked Mock-knight was their sport and

play.

Till that at length vpon th'appointed day, Vnto the place of turneyment they came; Where they before them found in fresh aray Maniea braue knight, and manie adaintie dame Assembled, for to get the honour of that game.

There this faire crewe arriving, did divide Them selves asunder: Blandamour with those Of his, on th'one; the rest on th'other side. But boastfull Braggadocchio rather chose, For glorie vaine their fellowship to lose, That men on him the more might gaze alone. The rest them selves in troupes did else dispose, Like as it seemed best to euery one; The knights in couples marcht, with ladies linckt attone.

Then first of all forth came Sir Satyrane, Bearing that precious relicke in an arke Of gold, that bad eyes might it not prophane: Which drawing softly forth out of the darke. He open shewd, that all men it mote marke. A gorgeous girdle, curiously embost With pearle and precious stone, worth many a marke;

Yet did the workmanship farre passe the cost: It was the same, which lately *Florimel* had lost.

That same aloft he hong in open vew, To be the prize of beautie and of might; The which eftsoones discouered, to it drew The eyes of all, allur'd with close delight, And hearts quite robbed with soglorious sight, That all men threw out vowes and wishes vaine. Thrise happie Ladie, and thrise happie knight, Them seemd that could so goodly riches gaine, So worthie of the perill, worthy of the paine.

Then tooke the bold Sir Satyrane in hand An huge great speare, such as he wont to wield, And vauncing forth from all the other band Of knights, addrest his maiden-headed shield, Shewing him selfe all ready for the field. Gainst whom there singled from the other side A Painim knight, that well in armes was skild, And had in many a battell oft bene tride, Hight Bruncheual the bold, who fiersly forth did ride.

So furiously they both together met. That neither could the others force sustaine: As two fierce Buls, that strine the rule to get Of all the heard, meete with so hideous maine, That both rebutted, tumble on the plaine: So these two champions to the ground were feld, Where in a maze they both did long remaine. And in their hands their idle troncheons held. Which neither able were towag, or once to weld.

Which when the noble Ferramont espide, He pricked forth in ayd of Satyran: And him against Sir Blandamour did ride With all the strength and stifnesse that he can. But the more strong and stiffely that he ran, So much more sorely to the ground he fell. That on an heape were tumbled horse and man. Vnto whose rescue forth rode Paridell: But him likewise with that same speare he eke did quell.

Which Braggadocchio seeing, had no will To hasten greatly to his parties ayd, Albeehisturnewere next; butstood therestill As one that seemed doubtfull or dismayd. But Triamond halfe wroth to see him staid. Sternly stept forth, and raught away his speare. With which so sore he Ferramont assaid. That horse and man to ground he quite did

That neither could in hast themselves againe vpreare.

Which to auenge, Sir Deuon him did dight, But with no better fortune then the rest: For him likewise he quickly downe did smight, And after him Sir Douglas him addrest, And after him Sir Paliumord forth prest, But none of them against his strokes could stand,

But all the more, the more his praise increst. For either they were left uppon the land, Or wentaway sore wounded of his haplesse hand.

And now by this, Sir Satyrane abraid, Out of the swowne, in which too long he lay And looking round about, like one dismaid, When as he saw the mercilesse affray. Which doughty Triamond had wrought that dav.

Vnto the noble Knights of Maidenhead, His mighty heart did almost rend in tway, For very gall, that rather wholly dead Himselfe he wisht haue beene, then in so bad a stead.

Eftsoones he gan to gather vp around His weapons, which lay scattered all abrode, And as it fell, his steed he ready found. On whom remounting, fiercely forth he rode, Like sparke of fire that from the anduile glode, There where he saw the valiant Trlamond Chasing, and laying on them heavy lode. That none his force were able to withstond, So dreadfull were his strokes, so deadly was his hond.

With that at him his beamlike speare he aimed, And thereto all his power and might applide: The wicked steele for mischiefe first ordained, And having now misfortune got for guide, Staid not, till it arrived in his side, And therein made a very griesly wound, That streames of bloud his armour all bedide. Much washe daunted with that direfull stound, That scarse he him vpheld from falling in a sound.

Yet as he might, himselfe he soft withdrew Out of the field, that none perceiu'd it plaine, Then gan the part of Chalengers anew To range the field, and victorlike to raine, That noneagainst them battell durst maintaine. By that the gloomy euening on them fell, That forced them from fighting to refraine, And trumpets sound to cease did them compell, So Sulyrane that day was judg'd to beare the bell.

The morrow next the Turney gan anew,
And with the first the hardy Satyrane
Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew,
On th'other side, full many a warlike swaine,
Assembled were, that glorious prize to gaine.
But mongst them all, was not Sir Triamond,
Vnable he new battell to darraine,
Through grieuaunce of his late received wound,
That doubly did him grieue, when so himselfe
he found.

Which Cambell seeing, though he could not salue, Ne done vndoe, yet for to salue his name, And purchase honour in his friends behalue, This goodly counterfesaunce he did frame. The shield and armes well knowne to be the same,

Which Triamond had worne, vnwares to wight, And to his friend vnwist, for doubt of blame, If he misdid, he on himselfe did dight, That none could him discerne, and so went forth to fight.

There Salyrane Lord of the field he found,
Triumphing in great ioy and iolity;
Gainst whom noneable was to stand on ground;
That much he gan his glorie to enuy,
And cast t'auenge his friends indignity.
A mightie speare eftsoones at him he bent;
Who seeing him come on so furiously,
Met him mid-way with equall hardiment,
That forcibly to ground they both together went.

They vp againe them selues can lightly reare,
And to their tryed swords them selues betake;
With which they wrought such wondrous
maruels there,
That all the rest it did amazed make,
Ne any dar'd their perill to partake;
Now cuffling close, now chacing to and fro,
Now hurtling round aduantage for to take:
As two wild Boares together grapling go,
Chaufing and foming choler each against his fo.

So as they courst, and turneyd here and theare, It chaunst Sir Salyrane his steed at last, Whether through foundring or through sodein feare

To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast; Which vauntage Cambell did pursue so fast, That ere him selfe he had recouered well, So sore he sowst him on the compast creast, That forced him to leaue his loftie sell, And rudely tumbling downe vnder his horse feete fell.

Lightly Cambello leapt downe from his steed, For to haue rent his shield and armes away, That whylome wont to be the victors meed; When all vnwares he felt an hideous sway Of many swords, that lode on him did lay. An hundred knights had him enclosed round, To rescue Satyrane out of his pray; All which at once huge strokes on him did pound,

In hope to take him prisoner, where he stood on ground.

He with their multitude was nought dismayd, But with stout courage turnd vpon them all, And with his brondiron round about him layd; Of which he dealt large almes, as did befall: Like as a Lion that by chaunce doth fall Into the hunters toile, doth rage and rore, In royall heart disdaining to be thrall. But all in vaine: for what might one do more? They haue him taken captiue, though it grieue him sore.

Whereof when newes to *Triamond* was brought, There as he lay, his wound he soone forgot, And starting vp, streight for his armour sought: In vaine he sought; for there he found it not; *Cambello* it away before had got: *Cambelloes* armes therefore he on him threw, And lightly issewd forth to take his lot. There he in troupe found all that warlike crew, Leading his friend away, full sorie to his vew.

Into the thickest of that knightly preasse
He thrust, and smote downe all that was
betweene,

Caried with feruent zeale, ne did he ceasse, Till that he came, where he had Cambell seene, Like captive thral two other Knights atweene, There he amongst them cruell hauocke makes, Thatthey which lead him, soone enforced beene To let him loose, to saue their proper stakes, Who being freed, from one a weapon fiercely takes.

With that he driues at them with dreadfull might, Both in remembrance of his friends late harme, And in reuengement of his owne despight, So both together give a new allarme.

As if but now the battell wexed warme.
As when two greedy Wolues doe breake by force
Into an heard, farre from the husband farme,
They spoile and rauine without all remorse,
So did these two through all the field their foes
enforce.

Fiercely they followd on their bolde emprize, Till trumpets sound did warne them all to rest; Then all with one consent did yeeld the prize To Triamond and Cambell as the best. But Triamond to Cambell it relest. And Cambell it to Triamond transferd; Each labouring t'aduance the others gest, And make his praise before his owne preferd: So that the doome was to another day differd.

The last day came, when all those knightes againe
Assembled were their deedes of armes to shew.
Full many deedes that day were shewed plaine:

But Satyrane boue all the other crew, His wondrous worth declared in all mens view. For from the first he to the last endured, And though some while Fortune from him withdrew.

Yet euermore his honour he recured, And with vnwearied powre his party still assured.

38
Ne was there Knight that ever thought of armes,
But that his vtmost provesse there made

knowen, [harmes, That by their many wounds, and carelesse By shiuered speares, and swords all vnder strowen.

By scattered shields was easie to be showen. Theremight yesee loosesteeds at random ronne, Whose luckelesse riders late were ouerthrowen; And squiers make hast to helpe their Lords fordonne,

But still the Knights of Maidenhead the better wonne.

Till that there entred on the other side, [reed, A straunger knight, from whence no man could In quyent disguise, full hard to be descride. For all his armour was like saluage weed, With woody mosse bedight, and all his steed With oaken leaues attrapt, that seemed fit For saluage wight, and thereto well agreed His word, which on his ragged shield was writ, Saluagesse sans finesse, shewing secret wit.

He at his first incomming, charg'd his spere At him, that first appeared in his sight: That was to weet, the stout Sir Sangliere, Who well was knowen to be a valiant Knight, Approued oft in many a perlous fight. Him at the first encounter downe he smote, And ouerbore beyond his crouper quight, And after him another Knight, that hote Sir Brianor, so sore, that none him life behote.

Then ere his hand he reard, he ouerthrew
Scuen Knights one after other as they came:
And when his speare was brust, his sword he
drew,

The instrument of wrath, and with the same Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game, Hewing, and slashing shields, and helmets bright,

And beating downe, what euer nigh him came, That euery one gan shun his dreadfull sight, No lesse then death it selfe, in daungerous affright.

Much wondred all men, what, or whence he came, That did amongst the troupes so tyrannize; And each of other gan inquire his name. But when they could not learne it by no wize, Most answerable to his wyld disguize It seemed, him to terme the saluage knight. But certes his right name was otherwize, Though knowne to few, that Arthegall he hight. The doughtiest knight that liv'd that day, and most of might.

Thus was Sir Satyrane with all his band By his sole manhood and atchieuement stout Dismayd, that none of them in field durst stand, But beaten were, and chased all about. So he continued all that day throughout, Tilleuening, that the Sunnegandownwardbend. Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout A stranger knight, that did his glorie shend: So nought may be esteemed happie till the end.

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull speare At Artegall, in middest of his pryde, And therewith smote him on his Vmbriere So sore, that tombling backe, he downe did

slyde
Ouer his horses taile aboue a stryde;
Whence litle lust he had to rise againe.
Which Cambell seeing, much the same enuyde,
And ran at him with all his might and maine;
But shortly was likewise seene lying on the
plaine.

Whereat full inly wroth was *Triamond*,
And castt' auenge the shame doen to his freend:
But by his friend himselfe eke soone he fond,
In no lesse neede of helpe, then him he weend
All which when *Blandamour* from end to end
Beheld, he woxe therewith displeased sore,
And thought in mind it shortly to amend:
His speare he feutred, and at him it bore;
But with no better fortune, then the rest afore.

Full many others at him likewise ran:
But all of them likewise dismounted were,
Ne certes wonder; for no powre of man
Couldbide the force of that enchaunted speare,
The which this famous *Britomart* did beare;
With which she wondrous deeds of arms
atchieued.

And ouerthrew, what euer came her neare, That all those stranger knights full sore agricued,

And that late weaker band of chalengers relieued.

47
Like as in sommers day when raging heat
Doth burne the earth, and boyled rivers dric,
That all brute beasts forst to refraine fro meat,
Doe hunt for shade, where shrowded they may
lie

And missing it, faine from themselues to flie; All trauellers tormented are with paine: A watry cloud doth ouercast the skie, And poureth forth a sudden shoure of raine, That all the wretched world recomforteth againe.

So did the warlike *Britomart* restore
The prize, to knights of Maydenhead that day,

Which else was like to haue bene lost, and bore The prayse of prowesse from them all away. Then shrilling trompets loudly gan to bray, Andbadthemleaue their labours and long toyle. To ioyous feast and other gentle play, Where beauties prize shold win that pretious

Where I with sound of trompe will also rest a whyle



## Cant. V.

## 

The Ladies for the girdle striue
of famous Florimell:
Scudamour comming to Cares house,
doth sleepe from him expell.

#### 

It hath bene through all ages euer seene,
That with the praise of armes and cheualrie,
The prize of beautic still hath joyned beene;
And that for reasons speciall priuitie:
For either doth on other much relie.
For he me seemes most fit the faire to serue,
That can her best defend from villenie;
And she most fit his seruice doth deserue,
That fairest is and from her faith will neuer
swerue.

So fitly now here commeth next in place,
After the proofe of prowesse ended well,
The controuerse of beauties soueraine grace
In which to her that doth the most excell,
Shall fall the girdle of faire Florimell:
That many wish to win for glorie vaine,
And not for vertuous vse, which some doe
tell

That glorious belt did in it selfe containe, Which Ladies ought to loue, and seeke for to obtaine.

That girdle gaue the vertue of chast loue,
And wiuchood true, to all that did it
beare;
But whosoeuer contrarie doth proue,
Might not the same about her middle weare,
But it would loose, or else a sunder teare.
Whilome it was (as Faeries wont report)
Dame Venus girdle, by her steemed deare,
What time she vsd to liue in wiuely sort;
But layd aside, when so she vsd her looser sport.

Her husband Vulcan whylome for her sake, When first he loued her with heart entire, This pretious ornament they say did make, And wrought in Lemno with vnquenched fire: And afterwards did for her loues first hire, Giue it to her, for euer to remaine, Therewith to bind lasciulous desire, And loose affections streightly to restraine; Which vertue it for euer after did retaine.

The same one day, when she her selfe disposd To visite her beloued Paramoure, The God of warre, she from her middle loosd, And left behind her in her secret bowre, On Acidalian mount, where many an howre She with the pleasant Graces wont to play. There Florimell in her first ages flowre Was fostered by those Graces, (as they say) And brought with her from thence that goodly belt away.

That goodly belt was Cestus hight by name, And as her life by her esteemed deare. No wonder then, if that to winne the same So many Ladies sought, as shall appeare; Forpearelesseshe was thought, that did it beare. And now by this their feast all being ended, The judges which thereto selected were, Into the Martian field adowne descended, To deeme this doutfull case, for which they all contended.

But first was question made, which of those Knights

That lately turneyd, had the wager wonne: There was it judged by those worthie wights, That Satyrane the first day best had donne: For he last ended, having first begonne. The second was to Triamond behight, For that he sau'd the victour from fordonne: For Cambell victour was in all mens sight, Till by mishap he in his foemens hand did light.

8

The third dayes prize vn to that straunger Knight, Whom all men term'd Knight of the Hebene speare,

To Britomart was given by good right;
For that with puissant stroke she downe did

The Saluage Knight, that victour was whileare, And all the rest, which had the best afore, And to the last vnconquer'd did appeare; For last is deemed best. To her therefore The fayrest Ladie was adjudgd for Paramore.

But thereat greatly grudged Arthegall,
And much repynd, that both of victors meede,
And eke of honour she did him forestall.
Yet motehe not withstand, what was decreede;
But inly thought of that despightfull deede
Fit time t'awaite auenged for to bee.
This being ended thus, and all agreed,
Then next ensew'd the Paragon to see
Of beauties praise, and yeeld the fayrest her due
fee.

Then first Cambello brought vnto their view His faire Cambina, couered with a veale; Which being once withdrawne, most perfect hew And passing beautie did eftsoones reueale, That able was weake harts away to steale Next did Sir Triamond vnto their sight The face of his deare Canacce vnheale; Whose beauties beame eftsoones did shine so

10

That daz'd the eyes of all, as with exceeding light.

7.7

And after her did Paridell produce
His false Duessa, that she might be seene,
Who with her forged beautie did seduce
The hearts of some, that fairest her did weene;
As diuerse wits affected diuers beene.
Then did Sir Ferramont vnto them shew
His Lucida, that was full faire and sheene,
And after these an hundred Ladies moe
Appear'd in place, the which each other did
outgoe.

12

All which who so dare thinke for to enchace, Him needeth sure a golden pen I weene, To tell the feature of each goodly face. For since the day that they created beene, So many heauenly faces were not seene Assembled in one place: ne he that thought For Chian folke to pourtraict beauties Queene, By view of all the fairest to him brought, So many faire did see, as here he might have sought.

At last the most redoubted Britonesse,
Her louely Amoret did open shew;
Whose face discouered, plainely did expresse
The heauenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew.
Well weened all, which her that time did vew,
That she should surely beare the bell away,
Till Blandamour, who thought he had the trew
And very Florimell, did her display:
The sight of whom once seene did all the rest

1.

dismay.

For all afore that seemed fayre and bright, Now base and contemptible did appeare, Compar'd to her, that shone as Phebes light, Amongst the lesser starres in euening cleare. All that her saw with wonder rauisht weare, And weend no mortall creature she should bee, But some celestiall shape, that flesh did beare: Yet all were glad there Florinell to see; Yet thought that Florinell was not so faire as shee.

As guilcfull Goldsmith that by secret skill, With golden foyle doth finely ouer spred Some baser metall, which commend he will Vnto the vulgar for good gold insted, He muchmoregoodly glosse thereon doth shed. To hide his falshood, then if it were trew: So hard, this Idole was te be ared, That Flormell her selfe in all mens vew She seem'd to passe: so forged things do fairest shew.

Then was that golden belt by doome of all Graunted to her, as to the fayrest Dame. Which being brought, about her middle small They thought to gird, as best it her became; But by no meanes they could it thereto frame.

For euer as they fastned it, it loos'd
And fell away, as feeling secret blame.
Full oft about her wast she it enclos'd;
And it as oft was from about her wast disclos'd.

That all men wondred at the vncouth sight, And each one thought, as totheirfancies came. But she her selfe did thinke it doen for spight, And touched was with secret wrath and shame Therewith, as thing deuiz'd her to defame. Then many other Ladies likewise tride, About their tender loynes to knit the same; But it would not on none of them abide, But when they thought it fast, eftsoones it was vntide.

Which when that scornefull Squire of Dames did vew,

It: lowdly gan to laugh, and thus to lest; Alas for pittle that so faire a crew, As like can not be seene from East to West. Cannot find one this girdle to inuest. Fie on the man, that did it first inuent, To shame vs all with this, Vngirt vnblest. Let neuer Ladie to his loue assent, That hath this day so many so vnmanly shent

Thereatall Knights gan laugh, and Ladies lowre: Till that at last the gentle Amoret Likewise assayd, to proue that girdles powre; And hauing it about her middle set, Did find it fit, withouten breach or let. Whereat the rest gan greatly to enuie: But Florimell exceedingly did fret, And snatching from her hand halfe angrily The belt againe, about her bodie gan it tie.

Yet nathemore would it her bodie fit;
Yet nathelesse to her, as her dew right,
It yeelded was by them, that iudged it:
And she her selfe adiudged to the Knight,
That bore the Hebene speare, as wonne in fight.
But Britomari would not thereto assent,
Ne her owne Amoret forgoe so light
For that strange Dame, whose beauties wonderment

She lesse esteem'd, then th'others vertuous gouernment.

Whom when the rest did see her to refuse,
They were full glad, in hope themselues to get
her:

Yet at her choice they all did greatly muse. But after that the Iudges did arret her Vnto the second best, that lou'd her better; That was the Saluage Knight: but he was gone In great displeasure, that he could not get her. Then was she iudged Triamond his one; But Triamond lou'd Canacee, and other none.

The vnto Satyran she was adiudged,
Who was right glad to gaine so goodly meed:
But Blandamour thereat full greatly grudged,
And litle prays'd his labours euill speed,
That for to winne the saddle, lost the steed.
Ne lesse thereat did Paridell complaine,
And thought t'appeale from that, which was
decreed,

To single combat with Sir Satyrane.
Theretohim Ate stird, new discord tomaintaine.

And eke with these, full many other Knights She through her Wicked working did incense. Her to demaund, and chalenge as their rights Descrued for their perils recompense. Amongst the rest with boastfull vaine pretense Stept Braggadochio forth, and as his thrall Her claym'd, by him in battell wonnelong sens: Whereto her selfe he did to witnesse call; Who being askt, accordingly confessed all.

Thereat exceeding wroth was Satyran;
And wroth with Satyran was Blandamour;
And wroth with Blandamour was Eriuan;
And at them both Sir Paridell did loure,
So all together stird vp strifull stoure,
And readie were new battell to darraine.
Each one profest to be her paramoure,
And vow'd with speare and shield it to maintaine;
[restraine.]
Ne Iudges powre, ne reasons rule mote them

Which troublous stirre when Satyrane auiz'd, He gan to cast how to appeare the same. And to accord them all, this meanes deuiz'd: First in the midst to set that fayrest Dame, To whom each one his chalenge should disclame, And he himselfe his right would eke releasse: Then looke to whom she voluntarie came, He should without disturbance her possesse: Sweete is the love that comes alone with willingnesse.

They all agreed, and then that snowy Mayd Was in the middest plast among them all; All on her gazing wisht, and vowd, and prayd, And to the Oueene of beautie close did call, That she vnto their portion might befall. Then when she long had lookt vpon each one, As though she wished to have pleasd them all, At last to Braggadochio selfe alone She came of her accord, in spight of all his fone.

Which when they all beheld they chaft and rag'd, And woxe nigh mad for very harts despight, That from reuenge their willes they scarse asswag'd:

Some thought from him her to have reft by

Some proffer made with him for her to fight. But he nought car'd for all that they could say: For he their words as wind esteemed light. Yet not fit place he thought it there to stay, But secretly from thence that night her bore away.

They which remaynd, so so one as they perceiu'd, That she was gone, departed thence with speed, And follow'd them, in mind her to have reau'd From wight vnworthie of so noble meed. In which poursuit how each one did succeede, Shall else be told in order, as it fell. But now of Britomart it here doth neede. The hard aduentures and strange haps to tell: Since with the rest she went not after Florimell.

For soone as she them saw to discord set. Her list no longer in that place abide; But taking with her louely Amoret, Vpon her first aduenture forth did ride. To seeke her lou'd, making blind loue her guide. Vnluckie Mayd to seeke her enemie, Vnluckie Mayd to seeke him farre and wide. Whom, when he was vnto her selfe most nie, She through his late disguizement could him not descrie.

So much the more her griefe, the more her toyle: Yet neither toyle nor griefe she once did spare. In seeking him, that should her paine assoyle: Whereto great comfort in her sad misfare Was Amoret, companion of her care: Who likewise sought her louer long miswent.

The gentle Scudamour, whose hart whileare That stryfull hag with gealous discontent Had fild, that he to fell reveng was fully bent.

Bent to reuenge on blamelesse Britomart The crime, which cursed Ate kindled earst. The which like thornesdid pricke his gealous hart, And through his soule like poysned arrow perst, That by no reason it might be reuerst. For ought that Glauce could or doe or say. For aye the more that she the same reherst, Themore it gauld, and grieu'dhim night and day, That nought but dire reuenge his anger mote defray.

So as they trauelled, the drouping night Couered with cloudie storme and bitter showre, That dreadfull seem'd to euery liuing wight, Vpon them fell, before her timely howre; That forced them to seeke some couert bowre, Where they might hide their heads in quiet rest, And shrowd their persons from that stormie stowre.

Not farre away, not meete for any guest They spide a little cottage, like some poore mans nest.

Vnder a steepe hilles side it placed was, There where the mouldred earth had cav'd the banke;

And fast beside a little brooke did pas Of muddie water, that like puddle stanke, By which few crooked sallowes grew in ranke: Whereto approaching nigh, they heard the sound Of many yron hammers beating ranke. And answering their wearie turnes around,

That seemed some blacksmith dwelt in that desert ground.

There entring in, they found the goodman selfe, Full busily vnto his worke ybent; Who was to weet a wretched wearish elfe. With holloweyes and rawbone cheekes for spent, As if he had in prison long bene pent: Full blacke and griesly did his face appeare, Besmeard with smoke that nigh his eye-sight blent:

With rugged beard, and hoarie shagged heare, The which he neuer wont to combe, or consely sheare.

Rude was his garment, and to rags all rent, Ne better had he, ne for better cared: With blistred hands emongst the cinders brent, And fingers filthie, with long nayles vnpared, Right fit to rend the food, on which he fared. His name was Care; a blacksmith by his trade, That neither day nor night from working spared, But to small purpose yron wedges made. Those be vnquiet thoughts, that carefull minds imuade.

In which his worke he had sixe seruants prest, About the Andvile standing euermore, With huge great hammers, that did neuer rest From heaping stroakes, which thereon soused sore:

Allsixestrong groomes, but one then other more; For by degrees they all were disagreed; So likewise did the hammers which they bore, Like belles in greatnesse orderly succeed, That he which was the last, the first did farre exceede.

37
He like a monstrous Gyant seem'd in sight,
Farre passing Bronteus, or Pyracmon great,
The which in Lipari doe day and night
Frame thunderbolts for loues auengefull
threate.

So dreadfully he did the anduile beat, That seem'd to dust he shortly would it driue: So huge his hammer and so fierce his heat, That seem'd a rocke of Diamond it could riue, Vel rend a sunder quite, if he thereto list striue.

Sir Scudamour there entring, much admired The manner of their worke and wearie paine; And having long beheld, at last enquired The cause and end thereof: but all in vaine; For they for nought would from their worke refraine,

Ne let his speeches come vnto their eare.
And eke the breathfull bellowes blew amaine,
Like to the Northren winde, that none could
heare: [bellows weare.
Those Pensifenesse did moue; and Sighes the

Which when that warriour saw, he said nomore, But in his armour layd him downe to rest:
To rest he layd him downe vpon the flore, (Whylome for ventrous Knights the bedding best)
And thought his wearie limbs to haue redrest.
And that old aged Dame, his faithfull Squire, Her feeble iownts layd eke a downe to rest;
That needed much her weake age to desire,
After so long a trauell, which them both did tire.

There lay Sir Scudannour long while expecting. Whengentle sleepe his heauie eyes would close; Oft chaunging sides, and oft new place elecung, Where better seem'd he mote himselfe repose; And oft in wrath he thence againe vprose; And oft in wrath he layd him downe againe. But wheresoeuer he did himselfe dispose, He by no meanes could wished ease obtainc: So euery place seem'd painefull, and ech changing vaine.

And euermore, when he to sleepe did thinke,
The hammers sound his senses did molest;
And euermore, when he began to winke,
The bellowes noyse disturb'd his quiet rest,
Ne suffred sleepe to settle in his brest.
And all the night the dogs did barke and howle
About the house, at sent of stranger guest:
And now the crowing Cocke, and now the Owle
Lowde shriking him afflicted to the very sowle.

And if by fortune any litle nap
Vpon his heauie eye-lids chaunst to fall,
Eftsoones one of those villeins him did rap
Vpon his headpeece with his yron mall;
That he was soone awaked therewithall,
And lightly started vp as one affrayd;
Or as if one him suddenly did call.
So oftentimes he out of sleepe abrayd,
And then lay musing long, on that him ill apayd.

So long he muzed, and so long he lay,
That at the last his wearie sprite opprest
With fleshly weaknesse, which no creature may
Long time resist, gaue place to kindly rest.
That all his senses did full soone arrest:
Yet in his soundest sleepe, his dayly feare
His ydle braine gan busily molest,
And made him dreame those two disloyall
were:

The things that day most minds, at night doe most appeare.

With that, the wicked carle the maister Smith A paire of redwhot yron tongs did take Out of the burning cinders, and therewith Vnder his side him nipt, that forst to wake, He felt his hart for very paine to quake, And started vp auenged for to be On him, the which his quiet slomber brake: Yet looking round about him none could see; Yet did the smart remaine, though he himselfe did flee.

In such disquiet, and hartfretting payne,
He all that night, that too long night did passe.
And now the day out of the Ocean mayne
Began to peepe aboue this earthly masse,
With pearly dew sprinkling the morning
grasse:

Then vp he rose like heauie lumpe of lead, That in his face, as in a looking glasse, The signes of anguish one mote plainely read, And ghesse the man to be dismayd with gealous dread.

cau.

Vnto his lofty steede he clombe anone,
And forth vpon his former voiage fared,
And with him eke that aged Squire attone;
Who whatsoeuer perill was prepared,
Both equall paines and equall perill shared:
The end whereof and daungerous euent
Shall for another canticle be spared.
But here my wearie teeme nigh ouer spent
Shall breath it selfe awhile, after so long a went.

## Cant. VI.

#### 

Both Scudamour and Arthegall
Doe fight with Britomart,
He sees her face; doth fall in Ioue,
and soone from her depart.

#### 

1

What equall torment to the griefe of mind,
And pyning anguish hid in gentle hart,
That inly feeds it selfe with thoughts vnkind,
And nourisheth her owne consuming smart?
What medicine can any Leaches art
Yeeld such a sore, that doth her grieuance hide,
And will to none her maladie impart?
Such was the wound that Scudamour didgride;
For which Dan Phebus selfe cannot a salue
prouide.

Who having left that restlesse house of Care,
The next day, as he on his way did ride,
Full of melancholie and sad misfare,
Through misconceipt; all vnawares espide
An armed Knight vnder a forrest side,
Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede;
Who soone as them approaching he descride,
Gan towards them to pricke with eger speede,
That seem'd he was full bent to some mischieuous deede.

Which Scudamour perceiuing, forth issewed To have rencountred him in equall race; But soone as th'other nigh approaching, vewed The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase, And voide his course: at which so suddain case He wondred much. But th'other thus can say; Ah gentle Scudamour, vnto your grace I me submit, and you of pardon pray, That almost had against you trespassed this day

. . . .

Whereto thus Scudamour, Small harme it were For any knight, ypon a ventrous knight Without displeasance for to proue his spere. But reade you Sir, sith ye myname haue hight, What is your owne, that I mote you requite. Certes (sayd he) ye mote as now excuse Me from discouering you my name aright: For time yet serues that I the same refuse, But call ye me the Saluage Knight, as others yee.

Then this, Sir Saluage Knight (quoth he) arecde; Or doe you here within this forrest wonne, That seemeth well to answere to your weede Or haue ye it for some occasion donne? That rather seemes, sith knowen armes ye shonne.

This other day (sayd he) a stranger knight Shame and dishonour hath vnto me donne; On whom I waite to wreake that fouledespight, When cuer he this way shall passe by day or night.

Shame be his meede (quoth he) that meaneth shame.

But what is he, by whom ye shamed were? A stranger knight, sayd he, ynknowneby name. But knowneby fame, and by an Hebene speare. With which he all that methim, downedid beare. He in an open Turney lately held, Fro me the honour of that game did reare; And hauing me all wearie earst, downe feld, The fayrest Ladie reft, and euer since withheld

When Scudamour heard mention of that speare, He wist right well, that it was Britomarl, The which from him his fairest loue did beare. Tho gan he swell in euery inner part, For fell despight, and gnaw his gealous hart. That thus he sharply sayd; Now by my head, Yet is not this the first vnknightly part, Which that same knight, whom by his launce I read,

Hath doen to noble knights, that many makes him dread. For lately he my loue hath fro me reft. And eke defiled with foule villanie The sacred pledge, which in his faith was left. In shame of knighthood and fidelitie; The which ere long full deare he shall abie. And if to that auenge by you decreed This hand may helpe, or succour ought supplie, It shall not fayle, when so ye shall it need. So both to wreake their wrathes on Britomart agreed.

Whiles thus they communed, lo farre away A Knight soft ryding towards them they spyde, Attyr'd in forraine armes and straunge aray: Whom when they nigh approcht, they plaine descryde

To be the same, for whom they did abyde. Sayd then Sir Scudamour, Sir Saluage knight Let me this craue, sith first I was defyde, That first I may that wrong to him requite: And if I hap to fayle, you shall recure my right.

Which being yeelded, he his threatfull speare Gan fewter, and against her fiercely ran. Who soone as she him saw approaching neare With so fell rage, her selfe she lightly gan To dight, to welcome him, well as she can: But entertaind him in so rude a wise, That to the ground shes mote both horse and man; Whence neither greatly hasted to arise, But on their common harmes together did denise.

But Artegall beholding his mischaunce, New matter added to his former fire; And eft auentring his steeleheaded launce, Against her rode, full of despiteous ire, That nought but spoyle and vengeance did require.

But to himselfe his felonous intent Returning, disappointed his desire, Whiles vnawares his saddle he forwent, And found himselfe on ground in great amazement.

Lightly he started vp out of that stound, And snatching forth his direfull deadly blade, Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound Thrust to an Hynd within some couert glade, Whom without perill he cannot inuade. With such fell greedines he her assayled, That though she mounted were, yet he her made To give him ground, (so much his force preuayled)

And shun his mightie strokes, gainst which no

armes auayled.

So as they coursed here and there, it chaunst That in her wheeling round, behind her crest So sorely he her strooke, that thence it glaunst Adowne her backe, the which it fairely blest From foule mischance; ne did it euer rest. Till on her horses hinder parts it fell: Where byting deepe, so deadly it imprest, That quite it chynd his backe behind the sell, And to alight on foote her algates did compell.

13

Like as the lightning brond from riuen skie, Throwne out by angry Ioue in his vengeance, With dreadfull force falles on some steeple hie; Which battring, downe it on the church doth glance.

And teares it all with terrible mischance. Vet she no whit dismayd, her steed forsooke, And casting from her that enchaunted lance, Vnto her sword and shield her soone betooke; And therewithall at him right furiously she strooke.

So furiously she strooke in her first heat, Whiles with long fight on foot he breathlesse was. That she him forced backward to retreat, And yeeld vnto her weapon way to pas: Whose raging rigour neither steele nor bras Could stay, but to the tender flesh it went, And pour'd the purple bloud forth on the gras; That all his mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent, Shew'd all his bodie bare vnto the cruell dent.

At length when as he saw her hastie heat Abate, and panting breath begin to fayle, He through long sufferance growing now more

great, Rose in his strength, and gan her fresh assayle, Heaping huge strokes, as thicke as showre of And lashing dreadfully at every part, [hayle, As if he thought her soule to disentrayle. Ah cruell hand, and thrise more cruell hart, That workst such wrecke on her, to whom thou dearest art.

What yron courage euer could endure. To worke such outrage on so faire a creature? And in his madnesse thinke with hands impure To spoyle so goodly workmanship of nature, The maker selfe resembling in her feature? Certes some hellish furie, or some feend This mischiefe framd, for their first loues defeature,

To bath their hands in bloud of dearest freend. Thereby to make their loues beginning, their liues end.

- 0

Thus long they trac'd, and trauerst to and fio, Sometimespursewing, and sometimes pursewed, Still as aduantage they espyde thereto: But toward th'end Sir Arthegall renewed His strength still more, but she still more decrewed.

At last his lucklesse hand he heau'd on hie, Hauing his forces all in one accrewed, And therewith stroke at her so hideouslie, That seemed nought but death mote be her destinie.

The wicked stroke vpon her helmet chaunst, And with the force, which in it selfe it bore, Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth plaunst

A downe in vaine, ne harm'd her any more. With that her angels face, vnseene afore, Like to the ruddie morne appeard in sight, Deawed with siluer drops, throughsweating sore, But somewhat redder, then beseem'd aright, Through toylesome heate and labour of her weary fight.

And round about the same, her yellow heare Hauingthroughstirring loosd their wonted band, Like to a golden border did appeare, Framedingoldsmithes forge with cunning hand: Yet goldsmithes cunning could not vnderstand To frame such subtile wire, so shinie cleare. For it did glister like the golden sand, The which Pactolus with his waters shere, Throwes forth vpon the riuage round about him nere.

And as his hand he vp againe did reare,
Thinking to worke on her his vtmost wracke,
His powrelesse armebenumbd with secret feare
From his reuengefull purpose shronke abacke.
And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke
Fell downetoground, as if the steele had sence,
And felt some ruth, or sence his handdid lacke.
Or both of them did thinke, obedience
To doe to so diuine a beauties excellence.

22

And he himselfe long gazing thereupon,
At last fell humbly downe vpon his knee,
And of his wonder made religion,
Weening some heauenly goddesse he did see,
Or else vnweeting, what it else might bee;
And pardon her besought his errour frayle.
That had done outrage in so high degree:
Whilest trembling horrour did his sense
arsayle,

And made ech member quake, and manly hart to quayle.

22

Nathelesse she full of wrath for that late stroke, All that long while vpheld her wrathfull hand, With fell intent, on him to bene ywroke, And looking sterne, still ouer him did stand, Threatning to strike, vnlesse he would withstand:

And bad him rise, or surely he should die. But die or liue for nought he would vpstand But her of pardon prayd more earnestlie, Or wreake on him her will for so great iniurie.

24

Which when as Scudanour, who now abrayd, Beheld, whereas he stood not farre aside, He was therewith right wondrously dismayd. And drawing nigh, when as he plaine descride That peerelesse paterne of Dame natures pride, And heauenly image of perfection, He blest himselfe, as one sore terrifide, And turning his feare to faint deuotion, Did worship her as some celestiall vision.

25

But Glauce, seeing all that chaunced there,
Well weeting how their errour to assoyle,
Full glad of so good end, to them drew nere,
And her salewd with seemely belaccoyle,
loyous to see her safe after long toyle.
Then her besought, as she to her was deare.
To graunt vnto those warriours truce a whyle;
Which yeelded, they their beuers vp did reare,
And shew'd themselues to her, such as indeed
they were.

When Britomart with sharpe auizefull eye Beheld the louely face of Artegall, Tempred with sternesse and stout maiestie, She gan eftsoones it to her mind to call, To be the same which in her fathers hall Long since in that enchaunted glasse she saw. Therewith her wrathfull courage gan appall, And haughtie spirits meekely to adaw, That her enhaunced hand she downe can soft withdraw.

Yet she it forst to haue againe vpheld,
As fayning choler, which was turn'd to cold:
But euer when his visage she beheld,
Her handfelldowne, and would no longer hold
The wrathfull weapon gainst his countnance
bold:

But when in vaine to fight she oft assayd, She arm'd her tongue, and thought at him to scold;

Nathlesse her tongue not to her will obayd, But brought forth speeches myld, when she would haue missayd.

But Scudamour now woxen inly glad,
That all his gealous feare he false had found,
And how that Hag his loue abused had
With breach of faith and loyaltie vnsound,
The whichlong time his grieued hart did wound,
He thus bespake; Certes Sir Artegall,
I ioy to see you lout so low on ground,
And now become to liue a Ladies thrall,
That whylome in your minde wont to despise
them all.

Soone as she heard the name of Artegall, Her hart did leape, and all her hart-strings tremble,

For sudden ioy, and secret feare withall, And all her vitall powres with motion nimble, To succour it, themselues gan there assemble, That by the swift recourse of flushing blood Right plaine appeard, though she it would dissemble,

And fayned still her former angry mood, Thinking to hide the depth by troubling of the flood.

When Glauce thus gan wisely all vpknit;
Ye gentle Knights, whom fortune here hath
To be spectators of this vncouth fit, [brought,
Which secret fate hath in this Ladie wrought,
Against the course of kind, nemeruaile nought,
Ne thenceforth feare the thing that hethertoo
Hath troubled both your mindes with idle
thought,

Fearing least she your loues away should woo. Feared in vaine, sith meanes ye see there wants theretoo.

And you Sir Artegall, the saluage knight,
Henceforth may not disdaine, that womans hand
Hath conquered you anew in second fight:
For whylome they haue conquerd sea and land,
And heauen it selfe, that nought may them
with

Ne henceforth be rebellious vnto loue, That is the crowne of knighthood, and the band Of noble minds deriued from aboue, Which being knit with vertue, neuer will

remoue.

32

And you faire Ladie knight, my dearest Dame, Relent the rigour of your wrathfull will, Whose fire were better turn'd to other flame; And wiping out remembrance of all ill, Graunt him your grace, but so that he fulfill The penance, which ye shall to him empart: For louers heauen must passe by sorrowes hell. Thereat full inly blushed Britomart; But Artegall close smyling joy'd in secret hart.

Yet durst he not make loue so suddenly,
Ne thinke th'affection of her hart to draw
From one to other so quite contrary:
Besides her modest countenance he saw
So goodly graue, and full of princely aw,
That it his ranging fancie did refraine,
And looser thoughts to lawfull bounds withdraw;

Whereby the passion grew more fierce and faine, Like to a stubborne steede whom strong hand would restraine.

But Scudamour whose hart twixt doubtfull feare
And feeble hope hung all this while suspence,
Desiring of his Amoret to heare
Some gladfull newes and sure intelligence,
Her thus bespake; But Sir without offence
Mote I request you tydings of my loue,
My Amoret, sith you her freed fro thence,
Where she captiued long, great woes did proue;
That where ye left, I may her seeke, as doth
behoue.

To whom thus Britomart, Certes Sir knight,
What is of her become, or whether reft,
I can not vnto you aread a right.
For from that time I from enchaunters theft
Her freed, in which ye her all hopelesse left,
I her preseru'd from perill and from feare,
And euermore from villenie her kept:
Ne euer was there wight to me more deare
Then she, ne vnto whom I more true loue did
beare.

Till on a day as through a desert wyld
We trauelled, both wearie of the way
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld;
Where fearelesse I to sleepe me downe did lay.
But when as I did out of sleepe abray,
I found her not, where I her left whyleare,
But thought she wandred was, or gone astray.
I cal'd her loud, I sought her farre and neare:
But no where could her find, nor tydings of her heare.

When Scudamour those heavic tydings heard, His hart was thrild with point of deadly feare; Ne in his face or bloud or life appeard, But senselesse stood, like to a mazed steare, That yet of mortall stroke the stound doth beare. Till Glauce thus; Faire Sir, be nought dismayd With needelesse dread, till certaintie ye heare: For yet she may be safe though somewhat strayd;

Its best to hope the best, though of the worst affrayd.

Nathlesse he hardly of her chearefull speech Did comfort take, or in his troubled sight Shew'd change of better cheare: so sore a breach

That sudden newes had made into hisspright: Till Britomart him fairely thus behight; Great cause of sorrow certes Sir ye haue: But comfort take: for by this heavens light I vow, you dead or living not to leave, Till I her find, and wreake on him that her did reame.

Therewith he rested, and well pleased was. So peace being confirm'd amongst them all. They tooke their steeds, and forward thence did pas

Vnto some resting place, which mote befall, All being guided by Sir Artegall. Where goodly solace was vnto them made, And dayly feasting both in bowre and hall, Vntill that they their wounds well healedhad,

And wearie limmes recur'd after late vsage bad.

In all which time, Sir Artegall made way Vnto the love of noble Britomart. And with meeke seruice and much suit did lav Continuall siege vnto her gentle hart, Which being whylome launcht with louely dart. More eath was new impression to receive, How euer she her paynd with womanish art To hide her wound, that none might it perceiue:

Vaine is the art that seekes it selfe for to deceiue.

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought her,

With faire entreatie and sweet blandi-hment, That at the length vnto a bay he brought her, So as she to his speeches was content To lend an eare, and softly to relent.

At last through many vowes which forth he pour'd,

And many othes, she yeelded her consent To be his loue, and take him for her Lord, Till they with mariage meet might finish that accord.

Tho when they had long time there taken rest, Sir Artegall, who all this while was bound Vpon an hard aduenture yet in quest, Fit time for him thence to depart it found, To follow that, which he did long propound; And vnto her his congee came to take. But her therewith full sore displeased he found. And loth to leave her late betrothed make. Her dearest loue full loth so shortly to forsake.

43 Yet he with strong perswasions her asswaged. And wonne her will to suffer him depart ; For which his faith with her he fast engaged. And thousand vowes from bottome of his hart. That all so soone as he by wit or art Could that atchieue, whereto he did aspire, He vnto her would speedily reuert: No longer space thereto he did desire, But till the horned moone three courses did expire.

With which she for the present was appeared, And yeelded leaue, how euer malcontent She inly were, and in her mind displeased. So early in the morrow next he went Forth on his way, to which he was ybent. Ne wight him to attend, or way to guide, As whylome was the custome ancient Mongst Knights, when on aduentures they did

Saue that she algates him a while accompanide.

And by the way she sundry purpose found Of this or that, the time for to delay, And of the perils whereto he was bound, The feare whereof seem'd much her to affray: But all she did was but to weare out day. Full oftentimes she leave of him did take: And eft againe deuiz'd some what to say, Which she forgot, whereby excuse to make: So loth she was his companie for to forsake.

At last when all her speeches she had spent, And new occasion fayld her more to find, She left him to his fortunes gouernment, And backe returned with right heavie mind, To Scudamour, who she had left behind, With whom she went to seeke faire Amorel. Her second care, though in another kind; For vertues onely sake, which doth beget True loue and faithfull friendship, she by her did set.

Backe to that desert forrest they retyred, Where sorie Britomart had lost her late; There they her sought, and euery where in-

Where they might tydings get of her estate; Yet found they none. But by what haplesse

Or hard misfortune she was thence conuayd, And stolne away from her beloued mate. Were long to tell; therefore I here will stay Vntill another tyde, that I it finish may.

## Cant. VII.

### 

Amoret rapt by greedie tust
Belphebe saues from dread,
The Squire her loues, and being blam'd
his dayes in dole doth lead.

### 

Great God of loue, that with thy cruell dart Doest conquer greatest conquerors on ground, And setst thy kingdome in the captiue harts Of Kings and Keasars, to thy seruice bound, Whatglorie, or what guerdon hast thou found In feeble Ladies tyranning so sore; And adding anguish to the bitter wound, With which their liues thou lanchedst long

By heaping stormes of trouble on them daily more?

So whylome didst thou to faire Florimell; And so and so to noble Britomart:
So doest thou now to her, of whom I tell, The louely Amoret, whose gentle hart
Thou martyrest with sorow and with smart, In saluage forrests, and in deserts wide,
With Beares and Tygers taking heauie part,
Withouten comfort, and withouten guide,
That pittie is to heare the perils, whichshe tride.

So soone as she with that braue Britonesse Had left that Turneyment for beauties prise, They trauel'd long, that now for wearinesse, Both of the way, and warlike exercise, Both through a forest ryding did deuise T'alight, and rest their wearie limbs awhile. There heauie sleepe the eye-lids did surprise Of Britomart after long tedious toyle, That did her passed paines in quiet rest assoyle.

The whiles faire Amoret, of nought affeard, Walkt through the wood, for pleasure, or for need:

When suddenly behind her backe she heard One rushing forth out of the thickest weed, That ere she backe could turne to taken heed, Had vnawares her snatched vp from ground. Feebly she shriekt, but so feebly indeed, That Britomart heard not the shrilling sound, There where through weary trauel she lay sleeping sound.

It was to weet a wilde and saluage man,
Yet was no man, but onely like in shape
And eke in stature higher by a span,
All ouergrowne with haire, that could awhape
An hardy hart, and his wide mouth did gape
With huge great teeth, like to a tusked Bore
For he liu'd all on rauin and on rape
Of men and beasts; and fed on fleshly gore,
The signe whereof yet stain'd his bloudy lips
afore

His neather lip was not like man nor beast, Butlikea wide deepepoke, downe hanging low, In which he wont the relickes of his feast, And cruellspoyle, which he hadspard, to stow: And ouer it his huge great nose did grow, Full dreadfully empurpled all with bloud; And downe both sides two wide long eares did glow, [stood,

And raught downe to his waste, when vp he More great then th'eares of Elephants by *Indus* flood.

His wast was with a wreath of yuic greene Engirt about, ne other garment wore: For all his haire was like a garment seene; And in his hand a tall young oake he bore, Whose knottie snags were sharpned all afore, And beath'd in fire for steele to be in sted. But whence he was, or of what wombe ybore, Of beasts, or of the earth, I haue not red: But certes was with milke of Wolues and Tygres fed.

This vgly creature in his armes her snatcht, And through the forrest bore her quite away, With briers and bushes all torent and scratcht; Ne care he had, ne pittle of the pray, Whichmanya knight had sought so manya day. He stayed not, but in his armes her bearing Ran, till he came to th'end of all his way, Vnto his caue farre from all peoples hearing, And there he threw her in, nought feeling, ne nought fearing.

For she deare Ladie all the way was dead, Whilest he in armesher bore; but when she felt Her selfe downe soust, she waked out of dread Streight into griefe, that her deare hart nigh swelt,

And eft gan into tender teares to melt. Then when she lookt about, and nothing found But darknesse and dread horrour, where she dwelt.

She almost fell againe into a swound, Ne wist whether aboue she were, or vnder ground.

With that she heard some one close by her side Sighing and sobbing sore, as if the paine Her tender hart in peeces would divide: Which she long listning, softly askt againe What mister wight it was that so did plaine? To whom thus aunswer'd was: Ah wretched wight

That seekes to know anothers griefe in vaine, Vnweeting of thine owne like haplesse plight: Selfe to forget to mind another, is ouersight.

.

Aye me (said she) where am I, or with whom? Emong the liuing, or emong the dead? What shall of me vnhappy maid become? What leath be th'end, or ought else worse, aread.

Vnhappy mayd (then answerd she) whose dread Vntride, is lesse then when thou shalt it try: Death is to him, that wretched life doth lead, Both grace and gaine; but he in hell doth lie, That liues a loathed life, and wishing cannot die.

12

This dismall day hath thee a caytiue made, And vassall to the vilest wretch aliue, Whose cursed vsage and vngodly trade The heauensabhorre, and into darkenesse driue. For on the spoile of women he doth liue, Whose bodies chast, when euer in his powre He may them catch, vnable to gainestriue, He with his shamefull lust doth first deflowre, Andafterwards themselues doth cruelly deuoure.

13

Now twenty daies, by which the sonnes of men Diuide their works, haue past through heuen sheene,

Since I was brought into this dolefull den; During which space these sory eies haue seen Seauen women by him slaine, and eaten clene. And now no more for him but I alone, And this old woman here remaining beene; Till thou cam'st hither to augment our mone, And of vs three to morrow he will sure eate one

14

Ah dreadfull tidings which thou doest declare, (Quothshe) of all that euer hath bene knowen: Full many great calamities and rare This feeble brest endured hath, but none Equall to this, where euer I haue gone. But what are you, whom like valucky lot Hathlincktwithme in the same chaine attone? To tell (quoth she) that which ye see, needs not; A wofull wretched maid, of Godand man forgot.

But what I was, it irkes me to reherse;
Daughter vnto a Lord of high degree;
That ioyd in happy peace, till fates peruerse
With guilefull loue did secretly agree,
To ouerthrow my state and dignitie.
It was my lot to loue a gentle swaine,
Yet was he but a Squire of low degree;

Yet was he meet, vnlesse mine eye did faine,

By any Ladies side for Leman to haue laine.

But for his meannesse and disparagement, My Sire, who me too dearely well did loue, Vnto my choise by no meanes would assent, But often did my folly fowle reproue. Yet nothing could my fixed mind remoue, But whether willed or nilled friend or foe, I me resolu'd the vtmost end to proue, And rather then my loue abandon so, Both sire, and friends, and all for euer to forgo.

17

Thenceforth I sought by secret meanes to worke Time to my will, and from his wrathfull sight To hide th'intent, which in my heart did lurke, Till I thereto had all things ready dight. So on a day vnweeting vnto wight, I with that Squire agreede away to flit, And in a priuy place, betwixt vs hight, Within a groue appointed him to meete; To which I boldly came vpon my feeble feete.

٠Q

But ah vnhappy houre me thither brought:
For in that place where I him thought to find,
There was I found, contrary to my thought,
Of this accursed Carle of hellish kind,
The shame of men, and plague of womankind,
Who trussing me, as Eagle doth his pray,
Me hether brought with him, as swift as wind,
Where yet vntouched till this present day,
I rest his wretched thrall, the sad Æmylia.

10

Ah sad *Emylia* (then sayd *Amoret*,)

Thy ruefull plight I pitty as mine owne.
But read to me, by what deuise or wit,
Hast thou in all this time, from him vnknowne
Thine honor sau'd, though into thraldome
throwne.

Through helpe (quoth she) of this old woman here

I haue so done, as she to me hath showne. For euer when he burnt in lustfull fire, She in my stead supplide his bestiall desire.

Thus of their euils as they did discourse, And each did other much bewaile and mone : Loe where the villaine selfe, their sorrowes sourse,

Came to the caue, and rolling thence the stone. Which wont to stop the mouth thereof, that

Might issue forth, came rudely rushing in. And spredding ouer all the flore alone, Gan dight him selfe vnto his wonted sinne . Which ended, then his bloudy banket should beginne.

Which when as fearefull Amoret perceived, She staid not the vtmost end thereof to try, But like a ghastly Gelt, whose wits are reaued. Ran forth in hast with hideous outcry, For horrour of his shamefull villany. But after her full lightly he vprose, And her pursu'd as fast as she did flie: Full fast she flies, and farre afore him goes, Ne feeles the thorns and thickets pricke her tender toes.

Norhedge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor daleshestaics. But ouerleapes them all, like Robucke light, And through the thickest makes her nighest waies:

And euermore when with regardfull sight She looking backe, espies that griesly wight Approching nigh, she gins to mend her pace, And makes her feare a spur to hast her flight: More swift then Myrrh' or Daphne in her race, Oranvof the Thracian Nimphes in saluage chase.

Long so she fled, and so he follow'd long; Ne living aide for her on earth appeares, But if the heavens helpe to redresse her wrong, Moued with pity of her plenteous teares. It fortuned Belphebe with her peares The woody Nimphs, and with that louely boy, Washunting then the Libbards and the Beares, In these wild woods, as was her wonted joy, To banish sloth, that oft doth noble mindes annoy.

It so befell, as oft it fals in chace, That each of them from other sundred were, And that same gentle Squire arriv'd in place, Where this same cursed caytiue did appeare, Pursuing that faire Lady full of feare, And now he her quite ouertaken had; And now he her away with him did beare Vnder his arme, as seeming wondrous glad, That by his grenning laughter mote farre off be rad.

25

Which drery sight the gentle Squire espying, Doth hast to crosse him by the nearest way. Led with that wofull Ladies piteous crying, And him assailes with all the might he may, Yet will not he the louely spoile downe lay. But with his craggy club in his right hand, Defends him selfe, and saues his gotten pray. Yet had it bene right hard him to withstand, But that he was full light and nimble on the land.

Thereto the villaine vsed craft in fight; For euer when the Squire his iauelin shooke, He held the Lady forth before him right, And with her body, as a buckler, broke The puissance of his intended stroke. And if it chaunst, (as needs it must in fight) Whilest he on him was greedy to be wroke, That any little blow on her did light, Then would he laugh aloud, and gather great delight.

Which subtill sleight did him encumber much, And made him oft, when he would strike, for-

beare:

For hardly could he come the carle to touch, But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare Yet he his hand so carefully did beare. That at the last he did himselfe attaine, And therein left the pike head of his speare. A streame of coleblacke bloud thence gusht amaine.

That all her silken garments did with bloud bestaine.

With that he threw her rudely on the flore, And laying both his hands vpon his glaue, With dreadfull strokes let drive at him so sore, That forst him flie abacke, himselfe to saue: Yet he therewith so felly still did raue, That scarse the Squire his hand could once vpreare,

But for aduantage ground vnto him gaue, Tracing and trauersing, now here, now there; For bootlesse thing it was to think such blowes

to beare.

Whilest thus in battell they embusied were, Belphebe raunging in that forrest wide, The hideous noise of their huge strokes did

And drew thereto, making her eare her guide. Whom when that theefe approching night espide, With bow in hand, and arrowes ready bent, He by his former combate would not bide, But fled away with ghastly dreriment, Well knowing her to be his deaths sole instrument. •

Whom seeing flie, she speedily poursewed With winged feete, as nimble as the winde, And euer in her bow she ready shewed The arrow, to his deadly marke desynde. As when Latonaes daughter cruell kynde, In vengement of her mothers great disgrace, With fell despight her cruell arrowes tynde Gainst wofull Niobes vnhappy race, That all the gods did mone her miserable case.

...

So well she sped her and so far she ventred,
That ere vnto his hellish den he raught,
Euen as he ready was there to haue entred,
She sent an arrow forth with mighty draught.
That in the very dore him ouercaught,
And in his nape arriving, through it thrild
His greedythrote, therewith in two distraught,
That all his vitall spirites thereby spild,
And all his hairy brest with gory bloud was fild.

32

Whom when on ground she groueling saw to rowle,

She ran in hast his life to haue bereft:
But ere she could him reach, the sinfull sowle
Hauing his carrion corse quite sencelesse left,
Wasfled to hell, surcharg'd with spoileand theft.
Yet ouer him she there long gazing stood,
And oft admir'd his monstrous shape, and oft
His mighty limbs, whilest all with filthy bloud
The place there ouerflowne, seemd like a
sodaine flood.

Thence forth she past into his dreadfull den, Where nought but darkesome drerinesse she found.

Ne creature saw, but hearkned now and then Some litle whispering, and soft groning sound. With that she askt, what ghosts there vnder ground

Lay hid in horrour of eternall night?
And bad them, if so be they were not bound,
To come and shew themselues before the light,
Now freed from feare and danger of that dismall
wight.

Then forth the sad Æmylia issewed,
Yet trembling euery ioynt through former
feare;

And after her the Hag, there with her mewed, A foule and lothsome creature did appeare; A leman fit for such a louer deare. That mou'd Belphebe her no lesse to hate, Then for to rue the others heauy cheare; Of whom she gan enquire of her estate. Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate.

Thence she them brought toward the place, where late

She left the gentle Squire with Amoret:
There she him found by that new louely mate,
Who lay the whiles in swoune, full sadly set,
From her faire eyes wiping the deawy wet,
Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,
And handling soft the hurts, which she did get.
For of that Carle she sorely bruz'd had beene,
Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to be
seene.

36

Which when she saw, with sodaine glauncing eye, Her noble heart with sight thereof was fild With deepe disdaine, and great indignity, That in her wrath she thought them both haue

thrild,

With that selfe arrow, which the Carle had kild: Yet held her wrathfull hand from vengeance sore,

But drawing nigh, ere he her well beheld; Is this the faith, she said, and said no more, But turnd her face, and fled away for euermore.

37

He seeing her depart, arose vp light,
Right sore agrieued at her sharpe reproofe,
And follow'd fast: but when he came in sight,
He durst not nigh approch, but kept aloofe,
For dread of her displeasures vtmost proofe.
And euermore, when he did grace entreat,
And framed speaches fit for his behoofe,
Her mortall arrowes she at him did threat,
And forst him backe with fowle dishonor to
retreat.

At last when long he follow'd had in vaine, Yet found no ease of griefe, nor hope of grace, Vnto those woods he turned backe againe, Full of sad anguish, and in heauy case: And finding there fit solitary place For wofull wight, chose out a gloomy glade, Where hardly eye mote see bright heauens face, For mossy trees, which couered all with shade And sad melancholy: there he his cabin made.

His wonted warlike weapons all he broke,
And threw away, with vow to vse no more,
Ne thenceforth euer strike in battell stroke,
Ne euer word to speake to woman more;
But in that wildernesse, of men forlore,
And of the wicked world forgotten quight,
His hard mishap in dolor to deplore,
And wast his wretched daies in wofull plight;
So on him selfe to wreake his follies owne
despight.

And eke his garment, to be thereto meet, He wilfully did cut and shape anew; And his faire lockes, that wont with ointment

To be embaulm'd, and sweat out dainty dew, He let to grow and griesly to concrew, Vncomb'd, vncurl'd, and carelesly vnshed; That in short time his face they ouergrew, And ouer all his shoulders did dispred, That who he whilome was, vneath was to be red.

41

There he continued in this carefull plight, Wretchedly wearing out his youthly yeares, Through wilfull penury consumed quight, That like a pined ghost he soone appeares. For other food then that wilde forrest beares, Ne other drinke there did he euer tast, Then running water, tempred with his teares, The more his weakened body so to wast: That out of all mens knowledge he was worne at last.

43

For on a day, by fortune as it fell, His owne deare Lord Prince Arthure came that way,

Seeking aduentures, where he mote heare tell;
Andashethrough the wandring wood didstray,
Hauing espide this Cabin far away,
He to it drew, to weet who there did wonne;
Weening therein some holy Hermit lay,
That did resort of sinfull people shonne;
Or else some woodman shrowded there from
scorching sunne.

Arriuing there, he found this wretched man, Spending his daies in dolour and despaire, And through long fasting woxen pale and wan, All ouergrowen with rude and rugged haire; That albeit his owne deare Squire he were, Yet he him knew not, ne auiz'd at all, But like strange wight, whom he had seene no where,

Saluting him, gan into speach to fall, Andpittymuch his plight, that liu'd like outcast thrall.

But to his speach he aunswered no whit,
But stood still mute, as if he had beene dum,
Ne signe of sence did shew, ne common wit,
As one with griefe and anguishe ouercum,
And vnto euery thing did aunswere mum:
And euer when the Prince vnto him spake,
He louted lowly, as did him becum,
And humble homage did vnto him make,
Midst sorrow shewing ioyous semblance for his
sake.

45

At which his vncouth guise and vsage quaint The Prince did wonder much, yet could not ghesse

The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint; Yet weend by secret signes of manlinesse, Which close appeard in that rude brutishnesse, That he whilome some gentle swaine had beene, Traind vp in feats of armes and knightlinesse; Which he obseru'd, by that he him had seene To weld his naked sword, and try the edges keene.

eene. 46

And eke by that he saw on euery tree,
How he the name of one engrauen had,
Which likly was his liefest loue to be,
For whom he now so sorely was bestad;
Which was by him BELPHEBE rightly rad.
Yet who was that Belphebe, he ne wist;
Yet saw he often how he wexed glad,
When he it heard, and how the ground he kist,
Wherein it written was, and how himselfe he
blist:

Tho when he long had marked his demeanor,
And saw that all he said and did, was vaine,
Ne ought mote make him change his wonted
tenor,

Ne ought mote case or mitigate his paine, He left him there in languor to remaine, Till time for him should remedy prouide, And him restore to former grace againe. Which for it is too long here to abide, I will deferre the end vntill another tide.

# Cant. VIII.

## 

The gentle Squire recouers grace, Sclaunder her guests doth staine: Corflambo chaseth Placidas, And is by Arthure slaine.

## 

1

Well said the wiseman, now prou'd true by this, Which to this gentle Squire did happen late, That the displeasure of the mighty is Then death it selfe more dread and desperate. For naught the same may calme ne mitigate, Till time the tempest doe thereof delay With sufferaunce soft, which rigour can abate, And haue the sterne remembrance wypt away Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein infixed lay.

Like as it fell to this vnhappy boy,
Whose tender heart the faire Belphebe had
With one sterne looke so daunted, that no

With one sterne looke so daunted, that no ioy In all his life, which afterwards he lad, He euer tasted, but with penaunce sad And pensiue sorrow pind and wore away, Ne euer laught, ne once shew'd countenance glad;

But alwaies wept and wailed night and day, As blasted bloosme through heat doth languish and decay;

Till on a day, as in his wonted wise
His doole he made, there chaunst a turtle Doue
To come, where he his dolors did deuise,
That likewise late had lost her dearest loue,
Which losse her made like passion also proue.
Who seeing his sad plight, her tender heart
With deare compassion deeply did emmoue,
That she gan mone his vndeserued smart,
And with her dolefull accent beare with him a
part.

Shee sitting by him as on ground he lay,
Her mournefull notes full piteously did frame,
And thereof made a lamentable lay,
So sensibly compyld, that in the same
Him seemed oft he heard his owne right name.
With that he forth would poure so plenteous
teares,

And beat his breast vnworthy of such blame, And knocke his head, and rend his rugged heares.

That could have perst the hearts of Tigres and of Beares.

Thus long this gentle bird to him did vse, Withouten dread of perill to repaire Vnto his wonne, and with her mournefull muse Him to recomfort in his greatest care That much did ease his mourning and misfare: And euery day for guerdon of her song, He part of his small feast to her would share; That at the last of all his woe and wrong Companion she became, and so continued long.

Vpon a day as she him sate beside,
By chance he certaine miniments forth drew,
Which yet with him as relickes did abide
Of all the bounty, which Belphebe threw
On him, whilst goodly grace she did him shew:
Amongst the rest a lewell rich he found,
That was a Ruby of right perfect hew,
Shap'd like a heart, yet bleeding of the wound,
And with a litle golden chaine about it bound.

The same he tooke, and with a riband new, In which his Ladies colours were, did bind About the turtles necke, that with the vew Did greatly solace his engrieued mind. All vnawares the bird, when she did find Her selfe so deckt, her nimble wings displaid And flew away, as lightly as the wind: Which sodaine accident him much dismaid, And looking after long, did marke which way she straid.

But when as long he looked had in vaine, Yet saw her forward still to make her flight, His weary eie returnd to him againe, Full of discomfort and disquiet plight, That both his inell he had lost so light, And eke his deare companion of his care. But that sweet bird departing, flew forth right Through the wide region of the wastfull aire, Vntill she came where wonned his Belphebe faire.

There found she her (as then it did betide)
Sitting in couert shade of arbors sweet,
After late weary toile, which she had tride
In saluage chase, to rest as seem'd her meet.
There she alighting, fell before her feet,
And gan to her her mournfull plaint to make,
As was her wont, thinking to let her weet
The great tormenting griefe, that for her
sake

Her gentle Squire through her displeasure did pertake.

She her beholding with attentiue eye,
At length did marke about her purple brest
That precious iuell, which she formerly
Had knowne right well with colourd ribbands
drest:

Therewith she rose in hast, and her addrest With ready hand it to haue reft away. But the swift bird obayd not her behest, But swaru'd aside, and there againe did stay; She follow'd her, and thought againe it to assay.

And euer when she nigh approcht, the Doue Would flit a litle forward, and then stay, Till she drew neare, and then againe remoue; So tempting her still to pursue the pray, And still from her escaping soft away:
Till that at length into that forrest wide, She drew her far, and led with slow delay. In th'end she her vnto that place did guide, Whereas that wofull man in languor did abide.

Eftsoones she flew vnto his fearclesse hand, And there a piteous ditty new deuiz'd, As if she would haue made him vnderstand, His sorrowes cause to be of her despis'd. Whom when she saw in wretched weedes dispuiz'd,

With heary glib deform'd, and meiger face, Like ghost late risen from his graue agryz'd, She knew him not, but pittied much his case, And wisht it were in her to doe him any grace.

.

He her beholding, at her feet downe fell, And kist the ground on which her sole did tread, And washt the same with water, which did well From his moist eies, and like two streames procead,

Vet spake no word, whereby she might aread What mister wight he was, or what he ment, But as one daunted with her presence dread, Onely few ruefull lookes vnto her sent, As messengers of his true meaning and intent.

14

Yet nathemore his meaning she ared, But wondred much at his so selcouth case, And by his persons secret seemlyhed Well weend, that he had beene some man of place,

Before misfortune did his hew deface That being mou'd with ruth she thus bespake. Ah wofull man, what heauens hard disgrace, Or wrath of cruell wight on thee ywrake? Or selfe disliked life doth thee thus wretched make?

If heauen, then none may it redresse or blame, Sith to his powre we all are subject borne: If wrathfull wight, then fowle rebuke and shame Be theirs, that haue so cruell thee forlorne; But if through inward griefe or wilfull scorne Of life it be, then better doe aduise.

For he whose daies in wilfull woe are worne, The grace of his Creator doth despise, That will not vse his gifts for thanklesse nigardise.

When so he heard her say, eftsoones he brake His sodaine silence, which he long had pent, And sighing inly deepe, her thus bespake; Thenhauethey all themselues against me bent: For heauen, first author of my languishment, Enuying my too great felicity,

Did closely with a cruell one consent.
To cloud my daies in dolefull misery,
And make me loath this life, still longing for
to die.

Ne any but your selfe, O dearest dred, [wight Hath done this wrong, to wreake on worthlesse Yourhigh displesure, through misdeeming bred: That when your pleasure is to deeme aright, Ye may redresse, and me restore to light. Which sory words her mightie hart did mate With mild regard, to see his ruefull plight, That her inburning wrath she gan abate, Andhim receiu'd againe to former fauours state.

15

In which he long time afterwards did lead
An happie life with grace and good accord,
Fearlesse of fortunes chaunge or enuies dread,
And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare Lord
The noble Prince, who neuer heard one word
Of tydings, what did vnto him betide,
Or what good fortune did to him afford,
But through the endlesse world did wander wide,
Him seeking euermore, yet no where him
descride.

Till on a day as through that wood he rode,
He chaunst to come where those two Ladies late,

Timilia and Amoret abode

Amylia and Amoret abode,
Both in full sad and sorrowfull estate;
The one right feeble through the cuill rate
Of food, which in her duresse she had found:
The other almost dead and desperate
Through her late hurts, and through that
haplesse wound,

With which the Squire in her defence her sore astound.

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to rew
The cuill case in which those Ladies lay;
But most was moued at the piteous vew
Of Amoret, so neare vnto decay,
That her great daunger did him much dismay.
Eftsoones that pretious liquour forth he drew,
Which he in store about him kept alway,
And with few drops thereof did softly dew
Her wounds, that vnto strength restor'd her
soone anew.

Tho when they both recouered were right well, He gan of them inquire, what euill guide Them thether brought, and how their harmes befell.

To whom they told all, that did them betide, And how from thraldome vile they were vntide Of that same wicked Carle, by Virgins hond; Whose bloudie corse they shew'd him there beside,

Andekehiscaue, in which they both were bond: At which he wondred much, when all those signes he fond.

And euermore he greatly did desire
To know, what Virgin did them thence vnbind;
And oft of them did earnestly inquire,
Where was her won, and how he mote her find.
But when as nought according to his mind
He could outlearne, he them from ground did
reare:

No seruice lothsome to a gentle kind; And on his warlike beast them both did beare, Himselfe by them on foot, to succour them from feare.

21

So when that forrest they had passed well,
A litle cotage farre away they spide,
To which they drew, ere night vpon them fell;
And entring in, found none therein abide,
But one old woman sitting there beside,
Vpon the ground in ragged rude attyre,
With filthy lockes about her scattered wide,
Gnawing her nayles for felnesse and for yre,
And there out sucking venime to her parts
entyre.

A foule and loathly creature sure in sight,
And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse:
For she was stuft with rancour and despight
Vp to the throat, that oft with bitternesse
It forth would breake, and gush in great
excesse,

Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall Gainst all, that truth or vertue doe professe, Whom she with leasings lewdly did miscall, And wickedly backbite: Her name men Sclaunder call.

Her nature is all goodnesse to abuse, And causelesse crimes continually to frame, With which she guiltlesse persons may accuse, Andstealeaway the crowne of their good name; Ne euer Knight so bold, ne euer Dame So chast and loyall liu'd, but she would striue With forged cause them falsely to defame; Ne euer thing so well was doen aliue, But she with blame would blot, and of due

Her words were not, as common words are ment, T'expresse the meaning of the inward mind, But noysome breath, and poysnous spirit sent From inward parts, with cancred malice lind, And breathed forth with blast of bitter wind; Which passing through the eares, would

pierce the hart,

praise depriue.

And wound the soule it selfe with griefe vnkind: For like the stings of Aspes, that kill with smart, Her spightfull words did pricke, and wound the inner part. 27

Such was that Hag, vnmeet to host such guests, Whom greatest Princes court would welcome fayne,

But neede, that answers not to all requests, Bad them not looke for better entertayne; And eke that age despysed nicenesse vaine, Enur'd to hardnesse and to homely fare, Which them to warlike discipline did trayne, And manly limbs endur'd with litle care Against all hard mishaps and fortunelesse misfare.

28

Then all that euening welcommed with cold, And chearelesse hunger, they together spent; Yet found no fault, but that the Hag did scold And rayle at them with grudgefull discontent, For lodging there without her owne consent: Yet they endured all with patience milde, And vnto rest themselues all onely lent, Regardlesse of that queane so base and vilde, To be vniustly blamd, and bitterly reuilde.

20

Here well I weene, when as these rimes be red With misregard, that some rash witted wight, Whose looser thought will lightly be misled. These gentle Ladies will misdeeme too light. For thus conversing with this noble Knight; Sith now of dayes such temperance is rare And hard to finde, that heat of youthfull spright

For ought will from his greedie pleasure spare, More hard for hungry steed t'abstaine from pleasant lare.

20

But antique age yet in the infancic Of time, did liue then like an innocent, In simple truth and blamelesse chastitie, Ne then of guile had made experiment, But voide of vile and treacherous intent, Held vertue for it selfe in soueraine awe: Then loyall loue had royall regiment, And each vnto his lust did make a lawe, From all forbiddenthingshis liking to withdraw.

3

The Lyon there did with the Lambe consort, Aid eke the Doue sate by the Faulcons side, Ne each of other feared fraud or tort, But did in safe securitie abide, Withouten perill of the stronger pride: But when the world woxe old, it woxe warre old

(Whereof it hight) and having shortly tride The traines of wit, in wickednesse woxe bold, And dared of all sinnes the secrets to vnfold.

Then beautie, which was made to represent The great Creatours owne resemblance bright. Vinto abuse of lawlesse lust was lent. And made the baite of bestiall delight: Then faire grew foule, and foule grew faire in sight.

And that which wont to vanguish God and man. Was made the vassall of the victors might: Then did her glorious flowre wex dead and wan. Despisd and troden downe of all that ouerran.

And now it is so vtterly decayd, That any budthereof doth scarse remaine, favd. But if few plants preseru'd through heavenly In Princes Court doe hap to sprout againe, Dew'd with her drops of bountie Soueraine. Which from that goodly glorious flow reproceed, Sprung of the auncient stocke of Princes straine. Now th'onely remnant of that royall breed, Whose noble kind at first was sure of heavenly seed.

The soone as day discouered heavens face To sinfull men with darknes ouerdight, This gentle crew gan from their eye-lids chace The drowzie humour of the dampish night, And did themselues vnto their journey dight. So forth they yode, and forward softly paced, That them to view had bene an vncouth sight; How all the way the Prince on footpace traced, The Ladies both on horse, together fast embraced.

Soone as they thence departed were afore, That shamefull Hag, the slaunder of her sexe, Them follow'd fast, and them reuiled sore, Him calling theefe, them whores; that much did vexe

His noble hart: thereto she did annexe False crimes and facts, such as they never ment, That those two Ladies much asham'ddid wexe: The more did she pursue her lewd intent. And rayl'd and rag'd, till she had all her poyson spent.

At last when they were passed out of sight, Yet she did not her spightfull speach forbeare, But after them did barke, and still backbite, Though there were none her hatefull words to heare:

Like as a curre doth felly bite and teare Thestone, which passed straunger at him threw; So she them seeing past the reach of eare, Against the stones and trees did rayle anew, Till she had duld the sting, which in her tongs end grew.

37 They passing forth kept on their readic way, With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde, Both for great feeblesse, which did oft assay Faire Amoret, that scarcely she could ryde, And eke through heavie armes, which sore annovd

The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare: Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to guyde. And all the way from trotting hard to spare, So was his toyle the more, the more that was his care.

At length they spide, where towards them with

A Squire came gallopping, as he would flie; Bearing a litle Dwarfe before his steed, That all the way full loud for aide did crie, That seem'd his shrikes would rend the brasen skie :

Whom after did a mightie man pursew, Ryding vpon a Dromedare on hie, Of stature huge, and horrible of hew, That would have maz'd a man his dreadfull face to vew.

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie beames, More sharpe then points of needles did proceede, Shooting for the farreaway two flaming streames, Full of sadpowre, that poysonous baledid breede To all, that on him lookt without good heed, And secretly his enemies did slay: Like as the Basiliske of serpents seede, From powrefull eyes close venim doth conuay Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre away.

He all the way did rage at that same Squire, And after him full many threatnings threw. With curses vaine in his auengefull ire: But none of them (so fast away he flew) Him ouertooke, before he came in vew. Where when he saw the Prince in armour bright, He cald to him aloud, his case to rew, And rescue him through succour of his might, From that his cruell foe, that him pursewd in

Eftsoones the Prince tooke downe those Ladies twaine

From loftiesteede, and mounting in their stead Came to that Squire, yet trembling euery vaine: Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread; Who as he gan the same to him aread, Loe hard behind his backe his foe was prest, With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head, That vnto death had doen him vnredrest, Hadnot the noble Prince his readie stroke represt.

Who thrusting boldly twixt him and the blow,
The burden of the deadly brunt did beare
Vpon his shield, which lightly he did throw
Ouer his head, before the harme came neare.
Nathlesse it fell with so despiteous dreare
And heauie sway, that hard vnto his crowne
The shield it droue, and did the couering reare,
Therewith both Squire and dwarfe did tomble
downe

Vnto the earth, and lay long while in senselesse swowne.

Whereat the Prince full wrath, his strong right hand

In full auengement heaued vp on hie, And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand So sore, that to his saddle bow thereby He bowed low, and so a while did lie: And sure had not his massie yron mace Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily, It would haue cleft him to the girding place, Yet as it was, it did astonish him long space.

But when he to himselfe returnd againe,
All full of rage he gan to curse and sweare,
And vow by *Mahoune* that he should be slaine.
With that his murdrous mace he vp did reare,
That seemed nought the souse thereof could
beare,

And therewith smote at him with all his might. But ere that it to him approched neare, The royall child with readie quicke foresight, Did shun the proofe thereof and it auoyded light.

But ere his hand he could recure againe,
To ward his bodie from the balefull stound,
He smote at him with all his might and maine,
So furiously, that ere he wist, he found
His head before him tombling on the ground.
The whileshisbabling tonguedid yet blaspheme
And curse his God, that did him so confound;
The whileshislife ranfoorthin bloudiestreame,
His soule descended downe into the Stygian
reame.

Which when that Squire beheld, he woxe full glad To see his foe breath out his spright in vaine: But that samedwarfe rightsories cem dands ad. And howld aloud to see his Lord there slaine. And rent his haire and scratcht his face for paine.

Then gan the Prince at leasure to inquire
Of all the accident, there hapned plaine,
And what he was, whose eyes did flame with fire;
All which was thus to him declared by that Squire.

This mightie man (quoth he) whom you have slaine,

Of an huge Geauntesse whylome was bred; And by his strength rule to himselfe did gaine Of many Nations into thraldome led, And mightie kingdomes of his force adred; Whom yet he conquer'd not by bloudie fight. Ne hostes of men with banners brode dispred, But by the powre of his infectious sight, With which he killed all, that came within his

With which he killed all, that came within himight.

Ne was he euer vanquished afore,
But euer vanquisht all, with whom he fought;
Ne was there man sostrong, but he downe bore,
Ne woman yet so faire, but he her brought
Vnto his bay, and captiued her thought.
For most of strength and beautie his desire
Wasspoyletomake, and wast them vnto nought,
By casting secret flakes of lustfull fire
From his false eyes, into their harts and parts
entire.

Therefore Corflambo was he cald aright,
Though namelesse there his bodie now dothlie,
Yet hath he left one daughter that is hight
The faire Paana; who seemes outwardly
So faire, as euer yet saw liuing eie:
And were her vertue like her beautie bright,
She were as faire as any vnder skie.
But ah she giuen is to vaine delight,
And eke too loose of life, and eke of loue too
light.

So as it fell there was a gentle Squire,
That lou'd a Ladie of high parentage,
But for his meane degree might not aspire
Tomatchsohigh, her friends with counsell sage,
Dissuaded her from such a disparage.
But she, whose hart to loue was wholly lent,
Out of his hands could not redeeme her gage
But firmely following her first intent,
Resolu'd withhim to wend, gainstall her friends
consent.

So twixt themselues they pointed time and place, To which when he according did repaire, An hard mishap and disauentrous case Him chaunst; in stead of his Æmylia faire This Gyants sonne, that lies there on the laire An headlesse heape, him vnawares there caught,

And all dismayd through mercilesse despaire Himwretched thrall vnto his dongeon brought Where he remaines, of all vnsuccour'd and vnsought.

This Gyants daughter came vpon a day
Vnto the prison in her ioyous glee,
To view the thrals, which there in bondage
lay:

Amongst the rest she chaunced there to see This louely swaine the Squire of low degree; To whom she did her liking lightly cast, And wooed him her paramour to bee: From day to day she woo'd and prayd him fast, And for his loue him promist libertie at last.

5

He though affide vnto a former loue,
To whom his faith he firmely ment to hold,
Yet seeing not how thence he mote remoue,
But by that meanes, which fortune did vnfold,
Her graunted loue, but with affection cold
To win her grace his libertie to get.
Yet she him still detaines in captiue hold,
Fearing least if she should him freely set,
He would her shortly leaue, and former loue
forget.

Yet so much fauour she to him hath hight, Aboue the rest, that he sometimes may space And walke about her gardens of delight, Hauing a keeper still with him in place, Which keeper is this Dwarfe, her dearling base, To whom the keyes of euery prison dore by her committed be, of speciall grace, And at his will may whom he list restore, And whom he list reserve, to be afflicted more.

55

Whereof when tydings came vnto mine eare, Full inly sorie for the feruent zeale, Which I to him as to my soule did beare; I thether went where I did long conceale My selfe, till that the Dwarfe did me reueale, And told his Dame, her Squire of low degree Did secretly out of her prison steale; For me he did mistake that Squire to bee; For neuer two so like did liuing creature see.

-6

Then was I taken and before her brought, Whothrough the likenesse of my outward hew, Being likewise beguiled in her thought, Gan blame me much for being so vntrew, To seeke by flight her fellowship t'eschew, That lou'd me deare, as dearest thing aliue Thence she commaunded me to prison new; Whereof I glad did not gainesay nor striue, But suffred that same Dwarfe me to her dongeon driue.

There did I finde mine onely faithfull frend In heavy plight and sad perplexitie; Whereof I sorie, yet my selfe did bend, Him to recomfort with my companie. But him the more agreeu d I found thereby: For all his ioy, he said, in that distresse Was mine and his Æmylias libertie. Æmylia well he lou'd, as I mote ghesse; Yet greater loue to me then her he did professe.

5

But I with better reason him aufz'd,
And shew'd him how through error and
mis-thought

Of our like persons eath to be disguiz'd, Or his exchange, or freedome might be

wrought.

Whereto full loth was he, ne would for ought Consent, that I who stood all fearelesse free, Should wilfully be into thraldome brought, Till fortune did perforce it so decree.

Yet ouerrul'd at last, he did to me agree.

50

The morrow next about the wonted howre,
The Dwarfe cald at the doore of Amyas,
To come forthwith vnto his Ladics bowre.
In steed of whom forth came I Placidas.
And vndiscerned, forth with him did pas.
There with great ioyance and with gladsome glee,

Of faire Pwana I received was, And oft imbrast, as if that I were hee, And with kind words accoyd, vowing great

loue to mee.

Which I, that was not bent to former loue,
As was my friend, that had her long refusd,
Did well accept, as well it did behoue,
And to the present neede it wisely wsd.
My former hardnesse first I faire excusd;
And after promist large amends to make.
With such smooth termes her error I abusd,
To my friends good, more then for mine owne
sake,

For whose sole libertie I loue and life did stake.

61

Thenceforth I found more fauour at her hand, That to her Dwarfe, which had me in his charge, She bad to lighten my too heauie band, And graunt more scope tome to walke at large. So on a day as by the flowrie marge Of a fresh streame I with that Elfe did play, Finding no meanes how I might vs enlarge, But if that Dwarfe I could with me conuay, I lightly snatcht him vp, and with me bore away.

Thereat he shriekt aloud, that with his cry The Tyrant selfe came forth with velling bray. And me pursew'd: but nathemore would I Forgoe the purchase of my gotten pray, But have perforce him hether brought away. Thus as they talked, loe where nigh at hand Those Ladies two vet doubtfull through dismay In presence came, desirous t'vnderstand Tydings of all, which there had happed on the

Where soone as sad Æmylia did espie Her captive louers friend, young Placidas; All mindlesse of her wonted modestie, She to him ran, and him with streight embras Enfolding said, And lives vet Amvas? He lives (quoth he) and his Æmvlia loves. Then lesse (said she) by all the woe I pas, With which my weaker patience for tune proues. But what mishap thus long him fro my selfe remoues?

64

Then gan he all this storie to renew. And tell the course of his captiuitie: That her deare hart full deepely made to rew. And sigh full sore, to heare the miserie. In which so long he mercilesse did lie. Then after many teares and sorrowes spent. She deare besought the Prince of remedie: Who thereto did with readie will consent, And well perform'd, as shall appeare by his euent.

# Cant. IX.

### 

The Squire of low degree releast Pæana takes to wife: Britomart fightes with many Knights. Prince Arthur stints their strife.

### 

Hard is the doubt, and difficult to deeme, When all three kinds of loue together meet, And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme, Whether shall weigh the balance downe; to weet

The deare affection vnto kindred sweet, Or raging fire of loue to woman kind, Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet. But of them all the band of vertuous mind Me seemes the gentle hart should most assured bind.

For naturall affection soone doth cesse. And quenched is with Cupids greater flame: But faithfull friendship doth them both suppresse.

And them with may string discipline doth tame. Through thoughts aspyring to eternall fame. For as the soule doth rule the earthly masse. And all the service of the bodie frame, So loue of soule doth loue of bodie passe, No lesse then perfect gold surmounts the meanest

All which who list by tryall to assay, Shall in this storie find approved plaine: In which these Squires true friendship more did swav.

Then either care of parents could refraine, Or loue of fairest Ladie could constraine. For though  $P \alpha$  and were as faire as morne. Yet did this trustie Squire with proud disdaine For his friends sake her offred fauours scorne, And she her selfe her syre, of whom she was yborne.

Now after that Prince Arthur graunted had, To yeeld strong succour to that gentle swayne, Who now long time had lyen in prison sad, He gan aduise how best he mote darrayne That enterprize, for greatest glories gayne. That headlesse tyrants tronke he reard from

And having ympt the head to it agayne, Vpon his vsuall beast it firmely bound. And made it so to ride, as it aliue was found.

Then did he take that chaced Squire, and layd Before the ryder, as he captive were, [avd, And made his Dwarfe, though with vnwilling To guide the beast, that did his maister beare. Till to his castle they approched neare. [ward Whom when the watch, that kept continuall Saw comming home; all voide of doubtfull feare, He running downe, the gate to him vnbard; Whom straight the Prince ensuing, in together far'd.

There he did find in her delitious boure The faire Pæana playing on a Rote, Complayning of her cruell Paramoure, And singing all her sorrow to the note, As she had learned readily by rote. That with the sweetnesse of her rare delight, The Prince halfe rapt, began on her to dote: Till better him bethinking of the right, He her vnwares attacht, and captive held by might.

Whence being forth produc'd, when she perceived Her owne deare sire, she cald to him for aide. But when of him no aunswere she received. But saw him sencelesse by the Squire vpstaide, She weened well, that then she was betraide: Then gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waile, And that same Squire of treason to vpbraide. But all in vaine, her plaints might not preuaile, Ne none there was to reskue her, ne none to baile.

Then tooke he that same Dwarfe, and him comfoeld To open vnto him the prison dore, And forth to bring those thrals, which there he held.

Thence forth were brought to him aboue a score Of Knights and Squires to him vnknowneafore: All which he did from bitter bondage free, And vnto former liberty restore.

Amongst the rest, that Squire of low degree Came forth full weake and wan, not like him selfe to bee.

Whom soone as faire Æmylia beheld, And Placidas, they both vnto him ran, And him embracing fast betwixt them held, Striuing to comfort him all that they can, And kissing oft his visage pale and wan. That faire Paana them beholding both, Gan both enuy, and bitterly to ban; Through lealous passion weeping inly wroth, I'o see the sight perforce, that both her eyes were loth.

But when a while they had together beene, And diversly conferred of their case, She, though full oft she both of them had seene sunder, yet not euer in one place,

Began to doubt, when she them saw embrace, Whichwas the captine Squireshelou'dso deare, Deceived through great likenesse of their face, For they so like in person did appeare,

That she vneath discerned, whether whether weare.

And eke the Prince, when as he them auized, Their like resemblaunce much admired there, And mazd how nature had so well disguized Her worke, and counterfet her selfe so nere, As if that by one patterne seene somewhere, She had them made a paragone to be, Or whether it through skill, or errour were. Thus gazing long, at them much wondred he, So did the other knights and Squires, which him did see.

SPENSER

12

Then gan they ransacke that same Castle strong. In which he found great store of hoorded threasure.

The which that tyrant gathered had by wrong And tortious powre, without respect or measure. Vpon all which the Briton Prince made seasure. And afterwards continu'd there a while, To rest him selfe, and solace in soft pleasure Those weaker Ladies after weary toile: To whom he did divide part of his purchast

spoile.

And for more joy, that captive Lady faire The faire Pocana he enlarged free: And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire, To feast and frollicke; nathemore would she Shew gladsome countenaunce nor pleasaunt glee:

But grieued was for losse both of her sire, And eke of Lordship, with both land and fee: But most she touched was with griefe entire, For losse of her new loue, the hope of her desire.

But her the Prince through his well wonted grace To better termes of myldnesse did entreat, From that fowle rudenesse, which did her deface; And that same bitter corsiue, which did eat Her tender heart, and made refraine from meat, He with good the wes and speaches well apply de, Did mollifie, and calme her raging heat. For though she were most faire, and goodly

Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and pride.

And for to shut vp all in friendly loue. Sith love was first the ground of all her griefe, That trusty Squire he wisely well did moue Not to despise that dame, which lou'd him liefe, Till he had made of her some better priefe, But to accept her to his wedded wife. Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe Of all her land and lordship during life: He yeelded, and her tooke; so stinted all their strife.

From that day forth in peace and ioyous blis, They liu'd together long without debate, Ne private iarre, ne spite of enemis Could shake the safe assuraunce of their state. And she whom Nature did so faire create, That she mote match the fairest of her daies, Vet with lewd loues and lust intemperate Had it defaste; thenceforth reformd her waies, That all men much admyrde her change, and spake her praise.

I

Thus when the Prince had perfectly compylde These paires of friends in peace and setled rest, Him selfe, whose minde did trauell as with chylde,

Of his old loue, conceau'd in secret brest, Resolued to pursue his former quest; And taking leaue of all, with him did beare Faire Amorel, whom Fortune by bequest Had left in his protection whileare, Exchanged out of one into an other feare.

15

Feare of her safety did her not constraine,
For well she wist now in a mighty hond,
Her person late in perill, did remaine,
Who able was all daungers to withstond.
But now in feare of shame she more did stond,
Seeing her selfe all soly succourlesse,
Left in the victors powre, like vassall bond;
Whose willher weakenesse could no way represse,
In case his burning lust should breake into
excesse.

But cause of feare sure had she none at all Of him, who goodly learned had of yore The course of loose affection to forstall, And lawlesse lust to rule with reasons lore That all the while he by his side her bore, She was as safe as in a Sanctuary; Thus many miles they two together wore, To seeke their loues dispersed diuersly, Yet neither shewed to other their hearts prinity.

20

Atlength they came, whereas a troupe of Knights They saw together skirmishing, as seemed: Sixe they were all, all full of fell despight, But foure of them the battell best beseemed, That which of them was best, mote not be deemed.

Those foure were they, from whom false Florimell

By Braggadochio lately was redeemed. To weet, sterne Druon, and lewd Claribell, Loue-lauish Blandamour, and lustfull Paridell.

21

Druons delight was all in single life,
And vnto Ladies loue would lend no leasure:
The more was Claribell enraged rife
Withferuent flames, and loued out of measure:
So eke lou'd Blandamour, but yet at pleasure
Would change his liking and new Lemans proue:
But Paridell of loue did make no threasure,
But lusted after all, that him did moue.
So diversly these foure disposed were to love.

22

But those two other which beside them stoode Were Britomart, and gentle Scudamour, Whoall the while beheld their wrathfull moode, And wondred at their impacable stoure, Whose like they neuer saw till that same houre: So dreadfull strokes each did at other driue, And laid on load with all their might and powre As if that euery dint the ghost would riue Out of their wretched corses, and their liues depriue.

As when Dan Eolus in great displeasure,
For losse of his deare loue by Nepune hent,
Sends forth the winds out of his hidden

threasure.

Vpon the sea to wreake his fell intent; They breaking forth with rude vnruliment, From allfoure parts of heauen doe rage full sore, Andtosse the deepes, and teare the firmament, And all the world confound with wide vprore, As if in stead thereof they *Chaos* would restore.

2.1

Cause of their discord, and so fell debate, Was for the loue of that same snowy maid, Whome they had lost in Turneyment of late, Andseeking long, toweet which way she straid. Methere together, where throughlewd vpbraide Of . Ite and Duessa they fell out, And each one taking part in others aide, This cruell conflict raised thereabout, Whose dangerous successed epended yet in dout.

21

For sometimes Paridell and Blandamour
The better had, and bet the others backe,
Eftsoones the others did the field recoure,
And on their foes did worke full cruell wracke:
Yet neither would their fiendlike fury slacke,
But euermore their malice did augment;
Till that vneath they forced were for lacke
Of breath, their raging rigour to relent,
And rest themselues for to recouer spirits spent.

26

There gan they change their sides, and new parts take;

For Paridell did take to Druons side, For old despight, which now forth newly brake Gainst Blandamour, whom alwaies he enuide And Blandamour to Claribell relide. So all afresh gan former fight renew.

As when two Barkes, this caried with the tide. That with the wind, contrary courses sew,

If wind and tide doe change, their courses change anew.

Thenceforth they much more furiously gan fare, As if but then the battell had begonne, Nehelmetsbright, ne hawberks strong didspare, That through the clifts the vermeil bloud out sponne.

And all adowne their riuen sides did ronne.
Such mortall malice, wonder was to see
In friends profest, and so great outrage donne:
But sooth is said, and tride in each degree,
Faint friends when they fall out, most cruell
fomen bee.

2

Thus they long while continued in fight,
Till Scudamour, and that same Briton maide,
By fortune in that place did chance to light:
Whomsooneasthey with wrathfull eie bewraide,
They gan remember of the fowle vpbraide,
The which that Britonesse had to them donne,
In that late Turney for the snowy maide;
Where she had them both shamefully fordonne,
And eke the famous prize of beauty from them
wonne.

29

Eftsoones all burning with a fresh desire Of fell reuenge, in their malicious mood They from them selues gan turne their furious ire.

And cruell blades yet steeming with whot bloud, Against those two let driue, as they were wood: Who wondring much at that so sodaine fit, Yet nought dismayd, them stoutly well withstood;

Ne veelded foote, ne once abacke did flit, But being doubly smitten likewise doubly smit.

30

The warlike Dame was on her part assaid, Of Claribell and Blandamour attone; And Paridell and Druon fiercely laid At Scudamour, both his professed fone. Foure charged two, and two surcharged one; Yet did those two themselues sobrauely beare, That the other litle gained by the lone, But with their owne repayed duely weare, And vsury withall: suchgaine was gotten deare.

31

Full oftentimes did Britomart assay
Tospeake to them, and some emparlance moue;
But they for nought their cruell hands would
stay,

Ne lend an eare to ought, that might behoue, As when an eager mastiffe once doth proue The tast of bloud of some engored beast, No words may rate, nor rigour him remoue From greedy hold of that his blouddy feast: So litle did they hearken to her sweet beheast.

32

Whom when the Briton Prince a farre beheld With ods of so vnequall match opprest, His mighty heart with indignation sweld, And inward grudge fild his heroicke brest: Eftsoones him selfe he to their aide addrest, And thrusting fierce into the thickest preace, Diuided them, how euer loth to rest, And would them faine from battell to surceasse, With gentle words perswading them to friendly peace.

than as forms from

But they so farre from peace or patience were, That all at once at him gan fiercely flie, And lay on load, as they him downe would beare; Like to a storme, which houers vnder skie Long hereand there, and round about doth stic, At length breakes downe in raine, and haile, and sleet,

First from one coast, till nought thereof be drie; And then another, till that likewise fleet; And so from side to side till all the world it weet.

34

But now their ferces greatly were decayd, The Prince yet being fresh vntoucht afore; Who them with speaches milde gan first disswade

From such foule outrage, and them long forbore: Tillseeing them through suffrance hartnedmore, Him selfe he bent their furies to abate, And layd at them so sharpely and so sore, That shortly them compelled to retrate, And being brought in daunger, to relent too late.

35

But now his courage being throughly fired,
He ment to make them know their follies prise,
Had not those two him instantly desired
T'asswage his wrath and pardon their mesprise.
At whose request he gan him selfe aduise
To stay his hand, and of a truce to treat
In milder tearmes, as list them to deuise:
Mongst which the cause of their so cruell heat
He did them aske, who all that passed gan
repeat.

And told at large how that same errant Knight,
To weet faire Britomart, them late had foyled
In open turney, and by wrongfull fight
Both of their publicke praise had them de
spoyled,

And also of their private loves beguyled, Of two full hard to read the harder theft. But she that wrongfull challenge sooneassoyled, And shew'd that she had not that Lady reft. (As they supposed) but her had to her liking left

To whom the Prince thus goodly well replied; Certes sir Knight, ye seemen much to blame, To rip yp wrong, that battell once hath tried; Wherein the honor both of Armes ye shame, And eke the loue of Ladies foule defame; To whom the world this franchise euer yeelded, That of their loues choise they might freedom clame,

And in that right should by all knights be shielded:

Gainst which me seemes this war ye wrongfully haue wielded.

38

And yet (quoth she) a greater wrong remaines: For I thereby my former loue haue lost, Whom seeking euer since with endlesse paines, Hath me much sorrow and much trauell cost; Aye me to see that gentle maide so tost. But Scudamour then sighing deepe, thus saide, Certes her losse ought me to sorrow most, Whose right she is, where euer she be straide, Through many perils wonne, and many fortunes waide.

Jag For from the first that I her lone profest, Vnto this houre, this present lucklesse howre, I neuer loyed happinesse nor rest, But thus turmoild from one to other stowre, I wast my life, and doe my daies denowre In wretched anguishe and incessant woe, Passing the measure of my feeble powre, That liuing thus, a wretch and louing so, I neither can my loue, ne yet my life forgo.

40

Then good sir Claribell him thus bespake, Now were it not sir Scudamour to you Dislikefull paine, so sad a taske to take, Mote we entreat you, sith this gentle crew Is now so well accorded all anew; That as we ride together on our way, Ye will recount to vs in order dew All that aduenture, which ye del assay For that faire Ladies loue: past perils well apay

41

So gan the rest him likewise to require,
But Britomart did him importune hard,
To take on him that paine: whose great desire
He glad to satisfie, him selfe prepar'd
To tell through what misfortune he had far'd,
In that atchieuement, as to him befell.
And all those daungers vnto them declar'd,
Which sith they cannot in this Canto well
Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

### Cant. X.

### 

Scudamour doth his conquest tell,
Of vertuous Amoret:
Great Venus Temple is describ'd,
And louers life forth set.

### 

True he it said, what euer man it sayd,
That loue with gall and hony doth abound,
But if the one be with the other wayd,
For euery dram of hony therein found,
A pound of gall doth ouer it redound.
That I too true by triall haue approued:
For since the day that first with deadly wound
Myheart was kauncht, and learned to haue loues.
I neuer loyed howre, but still with care was
moued.

And yet such grace is given them from aboue, That all the cares and euill which they meet, May nought at all their setled mindes remove, But seeme gainst common sence to them most sweet;

As bosting in their martyrdome vnmeet. So all that euer yet I haue endured, I count as naught, and tread downe vnder feet, Since of my loue at length I rest assured, That to disloyalty she will not be allured.

Long were to tell the trauell and long toile, Through which this shield of loue I late have

And purchased this peerelesse beauties spoile. That harder may be ended, then begonne. But since ye so desire, your will be donne. Then hearke ye gentle knights and Ladies free. My hard mishaps, that ye may learne to shonne;

For though sweet love to conquer glorious bec. Yet is the paine thereof much greater then the fee.

What time the fame of this renowmed prise Flew first abroad, and all mens cares possest. I having armes then taken, gan auise To winne me honour by some noble gest, And purchase me some place amongst the best. I boldly thought (so young mens thoughts are bold)

That this same braue emprize for me did rest. And that both shield and she whom I behold. Might be my lucky lot; sith all by lot we hold .

So on that hard aduenture forth I went, And to the place of perill shortly came. That was a temple faire and auncient, Which of great mother *Venus* bare the name, And farre renowmed through exceeding fame; Much more then that, which was in *Paphos* built.

Or that in *Cyprus*, both long since this same, Though all the pillours of the one were guilt, And all the others pauement were with yuory spilt.

And it was seated in an Island strong,
Abounding all with delices most rare,
And wall'd by nature gainst inuaders wrong,
That none mote haue accesse, nor inward fare.
But by one way, that passage did prepare.
It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize,
With curious Corbes and pendants grauen faire,
And arched all with porches, did arize
On stately pillours, fram'd after the Doricke
guize.

And for defence thereof, on th'other end There reared was a castle faire and strong, That warded all which in or out did word, And flancked both the bridges sides along, Gainst all that would it faine to force or wrong. And therein wonned twenty valiant Knights; All twenty tride in warres experience long; Whose office was, against all manner wights By all meanes to maintaine that castels ancient rights.

Before that Castle was an open plaine, And in the midst thereof a pill r placed; On which this shield, of many sought in vaine, The shield of Loue, whose guerdon me bath graced,

Washangd on high with golden ribbandslaced; And in the marble stone was written this, With golden letters goodly well enchaced, Blessed the man that well can vse his blis: Whose cuer be the shield, faire Amoret be his.

Which when I red, my heart did inly carne, And pant with hope of that aduentures hap: Ne stayed further newes thereof to learne, But with my speare vpon the shield did rap, That all the castle ringed with the clap. Streight forth issewd a Knight all arm'd to thereofe.

And branchy mounted to his most mishap. Who staying nought to question from aloofe, Kan fierce at me, that fire glaunst from his horses hoofe.

10

Whom boldly I encountred (as I could)
And by good fortune shortly him vnseated.
Eftsoones out sprung two more of equal mould:

But I them both with equall hap defeated: So all the twenty I likewise entreated, And left them groning there vpon the plaine Then preacing to the pillour I repeated The read thereof for gurdon of my paine, And taking downe the shield, with me did it retaine.

From the without impediment I past,
Till to the Bridges vtter gate I came:
The which I found sure lockt and chained fast.
I knockt, but no man aunswred me by name;
I cald, but no man answerd to my clame.
Yet I perscuer'd still to knocke and call,
Till at the last I spide within the same,
Whereonestood peeping through a creuissmall,
To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry there withall.

. .

That was to weet the Porter of the place, Vinto whose trust the charge thereof was lent. His name was *Doubt*, that had a double face, Th'one forward looking, th'other backeward bent,

Therein resembling *Ianus* auncient,
Which hath in charge the ingate of the yeare:
And euermore his eyes about him went,
As if some proued perill he did feare,
Or did misdoubt some ill, whose cause did not
appeare.

On th'one side he, on th'other sate *Drlay*, Behinde the gate, that none her might espy Whose manner was all passengers to stay, And entertaine with her occasions sly, Through which somelost great hope vnheedily, Which neuer they recour might againe; And others quite excluded forth, did ly Long languishing there in vnpittied paine, And seeking often entraunce, afterwards in vaine.

Me when as he had privily espide,
Bearing the shield which I had conquerd late,
He kend it streight, and to me opened wide.
So in I past, and streight he closed the gate
But being in, Delay in close awaite
Caught hold on me, and thought my steps to
stay.

Feigning full many a fond excuse to prate, And time to steale, the threasure of mans day, Whose smallest minute lost no riches render may.

But by no meanes my way I would forslow, For ought that euer she could doe or say. But from my lofty steede dismounting low. Past forth on foote, beholding all the way The goodly workes, and stones of rich assay, Cast into sundry shapes by wondrous skill. That like on earth no where I recken may: And vnderneath, the river rolling still With murmure soft, that seem'd to serue the workmans will.

Thence forth I passed to the second gate, The Gate of good desert, whose goodly pride And costly frame, were long here to relate. The same to all stoode alwaies open wide: But in the Porch did euermore abide An hideous Giant, dreadfull to behold, That stopt the entraunce with his spacious

And with the terrour of his countenance bold Full many didaffray, that else faine enter would.

His name was Daunger dreaded over all, Who day and night did watch and duely ward, From fearefull cowards, entrance to forstall, Andfaint-heart-fooles, whom shew of perill hard Could terrifie from Fortunes faire adward: For oftentimes faint hearts at first espiall Of his grim face, were from approaching scard; Vnworthy they of grace, whom one deniall Excludes from fairest hope, withouten further triall.

Yet many doughty warriours, often tride In greater perils to be stout and bold. Durst not the sternnesse of his looke abide. But soone as they his countenance did behold, Began to faint, and feele their corage cold. Againe some other, that in hard assaies Were cowards knowne, and little count did hold. Either through gifts, or guile, or such like waies, Crept in by stouping low, or stealing of the kaies.

But I though meanest man of many moe. Yet much disdaining vnto him to lout, Or creepe betweene his legs, so in to goe. Resolu'd him to assault with manhood stout, And either beat him in, or drive him out. Eftsoones advancing that enchaunted shield, With all my might I gan to lay about: Which when he saw, the glaine which he did wield

So as I entred, I did backeward looke, For feare of harme, that might lie hidden there And loe his hindparts, whereof heed I took. Much more deformed fearefull vgly were, Then all his former parts did earst appere. For hatred, murther, treason, and despight, With many moe lay in ambushment there. Awayting to entrap the warelesse wight, Which did not them preuent with vigilant foresight.

Thus having past all perill, I was come Within the compasse of that Islands space; The which did seeme vnto my simple doome The onely pleasant and delightfull place. That ever troden was of footings trace. For all that nature by her mother wit Could frame in earth, and forme of substance

Was there, and all that nature did omit. Art playing second natures part, supplyed it

No tree, that is of count, in greenewood growes, From lowest Iuniper to Ceder tall, No flowre in field, that daintie odour throwes, And deckes his branch with blossomes over all. But there was planted, or grew naturall: Nor sense of man so cov and curious nice, But there mote find to please it selfe withall. Nor hart could wish for any queint deuice, But there it present was, and did fraile sense entice.

In such luxurious plentie of all pleasure, It seem'd a second paradise to ghesse. So lauishly enricht with natures threasure, That if the happie soules, which doe possesse Th'Elysian fields, and line in lasting blesse, Should happen this with living eye to see, They soone would loath their lesser happinesse. And wish to life return'd againe to bee, That in this loyous place they mote hauc ioyance free.

Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny ray. Faire lawnds, to take the sunne in season dew : Sweet springs, in which a thousand Nymphs did play ;

Softromblingbrookes, that gentleslomber drew-High reared mounts, the lands about to vew: Low looking dales, disloignd from common gaze. Delightfull bowres, to solace louers trew; False Labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze; He gan forthwith t'auale, and way vnto me yield. All which by nature made did nature selfe amaze.

And all without were walkes and alleyes dight With diuers trees, enrang'd in euen rankes; And here and there were pleasant arbors pight, And shadle seates, and sundry flowring bankes. To sit and rest the walkers wearie shankes, And therein thousand payres of louers walkt, Praysing their god, and yeelding him great thankes.

Ne cuer ought but of their true loues talkt, Ne cuer for rebuke or blame of any balkt.

26

All these together by themselues did sport. Their spotlesse pleasures, and sweet loues content.

But farre away from these, another sort Of louers lincked in true harts consent; Which loued not as these, for like intent, But on chast vertue grounded their desire, Earre from all fraud, or fayned blandishment; Which in their spirits kindling zealous fire, Braue thoughts and noble deedes did euermore aspire.

Such were great Hercules, and Hylas deare;
Trew Ionathan, and Dauid trustic tryde;
Stout Theseus, and Pirithous his feare;
Pylides and Orestes by his syde;
Myld Titus and Gesippus without pryde;
Dimonand Pythias whom death could not seuer:
All these and all that euer had bene tyde
In bands of friendship, there did liue for euer,
Whose liues although decay'd, yet loues decayed neuer.

Which when as I, that neuer tasted blis, Nor happie howre, beheld with gazefull eye, Ithought there was none other heaven then this; And gan their endlesse happinesse emuye, That being free from feare and gealosye, Might frankely there their houes desire possesse; Whilest I through paines and perlousicopardic, Was forst to seeke my lifes deare patronesse; Which dearer be the things, which come through hard distresse.

Yet all those sights, and all that else I saw, Might not my steps withhold, but that forthright

Vito that purposd place I did me draw, Where as my loue was lodged day and night: The temple of great Venus, that is hight The Queene of beautie, and of lone the mother. The re worshipped of euery liuing wight; Whose goodly workmanship farrepast allother that euer were on earth, all were they set together.

Not that same famous Temple of *Diane*, Whose hight all *Ephesus* did ouersee, And which all *Asia* sought with vowes prophane, One of the worlds seuen wonders sayd to bee, Might match with this by many a degree: Nor that, which that wise King of *Iurie* framed, With endlesse cost, to be th'Almighties see; Nor all that else through all the world is named To all the heathen Gods, might like to this be clamed.

30

I much admyring that so goodly frame, Vnto the porch approcht, which open stood; But therein sate an amiable Dame, That seem'd to be of very sober mood, Andinhersemblant shewed great womanhood; Strange was her tyre; for on her head a crowne She wore much like vnto a Danisk hood, Poudred with pearleand stone, and allhergowne Enwouen was with gold, that raught full low a downe.

On either side of her, two young men stood, Both strongly arm'd, as fearing one another; Yet were they brethren both of halfe the blood, Begotten by two fathers of one mother, Though of contrarie natures each to other: The one of them hight Loue, the other Hale, Hale was the elder, Loue the younger brother; Yet was the younger stronger in his state Then th'elder, and him maystred still in all debate.

33
Nathlesse that Dame so well them tempred both,
That she them forced hand to loyne in hand,
Albe that Haired was thereto full loth,
And turn'd his face away, as he did stand,
Vnwilling to behold that louely band.
Yet she was of such grace and vertuous might.
That her commaundment he could not with
stand,

But bit his lip for felonous despight, And gnasht his yron tuskes at that displeasing sight.

Concord she eleeped was in common reed, Mother of blessed Peace, and Friendship trew; They both her twins, both borne of heauenly seed,

And she her selfe likewise diuinely grew; The which right well her workes diuine did shew: For strength, and wealth, and happinesse she lends.

And strife, and warre, and anger does subdew:
Of litle much, of foes she maketh frends,
And to afflicted minds sweet rest and quiet
sends.

3.

By her the heauen is in his course contained, And all the world in state vnmoued stands, As their Almightic maker first ordained, And bound them with inuiclable bands; Else would the waters ouerflow the lands, Andfiredeuouretheayre, and hell them quight, But that she holds them with her blessed hands. She is the nourse of pleasure and delight, And vnto Venus grace the gate doth open right.

36

By her I entring halfe dismayed was, But she in gentle wise me entertayned, And twixt her selfe and *Loue* did let me pas; But *Hatred* would my entrance haue restrayned.

And with his club methreat ned to haue brayned. Had not the Ladie with her powrefull speach. Him from his wicked will vneath refrayned; And th'other eke his malice did empeach, Till I was throughly past the perill of his reach.

37

Into the inmost Temple thus I came,
Which fuming all with frankensence I found,
And odours rising from the altars flame.
Vpon an hundred marble pillors round
The roofe vp high was reared from the ground,
All deckt with crownes, and chaynes, and
girlands gay.

And thousand pretious gifts worth many

a pound,

The which sad louers for their vowes did pay; And all the ground was strow'd with flowres, as fresh as May.

An hundred Altars round about were set,
All flaming with their sacrifices fire,
That with the steme thereof the Temple swet,
Which rould in clouds to heauen did aspire,
And in them bore true louers vowes entire:
And eke an hundred brasen caudrons bright,
To bath in ioy and amorous desire,
Euery of which was to a damzell hight;
For all the Priests were damzels, in soft linnen
dight.

Right in the midst the Goddesse selfe did stand Vpon an altar of some costly masse, Whose substance was vneath to vnderstand: For neither pretious stone, nor durefull brasse, Nor shining gold, nor mouldring clay it was; But much more rare and pretious to esteeme, Pure in aspect, and like to christall glasse, Yet glasse was not, if one did rightly deeme, But being faire and brickle, likest glasse did seeme.

But it in shape and beautie did excell

All other Idoles, which the heathen adore, Farre passing that, which by surpassing skill *Phidias* did make in *Paphos* Isle of yore, With which that wretched Greeke, that life

forlore,

Did fall in loue: yet this much fairer shined, But couered with a slender veile afore; And both her feete and legs together twyned Were with a snake, whose head and tail were

fast combyned. 41

The cause why she was couered with a vele, Washard to know, for that her Priests the same From people's knowledge labour'd to concele But sooth it was not sure for womanish shame. Nor any blemish, which the worke mote blame. But for, they say, she hath both kinds in one, Both male and female, both vnder one name She syre and mother is her selfe alone, Begetsand eke conceiues, ne needeth other none.

42

And all about her necke and shoulders flew A flocke of litle loues, and sports, and ioyes, With nimble wings of gold and purple hew; Whose shapes seem'd not like to terrestriall boyes.

But like to Angels playing heatenly toyes; The whilest their eldest brother was away, Cupid their eldest brother; he enjoyes The wile kingdome of lone with Lordly sway, And to his law compels all creatures to obay.

4.3

And all about her altar scatter d lay
Great sorts of louers pitcously complaying,
Some of their losse, some of their loues delay,
Some of their pride, some paragons disclaying,
Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently fayning,
As enery one had cause of good or ill.
Amongst the rest some one through loues

Amongst the rest some one through love constrayning,

Tormented sore, could not containe it still, But thus brake forth, that all the temple it did fill.

Great Venus, Queene of beautie and of grace, The ioy of Gods and men, that vnder skie Doest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy place, That with thy smyling looke doest pacific The raging seas, and makst the stormes to flic: Thee goddesse, thee the winds, the clouds doe feare,

And when thou spredst thy mantle forth on hic. The waters play and pleasant lands appeare. And heauens laugh, and al the world shews loyous cheare.

Then doth the dædale earth throw forth to thee Out of her fruitfull lap aboundant flowres, And then all liuing wights, soone as they see Thespring breakeforth out of his lusty bowres. They all doe learne to play the Paramours; First doe the merry birds, thy prety pages Priuily pricked with thy lustfull powres, Chirpe loud to thee out of their leauy cages, And thee their mother call to coole their kindly rages.

Then doe the saluage beasts begin to play
Their pleasant friskes, and loath their wonted
food;

The Lyons rore, the Tygres loudly bray, The raging Buls rebellow through the wood, And breaking forth, dare tempt the deepest flood.

To come where thou doest draw them with desire:

So all things else, that nourish vitall blood, Soone as with fury thou doest them inspire, In generation seeke to quench their inward fire.

So all the world by thee at first was made, And dayly yet thou doe't the same repayre: Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad, Ne ought on earth that louely is and fayre, But thou the same for pleasure didst prepayre. Thou art the root of all that ioyous is, Great God of menandwomen, queene of th'ayre, Mother of Lughter, and welspring of blisse, Ograunt that of myloue at last I may not misse.

So did he say: but I with murmure soft,
That none might heare the sorrow of my hart,
Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft,
Besought her to graunt ease vnto my smart,
And to my wound her gratious help impart.
Whilest thus I spake, behold with happy eye
I spyde, where at the Idoles feet apart
A benie of fayre damzels close did lye,
Wayting when as the Antheme should be sung
on hye.

The first of them did seeme of ryper yeares, And grauer countenance then all the rest; Yet all the rest were eke her equall peares, Yet vnto her obayed all the best. Her name was Womanhood, that she exprest By her sad semblant and demeanure wyse; For stedfast still her eyes did fixed rest, Ne rov'd at randon after gazers guyse, Whose luring baytes oftimes doe heedlesse harts entyse.

And next to her sate goodly Shamefastnesse, Ne euer durst her eyes from ground vpreare, Ne euer once did looke vp from her desse, As if some blame of euill she did feare, That in her checkes made roses oft appeare. And heragainst sweet Cherefulnesse was placed, Whose eyes like twinkling stars in euening cleare,

50

Were deckt with smyles, that all sad humors chaced,

And darted forth delights, the which her goodly graced.

And next to her sate sober Modestie,
Holding her hand vpon her gentle hart;
And her against sate comely Curtesie,
That vnto euery person knew her part;
And her before was scated ouerthwart
Soft Silence, and submisse Obedience,
Both linckt together neuer to dispart,
Both gifts of God not gotten but from thence,
Both girlonds of his Saints against their foes
offence.

Thus sate they all a round in seemely rate:
And in the midst of them a goodly mayd,
Euen in the lap of Womanhood there sate,
The which was all in lilly white arayd,
With siluer streames amongst the linnen
stray'd;

Like to the Morne, when first her shyning face. Hath to the gloomy world it selfe bewray'd, That same was fayrest Amoret in place, Shyning with beauties light, and heauenly vertues grace.

Whom soone as I beheld, my hart gan throb,
And wade in doubt, what best were to be donne:
For sacrilege me seem'd the Church to rob,
And folly seem'd to leaue the thing vindonne,
Which with so strong attempt I had begonne.
The shaking off all doubt and shamefast feare,
Which Ladies loue I heard had neuer wonne
Mongst men of worth, I to her stepped neare,
And by the lilly hand her labour'd vp to reare.

Thereat that formost matrone me did blame, And sharpe rebuke, for being ouer bold; Saying it was to Knight vnseemely shame, Vpon a recluse Virgin to lay hold, That vnto Venus seruices was sold. To whom I thus, Nay but it fitteth best, For Cupids man with Venus mayd to hold, For ill your goddesse seruices are drest By virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest.

With that my shield I forth to her did show, Which all that while I closely had conceld; On which when Cupid with his killing bow And cruell shafts emblazond she beheld, At sight thereof she was with terror queld, And said no more; but I which all that while

The pledge of faith, her hand engaged held, Like warie Hynd within the weedle soyle, For no intreatie would forgoe so glorious spoyle.

And euermore vpon the Goddesse face
Mine eye was fixt, for feare of her offence,
Whom when I saw with amiable grace
To laugh at me, and fauour my pretence,
I was emboldned with more confidence,
And nought for nicenesse nor for enuy sparing,
In presence of them all forth led her thence,
All looking on, and like astonisht staring,
Yet to lay hand on her, not one of all them
daring.

She often prayd, and often me besought,
Sometime with tender teares to let her goe,
Semetime with witching smyles: but yet for
nought,
That yet the to pre could say or doe

That ever she to me could say or doe, Could she her wished freedome fro me wooc; But forth I led her through the Temple gate,

By which I hardly past with much adoe: But that same Ladie which me friended late In entrance, did me also friend in my retrate.

58

No lesse did Daunger threaten me with dread, When as he saw me, maugre all his powre, That glorious spoyle of beautie with me lead, Then Cerberus, when Orpheus did recoure His Leman from the Stygian Princes boure. But euermore my shield did me defend, Against the storme of euery dreadfull stoure: Thus safely with my loue I thence did wend. So ended he his tale, where I this Canto end.



# Cant. XI.

### 

Marinells former wound is heald, he comes to Proteus hall, Where Thames doth the Medway wedd, and feasts the Sea-gods all.

### 

•

Byt ah for pittie that I haue thus long
Left a fayre Ladie languishing in payne:
Now well away, that I haue doen such wrong
To let faire Flormell in bands remayne,
In bands of loue, and in sad thraldomes chayne;
From which vnlesse some heauenly powre her
By miracle, not yet appearing playne, [free
She lenger yet is like captiu'd to bee:
That cuen to thinke thereof, it inly pitties mee.

2

Here neede you to remember, now erewhile Volouely Proteus, missing to his mind That Virgins loue to win by wit or wile, Her threw into a dongeon deepe and blind, And there in chaynes her cruelly did bind, In hope thereby her to his bent to draw: For when as neither gifts nor graces kind Her constant mind could moue at all he saw, He thought her to compell by crueltie and awe.

3.

Deepe in the bottome of an huge great rocke The dongeon was, in which her bound he left, That neither yron barres, nor brasen locke Did neede to gard from force, or secret theft Of all her louers, which would her haue reft. For wall'd it was with waues, which rag'd and ror'd

As they the cliffe in peeces would have cleft. Besides ten thousand monsters foule abhor'd Did waite about it, gaping griesly all begor'd.

And in the midst thereof did horror dwell,
And darkenesse dredd, that neuer viewed day
Like to the balefull house of lowest hell,
In which old Styx her aged bones alway,
Old Styx the Grandame of the Gods, doth lay.
There did this lucklesse mayd seuen months

Ne cuer euening saw, ne mornings ray, Ne euer from the day the night descride, But thought it all one night, that did no houres divide. .

And all this was for loue of Marinell,
Who her despysd (ah who would her despyse?)
And wemens loue did from his hart expell,
And all those ioyes that weake mankindentyse.
Xathlesse his pride full dearely he did pryse;
For of a womans hand it was ywroke,
That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,
Ne can be cured of that cruell stroke
Which Britomart him gaue, when he did her
prouoke.

Yet farre and neare the Nymph his mother sought.

sought,
And many salues did to his sore applie,
Andmany herbes did vse. But when as nought
She saw could ease his rankling maladie,
At last to Tryphon she for helpe did hie,
(This Tryphon is the seagods surgeon hight)
Whom she besought to find some remedie:
And for his paines a whistle him behight
That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare
delight.

So well that Leach did hearke to her request, And did so well employ his carefull paine, That in short space his hurts he had redrest, And him restor'd to healthfull state againe: In which he long time after did remaine There with the Nymph his mother, like her thrall;

Who sore against his will did him retaine, For feare of perill, which to him mote fall, Through his too ventrous prowesse proued ouer all.

It fortun'd then, a solemne feast was there
To all the Sea-gods and their fruitfull scede,
In honour of the spousalls, which then were
Betwixt the *Medway* and the *Thames* agreed.
Long had the *Thames* (as we in records reed)
Before that day her wooed to his bed;
But the proud Nymph would for no worldly
meed.

Nor no entreatie to his loue be led; Till now at last relenting, she to him was wed.

So both agreed, that this their bridale feast Should for the Gods in *Proteus* house be made; To which they all repayr'd, both most and least, Aswell which in the mightie Ocean trade, As that in rivers swim, or brookes doe wade. All which not if an hundred tongues to tell, And hundred mouthes, and voice of brasse I had.

And endlesse memorie, that mote excell, Inorder as they came, could I recount them well. And sad Asopus, comely with his hoarie head.

Helpe therefore, O thou sacred imp of *loue*, The noursling of Dame *Memorie* his deare, To whom those rolles, layd vp in heauen aboue, And records of antiquitie appeare, To which no wit of man may comen neare:

10

To which no wit of man may comen neare; Helpe me to tell the names of all those floods, And all those Nymphes, which then assembled

To that great banquet of the watry Gods, And all their sundry kinds, and all their hid abodes.

First came great Neptune with his threeforkt mace.

That rules the Seas, and makes them rise or fall;
His dewy lockes did drop with brine apace,
Vnder his Diademe imperiall:
And by his side his Queene with coronall,
Faire Amphitrite, most divinely faire,
Whose yuorie shoulders weren covered all,
As with a robe, with her owne silver haire,
And deckt with pearles, whichth' Indian seas for
her prepaire.

These marched farre afore the other crew;
And all the way before them as they went,
Triton his trompet shrill before them blew,
For goodly triumph and great iollyment,
That made the rockes to roare, as they were
rent.

And after them the royall issue came, Which of them sprung by lineall descent: First the Sea-gods, which to themselues doe

The powre to rule the billowes, and the waves to tame.

Phorcys, the father of that fatall brood,
By whom those old Heroes wonne such fame;
And Glaucus, that wise southsayes understood;
And tragicke Inoes sonne, the which became
A God of seas through his mad mothers blame,
Now hight Palemon, and is saylers frend;
Great Brontes, and Astræus, that did shame
Himselfe with incest of his kin unkend;
Andhuge Orion, that doth tempests still portend.

The rich Cteatus, and Eurytus long;
Neleus and Pelias louely brethren both;
Mightie Chrysaor, and Caicus strong;
Eurypulus, that calmes the waters wroth;
And faire Euphamus, that vpon them goth
As on the ground, without dismay or dread;
Fierce Eryx, and Alebius that know'th
The watersdepth, and doth their bottome tread;
And sad Asopus, comely with his hoarie head.

There also some most famous founders were Of puissant Nations, which the world possest; Yet sonnes of Neptune, now assembled here: Ancient Ogyges, euen th' auncientest, And Inachus renowmd aboue the rest; Phemix, and Aon, and Pelasgus old, Great Belus, Phemax, and Agenor best; And mightie Albion, father of the bold And warlike people, which the Britaine Islands hold.

To Albion the sonne of Neptune was,
Who for the proofe of his great puissance,
Out of his Albion did on dry-foot pas
Into old Gall, that now is cleeped France,
To fight with Hercules, that did advance
To vanquish all the world with matchlesse might.

And there his mortall part by great mischance Was slaine: but that which is th'immortall spright

Liues still: and to this feast with Neptunes seed was dight.

But what doe I their names seeke to reherse, Which all the world haue with their issue fild? How can they all in this so narrow verse Contayned be, and in small compasse hild? Let them record them, that are better skild, And know the moniments of passed times. Onely what needeth, shall be here fulfild, T'expresse some part of that great equipage. Which from great Neptune do deriue their parentage.

Next came the aged *Ocean*, and his Dame, Old *Tethys*, th'oldest two of all the rest, For all the rest of those two parents came, Which afterward both sea and land possest: Of all which *Nereus* th'eldest, and the best. Didfirst proceed, then which none more vpright, Ne more sincere in word and deed profest; Most voide of guile, most free from fowle despight,

Doing him selfe, and teaching others to doe right.

Thereto he was expert in prophecies,
And could the ledden of the Gods vnfold,
Through which, when Paris broughthis famous
The faire Tindarid lasse, he him fortold, [prise
That her all Greece with many a champion bold
Should fetch againe, and finally destroy
Proud Priams towne. So wise is Nereus old,
And so well skild; nathlesse he takes great iov
Oft-times amongst the wanton Nymphs to
sport and toy.

20

And after him the famous rivers came,
Which doe the earth enrich and beautifie:
The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth
frame:

[the skie:

Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from Faire Ister, flowing from the mountaines hie; Diuine Scamander, purpled yet with blood Of Greekes and Trotans, which therein did die; Pactolus glistring with his golden flood, And Tygris fierce, whose streames of none may be withstead.

be withstood.

Great Ganges, and immortall Euphrates, Deepe Indus, and Maander intricate, Slow Peneus, and tempestuous Phasides, Swift Rhene, and Alpheus still immaculate: Ooraxes, feared for great *Cyrus* fate; Tybris, renowmed for the Romaines fame, Rich Oranochy, though but knowen late; Andthat huge Riuer, which doth bearchis name Of warlike Amazons, which doe possesse the

same.

loy on those warlike women, which so long Can from all men so rich a kingdome hold; And shame on you, O men, which boast your strong [and bold.]
And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard Yet quaile in conquest of that land of gold. But this to you, O Britons, most pertaines, To whom the right hereof it selfe hath sold; The which for sparing litle cost or paines, Loose so immortall glory, and so endlesse gaines.

23

Then was there heard a most celestiall sound, Of dainty musicke, which did next ensew Before the spouse: that was Arton crownd: Who playing on his harpe, vnto him drew The eares and hearts of all that goodly crew. That euen yet the Dolphin, which him bore Through the Ægæan seas from Pirates vew, Stood still by him astonisht at his lore, And all the raging seas for ioy forgot to rore.

24

So went he playing on the watery plaine. Sooneafter whom the louely Bridegroome came, The noble Thamis, with all his goodly traine, But him before there went, as best became, His auncient parents, namely th'auncient Thame.

But much more aged was his wife then he, The Ouze, whom men doe Isis rightly name; Full weake and crooked creature seemed shee, And almost blind through eld, that scarce her way could see.

Therefore on either side she was sustained Of two smal grooms, which by their names were hight

The Churne, and Charwell, two small streames, which pained

Them selves her footing to direct aright, Whichfayled oft through faint and feeble plight: But Thame was stronger, and of better stay; Yet seem'd full aged by his outward sight. With head all hoary, and his beard all gray, Deawed with silver drops, that trickled downer alway.

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe afore With bowed backe, by reason of the lode, And auncient heavy burden, which he bore Of that faire City, wherein make abode So many learned impes, that shoote abrode, And with their braunches spred all Britany, No lesse then do her elder sisters broode. loy to you both, ye double noursery Of Arts, but Oxford thine doth *Thame* most

glorify. But he their sonne full fresh and jolly was,

All decked in a robe of watchet hew, On which the waves, glittering like Christall

glas,

So cunningly enwouch were, that few Could weenen, whether they were false or trew. And on his head like to a Coronet He wore, that seemed strange to common vew, In which were many towres and castels set, That it encompast round as with a golden fret.

Like as the mother of the Gods, they say, In her great iron charet wonts to ride, When to *loues* pallace she doth take her way: Old Cybele, arayd with pompous pride, Wearing a Diademe embattild wide With hundred turrets, like a Turribant. With such an one was Thamis beautifide; That was to weet the famous Troynouant, In which her kingdomes throne is chiefly resiant

And round about him many a pretty Page Attended duely, ready to obay; All little Rivers, which owe vassallage To him, as to their Lord, and tribute pay: The chaulky Kenet, and the Thetis gray, The morish Cole, and the soft sliding Breance The wanton Lee, that oft doth loose his way. And the still Darent, in whose waters cleane Ten thousand fishes play, and decke his pleasant streame.

Then came his neighbour flouds, which nigh him dwell. And water all the English soile throughout: They all on him this day attended well; And with meet service waited him about: Ne none disdained low to him to lout: No not the stately Severne grudg'd at all, Ne storming Humber, though he looked stout; But both him honor'd as their principall.

And let their swelling waters low before him fall.

There was the speedy Tamar, which deuides The Cornish and the Deuonish confines; Through both whose borders swiftly downe it glides, fdeclines: And meeting Plim, to Plimmouth thence And Dart, nigh chockt with sands of tinny

But Auon marched in more stately path, Proud of his Adamants, with which he shines And glisters wide, as als' of wondrous Bath, And Bristow faire, which on his waves he

builded hath.

And there came Stoure with terrible aspect, Bearing his sixe deformed heads on hye, That doth his course through Blandford plains direct,

And washeth Winborne meades in season drve. Next him went Wylibourne with passage slye, That of his wylinesse his name doth take, And of him selfe doth name the shire thereby: And Mole, that like a nousling Mole doth make His way still ynder ground, till Thamis he ouertake.

Then came the Rother, decked all with woods Like a wood God, and flowing fast to Rhy: And Sture, that parteth with his pleasant floods The Easterne Saxons from the Southerne ny. And Clare, and Harwitch both doth beautify: Him follow'd Yar, soft washing Norwitch wall, And with him brought a present joyfully Of his owne fish vnto their festivall,

Whose like none else could show, the which they Ruffins call.

Next these the plenteous Ouse came far from land, By many a city, and by many a towne, And many rivers taking vinder hand Into his waters, as he passeth downe, [Rowne. The Cle, the Were, the Grant, the Sture, the Thencedoth by Huntingdon and Cambridge flit, My mother Cambridge, whom as with a Crowne He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it Withmanyagentle Muse, and manya learned wit

And after him the fatall Welland went, That if old sawes proue true (which God forbid) Shall drowne all Holland with his excrement, Andshall see Stamford, though now homely hid, Then shine in learning, more then euer did Cambridge or Oxford, Englands goodly beames. And next to him the Nene downe softly slid : And bounteous Trent, that in himselfe enseames Both thirty sorts of fish, and thirty sundry streames.

Next these came Tyne, along whose stony bancke That Romaine Monarch built a brasen wall, Which mote the feebled Britons strongly flancke Against the Picts, that swarmed ouer all, Which yet thereof Gualseuer they doe call: And Twede the limit betwixt Logris land And Albany: And Eden though but small, Yet often stainde with bloud of many a band Of Scots and English both, that typed on his

strand.

Then came those sixes ad brethren, like for lorne, That whilome were (as antique fathers tell) Sixe valiant Knights, of one faire Nymphe yborne,

Which did in noble deedes of armes excell, And wonned there, where now Yorke people dwell:

StillVre.swiftWerfe, and Ozethemost of might, High Swale, vnquiet Nide, and troublous Skell; All whom a Scythian king, that Humber hight, Slew cruelly, and in the river drowned quight.

But past not long, ere Brutus warlicke sonne Locrinus them aueng'd, and the same date, Which the proud Humber vnto them had donne, By equall dome repayd on his owne pate: For in the selfe same river, where he late Had drenched them, he drowned him againe; And nam'd the river of his wretched fate: Whose bad condition yet it doth retaine, Oft tossed with his stormes, which therein still remaine.

These after, came the stony shallow Lone, That to old Loncaster his name doth lend; And following Dee, which Britons long ygone Did call divine, that doth by Chester tend; And Conway which out of his streame doth send Plenty of pearles to decke his dames withall, And Lindus that his pikes doth most commend, Of which the auncient Lincolne men doe call: All these together marched toward Proteus hall. To doe their duefull service, as to them befell.

Ne thence the Irishe Rivers absent were. Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee, And joyne in neighbourhood of kingdome nere. Why should they not likewise in loue agree. And joy likewise this solemne day to see ? They saw it all, and present were in place; Though I them all according their degree. Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race, Nor read the saluage cuntrels, thorough which they pace.

There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea. The sandy Slane, the stony Aubrian, The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea, The pleasant Boyne, the fishy fruitfull Ban. Swift Awniduff, which of the English man Is cal'de Blacke water, and the Liffar deep, Sad Trowis, that once his people ouerran, Strong Allo tombling from Slewlogher steep, And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught to weep.

And there the three renowmed brethren were, Which that great Gyant Blomius begot, Of the faire Nimph Rheusa wandring there. One day, as she to shunne the season whot, Vnder Slewbloome in shady groue was got, This Gyant found her, and by force deflowr'd, Whereof conceining, she in time forth brought These three faire sons, which being thence forth powrd

In three great rivers ran, and many countreis scowrd.

The first, the gentle Shure that making way By sweet Clonmell, adornes rich Waterford; The next, the stubborne Newre, whose waters

By faire Kilkenny and Rosseponte boord, The third, the goodly Barow, which doth hoord Great heapes of Salmons in his deepe bosome: All which long sundred, doe at last accord To joyne in one, ere to the sea they come, So flowing all from one, all one at last become.

There also was the wide embayed Mayre, The pleasaunt Bandon crownd with many a

The spreading Lee, that like an Island favre Encloseth Corke with his deuided flood; .And balefull Oure, latestaind with English blood: With many more, whose names no tongue can tell. All which that day in order seemly good Did on the Thamis attend, and waited well

Then came the Bride, the louely Medua came, Clad in a vesture of vnknowen geare, And vncouth fashion, yet her well became ; That seem'd like siluer, sprinckled here and

With glittering spangs, that did like starres

appeare,

And wau'd vpon, like water Chamelot, To hide the metall, which yet euery where Bewrayd it selfe, to let men plainely wot, It was no mortall worke, that seem'd and yet was not.

Her goodly lockes adowne her backe did flow Vnto her waste, with flowres bescattered. The which ambrosiall odours forth did throw To all about, and all her shoulders spred As a new spring; and likewise on her hed A Chapelet of sundry flowers she wore. From vnder which the deawy humour shed, Did tricle downe her haire, like to the hore Congealed little drops, which doe the morne adore.

On her two pretty handmaides did attend, One cald the Thesse, the other cald the Crane; Which on her waited, things amisse to mend, And both behind vpheld her spredding traine; Vnder the which, her feet appeared plaine, Her silver feet, faire washt against this day : And her before there paced Pages twaine, Both clad in colours like, and like array, The Doune and eke the Frith, both which prepard her way.

And after these the Sea Nymphs marched all, All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene haire. Whom of their sire Nereides men call, All which the Oceans daughter to him bare The gray eyde Doris: all which fifty are; All which she there on her attending had. Swift Proto, milde Eucrate, Thetis faire, Soft Spio, sweete Eudore, Sao sad, Light Doto, wanton Glauce, and Galene glad.

49 White hand Eunica, proud Dynamene, Ioyous Thalia, goodly Amphitrite. Louely Pasithee, kinde Eulimene, Light foote Cymothoe, and sweete Melite. Fairest Pherusa, Phao lilly white. Wondred Agane, Poris, and Nesaa. With Erato that doth in love delite. And Panopa, and wise Protomedaa. And snowy neckd Doris, and milkewhite Galathera.

Speedy Hippothoe, and chaste Actea, Large Lisianassa, and Pronas sage, Euggore, and light Pontoporea, And she, that with her least word can asswage The surging seas, when they do sorest rage, Cymodoce, and stout Autonoe, And Neso, and Eione well in age, And seeming still to smile, Glauconome, And she that hight of many heastes Polynome.

Fresh Alimeda, deckt with girlond greene; Hyponeo, with salt bedewed wrests Laomedia, like the christall sheene; Liagore, much praisd for wise behests; And Psamathe, for her brode snowy brests; Cymo, Eupompe, and Themiste just; And she that vertue loues and vice detests Euarna, and Menippe true in trust, And Nemertea learned well to rule her lust.

All these the daughters of old Nereus were, Which have the sea in charge to them assinde, To rule his tides, and surges to vprere, To bring forth stormes, or fast them to vpbinde,

And sailers saue from wreckes of wrathfull

And yet besides three thousand more there were Of th'Oceans seede, but loues and Phabus

The which in floods and fountaines doe appere, And all mankinde do nourish with their waters clere.

The which, more eath it were for mortall wight, To tell the sands, or count the starres on hye, Or ought more hard, then thinke to reckon right. But well I wote, that these which I descry, Were present at this great solemnity: And there amongst the rest, the mother was Of luckelesse Marinell Cymodoce. Which, for my Muse her selfe now tyred has Vnto an other Canto I will ouerpas.

# Cant. XII.

### 

Marin for love of Florimell, In languor wastes his life: The Nymph his mother getteth her, And gives to him for wife.

### 

O what an endlesse worke haue I in hand, To count the seas abundant progeny, Whose fruitfull seede farre passeth those in

And also those which wonne in th'azure sky? For much more eath to tell the starres on hy, Albe they endlesse seeme in estimation, Then to recount the Seas posterity: So fertile be the flouds in generation, So huge their numbers, and so numberlesse their nation.

Therefore the antique wisards well invented, That Venus of the formy sea was bred; For that the seas by her are most augmented. Witnesse th'exceeding fry, which there are fed, And wondrous sholes, which may of none be red. Then blame me not, if I have err'd in count Of Gods, of Nymphs, of rivers yet vared: For though their numbers do much more sur-

Yet all those same were there, which erst I did recount.

All those were there, and many other more, Whose names and nations were too long to tell, That Proteus house they fild even to the dore; Yet were they all in order, as befell, According their degrees disposed well. Amongst the rest, was faire Cymodoce, The mother of vulucky Marmell, Who thither with her came, to learne and see Themanner of the Gods when they at banquet be.

But for he was halfe mortall, being bred Of mortall sire, though of immortall wombe, He might not with immortall food be fed, Ne with th'eternall Gods to bancket come: But walkt abrode, and round about did rome, To view the building of that vncouth place, That seem'd vnlike vnto his earthly home: Where, as he to and fro by chaunce did trace, There vnto him betid a disauentrous case.

Vnder the hanging of an hideous clieffe. He heard the lamentable voice of one. That piteously complaind her carefull grieffe. Which neuer she before disclosd to none, But to her selfe her sorrow did bemone. So feelingly her case she did complaine, That ruth it moued in the rocky stone. And made it seeme to feele her grieuous paine. And oft to grone with billowes beating from the maine.

Though vaine I see my sorrowes to vnfold, And count my cares, when none is night o heare, Yet hoping griefe may lessen being told, I will them tell though vnto no man neare: For heaven that vnto all lends equal eare. Is farre from hearing of my heavy plight; And lowest hell, to which I lie most neare, Cares not what eails hap to wretched wight; And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life delight.

Yet loe the seas I see by often beating, Doe pearce the rockes, and hardest marble

But his hard rocky hart for no entreating Will yeeld, but when my piteous plaints he

Is hardned more with my aboundant teares. Yet though he neuer list to me relent, But let me waste in woe my wretched yeares, Yet will I neuer of my loue repent, But joy that for his sake I suffer prisonment.

And when my weary ghost with griefe outworne, By timely death shall winne her wished rest, Let then this plaint vnto his eares be borne, That blame it is to him, that armes profest, To let her die, whom he might haue redrest. There did she pause, inforced to give place Vnto the passion, that her heart opprest, And after she had wept and wail'd a space, She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched case.

Ye Gods of seas, if any Gods at all Haue care of right, or ruth of wretches wrong, By one or other way me wo full thrall, Deliuer hence out of this dungeon strong. In which I daily dying am too long. And if ye deeme me death for louing one, That loues not me, then doe it not prolong, But let me die and end my daies attone, And let him liue vnlou'd, or loue him selfe alone.

But if that life ye vnto me decree,
Then let mee liue, as louers ought to do,
And of my lifes deare loue beloued be:
Andifhe shall through pride your doome vndo,
Do you by duresse him compell thereto,
And in this prison put him here with me:
One prison fittest is to hold vs two:
So had I rather to be thrall, then free;
Such thraldome or such freedome let it surely be.

11

But O vaine judgement, and conditions vaine, The which the prisoner points vnto the free, The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his paine,

He where he list goes loose, and laughes at me. So euer loose, so euer happy be. But where so loose or happy that thou art, Know Marinell that all this is for thee. With that she wept and wail'd, as if her hart Would quite haue burst through great abundance of her smart.

12

All which complaint when Marinell had heard, And vnderstood the cause of all her care To come of him, for vsing her so hard, His stubborne heart, that neuer felt misfare Was toucht with soft remorse and pitty rare; That euen for griefe of minde he oft did grone, And inly wish, that in his powre it weare Hertoredresse; but since he meanes found none He could no more but her great miscry bemone.

13

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender ruth Was toucht, and mighty courage mollifide, Dame Venussonnethat tameth stubborneyouth With iron bit, and maketh him abide, Till like a victor on his backe he ride, Into his mouth his maystring bridle threw, That madehim stoupe, till he did him bestride: Then gan he make him tread his steps anew, And karne to loue, by learning louers paines to rew.

Now gan he in his grieued minde deuise, How from that dungeon he might her enlarge: Some while he thought, by faire and humble

To *Proteus* selfe to sue for her discharge: But then he fear'd his mothers former charge Gainst womens loue, long giuen him in vaine. Then gan he thinke, perforce with sword and targe

Her forth to fetch, and *Proteus* to constraine: But soone he gan such folly to forthinke againe.

15

Then did he cast to steale her thence away,
And with him beare, where none of her might
know.

But all in vaine: for why he found no way
To enter in, or issue forth below:
For all about that rocke the sea did flow.
And though vnto his will she giuen were,
Yet without ship or bote her thence to row,
He wist not how her thence away to bere;
And daunger well he wist long to continue there.

.6

At last when as no meanes he could inuent, Backe to him selfe he gan returne the blame, That was the author of her punishment; And with vile curses, and reprochfull shame To danne him selfe by cuery cuill name; And deeme vnworthy or of loue or life That had despisde so chast and faire a dame, Which him had sought through trouble and long strife:

Yet had refusde a God that her had sought to wife

12

In this sad plight he walked here and there, And romed round about the rocke in vaine, As he had lost him selfe, he wist not where; Oft listening if he mote her heare againe; And still bemoning her vnworthy paine. Like as an Hynde whose calfe is falne vnwares Into some pit, where she him hearescomplaine, An hundred times about the pit side fares, Right sorrowfully mourning her bereaued cares.

18

And now by this the feast was throughly ended, And every one gan homeward to resort. Which seeing Marinell, was sore offended, That his departure thence should be so short, And leave his love in that sea-walled fort. Yet durst he not his mother disobay, But her attending in full seemly sort, Did march amongst the many all the way: And all the way did inly mourne, like one astray.

19

Being returned to his mothers bowre,
In solitary silence far from wight,
He gan record the lamentable stowre,
In which his wretched lone lay day and night,
For his deare sake, that ill deseru'd that plight:
The thought whereof empiers this hartso deepe,
That of no worldly thing he tooke delight;
Ne dayly food did take, ne nightly sleepe,
But pyn'd, and mourn'd, and languisht, and
alone did weepe.

That in short space his wonted chearefull hew Gan fade, and liuely spirits deaded quight: Hischeeke bones raw, and cie-pits hollow grew, And brawneyarmeshadlost their knowen might. That nothing like himselfe he seem d in sight. Ere long so weake of limbe, and sicke of loue He woxe, that lenger he note stand vpright, But to his bed was brought, and layd aboue, Like ruefullghost, vnable once to stirre or moue.

21

Which when his mother saw, she in her mind Was troubled sore, ne wist well what to weene, Ne could by search nor any meanes out find The secret cause and nature of his teene, Whereby she might apply some medicine; But weeping day and night, did him attend, And mourn'd to see her losse before her eyne, Which grieu'd her more, that she it could not mend:

Toseean helpelesse euill, double griefe dothlend.

•

Nought could she read the roote of his disease, Ne weene what mister maladie it is, Whereby to seeke some meanes it to appease. Mostdidshethinke, but most she thought amis, That that same former fatall wound of his Whyleare by Tryphon was not throughly healed, But closely rankled under th'orifis: Least did she thinke, that which he most concealed,

That loue it was, which in his hart lay vnreuealed.

renealed.

Therefore to Tryphon she againe doth hast, And him doth chyde as false and traudulent, Thatfayld thetrust, which she in him had plast, To cure her sonne, as he his faith had lent: Who now was falne into new languishment Of his old hurt, which was not throughly cured. So backe he came vnto her patient, Where searching euery part, her well assured,

Where searching every part, her well assured, That it was no old sore, which his new paine procured.

But that it was some other maladie,
Orgriefevnknowne, which he could not discerne.
So left he her withouten remedie. [earne,
Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and
And inly troubled was, the truth to learne.
Vnto himselfe she came, and him besought,
Now with faire speches, now with threatnings
sterne,

If ought lay hidden in his grieued thought, It to reueale: who still her answered, there was nought. 25

Nathlesse she rested not so satisfide,
But leauing watry gods, as booting nought,
Vnto the shinie heauen in haste she hide,
And thence Apollo King of Leaches brought
Apollo came; who soone as he had sought
Through his disease, did by and by out find,
That he did languish of some inward thought,
The which afflicted his engrieued mind;
Which loue he red to be, that leads each liuing
kind.

26

Which when he had vnto his mother told, She gan thereat to fret, and greatly grieue. And comming to her sonne, gan first to scold, And chyde at him, that made her misbelieue: But afterwards she gan him soft to shrieue, And wooe with faire intreatie, to disclose, Which of the Nymphes his heart so sore did mieue.

For sure she weend it was some one of those, Which he had lately seene, that for his loue he chose.

2

Now lesse she feared that same fatall read, That warned him of womens loue beware: Which being ment of mortall creatures sead. For loue of Nymphes she thought she need not care,

But promist him, what euer wight she weare. That she her loue to him would shortly gaine. So he her told: but soone as she did heare That Florimell it was, which wrought his paine. She gan a fresh to chafe, and grieue in euerwaine.

28

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie, In which his life valuckily was layd, It was no time to scan the prophecie, Whether old *Proteus* true or false had sayd, That his decay should happen by a mayd. It's late in death of daunger to aduize, Or loue forbid him, that is life denayd: But rather gan in troubled mind deuize, How she that Ladies libertie might enterprize

20

To Proteus selfe to sew she thought it vaine, Who was the root and worker of her woe: Nor vnto any meaner to complaine, But vnto great king Neptune selfe did goe, And on her knee before him falling lowe, Made humble suit vnto his Maiestie, To graunt to her, her sonnes life, which his foe A cruell Tyrant had presumpteouslie By wicked doome condenn'd, a wretched death to die.

.

To whom God Neptune softly smyling, thus; Daughter me seemes of double wrong ye plaine, Gainst one that hath both wronged you, and vs: For death t'adward I ween'd did appertaine To none, but to the seas sole Soueraine.

Read therefore who it is, which this hath wrought,

And for what cause; the truth discouer plaine. For neuer wight so euill did or thought, But would some rightfull cause pretend, though rightly nought.

31

To whom she answerd, Then it is by name *Proteus*, that hath ordayn'd my sonne to die; For that a waift, the which by fortune came Vpon your seas, he claym'd as propertie: And yet nor his, nor his in equitie, But yours the waift by high prerogatiue. Therefore I humbly craue your Maiestie, It to repleuie, and my sonne repriue: So shall you by one gift saue all vs three aliue.

He graunted it: and streight his warrant made.

Vinder the Sea-gods seale autenticall, Commaunding Proteus straight t'enlarge the mayd, Who h wandring on his seas imperiall, He lately tooke, and sithence kept as thrall. Which shereceiving with meete thankefulnesse, Departed straight to Proteus therewithall: Who reading it with inward loathfulnesse, Was grieued to restore the pledge, he did rossesse.

Yet durst he not the warrant to withstand, But vnto her deliuered Florimell. Whom she receiuing by the hilly hand, Admyr'd her beautie much, as she mote well:

For she all liuing creatures did excell; And was right ioyous, that she gotten had So faire a wife for her sonne *Marinell*. So home with her she streight the virgin lad, And shewed her to him, then being sore bestad.

Who soone as he beheld that angels face, Adorn'd with all dinine perfection, Ilis cheared heart eftsoones away gan chace Sad death, reuiued with her sweet inspection, And feeble spirit inly felt refection; As withered weed through cruell winters tine, That feeles the warmth of sunny beames reflection.

Liftes vp his head, that did before decline And gins to spread his leafe before the faire sunshine.

Right so himselfe did Marinell vpreare,
When he in place his dearest loue did spy;
And though his limbs could not his bodie
beare,

Ne former strength returne so suddenly, Yet chearefull signes he shewed outwardly. Ne lesse was she in secret hart affected, But that she masked it with modestie, For feare she should of lightnesse be detected: Which to another place I leaue to be perfected.



# THE FIFTH

# BOOKE OF THE

FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning,

# THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL

OR OF IVSTICE.

So oft as I with state of present time,

The image of the antique world compare, When as mans age was in his freshest prime, And the first blossome of faire vertue bare, Such oldes I finde twixt those, and these which are.

As that, through long continuance of his course, Me seemes the world is runne quite out of square,

From the first point of his appointed sourse, And being once amisse growes daily wourse and wourse.

For from the golden age, that first was named, It's now at earst become a stonie one; And men themselues, the which at first were framed

Of earthly mould, and form'd of flesh and bone, Are now transformed into hardest stone: Such as behind their backs (so backward bred) Were throwne by Pyrrha and Deucalione: And if then those may any worse be red, They into that ere long will be degendered.

Let none then blame me, if in discipline
Of vertue and of ciuill vscs lore,
I doe not forme them to the common line
Of present dayes, which are corrupted sore,
But to the antique vse, which was of yore,
When good was onely for it selfe desyred,
And all men sought their owne, and none no

When Iustice was not for most meed outhyred. But simple Truth did rayne, and was of all admyred.

For that which all men then did vertue call, Is now cald vice; and that which vice was hight,

Is now hight vertue, and so vs'd of all: Right now is wrong, and wrong that was is right.

As all things else in time are chaunged quight. Ne wonder; for the heauens revolution Is wandred farre from where it first was pight, And so doe make contrarie constitution Of all this lower world, toward his dissolution.

. 5

For who so list into the heavens looke,

And search the courses of the rowling spheares, Shall find that from the point, where they first tooke

Their setting forth, in these few thousand yeares
They all are wandred much; that plaine
appeares.

For that same golden fleecy Ram, which bore Phrixus and Helle from their stepdames feares, Hath now forgot, where he was plast of yore, And shouldred hath the Bull, which layre Europa bore.

And eke the Bull hath with his bow-bent horne So hardly butted those two twinnes of lone, That they haue crusht the Crab, and quite him Into the great Nemæan lions groue. [borne So now all range, and doe at randon roue Out of their proper places farre away, And all this world with them amisse doe moue, And all his creatures from their course astray, Till they arrue at their last ruinous decay.

Ne is that same great glorious lumpe of light,
That doth enlumine all these lesser fyres,
In better case, ne keepes his course more right.
But is miscarred with the other Spheres.
For since the terme of fourteene hundred yeres,
That learned Ptotomæ his hight did take,
He is deelyned from that marke of theirs,
Nigh thirtie minutes to the Southerne lake;
That makes me feare in time he will vs quite
forsake.

And if to those Ægyptian wisards old, WhichinStar-readwer wonthauebestinsight, Faith may be ginen, it is by them told, That since the time they first tooke the Sunnes hight.

Foure times his place he shifted hath in sight, And twice hath risen, where he now doth West, And wested twice, where he ought rise aright But most is Mars amisse of all the rest, And next to him old Saturne, that was wont b best.

For during Salarnes and intraigne it's sayd, That all the world with goodnesse did abound: All loued vertue, no man was affrayd Of force, ne fraud in wight was to be found: No warre was knowne, no dreadfull trompets

sound,
Peace vniuersallrayn'd mongst men and beasts.
And all things freely grew out of the ground:
Iustice sate high ador'd with solemne feasts,
And to all people did dinide her dred beheasts.

10

Most sacred vertue she of all the rest,
Resembling God in his imperiall might;
Whose soueraine powre is herein most exprest,
That both to good and bad he dealeth right,
And all his workes with Iustice hath bedight.
That powre he also doth to Princes lend,
And makes them like himselfe in glorious sight,
To sit in his owne seate, his cause to end,
And rule his people right, as he doth recommend.

11

Dread Soucrayne Goddesse, that does thighest sit. In scate of judgement, in th'Almighties stead, And with magnificke might and wondrous wit. Doest to thy people righteous doome aread, That furthest Nations filles with awfull dread, Pardon the boldnesse of thy basest thrall, That dare discourse of so diuine a read, As thy great justice praysed over all: The instrument whereof loc here thy Artegall.

## Cant. I.

### contrate the tree to the contrate the contra

Artegall trayn'd in Iustice lore Irenaes quest pursewed, He doeth auenge on Sanglier his I adies bloud embrewed.

### \_cacacacacacacacacacacacacacacacacac

1

Though vertue then were held in highest price, In those old times, of which I doe intreat, Yet then likewise the wicked seede of vice Began to spring which shortly grew full great, And with their boughes the gentle plants did beat.

But enermore some of the vertuous race Rose vp, inspired with heroicke heat, That cropt the branches of the sient base, And with strong hand their fruitfull rancknes did deface.

Such first was Bacchus, that with furious might All th'East before vntam'd did ouerronne, And wrong repressed, and establisht right, Which lawlesse men had formerly fordonne. There Iustice first her princely rule begonne. Next Hercules his like ensample shewed, Who all the West with equall conquest wonne, And monstrous tyrants with his clubsubdewed; The club of lustice dread, with kingly powre endewed.

And such was he, of whom I haue to tell,
The Champion of true Iustice Artegall,
Whom (as ye lately mote remember well)
An hard aduenture, which did then befall,
Into redoubted perill forth did call;
That was to succour a distressed Dame,
Whom a strong tyrant did vniustly thrall,
And from the heritage, which she did clame,
Did with strong hand withhold: Grantorto was
his name.

Wherefore the Lady, which Irena hight,
Did to the Facry Queene her way addresse,
To whom complayning her afflicted plight,
She her besought of gratious redresse.
That soueraine Queene, that mightie Em-

Whose glorie is to aide all suppliants pore, And of weake Princes to be Patronesse, Chose Artegall to right her to restore; For that to her he seem'd best skild in righteous lore.

For Artegall in iustice was vpbrought
Euen from the cradle of his infancie,
Andallthedepth of rightfull doome was taught
By faire Astræa, with great industrie,
Whilest here on earth she liued mortallie.
For till the world from his perfection fell
Into all filth and foule iniquitie,
Astræa here mongst earthly men did dwell,
And in the rules of iustice them instructed well.

Whiles through the world she walked in this sort.
Vpon a day she found this gentle childe,
Amongst his peres playing his childish sport:
Whom seeing fit, and with no crime defilde,
She did allure with gifts and speaches milde,
To wend with her. So thence him farre she
Into a caue from companie exilde, [brought
In which she nours led him, till yeares he raught,
And all the discipline of iustice there him taught.

There she him taught to weigh both right and wrong
In equall ballance with due recompence,
And equitie to measure out along,
According to the line of conscience,
When so it needs with rigour to dispence.
Of all the which, for want there of mankind,
She caused him to make experience
Vpon wyld beasts, which she in woods did find,
With wrongfull powre oppressing others of
their kind.

Thus she him trayned, and thus she him taugh. In all the skill of deeming wrong and right. Vntill the ripenesse of mans yeares he raught. That euen wildebeasts did feare his awfull sight. And men admyr'd l.is ouerruling might; Ne any liu'd on ground, that durst withstarthis dreadfull heast, much lesse him match in fight,

Or bide the horror of his wreakfull hand, When so he list in wrath lift vp his steely brand

Which steely brand, to make him dreaded more. She gaue vnto him, gotten by her slight And earnest search, where it was kept in stor In Ioues eternall house, vnwist of wight, Since he himselfe it vs'd in that great fight Against the Titans, that whylome rebelled Gainst highest heauen; Chrysaor it was hight. Chrysaor that all other swords excelled, Well prou'd in that same day, when Ioue those Gyants quelled.

For of most perfect metall it was made,
Tempred with Adamant amongst the same,
And garnisht all with gold ypon the blade
In goodly wise, whereof it tooke his name,
And was of no lesse vertue, then of fame.
For there no substance was so firme and hard,
But it would pierce or cleaue, where so it came.
Ne any armour could his dint out ward,
But wheresoeuer it did light, it throughly shard.

Now when the world with sinne gan to abound.

Astroa loathing lenger here to space

Mongstwickedmen,in whomnotruthshefound.

Return'd to heauen, whence she deriu'd hearace:

Where she hath now an euerlasting place, Mongst those twelue signes, which nightly we doe see [chace: The heauens bright-shining baudricke to en-And is the Virgn, sixt in her degree, And next her selfe her right-gue bellege beau.

And next her selfe her righteous ballance hanging bee.

But when she parted hence, she left her groome An yron man, which did on her attend Alwayes, to execute her stedfast doome, And willed him with *Artegall* to wend, And doe what euer thing he did intend. His name was *Talus*, made of yron mould, Immoueable, resistlesse, without end. Who in his hand an yron flale did hould, With which he thresht out falshood, and did truth vnfould.

He now went with him in this new inquest. Him for to aide, if aide he chaunst to neede, Against that cruell Tyrant, which opprest The faire Irena with his foule misdeede, And kept the crowne in which she should succeed.

And now together on their way they bin, When as they saw a Squire in squallid weed, Lamenting sore his sorowfull sad tyne, With many bitter teares shed from his blubbred eyne.

To whom as they approched, they espide A sorie sight, as euer seene with eye; An headlesse Ladie lying him beside, In her owne blood all wallow'd wofully, That her gay clothes did in discolour die. Much was he moued at that ruefull sight; And flam'd with zeale of vengeance inwardly, He askt, who had that Dame so fouly dight; Or whether his owne hand, or whether other wight?

Ah woe is me, and well away (quoth hee) Bursting forth teares, likesprings out of a banke, That euer I this dismall day did see: Full farre was I from thinking such a pranke; Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke, If I should graunt that I have doen the same, That I motedrinke the cup, whereof she dranke: But that I should die guiltie of the blame, The which another did, who now is fled with shame.

Who was it then (sayd Artegall) that wrought? And why? doe it declare vnto me trew. A knight (said he) if knight he may be thought, That did his hand in Ladies bloud embrew, And for no cause, but as I shall you show. This day as I in solace sate hereby With a fayre loue, whose losse I now do rew, There came this knight, having in companie This lucklesse Ladie, which now here doth headlesse lie.

He, whether mine seem'd favrer in his eye, Or that he wexed weary of his owne, Would change with me; but I did it denye; So did the Ladies both, as may be knowne, But he, whose spirit was with pride vpblowne, Would not so rest contented with his right, Buthauing from his courser her downe throwne, Fro me reft mine away by lawlesse might, And on his steed her set, to beare her out of sight.

۲R

Which when his Ladie saw, she follow'd fast, And on him catching hold, gan loud to crie Not so to leave her, nor away to cast. But rather of his hand besought to die. With that his sword he drew all wrathfully. And at one stroke cropt off her head with scorne. In that same place, whereas it now doth lie. So he my loue away with him hath borne. And left me here, both his and mine own love to morne.

Aread (sayd he) which way then did he make? And by what markes may he be knowne againe? To hope (quoth he) him soone to ouertake, That hence so long departed, is but vaine: But yet he pricked over yonder plaine, And as I marked, bore vpon his shield, By which it's casie him to know againe, A broken sword within a bloodic field: Expressing well his nature, which the same did wield.

No sooner sayd, but streight he after sent His yron page, who him pursew'd so light, As that it seem'd about the ground he went: For he was swift as swallow in her flight. And strong as Lyon in his Lordly might. It was not long, before he overtooke Sir Sanglier; (so eleeped was that Knight) Whom at the first he ghessed by his looke, And by the other markes, which of his shield he tooke.

He bad him stay, and backe with him retire; Who full of scorne to be commaunded so, The Lady to alight did eft require. Whilest he reformed that vncivill fo: And streight at him with all his force did go. Who mou'd no more therewith, then when a rocke

Is lightly stricken with some stones throw: But to him leaping, lent him such a knocke, That on the ground he layd him like a sencelesse blocke.

But ere he could him selfe recure againe, Him in his iron paw he seized had; That when he wak't out of his warelesse paine. He found him selfe, vnwist, so ill bestad, That lim he could not wag. Thence he him lad, Bound like a beast appointed to the stall: The sight whereof the Lady sore adrad, And fain'd to fly for feare of being thrall: But he her quickly stayd, and forst to wend withall.

When to the place they came, where Artegall By that same carefull Squire did then abide, He gently gan him to demaund of all, That did betwixt him and that Squire betide. Who with sterne countenance and indignant pride

Did aunswere, that of all he guiltlesse stood, And his accuser thereuppon defide: For neither he did shed that Ladies bloud, Nor tooke away his loue, but his owne proper

good.

2

Well did the Squire perceive himselfe too weake, To aunswere his defiaunce in the field, And rather chose his challenge off to breake, Then to approue his right with spearcand shield. And rather guilty chose him selfe to yield. But Artegall by signes perceiving plaine, That he it was not, which that Lady kild, But that strange Knight, the fairer love to gaine,

Did cast about by sleight the truth thereout to

straine.

And sayd, Now sure this doubtfull causes right Can hardly but by Sacrament be tride, Or else by ordele, or by blooddy fight; That ill perhaps mote fall to either side. But if ye please, that I your cause decide, Perhaps I may all further quarrell end, So ye will sweare my indgement to abide. Thereto they both did franckly condiscend, And to his doome with listfull cares did both attend.

Sith then (sayd he) ye both the dead deny,
And both the liuing Lady claime your right,
Let both the dead and liuing equally
Deuided be betwixt you here in sight,
And each of either take his share aright.
But looke who does dissent from this my read,
He for a twelue moneths day shall in despight
Beare for his penaunce that same Ladies head;
To witnesse to the world, that she by him is
dead.

Well pleased with that doome was Sangliere, And offred streight the Lady to be slaine. But that same Squire, to whom she was more dere,

When as he saw she should be cut in twaine, Did yield, she rather should with him remaine Aliue, then to him selfe be shared dead; And rather then his loue should suffer paine, He chose with shame to beare that Ladies head. True loue despiseth shame, when life is cald in drad.

28

Whom when so willing Artegall perceaued; Not so thou Squire, (he sayd) but thine I deeme The liuing Lady, which from thee he reaued: For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme. And you, Sir Knight, that loue so light esteeme.

As that ye would for little leaue the same, Take here your owne, that doth you best

beseeme,
And with it beare the burden of defame;
Your owne dead Ladies head, to tell abrode
your shame.

But Sangliere disdained much his doome, And sternly gan repine at his beheast; Ne would for ought obay, as did become, To beare that Ladies head before his breast. Vntill that Talus had his pride represt, And forced him, maulgre, it vp to reare. Who when he saw it bootelesse to resist, He tooke it vp, and thence with him did beart, As rated Spaniell takes his burden vp for feare

Much did that Squire Sir Artegall adore,
For his great justice, held in high regard;
And as his Squire him offred euermore
To serue, for want of other meete reward,
And wend with him on his aduenture hard.
But he thereto would by no meanes consent;
But leauing him forth on his journey far'd:
Ne wight with him but onely Talus went.
They two enough t'encounter an whole Regiment.

# Cant. II.

### 

Artegall heares of Florimell,
Does with the Pagan fight:
Him slaies, drownes Lady Munera,
Does race her castle quight.

### 

Nought is more honorable to a knight.

Nought is more nonorable to a knight,
Ne better doth besceme braue cheualty,
Then to defend the feeble in their right,
And wrong redresse in such as wend awry.
Whilome those great Heroes got thereby
Their greatest glory, for their rightfull deedes,
And place deserved with the Gods on hy.
Herein the noblesse of this knight exceedes,
Who now to perils great for justice sake proceedes.

To which as he now was vppon the way, He chaunst to meet a Dwarfe in hasty course; Whom he requir'd his forward hast to stay, Till he of tidings mote with him discourse. Loth was the Dwarfe, yet did he stay perforse, And gan of sundry newes his store to tell, As to his memory they had recourse: But chiefely of the fairest Florimell, How she was found againe, and spousde to Marinell.

For this was Dony, Florimels owne Dwarfe, Whom having lost (as ye have heard why leare) And finding in the way the scattred scarfe, The fortune of her life long time did feare. But of her health when Artegall did heare, And safe returne, he was full inly glad, And askt him where, and when her bridale cheare

Should be solemniz'd: for if time he had, He would be there, and honor to her spousall ad.

Within three daics (quoth hec) as I do here, It will be at the Castle of the strond; What time if naught me let, I will be there To doe her seruice, so as I am bond. But in my way a little here beyond A cursed cruell Sarazin doth wonne, That keepes a Bridges passage by strong hond, Andmanyerrant Knightshaththere fordonne; That makes all men for feare that passage for to shonne.

What mister wight (quoth he) and how far hence

Is he, that doth to trauellers such harmes? He is (said he) a man of great defence; Expert in battell and in deedes of armes; Ard more emboldned by the wicked charmes, With which his daughter doth himstill support; Hauing great Lordships got and goodly farmes, Through strong oppression of his powre extort; Ey which he still them holds, and keepes with strong effort.

-6

And dayly he his wrongs encreaseth more,
For neuer wight he lets to passe that way,
Oner his Bridge, albee he rich or poore,
But he him makes his passage-penny pay:
Else he doth hold him backe or beat away.
Thereto he hath a groome of cuill guize,
Whose scalpis bare, that bondagedoth bewray,
Which pols and pils the poore in piteous wize;
But he him selfe yppon the rich doth tyrannize.

His name is hight Pollente, rightly so
For that he is so puissant and strong,
That with his powre he all doth ouergo,
And makes them subject to his mighty wrong;
And some by sleight he eke doth ynderfong.
For on a Bridge he custometh to fight,
Which is but narrow, but exceeding long;
And in the same are many trap fals pight,
Through which the rider downe doth fall
through ouersight.

Q

And vnderneath the same a river flowes,
That is both swift and dangerous depe with all;
Into the which whom so be ouerthrowes,
All destitute of helpe doth headlong fall,
But he him selfe, through practise vsuall,
Leapes forth into the floud, and there assaics
His foe confused through his sodaine fall,
That horse and man he equally dismaies,
And either both them drownes, or trayterously slaies.

Then doth he take the spoile of them at will, And to his daughter brings, that dwels thereby: Who all that comes doth take, and therewith

The coffers of her wicked threasury; Which she with wrongs bath heaped vp so by, That many Princes she in wealth exceedes, And purchast all the countrey lying ny With the reuenue of her plente ous meedes, Her name is Munera, agreeing with her deedes.

.,

Thereto she is full faire, and rich attired, With golden hands and siluer feete beside, That many Lords haue her to wife desired: But she them all despiseth for great pride. Now by my life (savd he) and God to guide, None other way will I this day betake, But by that Bridge, whereas he doth abide: Therefore me thither lead. No more he spake, But thitherward forthright his ready way did make.

Vnto the place he came within a while,
Where on the Bridge he ready armed saw
The Sarazin, awayting for some spoile.
Who as they to the passage gan to draw,
A villaine to them came with scull all raw,
That passage money did of them require,
According to the custome of their law.
To whom he aunswerd wroth, Loe there thy
hire;

And with that word him strooke, that streight he did expire.

Which when the Pagan saw, he wexed wroth, And streight him selfe vnto the fight addrest, Ne was Sir Artegall behinde: so both Together ran with ready speares in rest. Right in the midst, whereas they brest to brest Should meete, a trap was letten downe to fall Intothe floud: streight leapt the Carle vnblest, Well weening that his foe was falne withall: But he was well aware, and leapt before his fall.

13

There being both together in the floud,
They each at other tyrannously flew;
Ne ought the water cooled their whot bloud,
But rather in them kindled choler new.
But there the Paynim, who that vse well knew
To fight in water, great aduantage had,
That oftentimes him nigh he ouerthrew:
And eke the courser, whereuppon he rad,
Could swim like to a fish, whiles he his backe
hestrad.

14

Which oddes when as Sir Artegall espide,
He saw no way, but close with him in hast;
And to him driving strongly downe the tide,
Vppon his iron coller griped fast,
That with the straint his wesand nigh he brast.
There they together strone and struggled long,
Either the other from his steede to cast;
Ne euer Artegall his griple strong
For any thing wold slacke, but still vppon him
hong.

1

As when a Dolphin and a Scle are met,
In the wide champian of the Ocean plaine:
With cruell chaufe their courages they whet,
The maysterdone of each by force to gaine,
And dreadfull battaile twixt them dodarraine:
They snuf, they snort, they bounce, they rage,
they rore,

That all the sea disturbed with their traine, Doth frie with fome aboue the surges hore. Such was betwixt these two the troublesome vprore.

16

So Artegal! at length him forst forsake
His horses backe, for dread of being drownd,
And to his handy swimming him betake.
Eftsoones him selfe he from his hold vnbownd,
And then no ods at all in him he fownd:
For Artegal! in swimming skilfull was,
And durst the depth of any water sownd.
So ought each Knight, that vse of perill has,
In swimming be expert through waters force to
pas.

17

Then very doubtfull was the warres euent, Vncertaine whether had the better side: For both were skild in that experiment, And both in armes well traind and throughly tride.

But Artegall was better breath'd beside, And towards th'end, grew greater in his might That his faint foe no longer could abide His puissance, ne beare him selfe vpright, But from the water to the land betooke his flight.

18

But Artegall pursewd him still so neare, With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand, That as his head he gan a litle reare Aboue the brincke, to tread vpon the land, He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand It bit the earth for very fell despight, And gnashed with his teeth, as if he band HighGod, whose goodnesse hedespaired quight. Or curst the hand, which did that vengeance on him dight.

10

His corps was carried downe along the Lee, Whose waters with his filthy bloud it stayned. But his blasphemous head, that all might see. He pitcht vpon a pole on high ordayned; Where many years it afterwards remayned, To be a mirrour to all mighty men, In whose right hands great power is contayned, That none of them the feeble ouerren, But alwaies doe their powre within just compasse pen.

20

That done, vnto the Castle he did wend, In which the Paynims daughter did abide, Guarded of many which did her defend: Of whom he entrance sought, but was denide. And with reprochfull blasphemy defide, Beaten with stonesdowne from the battilment. That he was forced to withdraw aside; And bad his seruant Talus to inuent Which way he enter might, without endanger ment.

21

Eftsoones his Page drew to the Castle gate,
And with his iron flale at it let flie,
That all the warders it did sore amate,
The which erewhile spake so reprochfully,
Andmade them stoupe, that lookedearst so hie.
Yet still he bet, and bounst vppon the dore
And thundred strokes thereon so hideouslie.
That all the peece he shaked from the flore.
And filled all the house with feare and great
vprore.

With noise whereof the Lady forth appeared Vopon the Castle wall, and when she saw The daungerous state, in which she stood, she The sad effect of her neare overthrow: Ifeared And gan entreat that iron man below. To cease his outrage, and him faire besought. Sithneitherforce of stones which they did throw. Nor powr of charms, which she against him

wrought. Might otherwise preuaile, or make him cease for ought.

But when as yet she saw him to proceede, Vnmou'd with praiers, or with pitcous thought, She ment him to corrupt with goodly meede; And causde great sackes with endlesse riches Vnto the battilment to be vpbrought, [fraught, And powred forth ouer the Castle wall. That she might win some time, though dearly

Whilest he to gathering of the gold did fall. But he was nothing mou'd, nor tempted therewithall.

But still continu'd his assault the more, And layd on load with his huge yron flaile, That at the length he has yrent the dore, And made way for his maister to assaile. Who being entred, nought did then auaile For wight, against his powre themselves to reare: Each one did flie; their hearts began to faile, And hid them selves in corners here and there; And eke their dame halfe dead did hide her self for feare.

Long they her sought, yet no where could they finde her.

That sure they ween'd she was escapt away: But Talus, that could like a limehound windcher, And all things secrete wisely could bewray, At length found out, whereas she hidden lay Vnder an heape of gold. Thence he her drew By the faire lockes, and fowly did array, Withouten pitty of her goodly hew,

That Artegall him selfe her seemelesse plight did rew.

Yet for no pitty would be change the course Of Justice, which in Talus hand did lye; Who rudely hayld her forth without remorse. Still holding up her suppliant hands on hye, And kneeling at his feete submissionely. But he her suppliant hands, those hands of gold, And eke her feete, those feete of silver trye. Whichsoughtvnrighteousnesse, and iustice sold, Chopt off, and nayld on high, that all might them behold.

Her selfe then tooke he by the sclender wast. In vaine loud crying, and into the flood Ouer the Castle wall adowne her cast, And there her drowned in the durty mud: But the streame washt away her guilty blood. Thereafter all that mucky pelfe he tooke, The spoile of peoples cuill gotten good, The which her sire had scrap't by hooke and crooke.

And burning all to ashes, powr'd it downe the brooke.

And lastly all that Castle quite he raced, Euen from the sole of his foundation. And all the hewen stones thereof defaced, That there mote be no hope of reparation, Nor memory thereof to any nation. All which when Talus throughly had perfourmed.

Sir Artegall vadid the guill fashion, And wicked customes of that Bridge refourmed. Which done, vnto his former journey he retourned.

In which they measur'd mickle weary way, Till that at length nigh to the sea they drew; By which as they did trauell on a day, They saw before them, far as they could vew, Full many people gathered in a crew; Whose great assembly they did much admire. For neuer there the like resort they knew. So towardes them they coasted, to enquire What thing so many nations met, did there desire.

There they beheld a mighty Gyant stand Vpon a rocke, and holding forth on hie An huge great paire of ballance in his hand, With which he boasted in his surquedrie, That all the world he would weigh equallic, If ought he had the same to counterpoys. For want whereof he weighed vanity, And fild his ballaunce full of idle toys: Yet was admired much of fooles, women, and

boys.

He sayd that he would all the earth vptake, And all the sea, deuided each from either: So would be of the fire one ballaunce make, And one of th'ayre, without or wind, or wether. Then would be ballaunce beauen and hell together,

And all that did within them all containe Of all whose weight, he would not misse a fether And looke what surplus did of each remaine, He would to his owne part restore the same againe.

2:

For why, he sayd they all vnequall were,
And had encroched vppon others share,
Like as the sea (which plaine he shewed there)
Had worne the earth, so did the fire the aire,
So all the rest did others parts empaire.
And so were realmes and nations run awry.
All which he vndertooke for to repaire,
In sort as they were formed aunciently;
And all things would reduce vnto equality.

33

Therefore the vulgar did about him flocke, And cluster thicke vnto his leasings vaine, Like foolish flies about an hony crocke, In hope by him great benefite to gaine, And vncontrolled freedome to obtaine. All which when Artegall did see, and heare, How he mis-led the simple peoples traine, In sdeignfull wize he drew vnto him neare, And thus vnto him spake, without regard or feare.

Thou that presum st to weigh the world anew,
And all things to an equal to restore,
In stead of right me seemes great wrong dost
shew,

And far aboue thy forces pitch to sore
For ere thou limit what is lesse or more
In enery thing, thou oughtest first to know,
What was the poyse of enery part of yore:
And looke then how much it doth ouerflow,
Or faile thereof, so much is more then just to
trow.

For at the first they all created were In goodly measure, by their Makers might, And weighed out in ballaunces so nere, That not a dram was missing of their right, The earth was in the middle centre pight, In which it doth immoneable abide, Hemd in with waters like a wall in sight; And they with aire, that not a drop can slide:

And they with aire, that not a drop can slide:
All which the heauens containe, and in their courses guide.

Such heauenly iustice doth among them raine, That enery one doe know their certaine bound, In which they doe these many yeares remaine, And mongst them al no change hath yet beene found.

But if thou now shouldst weigh them new in pound.

We are not sure they would so long remaine: Allchange is perillous, and allchaunce vn sound. Therefore leaue off to weigh them all againe, Till we may be assur'd they shall their course retaine.

Thou foolishe Elfe (said then the Gyant wroth) Seest not, how badly all things present bee, And each estate quite out of order goth? The sea it selfe doest thou not plainely see Encroch vppon the land there vnder thee; And th'earth it selfe how daily its increast, By all that dying to it turned be? Were it not good that wrong were then sur-

And from the most, that some were given to the

Therefore I will throw downe these mountaines

And make them leuell with the lowly plaine: These towring rocks, which reach vnto the skie. I will thrust downe into the deepest maine, And as they were, them equalize againe. Tyrants that make men subject to their law. I will suppresse, that they no more may rane; And Lordings curbe, that commons oucr-aw. And all the wealth of rich men to the poore will draw.

Of things vnseene how canst thou deeme aright. Then answered the righteous Artegall, Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things m sight?

What though the sea with waues continuall Doe cate the earth, it is no more at all: Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought, For whatsoeuer from one place doth fall, Is with the tide vnto an other brought: For there is nothing lost, that may be found, if

sought.

Likewise the carth is not augmented more, By all that dying into it doe fade. For of the earth they formed were of yore. How euer gay their blossome or their blade Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade What wrong then is it, if that when they during the to that, whereof they first were made?

All in the powre of their great Maker lie: All creatures must obey the voice of the most hie.

4

They liue, they die, like as he doth ordaine, Ne euer any asketh reason why. The hils doe not the lowly dales disdaine; The dales doe not the lofty hills enuy. He maketh Kings to sit in souerainty; He maketh subjects to their powre obay; He pulleth downe, he setteth vp on hy; He giues to this, from that he takes away. For all we haue is his: what he list doe, he may

What euer thing is done, by him is donne, Ne any may his mighty will withstand; Ne any may his soueraine power shonne, Ne loose that he hath bound with stedfast band. In vaine therefore doest thou now take in hand, To call to count, or weigh his workes anew, Whose counsels depth thou can stnot vnderstand, Sith of things subject to thy daily vew Thou doest not know the causes, nor their courses dew.

For take thy ballaunce, if thou be so wise, And weigh the winde, that vnder heaven doth

Or weigh the light, that in the East doth rise; Or weigh the thought, that from mans mind doth flow.

But if the weight of these thou canst not show, Weighbut oneword which from thy lips doth fall. For how canst thou those greater secrets know, That does not know the least thing of them all? Ill can he rule the great, that cannot reach the small.

Therewith the Gyant much abashed sayd;
That he of little things made reckoning light,
Yet the least word that euer could be layd
Within his ballaunce, he could way aright.
Which is (sayd he) more heavy then in weight,
The right or wrong, the false or else the trew?
He answered, that he would try it streight,
So he the words into his ballaunce threw,
But streight the winged words out of his
ballaunce flew.

Wroth wext he then, and sayd, that words were light.

ngnt,

Ne would within his ballaunce well abide.

But he could justly weigh the wrong or right.

Well then, sayd \*Artegall\*, let it be tride.

First in one ballance set the true aside.

He did so first; and then the false he layd.

In th'other scale; but still it downe did slide,

And by no meanes could in the weight be stayd.

For by no meanes the false will with the truth be wayd.

Now take the right likewise, sayd Artegale,
And counterpeise the same with so much wrong.
So first the right he put into one scale;
And then the Gyantstroue with puissancestrong
To fill the other scale with so much wrong.
But all the wrongs that he therein could lay,
Might not it peise; yet did he labour long,
Andswat, and chauf'd, and proued euery way:
Yet all the wrongs could not a little right
downe way.

Which when he saw, he greatly grew in rage, And almost would his balances haue broken: But Artegall him fairely gan asswage, And said; Be not vpon thy balance wroken: For they doe nought but right or wrong betoken;

But in the mind the doome of right must bee; And so likewise of words, the which be spoken, The eare must be the ballance, to decree And judge, whether with truth or falshood they agree.

ee.

But set the truth and set the right aside, For they with wrong or fal-shood will not fare; And put two wrongs together to be tride, Or else two falses, of each equall share; And then together doe them both compare. For truth is one, and right is euer one. So did he, and then plaine it did appeare, Whether of them the greater were attone. But right sate in the middest of the beame alone.

But he the right from thence did thrust away, For it was not the right, which he did secke; But rather stroue extremities to way, Th'one to diminish, th'other for to ceke; For of the meane he greatly did miskeke. Whom when so lewdly minded Talus found, Approching nigh vnto him cheeke by cheeke, He shouldered him from off the higher ground, And down the rock him throwing, in the sea him dround.

Like as a ship, whom cruell tempest drives
Vpon a rocke with horrible dismay,
Her shattered ribs in thousand peeces rives,
And spoyling all her geares and goodly ray,
Does make her selfe misfortunes pitcous pray.
So downe the cliffe the wretched Gyant
tumbled;

His battred ballances in peeces lay,
His timbered bones all broken rudely rumbled,
So was the high aspyring with huge ruine
humbled.

That when the people, which had there about Long wayted, saw his sudden desolation, They gan to gather in turnultuous rout, And mutining, to stirre vp civill faction, For certaine losse of so great expectation. For well they hoped to have got great good, And wondrous riches by his innovation. Therefore resolving to reuenge his blood, They rose in armes, and allin battellorderstood.

Which lawlesse multitude him comming too In warlike wise, when Artegall did vew. He much was troubled, ne wist what to doo. For loth he was his noble hands t'embrew In the base blood of such a rascall crew: And otherwise, if that he should retire, He fear'd least they with shame would him pursew.

Therefore he Talus to them sent, t'inquire The cause of their array, and truce for to desire.

But soone as they him nigh approching spide. They gan with all their weapons him assay. And rudely stroke at him on enery side: Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought dismay.

But when at them he with his flaile gan lay, He like a swarme of flyes them ouerthrew; Ne any of them durst come in his way, But here and there before his presence flew. And hid themselves in holes and bushes from his vew.

As when a Faulcon hath with nimble flight Flowne at a flush of Ducks, foreby the brooke. The trembling foule dismayd with dreadfull sight

Of death, the which them almost ouertooke, Doe hide themselves from her astonying looke, Amongst the flags and couert round about. When Talus saw they all the field forsooke And none appear'd of all that raskall rout, To Artegall he turn'd, and went with him throughout.

# Cant. 111.

### 

The spousals of faire Florimell, where turney many knights: There Braggadochio is vncas'd in all the Ladies sights.

### 

After long stormes and tempests overblowne, The sunne at length his joyous face doth cleare: So when as fortune all her spight hath showne, Some blisfull houresat last must needes appeare; Else should afflicted wights of times despeire. So comes it now to Florimell by tourne. After long sorrowes suffered whyleare, In which captiu'd she many moneths did mourne, To tast of ioy, and to wont pleasures to retourne.

Who being freed from Proteus cruell band By Marinell, was vnto him affide, And by him brought againe to Faerie land: Whereheher spous'd, and made his joyous bride. The time and place was blazed farre and wide: And solemne feasts and giusts ordain'd there-

To which there did resort from euery side Of Lords and Ladies infinite great store: Ne any Knight was absent, that braue courage bore.

To tell the glorie of the feast that day, The goodly service, the devicefull sights, The bridegromes state, the brides most rich

The pride of Ladies, and the worth of knights, The royall banquets, and the rare delights Were worke fit for an Herauld, not for me: But for so much as to my lot here lights, That with this present treatise doth agree, True vertue to aduance, shall here recounted bee.

When all men had with full satietie Of meates and drinkes their appetites suffiz'd, To deedes of armes and proofe of cheualrie They gan themselves addresse, full rich aguiz'd, As each one had his furnitures deniz'd. And first of all issu'd Sir Marinell.

And with him sixe knights more, which enterpriz'd

To chalenge all in right of Florimell. And to maintaine, that she all others did excell.

The first of them was hight Sir Orimont, A noble Knight, and tride in hard assayes: The second had to name Sir Bellisont. But second vnto none in prowesse prayse; The third was Brunell, famous in his dayes: The fourth *Ecastor*, of exceeding might: The fift Armeddan, skild in louely layes; The sixt was Lansack, a redoubted Knight: All sixe well seene in armes, and prou'd in many a fight.

And them against came all that list to giust. From enery coast and countrie vnder sunne: None was debard, but all had leaue that lust. The trompets sound; then all together ronne. Fullmany deedes of armes that day were donne, And many knights vnhorst, and many wounded As fortune fell; yet litle lost or wonne: But all that day the greatest prayse redounded To Marinell, whose name the Heralds loud resounded.

.

The second day, so soone as morrow light Appear'd in heauen, into the field they came, And there all day continew'd cruell fight, With diuces fortune fit for such a game, In which all stroue with perill to winne fame. Yet whether side was victor, note be ghest: But at the last the trompets did proclame That Marinell that day descrued best. So they disparted were, and all men went torest.

8

The third day came, that should due tryall lend Of all the rest, and then this warlike crew Together met, of all to make an end. There Marinell great deeds of armes did shew; And through the thickest like a Lyon flew, Rashing off helmes, and ryuing plates a sonder, That euery one his daunger did eschew. So terribly his dreadfull strokes did thonder, That all men stood amaz'd, and at his might did wonder.

G

But what on earth can alwayes happie stand? The greater prowesse greater perils find. So farre he past amongst his enemics band, That they haue him enclosed so behind, As by no meanes he can himselfe outwind. And now perforce theyhaue him prisoner taken, And now they doe with captiue bands him bind, And now they lead him thence, of all forsaken, Vnlesse some succour had in time him ouertaken.

10

It fortun'd whylest they were thus ill beset, Sir Artegall into the Tilt-yard came, With Braggadochio, whom he lately met Vpon the way, with that his snowy Dame. Where when he viderstood by common fame, What euill hap to Marinell betid, He much was mou'd at so vinworthie shame, And streight that boaster prayd, with whom he rid,

To changehis shield with him, to be the better hid.

11

So forth he went, and soone them ouer hent, Where they were leading Marinell away, Whom he assayld with dreadlesse hardiment, And forst the burden of their prize to stay. They were an hundred knights of that array; Of which th'one halfe vpon himselfe did set, The other stayd behind to gard the pray. But he ere long the former fiftie bet; And from the other fiftie soone the prisoner fet.

So backe he brought Sir Marinell againe; Whom having quickly arm'd againe anew, They both together ioyned might and maine, To set afresh on all the other crew. Whom with sore havocke soone they overthrew, And chaced quite out of the field, that none Against them durst his head to perill shew. So were they left Lords of the field alone: So Marinell by him was rescu'd from his fone.

Which when he had perform'd, then backeaguine
To Braggadochio did his shield restore:
Who all this while behind him did remaine,
Keeping there close with him in pretious store
That his false Ladie, as ye heard afore.

That his false Ladic, as ye heard afore.
Then did the trompets sound, and ludges rose,
And all these knights, which that day armour
bore,

Came to the open hall, to listen whose
The honour of the prize should be adjudged by
those.

nose.

And thether also came in open sight
Fayre Florimell, into the common hall,
To greet his guerdon vnto euery knight,
And best to him, to whom the best should fall.
Then for that stranger knight they loud did call,
To whom that day they should the girlond yield
Who came not forth, but for Sir Artegall
Came Braggadochio, and did shew his shield,
Which bore the Sunne brode blazed in a golden
field.

The sight whereof did all with gladnesse fill: So vnto him they did addeeme the prise Of all that Tryumph. Then the trompets shrill Don Braggadochios name resounded thrise: So courage lent a cloke to cowardise. And then to him came fayrest Florimell, And goodly gan to greet his braue emprise, And thousand thankes him yeeld, that had so well

Approu'd that day, that she all others did excell.

- 16

To whom the boaster, that all knights did blot, With proud disdaine did scornefull answere make:

That what he did that day, he did it not For her, but for his owne deare Ladies sake, Whom on his perill he did vndertake, Both her and eke all others to excell: And further did vncomely speaches crake. Much did his words the gentle Ladie quell, And turn'd aside for shame to heare, what he did tell.

Then forth he brought his snowy Florimele, Whom Trombart had in keeping there beside. Couered from peoples gazement with a vele. Whom when discouered they had throughly eide. With great amazement they were stupefide; And said, that surely Florimell it was, Or if it were not Florimell so tride, That Florimell her selfe she then did pas. So feeble skill of perfect things the vulgar has.

Which when as Marinell beheld likewise. He was therewith exceedingly dismayd; Ne wist he what to thinke, or to deuise, But like as one, whom feends had made affrayd, He long astonisht stood, ne ought he sayd, Ne ought he did, but with fast fixed eies He gazed still vpon that snowy mayd; Whom euer as he did the more auize, The more to be true Florinell be did surmize.

As when two sunnes appeare in the azure skye, Mounted in Phabus charet fierie bright. Both darting forth faire beames to each manseye. And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming light, All that behold so strange prodigious sight. Not knowing natures worke, nor what to weene, Are rapt with wonder, and with rare affright. So stood Sir Marinell, when he had seene The semblant of this false by his faire beauties Queene.

All which when Artegall, who all this while Stoodin the preasse close couered, well adue wed, And saw that boasters pride and gracelesse

He could no longer beare, but forth issewed, And vnto all himselfe there open shewed, And to the boaster said: Thou losell base.

That hast with borrowed plumes thy selfe endewed.

And others worth with leasings doest deface. When they are all restor'd, thou shalt rest in disgrace.

That shield, which thou does t beare, was it indeed, Which this dayes honour sau'd to Marinell: But not that arme, nor thou the man I reed, Which didst that service vnto Florimell. For proofe shew forth thy sword, and let it tell, What strokes, what dreadfull stoure it stird this day:

Or shew the wounds, which vnto thee befell: Or shew the sweat, with which thou diddest swav

But this the sword, which wrought those crue stounds. And this the arme, the which that shield die

beare. wound And these the signes, (so shewed forth l. By which that glorie gotten doth appeare. As for this Ladie, which he sheweth here. Is not (I wager) Florimell at all; But some fayre Francian, fit for such a fere, That by misfortune in his hand did fall.

For proofe whereof, he bad them Floring forth call.

So forth the noble Ladie was vbrought, Adorn'd with honor and all comely grace: Whereto her bashfullshamefastnesse ywrought A great increase in her faire blushing face; As roses did with lillies interlace. For of those words, the which that boaster

She inly yet conceived great disgrace. Whom when as all the people such did vew, They shouted loud, and signes of gladnesse all did shew.

Then did he set her by that snowy one Like the true saint beside the image set, Of both their beauties to make paragone, And triall, whether should the honor get. Streight way so soone as both together met. Th'enchaunted Damzell vanisht into nought: Her snowy substance melted as with heat, Ne of that goodly hew remayned ought. But th'emptie girdle, which about her wast was wrought.

As when the daughter of Thaumantes faire, Hath in a watry cloud displayed wide Her goodly bow, which paints the liquid ayre; That all men wonder at her colours pride; All suddenly, ere one can looke aside, The glorious picture vanisheth away. Ne any token doth thereof abide: So did this Ladies goodly forme decay. And into nothing goe, ere one could it bewray.

Which when as all that present were, beheld, They stricken were with great astonishment, And their faint harts with senselesse horrour queld,

To see the thing, that seem'd so excellent, So stolen from their fancies wonderment: That what of it became, none vnderstood. And Braggadochio selfe with dreriment So daunted was in his despeyring mood, So sharpe a battell, that so many did dismay. That like a lifelesse corse immoueable he stood. ut .Irtegall that golden belt vptooke,
The which of all her spoyle was onely left;
Which was not hers, as many it mistooke,
But Florimells owne girdle, from her reft,
While she was flying, like a weary weft,
From that foule monster, which did her compell
To perils great; which he vnbuckling eft,
Presented to the fayrest Florimell;
Tho round about her tender wast it fitted well.

28

ull many Ladics often had assayd,
About their middles that faire belt to knit;
And many a one suppos'd to be a mayd;
Yet it to none of all their loynes would fit,
Iill Florimell about her fastned it.
Such power it had, that to no womans wast
By any skill or labour it would sit,
Valesse that she were continent and chast,
at it would lose or breake, that many had
digrast.

shilest thus they busied were bout Florimell, And boastfull Braggadochio to defame, Sir Giyon as by fortune then befell, Forth from the thickest preasse of people came, this owne good steed, which he had stolne, to clame;

And th'one hand seizing on his golden bit, With th'other drew his sword: for with the same

He ment the thiefe there deadly to have smit: And had he not bene held, he nought had fayld of it.

Thereof great hurly burly moued was
Throughout the hall, for that same warlike horse.

For Braggadochio would not let him pas; And Guyon would him algates have perforse. Or it approve vpon his carrion corse. Which troublous stirre when Artegall perceived, He nigh them drew to stay th'auengers forse, And gan inquire, how was that steed bereaved, Whether by might extort, or else by slight deceaved.

Who all that pitcous storie, which befell
About that wofull couple, which were slaine,
And their young bloodie babe to him gan tell;
With whom whiles he did in the wood remaine,
His horse purloyned was by subtill traine:
For which he chalenged the thiefe to fight.
Buthefor nought could him thereto constraine.
For as the death he hated such despight,
And rather had to lose, then trie in armes his
right.

Which Artegall well hearing, though no more By law of armes there neede ones right to trie, As was the wont of warlike knights of yore, Then that his foe should him the field denie, Yet further right by tokens to descrie, He askt, what prinie tokens he did beare. If that (said Guyon) may you satisfie, Within his mouth a blacke spot doth appeare, Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke it there.

Whereof to make due tryall, one did take
The horse in hand, within his mouth to looke:
But with his heeles so sorely he him strake,
That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke,
That neuer word from that day forth he spoke.
Another that would seeme to haue more wit,
Him by the bright embrodered hedstall tooke:
But by the shoulder him so sore he bit,
That he him maymed quite, and all his shoulder
split.

Ne he his mouth would open vnto wight,
Vntill that Guyon selfe vnto him spake,
And called Brigadore (so was he hight)
Whose voice so soone as he did vndertake,
Eftsoones he stood as still as any stake,
And suffred all his secret marke to see:
And when as he him nam'd, for ioy he brake
His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull glee,
And friskt, and flong aloft, and louted low on
knee.

Thereby Sir Artegall did plaine areed,
That vnto him the horse belong'd, and sayd;
Lo there Sir Guyon, take to you the steed,
As he with golden saddle is arayd;
And let that losell, plainely now displayd,
Hence fare on foot, till he an horse haue
gayned.

But the proud boaster gan his doome vpbrayd, And him reuil'd, and rated, and disdayned. That iudgement so vniust against him had ordayned.

Much was the knight incenst with his lewd word,
To haue reuenged that his villeny;
And thrise did lay his hand vpon his sword,
To haue him slaine, or dearely doen aby.
But Guyon did his choler pacify,
Saying, Sir knight, it would dishonour bee
To you, that are our judge of equity,
To wreake your wrath on such a carle as hee:
It's punishment enough, that all his shame doesee.

SPENSER

So did he mitigate Sir Artegall. But Talus by the backe the boaster hent. And drawing him out of the open hall. Voon him did inflict this punishment. First he his beard did shaue, and fowly shent: Then from him reft his shield, and it renucrst, And blotted out his armes with falshood blent. And himselfe baffuld, and his armes vnherst. And broke his sword in twaine, and all his armour sperst.

The whiles his guilefull groome was fled away: But vaine it was to thinke from him to flie. Who ouertaking him did disaray, And all his face deform'd with infamie, And out of court him scourged openly. So ought all faytours, that true knighthood shame.

And armes dishonour with base villanie, From all braue knights be banisht with defame: For oft their lewdnes blotteth good deserts with blame.

Now when these counterfeits were thus vncased Out of the foreside of their forgerie. And in the sight of all men cleane disgraced, All gan to iest and gibe full merilie At the remembrance of their knauerie. Ladies can laugh at Ladies, Knights at Knights, To thinke with how great vaunt of brauerie He them abused, through his subtill slights, And what a glorious shew he made in all their sights.

There leave we them in pleasure and repast, Spending their ioyous dayes and gladfull nights, And taking vsurie of time forepast, With all deare delices and rare delights, Fit for such Ladies and such louely knights: And turne we here to this faire furrowes end Our wearie yokes, to gather fresher sprights, That when as time to Artegall shall tend, We on his first aduenture may him forward send.



# Cant. IIII.

### 

Artegall dealeth right betwixt two brethren that doe strive. Saues Terpine from the gallow tree, and doth from death reprine.

### 

Who so vpon him selfe will take the skill True Iustice vnto people to diuide, Had neede haue mightie hands, for to fulfill That, which he doth with righteous doom decide.

And for to maister wrong and puissant pride For vaine it is to deeme of things aright, And makes wrong doers justice to deride, Valesse it be perform'd with dreadlesse might For powre is the right hand of lustice true lyhight

Therefore whylome to knights of great emprise The charge of Justice given was in trust, That they might execute her judgements wisc. And with their might beat downelic entious lust. Which proudly did impugne her sentence iust Whereof no brauer president this day Remaines on earth, preseru'd from yron rust Of rude oblinion, and long times decay, Then this of Artegall, which here we have to say

Who having lately left that louely payre, Enlincked fast in wedlockes loyall bond. Bold Marinell with I lorimel! the favre. With whom great feast and goodly glee he fond. Departed from the Castle of the strond, To follow his aduentures first intent, Which long agoe he taken had in hond: Ne wight with him for his assistance went, But that great yron groome, his gard and gouernment.

With whom as he did passe by the sea shore, He chaunst to come, whereas two comely Squires,

Both brethren, whom one wombe together bore, But stirred vp with different desires, Together stroue, and kindled wrathfull fires: And them beside two seemely damzels stood, By all meanes seeking to asswage their ires. Now with faire words; but words did little good, Now with sharpe threats; but threats the more increast their mood.

And there before them stood a Coffer strong, Fast bound on euery side with iron bands, But seeming to haue suffred mickle wrong, Either by being wreckt vppon the sands, Or being carried farre from forraine lands. Seem'd that for it these Squires at ods did fall, And bent against them selues their cruell hands. But euermore, those Damzels did forestall Their furious encounter, and their fiercenesse pall.

6

But firmely fixt they were, with dint of sword, And battailes doubtfull proofe their rights to try, No other end their fury would afford.

Ne other end their fury would afford, But what to them Fortune would justify. So stood they both in readinesse thereby, To joyne the combate with cruell intent; When Artegall arriving happily, Did stay a while their greedy bickerment, Till he had questioned the cause of their dissent.

To whom the elder did this aunswere frame; Then weete ye Sir, that we two brethren be, To whom our sire, *Milesio* by name, Did equally bequeath his lands in fee, Two Ilands, which ye there before you see Not farre in sea; of which the one appeares But like a little Mount of small degree; Yet was as great and wide ere many yeares, As that same other Isle, that greater bredth now beares.

8

But tract of time, that all things doth decay,
And this deuouring Sea, that naught doth spare,
The most part of my land hath washt away,
And throwne it vp vnto my brothers share:
So his encreased, but mine did empaire.
Before which time I lou'd, as was my lot,
That further mayd, hight *Philtera* the faire,
With whom a goodly doure I should haue got,
And should haue joyned bene to her in wedlocks
knot.

Then did my younger brother Amidas
Loue that same other Damzell, Lucy bright,
To whom but little dowre allotted was;
Her vertue was the dowre, that did delight.
What better dowre can to a dame be hight?
But now when Philtra saw my lands decay,
And former liuelod fayle, she left me quight,
And to my brother did ellope streight way:
Who taking her from me, his owne loue left
astray.

10

She seeing then her selfe forsaken so, Through dolorous despaire, which she conceyued,

Into the Sea her selfe did headlong throw, Thinking to haue her griefe by death bereaued. But see how much her purpose was deceaued. Whilest thus amidst the billowes beating of her Twixt life and death, long to and fro she weaued, She chaunst vinwares to light vippon this coffer, Which to her in that daunger hope of life did offer.

. .

The wretched mayd that earst desir'd to die, When as the paine of death she tasted had, And but halfe seene his vgly visnomie, Gan to repent, that she had beene so mad, For any death to chaunge life though most bad And catching hold of this Sea-beaten chest, The lucky Pylot of her passage sad, After long tossing in the seas distrest, Her weary barke at last vppon mine Isle did rest.

. .

Where I by chaunce then wandring on the show, Did her cspy, and through my good endeuour From dreadfull mouth of death, which threatned sore

Her to haue swallow'd vp, did helpe to saue her She then in recompence of that great fauour, Which I on her bestowed, bestowed on me The portion of that good, which Fortune gaue her.

Together with her selfe in dowry free; Both goodly portions, but of both the better she.

13
Yet in this coffer, which she with her brought, Great threasuresithence we did finde contained; Which as our owne we tooke, and so it thought. But this same other Damzell since hath fained, That to her selfe that threasure appertained; And that she did transport the same by sea, To bring it to her husband new ordained, But suffred cruell shipwracke by the way. But whether it be so or no, I can not say.

But whether it indeede be so or no,
This doe I say, that what so good or ill
Or God or Fortune vnto me did throw,
Not wronging any other by my will,
I hold mine owne, and so will hold it still.
And though my land he first did winne away,
And then my loue (though now it little skill.)
Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray;
But I will it defend, whilst euer that I may.

So having sayu, the younger did ensew; Full true it is, what so about our land My brother here declared hath to you: But not for it this ods twixt vs doth stand, But for this threasure throwne vppon his strand; Which well I proue, as shall appeare by triall, To be this maides, with whom I fastned hand, Known by good markes, and perfect good espiall,

Therefore it ought be rendred her without deniall.

7.0

When they thus ended had, the Knight began; Certes your strife were easie to accord, Would ye remit it to some righteous man. Ynto your selfe, said they, we giue our word, To bide what indgement ye shall vs afford. Then for assuraunce to my doome to stand, Vnder my foote let each lay downe his sword, And then you shall my sentence vnderstand. So each of them layd downe his sword out of his hand.

Then Artegall thus to the younger sayd;
Now tell me Amidas, if that ye may,
Your brothers land the which the sea hath layd
Vnto your part, and pluckt from his away,
By what good right doe you withhold this day?
What other right (quoth he) should you esteeme,
But that the sea it to my share did lay?
Your right is good (sayd he) and so I deeme,
That what the sea vnto you sent, your own
should seeme.

10

Then turning to the elder thus he sayd; Now Bracidas let this likewise be showne. Your brothers threasure, which from him is strayd,

Being the dowry of his wife well knowne, By what right doe you claime to be your owne? What other right (quoth he) should you esteeme, But that the sea hath it vnto me throwne? Your right is good (sayd he) and so I deeme, That what the sea vnto you sent, your own should seeme.

10

For equall right in equall things doth stand, For what the mighty Sea hath once possest, And plucked quite from all possessors hand, Whether by rage of waues, that neuer rest, Or else by wracke, that wretches hath distrest, He may dispose by his imperiall might, As thing at randon left, to whom he list. So Amidas, the land was yours first hight, And so the threasure yours is Bracidas by right.

20

When he his sentence thus pronounced had, Both Anndas and Philtra were displeased: But Bracidas and Lucy were right glad, And on the threasure by that iudgement seased. So was their discord by this doome appeased, And each one had his right. Then Artegall When as their sharpe contention he had ceased. Departed on his way, as did befall, To follow his old quest, the which him forth did call.

21

So as he trauelled vppon the way,
He chaunst to come, where happily he spide
A rout of many people farre away;
To whom his course he hastily applide,
To weete the cause of their assemblaunce wide
To whom when he approched neare in sight,
(An vncouth sight) he plainely then descride
To be a troupe of women warlike dight,
With weapons in their hands, as ready for to
fight.

22

And in the midst of them he saw a Knight, With both his hands behinde himpinnoed hard, And round about his necke an halter tight, As ready for the gallow tree prepard: His face was couered, and his head was bar'd, That who he was, vneath was to desery; And with full heavy heart with them he far'd, Grieu'd to the soule, and groning inwardly, That he of womens hands so base a death should dy.

23

Dut they like tyrants, mercilesse the more, Reioyccd at his miserable case, And him reuiled, and reproched sore With bitter taunts, and termes of vile disgrace. Now when as Artegall arriu'd in place, Did aske, what cause brought that man to decay.

They round about him gan to swarme apace, Meaning on him their cruell hands to lay, And to haue wrought vnwares some villanous assay.

24

But he was soone aware of their ill minde, And drawing backe deceived their intent; Yet though himselfedid shameon womankinde His mighty hand to shend, he Talus sent To wrecke on them their follies hardyment: Who with few sowccs of his yron flale, Dispersed all their troupe incontinent, And sent them home to tell a piteous tale. Of their vaine prowesse, turned to their proper bale.

But that same wretched man, ordaynd to die. They left behind them, glad to be so quit: Him Talus tooke out of perplexitie, And horrour of fowle death for Knight vnfit, Who more then losse of life ydreaded it; And him restoring vnto liuing light, so brought vnto his Lord, where he did sit, Beholding all that womanish weake fight; Whom soone as he beheld, he knew, and thus behight.

Sir Terpine, haplesse man, what make you here? Or haue you lost your selfe, and your discretion, That euer in this wretched case ye were? Or have ve yeelded you to proude oppression Of womens powre, that boast of mens subjec-Or else what other deadly dismall day {tion ? Is falne on you, by heavens hard direction, That we were runne so fondly far astray, As for to lead your selfe vnto your owne decay ?

Much was the man confounded in his mind, Partly with shame, and partly with dismay, That all astonisht he him selfe did find. And little had for his excuse to say, But onely thus; Most haplesse well ve may Meinstly terme, that to this shameam brought, And made the scorne of Knighthod this same day.

But who can scape, what his owne fate hath wrought?

The worke of heavens will surpasseth humaine thought.

Right true: but faulty men vse oftentimes To attribute their folly vnto fate, And Layon heaven the guilt of their owne crimes But tell, Sir Terpin, ne let you amate Your misery, how fell ye in this state. Then sith ye needs (quoth he) will know my

shame, And all the ill, which chaunst to me of late, I shortly will to you rehearse the same,

In hope ye will not turne misfortune to my blame.

Being desirous (as all Knights are woont) Throughhardaduenturesdeedesofarmestotry. And after fame and honour for to hunt, I heard report that farre abrode did fly, That a proud Amazon did late defy All the braue Knights, that hold of Maidenhead. And vnto them wrought all the villany, That she could forge in her malicious head, Which some hath put to shame, and many done be dead.

30 The cause, they say, of this her cruell hate. Is for the sake of Bellodant the bold. To whom she bore most feruent love of late. And wooed him by all the waies she could: But when she saw at last, that he ne would For ought or nought be wonne vnto her will. She turn'd her love to hatred manifold. And for his sake yow'd to doe all the ill Which she could doe to Knights, which now she doth fulfill.

For all those Knights, the which by force or guile She doth subdue, she fowly doth entreate. First she doth them of warlike armes despoile. And cloth in womens weedes: And then with

Doth them compell to worke, to earne their

To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring: Ne doth she give them other thing to eat, But bread and water, or like feeble thing, Them to disable from reuenge aduenturing.

But if through stout disdaine of manly mind. Any her proud observaunce will withstand, Vppon that gibbet, which is there behind, She causeth them be hang'd vp out of hand; In which condition I right now did stand. For being ouercome by her in fight, And put to that base service of her band, I rather chose to die in lives despight, Then lead that shamefull life, vnworthy of a Knight.

How hight that Amazon (sayd Artegall)? And where, and how far hence does she abide? Her name (quoth he) they Radigund doe call. A Princesse of great powre, and greater pride, And Queene of Amazons, in armes well tride, And sundry battels, which she hath atchieucd With great successe, that her hath glorifide, And made her famous, more then is believed: Ne would I it have ween'd, had I not late it pricued.

Now sure (said he) and by the faith that I To Maydenhead and noble knighthood owe, I will not rest, till I her might doe trie, And venge the shame, that she to Knights doth show.

Therefore Sir Terpin from you lightly throw This squalid weede, the patterne of dispaire, And wend with me, that ye may see and know, How Fortune will your ruin'd name repaire, And knights of Maidenhead, whose praise she would empaire.

With that, like one that hopelesse was repryu'd From deathes dore, at which he lately lay, Those yron fetters, wherewith he was gyu'd, The badges of reproch, he threw away, And nimbly did him dight to guide the way Vnto the dwelling of that Amazone. Which was from thence not past a mile or tway:

A goodly citty and a mighty one, The which of her owne name she called Radegone.

Where they arriving, by the watchmen were Descried streight, who all the citty warned, How that three warlike persons did appeare, Of which the one him seem'da Knightallarmed. And th'other two well likely to have harmed. Eftsoones the people all to harnesse ran, And like a sort of Bees in clusters swarmed: Ere long their Queene her selfe, halfe like a

Came forth into the rout, and them t'array began.

And now the Knights being arrived neare. Did beat uppon the gates to enter in, And at the Porter, skorning them so few, Threw many threats, if they the towne did win, To teare his flesh in peeces for his sin. Which when as Radigund there comming heard, Herheart for rage did grate, and teeth did grin: She bad that streight the gates should be vnbard.

And to them way to make, with weapons well prepard.

Soone as the gates were open to them set, They pressed forward, entraunce to have made. But in the middle way they were ymet With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which them staid.

And better bad aduise, ere they assaid Vnknowen perill of bold womens pride. Then all that rout uppon them rudely laid, And heaped strokes so fast on every side, And arrowes haild so thicke, that they could not abide.

But Radigund her selfe, when she espide Sir Terpin, from her direfull doome acquit, So cruell doale amongst her maides divide, T'auenge that shame, they did on him commit, All sodainely enflam'd with furious fit, Like a fell Lionesse at him she flew. And on his head-peece him so fiercely smit, That to the ground him quite she ouerthrew, Dismayd so with the stroke, that he no colours knew.

Soone as she saw him on the ground to grouell. She lightly to him leapt, and in his necke Her proud foote setting, at his head did levell. Weening at once her wrath on him to wreake, And his contempt, that did her judg'ment breake.

As when a Beare hath seiz'd her cruell clawes Vppon the carkasse of some beast too weake. Proudly stands ouer, and a while doth pause. To heare the piteous beast pleading her plaintiffe cause.

Whom when as Artegall in that distresse By chaunce beheld, he left the bloudy slaughter, In which he swam, and ranne to his redresse. There her assayling fiercely fresh, he raught her Such an huge stroke, that it of sence distraught And had she not it warded warily. It had depriu'd her mother of a daughter. Nathlesse for all the powre she did apply, It made her stagger oft, and stare with ghastly

eye. Like to an Eagle in his kingly pride. Soring through his wide Empire of the aire.

To weather his brode sailes, by chaunce hath

spide A Goshauke, which hath seized for her share Vpponsomefowle, that should her feast prepare; With dreadfull force he flies at her byliue, That with his souce, which none enduren dare, Her from the quarrey he away doth drive, And from her griping pounce the greedy prey doth riue.

But soone as she her sence recouer'd had, She hercely towards him her selfe gan dight, Through vengeful wrath and sdeignfull pride half mad:

For neuer had she suffred such despight. But ere she could joyne hand with him to fight. Her warlike maides about her flockt so fast, That they disparted them, maugre their might. And with their troupes did far a sunder cast: But mongst the rest the fight did vntill euening

And every while that mighty yron man, With his strange weapon, neuer wont in warre. Them sorely vext, and courst, and ouerran, And broke their bowes, and did their shooting marre.

That none of all the many once did darre Him to assault, nor once approach him nie, But like a sort of sheepe dispersed farre For dread of their deuouring enemie, Through all the fields and vallies did before him

carded.

And on her legs she painted buskins wore,
Basted with bends of gold on euery side,
And mailes betweene, and laced close afore:
Vppon her thigh her Cemitare was tide,
With an embrodered belt of mickell pride;
And on her shoulder hung her shield, bedeckt
Vppon the bosse with stones, that shined wide,
As the faire Moone in her most full aspect,
That to the Moone it mote be like in each respect.

So forth she came out of the citty gate, With stately port and proud magnificence, Guarded with many damzels, that did waite Vppon her person for her sure defence, Playing on shaumes and trumpets, that from hence

Their sound did reach vnto the heauens hight. So forth into the field she marched thence, Where was a rich Pauilion ready pight, Her to receive, till time they should begin the

fight.

Then forth came Artegall out of his tent, All arm'dto point, and first the Listsdidenter: Soone after eke came she, with fell intent, And countenaunce fierce, as having fully bent her,

That battels vtmost triall to aduenter.
The Lists were closed fast, to barre the rout
From rudely pressing to the middle center;
Which in great heapes them circled all about,
Wayting, how Fortune would resolue that daungerous dout.

The Trumpets sounded, and the field began; With bitter strokes it both began, and ended. She at the first encounter on him ran With furious rage, as if she had intended Out of his breast the very heart haue rended: But he that had like tempests often tride, From that first flaw him selfe right well defended.

The more she rag'd, the more he did abide; She hewd, she foynd, she lasht, she laid on every side.

Yet still her blowes he bore, and her forbore, Weening at last to win aduantage new; Yet still her crueltie increased more, And though powre faild, her courage didacerew, Which fayling he gan fiercely her pursew. Like as a Smith that to his cunning feat The stubborne mettall seeketh to subdew, Soone as he feeles it mollified with heat, With his great yron sledge doth strongly on it beat.

So did Sir Artegall vpon her lay,
As if she had an yron anduile beene,
That flakes of fire, bright as the sunny ray,
Out of her steely armes were flashing seene,
That all on fire ye would her surely weene.
But with her shield so well her selfe she warded,
From the dread daunger of his weapon keene,
That all that while her life she safely garded:
But he that helpe from her against her will dis-

For with his trenchant blade at the next blow Halfe of her shield he shared quite away, That halfe her side it selfe did naked show, And thenceforth vnto daunger opened way. Much was she moued with the mightie sway Of that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she grew, And like a greedie Beare vnto her pray, With her sharpe Cemitare at him she flew, Thatglauncing downehisthigh, the purple bloud forth drew.

īΟ

Thereat she gan to triumph with great boast, And to vpbrayd that chaunce, which him misfell.

As if the prize she gotten had almost, With spightfull speaches, fitting with her well; That his great hart gan inwardly to swell With indignation, at her vaunting vaine, Andatherstrooke withpuissance fearefull fell; Yet with her shield she warded it againe, That shattered all to peeces round about the plaine.

11

Hauing her thus disarmed of her shield, Vpon her helmet he againe her strooke, That downe she fell vpon the grassie field, In sencelesse swoune, as if her life forsooke, And pangs of death her spirit ouertooke. Whom when he saw before his foote prostrated, He to her lept with deadly dreadfull looke, And her sunshynie helmet soone vnlaced, Thinking at once both head and helmet to haue raced.

12

But when as he discouered had her face,
He saw his senses straunge astonishment,
A miracle of natures goodly grace,
In her faire visage voide of ornament,
But bath'd in bloud and sweat together ment;
Which in the rudenesse of that euill plight,
Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent:
Like as the Moone in foggie winters night,
Doth seeme to be her selfe, though darkned be
her light.

At sight thereof his cruell minded hart Empierced was with pittifull regard. That his sharpe sword he threw from him apart, Cursing his hand that had that visage mard: No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard, But ruth of beautie will it mollifie. By this vostarting from her swoune, she star'd A while about her with confused eye; Like one that from his dreame is waked suddenlye.

Soone as the knight she there by her did spy, Standing with emptie hands all weaponlesse. With fresh assault vpon him she did fly, And gan renew her former cruelnesse: And though he still retyr'd, yet nathelesse With huge redoubled strokes she on him layd; And more increast her outrage mercilesse, The more that he with meeke intreatic prayd, Her wrathful hand from greedy vengeance to haue stayd.

Like as a Puttocke having spyde in sight A gentle Faulcon sitting on an hill, Whose other wing, now made vnmeete for flight, Was lately broken by some fortune ill; The foolish Kyte, led with licentious will, Doth beat voon the gentle bird in vaine, With many idle stoups her troubling still: Euen so did Radigund with bootlesse paine Annoy this noble Knight, and sorely him constraine.

Nought could he do, but shun the dred despight Of her fierce wrath, and backward still retyre, And with his single shield, well as he might, Beare off the burden of her raging yre; And euermore he gently did desyre, To stay her stroks, and he himselfe would yield: Yet nould she hearke, ne let him once respyre, Till he to her deliuered had his shield, And to her mercie him submitted in plaine field.

17 But to her yeelded of his owne accord;

So was he ouercome, not ouercome,

Yet was he justly damned by the doome Of his owne mouth, that spake so warelesse word, To be her thrall, and seruice her afford. For though that he first victorie obtayned, Yet after by abandoning his sword, He wilfull lost, that he before attayned. No fayrer conquest, then that with goodwill is gayned.

18

Tho with her sword on him she flatling strooke. In signe of true subjection to her powre. And as her vassall him to thraldome tooke. But Terpine borne to'a more vnhappy howre, As he, on whom the lucklesse starres did lowre. She caused to be attacht, and forthwith led Vnto the crooke t'abide the balefull stowre. From which he lately had through reskew fled. Where he full shamefully was hanged by the hed.

But when they thought on Talus hands to lay. He with his yron flaile amongst them thoudred, That they were fayne to let him scape away, Glad from his companie to be so sondred: Whose presence all their troups so much encombred

That th'heapes of those, which he did wound and slav, (bred:

Besides the rest dismayd, might not be nom-Yet all that while he would not once assay, To reskew his owne Lord, but thought it just t'obay.

Then tooke the Amazon this noble knight, Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame, And caused him to be disarmed quight, Of all the ornaments of knightly name, With which why lome begotten had great fame; In stead whereof she made him to be dight In womans weedes, that is to manhood shame, And put before his lap a napron white, In stead of Curiets and bases fit for fight.

So being clad, she brought him from the field, In which he had bene trayned many a day, Into a long large chamber, which was sield With moniments of many knights decay, By her subdewed in victorious fray: Amongst the which she caused his warlike armes Behang'don high, that mote his shame bewray: And broke his sword, for feare of further harmes. With which he wont to stirre vp battailous alarmes.

There entred in, he round about him saw Many braue knights, whose names right well he knew,

There bound t'obay that Amazons proud law, Spinning and carding all in comely rew. That his bigge hart loth'd so vncomely vew. But they were forst through penuric and pyne, To doe those workes, to them appointed dew: For nought was given them to sup or dyne, But what their hands could earne by twisting linnen twyne.

Amongst them all she placed him most low,
And in his hand a distaffe to him gaue,
That he thereon should spin both flax and tow;
A sordid office for a mind so braue.
So hard it is to be a womans slaue.
Yet he it tooke in his owne selfes despight,
And thereto did himselfe right well behaue,
Her to obay, sith he his faith had plight,
Her vassall to become, if she him wonne in fight.

24

Who had him seene, imagine mote thereby, That whylome hath of Hercules bene told, How for Iolas sake he did apply His mightie hands, the distaffe vile to hold, For his huge club, which had subdew'd of old So many monsters, which the world annoyed; His Lyons skin chaungd to a pall of gold, In which forgetting warres, he onely loyed In combats of sweet loue, and with his mistresse toyed.

2

Such is the crueltie of womenkynd,
When they haueshaken off the shamefast band,
With which wise Nature did them strongly
bynd,
T'obay the heasts of mans well ruling hand,
That then all rule and reason they withstand,
To purchase a licentious libertie.
But vertuous women wisely vnderstand,

That they were borne to base humilitie, Vnlesse the heauens them lift to lawfull soueraintie.

Thus there long while continu'd Artegall,
Seruing proud Radigund with true subjection;
How euer it his noble heart did gall,
T'obay a womans tyrannous direction,
That might haue had of life or death election:
But hauing chosen, now he might not chaunge.
During which time, the warlike Amazon,
Whose wandring fancie after lust did raunge,
Gan cast a secret liking to this captiue straunge.

27

Which long concealing in her couert brest, She chaw'd the cud of louers carefull plight; Yet could it not so thoroughly digest, Being fast fixed in her wounded spright, But it tormented her both day and night: Yet would she not thereto yeeld free accord, To serue the lowly vassall of her might, And of her seruant make her souerayne Lord: Sogreat her pride, that she such basenesse much abhord.

28

So much the greater still her anguish grew, Through stubborne handling of her loue-sicke hart:

And still the more she stroue it to subdew,
The more she still augmented her owne smart,
And wyder made the wound of th'hidden dart.
At last when long she struggled had in vaine,
She gan to stoupe, and her proud mind conuert
To meeke obeysance of loues mightie raine,
And him entreat for grace, that had procur'd
her paine.

ner panie. 29

Vnto her selfe in secret she did call
Hernearesthandmayd, whom she mostdid trust,
And to her said; Clarinda whom of all
I trust a liue, sith I thee fostred first;
Now is the time, that I vntimely must
Thereof make tryall, in my greatest need:
It is so hapned, that the heauens vniust,
Spighting my happie freedome, haue agreed,
To thrall my looser life, or my last bale to breed.

30

With that she turn'd her head, as halfe abashed, To hide the blush which in her visage rose, And through her eyes like sudden lightning flashed,

Decking her cheeke with a vermilion rose: But soone she did her countenance compose, And to her turning, thus began againe; Thisgriefesdeepewound I would to theedisclose, Theretocompelled through hart-murdring paire, But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth still restraine.

31

Ahmy deare dread (said then the faithfull Mayd)
Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart withhold,

Fhat many hath with dread of death dismayd.

And dare euen deathes most dreadfull face
behold?

Say on my souerayne Ladie, and be bold;
Doth not your handmayds life at your foot lie?
Therewith much comforted, she gan vnfold
The cause of her conceiued maladie,
As one that would confesse, yet fairs would it

As one that would confesse, yet faine would it denie.

Clarin (sayd she) thou seest yond Fayry Knight. Whom not my valour, but his owne braue mind Subiected hath to my vnequall might; What right is it, that he should thraldome find. For lending life to me a wretch vnkind; That for such good him recompence with ill? Therefore I cast, how I may him vnbind, And by his freedome get his free goodwill; Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still.

Bound vnto me, but not with such hard bands Of strong compulsion, and streight violence, As now in miserable state he stands; But with sweet loue and sure beneuolence, Voide of malitious mind, or foule offence. To which if thou canst win him any way, Without discouerie of my thoughts pretence, Both goodly meede of him it purchase may, Andeke withgratefullseruiceme right wellapay.

Which that thou mayst the better bring to pas, Loe here this ring, which shall thy warrant bee, And token true to old Eumenias, From time to time, when thou it best shalt see, That in and out thou mayst haue passage free. Goe now, Clarinda, well thy wits aduise, And all thy forces gather vnto thee; Armies of louely lookes, and speeches wise, With which thou canst euen loue himselfe to loue entise.

The trustic Mayd, conceiuing her intent,
Did with sure promise of her good indeuour,
Giuchergreat comfort, and some harts content.
So from her parting, she thenceforth did labour
With th'Elfin Knight, her Ladies best beloued;
With daily shew of courteous kind behauiour,
Euen at the markewhite of his hart she roued,
And with wide glauncing words, one day she thus
him proued.

Vnhappie Knight, vpon whose hopelesse state Fortune enuying good, hath felly frowned, And cruell heauens haue heapt an heauy fate; I rew that thus thy better dayes are drowned In sad despaire, and all thy senses swowned In stupid sorow, sith thy juster merit Might else haue with felicitie bene crowned: Looke vp at last, and wake thy dulled spirit, To thinke how this long death thou mightest disinherit.

Much did he maruell at her vncouth speach,
Whose hidden drift he could not well perceiue;
And gan to doubt, least she him sought
t'appeach

Of treason, or some guilefull traine did weaue, Through which she might his wretched life bereaue.

Both which to barre, he with this answere met

Faire Damzell, that with ruth (as I perceaue)
Of my mishaps, art mou'd to wish me better,
For such your kind regard, I can but rest your
detter.

38
Yet weet ye well, that to a courage great
It is no lesse beseeming well, to beare
The storme of fortunes frowne, or heauens
threat.

Then in the sunshine of her countenance cleare. Timely to ioy, and carrie comely cheare. For though this cloud haue now me ouercast, Yet doe I not of better times despeyre; And, though (vnlike) they should for euer last, Yet in my truthes assurance I rest fixed fast.

But what so stonie mind (she then replyde)
But if in his owne powre occasion lay,
Would to his hope a windowe open wyde,
And to his fortunes helpe make readie way?
Vnworthy sure (quoth he) of better day,
That will not take the offer of good hope,
And eke pursew, if he attaine it may.
Which speaches she applying to the scope
Of her intent, this further purpose to him shope.

Then why doest not, thou il's aduized man,
Make meanes to win thy libertie forlorne,
And try if thou by faire entreatie, can
Moue Radigund? who though she still haue
worne

Her dayes in warre, yet (weet thou) was not borne

Of Beares and Tygres, nor so saluage mynded, As that, albe all loue of men she scorne, She yet forgets, that she of men was kynded: And sooth of t seene, that proudes tharts base loue hath blynded.

Certes Clarinda, not of cancred will, (Sayd he) nor obstinate disdainefull mind, I haue forbore this duetie to fulfill: For well I may this weene, by that I fynd, That she a Queene, and come of Princely kynd, Both worthie is for to be sewd vnto, (hiefely by him, whose life her law doth bynd, And eke of powre her owne doome to vndo, And als' of princely grace to be inclyn'd thereto.

But want of meanes hath bene mine onely let,
From seeking fauour, where it doth abound;
Which if I might by your good office get,
I to your selfe should rest for euer bound,
And readie to descrue, what grace I found.
She feeling him thus bite vpon the bayt,
Yet doubting least his hold was but vnsound,
And not well fastened, would not strike him
strayt,

But drew him on with hope, fit leasure to awayt.

But foolish Mayd, whyles heedlesse of the hooke, She thus oft times was beating off and on, Throughslipperie footing, fell into the brooke, And there was caught to her confusion. For seeking thus to salue the Amazon, She wounded was with her deceipts owne dart, And gan thenceforth to cast affection, Conceiued close in her beguiled hart, To Artegal, through pittie of his causelesse smart.

Yet durst she not disclose her fancies wound, Ne to himselfe, for doubt of being sdayned, Ne yet to any other wight on ground, For feare her mistresse shold haue knowledge gayned,

But to her selfe it secretly retayned,
Within the closet of her couert brest:
The more thereby her tender hart was payned.
Yet to awayt fit time she weened best,
And fairely did dissemble her sad thoughts
vnrest.

One day her Ladie, calling her apart,
Gan to demaund of her some tydings good,
Touching her loues successe, her lingring smart.
Therewith she gan at first to change her mood,
As one adaw'd, and halfe confused stood;
But quickly she it ouerpast, so soone
As she her face had wypt, to fresh her blood:
Tho gan she tell her all, that she had donne,
And all the wayes she sought, his loue for to
haue wonne.

But sayd, that he was obstinate and sterne, Scorning her offers and conditions vaine; Ne would be taught with any termes, to lerne So fond a lesson, as to loue againe. Die rather would he in penurious paine, And his abridged dayes in dolour wast, Then his foes loue or liking entertaine: His resolution was both first and last, Hisbodiewas her thrall, his hart was freely plast.

Which when the cruell Amazon perceiued,
She gan to storme, and rage, and rend her gall,
For very fell despight, which she conceiued,
To be so scorned of a base borne thrall,
Whose life did lie in her least eye-lids fall;
Of which she vow'd with many a cursed threat.
That she therefore would him ere long forstall.
Nathlesse when calmed was her furious heat,
She chang'd that threatfull mood, and mildly
gan entreat.

What now is left Clarinda? what remaines, That we may compasse this our enterprize? Great shame to lose so long employed paines, And greater shame t'abide so great misprize, With which he dares our offers thus despize. Yet that his guilt the greater may appeare, And more my gratious mercie by this wize, I will a while with his first folly beare, Till thou haue tride againe, and tempted him more neare.

Say, and do all, that may thereto preuaile; Leaue nought vnpromist, that may him perswade, Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great auaile, With which the Gods themselues are mylder

made:
Thereto adde art, euen womens witty trade,
Theart of mightie words, that men can charme;
With which in case thou canst him not inuade,
Let him feele hardnesse of thy heauie arme:
Who will not stoupe with good, shall be made
stoupe with harme.

Some of his diet doe from him withdraw;
For I him find to be too proudly fed.
Giue him more labour, and with streighter law,
That he with worke may be forwearied.
Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed,
That may pull downe the courage of his pride;
And lay vpon him, for his greater dread,
Cold yron chaines, with which let him be tide;
And let, what euer he desires, be him denide.

When thou hast all this doen, then bring menews
Of his demeane: thenceforth not like a louer,
But like a rebell stout I will him vse.
For I resolue this siege not to giue ouer,
Till I the conquest of my will recouer.
So she departed, full of griefe and sdaine,
Which inly did to great impatience moue her.
But the false mayden shortly turn'd againe
Vnto the prison, where her hart did thrall
remaine.

There all her subtill nets she did vnfold, And all the engins of her wit display; In which she meant him warelesse to enfold. And of his innocence to make her pray. So cunningly she wrought her crafts assay, That both her Ladie, and her selfe withall. And eke the knight attonce she did betray: Butmosttheknight, whomshewithguilefullcall Did cast for to allure, into her trap to fall.

As a bad Nurse, which fayning to receive In herownermouththe food, ment forher chyld, Withholdes it to her selfe, and doeth deceive The infant, so for want of nourture spoyld: Euen so Clarinda her owne Dame beguyld, And turn'd the trust, which was in her affyde, To feeding of her private fire, which boyld II. rinward brest, and in her entrayles fryde, The morethat she it sought to cover and to hyde.

For comming to this knight, she purpose fayned, How earnest suit she earst for him had made Vntoher Queene, his freedome to haue gayned; But by no meanes could her thereto perswade: But that in stead thereof, she sternely bade His miserie to be augmented more, And many yron bands on him to lade. All which nathlesse she for his loue forbore: So praying him t'accept her seruice euermore.

And more then that, she promist that she would, In case she might finde fauour in his eye, Deuize how to enlarge him out of hould. The Fayrie glad to gaine his libertie, Can yeeld great thankes for such her curtesie, And with faire words, fit for the time and place, To feede the humour of her maladie, Promist, if she would free him from that case. He wold by all good means he might, deserve such grace.

So daily he faire semblant did her shew, Yet neuer meant he in his noble mind, To his owne absent loue to be vntrew: Ne euer did deceiptfull Clarin find In her false hart, his bondage to vnbind; But rather how she mote him faster tye. Therefore vnto her mistresse most vnkind She daily told, her loue he did defye, And him she told, her Dame his freedome did denye.

Yet thus much friendship she to him did show, That his scarse diet somewhat was amended, And his worke lessened, that his loue mote grow:
Yet to her Dame him still she discommended, That she with him mote be the more offended. Thus he long while in thraldome there remayned,

Of both beloued well, but litle frended; Vntill his owne true loue his freedome gayned, Which in an other Canto will be best contayned.

## Cant. VI.

## 

Talus brings newes to Britomart, of Artegals mishap, She goes to seeke him, Dolon meetes, who seekes her to entrap.

## \$

Some men, I wote, will deeme in Artegall
Great weaknesse, and report of him much ill,
For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall,
To th'insolent commaund of womens will;
That all his former praise doth fowly spill.
But he the man, that say or doe so dare,
Be well aduiz'd, that he stand stedfast still:
For neuer yet was wight so well aware,
But he at first or last was trapt in womens snare.

Yet in the streightnesse of that captiue state,
This gentle knight himselfe so well behaued,
That notwithstanding all the subtill bait,
With which those Amazons his loue still
craued.

To his owne loue his loialtie he saued:
Whose character in th'Adamantine mould
Of his true hart so firmely was engraued,
That no new loues impression euer could
Bereaue it thence: such blot his honour
blemish should.

Yet his owne loue, the noble Britomart,
Scarse so conceiued in her icalous thought,
What time sad tydings of his balefull smart
In womans bondage, Talus to her brought;
Brought in vntimely houre, ere it was sought.
For after that the vtmost date, assynde
For his returne, she waited had for nought,
She gan to cast in her misdoubtfull mynde
A thousand feares, that loue-sicke fancies faine
to fynde.

Sometime she feared, least some hard mishap Had him misfalne in his aduenturous quest; Sometime least his false foe did him entrap In traytrous traine, or had vnwares opprest: But most she did her troubled mynd molest, And secretly afflict with icalous feare, Least some new loue had him from her possest; Yet loth she was, since she no ill did heare, To thinke of him so ill: yet could she not forbeare.

\_

One while she blam'd her selfe; another whyle She him condemn'd, as trustlesse and vntrew: And then, her griefe with errour to beguyle, She fayn'd to count the time againe anew, As if before she had not counted trew. For houres but dayes; for weekes, that passed

were, She told but moneths, to make them seeme

more few:
Yet when shereckned them, stilldrawing neare,
Each hour did seeme a moneth, and euery moneth
a yeare.

But when as yet she saw him not returne,
She thought to send some one to seeke him out;
But none she found so fit to serue that turne,
As her owne selfe, to ease her selfe of dout.
Now she deuiz'd amongst the warlike rout
Of errant Knights, to seeke her errant Knight;
And then againe resolu'd to hunt him out
Amongst loose Ladies, lapped in delight:
And then both Knights enuide, and Ladies eke
did spight.

One day, when as she long had sought for ease In euery place, and euery place thought best, Yet found no place, that could her liking please, She to a window came, that opened West, Towards which coast her loue his way addrest. There looking forth, shee in her heart did find Many vaine fancies, working her vnrest; And sent her winged thoughts, more swift then wind,

To beare vnto her loue the message of her mind.

8

There as she looked long, at last she spide
One comming towards her with hasty speede:
Wellweendshethen, erchimsheplainedescride.
That it was one sent from her loue indeede.
Who when he nigh approcht, shee mote arede
That it was Talus, Artegall his groome;
Whereather heart was fild with hope and drede;
Ne would she stay, till he in place could come,
But ran to meete him forth, to know his tidings
somme.

Euen in the dore him meeting, she begun;
And where is he thy Lord, and how far hence?
Declare at once; and hath he lost or wun?
The yron man, albe he wanted sence
And sorrowes feeling, yet with conscience
Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake,
And stood still mute, as one in great suspence,
As if that by his silence he would make
Her rather reade his meaning, then him selfe
it spake.

1

Till she againe thus sayd; Talus be bold, And tell what euer it be, good or bad, That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth hold.

To whom he thus at length. The tidings sad, That I would hide, will needs, I see, be rad. My Lord, your loue, by hard mishap doth lie In wretched bondage, wofully bestad. Ay me (quoth she) what wicked destinie? And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy?

.

Not by that Tyrant, his intended foe; But by a Tyrannesse (he then replide,) That him captiued hath in haplesse woe. Cease thou bad newes-man, badly doest thou hide

Thy maisters shame, in harlots bondage tide. The rest my selfe too readily can spell. With that in rage she turn'd from him aside, Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell, And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

12

There she began to make her monefull plaint Against her Knight, for being so vntrew; Andhim to touch with falshoods fowle attaint, That all his other honour ouerthrew. Oft did she blame her selfe, and often rew, For yeelding to a straungers loue so light, Whoselifeandmannersstraungesheneuerknew; And euermore she did him sharpely twight For breach of faith to her, which he had firmely plight.

And then she in her wrathfull will did cast,
How to reuenge that blot of honour blent;
To fight with him, and goodly die her last:
And then againe she did her selfe torment,
Inflicting on her selfe his punishment.
A while she walkt, and chauft; a while she threw
Her selfe vppon her bed, and did lament:
Yet did she not lament with loude alew,
As women wont, but with deepe sighes, and
singults few.

Like as a wayward childe, whose sounder sleepe Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright, With froward will doth set him selfe to weepe; Ne can be stild for all his nurses might, But kicks, and squals, and shriekes for fell despight:

Now scratching her, and her loose locks misusing;

Now seeking darkenesse, and now seeking light; Then crauing sucke, and then the sucke refusing. Such was this Ladies fit, in her loves fond accusing.

But when she had with such vnquiet fits
Her selfe there close afflicted long in vaine,
Yet found no easement in her troubled wits,
She vnto *Talus* forth return'd againe,
By change of place seeking to ease her paine;
And gan enquire of him, with mylder mood,
The certaine cause of *Artegals* detaine;
And what he did, and in what state he stood,
And whether he did woo, or whether he were
woo'd.

1

Ah wellaway (sayd then the yron man,)
That he is not the while in state to woo;
But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and wan,
Not by strong hand compelled thereunto,
But his owne doome, that none can now vindoo.
Sayd I not then (quoth shee) erwhile aright,
That this is things compacte betwixt you two,
Me to deceive of faith vinto me plight,
Since that he was not forst, nor overcome in

fight?

17

With that he gan at large to her dilate. The whole discourse of his captiuance sad, In sort as ye haue heard the same of late. All which when she with hard enduraunce had Heard to the end, she was right sore bestad, With sodaine stounds of wrath and gricfe attone:

Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made, But streighther selfediddight, and armor don; And mounting to her steede, bad *Talus* guide her on.

18

So forth she rode vppon her ready way,
To seeke her Knight, as *Talus* her did guide:
Sadly she rode, and neuer word did say,
Nor good nor bad, ne euer lookt aside,
But still right downe, and in her thought did
hide

The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent To fierce auengement of that womans pride. Which had her Lord in her base prison pent, And so great honour with so fowle reproch had blent.

19

So as she thus melancholicke did ride,
Chawing the cud of griefe and inward paine,
She chaunst to meete toward the euen-tide
A Knight, that softly paced on the plaine,
As if him selfe to solace he were faine.
Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rather bent
To peace, then needlesse trouble to constraine.
As well by view of that his vestiment,
As by his modest semblant, that no euill ment.

20

He comming neare, gan gently her salute, With curteous words, in the most comely wize; Who though desirous rather to rest mute, Then termes to entertaine of common guize, Yet rather then she kindnesse would despize, She would her selfe displease, so him requite. Then gan the other further to deuize Of things abrode, as next to hand did light, And many things demaund, to which she

answer'd light.

For little lust had she to talke of ought,
Or ought to heare, that mote delightfull bee;
Her minde was whole possessed of one thought,
That gaue none other place. Which when as hee
By outward signes, (as well he might) did see,
He list no lenger to vse lothfull speach,
But her besought to take it well in gree,
Sith shady dampe had dimd the heauens reach.
To lodge with him that night, vales good cause

empeach.

The Championesse, now seeing night at dore, Was glad to yeeld vnto his good request: And with him went without gaine-saying more. Not farre away, but little wide by West, His dwelling was, to which he him addrest Where soone arriving they received were In seemely wise, as them bescemed best: For he their host them goodly well did cheare, And talk't of pleasant things, the night away to weare.

Thus passing th'euening well, till time of rest,
Then Britomari vnto a bowre was brought;
Where groomes awayted her to haue vndrest.
But she ne would vndressed be for ought,
Nedoffeherarmes, though he hermuch besought.
For she had vow'd, she sayd, not to forgo
Those warlike weedes, till she reuenge had
wrought

Of a late wrong vppon a mortall foe; Which she would sure performe, betide her wele

Which when their Host perceiu'd, right discontent

In minde he grew, for feare least by that art Heshouldhispurposemisse, which closehement: Yet taking leaue of her, he did depart. There all that night remained Britomart, Restlesse, recomfortlesse, with heart deepe grieued,

Not suffering the least twinckling sleepe to start Into her eye, which th' heart mote haue relieued, But if the least appear'd, her eyes she streight reprieued.

Ye guilty eyes (sayd she) the which with guyle My heart at first betrayd, will ye betray My life now to, for which a little whyle Ye will not watch? false watches, wellaway, I wote when ye did watch both night and day Ynto your losse: and now needes will ye sleepe?

Now ye haue made my heart to wake alway, Now will yesleepe? ah wake, and rather weepe, To thinke of your nights want, that should yee

waking keepe.

Thus did she watch, and weare the weary night In waylfull plaints, that none was to appease; Now walking soft, now sitting still vpright, As sundry chaunge her seemed best to ease. Ne lesse did Talus suffer sleepe to seaze His eye-lids sad, but watcht continually, Lying without her dore in great disease; Like to a Spaniell wayting carefully Least any should betray his Lady treacherously.

What time the natiue Belman of the night,
The bird, that warned Peter of his fall,
First rings his siluer Bell t'each sleepy wight,
That should their mindes vp to deuotion call,
She heard a wondrous noise below the hall.
All sodainely the bed, where she should lie,
By a false trap was let adowne to fall
Into a lower roome, and by and by
The loft was raysd againe, that no man could
it spie.

28
With sight whereof she was dismayd right sore, Perceiuing well the treason, which was ment: Yet stirred not at all for doubt of more, But kept her place with courage confident, Wayting what would ensue of that euent. It was not long, before she heard the sound Of armed men, comming with close intent Towards her chamber; at which dreadfull stound

She quickly caught her sword, and shield about her bound.

29

With that there came vnto her chamber dore Two Knights, all armed ready for to fight, And after them full many other more, A raskall rout, with weapons rudely dight. Whom soone as Talus spide by glims of night, He started vp, there where on ground he lay, And in his hand his thresher ready keight. They seeing that, let driue at him streight way, And round about him preace in riotous aray.

But soone as he began to lay about
With his rude yron flaile, they gan to flie,
Both armed Knights, and eke vnarmed rout:
Yet Talus after them apace did plie,
Where euer in the darke he could them spie;
That here and there like scattred sheepe they

tay.

They hacke returning, where his Dame did lie.

He to her told the story of that fray,

And all that treason there intended did bewray

2

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and inly burning.

To be auenged for so fowle a deede, Yet being forst to abide the daics returning, She there remain'd, but with right wary heede. Least any more such practise should proceede. Now mote ye know (that which to *Britomart* Vnknowen was) whence all this did proceede, And for what cause so great mischieuous smart was ment to her, that neuer cuill ment in hart

32

The goodman of this house was *Dolon* hight, A man of subtill wit and wicked minde, That whilome in his youth had bene a Knight, And armes had borne, but little good could finde,

And much lesse honour by that warlike kinde
Of life: for he was nothing valorous,
But with slie shiftes and wiles did vnderminde
All noble Knights, which were aduenturous,
And many brought to shame by treason
treacherous.

He had three sonnes, all three like fathers sonnes, Like treacherous, like full of fraud and guile. Of all that on this earthly compasse wonne. The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile By Artegall, through his owne guilty wile; His name was Guizor, whose vntimely fate For to auenge, full many treasons vile. His father Dolon had deuiz'd of late. With these his wicked sons, and shewd his cankred hate.

For sure he weend, that this his present guest Was Artegall, by many tokens plaine; But chiefly by that yron page he ghest, Which still was wont with Artegall remaine; And therefore ment him surely to haue slaine. But by Gods grace, and her good heedinesse, She was preserued from their traytrous traine. Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnesse, Nesuffredslothfullsleepehereyelidstooppresse.

35 The morrow next, so soone as dawning houre Discouered had the light to liuing eve. she forth yssew'd out of her loathed bowre, With full intent t'auenge that villany, On that vilde man, and all his family. And comming down to seeke them, where they

wond, Nor sire, nor sonnes, nor any could she spie: Eachrowmeshesought, but themallempty fond: They all were fled for feare, but whether, nether kond.

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay, Buttookehersteede, and the reonmounting light, Gan her addresse vnto her former way. She had not rid the mountenance of a flight, But that she saw there present in her sight, Those two false brethren, on that perillous

Bridge, On which Pollente with Artegall did fight. Streight was the passage like a ploughed ridge, That if two met, the one mote needes fall ouer the lidge.

There they did thinke them selues on her to wreake:

Who as she nigh vnto them drew, the one These vile reproches gan vnto her speake; Thou recreant false traytor, that with lone Of armes hast knighthood stolne, yet Knight

No more shall now the darkenesse of the night Defend thee from the vengeance of thy fone, But with thy bloud thou shalt appeare the spright Of Guizor, by thee slaine, and murdred by thy slight.

Strange were the words in Britomartis eare; Yet stayd she not for them, but forward fared, Till to the perillous Bridge she came, and there Talus desir'd, that he might have prepared The way to her, and those two losels scared. But she thereat was wroth, that for despight Theglauncingsparklesthroughherbeuerglared, And from her eies did flash out fiery light, Like coles, that through a siluer Censer sparkle bright.

She stayd not to aduise which way to take; But putting spurres vnto her fiery beast, Thorough the midstof them she way did make. The one of them, which most her wrath increast, Vppon her speare she bore before her breast, Till to the Bridges further end she past, Where falling downe, his challenge he releast: The other ouer side the Bridge she cast Into the river, where he drunke his deadly last.

As when the flashing Leuin haps to light Vppon two stubborne oakes, which stand so

That way betwixt them none appeares in sight; The Engin hercely flying forth, doth teare Th'one from the earth, and through the aire doth beare:

The other it with force doth ouerthrow, Vppon one side, and from his rootes doth reare. So did the Championesse those two therestrow, And to their sire their carcasses left to bestow.

# Cant. VII.

# \$15\$\text{\$0.00}\$\

Britomart comes to Isis Church. Where shee strange visions sees: She fights with Radigund, her slaves, And Artegall thence frees.

# 

Nought is on earth more sacred or divine, That Gods and men doe equally adore, Then this same vertue, that doth right define: For th'heuens themselues, whence mortal men implore

Right in their wrongs, are rul'dby righteous lore Of highest loue, who doth true justice deale To his inferiour Gods, and cuermore [weale: Therewith containes his heavenly Common-The skill whereof to Princes hearts he doth reueale.

Well therefore did the antique world inuent, That Iustice was a God of soucraine grace. And altars vnto him, and temples lent, And heavenly honours in the highest place; Calling him great Osyris, of the race Of th'old Agyptian Kings, that whylome were; With fayned colours shading a true case: For that Osyris, whilest he lived here. The justest man aliue, and truest did appeare.

His wife was Isis, whom they likewise made A Goddesse of great powre and souerainty, And in her person cunningly did shade That part of Iustice, which is Equity, Whereof I have to treat here presently. Vnto whose temple when as Britomari Arrived, shee with great humility Did enter in, ne would that night depart; But Talus mote not be admitted to her part. There she receiued was in goodly wize
Of many Priests, which duely did attend
Vppon the rites and daily sacrifize,
All clad in linnen robes with siluer hemd;
And on their heads with long locks comely
kemd,

They wore rich Mitres shaped like the Moone, To shew that *Isis* doth the Moone portend; Like as *Osyris* signifies the Sunne.

For that they both like race in equal iustice runne.

i umie.

The Championesse them greeting, as she could, Was thence by them into the Temple led; Whose goodly building when she did behould, Borne vppon stately pillours, all dispred With shining gold, and arched ouer hed, She wondred at the workemans passing skill, Whose like before she neuer saw nor red; And thereuppon long while stood gazing still, But thought, that she thereon could neuer gaze her fill.

6

Thence forth vnto the Idoll they her brought,
The which was framed all of siluer fine,
So well as could with cunning hand be wrought,
And clothed all in garments made of line,
Hemd all about with fringe of siluer twine.
Vppon her head she wore a Crowne of gold,
To shew that she had powre in things diuine;
And at her feete a Crocodile was rold,
That with her wreathed taile her middle did
enfold.

7

One foote was set vppon the Crocodile, And on the ground the other fast did stand, So meaning to suppresse both forged guile, And open force: and in her other hand Shestretched forth a long whitesclender wand. Such was the Goddesse; whom when Britomart Had long beheld, her selfe vppon the land She did prostrate, and with right humble hart, Vnto her selfe her silent prayers did impart.

8

To which the Idoll as it were inclining,
Her wand did moue with amiable looke,
By outward shew her inward sence desining.
Who well perceiuing, how her wand she shooke,
It as a token of good fortune tooke.
By this the day with dampe was ouercast,
And ioyous light the house of loue forsooke:
Which when she saw, her helmet she vnlaste,
And by the altars side her selfe to slumber
plaste.

For other beds the Priests there vsed none, But on their mother Earths deare lap did lie, And bake their sides vppon the cold hard stone, T'enure them selues to sufferaunce thereby And proud rebellious flesh to mortify. For by the vow of their religion They tied were to stedfast chastity, And continence of life, that all forgon, They mote the better tend to their deuotion.

IC

Therefore they mote not taste of fleshly food, Ne feed on ought, the which doth bloud containe.

Ne drinke of wine, for wine they say is blood, Euen the bloud of Gyants, which were slaine, By thundring Joue in the Phlegrean plaine. For which the earth (as they the story tell) Wroth with the Gods, which to perpetuall paine Had damn'd her sonnes, which gainst them did rebell.

With inward griefe and malice did against them swell.

7.7

And of their vitall bloud, the which was shed Into her pregnant bosome, forth she brought The fruitfull vine, whose liquor blouddy red Hauing the mindes of men with fury fraught, Mote in them stirre vp old rebellious thought, To make new warre against the Gods againe: Suchisthe powre of that same fruit, that nought The fell contagion may thereof restraine, Ne within reasons rule, her madding mood containe.

12

There did the warlike Maide her selfe repose, Vnder the wings of Isis all that night, And with sweete rest her heavy eyes did close, After that long daies toile and weary plight. Wherewhilest herearthly parts with soft delight Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie, There did appeare vnto her heavenly spright A wondrous vision, which did close implie The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

Her seem'd, as she was doing sacrifize
To Isis, deckt with Mitre on her hed,
And linnen stole after those Priestes guize,
All sodainely she saw transfigured
Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red,
And Moone-like Mitre to a Crowne of gold,
That euen she her selfe much wondered
At such a chaunge, and ioyed to behold
Her selfe, adorn'dwithgems and iewels manifold.

And in the midst of her felicity. An hideous tempest seemed from below. To rise through all the Temple sodainely, That from the Altar all about did blow The holy fire, and all the embers strow Vopon the ground, which kindled privily, Into outragious flames vnwares did grow, That all the Temple put in ieopardy Of flaming, and her selfe in great perplexity.

With that the Crocodile, which sleeping lay Vnder the Idols feete in fearelesse bowre, Seem'd to awake in horrible dismay, As being troubled with that stormy stowre; And gaping greedy wide, did streight deuoure Both flames and tempest: with which growen

And swolne with pride of his owne peerelesse

He gan to threaten her likewise to eat; But that the Goddesse with her rod him backe did beat.

The turning all his pride to humblesse meeke, llim selfe before her feete he lowly threw. And gan for grace and loue of her to seeke: Which she accepting, he so neare her drew, That of his game she soone enwombed grew, And forth did bring a Lion of great might; That shortly did all other beasts subdew. With that she waked, full of fearefull fright, And doubtfully dismayd through that so vncouth sight.

So thereuppon long while she musing lay, With thousand thoughts feeding her fantasie, Vntill she spide the lampe of lightsome day, Vp-lifted in the porch of heaven hie. Then vp she rose fraught with melancholy, And forth into the lower parts did pas; Whereas the Priestes she found full busily About their holy things for morrow Mas: Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted was.

But by the change of her vnchearefull looke, They might perceive, she was not well in plight; Or that some pensiuenesse to heart she tooke. Therefore thus one of them, who seem'd in sight To be the greatest, and the grauest wight, To her bespake; Sir Knight it seemes to me, That thorough euill rest of this last night, Or ill apayd, or much dismayd ye be, That by your change of cheare is easie for to see.

10

Certes (sayd she) sith ye so well have spide The troublous passion of my pensiue mind. I will not seeke the same from you to hide, But will my cares vnfolde, in hope to find Your aide, to guide me out of errour blind. Say on (quoth he) the secret of your hart: For by the holy vow, which me doth bind, I am adjur'd, best counsell to impart

To all, that shall require my comfort in their smart.

Then gan she to declare the whole discourse Of all that vision, which to her appeard, As well as to her minde it had recourse. All which when he vnto the end had heard. Like to a weake faint hearted man he fared. Through great astonishment of that strange sight :

And with long locks vp-standing, stifly stared Like one adawed with some dreadfull spright. So fild with heavenly fury, thus he her behight.

Magnificke Virgin, that in queint disguise Of British armes doest maske thy royall blood, So to pursue a perillous emprize, How couldst thou weene, through that disguized hood,

To hide thy state from being vnderstood? Can from th'immortall Gods ought hidden bee? They doe thy linage, and thy Lordly brood; They doe thy sire, lamenting sore for thee \* They doe thy loue, forlorne in womens thral-

dome see.

The end whereof, and all the long euent, They doe to thee in this same dreame discouer. For that same Crocodile doth represent The righteous Knight, that is thy faithfull Like to Osyris in all just endcuer. flouer. For that same Crocodile Osyris is, That under Isis feete doth sleepe for euer: To shew that elemence oft in things amis, Restraines those sterne behests, and cruell doomes of his.

That Knight shall all the troublous stormes asswage.

And raging flames, that many foes shall reare, To hinder thee from the just heritage [deare. Of thy sires Crowne, and from thy countrey Then shalt thou take him to thy loued fere, And joyne in equall portion of thy realme. And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare. That Lion-like shall shew his powre extreame: So blesse thee God, and give thee ioyance of thy dreame.

All which when she vnto the end had heard, She much was eased in her troublous thought, And on those Priests bestowed rich reward: And royall gifts of gold and siluer wrought. She for a present to their Goddesse brought. Then taking leaue of them, she forward went, To seeke her loue, where he was to be sought; Ne rested till she came without relent Vnto the land of Amazons, as she was bent.

25

Whereof when newes to Radigund was brought, Not with amaze, as women wonted bee, She was confused in her troublous thought, But fild with courage and with ioyous glee, As glad to heare of arms, the which now she Had long surceast, she bad to open bold, That she the face of her new foe might see. But when they of that yron man had told, Which late her folke had slaine, she bad them forth to hold.

26

So there without the gate (as seemed best)
She caused her Pauilion be pight;
In which stout *Britomart* her selfe did rest,
Whiles *Talus* watched at the dore all night.
All night likewise, they of the towne in fright,
Vppon their wall good watch and ward did
keepe.

The morrow next, so soone as dawning light Bad doe away the dampe of drouzie sleepe, The warlike Amazonout of her bowre did peepe

27

And caused streight a Trumpet loud to shrill,
To warne her foe to battell soone be prest:
Who long before awoke (for she ful ill
Could sleepe all night, that in vnquiet brest
Did closely harbour such a icalous guest)
Was to the battell whilome ready dight.
Eftsoones that warriouresse with haughty crest
Did forth issue, all ready for the fight:
On th'other side her foe appeared soone in sight.

28

But ere they reared hand, the Amazone
Began the streight conditions to propound,
With which she vsed still to tye her fone;
To serue her so, as she the rest had bound.
Which when the other heard, she sternly frownd
For high disdaine of such indignity,
And would no lenger treat, but bad them
sound.

For her no other termes should euer tie Then what prescribed were by lawes of cheualrie. 29

The Trumpets sound, and they together run With greedy rage, and with their faulchins smot;

Ne either sought the others strokes to shun, But through great fury both their skill forgot, And practicke vse in armes: ne spared not Their dainty parts, which nature had created So faire and tender, without staine or spot, For other vses, then they them translated; Which they now hackt and hewd, as if such vse they hated,

As when a Tygre and a Lionesse
Are met at spoyling of some hungry pray,
Both challenge it with equall greedinesse:
But first the Tygre clawes thereon did lay;
And therefore both to loose her right away,
Doth in defence thereof full stoutly stond:
To which the Lion strongly doth gainesay,
That she to hunt the beast first tooke in hond;
And therefore ought it haue, where euer she it
fond.

Full fiercely layde the Amazon about,
And dealt her blowes vnmercifully sore.
Which Britomart withstood with courage stout,
And them repaide againe with double more.
So long they fought, that all the grassie flore
Was fild with bloud, which from their sides
did flow.

And gushed through their armes, that all lingore They trode, and on the ground their liues did strow,

Like fruitles seede, of which vntimely death should grow.

At last proud Radigund with fell despight, Haung by chaunce espide aduantage neare, Let driue at her with all her dreadfull might, And thus vpbrayding said; This token beare Vnto the man, whom thou doest loue so deare; And tell him for his sake thy life thou gauest. Which spitefull words she sore engrieu'd to heare, Thus answer'd; Lewdly thou my loue deprauest, Who shortly must repent that now so vainely brauest.

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell passage found, That glauncing on her shoulder plate, it bit Vnto the bone, and made a griesly wound, That she her shield through raging smart of it Could scarse vphold; yet soone she it require. For hauing force increast through furious paine, She her so rudely on the helmet smit, That it empierced to the very braine,

And her proud person low prostrated on the plaine.

Where being layd, the wrothfull Britonesse Stayd not, till she came to her selfe againe. But in reuenge both of her loues distresse. And her late vile reproch, though vaunted

And also of her wound, which sore did paine. She with one stroke both head and helmet cleft. Which dreadfull sight, when all her warlike traine

There present saw, each one of sence bereft, Fled fast into the towne, and her sole victor left.

But yet so fast they could not home retrate. But that swift Talus did the formost win: And pressing through the preace vnto the gate, Pelmell with them attonce did enter in. There then a piteous slaughter did begin: For all that euer came within his reach, He with his yron flale did thresh so thin. That he no worke at all left for the leach: Like to an hideous storme, which nothing may empeach.

And now by this the noble Conqueresse Her selfe came in, her glory to partake: Where though reuengefull vowshe did professe, Yet when she saw the heapes, which he did

Of slaughtred carkasses, her heart did quake For very ruth, which did it almost riue, That she his fury willed him to slake: For else he sure had left not one aline, But all in his reuenge of spirite would depriue.

Tho when she had his execution stayd, She for that yron prison did enquire, In which her wretched loue was captine layd: Which breaking open with indignant ire, She entred into all the partes entire. Where when she saw that lothly vncouth sight, Of men disguiz'd in womanishe attire, Her heart gan grudge, for very deepe despight Of so vnmanly maske, in misery misdight.

At last when as to her owne Loue she came, Whom like di-guize no lesse deformed had, At sight thereof abasht with secrete shame, he turnd her head aside, as nothing glad, To have beheld a spectacle so bad: And then too well beleeu'd, that which tofore lealous suspect as true vntruely drad, Which vaine conceipt now nourishing no more, She sought with ruth to salue his sad misfortunes sore.

30 Not so great wonder and astonishment, Did the most chast Penelope possesse. To see her Lord, that was reported drent, And dead long since in dolorous distresse, Come home to her in pitcous wretchednesse, After long trauell of full twenty yeares. That she knew not his fauours likelynesse, For many scarres and many hoary heares. But stood long staring on him, mongst vncertaine feares.

Ah my deare Lord, what sight is this (quoth she) What May-game hath misfortune made of you? Where is that dreadfull manly looke? where be Those mighty palmes, the which ve wont t'em-

Inbloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? Couldought on earth so wondrous change haue wrought.

As to have robde you of that manly hew? Could so great courage stouped have to ought? Then farewell fleshly force; I see thy pride is nought.

Thenceforth shest reight into a how rehim brought, And cause thim those vncomely weedes vndight; And in their steede for other rayment sought. Whereof there was great store, and armors

Which had bene reft from many anoble Knight; Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had, Whilest Fortune fanourd her successe in fight. In which when as she him anew had clad, She was reuiu'd, and joyd much in his semblance glad.

So there a while they afterwards remained, Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale: During which spaces he there as Princess rained, And changing all that forme of common weale, The liberty of women did repeale, Which they had long vsurpt; and them restoring To mens subjection, did true Instice deale: That all they as a Goddesse her adoring,

Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her loring.

For all those Knights, which long in captive shade Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome And magistrates of all that city made, [free; And gaue to them great living and large fee: And that they should for cuer faithfull bee, Made them sweare fealty to Artegall. Who when him selfe now well recur'd did see, He purposed to proceed, what so be fall, Vppon his first aduenture, which him forth did call.

Full sad and sorrowfull was Britomart
For his departure, her new cause of griefe;
Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,
Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,
Consisted much in that aduentures priefe.
The care whereof, and hope of his successe
Gaue vnto her great comfort and reliefe,
That womanish complaints she did represse,
And tempred for the time her present heauinesse.

There she continu'd for a certaine space,
Tillthrough his want her woe did more increase:
Then hoping that the change of aire and place
Would change her paine, and sorrowsomewhat
ease.

She parted thence, her anguish to appease. Meane while her noble Lord sir Artegall Went on his way, ne euer howre did cease, Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall: That for another Canto will more fitly fall.

## Cant. VIII.

#### 

Prince Arthure and Sir Artegall,
Free Samient from feare:
They slay the Souldan, driue his wife,
Adicia to despaire.

## 

I

Nought vnder heauen so strongly doth allure
The sence of man, and all his minde possesse,
As beauties louely baite, that doth procure
Great warriours oft their rigour to represse,
And mighty hands forget their manlinesse;
Drawne with the powre of an heart-robbing eye,
And wrapt in fetters of a golden tresse,
That can with melting pleasaunce mollifye
Their hardned hearts, enur'd to bloud and
cruelty.

So whylome learnd that mighty Iewish swaine, Each of whose lockes did match a man in might, To lay his spoiles before his lemans traine: So also did that great Oetean Knight For his loues sake his Lions skin vndight: And so did warlike Antony neglect The worlds whole rule for Cleopatras sight. Such wondrous powre hath wemens faire aspect, To captiue men, and make them all the world reject.

Yet could it not sterne Artegall retaine,
Nor hold from suite of his auowed quest,
Which he had vndertane to Gloriane;
But left his loue, albe her strong request,
Faire Britomart in languor and vnrest,
And rode him selfe vppon his first intent:
Ne day nor night did euer idly rest;
Ne wight but onely Talus with him went,
Thetrue guide of his way and vertuous gouernment.

So trauelling, he chaust far off to heed A Damzell, flying on a palfrey fast Before two Knights, that after her did speed With all their powre, and her full fiercely chast In hope to haue her ouerhent at last: Yet fled she fast, and both them farre outwent. Carried with wings of feare, like fowle aghast, With locks all loose, and rayment all to rent: And euer as she rode, her eye was backeward bent.

Soone after these he saw another Knight,
That after those two former rode apace,
With speare in rest, and prickt with all his
might:

So ran they all, as they had bene at bace, They being chased, that did others chase. At length he saw the hindmost ouertake One of those two, and force him turne his face; How euer loth he were his way to slake, Yet mote he algates now abide, and answere make.

6

But th'other still pursu'd the fearefull Mayd; Who still from him as fast away did flie, Ne once for ought her speedy passage stayd, Till that at length she did before her spie Sir Artegall, to whom she streight did hie With gladfull hast, in hope of him to get Succour against her greedy enimy: Who seeing her approch gan forward set, To saue her from her feare, and him from force to let.

But he like hound full greedy of his pray,
Being impatient of impediment,
Continu'd still his course, and by the way
Thought with his speare him quight haue
ouerwent.
So both together ylike felly bent,
Like fiercely met. But Artegall was stronger,
And better skild in Tilt and Turnament,

And bore him quite out of his saddle, longer Then two speares length; So mischiefe ouermatcht the wronger. And in his fall misfortune him mistooke; For on his head vnhappily he pight, That his owne waight his necke asunder broke, And left there dead. Meane while the other Knight

Defeated had the other favtour quight, And all his bowels in his body brast: Whom leaving there in that dispiteous plight, He ran still on, thinking to follow fast His other fellow Pagan, which before him past.

In stead of whom finding there ready prest Sir Artegall, without discretion He at him ran, with ready speare in rest: Who seeing him come still so fiercely on, Against him made againe. So both anon Together met, and strongly either strooke And broke their speares; yet neither has forgon His horses backe, yet to and fro long shooke, And tottred like two towres, which through a tempest quooke.

But when againe they had recoucred sence, They drew their swords, in mind to make amends For what their speares had fayld of their pretence Which when the Damzell, who those deadly ends Of both her foes had seene, and now her frends For her beginning a more fearefull fray, She to them runnes in hast, and herhaire rends, Crying to them their cruell hands to stay, Vntill they both doe heare, what she to them will say.

They stayd their hands, when she thus gan to speake :

Ah gentle Knights, what meane ye thus vnwise Vpon your selues anothers wrong to wreake? I am the wrong'd, whom ye did enterprise Both to redresse, and both redrest likewise: Witnesse the Paynims both, whom ye may see Theredead on ground. What doe ye then deuise Of more reuenge? if more, then I am shee, Which was the roote of all, end your reuenge on mee.

Whom when they heard so say, they look t about, To weete if it were true, as she had told; Where when they saw their foes dead out of doubt, [hold. Eftsoones they gan their wrothfull hands to And Ventailes reare, each other to behold. Tho when as Artegall did Arthure vew, So faire a creature, and so wondrous bold, He much admired both his heart and hew, And touched with intireaffection, nigh him drew. I

13 Saving, Sir Knight, of pardon I you pray. That all vnweeting have you wrong dthus sore. Suffring my hand against my heart to stray: Which if we please forgiue, I will therefore Yeeld for amends my selfe yours euermore. Or what so penaunce shall by you be red. To whom the Prince; Certes me needeth more To craue the same, whom errour so misled, As that I did mistake the liuing for the ded.

But sith ye please, that both our blames shall die, Amends may for the trespasse soone be made, Since neither is endamadg'd much thereby. So can they both them selves full eath perswade To faire accordaunce, and both faults to shade. Either embracing other louingly. And swearing faith to either on his blade, Neuer thenceforth to nourish enmity, But either others cause to maintaine mutually.

Then Artegall gan of the Prince enquire, What were those knights, which there on ground were layd,

And had receiv'd their follies worthy hire, And for what cause they chased so that Mayd. Certes I wote not well (the Prince then sayd) But by aduenture found them faring so, As by the way vnweetingly I strayd, And lo the Damzell selfe, whence all did grow, Of whom we may at will the whole occasion know.

Then they that Damzell called to them nie, And asked her, what were those two her fone, From whom she earst so fast away did flie; And what was she her selfe so woe begone, And for what cause pursu'd of them attone. To whom she thus; Then wote ye well, that I Doe serue a Queene, that not far hence doth

A Princesse of great powre and maiestie, Famous through all the world, and honor'd far and nie.

Her name Mercilla most men vse to call; That is a mayden Queene of high renowne, For her great bounty knowen ouer all, And soueraine grace, with which her royall

She doth support, and strongly beateth downe The malice of her foes, which her enuy, And at her happinesse do fret and frowne: Yet she her selfe the more doth magnify, And even to her foes her mercies multiply.

Mongst many which maligne her happy state,
There is a mighty man, which wonnes here by
That with most fell despight and deadly hate,
Seekes to subuert her Crowne and dignity,
And all his powre doth thereunto apply:
And her good Knights, of which so braue
a band

Serues her, as any Princesse vnder sky, He either spoiles, if they against him stand, Or to his part allures, and bribeth vnder hand.

10

Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill,
Which he vnto her people does each day,
But that he seekes by traytrous traines to
spill
Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay:
That O ye heauens defend, and turne away
From her, vnto the miscreant him selfe,
That neither hath religion nor fay,
But makes his God of his vngodly pelfe,
And Idols serues; so let his Idols serue the Elfe.

20

To all which cruell tyranny they say, the is pronokt, and stird up day and night By his bad wife, that hight Adicia, Whocounselshim through confidence of might, To breake all bonds of law, and rules of right. For she her selfe professeth mortall foe To Justice, and against her still doth fight, Working to all, that loue her, deadly woe, Andmaking allher Knightsand people to doe so.

21

Which my liege Lady seeing, thought it best, With that his wife in friendly wise to deale, For stint of strife, and stablishment of rest Both to her selfe, and to her common weale, And all forepast displeasures to repeale. So me in message vnto her she sent, To treat with her by way of enterdeale, Of finall peace and faire attonement, Which might concluded be by mutuall consent.

22

All times haue wont safe passage to afford
To messengers, that come for causes iust:
But this proude Dame disdayning all accord,
Not onely into bitter termes forth brust,
Reuiling me, and rayling as she lust,
But lastly to make proofe of vtmost shame.
Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust,
Miscalling me by many a bitter name,
That neuer did her ill, ne once descrued blame.

23

And lastly, that no shame might wanting be, When I was gone, soone after me she sent These twofalse Knights, whom there yelying see, To be by them dishonoured and shent: But thankt be God, and your good hardiment, They haue the price of their owne folly payd. So said this Damzell, that hight Sament, And to those knights, for their so noble ayd, Her selfe most grateful shew'd, and heaped thanks repayd.

Butthey now having throughly heard, and scene Al those great wrongs, the which that mayd complained

To haue bene done against her Lady Queene, By that proud dame, which her so much disdained, Were moued much thereat, and twixt them Withalltheirforcetoworkeauengementstrong Vppon the Souldan selfe, which it mayntained, And on his Lady, th'author of that wrong, And vppon all those Knights, that did to her belong.

But thinking best by counterfet disguise

To their descigne to make the easier way, Theydidthis complot twixthem selues deuise, First, that sir Artegall should him array, Likeone of those two Knights, which dead there And then that Damzell, the sad Samient, [lay. Should as his purchast prize with him convay Vnto the Souldans court, her to present Vnto his scornefull Lady, that for her had sent.

26

So as they had deuiz'd, sir Artegall
Him clad in th'armour of a Pagan knight,
And taking with him, as his vanquisht thrall,
That Damzell, led her to the Souldans right.
Where soone as his proud wife of her had sight,
Forth of her window as she looking lay,
She weenedstreight, it was her Paynim Knight,
Which brought that Damzell, as his purchast

And sent to him a Page, that mote direct his way.

Who bringing them to their appointed place, Offred his seruice to disarme the Knight; But he refusing him to let vnlace, For doubt to be discouered by his sight, Kepthimselfestillin his straungearmour dight. Soone after whom the Prince arrived there, And sending to the Souldan in despight A bold defyance, did of him requere That Damzell, whom he held as wrongfull prisonere.

Wherewith the Souldan all with furie fraught. Swearing, and banning most blasphemously, Commaundedstraighthisarmour to be brought. And mounting straight upon a charret hye. With yron wheeles and hookes arm'd dreadfully.

And drawne of cruell steedes, which he had fed With flesh of men, whom through fell tyranny He slaughtred had, and ere they were halfe ded. Their bodies to his beasts for prouender did spred.

So forth he came all in a cote of plate, Burnisht with bloudie rust, whiles on the greene The Briton Prince him readie did awayte. In glistering armes right goodly well beseene, That shone as bright, as doth the heaven

And by his stirrup Talus did attend, Playing his pages part, as he had beene Before directed by his Lord; to th'end He should his flale to finall execution bend.

Thus goe they both together to their geare. With like fierce minds, but meanings different: For the proud Souldan with presumpteous cheare,

And countenance sublime and insolent, Sought onely slaughter and auengement: But the braue Prince for honour and for right, Gainst tortious powre and lawlesse regiment, In the behalfe of wronged weake did fight: More in his causes truth he trusted then in might.

Like to the Thracian Tyrant, who they say Vnto his horses gaue his guests for meat, Till he himselfe was made their greedie pray, And torne in peeces by Alcides great. So thought the Souldan in his follies threat, Either the Prince in peeces to have torne With his sharpe wheeles, in his first rages heat, Or vnder his fierce horses feet have borne And trampled downe in dust his thoughts disdained scorne.

But the bold child that perill well espying, If he too rashly to his charet drew, Gaue way vnto his horses speedie flying, And their resistlesse rigour did eschew. Yet as he passed by, the Pagan threw A shiuering dart with so impetuous force, That had he not it shun'd with heedfull vew, It had himselfe transfixed, or his horse, Or made them both one masse withouten more remorse

33

Oft drew the Prince vnto his charret nigh, In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare . But he was mounted in his seat so high. And his wingfooted coursers him did beare So fast away, that ere his readie speare He could advance, he farre was gone and past. Yet still he him did follow every where, And followed was of him likewise full fast: So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did

Againe the Pagan threw another dart, Of which he had with him abundant store, On every side of his embatteld cart, And of all other weapons lesse or more, Which warhke vses had deuiz'd of yore. The wicked shaft guyded through th'ayrie wyde. By some bad spirit, that it to mischiefe bore, Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde, And made a griesly wound in his enriuen side.

Much was he grieued with that haplesse throe, That opened had the welsoring of his blood: But much the more that to his hatefull foe He mote not come, to wreake his wrathfull

That made him raue, like to a Lyon wood, Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand Can not come neare him in the couert wood, Where he with boughes hath built his shady stand.

And fenst himselfe about with many a flaming brand.

Still when he sought t'approch vnto him ny. His charret wheeles about him whirled round, And made him backe againe as fast to fly; And eke his steedes like to an hungry hound, That hunting after game hath carrion found, So cruelly did him pursew and chace, That his good steed, all were he much renound For noble courage, and for hardie race,

Durst not endure their sight, but fled from place to place.

Thus long they trast, and trauerst to and fro, Seeking by enery way to make some breach, Yet could the Prince not nigh vnto him goe, That one sure stroke he might vnto him reach, Whereby his strengthes assay he might him teach.

At last from his victorious shield he drew The vaile, which did his powrefull light empeach; And comming full before his horses vew, As they vpon him prest, it plaine to them did shew.

Like lightening flash, that hath the gazer burned, So did the sight thereof their sense dismay, That backe againe vpon themselues they turned, And with their ryder ranne perforce away: Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay, With raynes, or wonted rule, as well he knew. Nought feared they, what he could do, or say, But th'onely feare, that was before their vew; From which like mazed deare, dismayfully they flew.

Fast did they fly, as them their feete could beare, High ouer hilles, and lowly ouer dales, As they were follow'd of their former feare. In vaine the Pagan bannes, and sweares, and

rayles,
And backe with both his hands vnto him hayles
The resty raynes, regarded now no more:
He to them calles and speakes, yet nought
auayles;

They heare him not, they have forgot his lore, But go, which way they list, their guide they have forlore.

As when the firie-mouthed steeds, which drew The Sunnes bright wayne to *Phaetons* decay, Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew, With vgly craples crawling in their way, The dreadfull sight did them so sore affray, That their well knowen courses they forwent, And leading th'euer-burning lumpe astray, This lower world nigh all to ashes brent, And left their scorched path yet in the firmament.

Such was the furie of these head-strong steeds, Soone as the infants sunlike shield they saw, That all obedience both to words and deeds They quite forgot, and scornd all former law; Through woods, and rocks, and mountaines they did draw

The yron charet, and the wheeles did teare, And tost the Paynim, without feare or awe; From side to side they tost him here and there, Crying to them in vaine, that nould his crying heare.

Yet still the Prince pursew'd him close behind, Oft making offer him to smite, but found No easie meanes according to his mind. At last they haue all ouerthrowne to ground Quite topside turuey, and the pagan hound Amongst the yron hookes and graples keene, Torne all to rags, and rent with many a wound, That no whole peece of him was to be seene. But scattred all about, and strow'd vpon the greene.

Like as the cursed sonne of *Theseus*,
That following his chace in dewy morne,
To fly his stepdames loues outrageous,
Of his owne steedes was all to peeces torne,
And his faire limbs left in the woods forlorne;
That for his sake *Diana* did lament, [mourne.
And all the wooddy Nymphes did wayle and
So was this Souldan rapt and all to rent.

4.3

Onely his shield and armour, which there lay, Though nothing whole, but all to brusd and broken.

That of his shape appear'd no litle moniment.

He vp did take, and with him brought away, That mote remaine for an eternall token To all, mongst whom this storie should be spoken.

How worthily, by heauens high decree, Iusticethat day of wrong her selfe had wroken, That all men which that spectacle did see, By like ensample mote for euer warned bec.

So on a tree, before the Tyrants dore,
He caused them be hung in all mens sight,
To be a moniment for euermore.
Which when his Ladie from the castles hight
Beheld, it much appald her troubled spright:
Yet not, as women wont in dolefull fit,
She was dismayd, or faynted through affright,
But gathered vnto her her troubled wit,
And gan eftsoones deuize to be aueng'd for it.

Streight downe she ranne, like an enraged cow,
That is berobbed of her youngling dere,
With knife in hand, and fatally did vow,
To wreake her on that mayden messengere,
Whom she had causd be kept as prisonere,
By Artegall, misween'd for her owne Knight.
That brought her backe. And comming
present there.

She at her ran with all her force and might, All flaming with reuenge and furious despight.

Like raging Ino, when with knife in hand
She threw her husbands murdred infant out,
Or fell Medea, when on Colchicke strand
Her brothers bones she scattered all about;
Or as that madding mother, mongst the rout
Of Bacchus Priests her owne deare flesh did
teare.

Yet neither *Ino*, nor *Medea* stout, Nor all the *Mænades* so furious were, [there. As this bold woman, when she saw that Damzell .18

But Artegall being thereof aware,
Did stay her cruell hand, ere she her raught,
And as she did her selfe to strike prepare,
Out of her fist the wicked weapon caught:
With that like one enfelon'd or distraught,
She forth did rome, whether her rage her bore,
With franticke passion, and with furie fraught;
And breaking forth out at a posterne dore,
Vito the wyld wood ranne, her dolours to
deplore.

As a mad bytch, when as the franticke fit Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath, Doth runne at randon, and with furious bit Snatching at euery thing, doth wreake her wrath On man and beast, that commeth in her path. There they doe say, that she transformed was Into a Tygre, and that Tygres scath In crueltie and outrage she did pas, To proue her surname true, that she imposed has.

50

Then Artegall himselfe discourring plaine, Did issue forth gainst all that warlike rout Of knights and armed men, which did maintaine

That Ladies part, and to the Souldan lout:
All which he did assault with courage stout.
All were they nigh an hundred knights of name,
And like wyld Goates them chaced all about,
Flying from place to place with cowheard
shame,

So that with finall force them all he ouercame.

ςι

Then caused he the gates be opened wyde,
And there the Prince, as victour of that day,
With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde,
Presenting him with all the rich array,
And roiall pompe, which there long hidden lay,
Purchast through lawlesse powre and tortious
wrong

Of that proudSouldan, whom he earst did slay. So both for rest there having stayd not long, Marcht with that mayd, fit matter for another song.



## Cant. IX.

### 

Arthur and Artegall catch Guyle whom Talus doth dismay,
They to Mercillaes pallace come,
and see her rich array.

### COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

1

What Tygre, or what other saluage wight
Is so exceeding furnous and fell,
Aswrong, when it hath arro'd it selfe with might?
Not fit mongst men, that doe with reason mell,
But mongst wyld beasts and saluage woods to
dwell:

Where still the stronger doth the weake denoure, And they that most in boldnesse doe excell. Are dreadded most, and feared for their powre: Fit for Adicia, there to build her wicked bown

2

There let her wonne farre from resort of men, Where righteous Artegall her late exyled There let her euer keepe her damned den, Where none may be with her lewd parts defyled.

Nor none but beasts may be of her despoyled: And turne we to the noble Prince, where late We did him leaue, after that he had foyled The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull fate Had viterly subuerted his virighteous state.

Where having with Sir Artegall a space
Well solast in that Souldans late delight,
They both resoluing now to leave the place,
Both it and all the wealth therein behight
Vnto that Damzell in her Ladies right,
And so would have departed on their way.
Butshe them woo'd by all the meanes she might,
And earnestly be sought, to wend that day
With her, to see her Ladie thence not farre away.

4

By whose entreatie both they ouercommen, Agree to goe with her, and by the way, (As often falles) of sundry things did commen. Mongst which that Damzelldid to them bewray A straunge aduenture, which not farre thence lay;

To weet a wicked villaine, bold and stout, Which wonned in a rocke not farre away, That robbed all the countrie there about, And brought the pillage home, whence none could get it out.

Thereto both his owne wylie wit, (she sayd) And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place. Both vnassaylable, gaue him great ayde: For he so crafty was to forge and face, So light of hand, and nymble of his pace, So smooth of tongue, and subtile in his tale. That could deceive one looking in his face; Therefore by name Malengin they him call, Well knowen by his feates, and famous ouer all.

Through these his slights he many doth con-

And eke the rocke, in which he wonts to dwell. Is wondrous strong, and hewen farre vnder

A dreadfull depth, how deepe no man can tell: But some doe say, it goeth downe to hell. And all within, it full of wyndings is, [smell And hidden wayes, that scarse an hound by Can follow out those false footsteps of his. Ne none can backe returne, that once are gone amis.

Which when those knights had heard, their harts gan earne.

To vnderstand that villeins dwelling place, And greatly it desir'd of her to learne, And by which way they towards it should trace. Werenot (sayd she) that it should let your pace Towards my Ladies presence by you ment, I would you guyde directly to the place. Then let not that (said they) stay your intent; For neither will one foot, till we that carle have hent.

So forth they past, till they approched ny Vnto the rocke, where was the villains won, Which when the Damzellneareat handdid spy, She warn'd the knights thereof: who thereupon Gan to aduize, what best were to be done. So both agreed, to send that mayd afore, Where she might sit nigh to the den alone, Wayling, and raysing pittifull vprore, As if she did some great calamitie deplore.

With novse whereof when as the caytiue carle Should issue forth, in hope to find some spoyle, They in awayt would closely him ensnarle, Ere to his den he backward could recoyle, And so would hope him easily to foyle. The Damzell straight went, as she was directed, Vnto the rocke, and there vpon the soyle Hauing her selfe in wretched wize abjected, Gan weepe and wayle, as if great griefe had her affected.

10

The cry whereof entring the hollow caue. Eftsoones brought forth the villaine, as they

With hope of her some wishfull boot to haue. Full dreadfull wight he was, as euer went Vpon the earth, with hollow eyes deepe pent. And long curld locks, that downe his shoulders shagged.

And on his backe an vncouth vestiment Made of straunge stuffe, but all to worne and ragged,

And vnderneath his breech was all to torne and iagged.

And in his hand an huge long staffe he held, Whose top was arm'd with many an yron hooke. Fit to catch hold of all that he could weld, Or in the compasse of his clouches tooke; And euer round about he cast his looke. Als at his backe a great wyde net he bore, With which he seldome fished at the brooke, But vsd to fish for fooks on the dry shore, Of which he in faire weather wont to take great store.

Him when the damzell saw fast by her side, So vgly creature, she was nigh dismayd, And now for helpe aloud in earnest cride. But when the villaine saw her so affrayd. He gan with guilefull words her to perswade, To banish feare, and with Sardonian smyle Laughing on her, his false intent to shade, Gan forth to lay his bayte her to beguyle, That from her self vnwares he might her steale the whyle.

Like as the fouler on his guilefull pype Charmes to the birds full many a pleasant lay, That they the whiles may take lesse heedie keepe,

How he his nets doth for their ruine lay: So did the villaine to her prate and play, And many pleasant trickes before her show, To turne her eyes from his intent away: For he in slights and jugling feates did flow, And of legierdemayne the mysteries did know.

To which whilest she lent her intentiue mind, He suddenly his net vpon her threw, That ouersprad her like a puffe of wind; And snatching her soone vp, ere well she knew, Ran with her fast away vnto his mew, Crying for helpe aloud. But when as ny He came vnto his caue, and there did vew The armed knights stopping his passage by, He threw his burden downe, and fast away didfly.

But Artegall him after did pursew. The whiles the Prince there kept the entrance

Vp to the rocke he ran, and thereon flew Like a wyld Gote, leaping from hill to hill, And dauncing on the craggy cliffes at will; That deadly daunger seem'd in all mens sight, To tempt such steps, where footing was so ill: Ne ought anayled for the armed knight, To thinke to follow him, that was so swift and light.

Which when he saw, his yron man he sent, To follow him; for he was swift in chace. He him pursewd, where euer that he went, Both ouer rockes, and hilles, and euery place, Where so he fled, he followd him apace: So that he shortly forst him to forsake The hight, and downe descend vnto the base. There he him courst a fresh, and soone did make To leave his proper forme, and other shape to take.

Into a Foxe himselfe he first did tourne; But he him hunted like a Foxe full fast: Then to a bush himselfe he did transforme, But he the bush did beat, till that at last Into a bird it chaung'd, and from him past, Flying from tree to tree, from wand to wand: But he then stones at it so long did cast, That like a stone it fell vpon the land, But he then tooke it vp, and held fast in his hand.

So he it brought with him vnto the knights, And to his Lord Sir Artegall it lent, Warning him hold it fast, for feare of slights. Who whilest in hand it gryping hard he hent, Into a Hedgehogge all vnwares it went, And prickt him so, that he away it threw. Then gan it runne away incontinent, Being returned to his former hew: But Talus soone him ouertooke, and backward drew.

But when as he would to a snake againe Haue turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle Gandriue at him, with so huge might and maine, That all his bones, as small as sandy grayle He broke, and did his bowels disentrayle; Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was past. So did deceipt the selfe deceiver fayle, There they him left a carrion outcast; For beasts and foules to feede vpon for their repast.

20

Thence forth they passed with that gentle Mayd, To see her Ladie, as they did agree. To which when she approched, thus she sayd; Loe now, right noble knights, arriu'd ye bee Nigh to the place, which ye desir'd to see: There shall ye see my souerayne Lady Queene Most sacred wight, most debonayre and free, That euer yet vpon this earth was seene, Or that with Diademe hath euer crowned beene.

The gentle knights rejoyced much to heare The prayses of that Prince so manifold, And passing litle further, commen were, Where they a stately pallace did behold, Of pompous show, much more then she had told; With many towres, and tarras mounted hye, And all their tops bright glistering with gold, That seemed to outshine the dimmed skye, And with their brightnesse daz'd the straunge beholders cyc.

There they alighting, by that Damzell were Directed in, and showed all the sight: Whoseporch, that most magnificked idappeare, Stood open wyde to all men day and night; Yet warded well by one of mickle might, That sate thereby, with gyantlike resemblance, To keepe out guyle, and malice, and despight, That under shew of times of favned semblance, Are wont in Princes courts to worke great scath and hindrance.

His name was Aue; by whom they passing in Went vp the hall, that was a large wyde roome, All full of people making troublous din, And wondrous noyse, as if that there were

Which vnto them was dealing righteous doome. By whom they passing, through the thickest

preasse

The marshall of the hall to them did come; Hisname hight Order, who commaunding peace, Them guyded through the throng, that did their clamors ceasse.

They ceast their clamors upon them to gaze; Whom seeing all in armour bright as day, Straunge there to see, it did them much amaze, And with vnwonted terror halfe affray. For neuer saw they there the like array, Ne euer was the name of warre there spoken, But ioyous peace and quietnesse alway, Dealing just judgements, that mote not be

For any brybes, or threates of any to be wroken.

\_

There as they entred at the Scriene, they saw Some one, whose tongue was for his trespasse Nayld to a post, adiudged so by law: [vyle For that therewith he falsely did reuyle, And foule blaspheme that Queene for forged guyle,

Both with bold speaches, which he blazed had, And with lewd poems, which he did compyle; For the bold title of a Poet bad

He on himselfe had ta'en, and rayling rymes had sprad.

Thus there he stood, whylest high ouer his head,
There written was the purport of his sin,
In cyphersstrange, that few could rightly read,
BON FONT: but bon that once had written bin,
Was raced out, and Mal was now put in.
So now Malfont was plainely to be red;
Eyther for th'euill, which he did therein,
Or that he likened was to a welhed

Of euill words, and wicked sclaunders by him shed.

They passing by, were guyded by degree Vnto the presence of that gratious Queene: Who sate on high, that she might all men see, And might of all men royally be seene, Vpon a throne of gold full bright and sheene, Adorned all with gemmes of endlesse price, As either might for wealth haue gotten bene, Or could be fram d by workmans rare deuice; And all embost with Lyons and with Flourdelice.

All ouer her a cloth of state was spred,
Not of rich tissew, nor of cloth of gold,
Nor of ought else, that may be richest red,
But like a cloud, as likest may be told,
Thatherbrodespreading wingsdidwydevnfold;
Whose skirts were bordred with bright sunny
beams,

Glistring like gold, amongst the plights enrold, Andhereandthereshooting forthsiluerstreames, Mongst which crept litle Angels through the glittering gleames.

Seemed those litle Angels did vphold
The cloth of state, and on their purpled wings
Did beare the pendants, through their nimblesse bold:

Besides a thousand more of such, as sings Hymnestohigh God, and carols heauenly things, Encompassed the throne, on which she sate: She Angel-like, the heyre of ancient kings And mightie Conquerors, in royall state, Whylest kings and kesars at her feet did them prostrate.

Thus she did sit in sourrayne Maiestie, Holding a Scepter in her royall hand, The sacred pledge of peace and clemencie, With which high God had blest herhappie land, Maugre so many foes, which did withstand. But at her feet her sword was likewise layde, Whose long restrusted the bright steely brand; Yet when as foes enforst, or friends sought ayde,

She could it sternely draw, that all the world dismayde.

And round about, before her feet there sate
A beuie of faire Virgins clad in white,
That goodly seem'd t'adorne her royall state,
All louely daughters of high *Ioue*, that hight *Litæ*, by him begot in loues delight,
Vpon the righteous *Themis*: those they say
Vpon *Ioues* iudgement seat wayt day and night,
And when in wrathhe threats the worlds decay,
They doe his anger calme, and cruell vengeance
stay.

They also doe by his divine permission
Vpon the thrones of mortall Princes tend,
And often treat for pardon and remission
To suppliants, through frayltie which offend.
Those did vpon Mercillaes throne attend:
Iust Dice, wise Eunomie, myld Eirene,
And them amongst, her glorie to commend,
Sate goodly Temperance in garments clene,
And sacred Reverence, yborne of heavenly
strene.

Thus did she sit in royall rich estate,
Admyr'd of many, honoured of all,
Whylest vnderneath her feete, thereas she sate,
An huge great Lyon lay, that mote appall
An hardie courage, like captiued thrall,
With a strong yron chaine and coller bound,
That once he could not moue, nor quich at all;
Yet did he murmure with rebellious sound,
And softly royne, when saluage choler gan
redound.

So sitting high in dreaded souerayntie,
Those two strange knights were to her presence brought;
Who bowing low before her Maiestie,
Did to her myld obeysance, as they ought,
And meekest boone, that they imagine mought.

To whom she eke inclyning her withall, As a faire stoupe of her high soaring thought, A chearefull countenance on them let fall, Yet tempred with some maiestie imperiall. As the bright sunne, what time his fierie teme Towards the westerne brim begins to draw, Gins to abate the brightnesse of his beme, And feruour of his flames somewhat adaw: So did this mightie Ladie, when she saw Those two strange knights such homage to her make.

Bate somewhat of that Maiestie and awe, That whylome wont to doe so many quake, And with more myld aspect those two to entertake.

Now at that instant, as occasion fell, When these two stranger knights arriu'd in place, She was about affaires of common wele, Dealing of Iustice with indifferent grace, And hearing pleas of people meane and base. Mongst which as then, there was for to be heard The tryall of a great and weightie case, Which on both sides was then debating hard: But at the sight of these, those were a while debard.

But after all her princely entertayne,
To th'hearing of that former cause in hand,
Her selfe eftsoones she gan conuert againe;
Which that those knights likewise mote vnderstand.

And witnesse forth aright in forrain land, Taking them vp vnto her stately throne, Where they mote heare the matter throughly scand

On either part, she placed th'one on th'one, The other on the other side, and neare them

Then was there brought, as prisoner to the barre, A Ladie of great countenance and place, But that she it with foule abuse did marre; Yet did appeare rare beautie in her face, But blotted with condition vile and base, That all her other honour did obscure, And titles of nobilitie deface:

Yet in that wretched semblant, she did sure

Yet in that wretched semblant, she did sure The peoples great compassion vnto her allure.

Then vp arose a person of deepe reach, And rare in-sight, hard matters to reuele; That well could charme his tongue, and time his speach

To all assayes; his name was called Zele:
He gan that Ladie strongly to appele
Of many haynous crymes, by her enured,
And with sharpe reasons rang her such a pele,
That those, whom she to pitie had allured,
He now t'abhorre and loath her person had
procured.

First gan he tell, how this that seem'd so faire And royally arayd, Duessa hight That false Duessa, which had wrought great care.

care,
And mickle mischiefe vnto many a knight,
By her beguyled, and confounded quight:
But not for those she now in question came,
Though also those mote question'd be aright,
But for vyld treasons, and outrageous shame,
Which she against the dred Mercilla oft did
frame.

For she whylome (as ye mote yet right well Remember) had her counsels false conspyred, With faithlesse Blandamour and Paridell, (Both two her paramours, both by her hyred, Andbothwithhope of shadowes vaineinspyred,) And with them practiz'd, how for to depryue Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred, That she might it vnto her selfe deryue,

And tryumph in their blood, whom she to death did dryue.

But through high heavens grace, which favour not

The wicked driftes of trayterous desynes, Gainst loiall Princes, all this cursed plot, Ere proofe it tooke, discouered was betymes, And th'actours won the meede meet for their crymes.

Such be the meede of all, that by such mene Vnto the type of kingdomes title clymes. But false *Duessa* now vntitled Queene, Was brought to her sad doome, as here was to be seene.

Strongly did Zele her haynous fact enforce,
And many other crimes of foule defame
Against her brought, to banish all remorse,
And aggrauate the horror of her blame.
And with him to make part against her, came
Many graue persons, that against her pled;
First was a sage old Syre, that had to name
The Kingdomes care, with a white siluer hed,
That many high regards and reasons gainst
her red.

Then gan Authority her to appose
With peremptorie powre, that made all mute;
And then the law of Nations gainst her rose,
Andreasons brought, that no man could refute;
Next gan Religion gainst her to impute
High Gods beheast, and powre of holy lawes;
Then gan the Peoples cry and Commons sute,
Importune care of their owne publicke cause;
And lastly Iustice charged her with breach of
lawes.

But then for her, on the contrarie part,
Rose many aduocates for her to plead:
First there came Pittie, with full tender hart,
And with her ioyn'd Regard of womanhead;
And then came Daunger threatning hidden
dread.

And high alliance vnto forren powre; Then came Nobilitie of birth, that bread Great ruth through her misfortunes tragicke stowre:

And lastly *Griefe* did plead, and many teares forth powre.

With the neare touch whereof in tender hart. The Briton Prince was sore empassionate, And woxe inclined much vnto her part, Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate, And wretched ruine of so high estate, That for great ruth his courage gan relent. Which when as Zele perceived to abate, He gan his earnest feruour to augment, And many fearefull objects to them to present.

He gan t'efforce the euidence anew,
And new accusements to produce in place:
He brought forth that old hag of hellish hew,
The cursed Ale, brought her face to face,
Who priuie was, and partie in the case:
She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay,
Did her appeach, and to her more disgrace,
The plot of all her practise did display,
And all her traynes, and all her treasons forth
did lay.

Then brought he forth, with griesly grim aspect, Abhorred Murder, who with bloudie knyfe Yet dropping fresh in hand did her detect, And there with guiltie bloudshed charged ryfe: Then brought he forth Sedition, breeding stryfe In troublous wits, and mutinous vprore: Then brought he forth Incontinence of lyfe, Eucn foule Adulterie her face before, And lewd Impietie, that her accused sore.

40

All which when as the Prince had heard and seene.

His former fancies ruth he gan repent, And from her partie eftsoones was drawen cleene.

But Artegall with constant firme intent,
For zeale of Iustice was against her bent.
So was she guiltie deemed of them all.
Then Zele began to vrge her punishment,
And to their Queene for judgement loudly call,
Vnto Mercilla myld for Justice gainst the thrall.

But she, whose Princely breast was touched nere With piteous ruth of her so wretched plight, Though plaine she saw by all, that she did heare,

That she of death was guiltie found by right, Yet would not let iust vengeance on her light; But rather let in stead thereof to fall Few perling drops from her faire lampes of light; The which she couering with her purple pall Would haue the passion hid, and vp arose withall.

### Cant. X.

#### \$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\\$\$\$

Prince Arthur takes the enterprize for Belge for to fight. Gerioneos Seneschall he slayes in Belges right.

#### 

Some Clarkes doe doubt in their deuicefull art, Whether this heauenly thing, whereof I treat, To weeten Mercie, be of Iustice part, Or drawne forth from her by diuine extreate. This well I wote, that sure she is as great, And meriteth to haue as high a place, Sith in th'Almighties euerlasting seat She first was bred, and borne of heauenly race; From thence pour'd down on men, by influence of grace.

For if that Vertue be of so great might,
Which from iust verdict will for nothing start,
But to preserue inuiolated right,
Oft spilles the principall, to saue the part;
So much more then is that of powre and art,
That seekes to saue the subject of her skill,
Yet neuer doth from doome of right depart:
As it is greater prayse to saue, then spill,
And better to reforme, then to cut off the ill.

Who then can thee, Mercilla, throughly prayse,
That herein doest all earthly Princes pas?
What heauenly Muse shall thy great honour
rayse

Vp to the skies, whence first deriu'd it was, And now on earth it selfe enlarged has, From th'vtmost brinke of the Armericke shore. Vnto the margent of the Molucas? Those Nations farre thy iustice doe adore: But thine owne people do thy mercy prayse much more.

Much more it praysed was of those two knights; The noble Prince, and righteous Artegall,

When they had seene and heard her doome a rights

a rights
Against Duessa, damned by them all;
But by her tempred without griefe or gall,
Till strong constraint did her thereto enforce.
And yet euen then ruing her wilfull fall,
With more then needfull naturall remorse,
And yeelding the last honour to her wretched
corse.

During all which, those knights continu'd there, Both doing and receiuing curtesies, Of that great Ladie, who with goodly chere Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities, Approuing dayly to their noble eyes Royall examples of her mercies rare, And worthie paterns of her clemencies; Which till this day mongst many liuing are, Who them to their posterities doe still declare.

6

Amongst the rest, which in that space befell, There came two Springals of full tender yeares, Farre thence from forrein land, where they did dwell.

To seeke for succour of her and of her Peares, With humble prayers and intreatfull teares; Sent by their mother, who a widow was, Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares, By a strong Tyrant, who inuaded has Her land, and slaine her children ruefully alas.

Her name was Belge, who in former age
A Ladic of great worth and wealth had beene,
And mother of a frutefull heritage, [seene
Euen scuenteene goodly sonnes; which who had
In their first flowre, before this fatall teene
Them ouertooke, and their faire blossomes
blasted,

More happie mother would her surely weene, Then famous Niobe, before she tasted Latonaes childrens wrath, that all her issue wasted.

But this fell Tyrant, through his tortious powre, Had left her now but fine of all that brood: For twelue of them he did by times deuoure, And to his Idols sacrifice their blood, Whylest he of none was stopped, nor with stood. For soothly he was one of matchlesse might, Of horrible aspect, and dreadfull mood, And had three bodies in one wast empight, And th'armes and legs of three, to succour him

in fight.

And sooth they say, that he was borne and bred Of Gyants race, the sonne of *Geryon*, He that whylome in Spaine so sore was dred, For his huge powre and great oppression,

For his huge powre and great oppression, Which brought that land to his subjection, Through his three bodies powre, in one combynd:

And eke all strangers in that region Arryuing, to his kyne for food assynd; The fayrest kyne aliue, but of the fiercest kynd.

10

For they were all, they say, of purple hew, Kept by a cowheard, hight Eurytion, A cruell carle, the which all strangers slew, Ne day nor night did sleepe, t'attend them on, But walkt about them euer and anone, With his two headed dogge, that Orthrus hight; Orthrus begotten by great Typhaon, And foule Echidna, in the house of night; But Heraules them all did ouercome in fight.

11

His sonne was this, Geryonco hight, Who after that his monstrous father fell Vnder Alcides club, streight tooke his flight From that sad land, where he his syre did quell

quell,
And came to this, where Belge then did dwell,
And flourish in all wealth and happinesse,
Being then new made widow (as befell)
After her Noble husbands late decesse;
Which gaue beginning to her woe and wretchednesse.

12

Then this bold Tyrant, of her widowhed Taking aduantage, and her yet fresh woes, Himselfe and service to her offered, Her to defend against all forrein foes, That should their powre against her right oppose.

Whereof she glad, now needing strong defence, Him entertayn'd, and did her champion chose: Which long he vsd with carefull diligence, The better to confirme her fearelesse confidence.

By meanes whereof, she did at last commit All to his hands, and gaue him soueraine powre To doe, what euer he thought good or fit. Which hauing got, he gan forth from that hower.

To stirre vp strife, and many a Tragickestowre, Giuing her dearest children one by one Vnto a dreadfull Monster to deuoure, And setting vp an Idole of his owne, The image of his monstrous parent Geryone. 1.1

So tyrannizing, and oppressing all, The woefull widow had no meanes now left, But vnto gratious great Mercilla call For ayde, against that cruell Tyrants theft, Ere all her children he from her had reft. Therefore these two, her eldest sonnes she sent. To seeke for succour of this Ladies gieft: To whom their sute they humbly did present. In th'hearing of full many Knights and Ladies

Amongst the which then fortuned to bee The noble Briton Prince, with his braue Peare: Who when he none of all those knights did see Hastily bent, that enterprise to heare, Nor vndertake the same, for cowheard feare, He stepped forth with courage bold and great, Admyr'd of all the rest in presence there, And humbly gan that mightie Queene entreat, To graunt him that adventure for his former feat.

16

She gladly graunted it: then he straight way Himselfe vnto his journey gan prepare, And all his armours readie dight that day, That nought the morrow next mote stay his fare.

The morrow next appear'd, with purple hayre Yet dropping fresh out of the Indian fount, And bringing light into the heavens favre. When he was readie to his steede to mount. Vnto his way, which now was all his care and count.

Then taking humble leave of that great Queene, Who gaue him roiall giftes and riches rare, As tokens of her thankefull mind beseene. And leaving Artegall to his owne care, Vpon his voyage forth he gan to fare, With those two gentle youthes, which him did guide,

And all his way before him still prepare. Ne after him did Artegall abide.

But on his first aduenture forward forth did ride.

It was not long, till that the Prince arrived Within the land, where dwelt that Ladie sad. Whereof that Tyrant had her now deprived, And into moores and marshes banisht had. Out of the pleasant soyle, and citties glad. In which she wont to harbour happily: But now his cruelty so sore she drad, That to those fennes for fastnesse she did fly, And there her selfe did hyde from his hard tyranny.

19

There he her found in sorrow and dismay. All solitarie without liuing wight: For all her other children, through affray, Had hid themselues, or taken further flight: And eke her selfe through sudden strange affright,

When one in armes she saw, began to fly; But when her owne two sonnesshe had in sight, She gan take hart, and looke vp joyfully: For well she wist this knight came, succour to supply.

And running vnto them with greedy joves. Fell straight about their neckes, as they did kneele.

And bursting forthin teares: Ahmysweet boyes. (Sayd she) yet now I gin new life to feele. And feeble spirits, that gan faint and recle, Now rise againe, at this your ioyous sight. Alreadie seemes that fortunes headlong wheele Begins to turne, and sunneto shine more bright, Then it was wont, through comfort of this noble knight.

Then turning vnto him; And you Sir knight (Said she) that taken have this toylesome paine For wretched woman, miserable wight, May you in heaven immortall guerdon gaine For so great trauell, as you doe sustaine: For other meede may hope for none of mee, Towhomnoughtelse, but barelife doth remaine, And that so wretched one, as ye do see Is liker lingring death, then loathed life to bee.

Much was he moued with her piteous plight, And low dismounting from his loftie steede, Gan to recomfort her all that he might, Seeking to driue away deepe rooted dreede, With hope of helpe in that her greatest neede So thence he wished her with him to wend, Vntosomeplace, where they moterest and feede, And she take comfort, which God now did send: Good hart in euils doth the euils much amend.

Ay me (sayd she) and whether shall I goe? Are not all places full of forraine powres? My pallaces possessed of my foe, My cities sackt, and their sky-threating towres Raced, and mades mooth fields now full of flowres? Onely these marishes, and myrie bogs, In which the fearefull ewftes do build their

bowres.

Yeeld me an hostry mongst the croking frogs, And harbour here in safety from those rauenous dogs.

2.1

Nathlesse (said he) deare Ladie with me goe, Someplace shall vs receive, and harbour yield; If not, we will it force, maugre your foe, And purchase it to vs with speare and shield: and if all fayle, yet farewell open field: The earth to all her creatures lodging lends. Withsuch his chearefull speaches he dothwield Her mind so well, that to his will she bends and bynding up her locks and weeds, forth with him wends.

They came vnto a Citie farre vp land, The which whylome that Ladies owne had

But now by force extort out of her hand, By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene Herstatelytowres, and buildings sunny sheene; Shut vp her hauen, mard her marchants trade, Robbed her people, that full rich had beene, And in her necke a Castle huge had made, The which did her commaund, without needing perswade.

That Castle was the strength of all that state. Vntill that state by strength was pulled downe, And that same citie, so now ruinate,

Had bene the keye of all that kingdomes

Both goodly Castle, and both goodly Towne, Till that th'offended heavens list to lowre Vpon their blisse, and balefull fortune from e. When those gainst states and kingdomes do coniure.

Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine to recure

But he had brought it now in seruile bond, And made it beare the voke of inquisition, Stryuing long time in vame it to withstond; Yet glad at last to make most base submission, And life enjoy for any composition. So now he hath new lawes and orders new Imposd on it, with many a hard condition, And forced it, the honour that is dew To God, to doe vnto his Idole most vntrew.

To him he hath, before this Castle greene, Built a faire Chappell, and an Altar framed Of costly Juory, full rich beseene, On which that cursed Idole farre proclamed, He hath set up, and him his God hath named, Offring to him in sinfull sacrifice The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse

framed.

And powring forth their bloud in brutishe wize, That any yron eyes to see it would agrize.

And for more horror and more crueltie. Vnder that cursed Idols altar stone An hideous monster doth in darknesse lie. Whose dreadfull shape was neuer seene of none That lives on earth: but vnto those alone The which vnto him sacrificed bee. Those he deuoures, they say, both flesh and bone: What else they have, is all the Tyrants fee; So that no whit of them remayning one may see.

There eke he placed a strong garrisone, And set a Seneschall of dreaded might. That by his powre oppressed euery one, And vanquished all ventrous knights in fight: To whom he wont shew all the shame he might, After that them in battell he had wonne. To which when now they gan approch in sight, The Ladie counseld him the place to shonne, Whereas so many knights had fouly bene fordonne.

Her fearefull speaches nought he did regard, But ryding streight vnder the Castle wall, Called aloud vnto the watchfull ward, Which there did wayte, willing them forth to call Into the field their Tyrants Seneschall. To whom when tydings thereof came, hestreight Cals for his armes, and arming him withall, Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his might, And gan with courage fierce addresse him to the fight.

They both encounter in the middle plaine. And their sharpe speares doe both together

Amid their shields, with so huge might and maine,

That seem'd their soules they wold have ryuen

Out of their breasts, with furious despight. Yet could the Seneschals no entrance find Into the Princes shield, where it empight: So pure the mettall was, and well refynd, But shiuered all about, and scattered in the wynd.

Not so the Princes, but with restlesse force, Into his shield it readie passage found, Both through his haberieon, and eke his corse: Which tombling downe vpon the senselesse ground,

Gaue leaue vntohis ghost from thraldome bound, To wander in the griesly shades of night. Theredid the Prince him leave in deadly swound, And thence vnto the castle marched right, To see if entrance there as yet obtaine he might.

But as he nigher drew, three knights he spyde, All arm'd to point, issuing forth a pace, Which towardshim with all their powredid ryde, And meeting him right in the middle race, Did all their speares attonce on him enchace. As three great Culuerings for battrie bent, And leueld all against one certaine place, Doe all attonce their thunders rage forth rent, That makes the wals to stagger with astonishment.

So all attonce they on the Prince did thonder; Who from his saddle swarued nought asyde, Netotheir forcegaueway, that was great wonder, But like a bulwarke, firmely did abyde, Rebutting him, which in the midst did ryde, With so huge rigour, that his mortall speare Past through his shield, and pierst through either syde,

That downe he fell uppon his mother deare, And powred forth his wretched life in deadly dreare.

Whom when his other fellowes saw, they fled As fast as feete could carry them away; And after them the Prince as swiftly sped, To be aueng'd of their vnknightly play. [stay, There whilest they entring, th'one did th'other The hindmost in the gate he ouerhent, And as he pressed in, him there did slay: His carkasse tumbling on the threshold, sent His groning soule vnto her place of punishment.

The other which was entred, laboured fast
Tosperre the gate; but that same lumpe of clay,
Whose grudging ghost was the reout fled and past,
Right in the middest of the threshold lay,
That it the Posterne did from closing stay:
The whiles the Prince hard preased in betweene,
And entraunce wonne. Streight th'other fled
away,

And ran into the Hall, where he did weene Him selfe to saue: but he there slew him at the skreene.

Then all the rest which in that Castle were, Seeing that sad ensample them before, Durst not abide, but fled away for feare, And them conuayd out at a Posterne dore. Long sought the Prince, but when he found no more

T'oppose against his powre, he forth issued Vnto that Lady, where he her had lore, And her gan cheare, with what she there had vewed, [shewed. And what she had not seene, within vnto her]

Who with right humble thankes him goodly greeting,
For so great prowesse, as he there had proued, Much greater then was euer in her weeting, With great admiraunce inwardly was moued, And honourd him, with all that her hehoued Thenceforth into that Castle he her led,

Mithhertwosonnes, right deare of her beloud, Whereall that night them selves they cherished. And from her balefull mindeall care he banished

# Cant. XI.

# COCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCOCO

Prince Arthure ouercomes the great Gerioneo in fight: Doth slay the Monster, and restore Belge unto her right.

# 

It often fals in course of common life,
That right long time is ouerborne of wrong.
Through auarice, or powre, or guile, or strife,
That weakens her, and makes her party strong.
But Iustice, though her dome she doe prolong,
Yet at the last she will her owne cause right.
As by sad Belge seemes, whose wrongs though
long

She suffred, yet at length she did requight, And sent redresse thereof by this braue Briton Knight.

Whereof when newes was to that Tyrant brought. How that the Lady Belge now had found A Champion, that had with his Champion fought And laid his Seneschall low on the ground, And eke him selfe did threaten to confound. He gan to burne in rage, and friese in feare, Doubting sad end of principle vnsound: Yet sith he heard but one, that did appeare. He did him selfe encourage, and take better cheare.

Nathelesse him selfe he armed all in hast, And forth he far'd with all his many bad, Ne stayed step, till that he came at last Vnto the Castle, which they conquerd had. There with huge terrour, to be more ydrad, He sternely marcht before the Castle gate, And with bold vaunts, and ydle threatning bad Deliuer him his owne, ere yet too late, To which they had no right, nor any wrongfull state.

The Prince staid not his aunswere to deuize, But opening streight the Sparre, forth to him

Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize; And asked him, if that he were the same, Who all that wrong vnto that wofull Dame So long had done, and from her natiue land Exiled her, that all the world spake shame. He boldly aunswerd him, he there did stand That would his doings iustifie with his owne

hand.

With that so furiously at him he flew,
As if he would have overrun him streight,
And with his huge great yron axe gan hew
So hideously yppon his armour bright,
As he to peeces would have chopt it quight:
That the bold Prince was forced foote to give
To his first rage, and yeeld to his despight;
The whilest at him so dreadfully he drive,
That seem'd a marble rocke asunder could have rive.

Thereto a great aduauntage eke he has
Through his three double hands thrise
multiplyde,

Besides the doublestrength, which in them was: For stil when fit occasion did betyde, He could his weapon shift from side to syde,

From hand to hand, and with such nimblesse sly

Could wield about, that ere it were espide, The wicked stroke did wound his enemy, behinde, beside, before, as he it list apply.

Which vncouth vse when as the Prince perceiued, He gan to watch the wielding of his hand, Least by such slight he were vnwares deceiued; And euer ere he saw the stroke to land, He would it meete, and warily withstand. One time, when he his weapon faynd to shift, Ashe was wont, and chang'd from hand to hand, He met him with a counterstroke so swift, That quite smit off his arme, as he it vp did lift.

Therewith, all fraught with fury and disdaine, He brayd aloud for very fell despight, And sodainely t'auenge him selfe againe, Gan into one assemble all the might Of all his hands, and heaued them on hight, Thinking to pay him with that one for all: Butthe sad steele seizd not, where it was hight, Vppon the childe, but somewhat short did fall, And lighting on his horses head, him quite did mall.

Downe streight to ground fellhis astonisht steed, And eke to th'earth his burden with him bare: But he him selfe full lightly from him freed, And gan him selfe to fight on foote prepare. Whereof when as the Gyant was aware, He wox right blyth, as he had got thereby, And laught so loud, that all his teeth wide lare One might haue seene enraung'd disorderly, Like to a rancke of piles, that pitched are awry.

10

Eftsoones againe his axe he raught on hic, Ere he were throughly buckled to his geare, And can let driue at him so dreadfullie, That had he chaunced not his shield to reare, Ere that huge stroke arriued on him neare, He had him surely clouen quite in twaine. But th'Adamantine shield, which he did be are, So well was tempred, that for all his maine, It would no passage yeeld vnto his purpose vaine.

Yet was the stroke so forcibly applide,
That made him stagger with vncertaine sway,
As if he would haue tottered to one side.
Wherewith full wroth, he fiercely gan assay,
That curt'sie with like kindnesse to repay;
And smote at him with so importune might,
That two more of his armes did fall away,

Like fruitlesse braunches, which the hatchets slight Hath pruned from the natiue tree, and cropped

quight.

12

With that all mad and furious he grew,
Like a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,
And curst, and band, and blasphemies forth
threw,

Against his Gods, and fire to them did threat, And hell vnto him selfe with horrour great. Thenceforth he car'd no more, which way he strooke.

Nor where it light, but gan to chaufe and sweat, Andgnasht his teeth, and his head at him shooke, And sternely him beheld with grim and ghastly looke.

Nought fear'd the childe his lookes, ne yet his But onely wexed now the more aware, [threats, To saue him selfe from those his furious heats, And watch aduauntage, how to worke his care: The which good Fortune to him offred faire. For as he in his rage him ouerstrooke, He ere he could his weapon backe repaire, His side all bare and naked ouertooke, And with his mortal steel quite throgh the body strooke.

Through all three bodies he him strooke attonce; That all the three attonce fell on the plaine: Else should he thrise haue needed, for the nonce Them to have stricken, and thrise to have slaine.

So now all three one sencelesse lumpe remaine. Enwallow'd in his owne blacke bloudy gore, And byting th'earth for very deaths disdaine; Who with a cloud of night him couering, bore Downe to the house of dole, his daies there to deplore.

Which when the Lady from the Castle saw, Where she with her two sonnes did looking stand.

She towards him in hast her selfe did draw. To greet him the good fortune of his hand: And all the people both of towne and land, Which there stood gazing from the Citties wall Vppon these warriours, greedy t'vnderstand, To whether should the victory befall,

Now when they saw it false, they eke him greeted

But Belge with her sonnes prostrated low Before his feete, in all that peoples sight. Mongst ioves mixing some tears, mongst wele. some wo

Him thus bespake: O most redoubted Knight. The which hast me, of all most wretched wight, That earst was dead, restor'd to life againe, And these weake impes replanted by thy might; What guerdon can I give thee for thy paine, But even that which thou sauedst, thine still to remaine?

He tooke her vp forby the lilly hand, And her recomforted the best he might. Saying; Deare Lady, deedes ought not be scand By th'authors manhood, nor the doers might, But by their trueth and by the causes right: That same is it, which fought for you this day. What other meed then need me to requirely. But that which veeldeth vertues meed alway? That is the vertue selfe, which her reward doth pay.

She humbly thankt him for that wondrous grace, And further sayd; Ah Sir, but mote ye please, Sith ye thus farre have tendred my poore case, As from my chiefest foe me to release, That your victorious arme will not yet cease, Till ve haue rooted all the relickes out Of that vilde race, and stablished my peace. What is there else (savd he) left of their rout? Declare it boldly Dame, and doe not stand in l dout.

19 Then wote you, Sir, that in this Church hereby There stands an Idole of great note and name The which this Gyant reared first on hie. And of his owne vaine fancies thought did frame To whom for endlesse horrour of his shame. He offred up for daily sacrifize My children and my people, burnt in flame. With all the tortures, that he could deuize. The more t'aggrate his God with such his blouddy guize.

And vnderneath this Idoll there doth lie An hideous monster, that doth it defend, And feedes on all the carkasses, that die In sacrifize vnto that cursed feend: Whose vgly shape none cuer saw, nor kend, That euer scap'd: for of a man they say It has the voice, that speaches forth doth send. Euen blasphemous words, which she doth bra-Out of her poysnous entrails, fraught with dire decay.

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart gan earne

For great desire, that Monster to assay, And prayd the place of her abode to learne. Which being shew'd, he gan him selfe streight

Thereto addresse, and his bright shield display. So to the Church he came, where it was told. The Monster vnderneath the Altar lay: There he that Idoll saw of massy gold Most richly made, but there no Monster did behold.

Vpon the Image with his naked blade Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke; And the third time out of an hidden shade. There forth issewd, from vnder th'Altars smooke.

A dreadfull feend, with fowle deformed looke. That stretcht it selfe, as it had long lyen still: And her long taile and fethers strongly shooks. That all the Temple did with terrour fill; Yet himnought terrifide, that feared nothing ill

An huge great Beast it was, when it in length Was stretched forth, that nigh fild all the place, And seem'd to be of infinite great strength; Horrible, hideous, and of hellish race, Borne of the brooding of Echidna base. Or other like infernall furies kinde: For of a Mayd she had the outward face. To hide the horrour, which did lurke behinde. The better to beguile, whom she so fond did finde.

hereto the body of a dog she had, Full of fell rauin and fierce greedinesse;

A Lions clawes, with powre and rigour clad, To rend and teare, what so she can oppresse; A Dragons taile, whose sting without redresse Full deadly wounds, where so it is empight; And Eagles wings, for scope and speedinesse, That nothing may escape her reaching might, Vhereto she euer list to make her hardy flight.

such like in foulnesse and deformity Vato that Monster, whom the Theban Knight, The father of that fatall progeny.

Made kill her selfe for very hearts despight, That he had red her Riddle, which no wight toold euer loose, but suffred deadly doole. So also did this Monster vse like slight

To many a one, which came vnto her schoole. Whom she did put to death, deceived like a foole.

She comming forth, when as she first beheld The armed Prince, with shield soblazing bright, Her ready to assaile, was greatly queld, And much dismayd with that dismayfull sight, That backe she would have turnd for great

affright. But he gan her with courage fierce assay, That forst her turne againe in her despight, To saue her selfe, least that he did her slay: And sure he had her slaine, had she not turnd

her way.

Tho when she saw, that she was forst to fight, he flew at him, like to an hellish feend, A:.d on his shield tooke hold with all her might, As if that it she would in peeces rend, Or reaue out of the hand, that did it hend. Strongly he strone out of her greedy gripe To loose his shield, and long while did contend: But when he could not quite it, with one stripe Her Lions clawes he from her feete away did

With that aloude she gan to bray and yell, And fowle blasphemous speaches forth did

And bitter curses, horrible to tell,

That even the Temple, wherein she was plast, Did quake to heare, and nigh asunder brast. Tho with her huge long taile she at him strooke, That made him stagger, and stand halfe agast With trembling ioynts, as he for terrour shooke:

Who nought was terrifide, but greater courage tooke.

As when the Mast of some well timbred hulke Is with the blast of some outragious storme Blowne downe, it shakes the bottome of the

And makes her ribs to cracke, as they were

Whilest still she stands as stonisht and forlorne:

So was he stound with stroke of her huge taile, But ere that it she backe againe had borne, He with his sword it strooke, that without faile He iovnted it, and mard the swinging of her flaile.

Then gan she cry much louder then afore, That all the people there without it heard. And Belge selfe was therewith stonied sore, As if the onely sound thereof she feard. But then the feered her selfe more fiercely reard Vppon her wide great wings, and strongly flew With all her body at his head and beard, That had he not forescene with hecdfull vew, And thrown his shield atween, she had him

done to rew.

But as she prest on him with heavy sway, Vnder her wombe his fatall sword he thrust, And for her entrailes made an open way, To issue forth; the which once being brust, Like to a great Mill damb forth fiercely gusht. And powred out of her infernall sinke Most vgly filth, and poyson therewith rusht, That him nigh choked with the deadly stinke: Such loathly matter were small lust to speake, or thinke.

Then downe to ground fell that deformed Masse. Breathing out clouds of sulphure fowle and blacke,

In which a puddle of contagion was,

More loathd then Lerna, or then Stygian lake, That any man would nigh awhaped make. Whom when he saw on ground, he was fullglad, And streight went forth his gladnesse topartake With Belge, who watcht all this while full sad, Wayting what end would be of that same daunger drad.

Whom when she saw so ioyously come forth, She gan reioyce, and shew triumphant chere, Lauding and praysing his renowmed worth, By all the names that honorable were. Then in he brought her, and her shewed there The present of his paines, that Monsters spoyle, And eke that Idoll deem'd so costly dere; Whom he did all to peeces breake and foyle In filthy durt, and left so in the loathely soyle,

Then all the people, which beheld that day, Gan shout aloud, that vnto heauen it rong; And all the damzels of that towne in ray, Came dauncing forth, and ioyous carrols song: So him they led through all their streetes along, Crowned with girlonds of immortall baies, And all the vulgar did about them throng, To see the man, whose cuerlasting praise They all were bound to all posterities to raise.

There he with Belge did a while remaine,
Making great feast and ioyous merriment,
Vntill he had her settled in her raine,
With safe assuraunce and establishment.
Then to his first emprize his mind he lent,
Full loath to Belge, and to all the rest:
Of whom yet taking leaue, thenceforth he
went

And to his former iourney him addrest, On which long way he rode, ne euer day did rest.

36

But turne we now to noble Artegall;
Who having left Mercilla, streight way went
On his first quest, the which him forth did call,
To weet to worke Irenaes franchisement,
And eke Grantortees worthy punishment.
So forth he fared as his manner was,
With onely Talus wayting diligent,
Through many perils and much way did pas,
Till nigh vnto the place at length approcht
he has.

There as he traueld by the way, he met
An aged wight, wayfaring all alone,
Whothrough his yeares long since aside had set
The vse of armes, and battell quite forgone:
To whom as he approcht, he knew anone,
That it was he which whilome did attend
On faire Irene in her affliction,
When first to Faery court he saw her wend,
Vnto his soueraine Queene her suite for to
commend.

Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan; Haile good Sir Sergis, truest Knight aliue, Well tride in all thy Ladies troubles than, When her that Tyrant did of Crowne depriue; What new ocasion doth thee hither driue, Whiles she alone is left, and thou here found? Or is she thrall, or doth she not suruiue? To whom he thus; She liueth sure and sound; But by that Tyrant is in wretched thraldome

bound.

For she presuming on th'appointed tyde, In which ye promist, as ye were a Knight, To meete her at the saluage Ilands syde, And then and there for triall of her right With her vnrighteous enemy to fight, Did thither come, where she afrayd of nought By guilefull treason and by subtill slight Surprized was, and to Grantorto brought, Who her imprisond hath, and her life often sought.

And now he hath to her prefixt a day,
By which if that no champion doe appeare,
Which will her cause in battailous array
Against him justifie, and proue her cleare
Of all those crimes, that he gainst her doil
reare.

She death shall by. Those tidings sad Did much abash Sir Artegall to heare, And grieued sore, that through his fault she

Fallen into that Tyrants hand and vsage bad.

Then thus replide; Now sure and by my life,
Too much am I to blame for that faire Maide.
That haue her drawne to all this troublou
strife.

Through promise to afford her timely aide, Which by default I haue not yet defraide. But witnesse vnto me, ye heauens, that know How cleare I am from blame of this vpbraide: For ye into like thraldonic me did throw, And kept from complishing the faith, which I did owe.

But now aread, Sir Sergis, how long space, Hath he her lent, a Champion to prouide? Ten daies (quoth he)he graunted hathof grace. For that he weeneth well, before that tide None can haue tidings to assist her side. For all the shores, which to the sea accoste. He day and night doth ward both far and wide. That none can there arriue without an hoste: So her he deemes already but a damned ghoste

Now turne againe (Sir Artegall then sayd)
For if I liue till those ten daies haue end,
Assure your selfe, Sir Knight, she shall haue
avd.

Though I this dearest life for her doe spend: So backeward he attone with him did wend. Tho as they rode together on their way, A rout of people they before them kend, Flocking together in confusde array, As if that there were some tumultuous affray.

o which as they approcht, the cause to know, They saw a Knight in daungerous distresse Of a rude rout him chasing to and fro, That sought with lawlesse powre him to oppresse,

And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse: And farre away, amid their rakehell bands, They spide a Lady left all succourlesse, troing, and holding vp her wretched hands to him for aide, who long in vaine their rage withstands.

Yet still he striues, ne any perill spares, To reskue her from their rude violence, And like a Lion wood amongst them fares, Dealing his dreadfull blowes with large dis-

pence,

Gainst which the pallid death findes no defence. But all in vaine, their numbers are so great, That naught may boot to banishe them from thence:

For soone as he their outrage backe doth beat, They turne afresh, and oft renew their former threat.

And now they doe so sharpely him assay,
That they his shield in peeces battred haue,
And forced him to throw it quite away,
Fro dangers dread his doubtfull life to saue;
Albe that it most safety to him gaue,
And much did magnifie his noble name.
For from the day that he thus did it leaue,
AmongstallKnightsheblottedwas withblame,
And counted but a recreant Knight, with endles
shame.

Whom when they thus distressed did behold, They drew vnto his aide; but that rude rout Them also gan assaile with outrage bold, And forced them, how euer strong and stout They were, as well approu'd in many a doubt, Backe to recule; vntill that yron man With his huge flaile began to lay about, From whose sterne presence they diffused ran, Like scattred chaffe, the which the wind away doth fan.

Sowhen that Knight from perill cleare was freed, He drawing neare, began to greete them faire, And yeeld great thankes for their sogoodly deed, In sauing him from daungerous despaire. Of those, which sought his life for to empaire. Of whom Sir Artegall gan then enquire The whole occasion of his late misfare, And who he was, and what those villaines were, The which with mortall malice him pursu'd so nere.

To whom he thus; My name is Burbon hight, Well knowne, and far renowmed heretofore, Vntill late mischiefe did vppon me light, That all my former praise hath blemisht sore; And that faire Lady, which in that vprore Ye with those caytiues saw, Flourdelis hight, Is mine owne loue, though me she haue forlore, Whether withheld from me by wrongfullmight, Or with her owne good will, I cannot read aright.

But sure to me her faith she first did plight,
To be my loue, and take me for her Lord,
Till that a Tyrant, which Grandtorto hight,
With golden giftes and many a guikfull word
Entyced her, to him for to accord.
O who may not with gifts and words be

O who may not with gifts and words be tempted?

Sith which she hath me euer since abhord, And to my foe hath guilefully consented: Ay me, that euer guyle in wemen was inuented.

51

And now he hath this troupe of villains sent,
By open force to fetch her quite away:
Gainst whom my selfe I long in vaine haue
bent,

To rescue her, and daily meanes assay, Yet rescue her thence by no meanes I may: For they doe me with multitude oppresse, And with vnequall might doe ouerlay, That oft I driuen am to great distresse, And forced to forgoe th'attempt remedilesse.

52

But why haue ye (said Artegall) forborne
Your owne good shield in daungerous dismay?
That is the greatest shame and foulest scorne,
Which vnto any knight behappen may
To loose the badge, that should his deedes
display.

To whom Sir Burbon, blushing halfe for shame, That shall I vnto you (quoth he) bewray; Least ye therefore mote happily me blame, And deeme it doen of will, that through inforcement came.

True is, that I at first was dubbed knight
By a good knight, the knight of the Redcrosse;
Who when he gaue me armes, in field to fight,
Gaue me a shield, in which he did endosse
His deare Redeemers badge vpon the bosse:
The same longwhile I bore, and therewithall
Fought many battels without wound or losse;
Therewith Grandtorto selfe I did appall,
And made him oftentimes in field before me fall.

But for that many did that shield enuie,
And cruell enemies increased more;
To stint all strife and troublous enmitie,
That bloudie scutchin being battered sore,
I layd aside, and haue of late forbore,
Hoping thereby to haue my loue obtayned:
Yet can I not my loue haue nathemore;
For she by force is still fro me detayned,
And with corruptfull brybes is to vntruth
mis-trayned.

To whom thus Artegall; Certes Sir knight,
Hard is the case, the which ye doe complaine;
Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may light,
That it to such a streight mote you constraine)
As to abandon, that which doth containe
Your honours stile, that is your warlike shield.
All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all paine
Then losse of fame in disauentrous field;
Dye rather, then doe ought, that mote dishonour yield.

Not so; (quoth he) for yet when time doth

serue,
My former shield I may resume againe:
To temporize is not from truth to swerue,
Ne for aduantage terme to entertaine,
When as necessitie doth it constraine.
Fie on such forgerie (said Artegall)
Vnder one hood to shadow faces twaine.
Knights ought be true, and truth is one in all:
Of all things to dissemble fouly may befall.

Yet let me you of courtesie request,
(Said Burbon) to assist me now at need
Against these pesants, which haue me opprest,
And forced me to so infamous deed,
That yet my loue may from their hands be
freed.

Sir Artegall, albe he earst did wyte
His wauering mind, yet to his aide agreed,
And buckling him eftsoones vnto the fight,
Did set vpon those troupes with all his powre
and might.

Who flocking round about them, as a swarme
Of flyes vpon a birchen bough doth cluster,
Did them assault with terrible allarme,
And ouer all the fields themselues did muster.
With bils and glayues making a dreadfull
luster;

That forst at first those knights backet or etyre: As when the wrathfull Boreas doth bluster, Nought may abide the tempest of his yre, Both man and beast doe fly, and succour doe inquyre.

But when as ouerblowen was that brunt, Those knights began a fresh them to assayle And all about the fields like Squirrels hunt; But chiefly Talus with his yron flayle, Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote auayle Made cruell hauocke of the baser crew, And chaced them both ouer hill and dale: The raskall manie soone they ouerthrew, But the two knights themselues their captaindid subdew.

At last they came whereas that Ladie bode, Whom now her keepers had forsaken quight To saue themselues, and scattered were abroda Her halfe dismayd they found in doubtful plight,

As neither glad nor sorie for their sight; Yet wondrous faire she was, and richly clad In roiall robes, and many Iewels dight, But that those villens through their vsage ba Them fouly rent, and shamefully defaced had

61
But Burbon streight dismounting from his steed,
Vnto her ran with greedie great desyre,
And catching her fast by her ragged weed,
Would haue embraced her with hart entyre.
But she backstarting with disdainefull yre,
Rad him auaunt, ne would vnto his lore
Allured be, for prayer nor for meed.
Whom when those knights so froward and
forlore
Beheld, they her rebuked and ypbrayded sore.

Sayd Artegall; What foule disgrace is this,
To so faire Ladie, as ye seeme in sight,
To blot your beautie, that vnblemisht is,
With so foule blame, as breach of faith once
plight,

Or change of loue for any worlds delight?
Is ought on earth so pretious or deare,
As prayse and honour? Or is ought so bright
And beautifull, as glories beames appeare.
Whosegoodly light then Phebus lampedothshine
more cleare?

Why then will ye, fond Dame, attempted bec Vnto a strangers loue so lightly placed, For guiftes of gold, or any worldly glee To leaue the loue, that ye before embraced, And let your fame with falshood be defaced? Fie on the pelfe, for which good name is sold, And honour with indignitie debased:

Dearer is loue then life, and fame then gold;

But dearer then them both, your faith once plighted hold.

Much was the Ladie in her gentle mind Abasht at his rebuke, that bit her neare, Ne ought to answere thereunto did find; But hanging downeher head with heauie cheare, Stood long amaz'd, as she amated weare. Which Burbon seeing, her againe assayd, And clasping twixt his armes, her vp did reare Vpon his steede, whiles she no whit gainesayd, So bore her quite away, nor well nor ill apayd.

65

Nathlesse the yron man did still pursew
That raskall many with vnpittied spoyle,
Ne ceased not, till all their scattred crew
Into the sea he droue quite from that soyle,
The which they troubled had with great
turmoyle.

But Artigall seeing his cruell deed, Commaunded him from slaughter to recoyle, And to his voyage gan againe proceed: For that the terme approching fast, required speed

#### Cant. XII.

#### \$1\$

Artegall doth Sir Burbon aide, And blames for changing shield: He with the great Grantorto fights, And slaieth him in field.

#### SUBSTITUTE OF THE PROPERTY OF

1

O sacred hunger of ambitious mindes, And impotent desire of men to raine, Whom neither dread of God, that deuils bindes, Nor lawes of men, that common weales containe.

Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes restraine,

Can keepe from outrage, and from doing wrong, Where they may hope a kingdome to obtaine. No faith so firme, no trust can be so strong, No loue so lasting then, that may enduren long.

Witnesse may Burbon be, whom all the bands, Which may a Knight assure, had surely bound, Vntill the loue of Lordship and of lands Made him become most faithlesse and vnsound: And witnesse be Gerioneo found, Who for like cause faire Belge did oppresse, And right and wrong most cruelly confound: And so be now Grantorto, who no lesse Then all the rest burst out to all outragiousnesse.

2

Gainst whom Sir Artrgall, long hauing since Taken in hand th'exploit, being theretoo Appointed by that mightic Faerie Prince, Great Gloriane, that Tyrant to fordoo, Through other great aduentures hethertoo Had it forslackt. But now time drawing ny, To him assynd, her high beheast to doo, To the sea shore he gan his way apply, To weeteif shipping readie he mote theredescry.

4

Tho when they came to the sea coast, they found A ship all readic (as good fortune fell) To put to sea, with whom they did compound, To passe them ouer, where them list to tell: The winde and weather serued them so well, That in one day they with the coast did fall; Whereas they readic found them to repell, Great hostes of men in order martiall.

Which them forbad to land, and footing did forstall.

5

But nathemore would they from land refraine, But when as nigh vnto the shore they drew, That foot of man might sound the bottome plaine.

Talus into the sea did forth issew,

Though darts from shore and stones they at him threw;

And wading through the waves with stedfast sway,

Maugre the might of all those troupes in vew, Did win the shore, whence he them chast away, And made to fly, like doues, whom the Eagle doth affray.

The whyles Sir Artegall, with that old knight
Did forth descend, there being none them neare,
And forward marched to a towne in sight.
By this came tydings to the Tyrants care,
By those, which earst did fly away for feare
Of their arriual!: wherewith troubled sore,
He all his forces streight to him did reare,
And forth issuing with his scouts afore,
Meant them to haue incountred, ere they left
the shore.

But ere he marched farre, he with them met, And fiercely charged them with all his force; But Talus sternely did upon them set, And brusht, and battred them without remorse, That on the ground he left full many a corse; Ne any able was him to withstand, But he them ouerthrew both man and horse, That they lay scattred ouer all the land,

As thicke as doth the seede after the sowers hand.

8
Till Artegall him seeing so to rage,

Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did make: To which all harkning, did a while asswage Their forces furie, and their terror slake; Till he an Herauld cald, and to him spake, Willing him wend vnto the Tyrant streight, And tell him that not for such slaughters sake He thether came, but for to trie the right Of fayre Irenaes cause with him in single fight.

9

And willed him for to reclayme with speed His scattred people, ere they all were slaine, And time and place conuenient to areed, In which they two the combat might darraine. Which message when Grantorto heard, full favne

And glad he was the slaughter so to stay,
And pointed for the combat twixt them twayne
The morrow next, ne gaue him longer day.
So sounded the retraite, and drew his folke

away.

. 10

That night Sir Artegall did cause his tent
There to be pitched on the open plaine;
For he had given streight commaundement,
That none should dare him once to entertaine:
Which none durst breake, though many would
right faine

For fayre Irena, whom they loued deare. But yet old Sergis did so well him paine, That from close friends, that dar'd not to appeare,

He all things did puruay, which for them needfull weare.

11

The morrow next, that was the dismall day,
Appointed for Irenas death before,
So soone as it did to the world display
His chearefull face, and light to men restore,
The heauy Mayd, to whom none tydings bore
Of Artegalls arryuall, her to free,
Lookt vp with eyes full sad and hart full sore;
Weening her lifes last howre then neare to bee,
Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare nor

Then vp she rose, and on her selfe did dight
Most squalid garments, fit for such a day,
And with dull countenance, and with doleful
spright,

She forth was brought in sorrowfull dismay, For to receive the doome of her decay. But comming to the place, and finding there Sir Artegall, in battailous array

Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart cheare, And new life to her lent, in midst of deadly feare.

Like as a tender Rose in open plaine,
That with vntimely drought nigh withered was,
And hung the head, soone as few drops of raine
Thereon distill, and deaw her daintie face,
Gins to looke vp, and with fresh wonted grace
Dispreds the glorie of her leaues gay;
Such was Irenas countenance, such her case,
When Arlegall she saw in that array,

There wayting for the Tyrant, till it was farre day.

Who came at length, with proud presumpteous

Into the field, as if he fearelesse were,
All armed in a cote of yron plate,
Of great defence to ward the deadly feare,
And on his head a steele cap he did weare
Of colour rustie browne, but sure and strong;
And in his hand an huge Polaxe did beare,
Whose steale was yron studded, but not long,
With which he wont to fight, to iustifie his
wrong.

Like to a Giant for his monstrous hight,
And did in strength most sorts of men surpa,
Ne euer any found his match in might;
Thereto he had great skill in single fight:
His face was vgly, and his countenance sterne,
That could haue frayd one with the very sight,
And gaped like a gulfe, when he did gerne,
That whether man or monster one could scarse
discerne.

ilscerne.

Soone as he did within the listes appeare, With dreadfull looke he Artegall beheld, As if he would haue daunted him with feare, And grinning griesly, did against him weld His deadly weapon, which in hand he held. But th'Elfin swayne, that oft had seene like sight,

Waswith his ghastly count'nance nothing queld, But gan him streight to buckle to the fight, And cast his shield about, to be in readie plight.

17

The trompets sound, and they together goe, With dreadfull terror, and with fell intent; Andtheirhuge strokes fulldaungerouslybestow, To doe most dammage, where as most they But with such force and furie violent, [ment. The tyrant thundred his thicke blowes so fast, That through the yron walles their way they rent.

And euen to the vitall parts they past, Ne ought could them endure, but all they cleft or brast.

Which cruell outrage when as Artegall Did well auize, thenceforth with warie heed He shund his strokes, where euer they did fall, And way did give vnto their gracelesse speed: As when a skilfull Marriner doth reed A storme approching, that doth perill threat, He will not bide the daunger of such dread, Butstrikes hissayles, and vereth his mainsheat, And lends vnto it leave the emptie ayre to beat.

So did the Faerie knight himselfe abeare. And stouped of this head from shame to shield: No shame to stoupe, ones head more high to

And much to gaine, a litle for to yield; So stoutest knights doen oftentimes in field. But still the tyrant sternely at him layd, And did his yron axe so nimbly wield, That many wounds into his flesh it made, And with his burdenous blowes him sore did ouerlade.

Yet when as fit advantage he did spy, The whiles the cursed felon high did reare His cruell hand, to smite him mortally, Vnder his stroke he to him stepping neare, Right in the flanke him strooke with deadly

That the gore bloud thence gushing grieuously, Did vnderneath him like a pond appeare, And all his armour did with purple dye; Thereat he brayed loud, and yelled dreadfully.

Yet the huge stroke, which he before intended, Kept on his course, as he did it direct, And with such monstrous poise adowne descended.

That seemed nought could him from death protect:

But he it well did ward with wise respect, And twixt him and the blow his shield did cast, Which thereon seizing, tooke no great effect, But byting deepe therein did sticke so fast, That by no meanes it backe againe he forth could wrast.

Long while he tug'd and stroue, to get it out, And all his powre applyed thereunto, That he therewith the knight drew all about : Nathlesse, for all that ever he could doe, His axe he could not from his shield vndoe. Which Artegall perceiuing, strooke no more, But loosing soone his shield, did it forgoe, And whiles he combred was therewith so sore, He gan at him let drive more fiercely then afore. He tooke his leave of her, there left in heavinesse

23 So well he him pursew'd, that at the last, He stroke him with Chrysgor on the hed, That with the souse thereof full sore aghast, He staggered to and fro in doubtfull sted. Againe whiles he him saw so ill bested, He did him smite with all his might and maine. That falling on his mother earth he fed: Whom when he saw prostrated on the plaine, He lightly reft his head, to case him of his paine.

Which when the people round about him saw, They shouted all for joy of his successe. Glad to be quit from that proud Tyrants awe, Which with strong powre did them long time oppresse:

And running all with greedie ioyfulnesse To faire Irena, at her feet did fall, And her adored with due humblenesse. As their true Liege and Princesse naturall; And eke her champions glorie sounded ouer all.

Who streight her leading with meete maiestic Vnto the pallace, where their kings did rayne, Did her therein establish peaceablie, And to her kingdomes seat restore agayne; And all such persons, as did late maintayne That Tyrants part, with close or open ayde, He sorely punished with heavie payne; That in short space, whiles there with her he stavd.

Not one was left, that durst her once haue disobayd.

During which time, that he did there remaine, His studie was true Iustice how to deale, And day and night employ'd his busic paine How to reforme that ragged common-weale: And that same yron man which could reueale All hidden crimes, through all that realme he

To search out those, that vsd to rob and steale, Or did rebell gainst lawfull gouernment; On whom he did inflict most grieuous punishment.

But ere he could reforme it thoroughly, He through occasion called was away, To Faerie Court, that of necessity His course of Iustice he was forst to stay, And Talus to reuoke from the right way, In which he was that Realme for to redresse. But enuies cloud still dimmeth vertues ray. So having freed Irena from distresse,

Tho as he backe returned from that land, And there arriu'd againe, whence forth he set, He had not passed farre vpon the strand, When as two old ill fauour'd Hags he met, By the way side being together set, Two griesly creatures; and, to that their faces Most foule and filthie were, their garments yet Being all rag d and tatter'd, their disgraces Did much the more augment, and made most

vgly cases.

29
The one of them, that elder did appeare,
With her dull eyes did seeme to looke askew,
That her mis-shape much helpt; and her
foule heare

Hung loose and loathsomely: Thereto her hew Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew, And all her bones might through her cheekes he red:

Her lips were like raw lether, pale and blew, And as she spake, therewith she slauered; Yet spake she seldom, but thought more, the lesse she sed.

Her hands were foule and durtie, neuer washt In all her life, with long nayles ouer raught, Like puttocks clawes: with th'one of which she scracht

Her cursed head, although it itched naught;
The other held a snake with venime fraught,
On which she fed, and gnawed hungrily,
As if that long she had not eaten ought;
That round about her iawes one might descry
The bloudie gore and poyson dropping lothsomely.

Her name was Enuie, knowen well thereby; Whose nature is to grieue, and grudge at all, That euer she sees doen prays-worthily, Whose sight to her is greatest crosse, may fall, And vexeth so, that makes her eat her gall. For when she wanteth other thing to cat, She feedes on her owne maw vnnaturall, And of her owne foule entrayles makes her meat;

Meat fit for such a monsters monsterous dyeat.

And if she hapt of any good to heare,
That had to any happily betid,
Then would she inly fret, and grieue, and teare
Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid:
But if she heard of ill, that any did,
Or harme, that any had, then would she make
Great cheare, like one vnto a banquet bid;
And in anothers losse great pleasure take,
Asshehadgot thereby, and gayned agreat stake.

The other nothing better was, then shee;
Agreeing in bad will and cancred kynd,
But in bad maner they did disagree:
For what so Enuie good or bad did fynd,
She did conceale, and murder her owne mynd;
But this, what euer euill she conceiued,
Did spred abroad, and throw in th'open wynd.
Yet this in all her words might be perceiued,
That all she sought, was mens good name to
haue bercaued.

For what socuer good by any sayd, Or doen she heard, she would streightwayes inuent,

How to depraue, or slaunderously vpbrayd, Or to misconstrue of a mans intent, And turne to ill the thing, that well was ment. Therefore she vsed often to resort, To common haunts, and companies frequent, To hearke what any one did good report, To blot the same with blame, or wrest in wicked sort.

And if that any ill she heard of any,
She would it eeke, and make much worse by
telling,

And take great ioy to publish it to many, That euery matter worse was for her melling. Her name was hight *Detraction*, and her dwelling

Was neare to Enuie, even her neighbour next; A wicked hag, and Enuy selfe excelling
In mischiefe: for her selfe she onely vext;
But this same both her selfe, and others eke perplext.

Her face was vgly, and her mouth distort, Foming with poyson round about her gils, In which her cursed tongue full sharpe and short Appear'd like Aspis sting, that closely kils, Or cruelly does wound, whom so she wils: A distaffe in her other hand she had, Vpon the which she litle spinnes, but spils, Andfaynes to weaue false tales and leasings bad, To throw amongst the good, which others had disprad.

These two now had themselues combynd in one, And linckt together gainst Sir Artegall, For whom they wayted as his mortall fone, How they might make him into mischiefe fall, For freeing from their snares Irena thrall, Besides vnto themselues they gotten had A monster, which the Blatant beast men call, A dreadfull feend of gods and men ydrad, Whom they by slights allur'd, and to their purpose lad.

Such were these Hags, and so vnhandsome

Who when they nigh approching, had espyde Sir Artegall return'd from his late quest, They both arose, and at him loudly cryde. As it had bene two shepheards curres, had scryde

A rauenous Wolfe amongst the scattered flockes.

And Enuie first, as she that first him eyde. Towardes him runs, and with rude flaring lockes

About her eares, does beat her brest, and forhead knockes.

Then from her mouth the gobbet she does take, The which whyleare she was so greedily Denouring, euen that halfe-gnawen snake, And at him throwes it most despightfully. The cursed Serpent, though she hungrily Earst chawd thereon, vet was not all so dead, But that some life remayned secretly, And as he past afore withouten dread, Bit him behind, that long the marke was to be read.

Then th'other comming neare, gan him reuile, And fouly rayle, with all she could inuent; Saying, that he had with vnmanly guile, And foule abusion both his honour blent, And that bright sword, the sword of Iustice lent. Had stayned with reprochfull crueltie,

In guiltlesse blood of many an innocent: As for Grandtorto, him with treacherie And traynes having surpriz'd, he fouly did

to die.

Thereto the Blatant beast by them set on At him began aloud to barke and bay, With bitter rage and fell contention, That all the woods and rockes nigh to that way, Began to quake and tremble with dismay; And all the aire rebellowed againe. So dreadfully his hundred tongues did bray, And euermore those hags them selves did paine. To sharpen him, and their owne cursed tongs did straine.

And still among most bitter wordes they spake, Most shamefull, most vnrighteous, most

vntrew.

That they the mildest man aliue would make Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeaunce dew To her, that so false sclaunders at him threw. And more to make them pierce and wound more deepe.

She with the sting, which in her vile tongue

Did sharpen them, and in fresh poyson steepe: Yet he past on, and seem'd of them to take no keepe.

But Talus hearing her so lewdly raile, And speake so ill of him, that well deserued, Would her haue chastiz'd with his yron flaile, If her Sir Artegall had not preserved, And him forbidden, who his heast observed. So much the more at him still did she scold, And stones did cast, yet he for nought would swerue

From his right course, but still the way did hold

To Faery Court, where what him fell shall else be told.



# THE SIXTE

# BOOKE OF THE

# FAERIE QVEENE.

# Contayning

# THE LEGEND OF S. CALIDORE OROF COVRTESIE.

THE waies, through which my weary steps I | Reuele to me the sacred noursery guyde. In this delightfull land of Faery,

Are so exceeding spacious and wyde. And sprinckled with such sweet variety, Of all that pleasant is to eare or eye, That I nigh rauisht with rare thoughts delight, My tedious trauell doe forget thereby; And when I gin to feele decay of might, It strength to me supplies, and chears my dulled spright.

Such secret comfort, and such heauenly pleasures,

Ye sacred imps, that on Parnasso dwell, And there the keeping haue of learnings threasures.

Which doe all worldly riches farre excell. Into the mindes of mortall men doe well, And goodly fury into them infuse: Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me well In these strange waies, where neuer foote did vse,

Ne none can find, but who was taught them by the Muse.

Of vertue, which with you doth there re-

Where it in siluer bowre does hidden ly From view of men, and wicked worlds dis-

Since it at first was by the Gods with paine Planted in earth, being deriu'd at furst From heauenly seedes of bounty soueraine, And by them long with carefull labour nurst,

Till it to ripenesse grew, and forth to honour burst.

Amongst them all growes not a fayrer flowre, Then is the bloosme of comely courtesie. Which though it on a lowly stalke doe bowre, Yet brancheth forth in braue nobilitie, And spreds it selfe through all civilitie: Of which though present age doe plenteous seeme.

Yet being matcht with plaine Antiquitie. Ye will them all but fayned showes esteeme, Which carry colours faire, that feeble eies misdeeme.

But in the triall of true curtesie. Its now so farre from that, which then it was. That it indeed is nought but forgerie, Fashion'd to please the eies of them, that pas, Which see not perfect things but in a glas: Yet is that glasse so gay, that it can blynd The wisest sight, to thinke gold that is bras. But vertues seat is deepe within the mynd, And not in outward shows, but inward thoughts defynd.

But where shall I in all Antiquity So faire a patterne finde, where may be seene The goodly praise of Princely curtesie, As in your selfe, O soueraine Lady Queene, In whose pure minde, as in a mirrour sheene, It showes, and with her brightnesse doth inflame

The eyes of all, which thereon fixed beene: But meriteth indeede an higher name: Yet so from low to high vplifted is your name.

Then pardon me, most dreaded Soueraine, That from your selfe I doe this vertue bring, And to your selfe doe it returne againe: So from the Ocean all rivers spring, And tribute backe repay as to their King. Right so from you all goodly vertues well Into the rest, which round about you ring. Faire Lords and Ladies, which about you dwell, And doe adorne your Court, where courtesies excell.

## Cant. I.

### 

Calidore saues from Maleffort, A Damzell vsed vylde: Doth vanquish Crudor, and doth make Briana wexe more mylde.

# 

Of Court it seemes, men Courtesie doe call, For that it there most vseth to abound; And well beseemeth that in Princes hall That vertue should be plentifully found, Which of all goodly manners is the ground, And roote of ciuil conuersation. Right so in Faery court it did redound, Where curteous Knights and Ladies most did won

But mongst them all was none more courteous Knight.

Then Calidore, beloued ouer all, In whom it seemes, that gentlenesse of spright And manners mylde were planted naturali; To which he adding comely guize withall, And gracious speach, did steale mens hearts awav.

Nathlesse thereto he was full stout and tall. And well approu'd in batteilous affray, That him did much renowme, and far his fame display.

Ne was there Knight, ne was there Lady found In Faery court, but him did deare embrace, For his faire vsage and conditions sound, The which in all mens liking gayned place, And with the greatest purchast greatest grace Which he could wisely vse, and well apply; To please the best, and th'euill to embase. For he loathd leasing, and base flattery, And loued simple truth and stedfast honesty.

And now he was in trauell on his way, Vppon an hard aduenture sore bestad, Whenas by chaunce he met vppon a day With Artegall, returning yet halfe sad From his late conquest, which he gotten had. Who whenas each of other had a sight, They knew them selues, and both their persons rad:

When Calidore thus first; Haile noblest Knight

Of all this day on ground, that breathen liuing spright.

Now tell, if please you, of the good successe, Which ye haue had in your late enterprize. To whom Sir Artegall gan to expresse His whole exploite, and valorous emprize, In order as it did to him arize. Now happy man (sayd then Sir Calidore) Which have so goodly, as ye can deuize, Atchieu'd so hard a quest, as few before; That shall you most renowmed make for euermore.

But where ye ended haue, now I begin To tread an endlesse trace, withouten guyde, Or good direction, how to enter in, Or how to issue forth in waies vntryde, In perils strange, in labours long and wide, In which although good Fortune me befall, Yet shall it not by none be testifyde. What is that quest (quoth then Sir Artegall Of all on earth, and made a matchlesse paragon. I That you into such perils presently doth call? The Blattant Beast (quoth he) I doe pursew, And through the world incessantly doe chase, Till I him ouertake, or else subdew: Yet know I not or how, or in what place To find him out, yet still I forward trace. What is that Blattant Beast? (then he replide.)

It is a Monster bred of hellishe race. (Then answerd he) which often hath annoyd Good Knights and Ladies true, and many else destroyd.

Of Cerberus whilome he was begot, And fell Chimæra in her darkesome den. Through fowle commixture of his filthy blot: Where he was fostred long in Stygian fen, Till he to perfect ripenesse grew, and then Into this wicked world he forth was sent, To be the plague and scourge of wretched men: Whom with vile tongue and venemous intent He sore doth wound, and bite, and cruelly torment.

Then since the saluage Island I did leaue, Sayd Artegall, I such a Beast did see, The which did seeme a thousand tongues to haue.

That all in spight and malice did agree, With which he bayd and loudly barkt at mee, As if that he attonce would me deuoure. But I that knew my selfe from perill free, Did nought regard his malice nor his powre, But he the more his wicked poyson forth did poure.

That surely is that Beast (saide Calidore) Which I pursue, of whom I am right glad To heare these tidings, which of none afore Through all my weary trauell I have had: Yet now some hope your words vnto me add. Now God you speed (quoth then Sir Artegall) And keepe your body from the daunger drad: For ye have much adoe to deale withall. So both tooke goodly leave, and parted severall.

Sir Calidore thence trauelled not long, When as by chaunce a comely Squire he found, That thorough some more mighty enemies wrong,

Both hand and foote vnto a tree was bound: Who seeing him from farre, with piteous sound Of his shrill cries him called to his aide. To whom approching, in that painefull stound When he him saw, for no demaunds he staide, But first him losde, and afterwards thus to him saide.

12 Vnhappy Squire, what hard mishap thee brought Into this bay of perill and disgrace? What cruell hand thy wretched thraldome

wrought.

And thee captyued in this shamefull place? To whom he answerd thus; My haplesse case Is not occasiond through my misdesert, But through misfortune, which did me abase Vnto this shame, and my young hope subuert. Ere that I in her guilefull traines was well expert.

Not farre from hence, vppon youd rocky hill, Hard by a streight there stands a castle strong. Which doth obserue a custome lewd and ill. And it hath long may ntaind with mighty wrong: For may no Knight nor Lady passe along That way, (and yet they needs must passe that way,)

By reason of the streight, and rocks among, But they that Ladies lockes doe shaue away, And that knights berd for toll, which they for passage pay.

A shamefull vse as euer I did heare. Sayd Calidore, and to be ouerthrowne. But by what meanes did they at first it reare, And for what cause, tell if thou haue it knowne. Sayd then that Squire: The Lady which doth

This Castle, is by name Briana hight. Then which a prouder Lady liueth none: She long time hath deare lou'd a doughty Knight.

And sought to win his loue by all the meanes she might.

His name is Crudor, who through high disdaine And proud despight of his selfe pleasing mynd, Refused hath to yeeld her loue againe, Vntill a Mantle she for him doe fynd, Withbeards of Knights and locks of Ladies lynd. Which to prouide, she hath this Castle dight. And therein hath a Seneschall assynd, Cald Maleffort, a man of mickle might,

Who executes her wicked will, with worse despight.

He this same day, as I that way did come With a faire Damzell, my beloued deare, In execution of her lawlesse doome, Did set vppon vs flying both for feare: For little bootes against him hand to reare. Me first he tooke, vnhable to withstond; And whiles he her pursued enery where, Till his returne vnto this tree he bond: Ne wote I surely, whether her he yet haue fond.

Thus whiles they spake, they heard a ruefull shrieke

Of one loud crying, which they streight way

That it was she, the which for helpe did seeke. The looking vp vnto the cry to lest, They saw that Carlefrom farre, with hand vnblest Hayling that mayden by the yellow heare, That all her garments from her snowy brest, And from her head her lockes he nigh did teare, Ne would be spare for pitty, nor refraine for

Which haynous sight when Calidore beheld, Eftsoones he loosd that Squire, and so him left. With hearts dismay and inward dolour queld, For to pursue that villaine, which had reft That piteous spoile by so iniurious theft. Whom ouertaking, loude to him he cryde; Leaue faytor quickely that misgotten weft To him, that hath it better justifyde, And turne thee soone to him, of whom thou art defyde.

Who hearkning to that voice, him selfe vpreard, And seeing him so fiercely towardes make, Against him stoutly ran, as nought afeard, But rather more enrag'd for those words sake; And with sterne count'naunce thus vnto him spake.

Art thou the caytiue, that defyest me, And for this Mayd, whose party thou doest take. Wilt give thy beard, though it but little bee? Yet shall it not her lockes for raunsome fro me free.

With that he fiercely at him flew, and layd On hideous strokes with most importune might, That oft he made him stagger as vnstayd, And oft recuile to shunne his sharpe despight. But Calidore, that was well skild in fight, Him long forbore, and still his spirite spar'd, Lying in waite, how him he damadge might. But when he felt him shrinke, and come to vard,

He greater grew, and gan to drive at him more

hard.

Like as a water streame, whose swelling sourse Shall drive a Mill, within strong bancks is pent, And long restrayned of his ready course; So soone as passage is vnto him lent, Breakes forth, and makes his way more violent. Such was the fury of Sir Calidore, When once he felt his foeman to relent; He fiercely him pursu'd, and pressed sore, Who as he still decayd, so he encreased more

22

The heavy burden of whose dreadfull might When as the Carle no longer could sustaine, His heart gan faint, and streight he tooke his

Toward the Castle, where if need constraine, His hope of refuge vsed to remaine. Whom Calidore perceiving fast to flie, He him pursu'd and chaced through the plaine, That he for dread of death gan loude to crie Vnto the ward, to open to him hastilie.

They from the wall him seeing so aghast, The gate soone opened to receive him in, But Calidore did follow him so fast, That even in the Porch he him did win, And cleft his head asunder to his chin. The carkasse tumbling downe within the dore, Did choke the entraunce with a lumpe of sin, That it could not be shut, whilest Calidore Did enter in, and slew the Porter on the flore

With that the rest, the which the Castle kept, About him flockt, and hard at him did lay; But he them all from him full lightly swept, As doth a Steare, in heat of sommers day, With his long taile the bryzes brush away. Thence passing forth, into the hall he came, Where of the Lady selfe in sad dismay He was ymett, who with vncomely shame Gan him salute, and fowle vpbrayd with faulty blame.

False traytor Knight, (sayd she) no Knight at

But scorne of armes that hast with guilty hand Murdred my men, and slaine my Seneschall; Now comest thou to rob my house vnmand, And spoile my selfe, that can not thee withstand?

Yet doubt thou not, but that some better Knight

Then thou, that shall thy treason vnderstand, Will it auenge, and pay thee with thy right: And if none do, yet shame shal thee with shame requight.

Much was the Knight abashed at that word; Yet answerd thus; Not vnto me the shame, But to the shamefull doer it afford. Bloud is no blemish; for it is no blame To punish those, that doe deserue the same; But they that breake bands of civilitie, And wicked customes make, those doe defame Both noble armes and gentle curtesie. No greater shame to man then inhumanitie.

Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame, forgoe This euill manner, which ye here maintaine, And doe in stead thereof mild curt'sie showe To all, that passe. That shall you glory gaine Morethen hisloue, which thus yeseeket' obtaine. Wherewith all full of wrath, she thus replyde; Vile recreant, know that I doe much disdaine Thy courteous lore, that doest my loue deride, Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee be defude.

defyde.

28

To take defiaunce at a Ladies word
(Ouoth he) I hold it no indignity;

But were he here, that would it with his sword Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby. Cowherd (quoth she) were not, that thou wouldst fly,

Ere he doe come, he should be soone in place. If I doe so, (sayd he) then liberty I leaue to you, for aye me to disgrace With all those shames, that erst ye spake me

to deface.

With that a Dwarfe she cald to her in hast, And taking from her hand a ring of gould, A privy token, which betweene them past, Bad him to flie with all the speed he could, To Crudor, and desire him that he would Vouchsafe to reskue her against a Knight, Who through strong powre had now her self in hould,

Hauing late slaine her Seneschall in fight,
And all her people murdred with outragious
might.

The Dwarfe his way did hast, and went all night; But Calidore did with her there abyde The comming of that somuch threatned Knight, Where that discourteous Dame with scornfull pryde,

And fowle entreaty him indignifyde,
That yron heart it hardly could sustaine:
Yet he, that could his wrath full wisely guyde,
Did well endure her womanish disdaine,
And did him selfe from fraile impatience refraine.

The morrow next, before the lampe of light
Aboue the earth vpreard his flaming head,
The Dwarfe, which bore that message to her
knight,

Broughtaunswerebacke, thaterehetasted bread, He would her succour, and aliue or dead Her foe deliuer vp into her hand: Therefore he wild her doe away all dread; And that of him she mote assured stand, He sent to her his basenet, as a faithfull band.

Thereof full blyth the Lady streight became, Andgant'augmenther bitternesse much more: Yet no whit more appalled for the same, Ne ought dismayed was Sir Calidore, Butrather did more chearefull seeme therefore. And hauing soone his armes about him dight, Did issue forth, to meete his foe afore; Where long he stayed not, when as a Knight He spide come pricking on with al his powre and might.

Well weend he streight, that he should be the same.

Which tooke in hand her quarrell to maintaine; Ne stayd to aske if it were he by name, But coucht his speare, and ran at him amaine. They bene ymett in middest of the plaine, With so fell fury, and dispiteous forse, That neither could the others stroke sustaine, But rudely rowld to ground both man and

Neither of other taking pitty nor remorse.

2.

But Calidore vprose againe full light,
Whiles yet his foe lay fast in sencelesse sound,
Yetwouldhe not him hurt, although he might:
Forshamehe weenda sleeping wight to wound.
But when Briana saw that drery stound,
There where she stood vppon the Castle wall,
She deem'd him sure to haue bene dead on
ground,

And made such piteous mourning therewithall, That from the battlements she ready seem'd to fall.

Nathlesse at length him selfe he did vpreare In lustlesse wise, as if against his will, Ere he had slept his fill, he wakened were, And gan to stretch his limbs; which feeling ill Of his late fall, a while he rested still: But when he saw his foe before in vew, He shooke off luskishnesse, and courage chill Kindling a fresh, gan battell to renew, To proue if better foote then horsebacke would ensew.

There then began a fearefull cruell fray
Betwixt them two, for maystery of might.
For both were wondrous practicke in that play,
And passing well expert in single fight,
And both inflam'd with furious despight:
Which as it still encreast, so still increast
Their cruell strokes and terrible affright;
Ne once for ruth their rigour they rekast,
Ne once to breath a while their angers tempest
ceast.

Thus long they trac'd and trauerst to and fro, And tryde all waies, how each mote entrance make

Into the life of his malignant foe;
They hew'd their helmes, and plates asunder

As they had potshares bene; for nought mote

Their greedy vengeaunces, but goary blood, That at the last like to a purple lake Of bloudy gore congeal'd about them stood, Which from their riuen sides forth gushed like a flood.

At length it chaunst, that both their hands on hie Atoncedidheaue, with all their powreand might, Thinking the vtmost of their force to trie, And proue the finall fortune of the fight: But Calidore, that was more quicke of sight, and nimbler handed, then his enemie, Preuented him before his stroke could light, And on the helmet smote him formerlie, That made him stoupe to ground with meeke humilitie.

And ere he could recouer foot againe,
He following that faire aduantage fast,
His stroke redoubled with such might and
maine,

That him vpon the ground he groueling cast; And leaping to him light, would haue vnlast His Helme, to make vnto his vengeance way. Who seeing, in what daunger he was plast, Cryde out, Ah mercie Sir, doe me not slay, But saue my life, which lot before your foot doth lay.

With that his mortall hand a while he stayd, Andhauing somewhat calm'dhis wrathfullheat With goodly patience, thus he to him sayd; And is the boast of that proud Ladies threat, That menaced me from the field to beat, Nowbroughttothis? By this now may yelearne, Strangers no more so rudely to intreat, But put away proud looke, and vsage sterne, The which shal nought to you but foule dishonor yearne.

For nothing is more blamefull to a knight,
That court'sie doth as well as armes professe,
How euer strong and fortunate in fight,
Then the reproch of pride and cruelnesse.
In vaine he seeketh others to suppresse,
Who hath not learnd him selfe first to subdew:
All flesh is frayle, and full of ficklenesse,
Subiect to fortunes chance, still chaunging new;
What haps to day to me, to morrow may to you.

42

Who will not mercie vnto others shew,
How can he mercy euer hope to haue?
To pay each with his owne is right and dew.
Yet since ye mercie now doe need to craue,
I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to saue;
With these conditions, which I will propound:
First, that ye better shall your selfe behaue
Vnto all errant knights, whereso on ground;
Next that ye Ladies ayde in euery stead and
stound.

The wretched man, that all this while did dwell In dread of death, his heasts did gladly heare, And promist to performe his precept well, And whatsoeuer else he would requere. So suffring him to rise, he made him sweare By his owne sword, and by the crosse thereon, To take Briana for his louing fere, Withouten dowre or composition; But to release his former foule condition.

All which accepting, an a with faithfull oth Bynding himselfe most firmely to obay, He vp arose, how euer liefe or loth, And swore to him true fealtie for aye. Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay The sad *Briana*, which all this beheld: Who comming forth yet full of late affray, Sir Calidore vpcheard, and to her teld All this accord, to which he Crudor had compeld.

Whereof she now more glad, then sory earst, All ouercome with infinite affect, For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst Her stubborne hart with inward deepe effect, Before his feet her selfe she did proiect, And him adoring as her liues deare Lord, With all due thankes, and dutifull respect, Her selfe acknowledg'd bound for that accord, By which he had to her both life and loue restord.

So all returning to the Castle glad,
Most ioyfully she them did entertaine,
Where goodly glee and feast to them she made,
To shew her thankefull mind and meaning
faine,

By all the meanes she mote it best explaine: And after all, vnto Sir Calidore She freely gaue that Castle for his paine, And her selfe bound to him for euermore; So wondrously now chaung'd, from that she was afore. But Calidore himselfe would not retaine
Nor land nor fee. for hyre of his good deede,
Butgauethem streight vnto that Squire againe,
Whom from her Seneschall he lately freed,
And to his damzell as their rightfull meed,
For recompence of all their former wrong:
There he remaind with them right well agreed,
Till of his wounds he wexed hole and strong,
And then to his first quest he passed forth along.

#### Cant. II.

#### 

Calidore sees young Tristram slay
A proud discourteous knight,
He makes him Squire, and of him learnes
his state and present plight.

#### 

What vertue is so fitting for a knight,
Or for a Ladie, whom whight should loue,
As Curtesie, to beare themselues aright
To all of each degree, as doth behoue?
For whether they be placed high aboue,
Or low beneath, yet ought they well to know
Their good, that none them rightly may
reproue

Of rudenesse, for not yeelding what they owe: Great skill it is such duties timely to bestow.

Theretogreathelpe dame Nature selfe doth lend:
For some so goodly gratious are by kind,
That euery action doth them much commend,
And in the eyes of men great liking find;
Which others, that haue greater skill in mind,
Thoughthey enforce themselues, cannot attaine.
For euerie thing, to which one is inclin'd,
Doth best become, and greatest grace doth
gaine:

Yet praise likewise deserue good thewes, enforst with paine.

That well in courteous Calidore appeares, Whose euery deed and word, that he did say, Was like enchantment, that through both the eves.

And both the eares did steale the hart away. He now againe is on his former way, To follow his first quest, when as he spyde A tall young man from thence not farre away, Fighting on foot, as well he him descryde, Against an armed knight, that did on horsebacke ryde.

And them beside a Ladie faire he saw, Standing alone on foot, in foule array: To whom himselfe he hastily did draw, To weet the cause of so vncomely fray, And to depart them, if so be he may. But ere he came in place, that youth had kild That armed knight, that low on ground he lay; Which when he saw, his hart was my child With great amazement, and his thought with wonder fild.

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to bee A goodly youth of amiable grace, Yet but a slender slip, that scarse did see Yet seuenteene yeares, but talland faire of face That sure he deem'd him borne of noble race. All in a woodmans iacket he was clad Of Lincolne greene, belayd with siluer lace; And on his head an hood with aglets sprad, And by his side his hunters horne he hanging had.

Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne,
Pinckt vpon gold, and paled part per part,
As then the guize was for each gentle swayne;
In his right hand he held a trembling dart,
Whose fellow he before had sent apart;
And in his left he held a sharpe borespeare,
With which he wont to launch the saluage hart
Of many a Lyon, and of many a Beare
That first vnto his hand in chase did happen
neare.

Whom Calidore a while well having vewed, At length bespake; What meanes this, gentle swaine?

Why hath thy hand too bold it selfe embrewed In blood of knight, the which by thee is slaine, By thee no knight; which armes impugneth plaine?

Certes (said he) loth were I to haue broken
The law of armes; yet breake it should againe
Rather then let my selfe of wight be stroken,
So long as these two armes were able to be
wroken.

For not I him, as this his Ladie here May witnesse well, did offer first to wrong, Ne surely thus vnarm'd I likely were; But he me first, through pride and puissance strong

Assayld, not knowing what to armes doth long. Perdie great blame, (then said Sir Calidore)
For armed knight a wight vnarm'd to wrong. But then aread, thou gentle chyld, wherefore Betwixt you two began this strife and sterne vprore.

That shall I sooth (said he) to you declare. I whose vnryper yeares are yet vnfit For thing of weight, or worke of greater care. Doe spend my dayes, and bend my carelesse wit To saluage chace, where I thereon may hit In all this forrest, and wyld wooddie raine: Where, as this day I was enraunging it, I chaunst to meete this knight, who there lyes slaine,

Together with this Ladie, passing on the plaine.

The knight, as ye did see, on horsebacke was, And this his Ladie, (that him ill became,) On her faire feet by his horse side did pas Through thicke and thin, vnfit for any Dame, Yet not content, more to increase his shame. When so she lagged, as she needs mote so, He with his speare, that was to him great blame. Would thumpe her forward, and inforce to goe, Weeping to him in vaine, and making piteous woe.

Which when I saw, as they me passed by, Much was I moued in indignant mind, And gan to blame him for such cruelty Towards a Ladie, whom with vsage kind He rather should have taken vp behind. Wherewith he wroth, and full of proud disdaine, Tooke in foulescorne, that I such fault did find, And me in lieu thereof reuil'd againe, Threatning to chastize me, as doth t'a chyld

pertaine. Which I no lesse disdayning, backe returned His scornefull taunts vnto his teeth againe, That he streight way with haughtie choler burned, [twaine; And with his speare strooke me one stroke or Which I enforst to beare though to my paine,

Cast to requite, and with a slender dart, Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine, Strooke him, as seemeth, underneath the hart, That through the wound his spirit shortly did depart.

Much did Sir Calidore admyre his speach Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke That through the mayles had made so strong a breach

Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke His wrath on him, that first occasion broke. Yet rested not, but further gan inquire Of that same Ladie, whether what he spoke, Were soothly so, and that th'vnrighteous ire Of her owne knight, had given him his owne due hire.

Of all which, when as she could nought deny. But cleard that stripling of th'imputed blame, Sayd then Sir Calidore: Neither will I [clame: Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite For what he spake, for you he spake it, Dame: And what he did, he did him selfe to saue: Against both which that knight wrought knightlesse shame.

For knights and all men this by nature haue, Towards all womenkind them kindly to behaue.

But sith that he is gone irreuocable, Please it you Ladie, to vs to aread, What cause could make him so dishonourable, To drive you so on foot vnfit to tread, And lackey by him, gainst all womanhead? Certes Sir knight (sayd she) full loth I were To rayse a lyuing blame against the dead: But since it me concernes, my selfe to clere, I will the truth discouer, as it chaunst whylere.

This day, as he and I together roade Vpon our way, to which we weren bent, We chaunst to come foreby a couert glade Within a wood, whereas a Ladie gent Sate with a knight in ioyous iolliment Of their franke loues, free from all gealous spyes: Faire was the Ladie sure, that mote content An hart, not carried with too curious eyes, And vnto him did shew all louely courtesyes.

Whom when my knight did see so louely faire, He inly gan her louer to enuy, And wish, that he part of his spoyle might share. Whereto when as my presence he did spy To be a let, he bad me by and by For to alight: but when as I was loth, My loues owne part to leave so suddenly, He with strong hand down from his steed me throw'th.

And with presumpteous powre against that knight streight go'th.

Vnarm'd all was the knight, as then more meete For Ladies service, and for loues delight, Then fearing any foeman there to meete: Whereof he taking oddes, streight bidshim dight Himselfe to yeeld his loue, or else to fight. Whereat the other starting vp dismayd, Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might; To leaue his loue he should be ill apayd, In which he had good right gaynst all, that it gainesayd.

IQ

Yet since he was not presently in plight Her to defend, or his to justifie. He him requested, as he was a knight. To lend him day his better right to trie. Or stay till he his armes, which were thereby. Might lightly fetch. But he was fierce and

Ne time would give, nor any termes aby, But at him flew, and with his speare him smot; From which to thinke to saue himselfe, it booted not.

Meane while his Ladie, which this outrage saw. Whilest they together for the quarrey stroue, Into the couert did her selfe withdraw. And closely hid her selfe within the groue. My knight hers soone, as seemes, to daunger

And left sore wounded: but when her he mist. He woxe halfe mad, and in that rage gan roue And range through all the wood, where so he

She hidden was, and sought her so long, as him list.

But when as her he by no meanes could find, After long search and chauff, he turned backe Vnto the place, where me he left behind: There gan he me to curse and ban, for lacke Of that faire bootie, and with bitter wracke To wreake on me the guilt of his owne wrong. Of all which I yet glad to beare the packe, Stroue to appease him, and perswaded long: But still his passion grew more violent and strong.

Then as it were t'auenge his wrath on mee, When forward we should fare, he flat refused To take me vp (as this young man did see) Vpon his steed, for no just cause accused, But forst to trot on foot, and foule misused, Pounching me with the butt end of his speare, In vaine complayning, to be so abused. For he regarded neither playnt nor teare, But more enforst my paine, the more my plaints to heare.

So passed we, till this young man vs met, And being moou'd with pittie of my plight, Spake, as was meet, for ease of my regret: Whereof befell, what now is in your sight. Now sure (then said Sir Calidore) and right Me seemes, that him befell by his owne fault: Who euer thinkes through confidence of might, Or through support of count'nance proud and hault

Towrong the weaker, oftfalles in his owne assault.

24

Then turning backe vnto that gentle boy, Which had himselfe so stoutly well acquit: Seeing his face so louely sterne and coy, And hearing th'answeres of his pregnant wit. He prayed it much, and much admyred it; That sure he weend him borne of noble blood, With whom those graces did so goodly fit: And when he long had him beholding stood. He burst into these words, as to him seemed good.

Faire gentle swavne, and yet as stout as fayre, That in these woods amongst the Nymphs dost wonne.

Which daily may to thy sweete lookes repayre, As they are wont vnto Latonaes sonne, After his chace on woodie Cynthus donne: Well may I certes such an one thee read, As by thy worth thou worthily hast wonne, Or surely borne of some Heroicke sead, That in thy face appeares and gratious goodlyhead.

26

But should it not displease thee it to tell; (Vnlesse thou in these woods thy selfe conceale, For love amongst the woodie Gods to dwell;) I would thy selfe require thee to reueale, For deare affection and vnfayned zeale, Which to thy noble personage I beare, And wish thee grow in worship and great weale.

For since the day that armes I first did reare, I neuer saw in any greater hope appeare.

To whom then thus the noble youth; May be Sir knight, that by discouering my estate, Harme may arise vnweeting vnto me: Nathelesse, sith ye so courteous seemed late, To you I will not feare it to relate. Then wote ye that I am a Briton borne, Sonne of a King, how ever thorough fate Or fortune I my countrie haue forlorne, And lost the crowne, which should my head by right adorne.

And Tristram is my name, the onely heire Of good king Meliogras which did rayne In Cornewale, till that he through lives despeire

Vntimely dyde, before I did attaine Ripe yeares of reason, my right to maintaine. After whose death, his brother seeing mee An infant, weake a kingdome to sustaine, Vpon him tooke the rotall high degree. And sent me, where him list, instructed for to

bee.

The widow Queene my mother, which then hight Faire Emiline, conceiving then great feare Of my fraile safetie, resting in the might Of him, that did the kingly Scepter beare, Whose gealous dread induring not a peare, Is wont to cut off all, that doubt may breed, Thought best away me to remoue somewhere Into some forrein land, where as no need Of dreaded daunger might his doubtfull humor feed.

So taking counsell of a wise man red,
She was by him aduiz'd, to send me quight
Out of the countrie, wherein I was bred,
The which the fertile Lionesse is hight,
Into the land of Faerie, where no wight
Should weet of me, nor worke me any wrong.
To whose wise read she hearkning, sent me
streight

Into this land, where I have wond thus long, Since I was ten yeares old, now growen to stature strong.

stature strong.

All which my daies I haue not lewdly spent,
Nor spilt the blossome of my tender yeares
In ydlesse, but as was conuenient,
Haue trayned bene with many noble feres
In gentle thewes, and such like seemely leres.
Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies
been.

To hunt the saluage chace amongst my peres. Of all that raungeth in the forrest greene; Of which none is to me vnknowne, that eu'r was seene.

Neis there hauke, which mantlethher on pearch, Whether high towring, or accoasting low, But I the measure of her flight doe search, And all her pray, and all her diet know. Such beour ioyes, which in these forrests grow: Onely the vse of armes, which most I ioy, And fitteth most for noble swayne to know, I haue not tasted yet, yet past a boy, And being now high time these strong ioynts to imploy.

Therefore, good Sir, sith now occasion fit
Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome may,
Let me this craue, vnworthy though of it,
That ye will make me Squire without delay,
That from henceforth in batteilous array
I may beare armes, and learne to vse them
right;

The rather since that fortune hath this day Giuen to me the spoile of this dead knight, These goodly gilden armes, which I haue won in fight.

All which when well Sir Calidore had heard, Him much more now, then earst he gan admire, For the rare hope which in his yeares appear'd, And thus replide; Faire chyld, the high desire To loue of armes, which in you doth aspire, I may not certes without blame denie; But rather wish, that some more noble hire, (Though none more noble then is cheualrie.) I had, you to reward with greater dignitie.

There him he causd to kneele, and made to sweare
Faith to his knight, and truth to Ladies all,
And neuer to be recreant, for feare
Of perill, or of ought that might befall:
So he him dubbed, and his Squire did call.
Fullglad and ioyous then young Tristramgrew,
Like as a flowre, whose silken leaues small,
Long shut vp in the bud from heauens vew,
At length breakes forth, and brode displayes his
smyling hew.

Thus when they long had treated to and fro,
And Calidore betooke him to depart,
Chyld Tristram prayd, that he with him
might goe

On his aduenture, vowing not to start,
But wayt on him in euery place and part.
Whereat Sir Calidore did much delight,
And greatly ioy'd at his so noble hart,
In hope he sure would proue a doughtie
knight:

Yet for the time this answere he to him behight.

37
Glad would I surely be, thou courteous Squire
To haue thy presence in my present quest,
That mote thy kindled courage set on fire,
And flame forth honour in thy noble brest i
But I am bound by vow, which I profest
To my dread Soueraine, when I it assayd,
That in atchieuement of her high behest,
I should no creature ioyne vnto mine ayde,
For thy I may not graunt, that ye so greatly
prayde.

But since this Ladie is all desolate,
And needeth safegard now vpon her way,
Ye may doe well in this her needfull state
To succour her, from daunger of dismay;
That thankfull guerdon may to you repay.
The noble ympe of such new seruice fayne,
It gladly did accept, as he did say.
So taking courteous leaue, they parted twayne,
And Calidore forth passed to his former payne.

But Tristram then despoyling that dead knight Of all those goodly implements of prayse, Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire sight Of the bright mettall, shyning like Sunne rayes; Handling and turning them a thousand waves. And after having them vpon him dight, He tooke that Ladie, and her vp did rayse Vpon the steed of her owne late dead knight, So with her marched forth, as she did him behight.

There to their fortune leave we them awhile, And turne we backe to good Sir Calidore; Who ere he thence had traueild many a mile. Came to the place, whereas ye heard afore This knight, whom Tristram slew, had wounded sore

Another knight in his despiteous pryde; There he that knight found lying on the flore, With many wounds full perilous and wyde. That all his garments, and the grasse in vermeill dyde.

And there beside him sate vpon the ground His wofull Ladie, piteously complayning With loud laments that most valuckie stound, Andhersadselfe with carefull hand constrayning To wype his wounds, and ease their bitter payning

Which sorie sight when Calidore did vew Withheauiceyne, from teares vneathrefrayning, His mightie hart their mournefull case can rew, And for their better comfort to them nigher drew.

I'hen speaking to the Ladie, thus he sayd: Ye dolefull Dame, let not your griefe empeach To tell, what cruell hand hath thus arayd This knight vnarm'd, with so vnknightly breach Of armes, that if I yet him nigh may reach, I may auenge him of so foule despight. The Ladie hearing his so courteous speach, Gan reare her eyes as to the chearefull light, And from her sory hart few heavie words forth sight.

In which sheshew'd, how that discourteous knight (Whom Tristram slew) them in that shadow found. loying together in vnblam'd delight,

And him vnarm'd, as now he lay on ground, Charg'd with his speare and mortally did wound, Withouten cause, but onely her to reaue From him, to whom she was for euer bound Yet when she fled into that couert greaue, He her not finding, both them thus nigh dead did leaue.

When Calidore this rucfull storie had Well vnderstood, he gan of her demand, What manner wight he was, and how yelad, Which had this outrage wrought with wicked

She then, like as she best could vnderstand, Him thus describ'd, to be of stature large, Clad all in gilden armes, with azure band Quartred athwart, and bearing in his targe A Ladie on rough waues, row'd in a sommer barge.

Then gan Sir Calidore to ghesse streight way By many signes, which she described had, That this was he, whom Tristram earst did slay, And to her said: Dame be no longer sad: For he, that hath your Knight so ill bestad, Is now him selfe in much more wretched plight; These eyes him saw vpon the cold earth sprad, The meede of his desert for that despight. Which to your selfe he wrought, and to your loued knight.

Therefore faire Lady lay aside this griefe, Which we have gathered to your gentle hart, For that displeasure; and thinke what reliefe Were best deuise for this your louers smart, And how ye may him hence, and to what part Conuay to be recur'd. She thankt him deare, Both for that newes he did to her impart. And for the courteous care, which he did beare Both to her love, and to her selfe in that sad dreare.

Yet could she not deuise by any wit, How then ceshe might conuay him to some place. For him to trouble she it thought vnfit, That was a straunger to her wretched case; And him to beare, she thought it thing too base. Which when as he perceiu'd, he thus bespake; Faire Lady let it not you seeme disgrace, To beare this burden on your dainty backe: My selfe will beare a part, coportion of your packe.

So off he did his shield, and downeward layd Vpon the ground, like to an hollow beare; And powring balme, which he had long puruayd, Into his wounds, him vp thereon did reare, And twixt them both with parted paines did

Twixt life and death, not knowing what was donne.

Thence they him carried to a Castle neare, In which a worthy auncient Knight did wonne Where what ensu'd, shall in next Canto be begonne.

### Cant. 111.

#### 

Calidore brings Priscilla home, Pursues the Blatant Beast: Saves Serena whilest Calepine By Turpine is opprest.

#### 

True is, that whilome that good Poet sayd,
The gentle minde by gentle deeds is knowne.
For a man by nothing is so well bewrayd,
As by his manners, in which plaine is showne
Of what degree and what race he is growne.
For seldome seene, a trotting Stalion get
An ambling Colt, that is his proper owne:
So seldome seene, that one in basenesse set
Doth noble courage shew, with curteous manners met.

But euermore contrary hath bene tryde,
That gentle bloud will gentle manners breed;
As well may be in Calidore descryde,
By late ensample of that courteous deed,
Done to that wounded Knight in his great need,
Whom on his backe he bore, till he him brought
Vnto the Castle where they had decreed.
There of the Knight, the which that Castle
ought,

To make abode that night he greatly was besought.

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares, That in his youth had beene of mickle might, And borne great sway in arms amongst his peares:

But now weake age had dimd his candle light. Yet was he courteous still to euery wight, And loued all that did to armes incline, And was the father of that wounded Knight, Whom Calidore thus carried on his chine, And Aldus washis name, and hissonnes Aladine.

Who when he saw his sonne so ill bedight,
With bleeding wounds, brought home vpon
a Beare,
By a faire Lady, and a straunger Knight,
Was inly touched with compassion deare,
And deare affection of so dolefull dreare,
That he these words burst forth; Ah sory boy,
Is this the hope that to my hoary heare
Thou brings? aie me, is this the timely ioy,
Which I expected long, now turnd to sad annoy?

Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope; So tickle is the state of earthly things, That ere they come vnto their aymed scope, They fall too short of our fraile reckonings, And bring vs bale and bitter sorrowings, In stead of comfort, which we should embrace: This is the state of Keasars and of Kings. Let none therefore, that is in meaner place, Too greatly grieve at any his vnlucky case.

So well and wisely did that good old Knight Temper his griefe, and turned it to cheare, To cheare his guests, whom he had stayd that night.

And make their welcome to them well appeare:
That to Sir Calidore was easie geare;
But that faire Lady would be cheard for nought.
But sigh'd and sorrow'd for her louer deare,
And inly did afflict her pensiue thought,
With thinking to what case her name should now
be brought.

For she was daughter to a noble Lord,
Which dwelt thereby, who sought her to affy
To a great pere; but she did disaccord,
Ne could her liking to his loue apply,
But lou'd this fresh young Knight, who dwelt
her ny,

The lusty Aladine, though meaner borne, And of lesse liuelood and hability, Yet full of valour, the which did adorne His meanesse much, and make her th'others riches scorne.

So having both found fit occasion.

They met together in that luckelesse glade; Where that proud Knight in his presumption The gentle Aladine did earst inuade, Being vnarm'd, and set in secret shade. Whereof she now bethinking, gan t'aduize, How great a hazard she at earst had made Of her good fame, and further gan deuize, Ilow she the blame might salue with coloured disguize.

But Calidore with all good courtesie
Fain'd her to frolicke, and to put away
The pensiue fit of her melancholie;
And that old Knight by all meanes did assay,
To make them both as merry as he may.
So they the euening past, till time of rest,
When Calidore in seemly good array
Vntohis bowre was brought, and there vndrest,
Didsleepe all night through weary trauell of his
quest.

But faire Priscilla (so that Lady hight) Would to no bed, nor take no kindely sleepe, But by her wounded loue did watch all night, And all the night for bitter anguish weepe, And with her teares his wounds did wash and steepe.

So wellshe washt them, and so wellshe wacht him. That of the deadly swound, in which full deepe Hedrenched was she at the length dispacht him. And droue away the stound, which mortally attacht him.

The morrow next, when day gan to vplooke, He also gan vplooke with drery eye.

Like one that out of deadly dreame awooke: Where when he saw his faire Priscilla by, He deepely sigh'd, and groaned inwardly, To thinke of this ill state, in which she stood, To which she for his sake had weetingly Now brought her selfe, and blam'd her noble blood:

For first, next after life, he tendered her good.

Which she perceining, did with plenteous teares His care more then her owne compassionate, Forgetfull of her owne, to minde his feares: So both conspiring, gan to intimate Each others griefe with zeale affectionate, And twixt them twaine with equal care to cast, How to saue whole her hazarded estate; For which the onely helpe now left them last Seem'd to be Calidore: all other helpes were past

Him they did deeme, as sure to them he seemed, A courteous Knight, and full of faithfull trust: Therefore to him their cause they best esteemed Whole to commit, and to his dealing just. Earely, so soone as Titans beames forth brust Through the thicke clouds, in which they steeped lay

All night in darkenesse, duld with yron rust, Calidore rising vp as fresh as day,

Gan freshly him addresse vnto his former way.

But first him seemed fit, that wounded Knight To visite, after this nights perillous passe, And to salute him, if he were in plight, And eke that Lady his faire louely lasse. There he him found much better then he was, And moued speach to him of things of course, The anguish of his paine to ouerpasse:

Mongst which he namely did to him discourse, Of former daies mishap, his sorrowes wicked

sourse.

Of which occasion Aldine taking hold. Gan breake to him the fortunes of his love. And all his disaduentures to vnfold; That Calidore it dearly deepe did moue. In th'end his kyndly courtesie to proue, He him by all the bands of loue besought. And as it mote a faithfull friend behoue. To safeconduct his loue, and not for ought To leave, till to her fathers house he had her brought.

Sir Calidore his faith thereto did plight. It to performe: so after little stay, That she her selfe had to the journey dight. He passed forth with her in faire array, Fearelesse, who ought did thinke, or ought did

Sith his own thought he knew most cleare from wite.

So as they past together on their way, He can deuize this counter-cast of slight, To give faire colour to that Ladies cause in sight.

Streight to the carkasse of that Knight he went, The cause of all this euill, who was slaine The day before by just auengement Of noble Tristram, where it did remaine: There he the necke thereof did cut in twaine, And tooke with him the head, the signe of shame.

So forth he passed thorough that daies paine, Till to that Ladies fathers house he came, Most pensiue man, through feare, what of his childe became.

There he arriving boldly, did present The fearefull Lady to her father deare, Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent Of blame, as he did on his Knighthood sweare, Since first he saw her, and did free from feare Of a discourteous Knight, who her had reft, And by outragious force away did beare: Witnesse thereof he shew'd his head there left, And wretched life forlorne for vengement of his theft.

19 Most joyfull man her sire was her to see. And heare th'aduenture of her late mischaunce; And thousand thankes to Calidore for fee Of his large paines in her deliueraunce Did yeeld; Ne lesse the Lady did aduaunce. Thus having her restored trustily, As he had vow'd, some small continuaunce He there did make, and then most carefully Vnto his first exploite he did him selfe apply.

30 as he was pursuing of his quest He chaunst to come whereas a iolly Knight, In couert shade him selfe did safely rest, To solace with his Lady in delight:

His warlike armes he had from him vndight: For that him selfe he thought from daunger free,

And far from enuious eyes that motehims pight. And eke the Lady was full faire to see, And courteous withall, becomming her degree.

21

To whom Sir Calidore approaching nye, Ere they were well aware of liuing wight Them much abasht, but more him selfe thereby,

That he so rudely did vppon them light, And troubled had their quiet loues delight. Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault, Him selfe thereof he labour'd to acquite, And pardon crau'd for his so rash default, That he gainst courtesie so fowly did default.

22

With which his gentle words and goodly wit He soone allayd that Knights conceiu'd displeasure,

That he besought him downe by him to sit, That they mote treat of things abrode at leasure:

And of aduentures, which had in his measure Of so long waies to him befallen late. So downe he sate, and with delightfull pleasure His long aduentures gan to him relate, Which he endured had through daungerous debate.

Of which whilest they discoursed both together, The faire Serena (so his Lady hight) Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether, Andpleasaunce of theplace, the which was dight With diuers flowres distinct with rare delight, Wandred about the fields, as liking led Her wauering lust after her wandring sight, To make a garland to adorne her hed, Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden dred.

All sodainely out of the forrest nere
The Blatant Beast forth rushing vnaware,
Caughtherthusloosely wandringhereandthere,
And in his wide great mouth away her bare,
Crying aloud in vaine, to shew her sad misfare
Vnto the Knights, and calling oft for ayde,
Who with the horrour of her haplesse care
Hastily starting vp, like men dismayde,
Ran after fast to reskue the distressed mayde.

25 Dursi

The Beast with their pursuit incited more, into the wood was bearing her apace For to haue spoyled her, when Calidore Who was more light of foote and swift in chace, Him ouertooke in middest of his race: And fiercely charging him with all his might, Forst to forgoe his pray there in the place, And to betake him selle to fearefull flight; For he durst not abide with Calidore to fight.

20

Who nathelesse, when he the Lady saw
There left on ground, though in full euill plight,
Yet knowing that her Knight now neare did
draw.

Staide not to succour her in that affright, But follow'd fast the Monster in his flight: Through woods and hils he follow'd him sofast, That he nould let him breath norgather spright, But forst him gape and gaspe, with dread aghast,

As if his lungs and lites were nigh a sunder brast.

And now by this Sir *Calepine*, so hight,
Came to the place, where he his Lady found
In dolorous dismay and deadly plight,
All in gore bloud there tumbled on the ground,
Hauing both sides through grypt with griesly
wound.

His weapons soone from him he threw away, And stouping downe to her in drery swound, Vprear'd her from the ground whereon she lay, And in his tender armes her forced vp to stay.

28

So well he did his busie paines apply,
That the faint sprite he did reuoke againe,
To her fraile mansion of mortality.
Then vp he tooke her twixt his armes twaine,
And setting on his steede, her did sustaine
With carefull hands soft footing her beside,
Till to some place of rest they mote attaine,
Where she in safe assuraunce mote abide,
Tillshe recured were of those her woundes wide.

29

Now when as *Phabus* with his fiery waine Vnto his Inne began to draw apace; Tho wexing weary of that toylesome paine, In trauelling on foote so long a space, Not wont on foote with heauy armes to trace, Downe in a dale forby a riuers syde, He chaunst to spie a faire and stately place, To which he meant his weary steps to guyde, In hope there for his loue some succour to prouvde.

But comming to the rivers side, he found That hardly passable on foote it was: Therefore there still he stood as in a stound, Newistwhichwayhethroughthefoordmotepas. Thus whilest he was in this distressed case, Deuising what to doe, he nigh espyde An armed Knight approaching to the place, With a faire Lady lincked by his syde, The which themselues prepard thorough the foord to ride.

Whom Calepine saluting (as became)
Besought of courtesie in that his neede,
For safe conducting of his sickely Dame,
Through that same perillous foord with better
heede.

To take him vp behinde vpon his steed.
To whom that other did this taunt returne.
Perdythoupeasant Knight, mightstrightly reed
Me then to be full base and euill borne,
If I would beare behinde a burden of such
scorne.

.33

But as thou hast thy steed forlorne with shame, So fare on foote till thou another gayne, And let thy Lady likewise doe the same. Or beare her on thy backe with pleasing payne, And proue thy manhood on the billowes vayne. With which rude speach his Lady much displeased,

Did him reproue, yet could him not restrayne, And would on her owne Palfrey him haue eased, For pitty of his Dame, whom she saw so diseased.

Sir Calepine her thanckt, yet inly wroth
Against her Knight, her gentlenesse refused,
And carelesly into the river goth,
As in despight to be so fowle abused
Of a rude churle, whom often he accused
Of fowle discourtesie, vnfit for Knight;
Andstrongly wading through the waves vnused,
With speare in th'one hand, stayd him selfe
vpright,

With th'other staide his Lady vp with steddy might.

And allthe while, that same discourteous Knight, Stood on the further bancke beholding him, At whose calamity, for more despight He laught, and mockt to see him like to swim. But when as Calepine came to the brim, Andsawhis carriage past that perillwell, [grim, Looking at that same Carle with count nance His heart with vengeaunce inwardly did swell, And forth at last did breake in speaches sharpe and fell.

Vnknightly Knight, the blemish of that name, And blot of all that armes vppon them take, Which is the badge of honour and of fame, Loe I defie thee, and here challenge make, That thou for euer doe those armes forsake, And be for euer held a recreant Knight, Vnlesse thou dare for thy deare Ladies sake, And for thine owne defence on foote alight, To justifie thy fault gainst me in equall fight.

The dastard, that did heare him selfe defyde, Seem'd not to weigh his threatfull words at all, But laught them out, as if his greater pryde Did scorne the challenge of so base a thrall: Or had no courage, or else had no gall. So much the more was Calepine offended, That him to no reuenge he forth could call, But both his challenge and him selfe contemped.

Ne cared as a coward so to be condemned.

37

But he nought weighing what he sayd or did,
Turned his steede about another way,
And with his Lady to the Castle rid,
Where was his won; ne did the other stay,
But after went directly as he may,
For his sicke charge some harbour there to
seeke.

Where he arriving with the fall of day, Drew to the gate, and there with prayers mecke,

And myld entreaty lodging did for her beseeke.

25

But the rude Porter that no manners had, Did shut the gate against him in his face, And entraunce boldly vnto him forbad. Nathelesse the Knight now in so needy case, Gan him entreat euen with submission base, And humbly praid to let them in that night: Who to him aunswer'd, that there was no place Of lodging fit for any errant Knight, Vnlesse that with his Lordhe formerly did fight.

Full loth am I (quoth he) as now at earst,
When day is spent, and rest vs needeth most,
And that this Lady, both whose sides are pearst
With wounds, is ready to forgo the ghost:
Ne would I gladly combate with mine host,
That should to me such curtesie afford,
Vnlesse that I were thereunto enforst.
But yet aread to me, how hight thy Lord,
That doth thus strongly ward the Castle of
the ford.

His name quoth ne) if that thou list to learne, Is hight Sir Turpine, one of mickle might, And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne In all assaies to euery errant Knight. Because of one, that wrought him fowledes pight. Ill seemes (sayd he) if he so valiaunt be. That he should be so sterne to stranger wight: For seldome vet did living creature see. That curtesie and manhood euer disagree.

But go thy waies to him, and fro me say, That here is at his gate an errant Knight. That house-rome craues, yet would be loth

The proofe of battell, now in doubtfull night. Or curtesie with rudenesse to requite: Yetifhe needes willfight, craue leaue tillmorne. And tell withall, the lamentable plight, In which this Lady languisheth forlorne, That pitty craues, as he of woman was yborne.

The groome went streight way in, and to his Lord Declar'd the message, which that Knight did

Who sitting with his Lady then at bord. Not onely did not his demaund approue. But both himselfe reuil'd, and eke his loue; Albe his Lady, that Blanding hight, Him of vngentle vsage did reproue And earnestly entreated that they might Finde fauour to be lodged there for that same night.

Yet would he not perswaded be for ought, Ne from his currish will awhit reclame. Which answer when the groome returning, To Calepine, his heart did inly flame [brought With wrathfull fury for so foule a shame, That he could not thereof auenged bee: But most for pitty of his dearest Dame. Whom now in deadly daunger he did see; Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure her glee.

But all in vaine; for why, no remedy He saw, the present mischiefe to redresse, But th'vtmost end perforce for to aby, Which that nights fortune would for him addresse.

So downe he tooke his Lady in distresse, And layd her vnderneath a bush to sleepe, Couer'd with cold, and wrapt in wretchednesse, Whiles he him selfe all night did nought but weepe.

45

The morrow next, so soone as ioyous day Did shew it selfe in sunny beames bedight, Screna full of dolorous dismay, Twixt darkenesse dread, and hope of liuing

Vorear'd her head to see that chearefull sight. Then Calepine, how ever inly wroth, And greedy to avenge that vile despight, Yet for the feeble Ladies sake, full loth To make there lenger stay, forth on his journey goth.

He goth on foote all armed by her side, Vistaying still her selfe vppon her steede, Being vnhable else alone to ride; Sosorehersides, somuch herwounds didbleede: Till that at length, in his extreamest neede, He chaunst far off an armed Knight to spy, Pursuing him apace with greedy speede, Whom well he wist to be some enemy. That meant to make advantage of his misery.

Wherefore he stayd, till that he nearer drew To weet what issue would thereof betyde, Tho whenas he approched nigh in vew, By certaine signes he plainely him descryde, To be the man, that with such scornefull pryde Had him abusde, and shamed yesterday; Therefore misdoubting, least he should misguyde

His former malice to some new assay, He cast to keepe him selfe so safely as he may.

By this the other came in place likewise, And couching close his speare and all his powre, As bent to some malicious enterprise, He bad him stand, t'abide the bitter stoure Of his sore vengeaunce, or to make auoure Of the lewd words and deedes, which he had

With that ran at him, as he would deuoure His life attonce; who nought could do, but shun The perill of his pride, or else be ouerrun.

Yet he him still pursew'd from place to place. With full intent him cruelly to kill, And like a wilde goate round about did chace, Flying the fury of his bloudy will. But his best succour and refuge was still Behinde his Ladies backe, who to him cryde, And called oft with prayers loud and shrill, [fyde. As euer he to Lady was affyde, And wary watch about her for her safegard keepe. To spare her Knight, and rest with reason paciBut he the more thereby enraged was,
And with more eager felnesse him pursew'd,
So that at length, after long weary chace,
Hauing by chaunce a close aduantage vew'd,
He ouer raught him, hauing long eschew'd
His violence in vaine, and with his spere
Strooke through his shoulder, that the blood
ensew'd

In great aboundance, as a well it were,
That forth out of an hill fresh gushing did
appere.

Yet ceast he not for all that cruell wound,
But chaste him still, for all his Ladies cry,
Not satisfyde till on the fatall ground
He saw his life powrd forth dispiteously:
The which was certes in great ieopardy,
Hadnotawondrouschauncehisreskuewrought,
And saued from his cruell villany.
Such chaunces oft exceed all humaine thought:

#### Cant. IIII.

That in another Canto shall to end be brought.

#### 

Calepine by a saluage man from Turpine reskewed is, And whylest an Infant from a Beare he saues, his loue doth misse.

# 

Like as a ship with dreadfull storme long tost, Hauing spent all her mastes and her groundhold.

Now farre from harbour likely to be lost, At last some fisher barke doth neare behold, That giueth comfort to her courage cold. Such was the state of this most courteous knight Being oppressed by that faytour bold, That he remayned in most perilous plight, And his sad Ladie left in pitifull affright.

Till that by fortune, passing all foresight,
Asaluageman, whichin those woods did wonne,
Drawne with that Ladies loud and piteous
shright,

Toward the same incessantly did ronne, To vnderstand what there was to be donne. There he this most discourteous crauen found, As fiercely yet, as when he first begonne, Chasing the gentle Calepine around, [wound. Ne sparing him the more for all his grieuous]

The saluage man, that neuer till this houre Did taste of pittie, neither gentlesse knew, Seeing his sharpe assault and cruell stoure Was much emmoued at his perils vew, That euen his ruder hart began to rew, And feele compassion of his euill plight, Against his foe that did him so pursew: From whom he meant to free him, if he might. And him auenge of that so villenous despught

Yet armes or weapon had he none to fight,
Ne knew the vse of warlike instruments,
Saue such as sudden rage him lent to smite,
But naked without needfull vestiments,
To clad his corpse with meete habiliments,
He cared not for dint of sword nor speere,
No more then for the stroke of strawes or bents:
For from his mothers wombe, which him del
beare.

He was invulnerable made by Magicke leare.

He stayed not t'aduize, which way were best His foe t'assayle, or how himselfe to gard, But with fierce fury and with force infest Vpon him ran; who being well prepard, His first assault full warily did ward, And with the push of his sharp-pointed speare Full on the breast him strooke, so strong and hard.

That forst him backe recoyle, and reele areare; Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud appeare.

With that the wyld man more enraged grew, Like to a Tygre that hath mist his pray, And with mad mood againe vpon him flew, Regarding neither speare, that mote him slay, Norhis fiercesteed, that mote him much dismay. The saluage nation doth all dread despize: Tho on his shield he griple hold did lay, And held the same so hard, that by no wize He could him force to loose, or leaue his enterprize.

Long did he wrest and wring it to and fro,
And euery way did try, but all in vaine:
For he would not his greedie grype forgoe,
But hayld and puld with all his might and maine,
That from his steed him nigh he drew againe.
Who hauing now no vse of his long speare,
So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to straine,
Both speare and shield, as things that needlesse were,

He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away for feare.

But after him the wyld man ran apace,
And him pursewed with importune speed
(For he was swift as any Bucke in chace)
And had he not in his extreamest need,
Benehelped through the swiftnesse of his steed,
He had him ouertaken in his flight.
Who euer, as he saw him nigh succeed,
Gan cry aloud with horrible affright,
And shriekedout, a thing vncomely for a knight.

But when the Saluage saw his labour vaine, In following of him, that fled so fast, He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe With speede vnto the place, whereas he last Had left that couple, nere their vtmost cast. There he that knight full sorely bleeding found, And eke the Ladie fearefully aghast, Both for the perill of the present stound, And also for the sharpnesse of her rankling wound.

For though she were right glad, so rid to bee From that vile lozell, which her late offended, Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see, And perill by this saluage man pretended; Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be defended,

By reason that her knight was wounded sore. Therefore her selfe she wholy recommended To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft implore, To send her succour, being of all hope forlore.

1

But the wyld man, contrarie to her feare, Came to her creeping like a fawning hound, And by rude tokens made to her appeare His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound, Kissing his hands, and crouching to the ground; For other language had he none nor speach, But a soft murmure, and confused sound Of senselesse words, which nature did him teach,

T'expresse his passions, which his reason did empeach.

And comming likewise to the wounded knight, When he beheld the streames of purple blood Yet flowing fresh, as moued with the sight, He made great mone after his saluage mood, And running streight into the thickest wood, Acertaineherbefromthence vnto himbrought, Whose vertue he by vse well vnderstood: The iuyce whereof into his wound he wrought, And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it staunched thought.

13

Then taking up that Recreants shield and speare, Which earst he left, he signes unto them made, With him to wend vnto his wonning neare: To which he easily did them perswade. Farre in the forrest by a hollow glade, [brode Couered with mossie shrubs, which spredding Did underneath them make a gloomy shade; Where foot of liuing creature neuer trode, Nescarse wyld beasts durst come, there was this wights abode.

1.4

Thether he brought these vnacquainted guests; To whomfairesemblance, as hecould, he shewed By signes, by lookes, and all his other gests. But the bare ground, with hoarie mosse bestrowed,

Must be their bed, their pillow was vinowed, And the frutes of the forrest was their feast: FortheirbadStuardneitherplough'dnorsowed, Ne fed on flesh, ne euer of wyld beast Did taste the bloud, obaying natures first belieset.

7 (

Yet howsoeuer base and meane it were,
They tooke it well, and thanked God for all,
Which had them freed from that deadly feare,
And sau'd from being to that caytiue thrall.
Here they of force (as fortune now did fall)
Compelled were themselues a while to rest,
Glad of that easement, though it were but small;
That hauing there their wounds awhile redrest,
They mote the abler be to passe vnto the rest.

16

During which time, that wyld man did apply His best endeuour, and his daily paine, In seeking all the woods both farre and nyc For herbes to dresse their wounds; still seeming faine,

When ought he did, that did their lyking gaine. So as ere long he had that knightes wound Recured well, and made him whole againe: But that same Ladies hurts no herbe he found, Which could redresse, for it was inwardly ynsound.

Now when as Calepine was woxen strong,
Vpon a day he cast abrode to wend,
To take the ayre, and heare the thrushes song,
Vnarm'd, as fearing neither foe nor frend,
And without sword his person to defend.
There him befell, vnlooked for before,
An hard aduenture with vnhappie end,
A cruell Beare, the which an intant bore
Betwixt his bloodie iawes, besprinckled all with
gore.

The litle babe did loudly scrike and squall, And all the woods with piteous plaints did fill, As if his cry did meane for helpe to call To Calepine, whose eares those shricches shrill Percing his hart with pities point did thrill; That after him he ran with zealous haste, To rescue th'infant, ere he did him kill: Whom though he saw now somewhat ouerpast, Yet by the cry he follow'd, and pursewed fast.

10

Well then him chaunst his heavy armes to want, Whose burden mote empeach his needfullspeed, And hinder him from libertie to pant:
For having long time, as his daily weed, Them wont to weare, and wend on foot for need, Now wanting them he felt himselfe so light, That like an Hauke, which feeling her selfe freed From bels and iesses, which did let her flight, Him seem'd his feet did fly, and in their speed delight.

20

So well he sped him, that the wearie Beare Ere long he ouertooke, and forst to stay, And without weapon him assayling neare, Compeld him soone the spoyle adowne to lay. Wherewith the beast enrag'd to loosehis pray, Vpon him turned, and with greedie force And furie, to be crossed in his way, Gaping full wyde, did thinke without remorse To be aueng'd on him, and to deuoure his corse.

21

But the bold knight no whit thereat dismayd, But catching vp in hand a ragged stone, Which lay thereby (so fortune him did ayde) Vpon him ran, and thrust it all attone Into his gaping throte, that made him grone And gaspe for breath, that he nigh choked was. Being vnable to digest that bone; Ne could it vpward come, nor downward passe, Ne could he brooke the coldnesse of the stony

masse.

2.

Whom when as he thus combred did behold, Stryuing in vaine that nigh his bowels brast, He with him closd, and laying mightie hold Vpon his throte, did gripe his gorge so fast, That wanting breath, him downe to ground he cast:

And then oppressing him with vrgent paine, Ere long enforst to breath his vtmost blast, Gnashing his cruell teeth at him in vaine, And threatning his sharpe clawes, now wanting powre to straine. 23

Then tooke he vp betwixt his armes twaine
The litle babe, sweet relickes of his pray;
Whom pitying to heare so sore complaine,
From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away.
And from his face the filth that did it ray,
And euery litle limbe he searcht around,
And euery part, that vnder sweathbands lay,
Least that the beasts sharpe teeth had any
wound

Made in his tender flesh, but whole them all he found.

2/

So hauing all his bands againe vptyde,
He with him thought backe to returne againe:
But when he lookt about on euery syde,
To weet which way were best to entertaine,
To bring him to the place, where he would faine,
He could no path nor tract of foot descry,
Ne by inquirie learne, nor ghesse by ayme.
For nought but woods and forrests farre and
nye,

That all about did close the compasse of his eye.

25

Much was he then encombred, ne could tell Which way to take: now West he went a while, Then North; then neither, but as fortune fell. So vp and downe he wandred many a mile, With wearie trauell and vncertaine toile, Yet nought the nearer to his iourneys end; And euermore his louely litle spoile Crying for food, did greatly him offend. So all that day in wandring vainely hedid spend.

26

At last about the setting of the Sunne, Him selfe out of the forest he did wynd, And by good fortune the plaine champion wonne:

Where looking all about, where he mote fynd Some place of succour to content his mynd, At length he heard vnder the forrests syde A voice, that seemed of some woman kynd, Which to her selfe lamenting loudly cryde, And oft complayn'd of fate, and fortune oft defyde.

To whom approching, when as she perceiued A stranger wight in place, her plaint she stayd, As if she doubted to haue bene deceiued, Or loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd. Whom when as Calepine saw so dismayd, He to her drew, and with faire blandishment Her chearing vp, thus gently to her sayd; What be you wofull Dame, which thus lament, And for what cause declare, so mote ye not repent.

To whom she thus, What need me Sir to tell, That which your selfe haue earst ared so right? A wofull dame ye haue me termed well; So much more wofull, as my wofull plight Cannot redressed be by liuing wight. Nathlesse (quoth he) if need doe not you bynd, Doe it disclose, to ease your grieued spright: Oftunes it haps, that sorrowes of the mynd Find remedie vnsought, which seeking cannot fynd

Then thus began the lamentable Dame; Sith then ye needs will know the griefe 1 hoord.

I am th'vnfortunate Matilde by name, The wife of bold Sir Bruin, who is Lord Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword From a great Gyant, called Cormoraunt; Whom he did ouerthrow by yonder foord, And in three battailes did so deadly daunt. That he dare not returnefor all his daily vaunt.

So is my Lord now seiz'd of all the land,
As in his fee, with peaceable estate,
And quietly doth hold it in his hand,
Ne any dares with him for it debate.
But to these happic fortunes, cruell fate
Hath ioyn'd one euill, which doth ouerthrow
All these our ioyes, and all our blisse abate;
And like in time to further ill to grow,
And all this land with endlesse losse to ouerflow.

For th'heauens enuying our prosperitie,
Haue not vouchsaft to graunt vnto vs twaine
The gladfull blessing of posteritie,
Which we might see after our selues remaine
In th'heritage of our vnhappie paine:
So that for want of heires it to defend,
All is in time like to returne againe
To that foule feend, who dayly doth attend
To leape into the same after our liues end.

But most my Lord is grieued herewithall,
And makes exceeding mone, when he does
thinke

That all this land vnto his foe shall fall, For which he long in vaine did sweat and

That now the same he greatly doth forthinke. Yet was it sayd, there should to him a sonne Be gotten, not begotten, which should drinke And dry vp all the water, which doth ronne In the next brooke, by whom that feend shold be fordonne

Well hop't he then, when this was propheside, Thatfromhissides some noble chyld should rize, The which through fame should farre be magnifide.

And this proudgy ant should with braue emprize Quite ouer throw, who now ginnes to despize The good Sir Bruin, growing farre in yeares; Who thinkes from me his sorrow all doth rize. Lo this my cause of griefe to you appeares; For which I thus doe mourne, and poure forth ceaselesse teares.

Which when he heard, he inly touched was
With tender ruth for her vnworthy griefe,
And when he had deuized of her case,
He gan in mind conceiue a fit reliefe
For all her paine, if please her make the priefe.
And hauing chearedher, thus said; Faire Dame,
In euils counsell is the comfort chiefe,
Which though I be not wise enough to frame,
Yet as I well it meane, vouchsafe it without
blame.

If that the cause of this your languishment Be lacke of children, to supply your place, Lo how good fortune doth to you present This litle babe, of sweete and louely face, And spotlesse spirit, in which ye may enchace What euer formes ye list thereto apply, Being now soft and fit them to embrace: Whether ye list him traine in cheualry, Or noursle vp in lore of learn'd Philosophy.

26

And certes it hath oftentimes bene seene, That of the like, whose linage was vnknowne, More braue and noble knights haue raysed beene.

As their victorious deedes haue often showen, Being with fame through many Nations blowen, Then those, which haue bene dandled in the lap. Therefore some thought, that those braue imps were sowen

Here by the Gods, and fed with heauenly sap, That made them grow so high t'all honorable hap.

The Ladie hearkning to his sensefull speach, Found nothing that he said, vnmeet norgeason, Hauing oft seene it tryde, as he did teach. Therefore inclyning to his goodly reason, Agreeing well both with the place and season, She gladly did of that same babe accept, As of her owne by liuerey and seisin, And hauing ouer it a litle wept, She bore it thence, and euer as her owne it kept.

Right glad was Calepine to be so rid
Of his young charge, whereof he skilled nought:
Ne she lesse glad; for she so wisely did,
And with her husband vnder hand so wrought,
That when that infant vnto him she brought,
She made him thinke it surely was his owne,
And it in goodly thewes so well vpbrought,
That it became a famous knight well knowne
And did right noble deedes, the which elswhere
are showne.

But Calepine, now being left alone
Vnder the greenewoods side in sorie plight,
Withouten armes or steede to ride vpon,
Or house to hide his head from heauens spight,
Albe that Dame by all the meanes she might,
Him oft desired home with her to wend,
And offred him, his courtesie to requite,
Both horse and armes, and what so else to
lend,

Yet he them all refusd, though thankt her as a frend.

And for exceeding griefe which inly grew,
That he his loue so lucklesse now had lost,
On the cold ground, maugre himselfe he threw,
For fell despight, to be so sorely crost;
And there all night himselfe in anguish tost,
Vowing, that neuer he in bed againe
His limbes would rest, ne lig in ease embost,
Till that his Ladies sight he mote attaine,
Or vnderstand, that she in satette did remaine.

# Cant. V.

### 

The saluage serues Matilda well till she Prince Arthure fynd, Who her together with his Squyre with th'Hermit leaucs behynd.

### 

O what an easie thing is to descry
The gentle bloud, how euer it be wrapt
In sad misfortunes foule deformity,
And wretchedsorrowes, which haue often hapt?
For howsoeuer it may grow mis-shapt,
Like this wyld man, being vndisciplynd,
That to all vertue it may seeme vnapt,
Yet will it shew some sparkes of gentle mynd,
And at the last breake forth in his owne proper
kynd.

That plainely may in this wyld man be red, Who though he were still in this desert wood, Mongst saluage beasts, both rudely borne and bred,

Ne euer saw faire guize, ne learned good, Yet shewd some token of his gentle blood, By gentle vsage of that wretched Dame. For certes he was borne of noble blood, How euer by hard hap he hether came; As ye may know, when time shall be to tell the same

Who when as now long time he lacked had
The good Sir Calepine, that farre was strayd,
Did wexe exceeding sorrowfull and sad,
As he of some misfortune were afrayd:
And leauing there this Ladie all dismayd,
Went forth streightway into the forrest wyde,
To seeke, if he perchance a sleepe were layd,
Or what so else were vnto him betyde:
Hesought himfarre and neare, yet him no where
he spyde.

Tho backe returning to that sorie Dame, He shewed semblant of exceeding mone, By speaking signes, as he them best could frame; Now wringing both his wretched hands in one, Now beating his hard head vpon a stone, That ruth it was to see him so lament. By which she well perceiuing, what was done, Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments rent, And beat her breast, and piteously her selfe torment.

Vpon the ground her selfe she fiercely threw, Regardlesse of her wounds, yet bleeding rife, That with their bloud did all the flore imbrew, As if her breast new launcht with murdrous knife,

Would streight dislodge the wretched wearic life.

There she long groueling, and deepe groning As if her vitall powers were at strife [lay, With stronger death, and feared their decay, Such were this Ladies pangs and dolorous assay.

6

Whom when the Saluage saw so sore distrest,
He reared her vp from the bloudie ground,
Andsought by all the meanes, that he could best
Her to recure out of that stony swound,
And staunch the bleeding of her dreary wound.
Yet nould she be recomforted for nought,
Ne cease her sorrow and impatient stound,
But day and night did vexe her carefull thought,
And euer more and more her owne affliction
wrought.

At length, when as no hope of his retourne She saw now left, she cast to leaue the place, And wend abrode, though feeble and forlorne, To seeke some comfort in that sorie case. His steede now strong through rest so long a space,

Well as she could, she got, and did bedight, And being thereon mounted, forth did pace, Withouten guide, her to conduct aright, Or gard her to defend from bold oppressors

might.

8

Whom when her Host saw readie to depart, He would not suffer her alone to fare, But gan himselfe addresse to take her part. Those warlike armes, which Calepine whyleare Had left behind, he gan eftsoones prepare, And put them all about himselfe vnfit, His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare. But without sword vpon his thigh to sit: Sir Calepine himselfe away had hidden it.

9

So forth they traueld an vneuen payre,
That mote to all men seeme an vneouth sight;
A saluage man matcht with a Ladie fayre,
That rather seem'd the conquest of his might.
Gotten by spoyle, then purchaced aright.
But he did her attend most carefully,
And faithfully did serue both day and night.
Withouten thought of shame or villeny,
Ne euer shewed signe of foule disloyalty.

TO

Vpon a day as on their way they went, it chaunst some furniture about her steed To be disordred by some accident: Which to redresse, she did th'assistance need Of this her groome, which he by signes did reede,

And streight his combrous armes aside did lay Vpon the ground, withouten doubt or dreed, And in his homely wize began to assay T'amend what was amisse, and put in right aray.

11

Bout which whilest he was busied thus hard, Lo where a knight together with his squire, All arm'd to point came ryding thetherward, Which seemed by their portance and attire, To be two errant knights, that did inquire After aduentures, where they mote them get. Those were to weet (if that ye it require) Prince Arthur and young Timias, which met By straunge occasion, that here needs forth be set.

After that Timias had againe recured
The fauour of Belphebe, (as ye heard)
And of her grace did stand againe assured,
To happie blisse he was full high vprear'd,
Nether of enuy, nor of chaunge afeard,
Though many foes did him maligne therefore,
And with vniust detraction him did beard;
Yet he himselfe so well and wisely bore,
That in her soueraine lyking he dwelteuermore.

But of them all, which did his ruine secke
Three mightie enemies did him most despight,
Three mightie ones, and cruell minded eeke,
That him not onely sought by open might
To ouerthrow, but to supplant by slight.
The first of them by name was cald Despetto,
Exceeding all the rest in powre and hight;
The second not so strong but wise, Decetto;
The third nor strong nor wise, but spightfullest
Defetto.

T 4

Oftimes their sundry powres they did employ, And seuerall deceipts, but all in vaine: For neither they by force could him destroy, Ne yet entrap in treasons subtill traine. Therefore conspiring all together plaine, They did their counsels now in one compound: Where singled forces faile, conioynd may gaine.

The Blalant Beast the fittest meanes they found, To worke his vtter shame, and throughly him confound.

15

Vpon a day as they the time did waite, When he did raunge the wood for saluage game, They sent that Blalant Beast to be a baite, To draw him from his deare beloued dame, Vnwares into the daunger of defame. For well they wist, that Squire to be so bold, That no one beast in forrest wylde or tame, Met him in chase, but he it challenge would, And plucke the pray of times out of their greedy hould.

10

The hardy boy, as they deuised had,
Seeing the vgly Monster passing by,
Vpon him set, of perill nought adrad,
Ne skilfull of the vncouth ieopardy;
And charged him so fierce and furiously,
That his great force vnable to endure,
He forced was to turne from him and fly:
Yet ere he fled, he with his tooth impure
Him heedlesse bit, the whiles he was thereof
secure.

Securely he did after him pursew,

Thinking by speed to ouertake his flight; Who through thicke woods and brakes and briers him drew.

To weary him the more, and waste his spight, So that he now has almost spent his spright. Till that at length vnto a woody glade He came, whose couert stopt his further sight, There his three foes shrowded in guilefull shade, Out of their ambush broke, and gan him to inuade.

Sharpely they all attonce did him assaile. Burning with inward rancour and despight, And heaped strokes did round about him haile With so huge force, that seemed nothing might Beare off their blowes, from percing thorough

Yet he them all so warily did ward, That none of them in his soft flesh did bite. And all the while his backe for best safegard, He lent against a tree, that backeward onset bard.

Like a wylde Bull, that being at a bay, Is bayted of a mastiffe, and a hound, And a curre-dog; that doe him sharpe assay On every side, and beat about him round; But most that curre barking with bitter sound, And creeping still behinde, doth him incomber, That in his chauffe he digs the trampled ground, And threats his horns, and bellowes like the thonder.

So did that Squire his foes disperse, and drive asonder.

Him well behoued so; for his three foes Sought to encompasse him on every side, And dangerously did round about enclose. But most of all Defetto him annoyde, Creeping behinde him still to haue destroyde: So did Decetto eke him circumuent, But stout *Despetto* in his greater pryde, Did front him face to face against him bent, Yethethemallwithstood, and often made relent.

Till that at length nigh tyrd with former chace, And weary now with carefull keeping ward, He gan to shrinke, and somewhat to give place, Full like ere long to have escaped hard When as vnwares he in the forrest heard A trampling steede, that with his neighing fast Did warne his rider be vppon his gard; With noise whereof the Squire now nigh aghast, Revived was, and sad dispaire away did cast. And greedily himgriping his avengement stayd.

Eftsoones he spide a Knight approching nye. Who seeing one in so great daunger set Mongst many foes, him selfe did faster hye: To reskue him, and his weake part abet, For pitty so to see him ouerset. Whom soone as his three enemies did vew. They fled, and fast into the wood did get: Him booted not to thinke them to pursew, The couert was so thicke, that did no passage

Then turning to that swaine, him well he knew To be his *Timias*, his owne true Squire, Whereof exceeding glad, he to him drew, And him embracing twixt his armes entire, Him thus bespake; My liefe, my lifes desire, Why have we me alone thus long yleft? Tell me what worlds despight, or heavens yre Hath you thus long away from me bereft? Where have ye all this while bin wandring, where bene weft?

With that he sighed deepe for inward type: To whom the Squire nought aunswered againe, But shedding few soft teares from tender eyne, His deare affect with silence did restraine, And shut vp all his plaint in priuy paine. There they awhile some gracious speaches spent, As to them seemed fit time to entertaine. After all which vp to their steedes they went, And forth together rode a comely couplement.

So now they be arrived both in sight Of this wyld man, whom they full busic found About the sad Serena things to dight, With those braue armours lying on the ground, That seem'd the spoile of some right well renownd.

Which when that Squire beheld, he to them Thinking to take them from that hylding hound:

But he it seeing, lightly to him lept, And sternely with strong hand it from his handling kept.

Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly looke, And sparkling fire out of his furious eyne, Him with his fist vnwares on th'head he strooke, That made him downe vnto the earth encline; Whence soone vpstarting much he gan repine, And laying hand vpon his wrathfull blade, Thought therewithall forthwith him to haue slaine,

Who it perceiuing, hand voon him layd,

With that aloude the faire Serena cryde
Vnto the Knight, them to dispart in twaine:
Who to them stepping did them soone diuide,
And did from further violence restraine,
Albe the wyld-man hardly would refraine.
Then gan the Prince, of her for to demand,
What and from whence she was, and by what
traine

She fell into that saluage villaines hand, And whether free with him she now were, or in hand.

28

To whom she thus; I am, as now ye see,
The wretchedst Dame, that line this day on
ground,

Whobothinminde, the which most grieueth me, And body haue receiv'd a mortall wound, That hath me driuen to this drery stound. I was crewhile, the loue of *Calepine*, Who whether he aliue be to be found, Or by some deadly chaunce be done to pine, Since I him lately lost, vneath is to define.

20

In saluage forrest I him lost of late,
Where I had surely long ere this bene dead,
Or else remained in most wretched state,
Had not this wylde man in that wofull stead
Kept, and deliuered me from deadly dread.
In such a saluage wight, of brutish kynd,
Amongst wilde beastes in desert forrests bred,
It is most straunge and wonderfull to fynd
So milde humanity, and perfect gentle mynd.

30

Let me therefore this fauour for him finde, That ye will not your wrath vpon him wreake, Sith he cannot expresse his simple minde, Ne yours conceiue, ne but by tokens speake: Small praise to proue your powre on wight so weake.

Withsuchfaire words shedid their heate asswage, And the strong course of their displeasure breake, That they to pitty turnd their former rage, And each sought to supply the office of her page.

So hauing all things well about her dight,
She on her way cast forward to proceede,
And they her forthconducted, where they might
Finde harbour fit to comfort her great neede.
For now her wounds corruption gan to breed;
And eke this Squire, who likewise wounded was
Of that same Monster late, for lacke of heed,
Now gan to faint, and further could not pas
Through feeblenesse, which all his limbes oppressed has.

So forth they rode together all in troupe, To seeke some place, the which mote yeeld some ease

To these sicket waine, that now began to droupe, And all the way the Prince sought to appease The bitter anguish of their sharpe disease, By all the courteous meanes he could inuent, Somewhile with merry purpose fit to please, And otherwhile with good encouragement, To make them to endure the pains, did them torment.

22

Mongst which, Serena 3dd to him relate
The foule discourt'sies and vnknightly parts,
Which Turpine had vnto her shewed late,
Without compassion of her cruell smarts,
Although Blandina did with all her arts
Him otherwise perswade, all that she might;
Yet he of malice, without her desarts,
Not onely her excluded late at night,
But also trayterously did wound her weary
Knight.

Wherewith the Prince sore moued, there awoud, That soone as he returned backe againe, He would amenge th'abuses of that proud And shamefull Knight, of whom she did complaine.

This wize did they each other entertaine,
To passe the tedious trauell of the way;
Till towards night they came vnto a plaine,
By which a little Hermitage there lay,
Far from all neighbourhood, the which annoy
it may.

And nigh thereto a little Chappell stoode, Which being all with Yuy ouerspred, Deckt all the roofe, and shadowing the roode, Seem'd like a groue faire braunched ouer hed: Therein the Hermite, which his life here led In streight obseruaunce of religious vow, Was wont his howres and holy things to bed; And therein he likewise was praying now, Whenas these Knights arriu'd, they wist not where nor how.

They stayd not there, but streight way in did

Whom when the Hermite present saw in place, From his deuotion streight he troubled was; Which breaking off he toward them did pace, With stayed steps, and graue besceming grace: For well it seem'd, that whilome he had beene Some goodly person, and of gentle race, That could his good to all, and well did weene, How each to entertaine with curt'sie well beseene.

37 And soothly it was sayd by common fame, So long as age enabled him thereto, That he had bene a man of mickle name, Renowmed much in armes and derring doe: But being aged now and weary to Of warresdelight, and worlds contentious toyle, The name of knighthood he did disauow, And hanging vp his armes and warlike spoyle. From all this worlds incombraunce did himselfe assoyle.

He thence them led into his Hermitage, Letting their steedes to graze upon the greene: Small was his house, and like a little cage, For his owne turne, yet inly neate and clene, Deckt with greene boughes, and flowers gay beseene.

Therein he them full faire did entertaine Not with such forged showes, as fitter beene For courting fooles, that curtesies would faine. But with entire affection and appearaunce plaine.

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee Did vse, his feeble body to sustaine: The which full glidly they did take in glee, Such as it was, ne did of want complaine, But being well suffiz'd, them rested faine. But faire Serene all night could take no rest, Ne yet that gentle Squire, for grieuous paine Of their late woundes, the which the Blatant Beast Had given them, whose griefe through suffraunce sore increast.

So all that night they past in great disease, Till that the morning, bringing earely light To guide mens labours, brought them also ease. And some asswagement of their painefull plight. Then vp they rose, and gan them selues to dight Vnto their journey; but that Squire and Dame So faint and feeble were, that they ne might Endure to trauell, nor one foote to frame: Their hearts were sicke, their sides were sore, their feete were lame.

Therefore the Prince, who sugreat affaires in mynd Would not permit, to make there lenger stay, Was forced there to leave them both behynd. In that good Hermitscharge, whom he did pray To tend them well. So forth he went his way, And with him eke the saluage, that whyleare Seeing his royall vsage and array, Was greatly growne in loue of that braue pere,

Would needes depart, as shall declared be elsewhere.

# Cant. VI.

#### 

The Hermite heales both Squire and dame Of their sore maladies: He Turpine doth defeate, and shame

For his late villanies.

#### 

No wound, which warlike hand of enemy Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore doth light. As doth the poysnous sting, which infamy Infixeth in the name of noble wight: For by no art, nor any leaches might It euer can recured be againe; Ne all the skill, which that immortall spright Of Podalyrius did in it retaine, Can remedy such hurts; such hurts are hellish paine.

Such were the wounds, the which that Blatant

Made in the bodies of that Squire and Dame: And being such, were now much more increast, For want of taking heede vnto the same, That now corrupt and curelesse they became. Howbe that carefull Hermite did his best, With many kindes of medicines meete, to tame The poysnous humour, which did most infest Their ranckling wounds, and euery day them duely drest.

For he right well in Leaches craft was seene, And through the long experience of his daye, Which had in many fortunes tossed beene, And past through many perillous assayes, He knew the diverse went of mortall wayes, And in the mindes of men had great insight; Which with sage counsell, when they went

He could enforme, and them reduce aright, And all the passions heale, which wound the weaker spright.

For whylome he had bene a doughty Knight, As any one, that lived in his daies, And proued oft in many perillous fight, Of which he grace and glory wonne alwaies, And in all battels bore away the baies. But being now attacht with timely age. And weary of this worlds vnquiet waies, He tooke him selfe vnto this Hermitage. In which he liu'd alone, like carelesse bird in cage.

One day, as he was searching of their wounds, He found that they had festred priuily, And ranckling inward with vnruly stounds, The inner parts now gan to putrify, That quite they seem'd past helpe of surgery, And rather needed to be disciplinde With holesome reede of sad sobriety, To rule the stubborne rage of passion blinde: Giue salues to euery sore, but counsell to the minde.

So taking them apart into his cell,
He to that point fit speaches gan to frame,
As he the art of words knew wondrous well,
And eke could doe, as well as say the same,
And thus he to them sayd; Faire daughter
Dame,

And you faire sonne, which here thus long now

In piteous languor, since ye hither came, In vame of me ye hope for remedie, And Hikewise in vaine doe salues to you applie.

For in your selfe your onely helpe doth lie, To heale your selues, and must proceed alone From your owne will, to cure your maladie. Who can him cure, that will be cur'd of none? If therefore health ye seeke, obserue this one. First learne your outward sences to refraine From things, that stirre vp fraile affection; Your cies, your eares, your tongue, your talk restraine

From that they most affect, and in due termes containe.

For from those outward sences ill affected, The seede of all this euill first doth spring, Which at the first before it had infected, Mote easie be supprest with little thing: But being growen strong, it forth doth bring Sorrow, and anguish, and impatient paine In th'inner parts, and lastly scattering Contagious poyson close through euery vaine. It neuer rests, till it haue wrought his finall bane.

For that beastes teeth, which wounded you tofore.

Are so exceeding venemous and keene,
Made all of rusty yron, ranckling sore,
That where they bite, it booteth not to weene
With salue, or antidote, or other mene
It euer to amend: ne maruaile ought;
For that same beast was bred of hellish strene,
And long in darksome Stygian den vpbrought,
Begot of foule Echidna, as in bookes is taught.

Lehidna is a Monster direfull dred,
Whom Gods doe hate, and heauens abhor to see;
So hideous is her shape, so huge her hed,
That euen the hellish fiends affrighted bee
At sight thereof, and from her presence flee:
Yet did her face and former parts professe
A faire young Mayden, full of comely glee;
But all her hinder parts did plaine expresse
A monstrous Dragon, full of fearefull vglinesse

To her the Gods, for her so dreadfull face, In fearefull darkenesse, furthest from the skie, And from the earth, appointed haue her place, Mongst rocks and caues, where she enrold doth

In hideous horrour and obscurity,
Wasting the strength of her immortall age.
There did Typhaon with her company,
Cruell Typhaon, whose tempestuous rage
Make th'heauens tremble oft, and him with
yowes asswage.

Of that commixtion they did then beget This hellish Dog, that hight the *Blatant Beast*; A wicked Monster, that his tongue doth whet Gainst all, both good and bad, both most and least.

And poures his poysnous gall forth to infest The noblest wights with notable defame: Ne euer Knight, that bore so lofty creast, Ne euer Lady of so honest name, But he them spotted with reproch, or secrete

shame.

In vaine therefore it were, with medicine
To goe about to salue such kynd of sore,
That rather needes wise read and discipline,
Then outward salues, that may augment it
more.

Aye me (sayd then Serena sighing sore)
What hope of helpe doth then for vs remaine,
If that no salues may vs to health restore?
Butsithwe needgood counsell(sayd the swaine)
Arcad good sire, some counsell, that may vs
sustaine.

The best (sayd he) that I can you aduize, Is to auoide the occasion of the ill:
For when the cause, whence euill doth arize, Remoued is, th'effect surceaseth still.
Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your will.
Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight,
Vse scanted diet, and forbeare your fill,
Shun secresie, and talke in open sight:
So shall you soone repaire your present euill plight.

Thus hauing sayd, his sickely patients
Did gladly hearken to his graue beheast,
And kept so well his wise commaundements,
That in short space their malady was ceast,
And eke the biting of that harmefull Beast
Was throughly heal'd. Tho when they did
perceaue

Their wounds recur'd, and forces reincreast, Of that good Hermite both they tooke their

And went both on their way, ne ech would other leaue.

But each the other vow'd t'accompany,
The Lady, for that she was much in dred,
Now left alone in great extremity,
The Squire, for that he courteous was indeed,
Would not her leaue alone in her great need.
So both together traueld, till they met
With a faire Mayden clad in mourning weed,
Vpon a mangy iade vnmeetely set,

And a lewd foole her leading thorough dry and

But by what meanes that shame to her befell, And how thereof her selfe she did acquite, I must a while forbeare to you to tell; Till that, as comes by course, I doe recite, What fortune to the Briton Prince did lite, Pursuing that proud Knight, the which whileare

Wrought to Sir *Calidore* so foule despight; And eke his Lady, though she sickely were, So lewdly had abusde, as ye did lately heare.

15

The Prince according to the former token, Which faire Secene to him deliuered had, Pursu'd him streight, in mynd tobeneywroken Of all the vile demeane, and vsage bad, With which he had those two so ill bestad: Ne wight with him on that aduenture went, Butthat wyldeman, whomthough heoftforbad, Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent, Would he restrayned be from his attendement.

10

Arriuing there, as did by chaunce befall, He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode, Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall: Where soft dismounting like a weary lode, Vpon the ground with feeble feete he trode, As he vnable were for very neede

To moue one foote, but there must make abode:

The whiles the saluage man did take his steede, And in some stable neare did set him up to feede. 20

Ere long to him a homely groome there came, That in rude wise him asked, what he was, That durst so boldly, without let or shame, Into his Lords forbidden hall to passe. To whom the Prince, him fayning to embase,

Mylde answer made; he was an errant Knight, The which was fall'n into this feeble case, Through many wounds, which lately he in fight Receiued had, and prayd to pitty his ill pheht.

2

But he, the more outrageous and bold, Sternely did bid him quickely thence auaunt, Or deare aby, for why his Lord of old Did hate all errant Knights, which there did haunt.

Ne lodging would to any of them graunt, And therefore lightly bad him packe away. Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt; And therewithall rude hand on him did lay. To thrust him out of dore, doing hisworst assay.

22

Which when the Saluage comming now in place, Beheld, eftsoones he all entaged grew, And running streight vpon that villaine base, Like a fell Lion at him fiercely flew, And with his teeth and nailes, in present vew, Him rudely rent, and all to peeces tore: So miserably him all helpelesse slew, That with the noise, whilest he did loudly rore, The people of the house rose forth in great vprore.

Who when on ground they saw their fellow slaine,

saine,
Andthatsame Knight and Saluagestanding by,
Vponthem two they fell with might and maine,
And on them layd so huge and horribly,
As if they would haue slaine them presently.
But the bold Prince defended him so well,
And their assault withstood so mightily,
That maugre all their might, he did repell,
And beat them back, whilest many vnderneath
him fell.

Yet he them still so sharpely did pursew,
That few of them he left aliue, which fled,
Those euill tidings to their Lord to shew.
Who hearing how his people badly sped,
Cameforthinhast:wherewhenas with the dead
He saw the ground all strow'd, and that same
Knight

Andsaluage with their bloud fresh steeming red, He woxenigh mad with wrath and fell despight, And with reprochfull words him thus bespake on hight.

Art thou he, traytor, that with treason vile, Hast slaine my men in this vnmanly maner, And now triumphest in the piteous spoile Of these poore folk, whose soules with black dishonor

And foule defame doe decke thy bloudy baner? The meede whereof shall shortly be thy shame, And wretched end, which still attendeth on her. With that him selfe to battell he did frame: 50 did his forty yeomen, which there with him

With dreadfull force they all did him assaile, And round about with boystrous strokes oppresse,

That on his shield did rattle like to haile In a great tempest; that in such distresse, He wist not to which side him to addresse. And euermore that crauen cowherd Knight Was at his backe with heartlesse heedinesse, Wayting if he vnwares him murther might: For cowardize doth still in villany delight.

Whereof whenas the Prince was well aware, He to him turnd with furious intent, And him against his powre gan to prepare; Like a fierce Bull, that being busic bent To fight with many foes about him ment, Feeling some curre behinde his heeles to bite, Turnes him about with fell auengement; So likewise turnde the Prince vpon the Knight, And layd at him amaine with all his will and might.

Who when he once his dreadfull strokes had

Durst not the furie of his force abyde, But turn'd abacke, and to retyre him hasted Through the thick prease, there thinking him to hyde. feyde,

But when the Prince had once him plainely He foot by foot him followed alway,

Ne would him suffer once to shrinke asyde But ioyning close, huge lode at him did lay: Who flying still did ward, and warding fly away.

But when his foe he still so eger saw, Vnto his heeles himselfe he did betake, Hoping vnto some refuge to withdraw: Ne would the Prince him euer foot forsake, Where so he went, but after him did make. He fled from roome to roome, from place to place, Whylest euery joynt for dread of death did quake, Still looking after him, that did him chace; That made him euermore increase his speedie pace. I Maintaine this euill vse, thy foes thereby to foile.

At last he vp into the chamber came, Whereas his loue was sitting all alone. Wayting what tydings of her folke became. There did the Prince him ouertake anone, Crying in vaine to her, him to bemone; And with his sword him on the headdid smyte. That to the ground he fell in senselesse swone. Yet whether thwart or flatly it did lyte, The tempred steele did not into his braynepan

byte.

Which when the Ladie saw, with great affright She starting vp, began to shrieke aloud, And with her garment couering him from sight, Seem'd vnder her protection him to shroud; And falling lowly at his feet, her bowd Vpon her knee, intreating him for grace, And often him besought, and prayd, and vowd; That with the ruth of her so wretched case, He stayd his second strooke, and did his hand abase.

Her weed she then withdrawing, did him discouer.

Who now come to himselfe, yet would not rize, But still did lie as dead, and quake, and quiuer, That even the Prince his basenesse did despize, And cke his Dame him seeing in such guize, Gan him recomfort, and from ground to reare. Who rising up at last in ghastly wize, Like troubled phost did dreadfully appeare. As one that had no life him left through former

feare.

Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dismayd. He for such basenesse shamefully him shent, And with sharpe words did bitterly vpbrayd; Vile cowheard dogge, now doe I much repent, That euer I this life vnto thee lent, Whereof thou caytiue so vnworthie art; That both thy loue, for lacke of hardiment, And eke thy selfe, for want of manly hart, Andekeallknights hast shamed with this knightlesse part.

Yet further hast thou heaped shame to shame, And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard feare. For first it was to thee reprochfull blame, To erect this wicked custome, which I heare, Gainst errant Knights and Ladies thou dost

Whom when thou mayst, thou dost of arms despoile,

Or of their vpper garment, which they weare: Yet doest thou not with manhood, but with guile

And lastly in approuance of thy wrong,

To shew such faintnesse and foule cowardize. Is greatest shame: for oft it falles, that strong And valiant knights doe rashly enterprize, Either for fame, or else for exercize.

A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight; Yet haue, through prowesse and their braue emprize.

Gotten great worship in this worldes sight. For greater force there needs to maintaine wrong, then right.

Yet since thy life vnto this Ladie fayre I giuen haue, liue in reproch and scorne; Ne euer armes, ne euer knighthood dare Hence to professe: for shame is to adorne With so braue badges one so basely borne; But onely breath sith that I did forgine. So having from his craven bodie torne Those goodly armes, he them away did give And onely suffred him this wretched life to live.

There whilest he thus was setling things aboue, Atwene that Ladie myld and recreant knight, To whom his life he graunted for her loue, He gan bethinke him, in what perilous plight He had behynd him left that saluage wight, Amongst so many foes, whom sure he thought By this quite slaine in so vnequall fight: Therefore descending backe in haste, he sought If yet he were aliue, or to destruction brought.

There he him found enuironed about With slaughtred bodies, which his hand had slaine.

And laying yet a fresh with courage stout Vpon the rest, that did aline remaine; Whom he likewise right sorely did constraine, Like scattred sheepe, to seeke for safetie, After he gotten had with busie paine Some of their weapons, which thereby did lie, With which he layd about, and made them fast to flie.

Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage, Approching to him neare, his hand he stayd, And sought, by making signes, him to asswage: Who them perceiuing, streight to him obayd, As to his Lord, and downe his weapons layd, As if he long had to his heasts bene trayned. Thence he him brought away, and vp conuayd Into the chamber, where that Dame remayned With her vnworthy knight, who ill him entertayned.

Whom when the Saluage saw from daunger free, Sitting beside his Ladie there at ease, He well remembred, that the same was hee. Which lately sought his Lord for to displease: Tho all in rage, he on him streight did seaze.

As if he would in peeces him haue rent : And were not, that the Prince did him appeaze. He had not left one limbe of him vnrent:

But streight he held his hand at his commaunde-

Thus having all things well in peace ordayned. The Prince himselfe there all that night did

Where him Blandina fayrely entertayned, With all the courteous glee and goodly feast, The which for him she could imagine best. For well she knew the wayes to win good will Of every wight, that were not too infest, And how to please the minds of good and ill, Through tempering of her words and lookes by wondrous skill.

Yet were her words and lookes but false and favned.

To some hid end to make more easie way, Or to allure such fondlings, whom she trayned Into her trap vnto their owne decay: Thereto, when needed, she could weepe and pray,

And when her listed, she could fawne and flatter; Now smyling smoothly, like to sommers day, Now glooming sadly, so to cloke her matter Yet were her words but wynd, and all her teares but water.

Whether such grace were given her by kynd, As women wont their guilefull wits to guyde; Or learn'd the art to please, I doe not fynd. This well I wote, that she so well apply de Her pleasing tongue, that soone she pacifyde The wrathfull Prince, and wrought her husbands peace.

Who nathelesse not therewith satisfyde, His rancorous despight did not releasse, Ne secretly from thought of fell reuenge surceasse.

For all that night, the why les the Prince did rest In carelesse couch, not weeting what was ment. He watcht in close awayt with weapons prest, Willing to worke his villenous intent On him, that had so shamefully him shent: Yet durst he not for very cowardize Effect the same, why lest all the night was spent. The morrow next the Prince did carly rize, And passed forth, to follow his first enterprize.

# Cant. VII.

#### 

Turpine is baffuld, his two knights doe gaine their treasons meed, Fayre Mirabellaes punishment for loues disdaine decreed.

#### 

1

Like as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes, In doing gentle deedes with franke delight, Euen so the baser mind it selfe displayes, In cancred malice and reuengefull spight. For to maligne, t'enuie, t'vse shifting slight, Be arguments of a vile donghill mind, Which what it dare not doe by open might, To worke by wicked treason wayes doth find, By such discourteous deeds discouring his base kind.

2

That well appeares in this discourteous knight, The coward *Turpine*, whereof now I treat; Who notwithstanding that in former fight He of the Prince his life received late, Yet in his mind malitious and ingrate He gan deuize, to be aueng'd anew For all that shame, which kindled inwardhate. Therefore so soone as he was out of vew, Himselfe in hast he arm'd, and did him fast pursew.

Well did he tract his steps, as he did ryde, Yet would not neare approch in daungers eye, But kept aloofe for dread to be descryde, Vntill fit time and place he mote espy, Where he mote worke him scath and villeny. At last he met two knights to him vnknowne, The which were armed both agreeably, And both combynd, what euer chaunce were

Betwixt them to divide, and each to make his

To whom false *Turpine* comming courteously, To cloke the mischiefe, which he inly ment, Gan to complaine of great discourtesie, Which a straunge knight, that neare afore him went.

Had doen to him, and his deare Ladie shent: Which if they would afford him ayde at need For to auenge, in time conuenient,

They should accomplish both a knightly deed, And for their paines obtaine of him a goodly meed.

The knightsbeleeu'd, that all he sayd, was trew, And being fresh and full of youthly spright, Were glad to heare of that aduenture new, In which they mote make triall of their might, Which neuer yet they had approu'd in fight; And eke desirous of the offred meed, Said then the one of them; Where is that wight, The which hath doen to the ethis wrongfull deed, That we may it auenge, and punish him with speed?

He rides (said *Turpine*) there not farre afore, With a wyld man soft footing by his syde, That if ye list to haste a litle more, Ye may him ouertake in timely tyde. Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward pryde, And ere that litle while they ridden had, The gentle Prince not farre away they spyde, Ryding a softly pace with portance sad, Deuizing of his loue more, then of daunger drad.

7

Then one of them aloud vnto him cryde,
Bidding himturne againe, false traytour knight,
Foule womanwronger, for he him defyde.
With that they both at once with equall spight
Did bend their speares, and both with equall
might [marke,
Against him ran; but th'one did misse his
And being carried with his force forthright,
Glaunst swiftly by; like to that heauenly sparke,
Which glyding through the ayre lights all the

But th'other ayming better, did him smite Full in the shield, with so impetuous powre, That all his launce in peeces shiuered quite, And scattered all about, fell on the flowre. But the stout Prince, with much more steddy

heavens darke.

Full on his beuer did him strike so sore, Thatthe coldsteele through piercing, diddeucwre His vitall breath, and to the ground him bore, Wherestillhe bathed lay in his owne bloodygore.

- 9

As when a cast of Faulcons make their flight At an Herneshaw, that lyes aloft on wing, The whyles they strike at him with heedlesse might,

The warie foule his bill doth backward wring; On which the first, whose force her first doth bring, Her selfe quite through the bodie doth engore, And falleth downe to ground like senselesse thing, But th'other not so swift, as she before, Fayles of her souse, and passing by doth hurt no more.

By this the other, which was passed by, Himselfe recouering, was return'd to fight; Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly, He much was daunted with so dism'll sight; Yet nought abating of his former spight, Let driue at him with so malitious mynd, As if he would haue passed through him quight: But the steele-head no stedfast hold could fynd, But glauncing by, deceiu'd him of that he desynd.

Not so the Prince: for his well learned speare Tooke surer hould, and from his horses backe Aboue a launces length him forth did beare, And gainst the cold hard earth so sore him strake,

That all his bones in peeces nigh he brake. Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed, And to him leaping, vengeance thought to take Of him, for all his former follies meed, With flaming sword in hand his terror more to breed.

12

The fearefull swayne beholding death so nie, Cryde out aloud for mercie him to saue; In lieu whereof he would to him descrie, Great treason to him meant, his life to reaue. The Princesoone hearkned, and his life forgaue. Then thus said he, There is a straunger knight, The which for promise of great meed, vs draue To this attempt, to wreake his hid despight, For that himselfe thereto did want sufficient might.

The Prince much mused at such villenie, And sayd; Now sure ye well haue earn'd your

For th'one is dead, and th'other soone shall die, Vnlesse to me thou hether bring with speed The wretch, that hyr'd you to this wicked deed. He glad of life, and willing eke to wreake The guilt on him, which did this mischiefe breed.

Swore by his sword, that neither day nor weeke He would surceasse, but him, where so he were, would seeke.

So vp he rose, and forth streight way he went Backe to the place, where *Turpine* late he lore; There he him found in great astonishment, To see him so bedight with bloodie gore, And grissly wounds that him appalled sore. Yet thus at length he said, How now Sirknight? What meaneth this, which here I see before? How fortuneth this foule vncomely plight. So different from that, which earst ye seem'd in sight?

Perdie (said he) in euill houre it fell,
That euer I for meed did vndertake
So hard a taske, as life for hyre to sell;
The which I earst aduentur'd for your sake.
Witnessethewounds, and this wyde bloudie lake.
Which ye may see yet all about me steeme.
Therefore now yeeld, as ye did promise make,
My due reward, the which right well I deeme
I yearned haue, that life so dearely did redeeme.

16
But where then is (quoth he halfe wrothfully)
Where is the bootie, which therefore I bought,
That cursed caytiue, my strong enemy,
That recreant knight, whose hated life I sought?
And where is ekeyour friend, which halfe it ought?
He lyes (said he) vpon the cold bare ground,
Slayne of that errant knight, with whom he fought;

Whom afterwards my selfe with many a wound Did slay againe, as ye may see there in the stound.

17

Thereof false *Turpin* was full glad and faine, And needs with him streight to the place would ryde,

Wherehehimselfemight see his foeman skaine; For else his feare could not be satisfyde. So as they rode, he saw the way all dyde With streames of bloud; which tracting by the traile,

Ere long they came, whereas in euill tyde That other swayne, like ashes deadly pale, Lay in the lap of death, rewing his wretched bale.

Much did the Crauen seeme to mone his case, That for his sake his deare life had forgone: And him bewayling with affection base, Did counterfeit kind pittie, where was none: For wheres no courage, theres no ruth nor mone. Thence passing forth, not farre away he found, Whereas the Prince himselfe kay all alone, Loosely displayd vpon the grassie ground, Possessed of sweete sleepe, that luld him soft in

Loosely displayd vpon the grassic ground,
Possessed of sweete sleepe, that luld him soft in
swound.

19
Wearia of travell in his former fight.

Wearie of trauell in his former fight,
He there in shade himselfe had layd to rest,
Hauing his armes and warlike things vndight,
Fearelesse of foes that mote his peace molest;
The whyles his saluage page, that wont be prest,
Was wandred in the wood another way,
To doe some thing, that seemed to him best,
The whyles his Lord in siluer slomber lay,
Like to the Euening starre adorn'd with deawy

ray

Whom when as *Turpin* saw so loosely layd, He weened well, that he in deed was dead, Like as that other knight to him had sayd: But when he nigh approcht, he mote aread Plaine signes in him of life and liuelihead. Whereat much grieu'd against that straunger knight.

That him too light of credence did mislead, He would have backe retyred from that sight, That was to him on earth the deadliest despight.

2

But that same knight would not once let him start.

But plainely gan to him declare the case Of all his mischiefe, and late lucklesse smart; How both he and his fellow there in place Were vanquished, and put to foule di-grace, And how that he in lieu of life him lent, Had vow'd vnto the victor, him to trace And follow through the world, where so he went,

Till that he him deliuered to his punishment.

22

He therewith much abashed and affrayd, Began to tremble enery limbe and vame; And softly whispering him, entyrely prayd, Tachuze him better, then by such a traine Him to betray vnto a straunger swaine: Yet rather counseld him contrarywize, Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine, To byne with him and vengeance to deuize, Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping to surprize.

Nathelesse for all his speach, the gentle knight Would not be tempted to such villenie, Regarding more his faith, whi h he did plight, All were it to his mortall enemie, Then to entrap him by false treacherie: Great shame in lieges blood to be embrew'd. Thus whylest they were debating diuerslie, The Saluage forth out of the wood issew'd.

Bucke to the place, whereas his Lordhe sleeping

vew'd.

There when he saw those two so near chim stand, He doubted much what mote their meaning bee, And throwing downe his load out of his hand, To weet great store of forrest frute, which hee Had for his food late gathered from the tree, Himselfe vnto his weapon he betooke, That was an oaken plant, which lately hee Rent by the root; which he so sternely shooke, That like an hazell wand, it quiuered and quooke.

25

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde The traytour Turpin with that other knight, He started vp, and snatching neure his syde His trustic sword, the seruant of his might, Like a fell Lyon leaped to him light, And his left hand vpon his collar layd. Therewith the cowheard deaded with afright. Fell flat to ground, ne word vnto him sayd, But holding vp his hands, with silence mercue prayd.

26

But he so full of indignation was, That to his prayer nought he would incline, But as he lay vpon the humbled gras, His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe Of scruile yoke, that nobler harts repine. Then letting him arise like abicet thrall, He gan to him obiect his haynous crime, And to reuile, and rate, and recreant call, And lastly to despoyle of knightly hannerall.

27

And after all, for greater infamic.

He by the heeles him hung yoon a tree,
And baffuld so, that all which passed by,
The picture of his punishment might see,
And by the like ensample warned bee,
How cuer they through treason doe trespasse.
But turne we now backe to that Ladic free,
Whom late we left ryding yoon an Asse,
Led by a Carle and foole, which by her side did
passe.

28

She was a Ladie of great dignitie
And lifted vp to honorable place,
Famous through all the land of Facrie,
Though of meane parentage and kindred base,
Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of natures
grace.

That all men did her person much admire, And praise the feature of her goodly face. The beames whereof did kindle louely fire In th'harts of many a knight, and many a gentle squire.

29

But she thereof grew proud and insolent,
That none she worthie thought to be her fere,
But scornd them all, that loue vnto her ment,
Yet was she lou'd of many a worthy pere,
Vnworthy she to be belou'd so dere,
That could not weigh of worthinesse aright.
For beautie is more glorious bright and clere,
The more it is admir'd of many a wight,
And noblest she, that serued is of noblest
knight.

But this cov Damzell thought contrariwize, That such proud looks would make her praysed more;

And that the more she did all loue despize, The more would wretched louers her adore. What cared she, who sighed for her sore, Or who did wayle or watch the wearie night? Let them that list, their lucklesse lot deplore; She was borne free, not bound to any wight, And so would euer liue, and loue her owne delight.

Through such her stubborne stifnesse, and hard

Many a wretch, for want of remedie, Did languish long in lifeconsuming smart, And at the last through dreary dolour die: Whylest she, the Ladie of her libertie, Did boast her beautie had such soueraine

That with the onely twinckle of her eye, She could or saue, or spill, whom she would

What could the Gods doe more, but doe it more aright?

But loe the Gods, that mortall follies vew, Did worthily reuenge this maydens pride; And nought regarding her so goodly hew, Did laugh at her, that many did deride, Whilest she did weepe, of no man mercifide. For on a day, when Cupid kept his court, As he is wont at each Saint Valentide, Vnto the which all louers doe resort,

That of their loues successe they there may make report;

It fortun'd then, that when the roules were red. In which the names of all loues folke were fyled, That many there were missing, which were ded. Or kept in bands, or from their loues exyled. Or by some other violence despoyled. Which when as Cupid heard, he wexed wroth, And doubting to be wronged, or beguyled, He bad his eyes to be vnblindfold both, That he might see his men, and muster them by oth.

Then found he many missing of his crew, Which wont doe suit and service to his might; Of whom what was becomen, no man knew. Therefore a Iurie was impaneld streight, T'enquire of them, whether by force, or sleight, Or their owne guilt, they were away conuayd. To whom foule Infinite, and fell Despight Gaue euidence, that they were all betrayd, And murdred cruelly by a rebellious Mayd.

35

Favre Mirabella was her name, whereby Of all those crymes she there indited was: All which when Cubid heard, he by and by In great displeasure, wild a Capias Should issue forth, t'attach that scornefull lasse. The warrant straight was made, and therewithall

A Baylieffe errant forth in post did passe, Whom they by name there Portamore did call: He which doth summon louers to loues judgement hall.

The damzell was attacht, and shortly brought Vnto the barre, whereas she was arrayned: But she thereto nould plead, nor answere ought Euen for stubborne pride, which her restrayned So judgement past, as is by law ordayned In cases like, which when at last she saw, Herstubbornehart, which loue before disdayned, Ganstoupe, and falling downe with humble awe, Cryde mercie, to abate the extremitie of law.

The sonne of Venus who is myld by kynd, But where he is prouokt with pecuishnesse, Vnto her prayers piteously enclynd, And did the rigour of his doome represse; Yet not so freely, but that nathelesse He vnto her a penance did impose, Which was, that through this worlds wyde wildernes

She wander should in companie of those. Till she had sau'd so many loues, as she did lose.

So now she had bene wandring two whole yeares Throughout the world, in this vncomely case, Wasting her goodly hew in heavie teares, And her good dayes in dolorous disgrace: Yet had she not in all these two yeares space. Saued but two, yet in two yeares before, Through her dispiteous pride, whilest louc lackt place.

She had destroyed two and twenty more. Aie me, how could her loue make half amends therefore?

And now she was vppon the weary way, When as the gentle Squire, with faire Screne. Met her in such misseeming foule array; The whiles that mighty man did her demeand With all the euill termes and cruell meane, That he could make; And eeke that angry foole Which follow'dher, with cursed hands vncleane Whipping her horse, did with his smarting took Oft whip her dainty selfe, and much augment her doole.

Ne ought it mote auaile her to entreat
The one or th'other, better her to vse:
For both so wilfull were and obstinate,
That all her piteous plaint they did refuse,
And rather did the more her beate and bruse.
But most the former villaine, which did lead
Her tyreling iade, was bent her to abuse;
Who though she were with wearinesse nigh
dead.

Yet would not let her lite, nor rest a little stead.

41

For he was sterne, and terrible by nature, And eeke of person huge and hideous, Exceeding much the measure of mans stature, And rather like a Gyant monstruous. For sooth he was descended of the hous Of those old Gyants, which did warres darraine Against the heauen in order battailous, And sib to great Orgolio, which was slaine By Arthure, when as Vnas Knight he did maintaine.

42

His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery cies Liketwogreat Beacons, glared bright and wyde, Glauncing askew, as if his enemies He scorned in his ouerweening pryde; And stalking stately like a Crane, did stryde At enery step vppon the tiptoes hie, And all the way he went, on enery syde He gaz'd about, and stared horriblie, As if he with his lookes would all men terrific.

43

He wore no armour, ne for none did care, As no whit dreading any liuing wight; But in a lacket quilted richly rare Vpon checklaton he was straungely dight, And on his head a roll of linnen plight, Like to the Mores of Malaber he wore; With which hislocks, as blacke as pitchynight, Were bound about, and voyded from before, And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

44

This was Disdaine, who led that Ladies horse Through thick and thin, through mountains and through plains,

Compelling her, wher she would not, by force, Haling her palfrey by the hempen raines. But that same foole, which most increast her paines.

Was Scorne, who having in his hand a whip, Her therewith yirks, and still when she com-

The more he laughes, and does her closely quip, To see her sore lament, and bite her tender lip.

Whose crucil handling when that Squire beheld, And saw those villaines her so vildely vse, His gentle heart with indignation sweld, And could no lenger beare so great abuse, As such a Lady so to beate and bruse; But to him stepping, such a stroke him lent, That forst him th'halter from his hand toloose, And maugre all his might, backe to relent: Else had he surely there bene slaine, or fowly shent.

The villaine, wroth for greeting him so sore, Gathered him selfe together soone againe, And with his yron batton, which he bore, Let driue at him so dreadfully amaine, That for his safety he did him constraine To giue him ground, and shift to cucry side, Rather then once his burden to sustaine: For bootelesse thing him seemed, to abide So mighty blowes, or proue the puissaunce of his pride.

Like as a Mastiffe having at a bay
A saluage Bull, whose cruell hornes doe threat
Desperate daunger, if he them assay,
Traceth his ground, and round about doth

To spy where he may some aduauntage get; The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly rore: So did the Squire, the whiles the Carle did fret, And fume in his disdainefull mynd the more, And ottentimes by Turmagant and Mahound swore.

Nathelesse so sharpely still he him pursewd,
That at aduantage him at last he tooke,
When his foote slipt (that sliphe dearely rewd,)
And with his yron club to ground him strooke;
Where still he lay, ne out of swoune awooke,
Till heauy hand the Carle vpon him layd,
And bound him fast: Tho when he vp did

And saw him selfe captin d, he was dismayd, Ne powre had to withstand, ne hope of any ayd.

40

Then vp he made him rise, and forward fare, Led in a rope, which both his hands did bynd; Ne ought that foole for pitty did him spare, But with his whip him following behynd, Him often scourg'd, and forst his feete to fynd; And other whiles with bitter mockes and mowes He would him scorne, that to his gentle mynd Was much more grieuous, then the others blowes:

Words sharpely wound, but greatest griefe of scorning growes.

The faire Serena, when she saw him fall Vnder that villaines club, then surely thought That slaine he was, or made a wretched thrall. And fled away with all the speede she mought, To seeke for safety, which long time she sought:

And past through many perils by the way, Ere she againe to Calepine was brought; The which discourse as now I must delay, Till Mirabellaes fortunes I doe further say.

# Cant. VIII.

#### 

Prince Arthure ouercomes Disdaine. Quites Mirabell from dreed: Serena found of Saluages, By Calepine is freed.

#### 

Ye gentle Ladies, in whose soueraine powre Loue hath the glory of his kingdome left, And th'hearts of men, as your eternall down. In yron chaines, of liberty bereft, Deliuered hath into your hands by gitt; Be well aware, how ye the same doe yee. That pride doe not to tyranny you lift; Least if men you of cruelty accuse, He from you take that chiefedome, which we doe abuse.

And as ye soft and tender are by kyrde, Adornd with goodly gifts of beauties grace, So be ye soft and tender ceke in mynde; But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace, That all your other praises will deface, And from you turne the love of men to hate. Ensample take of Mirabellaes case, Who from the high degree of happy state, Fell into wretched woes, which she repented late.

Who after thraldome of the gentle Squire, Which she beheld with lamentable eye. Was touched with compassion entire, And much lamented his calamity, That for her sake fell into misery: Which booted nought for prayers, nor for threat

To hope for to release or mollify; For ave the more, that she did them entreat. The more they him misust, and cruelly did beat. | Vnwares defrauded his intended destiny.

So as they forward on their way did pas, Him still reuiling and afflicting sore, They met Prince Arthure with Sir Emas. (That was that courteous Knight, whom he

Hauing subdew'd, yet did to life restore,) To whom as they approcht, they gan augment Their cruelty, and him to punish more, Scourging and haling him more vehement: As if it them should grieue to see his punishment,

The Squire him selfe when as he saw his Lord, The witnesse of his wretchednesse, in place, Was much asham'd, that with an hempen core. He like a dog was led in captine case. And did his head for bashfulnesse abase, As loth to see, or to be seene at all: Shame would be hid. But whenas Enias Beheld two such, of two such villaines thrall, His manly mynde was much emmoued therewithall.

And to the Prince thus sayd; See you Sir Knight.

The greatest shame that euer eve yet saw: Yond Lady and her Squire with foule despight Abusde, against all reason and all law, Without regard of pitty or of awe. See how they doe that Squire beat and reuile. See how they doe the Lady hale and draw. But if ye please to lend me leaue a while, I will them soone acquite, and both of blane assoile.

The Prince assented, and then he streight way Dismounting light, his shield about him threw. With which approching, thus he gan to say: Abide ye caytiue treachetours vntrew, That have with treason thralled vnto you These two, vnworthy of your wretched bands: And now your crime with cruelty pursew. Abide, and from them lay your loathly hands: Or else abide the death, that hard before you stands.

The villaine stayd not aunswer to inuent, But with his vron club preparing way, His mindes sad message backe vnto him sent; The which descended with such dreadfull sway. That seemed nought the course thereof could

No more then lightening from the lofty sky. Ne list the Knight the powre thereof assay, Whose doome was death, but lightly slipping

And to requite him with the like againe, With his sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew, And strooke so strongly, that the Carle with paine

Saued him selfe, but that he there him slew: Yet sau'd not so, but that the bloud it drew, And gaue his foe good hope of victory. Who therewith flesht, vpon him set anew, And with the second stroke, thought certainely To haue supplyde the first, and paide the vsurv.

11

But Fortune aunswerd not vnto his call; For as his hand was heaued vp on hight, The villaine met him in the middle fall, And with his club betbackehis brondyron bright So forcibly, that with his owne hands might Rebeaten backe vpon him selfe againe, He driuen was to ground in selfe despight; From whence ere he recouery could gaine, He in his necke had set his foote with fell disdaine.

With that the foole, which did that end awayte, Came running in, and whilest on ground he kay, Laide heavy hands on him, and held so strayte. That downe he kepthim with hisscornefullsway, So as he could not weld him any way. The whiles that other villaine went about

Him to haue bound, and thrald without delay; The whiles the foole did him reuile and flout. Threatning to yoke them two and tame their corage stout.

orage stout.

As when a sturdy ploughman with his hynde By strength haue overthrowne a stubborne steare,

They downe him hold, and fast with cords do bynde,

Till they him force the buxome yoke to beare: So did these two this Knight oft tug and teare. Which when the Prince beheld, therestanding by, He Lit his lofty steede to aide him neare, And buckling soone him selfe, gar fiercely fly Vppon that Carle, to saue his friend from leopardy.

The villaine leauing him vnto his mate
To be captiu'd, and handled as he list,
Himselfe addrest vnto this new debate,
And with his club him all about so blist,
That he which way to turne him scarcely wist:
Sometimes aloft he layd, sometimes alow;
Nowhere, now there, and oft him nearehemist;
So doubtfully, that hardly one could know
Whether more wary were to give or ward the
blow.

But yet the Prince so well enured was
With such huge strokes, approued oft in fight,
That way to them he gaue forth right to pas.
Ne would endure the daunger of their might,
But wayt advantage, when they downedid light.
At last the caytine after long discourse,
When all his strokes he saw anoyded quite,
Resolued in one t'assemble all his force,
And make one end of him without ruth or
remorse.

His dreadfull hand he heaued vp aloft,
And with his dreadfull instrument of yre,
Thought sure haue pownded him to powdersoft,
Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre:
But Fortune did not with his will conspire.
For ere his stroke attayned his intent,
The noble childe preuenting his desire,
Vnder his club with wary boldnesse went,
And smote him on the knee, that neuer yet was bent.

It neuer yet was bent, ne bent it now,
Albe the stroke so strong and puissant were,
That seem'd a marble pillour it could bow,
But all that leg, which did his body beare,
It crackt throughout, yet did nobloud appeare;
So as it was vnable to support
So huge a burden on such broken geare,
But fell to ground, like to a lumpe of durt,
Whence he assayd to rise, but could not for his
hurt.

Eftsoones the Prince to him full nimbly stept, And least he should recouer foote againe, His head meant from his shoulders to haue

Which when the Lady saw, she cryde amaine; Stay stay, Sir Knight, for loue of God abstaine, From that vnwares ye weetlesse doe intend; Slay not that Carle, though worthy to be slaine For more on him doth then him selfe depend; My life will by his death haue lamentable end.

18

He staide his hand according her desire, Yet nathernore him suffred to arize; But still suppressing gan of her inquire, What meaning mote those vncouth words comprize,

That in that villaines health her safety lies That, were no might in man, nor heart in Knights, Which durst her dreaded reskue enterprize, Yet heauens them schies, that fauour feeble rights,

Would for it selfe redresse, and punish such despights.

Then bursting forth in teares, which gushed fast Like many water streames, a while she stayd; Till the sharpe passion being ouerpast, Her tongue to her restord, then thus she sayd; Nor heavens, nor men can me most wretched mayd

Deliuer from the doome of my desart, The which the God of loue hath on me layd, And damned to endure this direfull smart, For penaunce of my proud and hard rebellious

In prime of youthly yeares, when first the flowre Of beauty gan to bud, and bloosme delight, And nature me endu'd with plenteous dowre, Of all her gifts, that pleasde each liuing sight, I was belou'd of many a gentle Knight, And sude and sought with all the service dew Full many a one for me deepe groand and sight, And to the dore of death for sorrow drew, Complayning out on me, that would not on them rew.

But let them loue that list, or liue or die; Me list not die for any louers doole: Ne list me leaue my loued libertie, To pitty him that list to play the foole: To loue my selfe I learned had in schoole. Thus I triumphed long in louers paine, And sitting carelesse on the scorners stoole, Did laugh at those that did lament and plaine: But all is now repayd with interest againe.

For loe the winged God, that woundeth harts, Causde me be called to accompt therefore, And for reuengement of those wrongfull

Which I to others did inflict afore, Addeem'd me to endure this penaunce sore; That in this wize, and this vnmeete array, With these two lewd companions, and no more, Disdaine and Scorne, I through the world should stray,

Till I haue sau'd so many, as I earst did slay.

Certes (sayd then the Prince) the God is just, That taketh vengeaunce of his peoples spoile. For were no law in loue, but all that lust, Might them oppresse, and painefully turmoile, His kingdome would continue but a while. But tell me Lady, wherefore doe you beare This bottle thus before you with such toile. And eeke this wallet at your backe arreare, That for these Carles to carry much more comely were?

Here in this bottle (sayd the sory Mayd) I put the teares of my contrition. Till to the brim I have it full defrayd: And in this bag which I behinde me don. I put repentaunce for things past and gon. Yet is the bottle leake, and bag so torne. That all which I put in, fals out anon; And is behinde me trodden downe of Scorne, Who mocketh all my paine, and laughs the more I mourn.

The Infant hearkned wisely to her tale. And wondred much at Cupids judg'ment wise, That could so meekly make proud hearts auale, And wreake him selfe on them, that him despise, Then suffred he Disdaine vp to arise, Who was not able vp him selfe to reare, [prise, By meanes his leg through his late luckelesse Was crackt in twaine, but by his foolish feare Was holpen vp, who him supported standing neare.

But being vp, he lookt againe aloft, As if he neuer had received fall; And with sterne eye-browes stared at him oft, As if he would have daunted him withall: And standing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall, Downe on his golden feete he often gazed, As if such pride the other could apall; Who was so far from being ought amazed, That he his lookes despised, and his boast dispraized.

Then turning backe vnto that captine thrall, Who all this while stood there beside them

Vnwilling to be knowne, or seene at all, He from those bands weend him to have vnwound.

But when approching neare, he plainely found, It was his owne true groome, the gentle Squire, He thereat wext exceedingly astound, And him did oft embrace, and oft admire,

Ne could with seeing satisfie his great desire.

Meane while the Saluage man, when he beheld That huge great foole oppressing th'other Knight,

Whom with his weight vnweldy downe he held, He flew vpon him, like a greedy kight Vnto some carrion offered to his sight, [teeth And downe him plucking, with his nayles and Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch, and bite; And from him taking his owne whip, therewith So sore him scourgeth, that the bloud downe followeth.

And sure I weene, had not the Ladies cry Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to stav. He would with whipping, him haue done to dye: But being checkt, he did abstaine streight way. And let him rise. Then thus the Prince gan

Now Lady sith your fortunes thus dispose, That if ye list haue liberty, ye may, Vnto your selfe I freely leaue to chose, Whether I shall you leave, or from these villaines lose.

Ah nay Sir Knight (sayd she) it may not be, But that I needes must by all meanes fulfill This penaunce, which enjoyned is to me, Least vnto me betide a greater ill; Yet no lesse thankes to you for your good will. So humbly taking leaue, she turnd aside, But Arthure with the rest, went onward still On his first quest, in which did him betide A great aduenture, which did him from them denide.

But first it falleth me by course to tell Of faire Serena, who as earst you heard, When first the gentle Squire at variaunce fell With those two Carles, fled fast away, afeard Of villany to be to her inferd: So fresh the image of her former dread, Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeard, That every foote did tremble, which did tread, And every body two, and two she foure did

Through hils and dales, through bushes and through breres Long thus she fled, till that at last she thought Her selfe now past the perill of her feares. Then looking round about, and seeing nought, Which doubt of daunger to her offer mought, She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine, And sitting downe, her selfe a while bethought Of her long trauell and turmovling paine; And often did of loue, and oft of lucke complaine.

And euermore she blamed Calepine, The good Sir Calepine, her owne true Knight, As th'onely author of her wofull tine: For being of his loue to her so light, As her to leave in such a piteous plight. Yet neuer Turtle truer to his make, Then he was tride vnto his Lady bright Who all this while endured for her sake, Great perillof his life, and restlesse paines did take.

Tho when as all her plaints she had displayd, And well disburdened her engrieued brest, Vpon the grasse her selfe adowne she lavd : Where being tyrde with trauell, and opprest With sorrow, she betooke her selfe to rest. There whilest in Morpheus bosome safe she lay, Fearelesse of ought, that mote her peace molest, False Fortune did her safety betray, Vnto a straunge mischaunce, that menac'd her

decay.

In these wylde deserts, where she now abode, There dwelt a saluage nation, which did liue Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly rode Into their neighbours borders; ne did giue Them selues to any trade, as for to drive The painefull plough, or cattell for to breed, Or by aduentrous marchandize to thriue; But on the labours of poore men to feed, And serue their owne necessities with others

Thereto they vsde one most accursed order, To eate the flesh of men, whom they mote fynde, And straungers to deuoure, which on their border Were brought by errour, or by wreckfullwynde. A monstrous cruelty gainst course of kynde. They towards evening wandring every way, To seeke for booty, came by fortune blynde, Whereas this Lady, like a sheepe astray, Now drowned in the depth of sleepe all feare-

lesse lay. Soone as they spide her, Lord what gladfull glee They made amongst them selues; but when

her face Like the faire yuory shining they did see, Each gan his fellow solace and embrace, For joy of such good hap by heauenly grace. Then gan they to deuize what course to take: Whether to slay her there vpon the place, Or suffer her out of her sleepe to wake, And then her eate attonce; or many meales to make.

The best aduizement was of bad, to let her Sleepe out her fill, without encomberment: For sleepe they sayd would make her battill better.

Then when she wakt, they all gaue one consent, That since by grace of God she there was sent, Vnto their God they would her sacrifize, Whose share, her guiltlesse bloud they would

But of her dainty flesh they did deuize To make a common feast, and feed with gurmandize.

So round about her they them selues did place Vpon the grasse, and diversely dispose, Aseach thought best to spend the lingring space. Some with their eves the daintest morsels chose: Some praise her paps, some praise her lips and nose:

Some whet their knines, and strip their elboes

The Priest him selfe a garland doth compose Of finest flowres, and with full busic care His bloudy vessels wash, and holy fire prepare.

The Damzell wakes, then all attonce vpstart, And round about her flocke, like many flies, Whooping, and hallowing on euery part, As if they would have rent the brasen skies. Which when she sees with ghastly griefful cies, Her heart does quake, and deadly pallid hew Benumbes her cheekes: Then out aloud she cries.

Where none is nigh to heare, that will her rew, And rends her golden locks, and snowy brests embrew.

But all bootes not: they hands upon her lay; And first they spoile her of her iewels deare, And afterwards of all her rich array; The which amongst them they in peeces teare, And of the pray each one a part doth beare. Now being naked, to their sordid eyes The goodly threasures of nature appeare: Which as they view with lustfull fantasyes, Each wisheth to him selfe, and to the rest enuyes.

Her yuorie necke, her alablaster brest, Her paps, which like white silken pillowes were, For love in soft delight thereon to rest; Her tender sides, her bellie white and clere, Which like an Altar did it selfe vprere, To offer sacrifice divine thereon; Her goodly thighes, whose glorie did appeare Like a triumphall Arch, and thereupon The spoiles of Princes hang'd, which were in battel won.

Those daintie parts, the dearlings of delight, Which mote not be prophan'd of common eyes, Those villeins vew'd with loose lascinious sight, And closely tempted with their craftie spyes: And some of them gan mongst themselves devize, Thereof by force to take their beastly pleasure. But them the Priest rebuking, did advize To dare not to pollute so sacred threasure, Vow'd to the gods: religion held even thecues in measure.

So being stayd, they her from thence directed Vnto a litle groue not farre asyde, In which an altar shortly they erected. To slay her on. And now the Euentyde His brode black wings had through the heavens wyde

By this dispred, that was the tyme ordayned For such a dismall deed, their guilt to hyde: Of few greene turfes an altar soone they fayned. And deckt it all with flowres, which they nigh hand obtayned.

Tho when as all things readic were aright, The Damzell was before the altar set, Being alreadie dead with fearefull fright. To whom the Priest with naked armes full net Approching nigh, and murdrous knife well

Gan mutter close a certaine secret charme, With other diuelish ceremonies met: Which doen he gan aloft t'aduance his arme, Whereat they shouted all, and made a loud alarme.

Then gan the bagpypes and the hornes to shrill, And shricke aloud, that with the peoples voyce Confused, did the ayre with terror fill, And made the wood to tremble at the novce: The whyles she wayld, the more they did reioyce.

Now mote ye understand that to this groue Sir Calepine by chaunce, more then by choyce, The selfe same evening fortune hether drove, As he to seeke Serena through the woods did roue.

Long had he sought her, and through many a

Had traueld still on foot in heavie armes, Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyles, Ne ought was feared of his certaine harmes: And now all weetlesse of the wretched stormes. In which his loue was lost, he slept full fast, Till being waked with these loud alarmes, He lightly started vp like one aghast, And catching vp his arms streight to the noise forth past.

There by th'vncertaine glims of starry night, And by the twinkling of their sacred fire, He mote perceiue a litle dawning sight Of all, which there was doing in that quire: Mongst whom a woman spoyld of all attire He spyde, lamenting her vuluckie strife, And groning sore from grieued hart entire, Eftsoones he saw one with a naked knife Readie to launch her brest, and let out loued life.

With that he thrusts into the thickest throng, And euen as his right hand adowne descends, He him preuenting, layes on earth along, And sacrifizeth to th'infernall feends. Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he bends. Of whom he makes such hauocke and such hew. That swarmes of damned soules to hell he sends: The rest that scape his sword and death eschew. Fly like a flocke of doues before a Faulcons vew.

From them returning to that Ladie backe, Whom by the Altar he doth sitting find, Yet fearing death, and next to death the lacke Of clothes to couer, what they ought by kind, He first her hands beginneth to vnbind; And then to question of her present woe; And afterwards to cheare with speaches kind. But she for nought that he could say or doc. One word durst speake, or answere him a whit thereto.

So inward shame of her vincomely case. She did conceine, through care of womanhood, That though the night did couer her disgrace, Yet she in so vinwomanly a mood, Would not bewray the state in which she stood. So all that night to him vinknowen she past. But day, that doth discouer bad and good, Ensewing, made her knowen to him at last: The end whereof lle keepe vitill another cast.

# Cant. LX.

# 

Calidore hosses with Meliba and loues fayre Pastorell; Coridon enuies him, yet he for ill rewards him well.

#### \$150,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000

Now turne againe my teme thou iolly swayne, Backe to the furrow which I lately left; I lately left a furrow, one or twayne Vaplough'd, the which my coulter hath not cleft:

Yet seem'd the soyle both favre and frutefull.

Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frutefull eft,

As I it past, that were too great a shame, That so rich frute should be from vs bereft; Besides the great dishonour and defame, Which should befall to *Calidores* immortall name. Great trauell hath the gentle Calidore
And toyle endured, sith I left him last
Sewing the Blatant beast, which I forbore
To finish then, for other present hast.
Full many pathes and perils he hath past
Through hils, through dales, through forests,
and through plaines

In that same quest which fortune on him cast, Which he atchieued to his owne great gaines, Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse paines.

So sharply he the Monster did pursew,
That day nor night he suffred him to rest,
Ne rested he himselfe but natures dew,
For dread of daunger, not to be redrest,
If he for slouth forslackt so famous quest.
Him first from court he to the citties coursed,
And from the citties to the townes him prest,
And from the townes into the countric forsed,
And from the country back to private farmes
he scorsed.

From thence into the open fields he fled, Whereas the Heardeswere keeping of their neat, Andshepheards singing to their flockes, that fed, Layes of sweete lone and youthes delightful heat:

Him thether eke for all his fearefull threat He followed fast, and chaced him so nie. Thattothefolds, where sheepeat night doe seat, And to the litle cots, where shepherds he In winters wrathfull time, he forced him to flie.

There on a day as he pursew'd the chace, He chaunst to spy a sort of shepheard groomes, Playing on pypes, and caroling apace, The whyles their beasts there in the budded broomes

Beside them fed, and nipt the tender bloomes: For other worldly wealth they cared nought. To whom Sir Calidore yet sweating comes, And them to tell him courteously besought, If such a beast they saw, which he had thether brought.

They answer'd him, that no such beast they saw, Nor any wicked feend, that mote offend Their happie flockes, nor daunger to them draw: But if that such there were (as none they kend) They prayd high God him farre from them to send.

Then one of them him seeing so to sweat, After his rusticke wise, that well he weend, Offred him drinke, to quench his thirstie heat, And if he hungry were, him offred eke to eat

The knight was nothing nice, where was no need, And tooke their gentle offer: so adowne They prayd him sit, and gaue him for to feed Such homely what, as serues the simple clowne, That doth despise the dainties of the towne. The having fed his fill, he there besyde Saw a faire damzell, which did weare a crowne Of sundry flowres, with silken ribbands tyde, Yclad in home-made greene that her owne hands had dyde.

Vpon a litle hillocke she was placed Higher then all the rest, and round about Enuiron'd with a girland, goodly graced, Of louely lasses, and them all without The lustic shepheard swaynes sate in a rout, The which did pype and sing her prayses dew, And oft reioyce, and oft for wonder shout, As if some miracle of heavenly hew Were downe to them descended in that earthly

And soothly sure she was full fayre of face, And perfectly well shapt in enery lim. Which she did more augment with modest grace. And comely carriage of her count'nance trim, That all the rest like lesser lamps did dim: Who her admiring as some heavenly wight, Did for their soueraine goddesse her esteeme, And caroling her name both day and night, The fayrest Pastorella her by name did hight.

Ne was there heard, ne was there shepheards swayne

But her did honour, and eke many a one Burnt in her loue, and with sweet pleasing payne Full many a night for her did sigh and grone: But most of all the shepheard Coridon For her did languish, and his deare life spend; Yet neither she for him, nor other none Did care a whit, ne any liking lend:

Though meane her lot, yet higher did her mind ascend.

Her whyles Sir Calidore there vewed well, And markt her rare demeanure, which him seemed

So farre the meane of shephcards to excell, As that he in his mind her worthy deemed, To be a Princes Paragone esteemed, He was vnwares surprisd in subtile bands Of the blynd boy, ne thence could be redeemed By any skill out of his cruell hands, Caught like the bird, which gazing still on others

stands.

So stood he still long gazing thereupon, Ne any will had thence to moue away, Although his quest were farre afore him gon: But after he had fed, yet did he stay, And sate there still, vntill the flying day Was farre forth spent, discoursing diversly Of sundry things, as fell, to worke delay: And euermore his speach he did apply To th'heards, but meant them to the damzels fantazy.

By this the moystie night approching fast, Her deawy humour gan on th'earth to shed, That warn'd the shepheards to their homes to hast

Their tender flocks, now being fully fed. For feare of wetting them before their bed, Then came to them a good old aged syre, Whose silver lockes bedeckt his beard and hed, With shepheards hooke in hand, and fit attyre. That wild the damzell rise; the day did now expyre.

He was to weet by common voice esteemed The father of the fayrest *Pastorell*, And of her selfe in very deede so deemed; Yet was not so, but as old stories tell Found her by fortune, which to him befell, In th'open fields an Infant left alone, And taking vp brought home, and noursed well As his owne chyld; for other he had none, That she in tract of time accompted was his owne.

She at his bidding meekely did arise, And streight vnto her litle flocke did fare: Then all the rest about her rose likewise, And each his sundrie sheepe with severall care Gathered together, and them homeward bare: Whylest euericone with helping hands did strine Amongst themselves, and did their labours

To helpe faire *Pastorella*, home to drive Her fleecie flocke; but Coridon most helpe did

But Melibæe (so hight that good old man) Now seeing Calidore left all alone, And night arrived hard at hand, began Him to inuite vnto his simple home; Which though it were a cottage clad with lome, And all things therein meane, yet better so To lodge, then in the saluage fields to rome. The knight full gladly soone agreed thereto. Being his harts owne wish, and home with him did go.

There he was welcom'd of that honest syre. And of his aged Beldame homely well: Who him besought himselfe to disattyre, And rest himselfe, till supper time befell. By which home came the fayrest Pastorell, After her flocke she in their fold had tyde. And supper readie dight, they to it fell With small adoe, and nature satisfyde, The which doth litle craue contented to abyde.

The when they had their hunger slaked well. And the fayre mayd the table ta'ne away. The gentle knight, as he that did excell In courtesie, and well could doe and say. For so great kindnesse as he found that day. Gan greatly thanke his host and his good wife; And drawing thence his speach another way, Gin highly to commend the happie life. Which Shepheards lead, without debate or bitter strife.

How much (sayd he) more happie is the state, In which ye father here doe dwell at ease, Leading a life so free and fortunate, From all the tempests of these worldly seas. Which tosse the rest in daungerous disease: Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked enmittee Doe them afflict, which no man can appease, That certes I your happinesse enuie. And wish my lot were plast in such felicitie.

Surely my sonne (then answer'd he againe) If happie, then it is in this intent, That having small, yet doe I not complaine Of want, ne wish for more it to augment, But doe my self, with that I have, content: So taught of nature, which doth litle need Of forreine helpes to lifes due nourishment: The fields my food, my flocke my rayment breed: No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed.

Nor am enuyde of any one therefore;

Therefore I doe not any one enuy,

They that have much, feare much to loose thereby. And store of cares doth follow riches store. The litle that I have, growes dayly more Without my care, but onely to attend it; My lambes doe euery yeare increase their score, And my flockes father daily doth amend it. What have I, but to praise th'Almighty, that doth send it?

To them, that list, the worlds gay showes I leave, And to great ones such follies doe forgiue. Which of through pride do their owne perill [driue And through ambition downe themselves doe

To sad decay, that might contented live. Me no such cares nor combrous thoughtsoflend, Ne once my minds vnmoued quiet grieue. But all the night in siluer sleepe I spend, And all the day, to what I list, I doe attend.

Sometimes I hunt the Fox, the vowed toe Vnto my Lambes, and him dislodge away; Sometime the fawne I practise from the Doc. Or from the Goat her kidde how to conuay: Another while I baytes and nets display, The birds to catch, or fishes to beguyle: And when I wearie am. I downe doe lav My limbes in euery shade, to rest from toyle, And drinke of enery brooke, when thirst my throte doth boyle.

The time was once, in my first prime of yeares. When pride of youth forth pricked my desire, That I disdain'd amongst mine equal peares To follow sheepe, and shepheards base attire: For further fortune then I would inquire. And leaving home, to roiall court I sought; Where I did sell my selfe for yearely hire, And in the Princes gardin daily wrought: There I beheld such vainenesse, as I neuer thought.

With sight whereof soone cloyd, and long deluded With idle hopes, which them doe entertaine, After I had ten yeares my selfe excluded From native home, and spent my youthin vaine, I gan my follies to my selfe to plaine, And this sweet peace, whose lacke did then appeare.

Tho backe returning to my sheepe againe, I from then ceforth have learn'd to love more deare This lowly quiet life, which I inherite here.

Whylest thus he talkt, the knight with greedy eare Hong still vpon his melting mouth attent; Whosesensefullwordsempierst his hartsoneare, That he was rapt with double rauishment, Both of his speach that wrought him great content,

And also of the object of his vew, On which his hungry eye was alwayes bent; That twixt his pleasing tongue, and her faire hew, He lost himselfe, and like one halfe entraunced grew.

Yet to occasion meanes, to worke his mind, And to insinuate his harts desire. He thus replyde; Now surely syre, I find, That all this worlds gay showes, which weadmire, Be but vaine shadowes to this safe retyre Of life, which here in lowlinesse ve lead. Fearelesse of foes, or fortunes wrackfull vre. Which tosseth states, and vnder foot doth tread The mightie ones, affrayd of every chaunges dread.

That even I which daily doe behold The glorie of the great, mongst whom I won, And now have prou'd, what happinesse ye hold In this small plot of your dominion, Now loath great Lordship and ambition : And wish the heavens so much had graced mee. As graunt me liue in like condition; Or that my fortunes might transposed bee From pitch of higher place, vnto this low degree.

In vaine (said then old Melibæ) doe men The heavens of their fortunes fault accuse. Sith they know best, what is the best for them: For they to each such fortune doe diffuse, As they doe know each can most aptly vse. For not that, which men couet most, is best, Nor that thing worst, which men do most

But fittest is, that all contented rest With that they hold: each hath his fortune in his brest.

It is the mynd, that maketh good or ill, That maketh wretch or happie, rich or poore: For some, that hath abundance at his will, Hath not enough, but wants in greatest store: And other, that hath litle, askes no more, But in that litle is both rich and wise. For wisedome is most riches; fooles therefore They are, which fortunes doe by yowes deuize. Sith each vnto himselfe his life may fortunize.

Since then in each mans self (said Calidore) It is, to fashion his owne lyfes estate, Giue leaue awhyle, good father, in this shore To rest my barcke, which hath bene beaten late With stormes of fortune and tempestuous fate, In seas of troubles and of toylesome paine, That whether quite from them for to retrate I shall resolue, or backe to turne againe, I may here with your selfe some small repose obtaine.

Not that the burden of so bold a guest Shall chargefull be, or chaunge to you at all: For your meane food shall be my daily feast. And this your cabin both my bowre and hall Besides for recompense hereof, I shall You well reward, and golden guerdon giue. That may perhaps you better much withall. And in this quiet make you safer live. So forth he drew much gold, and toward him it

driue.

But the good man, nought tempted with the offer Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away, And thus bespake: Sir knight, your bounteous proffer

Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display That mucky masse, the cause of mens decay, That mote empaire my peace with daungers But if ye algates couet to assay Idread. This simple sort of life, that shepheards lead, Be it your owne: our rudenesse to your selfe aread.

So there that night Sir Calidore did dwell, And long while after, whilest him list remaine, Dayly beholding the faire Pastorell, And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane. During which time he did her entertaine With all kind courtesies, he could inuent; And euery day, her companie to gaine, When to the field she went, he with her went: So for to quench his fire, he did it more augment.

But she that neuer had acquainted beene With such queint vsage, fit for Queenes and Kings,

Ne euer had such knightly seruice seene. But being bred vnder base shepheards wings, Had euer learn'd to loue the lowly things, Did litle whit regard his courteous guize, But cared more for Colins carolings Then all that he could doe, or euer denize: His layes, his loues, his lookes she did them all despize.

Which Calidore perceiving, thought it best To chaunge the manner of his loftie looke: And doffing his bright armes, himselfe addrest In shepheards weed, and in his hand he tooke, In stead of steelehead speare, a shepheards hooke,

That who had seene him then, would have bethought

On Phrygian Paris by Plexippus brooke, When he the love of favre Oenone sought. What time the golden apple was vnto him brought.

So being clad, vnto the fields he went With the faire Pastorella enery day. And kept her sheepe with diligent attent. Watching to drive the rauenous Wolfe away, The whylest at pleasure she mote sport and play; And every evening helping them to fold: And otherwhiles for need, he did assay In his strong hand their rugged teats to hold, And out of them to presse the milke: loue so

much could.

Which seeing Coridon, who her likewise Long time had lou'd, and hop'd her loue to

He much was troubled at that straungers guize, And many gealous thoughts conceiv'd in vaine, That this of all his labour and long paine Should reap the haruest, ere it ripened were. That made him scoule, and pout, and oft com-

Of Pastorell to all the shepheards there, That she did loue a stranger swayne then him more dere.

And euer when he came in companie. Where Calidore was present, he would loure, And byte his lip, and euen for gealousie Was readie oft his owne hart to denoure, Impatient of any paramoure: Who on the other side did seeme so farre From malicing, or grudging his good houre, That all he could, he graced him with her, Ne euer shewed signe of rancour or of iarre.

And oft, when Coridon vnto her brought Or litle sparrowes, stolen from their nest, Or wanton squirrels, in the woods farre sought, Or other daintie thing for her addrest, He would commend his guift, and make the best.

Yet she no whit his presents did regard, Ne him could find to fancie in her brest: This newcome shepheard had his market mard. Old loue is little worth when new is more prefard.

One day when as the shepheards waynes together Were met, to make their sports and merrie glee, As they are wont in faire sunshynie weather, The whiles their flockes in shadowes shrouded

They fell to daunce: then did they all agree, That Colin Clout should pipe as one most fit; And Calidore should lead the ring, as hee That most in Pastorellaes grace did sit.

But Calidore of courteous inclination Tooke Coridon, and set him in his place, That he should lead the daunce, as was his fashion:

For Coridon could daunce, and trimly trace. And when as Pastorella, him to grace, Her flowry garlond tooke from her owne head. And plast on his, he did it soone displace, And did it put on Coridons in stead:

Then Coridon woxe frollicke, that earst seemed dead.

Another time, when as they did dispose To practise games, and maisteries to try, They for their Judge did Pastorella chose; A garland was the meed of victory. There Coridon forth stepping openly, Did chalenge Calidore to wrestling game: For he through long and perfect industry, Therein well practisd was, and in the same Thought sure t'auenge his grudge, and worke his foe great shame.

But Calidore he greatly did mistake ; For he was strong and mightily stiffe pight, That with one fall his necke he almost brake, And had he not voon him fallen light, His dearest joynt he sure had broken quight. Then was the oaken crowne by Pastorell Giuen to Calidore, as his due right; But he, that did in courtesie excell, Gaue it to Coridon, and said he wonne it well.

Thus did the gentle knight himselfe abeare Amongst that rusticke rout in all his deeds, That even they, the which his rivals were. Could not maligne him, but commend him needs:

For courtesie amongst the rudest breeds Good will and fauour. So it surely wrought With this faire Mayd, and in her mynde the

Of perfect loue did sow, that last forth brought The fruite of ioy and blisse, though long time dearely bought.

Thus Calidore continu'd there long time, To winne the loue of the faire Pastorell; Which having got, he vsed without crime Or blamefull blot, but menaged so well, That he of all the rest, which there did dwell, Was fauoured, and to her grace commended. But what straunge fortunes vnto him befell, Ere he attain'd the point by him intended, Thereat frown'd Coridon, and his lip closely bit. Shall more conveniently in other place be ended.

# Cant. X

## \$1957957957957957957957957957957957957

Calidore sees the Graces daunce, To Colins melody: The whiles his Pastorell is led. Into captivity

#### 

Who now does follow the foule Blatant Beast, Whilest Calidore does follow that faire Mayd, Vninyndfull of his vow and high beheast, Which by the Faery Queene was on him layd, That he should neuer leaue, nor be delayd From chacing him, till he had it attchieued? But now entrapt of loue, which him betrayd, He mindeth more, how he may be relieued With grace from her, whose loue his heart hath sore engrieued.

That from henceforth he meanes no more to sew His former quest, so full of toile and paine; Another quest, another game in vew He hath, the guerdon of his loue to gaine: With whom he myndes for euer to remaine, And set his rest amongst the rusticke sort, Rather then hunt still after shadowes vaine Of courtly fauour, fed with light report

Of every blaste, and sayling alwaies in the port.

Ne certes mote he greatly blamed be,
From so high step to stoupe vnto so low.
For who had tasted once (as oft did he)
The happy peace, which there doth ouerflow,
Andprou'd the perfect pleasures, which doegrow
Amongst poore hyndes, in hils, in woods, in dals,
Would neuer more delight in painted show
Of such false blisse, as there is set for stales,
T'entrap vnwary fooles in their eternall bales.

For what hath all that goodly glorious gaze
Like to one sight, which Calidore did vew?
The glaunce whereof their dimmed cies would
daze,

That neuer more they should endure the shew Of that sunne-shine, that makes them looke

Ne ought in all that world of beauties rare, (Saue onely Glorianaes heauenly hew To which what can compare?) can it compare: The which as commeth now, by course I will declare.

One day as he did raunge the fields abroad, Whilest his faire Pastorella was elsewhere, Hechaunst to come, far from all peoples troad, Vnto a place, whose pleasaunce did appere To passe all others, on the earth which were: For all that euer was by natures skill Deuized to worke delight, was gathered there, And there by her were poured forth at fill, As if this to adorne, she all the rest did pill.

It was an hill plaste in an open plaine,
That round about was bordered with a wood
Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th'earth to
disdaine.

In which all trees of honour stately stood, And did all winter as in sommer bud, Spredding paulilons for the birds to bowre, Which in their lower braunches sung aloud; And in their tops the soring hauke did towre, Sitting like King of fowlesin maiesty and powre.

And at the foote thereof, a gentle flud
His siluer waues did softly tumble downe,
Vinnard with ragged mosse or filthy mud,
Ne mote wylde beastes, ne mote the ruder
clowne

Theretoapproch, ne filth mote therein drowne. But Nymphesand Faeries by the bancks didst. In the woods shade, which did the waters crowne.

Keeping all noysome things away from it, And to the waters fall tuning their accents fit.

And on the top thereof a spacious plaine
Did spred it selfe, to serue to all delight,
Either to daunce, when they to daunce would

Or else to course about their bases light;
Ne ought there wanted, which for pleasure might
Desired be, or thence to banish bale;
So pleasauntly the hill with equall hight.
Did seeme to ouerlooke the lowly vale;
Therefore it rightly cleeped was mount Acidale

They say that Venus, when she did dispose Her selfe to pleasaunce, vsed to resort Vnto this place, and therein to repose And rest her selfe, as in a gladsome port, Or with the Graces there to play and sport: That euen her owne Cytheron, though in it She vsed most to keepe her royall court, And in her soueraine Maiesty to sit, She in regard hereof refused and thought vnfit.

Vnto this place when as the Elfin Knight Approacht, him seemed that the merry sound Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight, Andmany feete fast thumping th'hollow ground, That through the woods their Ecchodid rebound. He nigher drew, to weete what mote it be; There he a troupe of Ladies dauncing found Full merrily, and making gladfull glee, And in the midst a Shepheard piping he did see.

He durst not enter into th'open greene,
For dread of them vnwares to be descryde,
For breaking of their daunce, if he were seene;
But in the couert of the wood did byde,
Beholding all, yet of them vnespyde.
There he did see, that pleased much his sight.
That even he him selfe his eyes enuyde,
An hundred naked maidens lilly white,
All raunged in a ring, and dauncing in delight.

12

All they without were raunged in a ring, And daunced round; but in the midst of them three other Ladies did both daunce and sing, Thewhilest the rest them round about didhemme, And like a girlond did in compasse stemme: And in the middest of those same three, was placed

Another Damzell, as a precious gemme, Another a ring most richly well enchaced, That with her goodly presence all the rest much graced.

graceu.

Looke how the Crowne, which Ariadne wore Vpon her youry forehead that same day, That Theseus her vnto his bridale bore, When the bold Centaures made that bloudy fray, With the fierce Lapithes, which did them dismay; Being now placed in the firmament, Through the bright heauen doth her beams display.

And is vnto the starres an ornament, Which round about her moue in order excellent.

Such was the beauty of this goodly band,
Whose sundry parts were here too long to tell:
But she that in the midst of them did stand,
Seem'd all the rest in beauty to excell,
Crownd with a rosie girlond, that right well
Did her beseeme And euer, as the crew
About her daunst, sweet flowres, that far did
smell,

And fragrant odours they vppon her threw; But most of all, those three did her with gifts endew. 15

Those were the Graces, daughters of delight, Handmaides of Venus, which are wont to haunt Vppon this hill, and daunce the reday and night: Those three to men all gifts of grace do graunt, And all, that Venus in her selfe doth vaunt, Is borrowed of them. But that faire one, That in the midst was placed parauaunt, Was she to whom that shepheard pypt alone, That made him pipe so merrily, as neuer none,

16

She was to weete that iolly Shepheards lasse, Which piped there vnto that merry rout, That iolly shepheard, which there piped, was Poore Colin Clout(who knowes not Colin Clout()) He pypt apace, whilest they him daunst about. Pype iolly shepheard, pype thou now apace Vnto thy loue, that made thee low to lout: Thy loue is present there with thee in place, Thy loue is there aduaunst to be another Grace.

17

Much wondred Calidore at this straunge sight. Whose like before his eye had neuer scene, And standing long astonished in spright, And rapt with pleasaunce, wist not what to weene:

Whether it were the traine of beauties Queene, Or Nymphes, or Faeries, or enchaunted show, With which his eyes mote haue deluded been. Therefore resoluing, what it was, to know, Out of the wood he rose, and toward them did

go. 18

But soone as he appeared to their vew,
They vanisht all away out of his sight,
And cleaneweregone, which way hencuer knew;
All saue the shepheard, who for fell despight
Of that displeasure, broke his bag-pipe quight,
And made great mone for that vnhappy turne.
But Calidore, though no lesse sory wight,
For that mishap, yet seeing him to mourne,
Drew neare, that he the truth of all by him mote
learne.

10

And first him greeting, thus wnto him spake, Haile iolly shepheard, which thy ioyous dayes Here leadest in this goodly merry make, Frequented of these gentle Nymphes alwayes, Which to thee flocke, to heare thy louely layes; Tell me, what mote these dainty Damzels be, Which here with thee doe make their pleasant playes?

Right happy thou, that mayst them freely see : But why when I them saw, fled they away from

me?

Not I so happy, answerd then that swaine, As thou vnhappy, which them thence didst chace.

Whom by no meanes thou canst recall againe. For being gone, none can them bring in place. But whom they of them selves list so to grace. Right sory I, (saide then Sir Calidore.) That my ill fortune did them hence displace, But since things passed none may now restore, Tell me, what were they all, whose lacke thee grieues so sore.

Tho gan that shepheard thus for to dilate; Then wote thou shepheard, whatsoeuer thou bee.

That all those Ladies, which thou sawest late. Are Venus Damzels, all within her fee, But differing in honour and degree: They all are Graces, which on her depend, Besides a thousand more, which ready bee Her to adorne, when so she forth doth wend: But those three in the midst, doe chiefe on her attend.

They are the daughters of sky-ruling Ioue. By him begot of faire Eurynome, The Oceans daughter, in this pleasant groue, As he this way comming from feastfull glee, Of Thetis wedding with Eacidee, In sommers shade him selfe here rested weary. The first of them hight mylde Euphrosyne, Next faire Aglaia, last Thalia merry: Sweete Goddesses all three which me in mirth do cherry.

These three on men all gracious gifts bestow, Which decke the body or adorne the mynde, To make them louely or well fauoured show, As comely carriage, entertainement kynde, Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that bynde, And all the complements of curtesie: They teach vs, how to each degree and kynde We should our selves demeane, to low, to hie: To friends, to foes, which skill men call Civility.

Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme to smile, That we likewise should mylde and gentle be, And also naked are, that without guile Or false dissemblaunce all them plaine may see, Simple and true from couert malice free: And eeke them selves so in their daunce they

That two of them still froward seem'd to bee, But one still towards shew'd her selfe afore: That good should from vs goe, then come in greater store.

Such were those Goddesses, which we did see: But that fourth Mayd, which there amidst them traced.

Who can aread, what creature mote she bee. Whether a creature, or a goddesse graced With heavenly gifts from heven first enraced: But what so sure she was, she worthy was. To be the fourth with those three other placed: Yet was she certes but a countrey lasse, Yet she allother countrey lasses farre did passe.

So farre as doth the daughter of the day, All other lesser lights in light excell, So farre doth she in beautyfull array, Aboue all other lasses beare the bell. Ne lesse in vertue that beseemes her well. Doth she exceede the rest of all her race, For which the Graces that here wont to dwell, Haue for more honor brought her to this place, And graced her so much to be another Grace.

Another Grace she well deserues to be, In whom so many Graces gathered are, Excelling much the meane of her degree: Divine resemblaunce, beauty soueraine rare, Firme Chastity, that spight ne blemish dare: All which she with such courtesie doth grace, That all her peres cannot with her compare, But quite are dimmed, when she is in place. She made me often pipe and now to pipe apare.

Sunne of the world, great glory of the sky, That all the earth doest lighten with thy rayes, Great Gloriana, greatest Maiesty, Pardon thy shepheard, mongst so many layes, As he hath sung of thee in all his dayes. To make one minime of thy poore handmayd. And vnderneath thy feete to place her prayse. That when thy glory shall be farre displayd To future age of her this mention may be made.

When thus that shepherd ended had his speach, Sayd Calidore: Now sure it yrketh mee, That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse breach, As now the author of thy bale to be,

Thus to bereaue thy loues deare sight from

But gentle Shepheard pardon thou my shame, Who rashly sought that, which I mote not see. Thus did the courteous Knight excuse his

And to recomfort him, all comely meanes did frame.

In such discourses they together spent Long time, as fit occasion forth them led; With which the Knight him selfe did much content.

And with delight his greedy fancy fed,
Both of his words, which he with reason red;
And also of the place, whose pleasures rare
With such regard his sences rauished,
That thence, he had no will away to fare,
But wisht, that with that shepheard he mote
dwelling share.

3

But that enuenimd sting, the which of yore, His poysnous point deepe fixed in his hart Had left, now gan afresh to rancle sore, And to renue the rigour of his smart: Which to recure, no skill of Leaches art Mote him auaile, but to returne againe To his wounds worker, that with louely dart Dinting his brest, had bred his restlesse paine, Like as the wounded Whale to shore flies from the maine.

32
So taking leaue of that same gentle swaine, He backe returned to his rusticke wonne, Where his faire Pastorella did remaine:
To whome in sort, as he at first begonne, He daily did apply him selfe to donne and dewfull seruice voide of thoughts impure: Se any paines ne perill did he shonne, By which he might her to his loue allure, And liking in her yet vntamed heart procure

2.2

And euermore the shepheard Coridon,
What euer thing he did her to aggrate,
Did striue to match with strong contention,
And all his paines did closely emulate;
Whether it were to caroll, as they sate
Keeping their sheepe, or games to exercize,
Or to present her with their labours late;
Through which if any grace chaunst to arize
Tohun, the Shepheardstreight withicalousi did
trize.

31

One day as they all three together went
To the greene wood, to gather strawberies,
There chaunst to them a dangerous accident;
A Tigre forth out of the wood did rise,
That with fell clawes full of fierce gourmandize,

And greedy mouth, wide gaping like hellgate, Did runne at *Pastorell* her to surprize: Whom she beholding, now all desolate Gan cry to them aloud, to helpe her all too late 35

Which Coridon first hearing, ran in hast
To reskue her, but when he saw the feend,
Through cowherd feare he fled away as fast,
Ne durst abide the daunger of the end;
His life he steemed dearer then his frend.
But Calidore soone comming to her ayde,
When he the beast saw ready now to rend
His loues deare spoile, in which his heart was
prayde.

He ran at him enraged in stead of being trayde.

36

He had no weapon, but his shepheards hocke, To serue the vengeaunce of his wrathfull will, With which so sternely he the monster strooke, That to the ground astonished he fell; Whence ere he could recon'r, he did him quell, And hewing off his head, \( he \rangle \) it presented Before the feete of the faire Pastorell; Who scarcely yet from former feare exempted, Athousand times him thankt, that had her death preuented.

37
From that day forth she gan him to affect.
And daily more her fauour to augment;
But Coridon for cowherdize reject,
Fit to keepe sheepe, vnfit for loues content;
The gentle heart scornes base disparagement.
Yet Calidore did not despise him quight,
But vsde him friendly for further intent,
That by his fellowship, he colour might
Both his estate, and lone from skill of any wight.

28

So well he wood her, and so well he wrought her, With humble seruice, and with daily sute, That at the last vnto his will he brought her; Which he so wisely well did prosecute, That of his loue he reapt the timely frute, And loyed long in close felicity: [brute, Till fortune fraught with malice, blinde, and That enuics louers long prosperity, Blew vp a bitter storme of foule aduersity.

It fortuned one day, when Calidore
Was hunting in the woods (as was his trade)

A lawlesse people, Brigarts hight of yore, That neuer vsde to liue by plough nor spade, But fed on spoile and booty, which they made Vpon their neighbours, which did nigh them border,

The dwelling of these shepheards did inuade, And spoyld their houses, and them selues did murder:

And droue away their flocks, with other much disorder.

Amongst the rest, the which they then did pray, They spould old Melibee of all he had. And all his people captine led away, Mongst which this lucklesse may daway was lad. Faire Pastorella, sorrowfull and sad, Most sorrowfull, most sad, that euer sight, Now made the spoile of theeues and Brigants bad. Which was the conquest of the gentlest Knight, That euer liu'd, and th'onely glory of his might.

With them also was taken Coridon. And carried captine by those threues away; Who in the couert of the night, that none Mote them descry, nor reskue from their pray, Vnto their dwelling did them close conuay. Their dwelling in a little Island was, Couered with shrubby woods, in which no way Appeard for people in nor out to pas, Nor any footing fynde for ouergrowen gras.

For vnderneath the ground their way was made, Through hollow caues, that no man mote discouer

For the thicke shrubs, which did them alwaies

From view of living wight, and covered over: But darkenesse dred and daily night did houer Through all the inner parts, wherein they dwelt, Ne lightned was with window, nor with louer. But with continuall candlelight, which delt A doubtfull sense of things, not so well seene, as felt.

Hither those Brigants brought their present pray, And kept them with continuall watch and ward, Meaning so soone, as they convenient may, For slaves to sell them, for no small reward, To merchants, which them kept in bondage hard.

Or sold againe. Now when faire Pastorell Into this place was brought, and kept with gard Of griesly theeues, she thought her self in hell, Where with such damned fiends she should in darknesse dwell.

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment, And pittiful complaints, which there she made, Whereday and night she nought did but lament Her wretched life, shut vp in deadly shade. And waste her goodly beauty, which did fade Like to a flowre, that feeles no heate of sunne, Which may her feeble leaves with comfort glade. But what befell her in that theeuish wonne, Will in an other Canto better be begonne.

# Cant. XI.

#### 

The theeues fall out for Pastorell. Whilest Melibee is slaine: Her Calidore from them redeemes, And bringeth backe againe.

#### 

The loyes of loue, if they should euer last, Without affliction or disquietnesse, That worldly chaunces doe amongst them cast, Would be on earth too great a blessednesse. Liker to heauen, then mortall wretchednesse. Therefore the winged God, to let men weet, That here on earth is no sure happinesse, A thousand sowres hath tempred with one

To make it seeme more deare and dainty, as is meet.

Like as is now befalne to this faire Mayd, Faire Pastorell, of whom is now my song, Who being now in dreadfull darknesse lavd, Amongst those theeues, which her in bondage strong

Detaynd, yet Fortune not with all this wrong Contented, greater mischiefe on her threw, And sorrowes heapt on her in greater throng. That who so heares her heauinesse, would rew And pitty her sad plight, so chang'd from pleasaunt hew.

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens remayned, Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts vnrest, It so befell (as Fortune had ordayned) That he, which was their Capitaine profest. And had the chiefe commaund of all the rest, One day as he did all his prisoners vew. With lustfull eyes, beheld that louely guest, Faire Pastorella, whose sad mournefull hew Like the faire Morning clad in misty fog did shew.

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was fired, And inly burnt with flames most raging whot, That her alone he for his part desired Of all the other pray, which they had get, And her in mynde did to him selfe allot. From that day forth he kyndnesse to her showed, And sought her loue, by all the meanes he mote; With looks, with words, with gifts he oft her wowed:

And mixed threats among, and much vnto her vowed.

But all that euer he could doe or say, Her constant mynd could not a whit remoue, Nor draw vnto the lure of his lewd lay, To graunt him fauour, or afford him loue. Yet ceast he not to sew and all waies proue, By which he mote accomplish his request, Saying and doing all that mote behoue: Ne day nor night he suffred her to rest. But her all night did watch, and all the day molest.

At last when him she so importune saw. Fearing least he at length the raines would lend Vnto his lust, and make his will his law. Sith in his powre she was to foe or frend, She thought it best, for shadow to pretend Some shew of fauour, by him gracing small, That she thereby mote either freely wend, Or at more ease continue there his thrall: A little well is lent, that gaineth more withall.

So from thenceforth, when loue he to her made, With better tearmes she did him entertaine, Which gaue him hope, and did him halfe

That he in time her ioyaunce should obtaine. But when she saw, through that small fauours gaine,

That further, then she willing was, he prest, She found no meanes to barre him, but to faine A sodaine sickenesse, which her sore opprest, And made vnfit to serue his lawlesse mindes by hest.

By meanes whereof she would not him permit Once to approch to her in privity, But onely mongst the rest by her to sit, Mourning the rigour of her malady. And seeking all things meete for remedy. But she resolu'd no remedy to fynde, Nor better cheare to shew in misery, Till Fortune would her captive bonds vnbynde, Her sickenesse was not of the body but the mynde.

During which space that she thus sicke did lie. It chaunst a sort of merchants, which were

To skim those coastes, for bondmen there to buy, And by such trafficke after gaines to hunt, Arrived in this Isle though bare and blunt, T'inquire for slaues; where being readie met By some of these same theeues at the instant brunt.

Were brought vnto their Captaine, who was set By his faire patients side with sorrowfull regret. SPENSER

10 To whom they shewed, how those marchants were Arriu'd in place, their bondslaues for to buy,

And therefore prayd, that those same captives

Mote to them for their most commodity Be sold, and mongst them shared equally This their request the Captaine much appalled; Yet could he not their just demaund deny, And willed streight the slaues should forth be called.

And soldfor most advantage not to be for stalled.

Then forth the good old Melibæ was brought. And Coridon, with many other moe, Whom they before in diverse spoyles had caught: All which he to the marchants sale did showe. Tillsome, which did the sundry prisoners knowe, Gan to inquire for that faire shepherdesse. Which with the rest they tooke not long agoc. And gan her forme and feature to expresse, The more t'augment her price, through praise of comlinesse.

To whom the Captaine in full angry wize Madeanswere, that the Maydof whom they spake, Was his owne purchase and his onely prize, With which none had to doe, ne ought partake. But he himselfe, which did that conquest make: Litle for him to have one silly lasse: [weake, Besides through sicknesse now so wan and That nothing meet in marchandise to passe. So shew'd them her, to proue how pale and weake she was.

The sight of whom, though now decayd and mard, And cke but hardly seene by candle-light, Yet like a Diamond of rich regard. In doubtfull shadow of the darkesome night, With starrie beames about her shining bright, These marchants fixed eyes did so amaze. That what through wonder, and what through A while on her they greedily did gaze, [delight, And did her greatly like, and did her greatly praize.

At last when all the rest them offred were. And prises to them placed at their pleasure, They all refused in regard of her, Ne ought would buy, how ever prisd with mea-Withoutenher, whose worth about all threasure They did esteeme, and offred store of gold. But then the Captaine fraught with more displeasure.

Bad them be still, his love should not be sold: The rest take if they would, he her to him would hold.

Therewith some other of the chiefest theeues Boldly him bad such iniurie forbeare; For that same mayd, how euer it him greeues, Should with the rest be sold before him theare, To make the prises of the rest more deare. That with great rage he stoutly doth denay; And fiercely drawing forthhis blade, dothsweare, That who so hardie hand on her doth lay, It dearely shall aby, and death for handsell pay.

16

Thus as they words amongst them multiply, They fall to strokes, the frute of too much talke, And the mad steele about doth fiercely fly, Not sparing wight, ne leauing any balke, But making way for death at large to walke: Who in the horror of the griesly night, In thousand dreadful shapes doth mongst them stalke.

And makes huge hauocke, whiles the candlelight Out quenched, leaues no skill nor difference of wight.

17

Like as a sort of hungry dogs ymet
About some carcase by the common way,
Doe fall together, stryuing each to get
The greatest portion of the greedic pray;
All on confused heapes themselues assay,
And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug, and
teare;

That who them sees, would wonder at their fray, And who sees not, would be affrayd to heare. Such was the conflict of those cruell *Brigants* there.

1

But first of all, their captiues they doe kill, Least they should ioyne against the weaker side, Or rise against the remnant at their will; Old Melibæ is slaine, and him beside His aged wife, with many others wide, But Coridon escaping craftily, Creepes forth of dores, whilst darknes him doth hide,

And flyes away as fast as he can hye, Ne stayeth leaue to take, before his friends doe dye.

But Pastorella, wofull wretched Elfe,
Was by the Captaine all this while defended,
Who minding more her safety then himselfe,
His target alwayes ouer her pretended;
By meanes whereof, that mote not be amended,
He at the length was slaine, and layd on ground,
Yet holding fast twixt both his armes extended
Fayre Pastorell, who with the selfesame wound
Launcht through the arme, fell down with him
in drerie swound.

20

There lay she couered with confused preasse Of carcases, which dying on her fell. Tho when as he was dead, the fray gan ceasse, And each to other calling, did compell To stay their cruell hands from slaughter fell, Sith they that were the cause of all, were gone. Thereto they all attonce agreed well, And lighting candles new, gan search anone, How many of their friends were slaine, how many fone.

Their Captaine there they cruelly found kild, And in his armes the dreary dying mayd, Like a sweet Angell twixt two clouds vphild: Her louely light was dimmed and decayd, With cloud of death vpon her eyes displayd; Yet did the cloud make euen that dimmed light

Seeme much more louely in that darknesse

layd, And twixt the twinckling of hereye-lids bright, To sparke out litle beames, like starres in fcggie

22

But when they mou'd the carcases aside, They found that life did yet in her remaine: Then all their helpes they busily applyde, To call the soule backe to her home againe; And wrought so well with labour and long paine.

That they to life recourred her at last.
Who sighing sore, as if her hart in twaine
Had riven bene, and all her hart strings brast.
With drearie drouping eyne lookt vp like one
aghast.

There she beheld, that sore her grieu'd to see, Her father and her friends about her lying, Her selfe sole left, a second spoyle to bee Of those, that hauing saued her from dying, Renew'd her death by timely death denying: What now is left her, but to wayle and weepe, Wringing her hands, and ruefully loud crying? Ne cared she her wound in teares to steepe, Albe with all their might those Brigants her did keepe.

But when they saw her now reliu'd againe,
They left her so, in charge of one the best
Of many worst, who with vnkind disdaine
And cruell rigour her did much molest;
Scarse yeelding her due food, or timely rest,
And scarsely suffring her infestred wound,
That sore her payn'd, by any to be drest.
So leaue we her in wretched thraldome bound,
And turne we backe to Calidore, where we him
found.

Who when he backe returned from the wood, And saw hisshepheards cottagespoyled quight, And his loue reft away, he wexed wood, And en can at that ruefull sight, That euen his hart for very fell despight, And his owne flesh he readie was to teare, He chauft, he grieu'd, he fretted, and he sight, And fared like a furious wyld Beare, Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being

Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being otherwhere.

Newight he found, to whom he might complaine, Ne wight he found, of whom he might inquire; That more increast the anguish of his paine. He sought the woods; but no man could see there: He sought the plaines; but could no tydings heare.

The woods did nought but ecchoes vaine rebound;

The playnes all waste and emptie did appeare: Where wont the shepheards oft their pypes resound,

An I feed an hundred flocks, there now not one he found.

At last as there he romed vp and downe, He chaunst one comming towards him to spy, That seem'd to be some sorie simple clowne, Withragged weedes, and lockes vpstaring hye, As if he did from some late daunger fly, And yet his feare did follow him behynd: Who as he vnto him approched nye, He mote perceiue by signes, which he did fynd,

That Coridon it was, the silly shepherds hynd.
28

Tho to him running fast, he did not stay
To greet him first, but askt where were the rest;
Where Pastorell? who full of fresh dismay,
And gushing forth in teares, was so opprest,
That he no word could speake, but smit his brest,
And vp to heauen his eyes fast streming threw.
Whereat the knight amaz'd, yet did not rest,
But askt againe, what ment that rufull hew;
Where was his Pastorell? where all the other
crew?

Wh well away (savd he then sighing sore)
That euer I did liue, this day to see,
This dismall day, and was not dead before,
Before I saw faire Pastorella dye.
Die? out alas! then Calidore did cry:
How could the death dare euer her to quell?
But read thou shepheard, read what destiny,
Or other dyrefull hap from heauen or hell
Hath wrought this wicked deed, doe feare away,
and tell.

Tho when the shepheard breathed had a whyle, He thus began: Where shall I then commence This wofull tale? or how those Brigants vyle, With cruell rage and dreadfull violence Spoyld all our cots, and caried vs from hence? Or how faire Pastorell should haue bene sold To marchants, but was sau'd with strong defence?

Or how those theeues, whilest one sought her to hold,

Feli all at ods, and fought through fury fierce and bold.

In that same conflict (woe is me) befell
This fatall chaunce, this dolefull accident,
Whose heauy tydings now I haue to tell.
Firstallthe captiues, which they here had hent,
Were by them slaine by generall consent;
Old Melibæ and his good wife withall
These eyes saw die, and dearely did lament:
But when the lot to Pastorell did fall,
Their Captaine long withstood, and did her
death forstall.

But what could he gainst all them doe alone? It could not boot, needs mote she die at last: I onely scapt through great confusione Of cryes and clamors, which amongst them past,

In dreadfull darknesse dreadfully aghast;
That better were with them to haue bene dead,
Then here to see all desolate and wast,
Despoyled of those joyes and jollyhead,
Which with those gentle shepherds here 1
wont to lead.

When Calidore these rucfull newes had raught, His hart quite deaded was with anguish great, And all his wits with doole were nigh distraught, That he his face, his head, his brest did beat, And death it selfe vnto himselfe did threat; Oft cursing th'heauens, that so cruell were To her, whose name he often did repeat; And wishing oft, that he were present there, When she was slaine, or had bene to her succour nere.

But after griefe awhile had had his course,
And spent it selfe in mourning, he at last
Began to mitigate his swelling sourse,
And in his mind with better reason cast,
How he might saue her life, if life did last;
Or if that dead, how he her death might wreake,
Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past;
Or if it to reuenge he were too weake,
Then for to die with her, and his liues threed to
breake.

The Coridon he prayd, sith he well knew
The readie way vnto that theeuish wonne,
To wend with him, and be his conduct trew
Vnto the place, to see what should be donne.
Buthe, whose hartthroughfeare was latefordonne,
Would not for ought be drawne to former drede,
But by all meanes the daungerknownedidshonne.
Yet Calidore so well him wrought with meed,
And faire bespoke with words, that he at last
agreed.

So forth they goe together (God before)
Both clad in shepheards weeds agreeably,
And both with shepheards hookes: But Calidore
Had vnderneath, him armed priuily.
Tho to the place when they approched nye,
They chaunst, vpon an hill not farre away,
Some flockes of sheepe and shepheards to espy;
To whom they both agreed to take their way,
In hope there newes to learne, how they mote

best assay.

Theredid they find, that which they did not feare, The selfe same flocks, the which those theeues had reft

From Melibæ and from themselues whyleare, And certaine of the theeues there by them left, The which for want of heards themselues then

Right well knew Coridon his owne late sheepe, And seeing them, for tender pittie wept: But when he saw the theeues, which did them keepe,

His hart gan fayle, albe he saw them all asleepe.

28

But Calidore recomforting his griefe, [swade; Thoughnot his feare; for nought may feare dis-Him hardly forward drew, whereas the thiefe Lay sleeping soundly in the bushes shade, Whom Coridon him counseld to inuade Now all vnwares, and take the spoyle away; But he, that in his mind had closely made A further purpose, would not so them slay, But gently waking them, gaue them the time of day.

Tho sitting downe by them vpon the greene, Of sundrie things he purpose gan to faine; That he by them might certaine tydings weene Of Pastorell, were she aliue or slaine. [againe, Mongst which the theeues them questioned What mister men, and eke from whence they were. To whom they answer'd, as did appertaine, That they were poore heardgroomes, the which whylere

Had from their maisters fled, and now sought

Whereof right glad they seem'd, and offer made To hyre them well, if they their flockes would keepe:

For they themselues were euill groomes, they sayd.

Vnwont with heards to watch, or pasture sheepe, But to forray the land, or scoure the deepe. Thereto they soone agreed, and earnest tooke, To keepe their flockes for litle hyre and chepe: For they for better hyre did shortly looke, So there all day they bode, till light the sky forsooke.

41

Tho when as towards darksome night it drew, Vnto their hellish dens those theeues them brought.

Whereshortly they in great acquaintance grew, And all the secrets of their entrayles sought. There did they find, contrarie to their thought, That Pastorell yet liu'd, but all the rest Were dead, right so as Coridon had taught: Whereof they both full glad and blyth did rest, But chiefly Calidore, whom griefe had most possest.

At length when they occasion fittest found, In dead of night, when all the theeues did rest After a late forray, and slept full sound, Sir Calidore him arm'd, as he thought best, Hauing of late by diligent inquest, Prouided him a sword of meanest sort: With which he streight went to the Captaines nest.

But Coridon durst not with him consort, Ne durst abide behind, for dread of worse effort.

43

When to the Caue they came, they found it fast: But Calidore with huge resistlesse might, The dores assayled, and the locks vpbrast. With noyse whereof the theefe awaking light. Vnto the entrance ran: where the bold knight Encountring him with small resistance slew: The whiles faire Pastorell through great affright Was almost dead, misdoubting least of new Some vprore were like that, which lately she did

vew.

But when as Calidore was comen in, And gan aloud for Pastorell to call, Knowing his voice although not heard long sin, She sudden was reviued therewithall, And wondrous ioy felt in her spirits thral!: Like him that being long in tempest tost, Looking each houre into deathes mouth to fall, At length espyes at hand the happie cost, Onwhich besafety hopes, that earst fear d to be lost.

Her gentle hart, that now long season past Had neuer ioyance felt, nor chearefull thought, Began some smacke of comfort new to tast, Like lyfull heat to nummed senses brought, And life to feele, that long for death had sought;

Ne lesse in hart reioyced *Calidore*, When he her found, but like to one distraught And robd of reason, towards her him bore, A thousand times embrast, and kist a thousand

more.

But now by this, with noyse of late vprore, The hue and cry was raysed all about; And all the *Brigarts* flocking in great store, Vnto the caue gan preasse, nought having dout Of that was doen, and entred in a rout. But *Calidore* in th'entry close did stand, And entertayning them with courage stout, Still slew the formost, that came first to hand, so long till all the entry was with bodies mand.

Tho when no more could nigh to him approch, He breath'd his sword, and rested him till day, Which when hespyde vpon the earth t'encroch, Through the dead carcases he made his way, Mongst which he found a sword of better say, With which he forth went into th'open light: Where all the rest for him did readie stay, And fierce assayling him, with all their might Gan all vpon him lay: there gan a dreadfull fight.

How many flyes in whottest sommers day Dosetze vpon some beast, whose flesh is bare, That all the place with swarmes do ouerlay, And with their litle stings right felly fare, So many theeues about him swarming are, All which do him assayle on euery side, And sore oppresse, ne any him doth spare: But he doth with his raging brond diude Their thickest troups, and round about him

scattreth wide.

Like as a Lion mongst an heard of dere,
Disperseth them to catch his choysest pray,
So did he fly amongst them here and there,
And all that nere him came, did hew and slay,
Till he had strowd with bodies all the way;
That none his daunger daring to abide,
Fled from his wrath, and did themselues conuay
Into their caues, their heads from death to
hide,
Ne any left, that victorie to him enuide.

Then backe returning to his dearest deare,
He her gan to recomfort, all he might,
With gladfull speaches, and with louely cheare,
And forth her bringing to the joyous light,
Whereof she long had lack the wishfull sight.
Deuiz'd all goodly meanes, from her to driue
The sad remembrance of her wretched plight.
So her yneath at last he did reuiue,

That long had lyen dead, and made againe

This doen, into those theeuish dens he went, And thence did all the spoyles and threasures take.

Which they from many long had robd and rent, But fortune now the victors meed did make; Of which the best he did his loue betake; And also all those flockes, which they before Had reft from Melibæ and from his make, He did them all to Coridon restore.

So droue them all away, and his loue with him

So droue them all away, and his love with him bore.

# Cant. XII.

#### \$

Fayre Pastorella by great hap her parents understands, Calidore doth the Blatant beast subdew, and bynd in bands.

#### 

Like as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde Directs her course vnto one certaine cost, Is met of many a counter winde and tyde, With which her winged speed is let and crost, And she her selfe in stormie surges tost; Yet making many a borde, and many a bay, Still winneth way, ne hath her compasse lost: Right so it fares with me in this long way, Whose course is often stayd, yet neuer is astray.

For all that hetherto hath long delayd
This gentle knight, from sewing his first quest,
Though out of course, yet hath not bene missayd.

To shew the courtesic by him profest, Euen vnto the lowest and the least. But now I come into my course againe, To his atchieuement of the Blatant beast; Who all this while at will did range and raine, Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him to restraine.

Sir Calidore when thus he now had raught Faire Pastorella from those Brigants powre, Vnto the Castle of Belgard her brought, Whereof was Lord the good Sir Bellamoure; Whowhylome wasin his youthes freshest flowre A lustie knight, as euer wielded speare, And had endured many a dreadfull stoure In bloudy battell for a Ladie deare, The fayrest Ladie then of all that living were.

4

Her name was Claribell, whose father hight The Lord of Many Ilands, farre renound For his great riches and his greater might. He through the wealth, wherein he did abound, This daughter thought in wedlocke to haue bound

Vnto the Prince of *Picteland* bordering nere, But she whose sides before with secret wound Of loue to *Bellamoure* empierced were, By all meanes shund to match with any forrein

ere.

And Bellamour againe so well her pleased, With dayly service and attendance dew, That of her loue he was entyrely seized, And closely did her wed, but knowne to few. Which when her father understood, he grew In so great rage, that them in dongeon deepe Without compassion cruelly he threw; Yet did so streightly them a sunder keepe. That neither could to company of th' other creepe.

6

Nathlesse Sir Bellamour, whether through grace Or secret guifts so with his keepers wrought. That to his loue sometimes he came in place, Whereof her wombe vnwist to wight was fraught,

And in dew time a maydenchild forth brought.
Which she streight way for dread least, if her

Should know thereof, to slay he would have sought,

Deliuered to her handmayd, that for hyre She should it cause be fostred under straunge attyre.

The trustie damzell bearing it abrode
Into the emptie fields, where living wight
Mote not bewray the secret of her lode,
She forth gan lay vnto the open light
The litle babe, to take thereof a sight.
Whom whylest she did with watrie eyne behold,
Vpon the litle brest like christall bright,
She mote perceiue a litle purple mold,
That like a rose her silken leaves did faire vnfold.

Well she it markt, and pittied the more, Yet could not remedie her wretched case, But closing it againe like as before, Bedeaw'd with teares there left it in the place: Yet left not quite, but drew a litle space Behind the bushes, where she her did hyde, To weet what mortall hand, or heauens grace Would for the wretched infants helpe prouyde, For which it loudly cald, and pittifully cryde.

c

At length a Shepheard, which there by did keepe

His fleecie flocke vpon the playnes around, Led with the infants cry, that loud did weepe, Came to the place, where when he wrapped found

Th'abandond spoyle, he softly it vnbound; And seeing there, that did him pittie sore, He tooke it vp, and in his mantle wound; So home vnto his honest wife it bore, Who as her owne it nurst, and named enermore.

10

Thus long continu'd Claribell a thrall, And Bellamour in bands, till that her syre Departed life, and left vnto them all. Then all the stormes of fortunes former yre Were turnd, and they to freedome did retyre, Thenceforth they ioy'd in happinesse tegether, And liued long in peace and lone entyre, Without disquiet or dislike of ether, [thether. Till time that Calidore brought Pastordla

7.1

Both whom they goodly well did entertaine; For Bellamour knew Calidore right well, And loued for his prowesse, sith they twaine Long since had fought in field. Als Claribell No lesse did tender the faire Pastorell. Seeing her weake and wan, through durance long.

There they a while together thus did dwell In much delight, and many toyes among, Vntill the damzell gan to wex more sound and strong.

Tho gan Sir Calulore him to aduize
Of his first quest, which he had long forlore,
Asham'd to thinke, how he that enterprize,
The which the Faery Queene had long afore
Bequeath'd to him, forslacked had so sore;
That much he feared, least reprochfull blame
With foule dishonour him mote blot therefore;
Besides the losse of so much loos and fame,
As through the world thereby should glorifie his
name.

Therefore resoluing to returne in hast Vnto so great atchieuement, he bethought To leave his love, now perill being past, With Claribell, whylest he that monster sought Throughout the world, and to destruction brought.

So taking leave of his faire Pastorell, Whom to recomfort, all the meanes he wrought, With thanks to Bellamour and Chiribell, He went forth on his quest, and did, that him befell.

But first, ere I doe his aduentures tell, In this exploite, me needeth to declare. What did betide to the faire Pastorell, During his absence left in heavy care, Through daily mourning, and nightly misfare: Yet did that auncient matrone all she might, To cherish her with all things choice and rare; And her owne handmayd, that Melissa hight, Appointed to attend her dewly day and night.

Who in a morning, when this Mayden faire Was dighting her, having her snowy brest As yet not laced, nor her golden haire Into their comely tresses dewly drest, Chaunst to espy vpon her yuory chest The roste marke, which she remembred well That litle Infant had, which forth she kest, The daughter of her Lady Claribell, The which she bore, the whiles in prison she did

16

Which well auizing, streight she gan to cast In her conceiptfull mynd, that this faire Mayd Was that same infant, which so long sith past i She in the open fields had loosely layd To fortunes spoile, vnable it to ayd. So full of ioy, streight forth she ran in hast Vnto her mistresse, being halfe dismayd, To tell her, how the heavens had her graste. To saue her chylde, which in misfortunes mouth was plaste.

The sober mother seeing such her mood, Yet knowing not, what meant that sodaine thro.

Askt her, how mote her words be vinderstood, And what the matter was, that mou'd her so. My liefe (savd she) ye know, that long ygo, Whilest ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gauc A little mayde, the which ye chylded tho; The same againe if now ye list to haue,

The same is yonder Lady, whom high God did saue.

dwell.

18

Much was the Lady troubled at that speach, And gan to question streight how she it knew. Most certaine markes, (sayd she) do me it teach. For on her brest I with these eves did vew The litle purple rose, which thereon grew. Whereof her name ye then to her did giue. Besides her countenaunce, and her likely hew, Matched with equall yeares, do surely prieuc That youd same is your daughter sure, which

vet doth hue.

The matrone stayd no lenger to enquire. But forth in hast ran to the straunger Mayd; Whom catching greedily for great desire, Rent vp her brest, and bosome open layd, In which that rose she plaintly saw displayd. Then her embracing twixt her armes twaine, She long so held, and softly weeping sayd; And huest thou my daughter now againe? And art thou yet aliue, whom dead I long did faine?

Tho further asking her of sundry things, And times comparing with their accidents, She found at last by very certaine signes, And speaking markes of passed monuments, That this young Mayd, whom chance to her presents

Is her owne daughter, her owne infant deare. The wondring long at those so straunge events. A thousand times she her embraced nere, With many a joyfull kisse, and many a melting teare.

Who euer is the mother of one chylde. Which having thought long dead, she fyndes

Let her by proofe of that, which she hath fylde In her owne breast, this mothers joy descriue: For other none such passion can contriue In perfect forme, as this good Lady felt, When she so faire a daughter saw survive. As Pastorella was, that nigh she swelt For passing joy, which did all into pitty melt.

Thence running forth vnto her loued Lord, She vnto him recounted, all that fell: Who iovning joy with her in one accord, Acknowledg'd for his owne faire Pastorell. There leave we them in joy, and let vs tell Of Calidore, who seeking all this while That monstrous Beast by finall force to quell, Through enery place, with restlesse paine and toile

Him follow'd, by the tract of his outragious spoile.

Through all estates he found that he had past, In which he many massacres had left, And to the Clergy now was come at last; In which suchspoile, such haucoke, and such the He wrought, that thence all goodnesse he bereft, That endlesse were to tell. The Elfin Knight, Who now no place besides vnsought had left, At length into a Monastere did light,

Where he him found despoyling all with maine and might.

Into their cloysters now he broken had, Through which the Monckes he chaced here and there,

And them pursu'd into their dortours sad, And searched all their cels and secrets neare; In which what filth and ordure did appeare, Were yrkesome to report; yet that foule Beast Nought sparing them, the more did tosse and teare.

And ransacke all their dennes from most to least, Regarding nought religion, nor their holy heast.

20

From thence into the sacred Church he broke, And robd the Chancell, and the deskes downe threw,

And Altars fouled, and blasphemy spoke,
And th'Images for all their goodly hew,
Didcast toground, whilest none was them to rew;
So all confounded and disordered there.
But seeing Calidore, away he flew,
Knowing his fatall hand by former feare;
But he him fast pursuing, soone approched
neare.

Him in a narrow place he ouertooke,
And fierce assailing forst him turne againe:
Sternely he turnd againe, when he him strooke
With his sharpe steele, and ran at him amaine
With open mouth, that seemed to containe
A full good pecke within the vtmost brim,
All set with yron teeth in raunges twaine,
That terrifide his foes, and armed him,
Appearing like the mouth of Orcus griesly grim.

27

And therein were a thousand tongs empight, Of sundry kindes, and sundry quality, Some were of dogs, that barked day and night, And some of cats, that wrawling still did cry, And some of Beares, that ground continually, And some of Tygres, that did seeme to gren, And snar at all, that euer passed by:

But most of them were tongues of mortall men,

Which spake reprochfully, not caring where

nor when.

2

And themamongst were mingled kereand there, The tongues of Serpents with three forked stings,

That spat out poyson and gore bloudy gere At all, that came within his rauenings, And spake licentious words, and hatefull things Of good and bad alike, of low and hie; Ne Kesars spared he a whit, nor Kings, But either blotted them with infamie, Or bit them with his banefull teeth of injury.

20

But Calidore thereof no whit afrayd, Rencountred him with so impetuous might, That th'outrage of his violence he stayd, And bet abacke, threatning in vaine to bite, And spitting forth the poyson of his spight, That fomed all about his bloody iawes. Tho rearing vp his tormer feete on hight. He rampt vpon him with his rauenous pawes, As if he would haue rent him with his cruell clawes.

But he right well aware, his rage to ward,
Did cast his shield atweene, and therewithall
Putting his puissaunce forth, pursu'd so hard,
That backeward he enforced him to fall,
And being downe, ere he new helpe could call,
His shield he on him threw, and fast downe
held,

Like as a bullocke, that in bloudy stall Of butchers balefull hand to ground is feld. Isforcibly kept downe, till he be throughly queld.

Full cruelly the Beast did rage and rore,
To be downe held, and maystredso with might,
That he gan fret and fome out bloudy gore,
Striuing in vaine to rere him selfe vpright.
For still the more he stroue, the more the
Knight

Did him suppresse, and forcibly subdew; That made him almost mad for feil despight. Ile grind, hee bit, he scratcht, he venim threw. And fared like a feend, right horrible in hew.

Or like the hell-borne Hydra, which they faine That great Alcides whilome ouerthrew, After that he had labourd long in vaine, Tocrophis thousand heads, the which still new Forth budded, and in greater number grew. Such was the fury of this hellish Beast, Whilest Calidore him vnder him downe threw; Who nathemore his heavy load releast, But aye the more he rag'd, the more his powre increast.

Tho when the Beast saw, he mote nought auaile, By force, he gan his hundred tongues apply, And sharpely at him to reuile and raile, With bitter termes of shamefull infamy; Oft interlacing many a forged lie, Whoselike he neuer once did speake, nor heare, Nor euer thought thing so vnworthily; Yet did he nought for all that him forbeare, But strained him so streightly, that he chokt him neare.

At last when as he found his force to shrincke, And rage to quaile, he tooke a muzzell strong Of surest yron, made with many a lincke; Therewith he mured vp his mouth along, And therein shut vp his blasphemous tong, For neuer more defaming gentle Knight, Or vnto louely Lady doing wrong; And thereunto a great long chaine he tight, With which he drew him forth, euen in his own despight.

35
Like as whylome that strong Trynthian swaine, Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog of hell, Against his will last bound in yron chaine, And roring horribly, did him compell To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell To griesly Pluto, what on earth was donne, And to the other damned ghosts, which dwell For ave in darkenesse, which day light doth shonne.

So led this Knight his captyue with like conquest wonne.

Yet greatly did the Beast repine at those Straunge bands, whose like till then he neuer Ne cuer any durst till then impose, [bore, And chauffed inly, seeing now no more Hum liberty was left aloud to rore: [stand Yet durst he not draw backe; nor once with-The proued powre of noble Calidore, But trembled vnderneath his mighty hand, And like a fearefull dog him followed through the land.

Him through all Faery land he follow'd so, As if he learned had obedience long, That all the people where so he did go, Out of their townes did round about him throng,

To see him leade that Beast in bondage strong, And seeing it, much wondred at the sight; And all such persons, as he earst did wrong, Reioyced much to see his captine plight, Andmuchadmyr'd the Beast, but more admyr'd the Knight.

Thus was this Monster by the maystring might Of doughty Calidore, supprest and tamed, That neuer more he mote endammadge wight With his vile tongue, which many had defamed, And many causelesse caused to be blamed: So did he ceke long after this remaine, Vntill that, whether wicked fate so framed, Or fault of men, he broke his yron chaine, And got into the world at liberty againe.

39
Thenceforth more mischiefe and more scath he wrought

To mortall men, then he had done before; Ne euer could by any more be brought. Into like bands, he maystred any more; Albe that long time after Cahdore, The good Sir Pelleav him tooke in hand, And after him Sir Lamoracke of yore, And all his brethren borne in Britaine land; Yet none of them could euer bring him into band.

So now he raungeth through the world againe, And rageth sore in each degree and state; Ne any is, that may him now restraine, He growen is so great and strong of late, Barking and bitting all that him doe bate, Albe they worthy blame, or cleare of crime: Ne spareth he most learned wits to rate, Ne spareth he the gentle Poets rime, But rends without regard of person or of time.

Ne may this homely verse, of many meanest,
Hope to escape his venemous despite.
More then my former writs, all were they clearest
From blamefull blot, and free from all that wite,
With which some wicked tongues did it backebite,
And bring into a mighty Percs displeasure,
That neuer so deserued to endite.
Therfore do you my rimes keep better measure,
And seeke to please, that now is counted wisemens threasure.

# TWO CANTOS OF

# MUTABILITIES

Which, both for Forme and Matter, appeare to be parcell of some following Booke of the  $FAERIE \ QVEENE$ 

 $(\cdot,\cdot)$ 

VNDER THE LEGEND OF

Constancie.

Neuer before imprinted.

# Canto VI.

# 

Proud Change (not pleased, in mortall things, beneath the Moone, to raigne) Pretends, as well of Gods, as Men. to be the Sourraine.

## 

What man that sees the euer-whirling wheele Of Change, the which all mortall things doth

But that therby doth find, and plainly

How MVTABILITY in them doth play Her cruell sports, to many mens decay? Which that to all may better yet appeare, I will rehearse that whylome I heard say. How she at first her selfe began to reare, them to beare.

But first, here falleth fittest to vnfold Her antique race and linage ancient. As I have found it registred of old. In Faery Land mongst records permanent: She was, to weet, a daughter by descent Of those old Titans, that did whylene

With Saturnes sonne for heavens regiment. Whom, though high love of kingdome dicdepriue,

Yet many of their stemmelong atterdid survive

And many of them, afterwards obtain'd Great power of love, and high authority: As Hecaté, in whose almighty hand, He plac't all rule and principality, To be by her disposed diversly, To Gods, and men, as she them list divide: And drad Bellona, that doth sound on hie Warres and allarums vnto Nations wide. Gainst all the Gods, and th'empire sought from | That makes both heaven and earth to tremble at her pride.

No likewise did this *Titanesse* aspire,
Rule and dominion to her selfe to gaine;
That as a Goddesse, men might her admire,
Andheauenly honours yield, as to them twaine.
At first, on earth she sought it to obtaine;
Whereshesuch proofe and sade xamples shewed
Of her great power, to many ones great paine,
That not men onely (whom she soone subdewed)
East eke all other creatures, her bad dooings
rewed.

For, she the face of earthly things so changed, That all which Nature had establisht first In good estate, and in meet order ranged, She did pervert, and all their statutes burst: And all the worlds faire frame (which none yet durst

Or Gods or men to alter or misguide)
she alter'd quite, and made them all accurst
That God had blest; and did at first prouide
In that still happy state for euer to abide

-6

Ne shee the lawes of Nature onely brake,
But eke of Iustice, and of Policie;
And wrong of right, and bad of good did make,
And death for life exchanged foolishlie;
since which, all hung wights haue learn'd to
die,

And all this world is woxen daily worse.

O prittous worke of MVTABILITIE!

By which, we all are subject to that curse,
And death in stead of life haue sucked from our

Nurse.

And now, when all the earth she thus had brought

Fo her behest, and thralled to her might, She gan to east in her ambitious thought, l'attempt the empire of the heauens hight, and love himselfe to shoulder from his right. And first, she past the region of the ayre, and of the fire, whose substance thin and slight, Made no resistance, ne could her contraire, But ready passage to her pleasure did prepaire.

- {

Thence, to the Circle of the Moone she clambe, Where Cynthia raignes in enerlasting glory, Fo whose bright shining palace straight she came.

All fairely deckt with heauens goodly story; Whose siluer gates (by which there sate an hory Old aged Sire, with hower-glasse in hand, Hight Tyme) she entred, were he liefe or sory: Ne staide till she the highest stage had scand, Where Cynthia did sit, that neuer still did stand.

Her sitting on an Iuory throne shee found, Drawne of two steeds, th'one black, the other white.

Environd with tenne thousand starres around, That duly her attended day and night; And by her side, there ran her Page, that hight Vesper, whom we the Euening-starre intend: That withhis Torche, still twinkling like twylight Herlightened all the way where she should wend, And joy to weary wandring trauailers did lend:

10

That when the hardy Titanesse beheld
The goodly building of her Palace bright,
Made of the heauens substance, and vp-held
With thousand Crystall pillors of huge hight,
Shee gan to burne in her ambitious spright,
And t'envie her that in such gloric raigned.
Eftsoones she cast by force and tortious might,
Her to displace; and toher selfe to have gained
The kingdome of the Night, and waters by her
wained.

Boldly she bid the Goddesse downe descend, And let her selfe into that Ivory throne; For, shee her selfe more worthy thereof wend, And better able it to guide alone:

Whether to men, whose fall she did bemone, Or vnto Gods, whose state she did maligne, Or to th'infernall Powers, her need gine lone Of her faire light, and bounty most benigne, Her selfe of all that rule shee deemed most condime.

But shee that had to her that soucraigne seat By highest *love* assign'd, therein to beare Nights burning lamp, regarded not her threat, Ne yielded ought for favour or for feare; But with sterne countenaunce and disdainfull cheare.

Bending her horned browes, did put her back: And boldly blaming her for comming there, Bade her attonce from heauens coast to pack, Or at her perill bide the wrathfull Thunders wrack.

Yet nathemore the Giantesse forbare:

But boldly preacing-on, raught forth her hand Topluck her downeperforce from off her chaire; And there-with lifting vp her golden wand, Threatned to strike her if she did with-stand. Where-at the starres, which round about her blazed, [stand,

And eke the Moones bright wagon, still did All beeing with so bold attempt amazed, And on her vncouth habit and sterne looke still gazed. 1.4

Meane-while, the lower World, which nothing knew

Of all that chaunced here, was darkned quite; And eke the heauens, and all the heauenly crew Of happy wights, now unpurvaide of light, Were much afraid, and wondred at that sight; Fearing least Chaos broken had his chaine, And brought againe on them eternall night: But chiefely Mercury, that next doth raigne, Ran forth in haste, vnto the king of Gods to plaine.

1

All ran together with a great out-cry,
To loues faire Palace, fixt in heauens hight;
And beating at his gates full earnestly,
Gan call to him aloud with all their might,
To know what meant that suddaine lack of light.

The lather of the Gods when this he heard, Was troubled much at their so strange affright, Doubting least Typhon were againe vprear'd, Or other his old foes, that once him sorely fear'd.

16

Eftsoones the sonne of Maia forth he sent Downe to the Circle of the Moone, to knowe The cause of this so strange astonishment, And why shee did her wonted course forslowe; And if that any were on earth belowe That did with charmes or Magick her molest, Him to attache, and downe to hell to throwe: But, if from heauen it were, then to arrest The Author, and him bring before his presence prest.

17

The wingd-foot God, so fast his plumes did beat, That soone he came where-as the *Titanesse* Was striuing with faire *Cynthia* for her seat: At whosestrangesight, and haughty hardinesse, He wondred much, and feared her no lesse. Yet laying feare aside to doe his charge, At last, he bade her (with bold stedfastnesse) Ceasse to molest the Moone to walke at large, Or come before high *Ioue*, her dooings to discharge.

18

And there-with-all, he on her shoulder laid His snaky-wreathed Mace, whose awfull power Doth make both Gods and hellish fiends affraid: Where-at the *Titanesse* did stornely lower, And stoutly answer'd, that in euill hower He from his *Ioue* such message to her brought, To bid her leaue faire *Cynthias* siluer bower; Sith shee his *Ioue* and him esteemed nought, No more then *Cynthia's* selfe; but all their kingdoms sought.

The Heauens Herald staid not to reply, But past away, his doings to relate Vnto his Lord; who now in th'highest sky, Was placed in his principall Estate, With all the Gods about him congregate: To whom when Hermes had his message told.

It did them all exceedingly amate, Saue *Ioue*; who, changing nought his count' nance bold.

Did vnto them at length these speeches wise vnfold;

Harken to mee awhile yee heauenly Powers: Ye may remember since th'Earths cursed seed Sought to assaile the heauens eternall towers. And to vs all exceeding feare did breed: But how we then defeated all their deed, Yee all doe knowe, and them destroied quite: Yet not so quite, but that there did succeed An off-spring of their bloud, which did alte Voon the fruitfull earth, which doth vs yet despite.

Of that bad seed is this bold woman bred,
That now with bold presumption doth aspire
To thrust faire Phabe from her siluer bed,
And eke our selues from heauens high Empire,
If that her might were match to her desire:
Wherefore, it new behoues vs to aduise
What way is best to drue her to retire;
Whether by open force, or counsell wise,
Areed ye sonnes of God, as best ye can deuise.

22

So hauing said, he ceast; and with his brow (His black eye-brow, whose doomefull dreaded beck

Is wont to wield the world vnto his vow, Andeuen the highest Powersofheauentocheck) Made signe to them in their degrees to speake: Who straight gan cast their counsell graue and wise.

Meane-while, th'Earths daughter, thogh she nought did reck

Of *Hermes* message; yet gan now aduise, What course were best to take in this hot bold emprize.

Eftsoonesshethus resolv'd; that whil'st the Gods (After returne of Hermes Embassic)
Were troubled, and amongst themselues at ods. Before they could new counsels re-allie,
To set vpon them in that extasic; [lend: And take what fortune time and place would So, forth she rose, and through the purest sky To Ioues high Palace straight cast to ascend. Toprosecute her plot: Good on-setboads goodend.

Shee there arriving, boldly in did pass; Where all the Gods she found in counsell close, All quite vnarm'd, as then their manner was. At sight of her they suddaine all arose, In great amaze, ne wist what way to chose. But lone, all fearelesse, forc't them to aby; Andinhis soueraine throne, ganstraight dispose limiselle more full of grace and Maiestie, That mote encheare his friends, and foes mote terrific.

That, when the haughty Titanesse beheld, Allwere she fraught with pride and impudence, Yet with the sight thereof was almost queld; And inly quaking, seem'd as reft of sense, And voyd of speech in that drad audience; Yutill that love himselfe, her selfe bespake: Speake thou fraile woman, speake with confidence,

Whence art thou, and what doost thou here now make?

What idle errand hast thou, earths mansion to forsake?

Shee, halfe confused with his great commaund, Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride, Him boldly answer'd thus to his demaund: I am a daughter, by the mothers side, Of her that is Grand-mother magnifide Of all the Gods, great Earth, great Chaos child: But by the fathers (be it not envide) I greater am in bloud (whereon I build) Then all the Gods, though wrongfully from heauen exil'd.

For, Titan (as ye all acknowledge must)
Was Saturnes elder brother by birth-right;
Both, sonnes of Vranus: but by vniust
Andguilefullmeanes, through Corybantesslight,
The younger thrust the elder from his right:
Since which, thou Ioue, iniuriously hast held
The Heauens rule from Titans sonnes by might;
And them to hellish dungeons downe hast feld:
Witnesse ye Heauens the truth of all that I haue
teld.

Whil'st shethus spake, the Gods that gauegood eare To her bold words, and marked well her grace, Beeing of stature tall as any there Of all the Gods, and beautifull of face, As any of the Goddesses in place, Stood all astonied, like a sort of Steeres; Mongst whom, some beast of strange and forraine race,

Vnwaresischaunc't, farstraying from his peeres: So did their ghastly gaze bewray their hidden feares. Till hauing pauz'd awhile, loue thus bespake; Will neuer mortall thoughts ceases to aspire, In this bold sort, to Heauen claime to make And touch celestiall seates with earthly mire? I would haue thought, that bold Procrustes hire, Or Typhons fall, or proud lxions paine, Or great Prometheus, tasting of our ire, Would haue suffiz'd, the rest for to restraine; And warn'd all men by their example to refraine:

But now, this off-scum of that cursed fry,
Dare to renew the like bold enterprize,
And chalenge th'heritage of this our skie;
Whom what should hinder, but that we likewise
Should handle as the rest of her allies,
And thunder-driue to hell? With that, he
shooke

His Nectar-deawed locks, with which the skyes And all the world beneath for terror quooke, And eft his burning levin-brond in hand he tooke.

But, when he looked on her louely face,
In which, faire beames of beauty did appeare,
That could the greatest wrath soone turne to grace
(Such sway doth beauty euen in Heauen beare)
He staide his hand: and hauing chang'd his
cheare,

He thus againe in milder wise began;
But ah! if Gods should striue with flesh yfere,
Be rooted out, if *loue* should doe still what he
can:

But thee faire *Titans* child, I rather weene. Through some vaine errour or inducement light, To see that mortall eyes have neuer seene; Or through ensample of thy sisters might, *Bellona*; whose great glory thou doost spight, Since thou hast seene her dreadfull power belowe,

Mongst wretched men (dismaide with her affright)

To bandie Crownes, and Kingdomes to bestowe: And sure thy worth, no lesse then hers doth seem to showe.

But wote thou this, thou hardy Titanesse,
That not the worth of any liuing wight
May challenge ought in Heauens interesse;
Much lesse the Title of old Titans Right:
For, we by Conquest of our soueraine might,
And by eternall doome of Fates decree,
Haue wonne the Empire of the Heauens bright;
Which to our selues we hold, and to whom wee
Shall worthy deeme partakers of our blisse to bee.

Then cease thy idle claime thou foolish gerle, And seeke by grace and goodnesse to obtaine That place from which by folly *Titan* fell; There-to thou maist perhaps, if so thou faine Haue *loue* thy gratious Lord and Soueraigne. So, hauing said, she thus to him replide; Ceasse *Saturnes* sonne, to seeke by proffers vaine Of idle hopes t'allure mee to thy side, For to betray my Right, before I haue it tride.

35

But thee, O *loue*, no equall Iudge I deeme Of my desert, or of my dewfull Right;
That in thine owne behalfe maist partial seeme:
But to the highest him, that is behight
Father of Gods and men by equall might;
To weet, the God of Nature, I appeale.
There-at *loue* wexed wroth, and in his spright Did inly grudge, yet did it well conceale;
And bade *Dan Phæbus* Scribe her Appellation seale.

36

Eftsoones the time and place appointed were, Where all, both heauenly Powers, and earthly wights,

Before great Natures presence should appeare, For triall of their Titles and best Rights: That was, to weet, vpon the highest hights Of Arlo-hill (Who knowes not Arlo-hill?) That is the highest head (in all mens sights) Of my old father Mole, whom Shepheards quill Renowmed hath with hymnes fit for a rurall skill.

And, were it not ill fitting for this file,
To sing of hilles and woods, mongst warres
and Knights,

I would abate the sternenesse of my stile, Mongst these sterne stounds to mingle soft delights;

And tell how Arlo through Dianaes spights (Beeing of old the best and fairest Hill That was in all this holy-Islands hights) Was made the most vnpleasant, and most ill. Meane while, O Clio, lend Calliope thy quill.

Whylome, when IRELAND florished in fame
Of wealths and goodnesse, far aboue the rest
Of all that beare the British Islands name,
The Gods then vs'd (for pleasure and for rest)
Off to resort there-to, when seem'd them best:
But none of all there-in more pleasure found,
Then Cynthia; that is soueraine Queene profest
Of woods and forrests, which therein abound,
Sprinkled with wholsom waters, more then
most on ground

But mongst them all, as fittest for her game, Either for chace of beasts with hound or boawe, Or for to shroude in shade from Phebus flame, Or bathe in fountaines that doe freshly flowe, Or from high hilles, or from the dales belowe. She chose this Arlo; where shee did resort With all her Nymphes enranged on a rowe, With whom the woody Gods did oft consort: For, with the Nymphes, the Satyres loue to play and sport.

Amongst the which, there was a Nymph that hight

Molanna; daughter of old father Mole, And sister vnto Mulla, faire and bright: Vnto whose bed false Bregog whylome stole, That Shepheard Colin dearely did condole, And made her lucklesse loues well knowne to be. But this Molanna, were she not so shole, Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee: Yet as she is, a fairer flood may no man see.

41

For, first, she springs out of two marble Rocks, On which, a groue of Oakes high mounted growes. That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks Of som faire Bride, brought forth with pompous showes

Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes: So, through the flowry Dales she tumbling downe.

Through many woods, and shady coverts flowes (That on each side her siluer channell crowne) Till to the Plaine she come, whose Valleyes shed doth drowne.

In her sweet streames, Diana vsed oft (After her sweatie chace and toilesome play) To bathe her selfe; and after, on the soft And downy grasse, her dainty limbes to lay In couert shade, where none behold her may: For, much she hated sight of liuing eye. Foolish God Faunus, though full many a day Ile saw her clad, yet longed foolishly Toseeher naked mongst her Nymphesin priuity.

43

No way he found to compasse his desire. But to corrupt Molanna, this her maid, Her to discouer for some secret hire: So, her with flattering words he first assaid; And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid, Queene-apples, and red Cherries from the tree, With which he her allured and betraid, To tell what time he might her Lady see When she her selfe did bathe, that he might secret bee.

There-to hee promist, if shee would him pleasure With this small boone, to quither with a better; To weet, that where-as shee had out of measure Longlov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did sether, That he would vndertake, for this to get her To be his Loue, and of him liked well: Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter

for many moe good turnes then he would tell: The least of which, this little pleasure should excell.

The simple maid did yield to him anone; And eft him placed where he close might view That neuer any saw, saue onely one; Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew, Was of his hounds devour'd in Hunters hew. Tho, as her manner was on sunny day, Duna, with her Nymphes about her, drew To this sweet spring; where, doffing her array, She bath'd her louely limbes, for loue a likely pray.

There Faunus saw that pleased much his eye, And made his hart to tickle in his brest, That for great joy of some-what he did spy. He could him not containe in silent rest; But breaking forth in laughter, loud profest His foolish thought. A foolish Faune indeed, That couldst not hold thy selfe so hidden blest, But wouldest needs thine owne conceit areed. Babblers vnworthy been of so divine a meed.

The Goddesse, all abashed with that noise, In haste forth started from the guilty brooke; And running straight where-as she heard his

Enclos'd the bush about, and there him tooke, Like darred Larke; not daring up to looke On her whose sight before so much he sought. Thence, forth they drew him by the hornes, and shooke

Nigh all to peeces, that they left him nought: And then into the open light they forth him brought.

Like as an huswife, that with busic care Thinks of her Dairie to make wondrous gaine, Finding where-as some wicked beast vnware That breakes into her Dayr'house, there doth : draine

Her creaming pannes, and frustrate all her paine; Hath in some snare or gin set close behind, Entrapped him, and caught into her traine, Then thinkes what punishment were best assign'd. fmind: And thousand deathes deuiseth in her vengefull

So did Diana and her maydens all Vse silly Faunus, now within their baile: [call; They mocke and scorne him, and him foule mis-Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the taile, And by his goatish beard some did him haile Yethe (pooresoule) with patience all did beare: For, nought against their wils might countervaile:

Ne ought he said what ever he did heare; But hanging downe his head, did like a Mome appeare.

At length, when they had flouted him their fill, They gan to cast what penaunce him to give. Some would have gelt him, but that same would spill

The Wood-godsbreed, which must foreuer live: Others would through the river him have drive, And ducked deepe: but that seem'd penaunce

But most agreed and did this sentence giue, Him in Deares skin to clad; and in that plight, To hunt him with their hounds, him selfe saue how hee might.

But Cynthia's selfe, more angry then the rest, Thought not enough, to punish him in sport, And of her shame to make a gamesome lest; But gan examine him in straighter sort. Which of her Nymphes, or other close consort, Him thither brought, and her to him betraid ? He, much affeard, to her confessed short, That 'twas Molanna which her so bewraid. Then all attonce their hands vpon Molanna laid.

But him (according as they had decreed) Witha Deeres-skin they couered, and then chast With all their hounds that after him did speed; But he more speedy, from them fled more fast Then any Deere: so sore him dread aghast. They after follow'd all with shrill out-cry, Shouting as they the heavens would have brast: That all the woods and dales where he did flie,

So they him follow'd till they weary were; When, back returning to Molann' againe, They, by commaund'ment of Diana, there Her whelm'd with stones. Yet Faunus (for her Of her beloued Fanchin did obtaine, [paine) That her he would receive vnto his bed. So nowher waves passe through a pleasant Plaine, Till with the Fanchin she her selfe dee wed, And (both combin'd) themselues in one faire riuer spred.

Did ring againe, and loud reeccho to the skie.

Nath'lesse, Diana, full of indignation. Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke : in whose sweet streame, before that badoccasion. So much delight to bathe her limbes she tooke: Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke All those faire forrests about Arlo hid. And all that Mountaine, which doth over-looke The richest champian that may else be rid, And the faire Shure, in which are thousand Salmons bred.

Them all, and all that she so deare did way, Thence-forthshe left; and parting from the place. There-on an heavy haplesse curse did lay, To weet, that Wolues, where she was wont to space,

Should harbour'd be, and all those Woods deface. And Thieues should rob and spoile that Coast [Chase, Since which, those Woods, and all that goodly Doth to this day with Wolues and Thieues

Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers since haue found.

#### Canto VII.

#### 

Pealing, from Ioue, to Natur's Bar. bold Alteration pleades Large Euidence: but Nature soone her righteous Doome areads.

#### 

Ah! whither doost thou now thou greater Muse Me from these woods and pleasing forrests bring? And my fraile spirit (that dooth oft refuse This too high flight, vnfit for her weake wing) Lift vp aloft, to tell of heavens King (Thy soueraine Sire) his fortunate successe, And victory, in bigger noates to sing, Which he obtain'd against that Titanesse, That him of heauens Empire sought to dispossesse.

Yet sith I needs must follow thy behest. Doe thou my weaker wit with skill inspire. Fit for this turne; and in my feeble brest Kindle fresh sparks of that immortall fire, Which learned minds inflameth with desire Of heauenly things: for, who but thou alone, That art yborne of heauen and heauenly Sire, So farre past memory of man that may be knowne.

Now, at the time that was before agreed, The Gods assembled all on Arlo hill: As well those that are sprung of heavenly seed. As those that all the other world doe fill. And rule both sea and land vnto their will: Onely th'infernall Powers might not appeare: Aswell for horror of their count'naunce ill. As for th'vnruly fiends which they did feare; Yet Pluto and Proserpina were present there.

And thither also came all other creatures, What-euer life or motion doe retaine, According to their sundry kinds of features; That Arlo scarsly could them all containe: So full they filled euery hill and Plaine: And had not Natures Sergeant (that is Order) Them well disposed by his busic paine, And raunged farre abroad in euery border, They would have caused much confusion and disorder.

Then forth issewed (great goddesse) great dame Nature,

With goodly port and gracious Maiesty; Being far greater and more tall of stature Then any of the gods or Powers on hie: Yet certes by her face and physnomy. Whether she man or woman inly were, That could not any creature well descry: For, with a veile that wimpled enery where, Her head and face was hid, that mote to none appeare.

That some doe say was so by skill deuized, To hide the terror of her vncouth hew, From mortall eyes that should be sore agrized; For that her face did like a Lion shew, That eye of wight could not indure to view: But others tell that it so beautious was, And round about such beames of splender

That it the Sunne a thousand times did pass, Ne could be seene, but like an image in a glass.

That well may seemen true: for, well I weene That this same day, when she on Arlo sat, Hergarment was so bright and wondrous sheene, That my fraile wit cannot deuize to what It to compare, nor finde like stuffe to that, As those three sacred Saints, though else most

Yet on mount Thabor quite their wits forgat, When they their glorious Lord in strange disguise Can tell things doen in heauen so long ygone; Transfigur'd sawe; his garments so did daze their eyes.

8

In a fayre Plaine vpon an equall Hill,
She placed was in a pauilion;
Not such as Craftes-men by their idle skill
Are wont for Princes states to fashion:
But th'earth her self of her owne motion,
Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe
Most dainty trees; that, shooting vp anon,
Did seeme to bow their bloosming heads full
lowe,

For homage vnto her, and like a throne did shew.

So hard it is for any liuing wight,
All her array and vestiments to tell,
That old Dan Geffrey (in whose gentle spright
The pure well head of Poesie did dwell)
In his Foules parley durst not with it mel,
But it transferd to Alane, who he thought
Had in his Plaint of kindes describ'd it well:
Which who will read set forth so as it ought,
Go seek he out that Alane where he may be
sought.

And all the earth far vnderneath her fecte
Was dight with flowres, that voluntary grew
Out of the ground, and sent forth odourssweet;
Tenne thousand mores of sundry sent and hew,
That might delight the smell, or please the view:
The which, the Nymphes, from all the brooks
thereby

Had gathered, which they at her foot-stoole threw;

That richer seem'd then any tapestry,
That Princes bowres adorne with painted imagery.

And Mole himselfe, to honour her the more, Did deck himself in freshest faire attire, And his high head, that seemeth alwaies hore With hardned frosts of former winters ire, He with an Oaken girlond now did tire, As if the loue of some new Nymph late seene, Had in him kindled youthfull fresh desire, And made him change his gray attire to greene; Ah gentle Mole! such ioyance hath thee well beseene.

Was neuer so great ioyance since the day, That all the gods whylome assembled were, On Hæmus hill in their diuine array, To celebrate the solemne bridall cheare, Twixt Peleus, and dame Theirs pointed there; Where Phæbus self, that god of Poets hight, They say did sing the spousall hymne full cleere, That all the gods were rauisht with delight Of his celestiall song, and Musicks wondrous might.

This great Grandmother of all creatures bred Great Nature, ever young yet full of eld, Still mooning, yet vamoued from her sted; Viseene of any, yet of all beheld; Thus sitting in her throne as I haue teld, Before her came dame Mutabilitie; And being lowe before her presence feld, With meek obaysance and bumilitie, Thus gan her plaintif Plea, with words to amplifie;

To thee O greatest goldesse, onely great,
An humble suppliant loe, I lowely fly
Seeking for Right, which I of thee entreat;
Who Right to all dost deale indifferently,
Damning all Wrong and tortious Iniurie,
Which any of thy creatures doe to other
(Oppressing them with power, vnequally)
Sith of them all thou art the equall mother,
And knittest each to each, as brother vnto
brother.

To thee therefore of this same *love* I plaine, And of his fellow gods that faine to be, That challenge to themselves the whole worlds raign:

Of which, the greatest part is due to me, And heauen it selfe by heritage in Fee: For, heauen and earth I both alike do deeme, Sith heauen and earth are both alike to thee; And,godsnomorethenmen thoudoest esteeme: For, euen the gods to thee, as men to gods do seeme.

16

Then weigh, Osoueraigne goddesse, by what right
These gods do claime the worlds whole souerainty;
And that is onely dew vnto thy might
Arrogate to themselves ambitiously:

As for the gods owne principality,
Which *loue* vsurpes vniustly; that to be
My heritage, *loue's* self cannot deny,
From my great Grandsire *Tilan*, vnto mee,
Deriv'd by dew descent; as is well knowen to
thee.

Yet mauger loue, and all his gods beside, I doe possesse the worlds most regiment; As, if ye please it into parts diuide, And euery parts inholders to conuent, Shall to your eyes appeare incontinent. And first, the Earth (great mother of vs all) That only seems vnmov'd and permanent, And vnto Mutability not thrall; Yet is she chang'd in part, and eeke in generall.

-0

For, all that from her springs, and is ybredde, How-euer fayre it flourish for a time, Yet see we soone decay; and, being dead, To turne again vnto their earthly slime: Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime, We daily see new creatures to arize; And of their Winter spring another Prime, Vnlikein forme, and chang'd by strangedisguise: So turne they still about, and change in restlesse wise.

19

As for her tenants; that is, man and beasts, The beasts we daily see massacred dy, As thralls and vassalls vnto mens beheasts: And men themselues doe change continually, From youth to eld, from wealth to pouerty, From good to bad, from bad to worst of all. Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly: But eeke their minds (which they immort all call) Still change and vary thoughts, as new occasions fall.

20

Ne is the water in more constant case; Whether those same on high, or these belowe. For, th'Ocean moueth stil, from place to place: And euery Riuer still doth ebbe and flowe: Ne any Lake, that seems most still and slowe, Ne Poole so small, that can his smoothnesse holde,

When any winde doth vnder heauen blowe; With which, the clouds are also tost and roll'd; Now like great Hills; and, streight, like sluces, them vnfold.

21

So likewise are all watry liuing wights
Still tost, and turned, with continuall change,
Neuer abyding in their stedfast plights.
The fish, still floting, doe at randon range,
And neuer rest; but euermore exchange
Their dwelling places, as the streames them
carrie:

Ne haue the watry foules a certaine grange, Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry; But flitting still doe flie, and still their places vary.

Next is the Ayre: which who feel s not by sense (For, of all sense it is the middle meane)
To flit still? and, with subtill influence
Of his thin spirit, all creatures to maintaine,
In state of life? O weake life! that does leane
On thing so tickle as th'unsteady ayre;
Which euery howreis chang'd, and altred cleane
With euery blast that bloweth fowle or faire:
The faired oth it prolong; the fowle doth it impaire

Therein the changes infinite beholde, Which to her creatures euery minute chaunce:

Now, boyling hot:streight, friezing deadly cold: Now, faire sun-shine, that makes all skip and daunce:

23

Streight, bitterstorms and balefull countenance, That makes them all to shiuer and to shake: Rayne, hayle, and snowe do pay them sad penance, [quake]

And dreadfull thunder-claps (that make them With flames and flashing lights that thousand

changes make.

Last is the fire: which, though it liue for cucr. Ne can be quenched quite; yet, euery day. Wee see his parts, so soone as they do scuer To lose their heat, and shortly to decay; So, makes himself his owne consuming pray. Ne any liuing creatures doth he breed: But all, that are of others bredd, doth slay; And, with their death, his cruell life dooth feed: Nought leauing but their barren ashes, without seede.

Thus, all these fower (the which the ground-work

Of all the world, and of all luing wights) To thousand sorts of Change we subicet see . Yetare they chang'd (by other wondrousslights) Into themselues, and lose their natiue mights: The Fire to Aire, and th'Ayre to Water sheer. And Water into Earth: yet Water fights With Fire, and Aire with Earth approaching neere:

Yet all are in one body, and as one appeare.

26

So, in them all raignes Mutabilitie; How-ever these, that Gods themselues do call. Of them doe claime the rule and souerainty: As, Vesta, of the fire æthereall; Vulcan, of this, with vs so vsuall; Ops, of the earth; and Iuno of the Ayre; Neptune, of Seas; and Nymphes, of Riuers all. For, all those Riuers to me subject are: And all the rest, which they vsurp, be all my share.

Which to approuen true, as I haue told, Vouchsafe, O goddesse, to thy presence call The rest which doe the world in being hold: As, times and seasons of the yeare that fall: Of all the which, demand in generall, Or judge thy selfe, by verdit of thine eye, Whether to me they are not subject all. Nature did yeeld thereto; and by-and-by, Bade Order call them all, before her Maisty.

28

So, forth issew'd the Seasons of the yeare: First, lusty Spring, all dight in leaues of flowres That freshly budded and new bloosmes did beare (In which a thousand birds had built their

That sweetly sung, to call forth Paramours): And in his hand a lauelin he did beare, And on his head (as fit for warlike stoures) A guilt engrauen morion he did weare; That as some did him loue, so others did him feare.

Then came the iolly Sommer, being dight In a thin silken cassock coloured greene, That was vnlyned all, to be more light: And on his head a girlond well beseene He wore, from which as he had chauffed been The sweat did drop; and in his hand he bore A boawe and shaftes, as he in forrest greene Had hunted late the Libbard or the Bore, And now would bathe his limbes, with labor heated sore.

Then came the Autumne all in yellow clad, As though he loyed in his plentious store, Laden with fruits that made him laugh, full glad That he had banisht hunger, which to-fore Had by the belly oft him pinched sore. Vpon his head a wreath that was enrold With eares of corne, of enery sort he bore: And in his hand a sickle he did holde. To reape the ripened fruits the which the earth had yold.

Lastly, came Winter cloathed all in frize. Chattering his teeth for cold that did him chill Whil'st on his hoary beard his breath did freese And the dull drops that from his purpled bill As from a limbeck did adown distill. In his right hand a tipped staffe he held, With which his feeble steps he stayed still: For, he was faint with cold, and weak with eld; That scarse his loosed limbes he hable was to

These, marching softly, thus in order went, And after them, the Monthes all riding came; First, sturdy March with brows full sternly bent, And armed strongly, rode vpon a Ram, The same which ouer Hellespontus swam: Yet in his hand a spade he also hent, And in a bag all sorts of seeds ysame, Which on the earth he strowed as he went, And fild her womb with fruitfull hope of nourishment.

Next came fresh Aprill full of lustyhed, And wanton as a Kid whose horne new buds : Vpon a Bull he rode, the same which led Europa floting through th' Argolick fluds: His hornes were gilden all with golden studs And garnished with garlonds goodly dight Of all the fairest flowres and freshest buds Which th'earth brings forth, and wet he seem'd in sight

With waues, through which he waded for his

loues delight.

Then came faire May, the fayrest may don ground, Deckt all with dainties of her seasons pryde, And throwing flowres out of her lap around. Vpon two brethrens shoulders she did ride, The twinnes of Leda; which on eyther side Supported her like to their soueraine Queene. Lord! how all creatures laught, when her they spide.

And leapt and daunc't as they had rauisht beene! And Cupid selfe about her fluttred all in greene.

And after her, came jolly Lune, arrayd All in greene leaues, as he a Player were : Yet in his time, he wrought as well as playd, That by his plough-yrons mote right well appeare:

Voon a Crab he rode, that him did beare With crooked crawling steps an vncouth pase, And backwardyode, as Bargemen wont to fare Bending their force contrary to their face, Like that vngracious crew which faines demurest grace.

Then came hot July boyling like to fire, That all his garments he had cast away : Vpon a Lyon raging yet with ire He boldly rode and made him to obay: It was the beast that whylome did forray The Nemæan forrest, till th' Amphytrionide Him slew, and with his hide did him array;

Behinde his back a sithe, and by his side Vnder his belt he bore a sickle circling wide.

The sixt was August, being rich arrayd In garment all of gold downe to the ground Yet rode he not, but led a louely Mayd Forth by the lilly hand, the which was cround With eares of corne, and full her hand was found; That was the righteous Virgin, which of old Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made abound; But, after Wrong was lov'd and Iustice solde, She left th'vnrighteous world and was to heauen extold

38

Next him, September marched eeke on foote; Yet was he heavy laden with the spoyle Of haruests riches, which he made his boot, And him enricht with bounty of the soyle: In his one hand, as fit for haruests toyle, He held a knife-hook; and in th'other hand A paire of waights, with which he did assoyle Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did stand.

And equall gaue to each as Iustice duly scann'd.

Then came October full of merry glee: For, yet his noule was totty of the must, Which he was treading in the wine-fats see, And of the ioyous oyle, whose gentle gust Made him so frollick and so full of lust: Vpon a dreadfull Scorpion he did ride. The same which by Dianaes doom vniust Slew great Orion: and eeke by his side He had his ploughing share, and coulter ready tyde.

Next was November, he full grosse and fat, As fed with lard, and that right well might seeme:

For, he had been a fatting hogs of late, That yet his browes with sweat, did reek and

And yet the season was full sharp and breem; In planting eeke he took no small delight: Whereon he rode, not easie was to deeme; For it a dreadfull Centaure was in sight, The seed of Saturne, and faire Nais, Chiron hight.

And after him, came next the chill December: Yet he through merry feasting which he made, And great bonfires, did not the cold remember; His Saujour birth his mind so much did glad: Vpon a shaggy-bearded Goat he rode, The same wherewith Dan Ioue in tender yeares, They say, was nourisht by th'Idaan mayd; And in his hand a broad deepe boawle he beares; Of which, he freely drinks an health to all his peeres.

Then came old Ianuary, wrapped well In many weeds to keep the cold away; Yet did he quake and quiuer like to quell, And blowe his nayles to warme them if he may: For, they were numbd with holding all the day An hatchet keene, with which he felled wood, And from the trees did lop the needlesse spray: Vpon an huge great Earth-pot steane he stood; From whose wide mouth, there flowed forth the Romane floud.

And lastly, came cold February, sitting In an old wagon, for he could not ride: Drawne of two fishes for the season fitting. Which through the flood before did softly slyde And swim away: yet had he by his side His plough and harnesse fit to till the ground. And tooles to prune the trees, before the pride Of hasting Prime did make them burgein

So past the twelve Months forth, and their dew places found.

And after these, there came the Day, and Night, Riding together both with equall pase. Th'one on a Palfrey blacke, the other white: But Night had covered her vncomely face With a blacke veile, and held in hand a mace, On top whereof the moon and stars were pight, Andsleep and darknesse round about did trace: But Day did beare, vpon his scepters hight, The goodly Sun, encompast all with beames bright.

Then came the Houres, faire daughters of high

And timely Night, the which were all endewed With wondrous beauty fit to kindle loue; But they were Virgins all, and love eschewed, That might forslack the charge to them foreshewed

By mighty *Ioue*; who did them Porters make Of heavens gate (whence all the gods issued) Which they did dayly watch, and nightly wake By euen turnes, ne euer did their charge forsake.

And after all came Life, and lastly Death; Death with most grim and griesly visage scene, Yet is he nought but parting of the breath; Ne ought to see, but like a shade to weene, Vnbodied, vnsoul'd, vnheard, vnseene. But Life was like a faire young lusty boy, Such as they faine Dan Cupid to have beene, Full of delightfull health and lively joy, Deckt all with flowres, and wings of gold fit to employ.

When these were past, thus gan the Titanesse; Lo, mighty mother, now be judge and say, Whether in all thy creatures more or lesse CHANGE doth not raign and beare the greatest sway:

For, who sees not, that Time on all doth pray? But Times do change and moue continually. So nothing here long standeth in one stay: Wherefore, this lower world who can deny But to be subject still to Mutabilitie?

#### avas rule thime & chance

Then thus gan love; Right true it is, that these And all things else that vnder heauen dwell Are chaung'd of Time, who doth them all disseise Of being: But, who is it (to me tell) That Time himselfedoth moue and still compell To keepe his course? Is not that namely wee Which poure that vertue from our heavenly cell That moues them all, and makes them changed

So them we gods doe rule, and in them also thee

To whom, thus Mutability: The things Which we see not how they are mov'd and

swayd, Ye may attribute to your selues as Kings, And say they by your secret powre are made: But what we see not, who shall vs perswade? But were they so, as ye them faine to be, Mov'd by your might, and ordred by your ayde; Yet what if I can proue, that even yee

Your selves are likewise chang'd, and subject vnto mee?

And first, concerning her that is the first, Euen you faire Cynthia, whom so much ye make Ioues dearest darling, she was bred and nurst On Cynthus hill, whence she her name did take: Then is she mortall borne, how-so ye crake; Besides, her face and countenance euery day We changed see, and sundry forms partake, Now hornd, now round, now bright, now brown and gray:

So that as changefull as the Moone men vse to say.

Next, Mercury, who though he lesse appeare To change his hew, and alwayes seeme as one; Yet, he his course doth altar euery yeare, And is of late far out of order gone: So Venus ceke, that goodly Paragone, Though faire all night, yet is shedarke all day; And Phæbus self, who lightsome is alone, Yet is he oft eclipsed by the way,

And fills the darkned world with terror and dismay.

Now Mars that valiant man is changed most: For, he some times so far runs out of square, That he his way doth seem quite to have lost, And cleane without his vsuall sphere to fare; That even these Star-gazers stonisht are At sight thereof, and damne theirlying bookes: So likewise, grim Sir Saturne oft doth spare Hissterneaspect, and calme his crabbed lookes: So many turning cranks these haue, so many crookes.

But you Dan love, that only constant are, And King of all the rest, as ye do clame, Are you not subject ecke to this misfare? Then let me aske you this withouten blame, Where were ye borne? some say in Crete by name.

Others in Thebes, and others other-where: But wheresoeuer they comment the same, They all consent that ye begotten were, And borne here in this world, ne other can appeare.

Then are ve mortall borne, and thrall to me, Vnlesse the kingdome of the sky yee make Immortall, and vnchangeable to bee; Besides, that power and vertue which ye spake, That we here worke, doth many changes tal: ". And your ownenatures change: for, each of you That vertue haue, or this, or that to make, Is checkt and changed from his nature trew, By others opposition or obliquid view.

Besides, the sundry motions of your Spheares, So sundry waies and fashions as clerkes faine, Some in short space, and some in longer yeares; What is the same but alteration plaine? Onely the starrie skie doth still remaine: Yet do the Starres and Signes therein still

moue. And even it self is mov'd, as wizards saine. But all that mought, doth mutation loue: Therefore both you and them to me I subject proue.

Then since within this wide great Universe Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare, But all things tost and turned by transuerse: What then should let, but I aloft should reare My Trophee, and from all, the triumph beare? Now judge then (O thou greatest goddesse trew!) According as thy selfe doest see and heare. And vnto me addoom that is my dew; That is the rule of all, all being rul'd by you.

So having ended, silence long ensewed, Ne Nature to or fro spake for a space, But with firme eyes affixt, the ground still

Meane while, all creatures, looking in her face, Expecting th'end of this so doubtfull case, Did hang in long suspence what would ensew, To whether side should fall the souer aigne place: At length, she looking vp with chearefull view, The silence brake, and gaue her doome in speeches few.

# 406 THE VII. BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE. Cant. VII.

I well consider all that ye haue sayd,
And find that all things stedfastnes doe hate
And changed be: yet being rightly wayd
They are not changed from their first estate;
But by their change their being doe dilate:
And turning to themselues at length againe,
Doe worke their owne perfection so by fate:
Then ouer them Change doth not rule and
raigne:

But they raigne ouer change, and doe their

states maintaine.

Cease therefore daughter further to aspire, And thee content thus to be rul'd by me: For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire; But time shall come that all shall changed bee, And from thenceforth, none no more change shall see.

So was the *Titaness* put downe and whist, And *Ioue* confirm'd in his imperiall see. Then was that whole assembly quite dismist, And *Natur's* selfe did vanish, whither no man wist.

## The VIII. Canto, unperfite.

When I bethinke me on that speech whyleare, Of Mutability, and well it way:

Me seemes, that though she all vnworthy were Of the Heav'ns Rule; yet very sooth to say, In all things else she beares the greatest sway. Which makes me loath this state of life so tickle.

And loue of things so vaine to cast away;
Whose flowring pride, so fading and so fickle,
Short *Time* shall soon cut down with his consuming sickle.

Then gin I thinke on that which Nature sayd,
Of that same time when no more Change shall
be,
But stedfast rest of all things firmely stayd

But stedfast rest of all things firmely stayd Vpon the pillours of Eternity, That is contrayr to *Mutabilitie*: For, all that moueth, doth in *Change* delight:

But thence-forth all shall rest eternally
With Him that is the God of Sabbaoth hight:
O that great Sabbaoth God, graunt me that
Sabaoths sight.

FINIS.

## A

## Letter of the Authors expounding his

whole intention in the course of this worke: which for that it giueth great light to the Reader, for the better vnderstanding is hereunto annexed.

To the Right noble, and Valorous, Sir Walter Raleigh knight, Lo. Wardein of the Stanneryes, and her Maiesties liefetenaunt of the County of Cornewayll.

\Ir knowing how doubtfully all Allegors & may \ te construed, and this booke of mine, which I have entituled the Faery Queene, being a continued A corry, or darke conceil, I have thought good askell for anoyding of gealous opinions and misonstructions, as also for your better light in reading therof, (being so by you commanded,) to discover vnto you the general intention and maning which in the whole course thereof I waning which in the whole course thereof I will fashioned, without expressing of any paradular purposes or by-acadents therein occurrence. The general end therefore of all the ke is to fashion a gentleman or notice ferson in vertious and gentle discipline: Which for that I conceived shoulde be most plausible and fring, being coloured with an historical to con the which the most part of men delight to the stather for variety of matter, then for file of the ensample: I chose the historye of vary arthure, as most fitte for the excellency of h . t rson, being made famous by many mens ; turmer workes, and also jurinest from the duanger of enuy, and suspition of present time In which I have followed all the antique Poets and ruall, first Homere, who in the Persons of Agameninan and Vlysses hath insampled a good guernour and a vertuous man, the one in his Mas, the other in his Odysser, then Virgil, whose like intention was to doe in the ferson of reneas. after him Artisto comfr. sed them both in his Orlando and lately Tasso dissenered them againe, and formed both parts in two persons, namely that part which they in Philosophy call bethice, or vertues of a private man, coloured in his Rinaldo: The other named Tolivice in his Godfredo. By ensample of which excellente Poets, Hibeur to pour tract in Arthure, before he was ling, he image of a brane knight, perfected in the live we private morall vertues, as Aristotle hath demid, the which is the purpose of these first twelve tookes: which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encoraged, to frame the other part of telliticke verines in his person, after that hee came to be king. To some I know this Methode will seeme displeasaunt, which had rather have good discipline delinered plainly in way of pre-

cepts, or sermoned at large, as they use, then thus closedily enwrathed in Allegoricall devises. But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the vse of these dayes, seeing all things accounted by their sh wes, and nothing extermed of, that is not delightfull and pleasing to commune sence. For this cause is Xenophon preferred lefore Plato, for that the one in the exquisite depth of his indgement, formed a Commune welth such as it should be, but the other in the person of Cyrus and the Persians foshioned a government such as might best be: So much more profitable and gratious is doctrine by ensample then by rule. No have I laboured to doe in the ferson of Arthure: whome I conceive after his long education by Timon, to whom he was by Merlin delinered to be brought up, so soone as he was borne of the Lady Igrayne, to have scene in a dream or vision the Farry Queen, with whose excellent beau y ranished, he awaking resolued to seeke her out, and so being by Merlin armed, and by Timon throughly instructed, he went to seeke her forth in Faery land. In that Faery Queene I meane gl ry in my generall intention, but in my particular I conceive the most excellent and glorious person of our soueraine the Queene, and her kingdome in Faery land. And yet in some places els, I doe otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royall Overne or limpresse, the other of a most vertuous and heautiful Lady, this latter part in some places I die expresse in Belphabe, fashioning her name according to your owne excellent concerpt of (ynthia, (Phæbe and Cynthia being both names of Diana.) So in the person of Prince Arthure I seite forth magnificence in particular, which vertue for that (according to Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest, and conterneth in it them all, therefore in the whole course I mention the deedes of Arthure applyable to that vertue, which I write of in that booke. But of the xii. other vertues, I make xii. other knights the patrones, for the more variety of the history: of which these three bookes contayn three, The first of the knight of the Redcrosse, in whome I expresse Holynes: The seconde of Sir Guyon, in

whome I sette forth Temperaunce: The third of whome I selle of the Herbert annex. In this work the Pricture Chastity. But because the beginning of the whole worke seemeth abrupte and as depending whom other antecedents, it needs that ye knaw the occasion of these three knights severall adventures. For the Methode of a Poet historical is not such, as of an Historiographer. For an Historio-grapher discourselh of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions, but a l'oet thrusteth into the middest, even where it most concerneth him. and there recoursing to the thinges forepaste, and durining of thinges to come, maketh a pleas-and durining of thinges to come, maketh a pleas-ing Analysis of all. The beginning therefore of my history, if it were to be told by an Historio-grapher, should be the twe/th booke, which is the last, where I deuise that the Faery Queene kept her Annuall feaste xir. dayes, uppon which xii. seuerall dayes, the occasions of the xii seuerall adventures hapned, which being undertaken by xii. senerall knights, are in these xii books senerally handled and discoursed. The first wis this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented him selfe a fall clownishe younge man, who falling before the Queen of Faries desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse : which was that hee might have the alchienement of any adventure, which during that feaste should happen, that being grauntel, he rested him on the floore, unfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Some after entred a faire Ladye in mourning weedes, riding on a white Asse, with a dwarfe behind her leading a warlike steed, that bore the Armes of a knight, and his speare in the dwarfes hand. Shee falling before the Queene of Faeries, complayned that her father and mother an ancient King and Queene, had bene by an huge dragon many years shut up in a brasen Castle, who thence suffred them not to yssew: and therefore besought the Faery Queene to assygne her some one of her knights to take on him that exployt. Presently that clownish person opstarting, desired that adventure: whereat the Queene much wondering, and the Lady much gainesaying, yet he earnestly importuned his desire. In the end the Lady told him that vilesse that armour which she brought, would serve him (that is the armour of a Christian was researched by Saint Pauls Balantes.) tian man specified by Saint Paul v Ephes.) that

he could not succeed in that enterprise, which being forthwith put upon him with dewe furnitures thereunto, he seemed the goodliest man in al that company, and was well liked of the Lady. And effessoones taking on him knighthood, and mounting on that straunge Courser, he will forth with her on that advanture; where beginneth the first booke, we.

A gentle knight was pricking on the playne &c

The second day ther came in a Palmer bearing an Infant with bloody hands, whose Parents he comblained to have bene slayn by an Enchaun. teresse called Acrasia: and therjore craued of the Faery Queene, to appoint him some knight, to performe thataduenture, which being assigned to Sir Guyon, he presently went forth with that same l'almer: which is the beginning of the third day there came in, a Groome who com plained before the Facry Queene, that a vile En chaunter called Busirane had in hand a most faire Lady called Amoretta, whom he kept in most grieuous torment, because she would not yuit him the pleasure of her body. Whereupon Sir Scudamour the louer of that Lady presently tooks on him that adventure. But being vnable to per forme it by reason of the hard Enchauntments. after long sorrow, in the end met with Brito martis, who succoured him, and reskewed his lone.

But by occasion hereof, many other adventures are intermedied, but rather as Acadents, then intendments. As the lone of Britomart, the out throw of Marinell, the misery of Florimell, the vertuousnes of Helphabe, the lasciutousnes of Helphabe, and many the like.

Thus much Sir, I have briefly overronne to direct your understanding to the wel-head of the thistory, that from thence gathering the whole intention of the conceit, ye may as in a handfull gripe at the discourse, which otherwise may hapfily seeme tedious and concused. So humbly craving the continuaunce of your honorable favour fovorrds me, and the element establishment of your happines. I humbly take leave.

23. Ianuary. 1589 Yours most humbly affectionate Ed. Spenser.

## A Vision vpon this conceipt of the Faery Queene.

M. E. thought I saw the graue, where Laura lay. Mythin that Temple, where the vestall flame. For they this Queene attended, in whose steed. Was wont to burne, and passing by that way, To see that buried dust of hing fame, the hardest stones were seene to bloed. Whose tombe faire loue, and fairer vertue kept, All suddenly I saw the Facry Queene : At whose approch the soule of Petrarke wept,

And grones of buried ghostes the heauens did perse. Where Homers spright did tremble all for griefe, And curst th'accesse of that celestiall theire.

#### Another of the same.

He frayse of meaner wits this worke like profit | Behold her Princely mind aright, and write thy brings

herene

written bin. It thou hast beautie prays I, let her sole lookes

Judge it ought therein be amis, and ment it by

her eine If Chartitie want ought, or Temperance her Oucene anew.

's Joth the Cuckoes song delight when Philumena Means while she shall perceive, how farre her erfues sore

If then hast formed right true vertues face. About the reach of all that line, or such as wrote

Vertue her selfe can best discerne, to whom they \ In thereby willex, use and favour the pood will: Il have writtee can not be exprest, but by an

Angels quill. Of me no lines are lou'd, nor letters are of

Of all which speake our English tongue, but those of thy dentce

### To the learned Shepheard.

Ollyn I see by thy new taken taske, some sacred fury hath enricht thy braynes, That leades thy muse in hanghtie ver se to maske, and loath the layes that longs to lowly swaynes

That lifts thy notes from Shepheardes vnto kings,

So like the linely Larke that mounting sings

Thy louely Rosolinde seemes now forlorne, and all thy gentle flockes for gotten quight, thy channeed hart now holdes thy pypes in scorne, those prety pypes that did thy mates delight Those trustic mates, that loud thee so well, Whom thou gan'st mirth: as they gave thee the bell

Yet as thou earst with thy sweete roundelayes, di lst virre to che our laddes in homely bowers So moughtst thou now in these refyned layes, delight the dainty eares of higher powers. And so mought they in their deepe skanning

skili Alow and grace our Collyns flowing quill.

And fare befall that Facrie Queene of thine, in whose faire eyes lone linckt with vertue sits Lufusing by those hewlies fiers deuyne, such high concertes into thy humble wits. As raised hath poore pastors oaten reede, From rusticke tunes, to chaunt heroique deedes

So mought thy Rederosse knight with happy hand uctorious be in that faire Ilands right

Which thou doest vaile in Type of Faery land Elyzas blessed field, that Albion hight. That shieldes her friends, and warres her mightie focs.

Yet still with people, peace, and plentie flowes

But (tolly Shepheard) though with pleasing style, thou feast the humour of the Courtly traine: Let not conceipt thy setled sence beguile, ne daunted be through enuy or disdaine. Subject thy dome to her Empyring spright, From whence thy Muse, and all the world takes light.

Hobynoll.

F Ayre Thamis streame, that from Ludds stately towne,

Runst paying tribute to the Ocean scas, Let all thy Nymphes and Syrens of renowne Be silent, whyle this Bryttane Orpheus playes: Nere thy sweet bankes, there lives that sacred

Whose hand strowes Palme and neuer-dying bayes, Let all at once, with thy soft murmuring sowne Present her with this worthy Poets prayes. For he hath taught hye drifts in shepeherdes weedes,

And deepe conceites now singes in Faeries deedes. R. S.

Raue Muses march in triumph and with Grayses,

Our Goddesse here hath ginen you leave to land: And biddes this rare dispenser of your graces Bow downe his brow unto her sacred hand. Desertes findes dew in that most princely doome, In whose sweete brest are all the Muses bredde: So did that great Augustus erst in Roome With leaves of fame adorne his l'oets hedde. Faire be the guerdon of your Farry Queene, Euen of the fairest that the world hath seene.

H.B.

W Hen stout Achilles heard of Helens rape
And what reuenge the States of Greece deuisd.
Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape,
In womans weedes him selfe he then disguisde:
But this deuise Vysses soone did spy,
And brought him forth, the chaunce of warre to try.

When Spencer saw the fame was spredd so large, Through Faery land of their renowned Queene: Loth that his Muse should take so great a charge, As in such haughty matter to be seene, To seeme a shepheard then he made his choice, But Sydney heard him sing, and knew his voice.

And as Vlysses brought faire Thetis sonne From his retyred life to menage armes: So Spencer was by Sidneys speaches wonne, To blaze her fame not fearing future harmes: For well he knew, his Muse would soone be tyred In her high praise, that all the world admired.

Yet as Achilles in those warlike frayes, Did win the palme from all the Grecian Pectors. So Spencer now to his immortall prayse, Hath wome the Laurell quite from all his feres. What though his taske exceed a humaine witt, He is excus'd, sith Sidney thought it fitt.

[10] looke vpon a worke of rare deuise
The which a work man setteth out to view,
And not to yield it the descrued prise,
that who such a work manship is dew,
Doth either proue the indgement to be naught
Or els doth shew a mind with enuy fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke, Which no man goes about to discommend, Would raise a tealous doubt that there did lurke, Some secret doubt, whereto the prayse did tend For when men know the goodnes of the wyne, I'is needlesse for the hoast to haue a sygne. Thus then to shew my indgement to be such As can discorne of colours blacke, and white, As alls to free my minde from enuies tuch,

That neuer gives to any man his right, I here pronounce this workmanship is such, As that no pen can set it forth too much.

And thus I hang a garland at the dore, Not for to skew the goodnes of the ware: liut such hath beene the customeheretofore, And customes very hardly broken are. And when your last shall tell you this is trew, Then looke you gine your hoa! this vimost dew. Ignoto.

## [DEDICATORY SONNETS.]

### To the right honourable Sir Christopher Hatton, Lord high Chauncelor of England. &c.

Those prudent heads, that with theire counsels wise
Whylom the Pillours of th'earth did sustaine,
And taught ambitious Rome to tyrannise,
And in the neck of all the world to rayne,
Oft from those graue affaires were wont abstaine,
With the sweet Lady Muses for to play:
So Ennius the elder Africane,

So Maro oft did Casars cares allay.
So you great Lord, that with your counsell sway
The burdeine of this kingdom mightily,
With like delightes sometimes may eke delay,
The ragged brow of carefull Policy:
And to these ydle rymes lend litle space,
Which for their titles sake may find more

## To the right honourable the Lo. Burleigh Lo. high Threasurer of England.

To you right noble Lord, whose carefull brest Tomenage of most graue affaires is bent, And on whose mightie shoulders most doth

The burdein of this kingdomes gouernement, As the wide compasse of the firmament, On Allas mighty shoulders is vpstayd; Vnfuly I these ydle rimes present, The labor of lost time, and wit vistayd. Yet if their deeper sence be inly wayd, And the dim vele, with which from comune vew Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd. Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to you. Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receaue, And wipe their faults out of your censure graue E. S.

### To the right Honourable the Earle of Oxenford, Lord high Chamberlayne of England. &c.

Receive most Noble Lord in gentle give, The write fruit of an viready wit: Which by thy countenaunce doth crave to bee Defended from foule Enuies poisnous bit. Which so to doe may thee right well besit, Sith th'antique glory of thine auncestry Vader a shady wele is therein writ,

And eke thine owne long lining memory,
Succeeding them in true nobility:
And also for the loue, which thou doest beare
To th' Heliconian ymps, and they to thee,
They wnto thee, and thou to them most deare:
Deare as thou art vnto thy selfe, so loue
That loues and honours thee, as doth behoue.

## To the right honourable the Earle of Northumberland.

I He sacred Muses have made alwaves clame
I To be the Nourses of nobility,
And Registres of eurlasting fame,
To all that armse professe and chevalry.
Then by like right the noble Progeny,
Which them succeed in fame and worth, are
tyde
Tembrace the service of sweete loctry.

By whose endeuours they are glorifide,
And the from all, of whom it is enuide.
To patronize the authour of their praise,
Which gives them life, that els would soone
have dide,
And crownes their ashes with immortall baies.
To thee therefore right mobile Lord I send
This present of my paines, it to defend,

## To the right honourable the Earle of Cumberland.

R Edoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind. The flowre of cheualty now bloosming faire, Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kind, Which of their praises haue left you the haire; To you this humble present I prepare, For loue of vertue and of Martiall praise, To which though nobly ve inclined are, As goodhe well ye shew'd in late assaies,

Yet braue ensample of long passed daies,
In which trew honor yee may fashiond see,
To like desire of honor may ye raise,
And fill your raind with magnanimitee.
Receive it Lord therefore as it was ment,
For honor of your name and high descent,
E. S.

# To the most honourable and excellent Lo. the Earle of Essex. Great Maister of the Horse to her Highnesse, and knight of the Noble order of the Garter. &c.

Admificke Lord, whose vertues excellent I Doe merit a most famous Focts with. To be thy living praises instrument, Yet doe not sdeigne, to let thy name be writt In this base Poeme, for thee far unfitt. Nought is thy worth disparaged thereby, but when my Muse, whose fethers nothing full.

Doe yet hut flagt, and havly learne to fly
With bolder wing shall dare alofte to sty
To the last praises of this Faery (mene,
Then shall it make more famous memory
Of thine Heroucke parts, such as they beene:
Till then wouch wie thy noble countenance,
To these first labours needed furtheraunce.

## To the right Honourable the Earle of Ormond and Ossory.

R Eccue most noble Lord a simple taste
Of the wilde fruit, which saluage soyl hath
bred,
Which being through long wars left almost waste,
With brutish barbarisme is ouerspredd;
And in so faire a land, as may be redd,
Not one Parnassus, nor one Helicone
Left for sweete Muses to be harboured,

But where thy selfe hast thy braue mansione; There in deede dwel faire Graces many one And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned wits, And in thy person without Paragone All goodly bountie and true honour sits, Such therefore, as that wasted soyl doth yield, Receiue dear Lord in worth, the fruit of barren field.

To the right honourable the Lo. Ch. Howard, Lo. high Admiral of England, knight of the noble order of the Garter, and one of her Maiesties privile Counsel. &c.

And ye, braue Lord, whose goodly personage, And noble deeds each other garnishing, Make you ensample to the present age, Of th'old Heroes, whose famous of spring The antique Poets wont so much to sing, In this same Pageaunt have a worthy place, Sith those huge castles of Castilian king,

That vainly threatned kingdomes to displace,
Like flying doues ye did bef, re you chace;
And that proud people woxen insolent
Through many victorics, didst first deface:
Thy praises euerlasting monument
Is in this verse engrauen semblably,
That it may line to all posterity.

### To the right honourable the Lord of Hunsdon, high Chamberlaine to her Maiesty.

Renowmed Lord, that for your worthinesse, And noble deeds haue your deserued place, High in the fauour of that Emperesse, The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace, Here eke of right haue you a worthie place, Both for your nearnes to that Faerie Queene, And for your owne high merit in like cace, Of which, apparaunt proofe was to be seene,

When that tumultuous rage and fearfull deene Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify, And their disloiall powre defaced clene, The record of enduring memory. Line Lord for eur in this lasting verse, That all posteritie thy honour may reherse. B. S.

### To the most renowmed and valiant Lord, the Lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the Noble order of the Garter, &c.

M Ost Noble Lord the pillor of my life, And Patrone of my Muses pupillage, Through whose large bountie poured on me

In the first season of my feeble age, I now doe liue, bound yours by vassalage Sith nothing cuer may redeeme, nor reque Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage, Vouchsafe in worth this small guift to recease. Which in your noble hands for pledge I lease, Of all the rest, that I am tyde t'account: Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did weater in sauadge soyle, far from Parnasso mount, And roughly wrought in an valearned Loome The which youchsafe dear Lord your fauorable doome.

## To the right honourable the Lord of Buckhurst, one of her Maiesties privile Counsell.

I N vain I thinke right honourable Lord,
By this rude time to memorize thy name;
Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne record,
In golden verse, worthy immortal fame:
Thou much more fit (were leasure to the same)
Thy gracious Souerains praises to compile.
And he: imperiall Maiestie to frame,

In loftie numbers and heroicke stile.
But sith thou maist not so, giue leaue a while
To baser wit his power therein to spend,
Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may file.
And vnaduised ouersights amend.
But euermore vouchsafe it to maintaine
Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

# To the right honourable Sir Fr. Walsingham knight, principall Secretary to her Maiesty, and of her honourable priny Counsell.

That Mantuane Poetes incompared spirit, Whose girland now is set in highest place, Had not Mecαnas for his worthy merit, It first aduaunst to great Augussus grace, Might long perhaps haue lien in silence bace, Ne beneso much admir'd of later age. This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to trace, Flies for like aide vnto your Patronage;

That are the great Mecenas of this age,
As wel to al that ciuil artes professe
As those that are inspired with Martial rage,
And craues protection of her feeblenesse:
Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse
In bigger tunes to sound your living prayse.
E. S.

### To the right noble Lord and most valiaunt Captaine, Sir Iohn Norris knight, Lord president of Mounster.

W Ho euer gaue more honourable prize
To the sweet Muse, then did the Martiall crew;
That their braue deeds she might immortalize
In her shril tromp, and sound their praises
dew?

Who then ought more to fauour her, then you Moste noble Lord, the honor of this age, And Precedent of all that armes ensue?

Whose warlike prowesse and manly courage, Tempred with reason and adultement sage Hath fild sad Belgicke with victorious spoile, In Fraunce and Ireland left a famous gage, And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile. Sith then each where thou hast dispredd thy fame, Loue bim, that hath eternized your name.

# To the right noble and valorous knight, Sir Walter Raleigh, Lo. Wardein of the Stanneryes, and lieftenaunt of Cornewaile.

(TO thee that art the sommers Nightingale, I Thy soueraine Goddesses most deare delight, Why doe I send this rusticke Madrigale, I hat may thy tunefull eare vnseason quite? Thou onely fit this Argument to write, In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath built her wore,

And dainty love learnd sweetly to endite, My rimes I know unsavory and sowre,

To last the streames, that like a golden showrs
Flow from thy fruitfull head, of thy lones

Fitter perhaps to thonder Martiall stowre, When so thee list thy lofty Muse to raise: Yet till that thou thy Poeme will make knowne, Let thy faire Cinthias praises bee thus rudely showne.

E. S.

## To the right honourable and most vertuous Lady, the Countesse of Penbroke.

Emembraunce of that most Heroicke spirit,
The heuens pride, the glory of our daies,
Which now triumpheth through immortall merit
Of his braue vertues, crownd with lasting baies,
Of heuenlie blis and euerlasting praies;
Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore,
To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies;
Bids me most noble Lady to adore

His goodly image living evermore,
In the divine resemblaunce of your face;
Which with your vertues ye embellish more,
And native beauty deck with hevenlie grace:
For his, and for your owne especial sake,
Vouchacle from him this token in good worth to
take.

## To the most vertuous, and beautifull Lady, the Lady Carew.

N E may I, without blot of endlesse blame, You fairest Lady leaue out of this place, But with remembraunce of your gracious name, Wherewith that courtly garlond most ye grace, And deck the world, adorne these verses base: Not that these few lines can in them comprise flose glorious ornaments of heuenly grace, Wherewith ye triumph ouer feeble eyes, And in subdued harts do tyranyse:
For thereunto doth need a golden quill,
And sluer leaues, them rightly to deuise,
But to make humble present of good will:
Which whenas timely meanes it purchase may.
In ampler wise it selfe will forth display.
E. S.

## To all the gratious and beautifull Ladies in the Court.

Ile Chian Peincter, when he was requirde To pourtraict Venus in her perfect hew, to make his worke more absolute, desird Of all the fairest Maides to have the vew. Much more me needs to draw the semblant trew, Of brauthes Queene, the worlds solewonderment, to sharpe my sence with sundry beauties vew, And steale from each some part of ornament.

If all the world to seeke I ouerwent,
A fairer crew yel no where could I see,
I hen that braue court doth to mine eie present,
That the worlds pride seemes gathered thers
to bee.

Of each a part I stole by cunning thefte:
Forgine it me faire Dames, sith lesse ye haus
not lefte.

E.S.

## THE Shepheardes Calender

Conteyning twelue Æglogues proportionable to the twelue monethes.

Entitlea

### TO THE NOBLE AND VERTV-

ous Gentleman most worthy of all titles
both of learning and cheualrie M.
Philip Sidney.

(:.)



### AT LONDON.

## Printed by Hugh Singleton, dwelling in

Creede Lane neere vnto Ludgate at the figne of the gylben Tunne, and are there to be solde.

#### TO HIS BOOKE.

Goe little booke: thy selfe present. As child whose parent is unkent: To him that is the president Of noblesse and of cheualree, And if that Enuie barke at thee, As sure it will, for succoure flee Vnder the shadow of his wing. And asked, who thee forth did bring. A shepheards swaine save did thee sing. All as his straying flocke he fedde:

And when his honor has thee redde. Craue pardon for my hardyhedde. But if that any aske thy name. Say thou wert base begot with blame: For thy thereof thou takest shame, And when thou art past ieopardee. Come tell me, what was sayd of mee And I will send more after thee.

Immeritó.

## ¶ To the most excellent and learned both

Drator and Poete, Mayster Gabriell Haruey, his

verie special and singular good frend E. K. commendeth the good lyking of this his labour. and the patronage of the new Poete.

**INCOUTHE** VNKISTE, Sayde the olde famous Poete Chaucer: whom for his excellencie and wonderfull skil in making, his scholler Lidgate, a worthy scholler of so excellent a maister, calleth the Loadestarre of our Language: and whom our Colin clout in his Æglogue calleth Tityrus the God of shepheards, comparing hym to the worthines of the Roman Tityrus Virgile. Which prouerbe, myne owne good friend Ma. Haruey, as in that good old Poete it serued well Pandares purpose, for the bolstering of his baudy brocage, so very well taketh place in this our new Poete, who for that he is vncouthe (as said Chaucer) is vnkist, and vnknown to most men, is regarded but of few. But I dout not, so soone as his name shall come into the knowledg of men, and his worthines be sounded in the tromp of fame, but that he shall be not onely kiste, but also beloued of all, embraced of the most, and wondred at of the best. No lesse I thinke, deserueth his wittinesse in deuising, his pithinesse in vttering, his complaints of loue so louely, his discourses of pleasure so pleasantly, his pastorall rudenesse, his morall wisenesse, his dewe obseruing of

sons, in matter, in speach, and generally in al seemely simplycitie of handeling his matter. and framing his words: the which of many thinges which in him be straunge, I know will seeme the straungest, the words them selucbeing so auncient, the knitting of them so short and intricate, and the whole Periode and compasse of speache so delightsome for the roundnesse, and so graue for the straungenesse. And firste of the wordes to speake, I graunt they be something hard, and of most men vnused, yet both English, and also vsed of most excellent Authors and most famous Poetes. In whom whenas this our Poet hath bene much traueiled and throughly redd, how could it be, (as that worthy Oratour sayde) but that walking in the sonne although for other cause he walked, yet needes he mought be sunburnt; and having the sound of those auncient Poetes still ringing in his eares, he mought needes in singing hit out some of theyr tunes. But whether he vseth them by such casualtye and custome, or of set purpose and choyse, as thinking them fittest for such rusticall rudenesse of shepheards, eyther for that theyr rough Decorum euerye where, in personages, in sea- sounde would make his rymes more ragged and rustical, or els because such olde and obsolete wordes are most vsed of country folke, sure 1 think, and think I think not amisse, that they bring great grace and, as one would say, auctoritie to the verse. For albe amongst many other faultes it specially be objected of Valla against Liuie, and of other against Saluste, that with ouer much studie they affect antiquitie, as coueting thereby credence and honor of elder yeeres, yet I am of opinion, and cke the best learned are of the lyke, that those auncient solemne wordes are a great ornament both in the one and in the other; the one labouring to set forth in hys worke an eternall image of antiquitie, and the other carefully discoursing matters of grauitie and importaunce. For if my memory fayle not, Tullie in that booke, wherein he endeuoureth to set forth the paterne of a perfect Oratour, sayth that ofttimes an auncient worde maketh the style seeme graue, and as it were reuerend: no otherwise then we honour and reuerence gray heares for a certein religious regard, which we haue of old age. Yet nether every where must old words be stuffed in, nor the commen Dialecte and maner of speaking so corrupted therby, that as in old buildings it seme disorderly and ruinous. But all as in most exquisite pictures they vse to blaze and portraict not onely the daintie lineaments of beautye, but also rounde about it to shadow the rude thickets and craggy clifts, that by the basenesse of such parts, more excellency may accrew to the principall; for oftimes we fynde ourselues, I knowe not how, singularly delighted with the shewe of such naturall rudenesse, and take great pleasure in that disorderly order. Euen so doe those rough and harsh termes enlumine and make more clearly to appeare the brightnesse of braue and glorious words. So oftentimes a dischorde in Musick maketh a comely concordaunce: so great delight tooke the worthy Poete Alceus to behold a blemish in the joynt of a wel shaped body. But if any will rashly blame such his purpose in choyse of old and vnwonted words, him may I more justly blame and condemne, or of witlesse headinesse in judging, or of heedelesse hardinesse in condemning for not marking the compasse of hys bent, he wil judge of the length of his cast. For in my opinion it is one special prayse, of many whych are dew to this Poete, that he hath laboured to restore, as to theyr rightfull heritage such good and naturall English words, as haue ben long time out of vse and almost cleane disherited. Which is the Poeticall spirite had newly rauished them

onely cause, that our Mother tonge, which truely of it self is both ful enough for prose and stately enough for verse, hath long time ben counted most bare and barrein of both. Which default when as some endeuoured to salue and recure, they patched up the holes with peces and rags of other languages, borrowing here of the french, there of the Italian. euery where of the Latine, not weighing how il. those tongues accorde with themselues, but much worse with ours: So now they have made our English tongue, a gallimaufray or hodgepodge of all other speches. Other some not so wel seene in the English tonge as perhaps in other languages, if they happen to here an olde word albeit very naturall and significant. crye out streight way, that we speak no English, but gibbrish, or rather such, as in old time Euanders mother spake. Whose first shame is, that they are not ashamed, in their own mother tonge straungers to be counted and alienes. The second shame no lesse then the first, that what so they understand not, they streight way deeme to be sencelesse, and not at al to be vnderstode. Much like to the Mole in Asopes fable, that being blynd her selfe, would in no wise be perswaded, that any beast could see. The last more shameful then both, that of their owne country and natural speach, which together with their Nources milk they sucked, they have so base regard and bastard judgement, that they will not onely themselves not labor to garnish and beautific it, but also repine, that of other it shold be embellished. Like to the dogge in the maunger, that him selfe can eate no hay, and yet barketh at the hungry bullock, that so faine would feede: whose currish kind though it cannot be kept from barking, yet I conne them thanke that they refrain from byting.

Now for the knitting of sentences, whych they call the joynts and members therof, and for al the compasse of the speach, it is round without roughnesse, and learned wythout hardnes, such indeede as may be perceived of the leaste, vnderstoode of the moste, but judged onely of the learned. For what in most English wryters vseth to be loose, and as it were vngyrt, in this Authour is well grounded, finely framed, and strongly trussed up together. In regard wherof, I scorne and spue out the rakehellye route of our ragged rymers (for so themselues vse to hunt the letter) which without learning boste, without judgement langle, without reason rage and fome, as if some instinct of

aboue the meanenesse of commen capacitie. And being in the middest of all theyr brauery, sodenly eyther for want of matter, or of ryme, or having forgotten theyr former conceipt, they seeme to be so pained and traueiled in theyr remembrance, as it were a woman in childebirth or as that same Pythia, when the traunce came youn her.

Os rabidum fera corda domans &c.

Nethelesse let them a Gods name feede on theyr owne folly, so they seeke not to darken the beames of others glory. As for Colin, vnder whose person the Author selfe is shadowed, how furre he is from such vaunted titles and glorious showes, both him selfe sheweth, where he sayth.

Of Muses Hobbin. I conne no skill. And Enough is me to paint out my vnrest, &c.

And also appeareth by the basenesse of the name, wherein, it semeth, he chose rather to vnfold great matter of argument couertly, then professing it, not suffice thereto accordingly. Which moued him rather in Æglogues, then other wise to write, doubting perhaps his habilitie, which he little needed, or mynding to furnish our tongue with this kinde, wherein it faulteth, or following the example of the best and most auncient Poetes, which deuised this kind of wryting, being both so base for the matter, and homely for the manner, at the first to trye theyr habilities: and as young birdes, that be newly crept out of the nest, by little first to proue theyr tender wyngs, before they make a greater flyght. So flew Theocritus, as you may perceive he was all ready full fledged. So flew Virgile, as not yet well feeling his winges. So flew Mantuane, as being not full somd. So Petrarque. Boccace; So Marot, Sanazarus, and also diuers other excellent both Italian and French Poetes, whose foting this Author euery where followeth, yet so as few, but they be wel sented can trace him out. So finally flyeth this our new Poete, as a bird, whose principals be scarce growen out, but yet as that in time shall be hable to keepe wing with the best.

Now as touching the generall dryft and purpose of his Æglogues, I mind not to say much, him selfe labouring to conceale it. Onely this appeareth, that his vnstayed yougth had long wandred in the common Labyrinth of Loue, in which time to mitigate and allay the heate of his passion, or els to warne (as he sayth) the young shepheards s. his equalls and companions of his vnfortunate folly, he compiled

these xij. Æglogues, which for that they be proportioned to the state of the xij. monethes. he termeth the SHEPHEARDS CALENDAR. applying an olde name to a new worke. Hereunto haue I added a certain Glosse or scholion for thexposition of old wordes and harder phrases: which maner of glosing and commenting, well I wote, wil seeme straunge and rare in our tongue: yet for somuch as I knew many excellent and proper deuises both in wordes and matter would passe in the speedy course of reading, either as vnknowen, or as not marked, and that in this kind, as in other we might be equal to the learned of other nations, I thought good to take the paines vpon me, the rather for that by meanes of some familiar acquaintaunce I was made privie to his counsell and secret meaning in them, as also in sundry other works of his. Which albeit I know he nothing so much hateth, as to promulgate, yet thus much haue I aduentured vpon his frendship, him selfe being for long time furre estraunged, hoping that this will the rather occasion him, to put forth divers other excellent works of his, which slepe in silence, as his Dreames, his Legendes, his Court of Cupide, and sondry others; whose commendations to set out, were verve vayne: the thinges though worthy of many, yet being knowen to few. These my present paynes if to any they be pleasurable or profitable, be you judge, mine own good Maister Haruey, to whom I have both in respect of your worthinesse generally, and otherwyse vpon some particular and special considerations voued this my labour, and the maydenhead of this our commen frends Poetrie. himselfe having already in the beginning dedicated it to the Noble and worthy Gentleman, the right worshipfull Ma. Phi. Sidney, a special fauourer and maintainer of all kind of learning. Whose cause I pray you Sir, yf Enuie shall stur vp any wrongful accusasion, defend with your mighty Rhetorick and other your rare gifts of learning, as you can, and shield with your good wil, as you ought, against the malice and outrage of so many enemies, as I know wilbe set on fire with the sparks of his kindled glory. And thus recommending the Author vnto you, as vnto his most special good frend, and my selfe vnto you both, as one making singuler account of two so very good and so choise frends, I bid you both most hartely farwel, and commit you and your most commendable studies to the tuicion of the greatest.

Your owne assuredly to be commaunded E. K.

Post ser Ow I trust M. Haruey, that vpon sight of your speciall frends and fellow Poets doings, or els for enuie of so many vnworthy Ouidams, which catch at the garlond, which to you alone is dewe, you will be perswaded to pluck out of the hateful darknesse, those so many excellent English poemes of yours, which lye hid, and bring them forth to eternall light. Trust me you doe both them great wrong, in deprining them of the desired sonne, and also

your selfe, in smoothering your deserued prayses, and all men generally, in withholding from them so divine pleasures, which they might conceine of your gallant English verses, as they haue already doen of your Latine Poemes, which in my opinion both for invention and Elocution are very delicate, and superexcellent. And thus againe, I take my leaue of my good Mayster Haruey. From my lodging at London thys 10. of Aprill. 1579.

## The generall argument of

the whole booke.

Ittle I hope, needeth me at large to deuided into three formes or ranckes. For discourse the first Originall of Aglogues. hanng alreadie touched the same. But for the word .Eglogues I know is vnknowen to most, and also mistaken of some the best learned (as they think) I wyll say somewhat thereof, being not at all impertinent to my present purpose.

They were first of the Greekes the inventours of them called Æglogaj as it were alyor or αίγονόμων. λόγοι, that is Goteheards tales. For Theocritus in whom is more ground of authoritie, then in Virgile, this specially from that derining, as from the first head and welspring the whole Inuention of his Æglogues, maketh Goteheards the persons and authors of his tales. This being, who seeth not the grossenesse of believe that they are more rightly termed Eclogai, as they would say, extraordinary discourses of vnnecessarie matter, which difinition the nature of the thing, yet no whit answereth with the diantoris and interpretation of the

eyther they be Plaintiue, as the first, the sixt, the eleventh, and the twelfth, or recreative, such as al those be, which conceive matter of loue, or commendation of special personages, or Moral: which for the most part be mixed with some Satyrical bitternesse, namely the second of reverence dewe to old age, the fift of coloured deceipt, the seventh and ninth of dissolute shepheards and pastours, the tenth of contempt although in Virgile and others the speakers of Poetrie and pleasaunt wits. And to this be more shepheards, then Goteheards, yet division may every thing herein be reasonably applyed: A few onely except, whose speciall purpose and meaning I am not privile to. And thus much generally of these xij. Æclogues. Now will we speake particularly of all, and first of the first. Which he calleth by the first monethes name Ianuarie: whercin to some he such as by colour of learning would make vs may seeme fowly to haue faulted, in that he erroniously beginneth with that moneth, which beginneth not the yeare. For it is wel known, and stoutely mainteyned with stronge reasons albe in substaunce and meaning it agree with of the learned, that the yeare beginneth in March. For then the sonne reneweth his finished course, and the seasonable spring word. For they be not termed Ecloques, but refresheth the earth, and the plesaunce thereof Eglogues. Which sentence this authour very being buried in the sadnesse of the dead winter well observing, vpon good judgement, though now worne away, reliueth. This opinion maynindeede few Goteheards haue to doe herein, teine the olde Astrologers and Philosophers, nethelesse doubteth not to cal them by the namely the reuerend Andalo, and Macrobius vsed and best knowen name. Other curious in his holydayes of Saturne, which accoumpt discourses hereof I reserve to greater occasion. also was generally observed both of Grecians These xij. Æclogues euery where answering to and Romans. But sauing the leaue of such the seasons of the twelve monthes may be well learned heads, we may ntaine a custome of

coumpting the seasons from the moneth Ianuary, vpon a more speciall cause, then the heathen Philosophers euer coulde conceiue, that is, for the incarnation of our mighty Saujour and eternall redeemer the L. Christ, who as then renewing the state of the decayed world, and returning the compasse of expired veres to theyr former date and first commencement, left to vs his heires a memoriall of his birth in the ende of the last yeere and beginning of the next. Which reckoning, beside that eternall monument of our saluation, leaneth also vppon good proofe of special judgement. For albeit that in elder times, when as yet the coumpt of the yere was not perfected, as afterwarde it was by Iulius Cæsar, they began to tel the monethes from Marches beginning, and according to the same God (as is sayd in Scripture) comaunded the people of the Iewes to count the moneth Abib, that which we call March, for the first moneth, in remembraunce that in that moneth he brought them out of the land of Ægipt: yet according to tradition of latter times it hath bene otherwise obserued, both in gouernment of the church, and rule of Mightiest Realmes. For from Iulius Cæsar who first observed the leape veere which he called Bissextilem Annum, and brought in to a more certain course the odde wandring dayes which of the Greekes were called ὑπερβαίνωντες. Of the Romanes intercalares (for in such matter of learning I am forced to vse the termes of the learned) the monethes have bene nombred xii. which in the first ordinaunce of Romulus were but tenne, counting but CCCiiij. dayes in euery | continueth he throughout.

veare, and beginning with March. But Numa Pompilius, who was the father of al the Romain ceremonies and religion, seeing that reckoning to agree neither with the course of the sonne. nor of the Moone, therevnto added two monethes, Ianuary and February: wherin it seemeth, that wise king minded vpon good reason to begin the yeare at Ianuarie, of him therefore so called tanquam lanua anni the gate and entraunce of the yere, or of the name of the god Ianus, to which god for that the old Paynims attributed the byrth and beginning of all creatures new comming into the worlde. it seemeth that he therfore to him assigned the beginning and first entraunce of the yeare. Which account for the most part hath hetherto continued. Notwithstanding that the Ægiptians beginne theyr yeare at September, for that according to the opinion of the best Rabbins, and very purpose of the scripture selfe, God made the worlde in that Moneth, that is called of them Tisri. And therefore he commaunded them, to keepe the feast of Pauilions in the end of the yeare, in the xv. day of the seuenth moneth, which before that time was the first.

But our Authour respecting nether the subtiltie of thone parte, nor the antiquitie of thother, thinketh it fittest according to the simplicitie of commen vnderstanding, to begin with Ianuarie, wening it perhaps no decorum, that Shepheard should be seene in matter of so deepe insight, or canuase a case of so doubtful iudgment. So therefore beginneth he, and so

## Januarye.



## Ægloga prima.

#### ARGVMENT.

IN this fyrst Æglogue Colin cloute a shepheardes boy complaineth him of his vnfortunate loue, being but newly (as semeth) enamoured of a countrie lasse called Rosalinde: with which strong affection being very sore traueled, he compareth his carefull case to the sadde season of the yeare, to the frostie ground, to the frosen trees, and to his owne winterbeaten flocke. And lastlye, fynding himselfe robbed of all former pleasaunce and delights, hee breaketh his Pipe in peeces and casteth him selfe to the ground.

#### COLIN CLOVTE.

A Shepeheards boye (no better doe him call) when Winters wastful spight was almost spent.

All in a sunneshine day, as did befall, Led forth his flock, that had bene long ypent. So faynt they woxe, and feeble in the folde, That now vnnethes their feete could them vphold. All as the Sheepe, such was the shepeheards looke.

For pale and wanne he was, (alas the while,)
May seeme he lovd, or els some care he tooke:
Well couth he tune his pipe, and frame his stile.
Tho to a hill his faynting flocke he ledde, 11
And thus him playnd, the while his shepe there fedde.

Ye Gods of loue, that pitie louers payne, (If any gods the paine of louers pitie:)
Looke from aboue, where you in loyes remaine,
And bowe your eares vnto my dolefull dittie.
And Pan thou shepheards God, that once didst
loue,

Pitie the paines, that thou thy selfe didst proue.

Thou barrein ground, whome winters wrath hath wasted.

Art made a myrrhour, to behold my plight: Whilome thy fresh spring flowrd, and after hasted

Thy sommer prowde with Daffadillies dight. And now is come thy wynters stormy state, Thy mantle mard, wherein thou maskedst late. Such rage as winters, reigneth in my heart,
My life bloud friesing with vnkindly cold:
Suchstormy stoures do breede my balefullsmart,
As if my yeare were wast, and woxen old.
And yet alas, but now my spring begonne,
And yet alas, yt is already donne.

30

You naked trees, whose shady leaues are lost, Wherein the byrds were wont to build their bowre:

And now are clothed with mosse and hoary frost, Instede of bloosmes, wherwith your buds did flowre:

I see your teares, that from your boughes doe raine.

Whose drops in drery ysicles remaine.

All so my lustfull leafe is drye and sere, My timely buds with wayling all are wasted: The blossome, which my braunch of youth did beare,

With breathed sighes is blowne away, and blasted 40

And from mine eyes the drizling teares descend, As on your boughes the ysicles depend.

Thou feeble flocke, whose fleece is rough and rent, Whose knees are weake through fast and euill fare:

Mayst witnesse well by thy ill gouernement, Thy maysters mind is ouercome with care. Thou weake, I wanne: thou leane, I quite forlorne:

With mourning pyne I, you with pyning mourne.

A thousand sithes I curse that carefull hower, Wherein I longd the neighbour towne to see: And eke tenne thousand sithes I blesse the stoure,

Wherein I sawe so fayre a sight, as shee.

Yet all for naught: such sight hath bred my bane.

Ah God, that loue should breede both ioy and payne.

It is not *Hobbinol*, wherefore I plaine,
Albee my loue he seeke with dayly suit:
Ilis clownish gifts and curtsies I disdaine,
Ilis kiddes, his cracknelles, and his early fruit.
Ah foolish *Hobbinol*, thy gyfts bene vayne:
Colin them giues to Rosalind againe.

I loue thilke lasse, (alas why doe I loue?) And am forlorne, (alas why am I lorne?) Shee deignes not my good will, but doth reproue.

And of my rurall musick holdeth scorne. Shepheards deuise she hateth as the snake, And laughes the songes, that *Colin Clout* doth make.

Wherefore my pype, albee rude Pan thou please,

Yet for thou pleasest not, where most I would: And thou valucky Muse, that wontst to case My musing mynd, yet canst not, when thou

should: 70
Both pype and Muse, shall sore the while abye.
So broke his oaten pype, and downe dyd lye.

By that, the welked *Phæbus* gan availe, Ilis weary waine, and nowe the frosty *Night* Her mantle black through heauen gan ouerhaile.

Which seene, the pensife boy halfe in despight Arose, and homeward droue his sonned sheepe. Whose hanging heads did seeme his carefull case to weepe.

Colins Embleme.

Anchôra speme.

#### GLOSSE.

COLIN CLOVTE) is a name not greatly vsed, and yet haue I sene a Poesie of M. Skeltons under that title. But indeede the word Colin is Frenche, and vsed of the French Poete Marot (if he be worthy of the name of a Poete) in a certein Æglogue. Vnder which name this Poete secretly shadoweth himself, as sometime did Virgil under the name of Tityrus, thinking it much fitter, then such Latine names, for the great unlikelyhoode of the language.

vanethes) scarcely.

couthe) commeth of the verbe Conne, that is, to
know or to haue skill. As well interpreteth the
same the worthy Sir Tho. Smitth in his booke of
gouerment: wherof I haue a perfect copie in
wryting, lent me by his kinseman, and my verye

singular good freend, M. Gabriel Haruey: as also of some other his most graue and excellent wrytings.

Sythe) time. Neighbour towne) the next towne:
expressing the Latine Vicina.
Stoure) a fitt. Sere) withered.

His clownish gyfts) imitateth Virgils verse,

Rusticus es Corydon, nec munêra curat Alexis. Hobbinol) is a fained country name, whereby, it being so commune and vsuall, seemeth to be hidden the person of some his very speciall and most familiar freend, whom he entirely and extraordinarily beloued, as peraduenture shall be more largely declared hereafter. In thys place seemeth to be some sauour of disorderly loue,

which the learned call pæderastice: but it is

gathered beside his meaning. For who that hath red Plato his dialogue called Alcybiades, Xenophon and Maximus Tyrius of Socrates opinions. may easily perceive, that such love is muche to be alowed and liked of, specially so meant, as Socrates vsed it: who sayth, that in deede he loued Alcybiades extremely, yet not Alcybiades person, but hys soule, which is Alcybiades owne selfe. And so is paderastice much to be pracferred before gynerastice, that is the lone whiche enflameth men with lust toward woman kind. But yet let no man thinke, that herein I stand with Lucian or hys deuelish disciple Vnico Aretino, in defence of execrable and horrible sinnes of forbidden and vilawful fleshlinesse Whose abominable errour is fully confuted of Perionius, and others.

I loue) a prety Epanorthosis in these two verses, and withall a l'aronomasia or playing with the word, where he sayth (I loue thilke lasse (alas &c. Rosalinde) is also a feigned name, which being wel ordered, wil bewray the very name of hys

loue and mistresse, whom by that name he coloureth. So as Ouide shadoweth hys loue vnder the name of Corynna, which of some is supposed to be Iulia, themperor Augustus his daughter, and wyfe to Agryppa. So doth Aruntius Stella euery where call his Lady Asteris and lanthis, albe it is wel knowen that her right name was Violantilla: as witnesseth Statius in his Epithalamium. And so the famous Paragone of Italy, Madonna Coelia in her letters enuelopeth her selle vnder the name of Zima; and Petrona vader the name of Bellochia. And this generally bath bene a common custome of counterfeicting the names of secret Personages. Auail) bring downe.

Embleme.

Ouerhaile) drawe ouer.

His Embleme or Poesye is here under added in Italian, Anchora speme: the meaning wherof is, that not with stande his extreme passion and lucklesse loue, yet leaning on hope, he is some what recomforted.

## Februarie.



Ægloga Secunda.

#### ARGVMENT.

This Æglogue is rather morall and generall, then bent to any secrete or particular purpose. It specially conteyneth a discourse of old age, in the persone of Thenot an olde Shepheard, who for his crookednesse and unlustinesse, is scorned of Cuddie an unhappy Heardmans boye.

the moneth, the yeare now drouping, and as it were, drawing to his last age. For as in this time of yeare, so then in our bodies there is a dry and withering cold, which congealeth the crudled blood, and frieseth the wetherbeaten flesh, with stormes of Fortune, and hoare frosts of Care. To which purpose the olde man telleth a tale of the Oake and the Bryer, so lively and so feelingly, as if the thing were set forth in some Picture The matter very well accordeth with the season of before our eyes, more plainly could not appears.

#### CVDDIE. THENOT.

A H for pittie, wil rancke Winters rage,
These bitter blasts neuer ginne tasswage?
The kene cold blowes through my beaten hyde,
All as I were through the body gryde.
My ragged rontes all shiver and shake,
As doen high Towers in an earthquake:
They wont in the wind wagge their wrigle tailes,
Perke as Peacock: but nowe it auales.

#### THENOT.

Lewdly complainest thou laesie ladde, Of Winters wracke, for making thee sadde. 10 Must not the world wend in his commun course From good to badd, and from badde to worse, From worse vnto that is worst of all, And then returne to his former fall? Who will not suffer the stormy time, Where will he liue tyll the lusty prime? Selfe haue I worne out thrise threttie yeares, Some in much joy, many in many teares: Yet neuer complained of cold nor heate, Of Sommers flame, nor of Winters threat: 20 Ne euer was to Fortune foeman. But gently tooke, that vngently came. And euer my flocke was my chiefe care. Winter or Sommer they mought well fare.

#### CVDDIE.

No marueile *Thenot*, if thou can beare Cherefully the Winters wrathfull cheare: For Age and Winter accord full nie, This chill, that cold, this crooked, that wrye. And as the lowring Wether lookes downe, So semest thou like good fryday to frowne. 30 But my flowring youth is foe to frost, My shippe vnwont in stormes to be tost.

#### THENOT.

The soueraigne of seas he blames in vaine. That once seabeate, will to sea againe. So loytring line you little heardgroomes, Keeping your beastes in the budded broomes: And when the shining sunne laugheth once, You deemen, the Spring is come attonce. The gynne you, fond flyes, the cold to scorne. And crowing in pypes made of greene corne, You thinken to be Lords of the yeare. But eft, when ye count you freed from feare, Comes the breme winter with chamfred browes, Full of wrinckles and frostie furrowes: Drerily shooting his stormy darte, Which cruddles the blood, and pricks the harte. Then is your carelesse corage accoied, Your carefull heards with cold bene annoied. Then paye you the price of your surquedrie. With weeping, and wayling, and misery.

#### CVDDIE.

Ah foolish old man, I scorne thy skill. That wouldest me, my springing youngth to spil I deeme, thy braine emperished bee Through rusty elde, that hath rotted thee: Or sicker thy head veray tottie is. So on thy corbe shoulder it leanes amisse. Now thy selfe hast lost both lopp and topp, Als my budding braunch thou wouldest cropp: But were thy yeares greene, as now bene myne. To other delights they would encline. The wouldest thou learne to caroll of Loue, And hery with hymnes thy lasses gloue. Tho wouldest thou pype of Phyllis prayse: But Phyllis is myne for many dayes: I wonne her with a gyrdle of gelt, Embost with buggle about the belt. Such an one shepeheards woulde make full faine: Such an one would make thee younge againe.

#### THENOT.

Thou art a fon, of thy loue to boste, All that is lent to loue, wyll be lost.

#### CVDDIE.

70

Seest, howe brag yond Bullocke beares,
So smirke, so smoothe, his pricked cares?
His hornes bene as broade, as Rainebowe bent,
His dewelap as lythe, as lasse of Kent.
See howe he venteth into the wynd.
Weenest of loue is not his mynd?
Seemeth thy flocke thy counsell can,
So lustlesse bene they, so weake so wan,
Clothed with cold, and hoary wyth frost.
Thy flocks father his corage hath lost:
So
Thy Ewes, that wont to haue blowen bags,
Like wailefull widdowes hangen their crags:
The rather Lambes bene starued with cold,
All for their Maister is lustlesse and old.

#### THENOT.

Cuddie, I wote thou kenst little good, So vainely taduaunce thy headlesse hood. For Youngth is a bubble blown vp with breath, Whose witt is weakenesse, whose wage is death, Whose way is wildernesse, whose ynne Penaunce And stoopegallaunt Age the hoste of Greeu-

aunce.
But shall I tel thee a tale of truth,
Which I cond of *Tityrus* in my youth,
Keeping his sheepe on the hils of Kent?

#### CVDDIE.

To nought more *Thenot*, my mind is bent, Then to heare nouells of his deuise: They bene so well thewed, and so wise. What euer that good old man bespale:

#### THENOT.

Many meete tales of youth did he make, And some of loue, and some of cheualrie: But none fitter then this to applie. Now listen a while, and hearken the end.

There grewe an aged Tree on the greene, A goodly Oake sometime had it bene, With armes full strong and largely displayd, But of their leaues they were disarayde: The bodie bigge, and mightely pight, Throughly rooted, and of wonderous hight: Whilome had bene the King of the field, And mochell mast to the husband did yielde, And with his nuts larded many swine.

110 But now the gray mosse marred his rine, His bared boughes were beaten with stormes, His toppe was bald, and wasted with wormes, His honor decayed, his braunches sere.

Hard by his side grewe a bragging brere, Which proudly thrust into Thekment, And seemed to threat the Firmament. Yt was embellisht with blossomes fayre, And thereto aye wonned to repayre The shepheards daughters, to gather flowres, To peinct their girlonds with his colowres. 121 And in his small bushes vsed to shrowde The sweete Nightingale singing so lowde: Which made this foolish Brere wewe so bold, That on a time he cast him to scold, And snebbe the good Oake, for he was old.

Why standst there (quoth he) thou brutish

blocke? Norforfruict, norforshadoweseruesthystocke: Seest, how fresh my flowers bene spredde. Dyed in Lilly white, and Cremsin redde, 130 With Leaues engrained in lusty greene, Colours meete to clothe a mayden Queene. Thy wast bignes but combers the grownd, And dirks the beauty of my blossomes round. The mouldie mosse, which thee accloieth, My Sinamon smell too much annoieth. Wherefore soone I rede thee, hence remove. Least thou the price of my displeasure proue. So spake this bold brere with great disdaine: Little him answered the Oake againe, But yielded, with shame and greefe adawed, That of a weede he was ouercrawed.

Yt chaunced after vpon a day,
The Hus-bandman selfe to come that way,
Of custome for to seruewe his grownd,
And his trees of state in compasse rownd.
Him when the spitefull brere had espyed,
Causlesse complained, and lowdly cryed
Vnto his Lord, stirring vp sterne strife:
O my liege Lord, the God of my life,

Pleaseth you ponder your Suppliants plaint, Caused of wrong, and cruell constraint, Which I your poore Vassall dayly endure. And but your goodnes the same recure, Ann like for desperate doole to dye, Through felonous force of mine enemie.

Greatly aghast with this pitcous plea, Him rested the goodman on the lea, And budde the Brere in his plaint proceede. With painted words tho gan this proude weede, (As most vsen Ambitious folke:) 101 His colowred crime with craft to cloke.

Ah my soueraigne, Lord of creatures all. Thou placer of plants both humble and tall, Was not I planted of thine owne hand, To be the primrose of all thy land, With flowring blossomes, to furnish the prime, And scarlot berries in Sommer time? How falls it then, that this faded Oake, Whose bodie is sere, whose braunches broke, Whose naked Armes stretch vnto the fyre, 171 Vnto such tyrannie doth aspire: Hindering with his shade my louely light, And robbing me of the swete sonnes sight? So beate his old boughes my tender side. That of the bloudspringeth from woundes wyde: Vntimely my flowres forced to fall, That bene the honor of your Coronall. And oft he lets his cancker wormes light Vpon my braunches, to worke me more spight: And oft his hoarie locks downe doth cast. 181 Where with my fresh flowretts bene defast For this, and many more such outrage, Crauing your goodlihead to aswage The ranckorous rigour of his might, Nought aske I, but onely to hold my right: Submitting me to your good sufferance, And praying to be garded from greeuance.

To this the Oake cast him to replie Well as he couth: but his enemie 100 Had kindled such coles of displeasure, That the good man noulde stay his leasure. But home him hasted with furious heate, Encreasing his wrath with many a threate. His harmefull Hatchet he hent in hand, (Alas, that it so ready should stand) And to the field alone he speedeth. (Ay little helpe to harme there needeth) Anger nould let him speake to the tree, Enaunter his rage mought cooled bee: 200 But to the roote bent his sturdy stroke, And made many wounds in the wast Oake The Axes edge did oft turne againe. As halfe vnwilling to cutte the graine: Semed, the sencelesse yron dyd feare, 150 Or to wrong holy eld did forbeare.

For it had bene an auncient tree,
Sacred with many a mysteree,
And often crost with the priestes crewe,
And often halowed with holy water-dewe. 210
But sike fancies weren foolerie,
And broughten this Oake to this miserye.
For noughtmought they quitten him from decay:
For fiercely the good man at him did laye.
The blocke oft groned vnder the blow,
And sighed to see his neare ouerthrow.
In fine the steele had pierced his pitth,
Tho downe to the earth he fell forthwith:
His wonderous weightmadethegrounde toquake,
Thearth shronke vnder him, and seemed to
shake.

There lyeth the Oake, pitied of none.

Now stands the Brere like a Lord alone,
Puffed vp with pryde and vaine pleasaunce:
But all this glee had no continuaunce.
For eftsones Winter gan to approche,
The blustring Boreas did encroche,
And beate vpon the solitarie Brere:
For nowe no succoure was seene him nere.
Now gan he repent his pryde to late:
For naked left and disconsolate,

230

The byting frost nipt his stalke dead,
The watrie wette weighed downe his head,
And heaped snowe burdned him so sore,
That nowe vpright he can stand no more:
And being downe, is trodde in the durt
Of cattell, and brouzed, and sorely hurt.
Such was thend of this Ambitious brere,
For scorning Eld

CVDDIE.

Now I pray thee shepheard, tel it not forth:
Here is a long tale, and little worth.
So longe haue I listened to thy speche,
That graffed to the ground is my breche:
My hartblood is welnigh frome I feele,
And my galage growne fast to my heele:
But little ease of thy lewd tale I tasted.
Hye thee home shepheard, the day is nigh wasted.

Thenots Embleme.

Iddio perche è vecchio,
Fa suoi al suo essempio.

Cuddies Embleme. 250

Niuno vecchio,
Sraventa Iddio.

#### GLOSSE.

Kene) sharpe.

Gride) perced: an olde word much vsed of Lidgate, but not found (that I know of) in Chaucer.

Ronts) young bullockes.

Wracke) ruine or Violence, whence commeth ship wracke: and not wreake, that is vengeaunce or wrath.

Forman) a for.

Thenot) the name of a shepheard in Marot his Æglogues.

The soueraigne of Seas) is Neptune the God of the seas. The saying is borowed of Minus Publianus, which used this prouerb in a verse.

Improbè Neptunum accusat, qui iterum naufragium facit.

Heardgromes) Chaucers verse almost whole. Fond Flyes) He compareth carelesse sluggardes or ill husbandmen to flyes, that so soone as the sunne shineth, or yt wexeth any thing warme, begin to flye abroade, when sodeinly they be ouertaken with cold.

But est when) A verye excellent and liuely description of Winter, so as may bee indifferently taken, eyther for old Age, or for Winter season.

Breme) chill, bitter.

Chamfred) chapt, or wrinckled. Accoied) plucked downe and daunted.

Accoied: plucked downe and daunted.
Surquedrie) pryde. Elde) olde age.
Sicker) sure. Tottie) wauering.
Corbe) crooked. Herie) worshing.

Corbei crooked. Herie) worshippe. Phyllis) the name of some mayde vnknowen, whom Cuddie, whose person is secrete, loued. The name is vauall in Theocritus, Virgile, and Mantuane. Belte) a girdle or wast band. A fon) a foole. lythe) soft and gentile.

Venteth) snuffeth in the wind.

Thy flocks Father) the Rainme. Crags) neckes Rather Lambes) that be ewed early in the beginning of the yeare.

Youth is) A verye moral and pitthy Allegorie of youth, and the lustes thereor, compared to a wearie wayfaring man.

Tityrus) I suppose he meane Chaucer, whose prayse for pleasaunt tales cannot dye, so long as the memorie of hys name shal line, and the name of Poetrie shal endure.

Well thewed) that is, Bene moratæ, full of morall wisenesse.

There grew) This tale of the Oake and the Brere, he telleth as learned of Chaucer, but it is cleane in another kind, and rather like to Æsopes fables. It is very excellente for pleasaunt descriptions, being altogether a certaine Icon or Hypotyposis of disdainfull younkers.

Embellisht) beautified and adorned.

To wonne) to haunt or frequent. Sneb) checke. Why standst) The speach is scorneful and very presumptuous.

Engrained) dyed in grain. Accloieth) encombreth.

Adawed) daunted and confounded.

Trees of state) taller trees fitte for timber wood. Sterne strife) said Chaucer s, fell and sturdy.

O my liege) A maner of supplication, wherein is kindly coloured the affection and speache of Ambitious men.

Coronall) Garlande. Flourets) young blossomes. The Primrose) The chiefe and worthest.

Naked armes) metaphorically ment of the bare boughes, spoyled of leaues. This colourably he speaketh, as adiudging bym to the fyre. The blood) spoken of a blocke, as it were of a

The blood) spoken of a blocke, as it were of a liuing creature, figuratiuely, and (as they saye)

Hoarie lockes) metaphorically for withered leaues.
Hent) caught.

Nould for would not.

Ay) euermore.

Wounds) gashes.

Enaunter) least that.

The priestes crewe) holy water pott, wherewith the popular priest vs.d to sprinckle and hallowe the trees from mischaunce. Such blindnesse was in those times, which the Poete supposeth, to haue bene the finall decay of this auncient Oake.

The blocke oft groned A linelye figure, whiche geneth sence and feeling to viscosible creatures, as Virgile also sayeth: Saxa gemunt granido &c. Boro as) The Northerne wynd, that bringeth the

moste stormie weather.

Glee) chere and iollitie. For scorning Eld) And minding (as shoulde seme) to haue made ryine to the former verse, he is conningly cutte of by Cuddye, as disdayning to here any more.

Galage) a startuppe or clownish shoe.

#### Embleme.

This embleme is spoken of Thenot, as a moral of his former tale: namelye, that God, which is himselfe most aged, being before al ages, and without beginninge, maketh those, whom he lou th like to himselfe, in heaping yeares into theyre dayes, and blessing them with longe lyfe. For the blessing of age is not given to all, but vito those, whome God will so blesse and albeit that many euil men reache vito such fulnesse of yeares, and some also wexe olde in myserie and

thraldome, yet therefore is not age euer the lesse blessing. For euen to such euill men such number of yeares is added, that they may in their last dayes repent, and come to their first home. So the old man checketh the rashbeaded

boy, for despysing his gray and frostye heares. Whom Cuddye doth counterbuff with a byting and bitter prouerbe, spoken indeede at the first in contempt of old age generally. For it was an old opinion, and yet is continued in some mens concept, that men of yeares have no feare of god at al, or not so much as younger folke. For that being rypened with long experience, and having passed many bitter brunts and blastes of vengeaunce, they dread no stormes of Fortune, nor wrathe of Gods, nor daunger of menne, as being eyther by longe and ripe wisedome armed against all mischaunces and adversitie, or with much trouble hardened against all troublesome tydes: lyke vnto the Ape, of which is sayd in Alsops fables, that oftentimes meeting the Lyon, he was at first sore aghast and dismayed at the grimnes and austeritie of hys countenance, but at last being acquainted with his lookes, he was so futre from fearing him, that he would familiarly gybe and jest with him: Suche longe experience breedeth in some men securitie. Although it please Erasimus a great clerke and good old father, more fatherly and fauourablye to construe it in his Adages for his own behoofe, That by the prouerbe Nemo Senex metuit Iouem, is not meant, that old men have no feare of God at al. but that they be furre from superstition and Idolatrous regard of false Gods, as is Iupiter. But his greate learning notwithstanding, it is to plaine, to be gain-ayd, that olde men are muche more enclined to such fond fooleries, then younger heades.

## March.



## Ægloga Tertia.

#### ARGVMENT.

N this Æglogue two shepheards boyes taking Loccasion of the season, beginne to make purpose of loue and other plesaunce, which to springtime is most agreeable. The speciall meaning hereof is, to give certaine markes and tokens. to know Cupide the Poets God of Loue. But more particularly I thinke, in the person of Thomalin is meant some secrete freend, who scorned Loue and his knights so long, till at length him selfe was entangled, and vnwares wounded with the dart of some beautifull regard, which is Cupides arrowe.

#### WILLYE THOMALIN.

"Homalin, why sytten we soe, As weren ouerwent with woe, Vpon so fayre a morow? The ioyous time now nigheth fast. That shall alegge this bitter blast. And slake the winters sorowe.

#### THOMALIN.

Sicker Willye, thou warnest well: For Winters wrath beginnes to quell.

And pleasant spring appeareth. The grasse nowe ginnes to be refresht. The Swallow peepes out of her nest, And clowdie Welkin cleareth.

#### WILLVE

Seest not thilke same Hawthorne studde. How bragly it beginnes to budde, And vtter his tender head? Flora now calleth forth eche flower. And bids make ready Maias bowre, That newe is vpryst from bedde.

And learne with Lettice to wexe light, That scornefully lookes askaunce. Tho will we little Loue awake, That nowe sleepeth in Lethe lake. And pray him leaden our daunce.

Tho shall we sporten in delight.

#### THOMALIN.

Willye, I wene thou bee assott: For lustie Loue still sleepeth not. But is abroad at his game.

#### WILLYR.

How kenst thou, that he is awoke? Or hast thy selfe his slomber broke? Or made preuie to the same?

10

20

30

#### THOMALIN.

No. but happely I hym spyde. Where in a bush he did him hide. With winges of purple and blewe. And were not, that my sheepe would stray, The preuie marks I would bewray, Whereby by chaunce I him knewe.

#### WILLYE.

Thomalin, haue no care for thy, My selfe will have a double eye, Ylike to my flocke and thine: For als at home I have a syre. A stepdame eke as whott as fyre, That dewly adayes counts mine.

#### THOMALIN.

Nay, but thy seeing will not serue, My sheepe for that may chaunce to swerue, And fall into some mischiefe. For sithens is but the third morowe. That I chaunst to fall a sleepe with sorowe, And waked againe with griefe: The while thilke same vnhappye Ewe, Whose clouted legge her hurt doth shewe, Fell headlong into a dell. And there vnioynted both her bones: Mought her necke bene ioynted attones, She shoulde haue neede no more spell. Thelf was so wanton and so wood, (But now I trowe can better good) She mought ne gang on the greene.

#### WILLYE.

Let be, as may be, that is past: That is to come, let be forecast. Now tell vs, what thou hast seene.

#### THOMALIN.

It was vpon a holiday, When shepheardes groomes han leave to playe, I cast to goe a shooting. Long wandring vp and downe the land. With bowe and bolts in either hand, For birds in bushes tooting: At length within an Yuie todde (There shrouded was the little God) I heard a busie bustling. I bent my bolt against the bush, Listening if any thing did rushe, But then heard no more rustling. Tho peeping close into the thicke, "ight see the mouing of some quicke,

Whose shape appeared not: But were it faerie, feend, or snake, My courage earnd it to awake. And manfully thereat shotte. With that sprong forth a naked swayne, With spotted winges like Peacocks trayne, 80 And laughing lope to a tree. His gylden quiuer at his backe. And silver bowe, which was but slacke. Which lightly he bent at me. That seeing, I levelde againe, And shott at him with might and maine, As thicke, as it had hayled. So long I shott, that al was spent: The pumie stones I hastly hent. And threwe: but nought availed: ထ He was so wimble, and so wight, From bough to bough he lepped light, And oft the pumies latched. Therewith affrayd I ranne away: But he, that earst seemd but to playe, A shaft in earnest snatched, And hit me running in the heele: For then I little smart did feele: But soone it sore encreased. And now it ranckleth more and more, 100 And inwardly it festreth sore, Ne wote I, how to cease it.

#### WILLYE.

Thomalin, I pittie thy plight. Perdie with love thou diddest fight: I know him by a token. For once I heard my father say, How he him caught vpon a day, (Whereof he wilbe wroken) 60 Entangled in a fowling net, Which he for carrion Crowes had set. 110 That in our Peeretree haunted. Tho sayd, he was a winged lad, But bowe and shafts as then none had: Els had he sore be daunted. But see the Welkin thicks apace, And stouping *Phebus* steepes his face: Yts time to hast vs homeward.

Willyes Embleme.

70

To be wise and eke to love, Is graunted scarce to God aboue. 120

Thomalins Embleme.

Of Hony and of Gaule in love there is store: The Honye is much, but the Gaule is more.

#### GLOSS.

THIS Æglogue seemeth somewhat to resemble that same of Theocritus, wherein the boy likewise telling the old man, that he had shot at a winged boy in a tree, was by hym warned, to beware of mischiefe to come.

Ouer went) ouergone.

Alegge) to lessen or aswage.

To quell) to abate. Welkin) the skie, The swallow) which bird vseth to be counted the messenger, and as it were, the fore runner of

Flora) the Goddesse of flowres, but indede (as saith Tacitus) a famous harlot, which with the abuse of her body having gotten great riches, made the people of Rome her heyre: who in remembraunce of so great beneficence, appointed a yearely feste for the memoriall of her, calling her, not as she was, nor as some doe think, Andronica, but Flora: making her the Goddesse of all floures, and doing yerely to her solemne sacrifice.

Maias bowre) that is the pleasaunt fielde, or rather the Maye bushes. Maia is a Goddes and the mother of Mercurie, in honour of whome the moneth of Maye is of her name so called, as

sayth Macrobius.

Lettice) the name of some country lasse.

Ascaunce) askewe or asquint.

For thy) therefore.

Lethe) is a lake in hell, which the Poetes call the lake of forgetfulnes. For Lethe significal forgetfulnes. Wherein the soules being dipped, did forget the cares of their former lyfe. So that by loue sleeping in Lethe lake, he meaneth he was almost forgotten and out of knowledge, by reason of winters hardnesse, when al pleasures, as it were, sleepe and weare oute of mynde.

Assotte) to dote.

His slomber) To breake Loues slomber, is to exercise the delightes of Loue and wanton pleasures. Winges of purple) so is he teyned of the Poetes. For als) he imitateth Virgils verse.

Est mihi namque domi pater, est iniusta nouerca &c.

A dell) a hole in the ground.

Spell) is a kinde of verse or charme, that in elder tymes they used often to say ouer enery thing, that they would have preserved, as the Nightspel for theeues, and the woodspell. And herehence I thinke is named the gospell as it were Gods spell or worde. And so sayth Chaucer, Listeneth Lordings to my spell.

Gange) goe. An Yuie todde) a thicke bushe. Swaine) a boye: For so is he described of the Poetes, to be a boye .s. alwayes freshe and lustie: blindfolded, because he maketh no difference of Personages: wyth divers coloured winges, .s. ful of flying fancies: with bowe and arrow, that is with glaunce of beautye, which prycketh as a forked arrowe. He is sayd also to haue shafts, some leaden, some golden: that is, both pleasure for the gracious and loued, and sorow for the louer that is disdayned or forsaken. But who liste more at large to behold Cupids colours and furniture, let him reade ether Propertius, or Moschus his Idylhon of wandring loue, being now most excellently translated into Latine by the singular learned man Angelus Politianus: whych worke I have seene amongst other of thys Poets doings, very wel translated also into Englishe Rymes.

Wimble and wighte) Quicke and deliuer.

In the heele) is very Poctically spoken, and not without speciall judgement. For I remember, that in Homer it is sayd of Thetis, that shee tooke her young babe Achilles being newely borne, and holding him by the heele, dipped him in the Riuer of Styx. The vertue whereof is, to defend and keepe the bodyes washed therein from any mortall wound. So Achilles being washed all ouer, saue onely his hele, by which his mother held, was in the rest invulnerable: therfore by Paris was feyned to bee shotte with a poysoned arrowe in the heele, whiles he was busic about the marying of Polyxena in the temp'e of Apollo. Which mysticall fable Eusta thius vnfolding, sayth: that by wounding in the hele, is meant lustfull loue. For from the heele (as say the best Phisitions) to the preuie partes there passe certaine veines and slender synnews, as also the like come from the head, and are carryed lyke little pypes behynd the eares; so that (as sayth Hipocrates) yf those veynes there be cut a sonder, the partie straighte becommeth cold and vnfruiteful. Which reason our Poete wel weighing, maketh this shepheards boye of purpose to be wounded by Loue in the heele. Latched) caught.

Wroken) reuenged. For once) In this tale is sette out the simplicitye of

shepheards opinion of Loue.

Stouping Phæbus) Is a Periphrasis of the sunne setting.

Embleme.

Hereby is meant, that all the delights of Loue, wherein wanton youth walloweth, be but follye mixt with bitternesse, and solow sawced with repentaunce. For besides that the very affection of Loue it selfe tormenteth the mynde, and vexeth the body many wayes, with vnrestfulnesse all night, and wearines all day, seeking for that we can not have, and fynding that we would not haue: even the selfe things which best before vs lyked, in course of time and chaung of ryper yeares, whiche also therewithall chaungeth our wonted lyking and former fantasies, will then seeme lothsome and breede vs annoyaunce, when yougthes flowre is withered, and we fynde our bodyes and wits aunswere not to suche vayne ioilitie and lustful' pleasaunce.

## Aprill.



Ægloga Quarta. ababbe be

#### ARGVMENT.

THis Æglogue is purposely intended to the I honor and prayse of our most gracious souereigne, Queene Elizabeth. The speakers herein be Hobbinoll and Thenott, two shepheardes: the which Hobbinoll being before mentioned, greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth more largely, complayning him of that boyes great misaduenture in Loue, whereby his mynd war altenate and with drawen not onely from him, who moste loued him, but also from all former delightes and studies, aswell in pleasaunt pyping, as conning ryming and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby he taketh occasion, for proofe of his more excellencie and skill in poetrie, to recorde a songe, which the sayd Colin sometime made in honor of her Manestie, whom abruptely he termeth Elysa.

THENOT. HOBBINOLL.

TEll me good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greete?

What? hath some Wolfe thy tender Lambes ytorne?

Oristhy Bagpype broke, that soundes so sweete? Or art thou of thy loued lasse forlorne? Or bene thine eyes attempted to the yeare, Quenching the gasping furrowes thirst with rayne?

Like April shoure, so stremes the trickling teares Adowne thy cheeke, to quenche thy thristye payne.

HOBBINOLL.

Nor thys, nor that, so muche doeth make me mourne.

But for the ladde, whome long I lovd so deare, Nowe loues a lasse, that all his loue doth scorne:

He plongd in payne, his tressed locks dooth teare.

Shepheards delights he dooth them all forsweare,

Hys pleasaunt Pipe, whych made vs meriment, He wylfully hath broke, and doth forbeare His wonted songs, wherein he all outwent.

#### THENOT.

What is he for a Ladde, you so lament?
Ys loue such pinching payne to them, that
proue?

And hath he skill to make so excellent, Yet hath so little skill to brydle loue?

HOBBINOLL.

Colin thou kenst, the Southerne shepheardes

Him Loue hath wounded with a deadly darte. Whilome on him was all my care and love, Forcing with gyfts to winne his wanton heart.

But now from me hys madding mynd is starte, Andwoes the Widdowes daughter of the glenne: So nowe favre Rosalind hath bredde hys smart, So now his frend is chaunged for a frenne.

#### THENOT.

But if hys ditties bene so trimly dight. I pray thee *Hobbinoll*, recorde some one: The whiles our flockes doe graze about in sight, And we close shrowded in thys shade alone.

#### HOBBINOL.

Contented I: then will I singe his lave Of fayre Eliza, Queene of shepheardes all: Which once he made, as by a spring he laye, And tuned it vnto the Waters fall.

E dayntye Nymphs, that in this blessed Brooke

doe bathe your brest,

Forsake your watry bowres, and hether looke, at my request:

And eke you Virgins, that on Parnasse dwell, Whence floweth Helicon the learned well.

Helpe me to blaze Her worthy praise.

Which in her sexe doth all excell,

Of fayre *Elisa* be your siluer song,

that blessed wight: The flowre of Virgins, may shee florish long,

In princely plight. For shee is Syrinx daughter without spotte, 50 Which Pan the shepheards God of her begot:

So sprong her grace Of heauenly race,

No mortall blemishe may her blotte.

See, where she sits vpon the grassic greene, (O seemely sight)

Yclad in Scarlot like a mayden Queenc, And Ermines white.

Vpon her head a Cremosin coronet,

With Damaske roses and Daffadillies set: 60 Bayleaues betweene.

And Primroses greene Embellish the sweete Violet.

Tell me, haue ye seene her angelick face, Like Phabe fayre?

Her heavenly haveour, her princely grace can you well compare?

The Redde rose medled with the White yiere. In either cheeke depeincten liuely chere.

Her modest eve. Her Maiestie.

Where have you seene the like, but there?

I sawe Phæbus thrust out his golden hedde, vpon her to gaze:

But when he sawe, how broade her beames did spredde.

it did him amaze.

He blusht to see another Sunne belowe. Ne durst againe his fyrye face out showe: Let him, if he dare,

His brightnesse compare

With hers, to have the overthrowe.

Shewe thy selfe Cynthia with thy silver raves, and be not abasht:

When shee the beames of her beauty displayes, O how art thou dasht?

But I will not match her with Latonaes seede. Such follie great sorow to *Niobe* did breede.

90

110

Now she is a stone, And makes dayly mone.

Warning all other to take heede.

Pan may be proud, that ever he begot such a Bellibone.

And Syrinx reioyse, that euer was her lot to beare such an one.

Soone as my younglings cryen for the dam, To her will I offer a milkwhite Lamb: Shee is my goddesse plaine.

And I her shepherds swayne.

Albee forsworck and forswatt I am.

I see Calliope speede her to the place, of where my Goddesse shines:

And after her the other Muses trace. with their Violines.

Bene they not Bay braunches, which they do.

All for Elisa in her hand to weare? So sweetely they play, And sing all the way.

That it a heaven is to heare.

Lo how finely the graces can it foote to the Instrument:

They dauncen deffly, and singen soote, in their meriment.

Wants not a fourth grace, to make the daul.ce euen?

Let that rowme to my Lady be yeuen: She shalbe a grace,

To fyll the fourth place. And reigne with the rest in heaven. and whither rennes this beuie of Ladies bright. raunged in a rowe?

They bene all Ladyes of the lake behight, 120 that vnto her goe.

Chloris, that is the chiefest Nymph of al, Of Olive braunches beares a Coronall:

Oliues bene for peace, When wars doe surcease:

Such for a Princesse bene principall.

Yeshepheardsdaughters, that dwellon the greene. hye you there apace:

Let none come there, but that Virgins bene, to adorne her grace.

And when you come, whereas shee is in place. See, that your rudenesse doe not you disgrace: Binde your fillets faste,

And gird in your waste,

For more finesse, with a tawdrie lace.

Bring hether the Pincke and purple Cullambine, With Gelliflowres:

Bring Coronations, and Sops in wine, worne of Paramoures.

Strowe me the ground with Daffadowndillies. And Cowslips, and Kingcups, and loued Lillies:

The pretie Pawnce. And the Cheuisaunce,

Shall match with the fayre flowre Delice.

Now ryse vp Elisa, decked as thou art, in royall aray:

And now ye daintie Damsells may depart echeone her way,

I feare, I have troubled your troupes to longe Let dame Eliza thanke you for her song. 150

And if you come bether, When Damsines I gether, I will part them all you among.

THENOT.

And was thilk same song of Colins owne making?

Ah foolish boy, that is with love yblent: Great pittie is, he be in such taking, For naught caren, that bene so lewdly bent.

#### HOBBINOL.

Sicker I hold him, for a greater fon, That loues the thing, he cannot purchase. 150, But let vs homeward: for night draweth on. And twincling starres the daylight hence chase

> Thenots Embleme. O quam te memorem virgo?

Hobbinols Embleme. O dea certe.

# GLOSSE.

Gars thee greete) causeth thee weepe and complain. Forlorne) left and torsaken.

Attempred to the yeare) agreeable to the season of the yeare, that is Aprill, which moneth is most bent to shoures and seasonable rayne: to quench, that is, to delaye the drought, caused through that is, to delaye the drynesse of March wyndes.

The Lasse) Rosalinda

The Ladde) Colin Clout.

Iressed locks) wrethed and curled.
Is he for a ladde) A straunge manner of speaking s. what maner of Ladde is he?

To make) to rime and versifye. For in this word making, our olde Englishe Poetes were wont to comprehend all the skil of Poetrye, according to the Greeke woorde notein, to make, whence commeth the name of Poetes

Colin thou kenst) knowest. Seemeth hereby that Colin perteyneth to some Southern noble man, and perhaps in Surrye or Kent the rather breause he so often nameth the Kentish downes, and before, As lythe as lasse of Kent.

The Widowes) He calleth Rosalind the Widowes he Widowes) He calleth Rosalind the widowes daughter of the glenne, that is, of a country Hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather sayde to coloure and concele the person, then simply spoken. For it is well knowen, euen in spighte of Colin and Hobbinoll, that shee is a Centle woman of no meane house, nor endewed with anye vulgare and common gifts both of nature and manners: but suche indeede, as neede nether Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinol be greued, that so she should be commended to immortalitie for her rare and singular Vertues: Specially descruing it no lesse, then eyther Myrto the most excellent Poete Theocritus his dearling, or Lau retta the diuine Petrarches Goddesse, or Himera the worthve Poete Stesichorus hys Idole: Vpon whom he is sayd so much to have doted, that in regard of her excellencie, he scorned and wrote a ainst the beauty of Helena. For which his prasumptuous and viheedie hardinesse, he is siyde by vengeaunce of the Gods, thereat being

offended, to haue lost both his eyes.

Frenne) a straunger. The word I thinke was first poetically put, and afterwarde vsed in commen custome of speach for forenne

Dight) adorned. Laye) a songe. As Roundelayes and Virelayes. In all this songe is not to be respected, what the worthinesse of her Maiestie de-crueth, nor what to the highnes of a Prince is agrecable, but what is moste comely for the meanesse of a shepheards witte, or to conceiue, or to vtter. And therefore he calleth her Elysa, as through rudenesse tripping in her name; and a shepheards daughter, it being very unfit, that a shepheards boy brought up in the shepefold. should know, or ever seme to have heard or a Queenes roialty.

Ye daintie) is, as it were an Exordium ad pre parandos animos

Virgins) the nine Muses, daughters of Apollo and Memorie, whose abode the Poets faine to be on Parnassus, a hill in Grece, to that in that

countrye specially florished the honor of all

excellent studies.

Helicon) is both the name of a fountaine at the foote of Parnassus, and also of a mounteine in Bæotia, out of which floweth the famous Spring Castalius, dedicate also to the Muses: of which spring it is sayd, that when Pegasus the winged horse of Perseus (whereby is meant fame and flying renowne) strooke the grownde with his hoofe, sodenly thereout sprange a wel of moste cleare and pleasaunte water, which fro thence forth was consecrate to the Muses and Ladies of learning.

Your siluer song) seemeth to imitate the lyke in

Hesiodus αργυρέον μελος.

Syrinx) is the name of a Nymphe of Arcadie, whom when Pan being in loue pursued, she flying from him, of the Gods was turned into a reede. that Pan catching at the Reedes in stede of the Damosell, and puffing hard (for he was almost out of wind) with hys breath made the Reedes to pype: which he seeing, tooke of them, and in remembraunce of his lost loue, made him a pype thereof. But here by Pan and Syrinx is not to bre thoughte, that the shephearde simplye meante those Poetical Gods: but rather supposing (as seemeth) her graces progenie to be diuine and immortall (so as the Paynims were wont to judge of all Kinges and Princes, according to Homeres saying

θυμίς δη μέγας έστι διοτρεφέως βασιλήως, τιμη δ' έκ διός έστι, φιλεί δε ο μητίετα Ζεύς )

could deuise no parents in his iudgement so worthy for her, as Pan the shepeheards God, and his best beloued Syrinx. So that by Pan is here meant the most famous and victorious King, her highnesse Father, late of worthy memorye K. Henry the eyght. And by that name, oftymes (as hereafter appeareth) be noted kings and mighty Potentates: And in some place Christ himselfe, who is the verye Pan and god of Shepheardes.

Cremosin coronet) he deuiseth her crowne to be of the finest and most delicate flowers, instede of perles and precious stones, wherewith Princes Diademes use to bee adorned and embost.

Embellish) beautifye and set out.

Phebe) the Moone, whom the Poets faine to be sister vnto Phæbus, that is the Sunne.

Medled) mingled.

Yiere) together. By the mingling of the Redde rose and the White, is meant the vniting of the two principall houses of Lancaster and of Yorke: by whose longe discord and deadly debate, this realm many yeares was sore traueiled, and almost cleane decayed. Til the famous Henry the seuenth, of the line of Lancaster, taking to wife the most vertuous Princesse Elisabeth, daughter to the fourth Edward of the house of Yorke, begat the most royal Henry the eyght aforesayde, in whom was the firste vnion of the Whyte Rose and the Redde.

whyte Rose and the Redde.

Calliope) one of the nine Muses: to whome they assigne the honor of all Poetical Inuention, and the Brste glorye of the Heroicall verse. Other say, that shee is the Goddesse of Rhetorick: but by Virgile it is manifeste, that they mystake the thyng. For there in hys Epigrams, that arte semeth to be attributed to Polymnia, saying:

Signat cuncta manu, loquiturque Polymnia gestu

which seemeth specially to be meant of Action and elocution, both special partes of Rhetorick; besyde that her name, which (as some construe it) importeth great remembraunce, conteineth another part. But I holde rather with them, which call her Polymnia or Polyhymnia of her

good singing. Bay branches) be the signe of honor and victory, and therfore of myghty Conquerors worn in theyr triumphes, and eke of famous Poets, as

saith Petrarch in hys Sonets.

Arbor vittoriosa triomphale, Honor d' Imperadori & di Poëti, &c.

The Graces) be three sisters, the daughters of Iupiter, (whose names are Aglaia, Thalia, Euphrosyne, and Homer onely addeth a fourth .s. Pasithea) otherwise called Charites, that is thanks. Whom the Poetes feyned to be the Goddesses of al bountie and comclines, which therefore (as sayth Theodontius) they make three, to wete, that men first ought to be gracious and bountiful to other freely, then to receive benefits at other mens hands curteously, and thirdly to requite them thankfully: which are three sundry Actions in liberalitye. And Boccace saith, that they be painted naked, (as they were indeede on the tombe of C. Iulius Cæsar) the one having her backe toward vs, and her face fromwarde, as proceeding from vs: the other two toward vs noting double thanke to be due to vs for the benefit, we have done.

Deaffly) Finelye and nimbly. Soote) Sweete.

Meriment) Mirth.

Beuie) A beause of Ladyes, is spoken figuratively for a company or troupe. The terme is taken of Larkes. For they say a Beuie of Larkes, euen as a Coucy of lartridge, or an eye of Pheasaunts. Ladyes of the lake) be Nymphes. For it was an olde opinion amongste the Auncient Heathen, that of euery spring and fountaine was a goddesse the Soueraigne. Whiche opinion stucke in the myndes of men not manye yeares sithence, by meanes of certain fine fablers and lowd lyers, such as were the Authors of King Arthure the great and such like, who tell many an unlawfull leasing of the Ladyes of the Lake, that is, the Nymphes. For the word Nymphe in Greeke signifieth Well water, or otherwise a Spouse or Bryde.

Behight) called or named.

Cloris) the name of a Nymph, and signifieth greenesse, of whome is sayd, that Zephyrus the Westerne wind being in loue with her, and coueting her to wyfe, gaue her for a dowrie, the chiefedome and soueraigntye of al flowres and

greene herbes, growing on earth. Oliues bene) The Oliue was wont to be the ensigne of Peace and quietnesse, eyther for that it cannot be planted and pruned, and so carefully looked to, as it ought, but in time of peace: or els for that the Oliue tree, they say, will not growe neare the Firre tree, which is dedicate to Mars the God of battaile, and vsed most for speares and other instruments of warre. Whereupon is finely feigned, that when Neptune and Minerua stroue for the naming of the citie of Athens, Neptune striking the ground with his mace, caused a horse to come forth, that importeth warre, but at Mineruaes stroke sprong out an Oliue, to note that it should be a nurse of learning, and such peaceable studies.

Binde your) Spoken rudely, and according to shepheardes simplicitye.

Bring) all these be names of flowers. Sops in wine a flowre in colour much like to a Coronation. but differing in smel and quantitye. Flowre delice, that which they vse to misterme. Flowre de luce, being in Latine called Flos delitiarum. A Bellibone) or a Bonibell. Homely spoken for a

fayre mayde or Bonilasse.

Forswonck and forswatt) overlaboured and sunne-

I saw Phæbus) the sunne. A sensible Narration. and present view of the thing mentioned, which they call mapovous.

Cynthia) the Moone so called of Cynthus a hyll. where she was honoured.

Latonaes seede) Was Apollo and Diana. Whom when as Niobe the wife of Amphion scorned, in respect of the noble fruict of her wombe, namely her seuen sonnes, and so many daughters, Latona being therewith displeased, commaunded her sonne Phæbus to slea al the sonnes, and Diana all the daughters: whereat the vnfortunate Niobe being sore dismayed, and lamenting out of measure, was feigned of the Poetes, to be turned into a stone vpon the sepulchre of her children. For which cause the shepheard sayth, he will not compare her to them, for feare of like mys-

Now rise) is the conclusion. For having so decked her with prayses and comparisons, he returneth all the thanck of hys laboure to the excellencie of her Maicatic.

When Damsins) A base reward of a clownish giver. Yblent) Y, is a poeticall addition. Blent blinded.

#### Embleme

This Poesye is taken out of Virgile, and there of him vsed in the person of Æneas to his mother Venus, appearing to him in likenesse of one of Dianaes damosells: being there most dininely set forth. To which similitude of divinitie Hobbinoll comparing the excelency of Elisa, and being through the worthynes of Colins song, as it were, ouercome with the hugenesse of his imagination, brusteth out in great admiration, (O quam te memorem virgo) being otherwise whable, then by soddein silence, to expresse the worthinesse of his concept. Whom Thenot answereth with another part of the like verse, as confirming by his graint and approuaunce that Elisa is no whit inferiour to the Malestie of her, of whome that Poete so boldly pronounced, O dea certe.

# Maye.



Ægloga Quinta.

#### ARGVMENT.

In this fift Æglogue, under the persons of I two shepheards Piers and Palinodie, be represented two formes of pastoures or Ministers,

chiefe talke standeth in reasoning, whether the life of the one must be like the other. With whom having shewed, that it is daungerous to mainteine any felowship, or give too much credit to their colourable and feyned goodwill, he telleth him or the protestant and the Catholique: whose a tale of the foxe, that by such a counterpoynt of crastines deceived and devoured the credulous | Well is it seene, they sheepe bene not their hidde.

#### PALINODE.

#### PIERS.

S not thilke the mery moneth of May, When loue lads masken in fresh aray? · How falles it then, we no merrier bene. Ylike as others, girt in gawdy greene? Our bloncket liveryes bene all to sadde. For thilke same season, when all is yeladd With pleasaunce: the grownd with grasse, the Woods

With greene leaues, the bushes with bloosming Buds.

Yougthes folke now flocken in euery where, To gather may buskets and smelling brere: 10 And home they hasten the postes to dight, And all the Kirke pillours eare day light, With Hawthorne buds, and swete Eglantine, And girlonds of roses and Sopps in wine. Such merimake holy Saints doth queme, But we here sytten as drownd in a dreme.

#### PIERS.

For Younkers Palinode such follies fitte. But we tway bene men of elder witt.

#### PALINODE.

Sicker this morrowe, ne lenger agoe, I sawe a shole of shepeheardes outgoe, With singing, and shouting, and iolly chere: Before them yode a lusty Tabrere, That to the many a Horne pype playd, Whereto they dauncen eche one with his mayd. To see those folkes make such jouysaunce, Made my heart after the pype to daunce. Tho to the greene Wood they speeden hem all, To fetchen home May with their musicall: And home they bringen in a royall throne, Crowned as king: and his Queene attone Was Lady Flora, on whom did attend A fayre flocke of Faeries, and a fresh bend Of louely Nymphs. (O that I were there, To helpen the Ladyes their Maybush beare) Ah Piers, bene not thy teeth on edge, to thinke, How great sport they gaynen with little swinck?

Perdie so farre am I from enuie, That their fondnesse inly I pitie. Those faytours little regarden their charge, 39 While they letting their sheepe runne at large, Passen their time, that should be sparely spent, In lustihede and wanton meryment. Thilke same bene shepeheards for the Deuils stedde.

That playen, while their flockes be vnfedde.

That letten them runne at randon alone. But they bene hyred for little pay Of other, that caren as little as they, What fallen the flocke, so they han the fleece And get all the gayne, paying but a peece. 50 I muse, what account both these will make, The one for the hire, which he doth take. And thother for leaving his Lords taske. When great Pan account of shepeherdes shall aske.

# PALINODE.

Sicker now I see thou speakest of spight. All for thou lackest somedele their delight. I (as I am) had rather be enuled. All were it of my foe, then fonly pitied: And yet if neede were, pitied would be, Rather, then other should scorne at me: For pittied is mishappe, that has remedie. But scorned bene dedes of fond foolerie. What shoulden shephcards other things tend. Then sith their God his good does them send, Reapen the fruite thereof, that is pleasure, The while they here liven, at ease and leasure? For when they bene dead, their good is vgoe, They sleepen in rest, well as other moe. Tho with them wends, what they spent in cost, But what they left behind them, is lost Good is no good, but if it be spend: God giueth good for none other end.

#### PIERS.

Ah Palinodie, thou art a worldes childe: Who touches Pitch mought needes be defilde. But shepheards (as Algrind vsed to say,) Mought not live ylike, as men of the laye: With them it sits to care for their heire, Enaunter their heritage doe impaire: They must prouide for meanes of maintenaunce.

And to continue their wont countenaunce. So But shepheard must walke another way, Sike worldly souenance he must foresay. The sonne of his loines why should he regard To leave enriched with that he hath spard? Should not thilke God, that gave him that good, Eke cherish his child, if in his wayes he stood? For if he misliue in leudnes and lust, Little bootes all the welth and the trust, That his father left by inheritaunce: All will be soone wasted with misgouernaunce. But through this, and other their miscreaunce, They maken many a wrong cheuisaunce, Heaping vp waues of welth and woe. The floddes whereof shall them overflowe.

Sike mens follie I cannot compare Better, then to the Apes folish care. That is so enamoured of her young one. (And yet God wote, such cause hath she none) That with her hard hold, and straight embrac-

She stoppeth the breath of her youngling. 100 So often times, when as good is meant, Euil ensueth of wrong entent.

The time was once, and may againe retorne. (For ought may happen, that hath bene beforne)

When shepeheards had none inheritaunce, Ne of land, nor fee in sufferaunce: But what might arise of the bare sheepe, (Were it more or lesse) which they did keepe. Well ywis was it with shepheards thoe: Nought having, nought feared they to forgoe. For Pan himselfe was their inheritaunce, 111 And little them served for their mayntenaunce. The shepheards God so wel them guided, That of nought they were vnprouided, Butter enough, honye, milke, and whay, And their flockes fleeces, them to araye. But tract of time, and long prosperitie: That nource of vice, this of insolencie, Lulled the shephcards in such securitie. That not content with loyall obeysaunce, 120 Some gan to gape for greedie gouernaunce, And match them selfe with mighty potentates. Louers of Lordship and troublers of states: Tho gan shepheards swaines to looke a loft, And leaue to liue hard, and learne to ligge soft: Tho vnder colour of shepeheards, somewhile There crept in Wolues, ful of fraude and guile, That often deuoured their owne sheepe, And often the shepheards, that did hem keepe. This was the first sourse of shepheards sorowe, That now nill be quitt with baile, nor borrowe.

#### PALINODE.

Three thinges to beare, bene very burdenous, But the fourth to forbeare, is outragious. Wemen that of Loues longing once lust, Hardly forbearen, but have it they must: So when choler is inflamed with rage, Wanting reuenge, is hard to asswage: And who can counsell a thristie soule, With patience to forbeare the offred bowle? But of all burdens, that a man can beare, 140 Moste is, a fooles talke to beare and to heare. I wene the Geaunt has not such a weight, That beares on his shoulders the heavens height. Thou findest faulte, where nys to be found, And buildest strong warke vpon a weake ground:

Thou raylest on right withouten reason, And blamest hem much, for small encheason, How shoulden shepheardes live, if not so? What? should they pynen in payne and woe? Nay sayd I thereto, by my deare borrowe, 150 If I may rest, I nill liue in sorrowe.

Sorrowe ne neede be hastened on: For he will come without calling anone. While times enduren of tranquillitie. Usen we freely our felicitie. For when approachen the stormie stowres. We mought with our shoulders beare of the

sharpe showres.

And sooth to sayne, nought seemeth sike strife, That shepheardes so witen ech others life. And layen her faults the world beforne, The while their foes done eache of hem scorne. Let none mislike of that may not be mended: So conteck soone by concord mought be ended.

#### PIERS.

Shepheard, I list none accordaunce make With shepheard, that does the right way forsake. And of the twaine, if choice were to me, Had leuer my foe, then my freend he be. For what concord han light and darke sam? Or what peace has the Lion with the Lambe? Such faitors, when their false harts bene hidde. Will doe, as did the Foxe by the Kidde.

# PALINODE.

Now Piers, of felowship, tell vs that saying: For the Ladde can keepe both our flocks from straying.

#### PIERS.

Hilke same Kidde (as I can well deuise) Was too very foolish and vnwise. For on a tyme in Sommer season, The Gate her dame, that had good reason, Yode forth abroade vnto the greene wood, To brouze, or play, or what shee thought good. But for she had a motherly care Of her young sonne, and wit to beware, Shee set her youngling before her knee. That was both fresh and louely to see, And full of fauour, as kidde mought be: His Vellet head began to shoote out, And his wrethed hornes gan newly sprout: The blossomes of lust to bud did beginne, And spring forth ranckly vnder his chinne.

My sonne (quoth she) (and with that gan weepe:

For carefull thoughts in her heart did creepe) God blesse thee poore Orphane, as he mought me, m

And send thee ioy of thy iollitee.

Thy father (that word she spake with payne: For a sigh had nigh rent her heart in twaine) Thy father, had he liued this day, To see the braunche of his body displaie, How would he haue ioyed at this sweete sight? But ah false Fortune such ioy did him spight, And cutte of hys dayes with vntimely woe, Betraying him into the traines of hys foe. 200 Now I a waylful widdowe behight, Of my old age haue this one delight, To see thee succeede in thy fathers steade, And florish in flowres of lusty head. For euen so thy father his head vpheld, And so his hauty hornes did he weld.

Tho marking him with melting eyes, A thrilling throbbe from her hart did aryse, And interrupted all her other speache, With some old sorowe, that made a newe breache:

Seemed shee sawe in the younglings face The old lineaments of his fathers grace. At last her solein silence she broke, And can his newe budded beard to stroke.

Kiudie (quoth shee) thou kenst the great care, I haue of thy health and thy welfare, Which many wyld beastes liggen in waite, For to entrap in thy tender state:
But most the Foxe, maister of collusion:
For he has voued thy last confusion.
220
For thy my Kiddie be ruld by mee,
And neuer giue trust to his trecheree.
And if he chaunce come, when I am abroade,
Sperre the yate fast for feare of fraude:
Ne for all his worst, nor for his best,
Open the dore at his request.

So schooled the Gate her wanton sonne, That answerd his mother, all should be done. Tho went the pensife Damme out of dore, 220 And chaunst to stomble at the threshold flore: Her stombling steppe some what her amazed, (For such, as signes of ill luck bene dispraised) Yet forth shee yode thereat halfe aghast: And Kiddie the dore sperred after her fast. It was not long, after shee was gone, But the false Foxe came to the dore anone: Not as a Foxe, for then he had be kend. But all as a poore pedler he did wend, Bearing a trusse of tryfles at hys backe. As bells, and babes, and glasses in hys packe. A Biggen he had got about his braine. For in his headpeace he felt a sore payne. His hinder heele was wrapt in a clout, For with great cold he had gotte the gout. There at the dore he cast me downe hys pack, And layd him downe, and groned, Alack, Alack.

Ah deare Lord, and sweete Saint Charitee, That some good body woulde once pitie mee. Well heard Kiddie al this sore constraint.

And lengd to know the cause of his complaint: 250 Tho creeping close behind the Wickets clinck.

Tho creeping close behind the Wickets clinck, Preuilie he peeped out through a chinck: Yet not so preuilie, but the Foxe him spyed: For deceiful meaning is double eyed.

Ah good young maister (then gan he crye) Iesus blesse that sweete face, I espye, And keepel your corpse from the carefull

stounds. That in my carrion carcas abounds. The Kidd pittying hys heavinesse. Asked the cause of his great distresse, 260 And also who, and whence that he were. Tho he, that had well yound his lere. Thus medled his talke with many a teare. Sicke, sicke, alas, and little lack of dead, But I be relieued by your beastlyhead. I am a poore Sheepe, albe my coloure donne; For with long traueile I am brent in the sonne And if that my Grandsire me sayd, be true, Sicker I am very sybbe to you: So be your goodlihead doe not disdayne The base kinred of so simple swaine. Of mercye and fauour then I you pray, With your ayd to forstall my neere decay.

The out of his packe a glasse he tooke: Wherein while kiddie vnwares did looke, He was so enamored with the newell, That nought he deemed deare for the iewell. The opened he the dore, and in came The false Foxe, as he were starke lame. His tayle he clapt betwixt his legs twayne, Lest he should be descried by his travne. 281

Being within, the Kidde made him good glee, All for the loue of the glasse he did sec. After his chere the Pedler can chat, And tell many lesings of this, and that: And how he could shewe many a fine knack. Tho shewed his ware, and opened his packe, All saue a bell, which he left behind In the bas-ket for the Kidde to fynd. Which when the Kidde stooped downe to catch,

catch, 290
He popt him in, and his basket did latch, Ne stayed he once, the dore to make fast, But ranne awaye with him in all hast.
Home when the doubtfull Damme had her hyde, She mought see the dore stand open wyde. All agast, lowdly she gan to cal Her Kidde: but he nould answere at all. Tho on the flore she sawe the merchandise, Of which her sonne had sette to dere a prise.

120

What helpe? her Kidde shee knewe well was gone :

Shee weeped, and wayled, and made great mone. Such end had the Kidde, for he nould warned be Of craft, coloured with simplicitie: And such end perdie does all hem remayne. That of such falsers freendship bene fayne.

#### PALINODIR

I'ruly Piers, thou art beside thy wit. Furthest fro the marke, weening it to hit, Now I pray thee, lette me thy tale borrowe For our sir Iohn, to say to morrowe At the Kerke, when it is holliday: 310 For well he meanes, but little can say.

But and if Foxes bene so crafty, as so, Much needeth all shepheards hem to knowe.

#### PIERS.

Of their falshode more could I recount. But now the bright Sunne gynneth to dismount:

And for the deawie night now doth nye, I hold it best for vs, home to hye.

> Palinodes Embleme. Has nev amoros amorei.

Piers his Embleme. Τὶς δ' ἄρα πίστις ἀπίστω:

GLOSSE.

Thilke) this same moneth. It is applyed to the season of the moneth, when all menne delight them selues with pleasaunce of fieldes, and gardens, and garments.

Bloncket liueries) gray coates.

Yclad) arrayed, Y, redoundeth, as before.

In every where) a straunge, yet proper kind of speaking

Buskets) a Diminutiue .s. little bushes of hauthorne. Kirke) church. Queme) please.

A shole) a multitude; taken of fishe, whereof some going in great companies, are sayde to swimme in a shole.

Yorle) went. louyssance) ioye. winck) labour Inly) entirely.

haytours) vagabonds. Great pan) is Christ, the very God of all shepheards which calleth himselfe the greate and good shepherd. The name is most rightly (me thinkes) applyed to him, for Pan signifieth all or omnipotent, which is onely the Lord Iesus. And by that name (as I remember) he is called of Eusebius in his fifte booke de Preparat. Euang: who thereof telleth a proper storye to that purpose. Which story is first recorded of Plutarch, in his booke of the ceasing of oracles, and of Lauetere translated, in his booke of walking sprightes. Who sayth, that about the same time, that our Lord suffered his most bitter passion for the redemtion of man, certein passengers sayling from Italy to Cyprus and passing by certain Iles called Paxe, heard a voyce calling alowde Thamus, Thamus, (now Thamus was the name of an Ægyptian, which was Pilote of the ship,) who giving care to the cry, was bidden, when he came to Palodes, to tel, that the great Pan was dead: which he doubting to doe, yet for that when he came to Palodes, there sodeinly was such a calme of winde, that the shippe stoode still in the sea vninoued, he was forced to cry alowd, that Pan was dead: wherewithall there was heard suche piteous outcryes and dreadfull shriking, as hath not bene the like. By whych Pan, though of some be vnderstoode the great Satanas, whose income that the satanas is the satanas. kingdome at that time was by Christ conquered, the gates of hell broken vp, and death by death delivered to eternall death, (for at that time, as he sayth, all Oracles surceased, and enchaunted

spirits, that were wont to delude the people, thenceforth held theyr peace) and also at the demaund of the Emperoure Tiberius, who that Pan should be, answere was made him by the wisest and best learned, that it was the sonne of Mercurie and Penelope, yet I think it more properly meant of the death of Christ, the onely and very Pan, then suffering for his flock.

I as I am) seemeth to imitate the commen prouerb,

Malim Inuidere mihi omnes quam miserescere Nas) is a syncope, for ne has, or has not : as nould,

for would not.

Tho with them) doth imitate the Epitaphe of the ryotous king Sardanapalus, whych caused to be written on his tombe in Greeke: which verses be thus translated by Tullie.

"Hæc habui quæ edi, quæque exaturata libido " Hausit, at illa manent multa ac præclara

which may thus be turned into English.

, All that I eate did I ioye, and all that I

greedily gorged:
As for those many goodly matters left I for others

Much like the Epitaph of a good olde Erle of Denonshire, which though much more wisedome bewraieth, then Sardanapalus, yet hath a smacke of his sensuall delights and beastlinesse. The rymes be these.

" Ho, Ho, who lies here?

I the good Erle of Deuonshere, And Maulde my wife, that was ful deare,

We lived together lv. yeare.
That we spent, we had: ,,

That we gaue, we haue: That we lefte, we lost,

Algrind) the name of a shepheard. Men of the Lay) Lay men.

Enaunter) least that,

Souenaunce) remembraunce.

Miscreaunce) despeire or misbeliefe. Cheuisaunce, sometime of Chaucer vsed for gaine:

sometime of other for spoyle, or bootie, or enter-prise, and sometime for chiefdome.

Pan himselfe, God. According as is sayd in Deuteronomie, That in digision of the lande of Canaan, to the tribe of Leuie no portion of heritage should bee allotted, for GOD himselfe

was their inheritaunce.

Some gan) meant of the Pope, and his Antichristian prelates, which vsurpe a tyrannical dominion in the Churche, and with Peters counterfet keyes, open a wide gate to al wickednesse and insolent government. Nought here spoken, as of purpose to deny fatherly rule and godly gouernaunce (as some malitiously of late haue done to the great vnreste and hinderaunce of the Churche) but to displaye the pride and disorder of such, as in steede of feeding their sheepe, indeede feede of theyr sheepe

Sourse) welspring and originall.

Borrowe) pledge or suertie.

The Geaunte) is the greate Atlas, whom the poetes feign to be a huge graunt, that beareth Heauen on his shoulders: being in deede a merueilous highe mountaine in Mauritania, that now is Barbarie, which to mans seeming perceth the cloudes, and seemeth to touch the heauens. Other thinke, and they not amisse, that this fable was meant of one Atlas king of the same countrye, (of whome may bee, that that hil had his denomination) brother to Prometheus who (as the Grekes say) did first fynd out the hidden courses of the starres, by an excellent imagination. Wherefore the poetes feigned, that he susteyned the firmament on hys shoulders. Many other conjectures needelesse be told hereof.

Warke) worke. Encheason) cause, occasion. Deare borow) that is our saujour, the commen pledge of all mens debts to death.

Wyten) blame. Nought seemeth) is vascemely.

Conteck) strife contention.

Her) theyr, as vseth Chaucer.

Han) for haue. Sam) together.
This tale is much like to that in Æsops fables, but the Catastrophe and end is farre different. By the Kidde may be understoode the simple sorte of the faythfull and true Christians. By hys dame Christe, that hath alreadie with carefull watchewords (as heere doth the gote) warned his little ones, to beware of such doubling deceit. By the Foxe, the false and faithlesse Papistes, to whom is no credit to be given, nor felowshippe to be vsed.

The gate) the Gote: Northernely spoken to turne O into A.

Yode) went. Afforesayd.

She set) A figure called Fictio. Which vseth to attribute reasonable actions and speaches to vnreasonable creatures.

The bloosmes of lust) be the young and mossie The bloosmes of lust) be the young and mossic heares, which then beginne to sproute and shoote foorth, when lustfull heate beginneth to kindle. And with A very Poeticall  $\pi dvos$ .

Orphane) A youngling or pupill, that needeth a Tutour and gouernour.

That word) A patheticall parenthesis, to encrease a carefull Hyperbaton.

The braunch) of the fathers body, is the child.

For even so) Alluded to the saying of Andromache to Ascanius in Virgile.

Sic oculos, sic ille munus, sic ora ferebat.

A thrilling throb) a percing sighe. Liggen) lye.

Maister of collusion) .s. coloured guile, because the
Foxe of al beasts is most wily and crafty.

Sperre the yate) shut the dore.

For such) The gotes stombling is here noted as an euill signe. The like to be marked in all histories: and that not the leaste of the Lorde Hastingues in king Rycharde the third his dayes. For beside his daungerous dreame (whiche was a shrewde prophecie of his mishap, that followed) it is sayd that in the morning ryding toward the tower of London, there to sitte vppon matters of counsell, his horse stombled twise or thrise by the way: which of some, that ryding with hym in his company, were priute to his neere destenie, was secretly marked, and afterward noted for memorie of his great mishap, that ensewed. For being then as merye, as man might be, and least doubting any mortall daunger, he was within two howres after, of the T, ranne put to a shamefull deathe.

As belles) by such trifles are noted, the reliques and ragges of popish superstition, which put no smal religion in Belles; and Babies .s. Idoles; and glasses .s. Paxes, and such lyke trumperies. Great cold ) For they boast much of their outward patience, and voluntarye sufferaunce as a worke

of merite and holy humblenesse.

Sweete S. Charitie. The Catholiques comen othe, and onely speache, to haue charitye alwayes in their mouth, and sometime in their outward Actions, but neuer inwardly in fayth and godly zeale.

Clincke.) a key hole. Whose diminutiue is clicket, vsed of Chaucer for a Key.

Stoundes) fittes: aforesayde His lere) his lesson. Medled) mingled. Bestlihead.) agreeing to the person of a beast. Sibbe.) of kynne. Newell) a newe thing. To forestall) to prænent.

Glee) chere, afforesayde.

Deare a price.) his lyfe, which he lost for those

Such ende) is an Epiphonema, or rather the morall of the whole tale, whose purpose is to warne the protestaunt beware, howe he geueth credit to the vnfaythfull Catholique: whereof we have dayly proofes sufficient, but one moste famous of all, practised of Late yeares in Fraunce

by Charles the nynth. Fayne) gladde or desyrous.

Our sir Iohn) a Popishe priest. A saying fit for the grosenesse of a shepheard, but spoken to taunte vnlearned Priestes.

Dismount) descende or set. Nye) draweth nere.

#### Embleme.

Both these Emblemes make one whole Hexametre. The first spoken of Palmodie, as in reproche of them, that be distrustfull, is a peece of Theognis verse, intending, that who doth most mistrust is most false. For such experience in falsehod breedeth mistrust in the mynd, thinking no lesse guile to lurke in others, then in hymselfe. But Piers thereto strongly replyeth with another rece of the same verse, saying as in his former prece of the same verse, saying as in including fable, what fayth then is there in the faythlesse. For if fayth be the ground of religion, which fayth they dayly false, what hold then is there of theyr religion. And thys is all that they saye.

# Iune.



Ægloga sexta.

### ARGVMENT.

This Æglogue is wholly vowed to the complayning of Colins ill successe in his loue. For being (as is a foresaid) enamoured of a Country lasse Rosalind, and hauing (as seemeth) founde place in her heart, he lamenteth to his deare frend Hobbinoll, that he is nowe forsaken valailifully, and in his steede Menalcas, another shepheard received disloyally. And this is the whole Argument of this Æglogue.

# Hobbinol. Colin Cloyte.

OColin, here the place, whose pleasaunt syte From other shades hath weand my wandring mynde.

Tell me, what wants me here, to worke delyte? The simple ayre, the gentle warbling wynde, So calme, so coole, as no where else I fynde: The grassye ground with daintye Daysies dight, The Bramble bush, where Byrds of euery kynde

To the waters fall their tunes attemper right.

O happy Hobbinoll, I blesse thy state, That Paradise hast found, whych Adam lost. 10 Here wander may thy flock early or late, Withouten dreade of Wolues to bene ytost:

Thy louely layes here mayst thou freely boste. But I vnhappy man, whom cruell fate, And angry Gods pursue from coste to coste, Cannowhere fynd, to shroude my lucklesse pate.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Then if by me thou list aduised be, Forsake the soyle, that so doth the bewitch: Leaue me those hilles, where harbrough nis to see,

Nor holybush, nor brere, nor winding witche: And to the dales resort, where shepheards ritch,

And fruictfull flocks bene euery where to see. Here no night Rauens lodge more black then pitche.

Nor eluish ghosts, nor gastly owles doe flee.

But frendly Faeries, met with many Graces, And lightfote Nymphes can chace the lingring night,

With Heydeguyes, and trimly trodden traces, Whilst systers nyne, which dwell on *Parnasse* hight.

Doe make them musick, for their more delight:
And Pan himselfe to kisse their christall faces,
Will pype and daunce, when Phabe shineth
bright:
31

Such pierlesse pleasures have we in these places.

COLLIN.

And I, whylst youth, and course of carelesse veeres

yetres

Did let me walke withouten lincks of loue,
In such delights did ioy amongst my peeres:
But ryper age such pleasures doth reproue,
My fancye eke from former follies moue
To stayed steps: for time in passing weares
(As garments doen, which wexen old aboue)
And draweth newe delightes with hoary heares.
Tho couth I sing of loue, and tune my pype 41
Vnto my plaintiue pleas in verses made:
Tho would I seeke for Queene apples vnrype,
To giue my Rosalind, and in Sommer shade
Dight gaudy Girlonds, was my comen trade,
To crowne her golden locks, but yeeres more

And losse of her, whose loue as lyfe I wayd, Those weary wanton toyes away dyd wype.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Colin, to heare thy rymes and roundelayes,
Which thou were wont on wastfull hylls to
singe.

I more delight, then larke in Sommer dayes: Whose Echomade the neyghbour groues to ring, And taught the byrds, which in the lower spring Did shroude in shady leaues from sonny rayes, Frame to thy songe their chereful cheriping, Or hold theyr peace, for shame of thy swete layes.

I sawe Calliope wyth Muses moe,
Soone as thy oaten pype began to sound,
Theyr yuory Luyts and Tamburins forgoe.
And from the fountaine, where they sat around,
Renne after hastely thy siluer sound.

61
But when they came, where thou thy skill didst
showe,

They drewe abacke, as halfe with shame confound,

Shepheard to see, them in theyr art outgoe.

Of Muses Hobbinol, I conne no skill:
For they bene daughters of the hyghest loue,
And holden scorne of homely shepheards quill.
For sith I heard, that Pan with Phabus stroue,
Which him to much rebuke and Daungerdroue:
I neuer lyst presume to Parnasse hyll,
70

But pyping lowe in shade of lowly groue, I play to please my selfe, all be it ill. Nought weigh I, who my song doth prayse of

Nought weigh I, who my song doth prayse or blame,

Ne striue to winne renowne, or passe the rest: With shepheard sittes not, followe flying fame: But feede his flocke in fields, where falls hem best.

I wote my rymes bene rough, and rudely drest: The fytter they, my carefull case to frame: Enough is me to paint out my vnrest, And poore my piteous plaints out in the same.

The God of shepheards *Tityrus* is dead, 81 Who taught me homely, as I can, to make. He, whilst he liued, was the soucraigne head Of shepheards all, that bene with loue ytake: Well couth he wayle hys Woes, and lightly slake The flames, which loue within his heart had bredd, And tell vs mery tales, to keepe vs wake, The while our sheepe about vs safely fedde.

Nowe dead he is, and lyeth wrapt in lead, (O why should death on hym such outrage showe?)

And all hys passing skil with him is fledde, The fame whereof doth dayly greater growe. But if on me some little drops would flowe, Of that the spring was in his learned hedde, I soone would learne these woods, to wayle my woe.

And teache the trees, their trickling teares to shedde.

Then should my plaints, causd of discurtesee, As messengers of all my painfull plight, Flye to my loue, where euer that she bee, And pierce her heart with poynt of worthy wight:

As sheedeserues, that wrought so deadly spight. And thou *Menaleas*, that by trecheree Didst vnderfong my lasse, to wexe so light, Shouldest well be knowne for such thy villanee.

But since I am not, as I wish I were
Vegentleshepheards, which your flocks dofeede,
Whether on hylls, or dales, or other where,
Beare witnesse all of thys so wicked deede:
And tell the kasse, whose flowre is woxe a weede,
And faultlesse fayth, is turned to faithlesse fere,
That she the truest shepheards hart made
bleede,

That lyues on earth, and loued her most dere.

HOBBINOL.

O carefull Colin, I lament thy case, Thy teares would make the hardest flint to flowe. Ah faithlesse Rosalind, and voide of grace, That art the roote of all this ruthfull woe. But now is time, I gesse, homeward to goe: Then ryse ye blessed flocks, and home apace, Least night with stealing steppes doe you forsloe,

And wett your tender Lambes, that by you trace. 120

Colins Embleme. Gia speme spenta.

### GLOSSE.

Syte) situation and place.

Paradise) A Paradise in Greeke signifieth a Garden of pleasure, or place of delights. So he compareth the soile, wherin Hobbinoll made his abode, to that earthly Paradise, in scripture called Eden; wherein Adam in his first creation was placed Which of the most learned is thought to be in Mesopotamia, the most fertile and pleasaunte country in the world (as may appeare by Diodorus Syculus description of it, in the hystorie of Alexanders conquest thereof) lying betweene the two famous Ryuers (which are said in scripture to flowe out of Paradise) Tygris and Euphrates, whereof it is so denominate.

Forsake the soyle) This is no poetical fiction, but unternedly spoken of the Poete selfe, who for speciall occasion of private affayres (as I have bene partly of himselfe informed) and for his more preferment removing out of the Northparts came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede

aduised him prinately.

Those hylles) that is the North countrye, where he

N'is) is not.

The Dales) The Southpartes, where he nowe abydeth, which thoughe they be full of hylles and woodes (for Kent is very hyllve and woodye; and therefore so called: for Kantsh in the Saxons tongue signifieth woodie) yet in respecte of the Northpartes they be called dales. For indede the North is counted the higher country e.

Night Rauens &c ) by such hatefull byrdes, hee meaneth all misfortunes (Whereof they be tokens,

flying cuery where.

Frendly faeries) the opinion of Faeries and elfes is very old, and yet sticketh very religiously in the myndes of some. But to roote that rancke opinion of Elfes oute of mens hearts, the truth is, that there be no such thinges, nor yet the shadowes of the things, but onely by a sort of bald Friers and knauish shauelings so feigned; which as in all other things, so in that, soughte to nousell the comen people in ignorounce, least being once acquainted with the truth of things, they woulde in tyme smell out the vntruth theyr packed pelfe and Massepeme religion. But he sooth is, that when all Italy was distraicte nto the Factions of the Guelfes and the Gibelins, seing two famous houses in Florence, the name began through their great mischiefes and many outrages, to be so odious or rather dreadfull in the peoples cares, that if theyr children at any time were frowarde and wanton, they would say to them that the Guelle or the Gibeline came. Which words nowe from them (as many thinge els) be come into our vsage, and for Guelses and Gibelines, we say Elses and Goblins. No otherwise then the Frenchmen vsed to say of that valuaunt captain, the very scourge of Fraunce, the Lord Thalbot, afterward Erle of Shrewsbury; whose noblesse bred such a terrour in the hearts of the French, that oft times even great armies were defaicted and put to flyght at the onely

hearing of hys name. In somuch that the French wemen, to attray theyr chyldren, would tell them that the Talbot commeth.

Many Graces) though there be indeede but three Graces or Charites (as afore is sayd) or at the vimost but foure, yet in respect of many gyftes of bounty, there may be sayde more. And so Musicus sayth, that in Heroes eyther eye there satte a hundred graces. And by that authoritye, thys same Poete in his Pageaunts sayth

An hundred Graces on her eveledde satte. &c.

Haydeguies) A country daunce or round. The conceipt is, that the Graces and Nymphes doe daunce vnto the Muses, and Pan his musicke all night by Moonelight. To signific the pleasauntnesse of the soyle Peeres) Equalles and felow shepheards.

Quencapples varipe) imitating Virgils verse.

Ip-e ego cana legam tenera lanugine mala.

Neighbour groues) a straunge phrase in English, but word for word expressing the Latine vicina

Spring) not of water, but of young trees springing. Calhope) afforesayde. Thys staffe is full of verie poetical inuention.

Tamburines) an olde kind of instrument, which of some is supposed to be the Clarion.

Pan with Phaebus) the tale is well knowne, howe that Pan and Apollo striuing for excellencye in musicke, chose Midas for their judge. Who being corrupted with partiall affection, gaue the victorye to Pan videserued; for which Phoebus sette a payre of Asses eares vpon hys head &c. Tityrus) That by Tityrus is meant Chaucer, hath

bene already sufficiently sayde, and by thys more playne appeareth, that he sayth, he tolde merye tales. Such as be hy Canterburie tales. Whom he calleth the God of Poetes for hys excellencie, so as Tullie calleth Lentulus, Deum vitæ suæ .s. the God of hys lyfe.

To make) to versifie.

() why) A pretye Epanorthosis or correction.

Discurtesie) he meaneth the falsenesse of his louer Rosalinde, who forsaking hym, hadde chosen another

Pointe of worthy wite) the pricke of deserged blame.

Menalcas) the name of a shephearde in Virgile; but here is meant a person vnknowne and secrete, agaynst whome he often bitterly inuayeth. vnderfonge) vndermine and deceiue by false suggestion.

Embleme.

You remember, that in the fyrst Æglogue, Colins Poesie was Anchora speme: for that as then there was hope of fauour to be found in tyme. But nowe being cleane forlorne and rejected of her, as whose hope, that was, is cleane extinguished and turned into despeyre, he renounceth all comfort and hope of goodnesse to come. Which is all the meaning of thys Embleme.

# Iulye.



# Ægloga septima.

#### ARGVMENT.

THs Æglogue is made in the honour and commendation of good shepeheardes, and to the shame and disprayse of proude and ambitious Pastours. Such as Morrell is here imagined to bee.

#### THOMALIN.

MORRELL.

I S not thilke same a goteheard prowde, that sittes on yonder bancke, Whose straying heard them selfe doth shrowde emong the bushes rancke?

#### MORRELL.

What ho, thou iollye shepheards swayne, come vp the hyll to me:
Better is, then the lowly playne, als for thy flocke, and thee.

#### THOMALIN.

Ah God shield, man, that I should clime, and learne to looke alofte, This reede is ryfe, that oftentime great clymbers fall vnsoft. In humble dales is footing fast, the trode is not so tickle: And though one fall through heedlesse hast, yet is his misse not mickle.

And now the Sonne hath reared vp his fyriefooted teme,

Making his way betweene the Cuppe, and golden Diademe: The rampant Lyon hunts he fast,

with Dogge of noysome breath, Whose balefull barking bringes in hast pyne, plagues, and dreery death.

Agaynst his cruell scortching heate
where hast thou couerture?
The present like the property of the country of

The wastefull hylls vnto his threate is a playne ouerture.
But if thee lust, to holden chat

with seely shepherds swayne, Come downe, and learne the little what, that Thomalin can sayne.

### MORRELL.

30

Syker, thous but a laesie loord, and rekes much of thy swinck, That with fond termes, and weetlesse words to blere myne eyes doest thinke. 40

50

70

80

90

In eaill houre thou hentest in hond thus holy hylles to blame. For sacred vnto saints they stond. and of them han theyr name. S. Michels mount who does not know. that wardes the Westerne coste? And of S. Brigets bowre I trow, all Kent can rightly boaste: And they that con of Muses skill, savne most what, that they dwell (As goteheards wont) vpon a hill, beside a learned well. And wonned not the great God Pan. vpon mount Oliuet: Feeding the blessed flocke of Dan, which dyd himselfe beget?

# THOMALIN.

O blessed sheepe, O shepheard great, that bought his flocke so deare, And them did saue with bloudy sweat from Wolues, that would them teare.

#### MORREL.

Besyde, as holy fathers sayne, there is a hyllye place, Where Tilan ryseth from the mayne, to renne hys dayly race. Vpon whose toppe the starres bene stayed, and all the skie doth leane, There is the caue, where Phobe layed, the shepheard long to dreame. Whilome there vsed shephcards all to feede theyr flocks at will, Till by his foly one did fall. that all the rest did spill. And sithens shepheardes bene foresayd from places of delight: For thy I weene thou be affrayd, to clime this hilles height. Of Synah can I tell thee more, and of our Ladyes bowre: But little needes to strow my store, suffice this hill of our. Here han the holy Faunes resourse, and Syluanes haunten rathe. Here has the salt Medway his sourse, wherein the Nymphes doe bathe. The salt Medway, that trickling stremis adowne the dales of Kent: Till with his elder brother Themis his brackish waues be meynt. Here growes Melampode euery where, and Teribinth good for Gotes: The one, my madding kiddes to smere. the next, to heale theyr throtes.

Hereto, the hills bene nigher heuen, and thence the passage ethe. As well can proue the piercing leuin, that seeldome falls bynethe.

#### THOMALIN.

Syker thou speakes lyke a lewde lorrell. of Heauen to demen so: How be I am but rude and borrell. vet nearer waves I knowe. To Kerke the narre, from God more farre. has bene an old savd sawc. And he that strives to touch the starres. oft stombles at a strawe, 100 Alsoone may shepheard clymbe to skye, that leades in lowly dales, As Gotcherd prowd that sitting hye, vpon the Mountaine sayles. My seely sheepe like well belowe, they neede not Melampode: For they bene hale enough, I trowe, and liken theyr abode. But if they with thy Gotes should yede, they soone myght be corrupted: 110 Or like not of the frowie fede, or with the weedes be glutted. The hylls, where dwelled holy saints, I reuerence and adore: Not for themselfe, but for the saynets, Which han be dead of yore. And nowe they bene to heaven forewent. theyr good is with them goe: Theyr sample onely to vs lent, that als we mought doe soe. 120 Shepheards they weren of the best, and liued in lowlye leas: And sith theyr soules bene now at rest, why done we them disease? Such one he was, (as I have heard old Algrind often sayne) That whilome was the first shepheard, and liued with little gayne: As meeke he was, as meeke mought be, simple, as simple sheepe. 130 Humble, and like in eche degree the flocke, which he did keepe. Often he vsed of hys keepe a sacrifice to bring, Nowe with a Kidde, now with a sheepe the Altars hallowing. So lowted he vnto hys Lord, such fauour couth he fynd, That sithens neuer was abhord. the simple shepheards kynd. 144 And such I weene the brethren were. that came from Canaan:

The brethren twelve, that kept yfere the flockes of mighty Pan. But nothing such thilk shephearde was. whom *Ida* hyll dyd beare. That left hys flocke, to fetch a lasse, whose love he bought to deare: · For he was proude, that ill was payd. (no such mought shepheards bee) I 50 And with lewde lust was overlayd: tway things doen ill agree: But shepheard mought be meeke and mylde, well eyed, as Argus was, With fleshly follyes vndefyled. and stoute as steede of brasse. Sike one (sayd Algrin) Moses was, that sawe hys makers face, His face more cleare, then Christall glasse, and spake to him in place. 160 This had a brother, (his name I knewe) the first of all his cote. A shepheard trewe, yet not so true, as he that earst I hote. Whilome all these were lowe, and lief, and loued their flocks to feede. They neuer strough to be chiefe, and simple was theyr weede. But now (thanked be God therefore) the world is well amend. 170 Their weedes bene not so nighty wore. such simplesse mought them shend: They bene yolad in purple and pall, so hath theyr god them blist, They reigne and rulen ouer all, and lord it, as they list: Ygyrt with belts of glitterand gold, (mought they good sheepeheards bene) Theyr Pan theyr sheepe to them has old, I saye as some haue seene. 180 For Palinode (if thou him ken) yode late on Pilgrimage To Rome, (if such be Rome) and then he sawe thilke misusage. For shepeheards (sayd he) there doen leade. as Lordes done other where, Theyr sheepe han crustes, and they the bread: the chippes, and they the chere: They han the fleece, and eke the flesh. (O seely sheepe the while) 190 The corne is theyrs, let other thresh.

They han great stores, and thriftye stockes, great freendes and feeble foes: What neede hem caren for their flocks? theyr boyes can looke to those.

These wisards weltre in welths waues, pampred in pleasures deepe,
They han fatte kernes, and leany knaues, their fasting flockes to keepe.

Sike mister men bene all misgone, they heapen hylles of wrath:
Sike syrlye shepheards han we none, they keepen all the path.

## MORRELL.

Here is a great deale of good matter, lost for lacke of telling,
Now sicker I see, thou doest but clatter: harme may come of melling.
Thou medlest more, then shall haue thanke, to wyten shepheards welth:
When folke bene fat, and riches rancke, it is a signe of helth.
But say me, what is Algrin he, that is so oft bynempt.

#### THOMALIN.

In is a shepheard great in gree;
but hath bene long ypent.
One daye he sat vpon a hyll,
(as now thou wouldest me:
But I am taught by Algrins ill,
to loue the lowe degree.)
220
For sitting so with bared scalpe,
an hage sored hye,
That weening hys whyte head was chalke,
a shell fish downe let fiye:
She weend the shell fishe to haue broake,
but therewith bruzd his brayne,
So now astonied with the stroke,
he lyes in lingring payne.

#### MORRELL.

Ah good Algrin, his hap was ill, but shall be better in time.

230

Now farwell shepheard, sith thys hyll
thou hast such doubt to climbe.

Thomalins Embleme.
In medio virtus.
Morrells Embleme.
In summo fælicitas

## GLOSSE.

A Goteheard) By Gotes in scrypture be represented the wicked and reprobate, whose pastour also must needes be such.

Banck) is the seate of honor.

their hands they may not file.

Straying heard) which wander out of the waye of truth.
Als) for also.
Clymbe) spoken of Ambition.

Mickle) much.

The sonne) A reason, why he refuseth to dwell on Mountaines, because there is no shelter against the scortching sunne. According to the time of the years, whiche is the whotest moneth of all. The Cupp and Diademe) Be two signes in the

Firmament, through which the sonne maketh his

course in the moneth of July.

Lion) Thys is Poetically spoken, as if the Sunne did hunt a Lion with one Dogge. The meaning whereof is, that in Iuly the sonne is in Leo. which tyme the Dogge starre, which is called Syrius or Canicula reigneth, with immoderate heate causing Pestilence, drougth, and many discases.

Ouerture) an open place. The word is borrowed of the French, and vsed in good writers.

To holden chatt) to talke and prate.

A loorde) was wont among the old Britons to signific a Lorde. And therefore the Danes, that long time vsurped theyr Tyrannie here in Brytame, were called for more dread then dignitie, Lurdanes s Lord Danes. At which time it is sayd, that the insolencie and pryde of that nation was so outragious in thys Realme, that if it fortuned a Briton to be going over a bridge, and sawe the Dane set foote vpon the same, he muste retorne back, till the Dane were cleane ouer, or els abyde the pryce of his disoleasure, which was no lesse, then present death. But being afterwarde expelled that name of Lurdane became so odious vnto the people, whom they had long oppressed, that even at this daye they vse for more reproche, to call the Quartane ague the Feuer Lurdane.

Recks much of thy swinck) counts much of thy

paynes. Weetelesse) not vnderstoode.

S. Michels mount) is a promontorie in the West part of England A hill) Parnassus afforesayd. Pan Christ.

Dan) One trybe is put for the whole nation per

Synecdochen.

Where Titan) the Sonne. Which story is to be redde in Diodorus Syc. of the hyl Ida; from whence he sayth, all night time is to bee seene a mightye fire, as it the skye burned, which toward morning beginneth to gather into a round forme, and thereof ryseth the sonne, whome the Poetes call Titan:

The Shepheard) is Endymion, whom the Poets fayne, to have bene so beloued of Phobe .s the Moone, that he was by her kept a sleepe in a caue by the space of xxx. yeares, for to enjoye

his companye

There) that is in Paradise, where through errour of shepheards viderstanding, he sayth, that all shepheards did use to feede theyr flocks, till one, (that is Adam) by hys follye and disobedience made all the rest of hys ofspring be debarred and shutte out from thence.

Synah) a hill in Arabia, where God appeared. Our Ladyes bowre) a place of pleasure so called. Faunes or Syluanes) be of Poetes feigned to be Gods of the Woode.

Medway) the name of a Ryuer in Kent, which running by Rochester, meeteth with Thames; whom he calleth his elder brother, both because he is greater, and also falleth sooner into the Sea. Meynt) mingled.

Great clymbers) according to Seneca his verse, Decidunt celsa grauiore lapsu.

Melampode and Terebinth) be hearbes good to cure diseased Gotes. Of thone speaketh Man-thickle much.

#### τερμινθου τράγων έσχατον **άπρέμονα.**

Nigher heaven) Note the shepheards simplenesse. which supposeth that from the hylls is nearer waye to heauen.

Leuin) Lightning; which he taketh for an argument, to proue the nighnes to heauen, because the lightning doth comenly light on hygh mountagnes, according to the saying of the Poete.

Feriuntque summos fulmina montes. Lorrell) A losell. A borell.) a playne fellowe

Narre) nearer. Yede) goe.

Hale) for hole. Frowye) mustye or mossie.

Of yore) long agoe. Forewente) gone afore. The firste shepheard) was Abell the righteous, who (as scripture sayth) bent hys mind to keeping of sheepe, as did hys brother Cain to tilling the grownde.

His keepe) hys charge s, his flocke.

Lowted) did honour and reuerence

The brethren) the twelue sonnes of Iacob, whych were shepemaisters, and lyued onelye thereupon Whom Ida) Paris, which being the sonne of Priamus king of Troy, for his mother Hecubas dreame, which being with child of hym, dreamed shee broughte forth a firebrand, that set all the

towre of Ilium on fire, was cast forth on the hyll Ida; where being fostered of shepheards, he eke in time became a shepheard, and lastly came to

knowledge of his parentage

lasse) Helena the wyle of Menelaus king of Lacedemonia, was by Venus for the golden Aple to her geuen, then promised to Paris, who thereupon with a sorte of lustye Troyanes, stole her out of Lacedemonia, and kept her in Troye. Which was the cause of the tenne yeares warre in Troye, and the moste famous citve of all Asia most lamentably sacked and defaced.

Argus) was of the Poets deuised to be full of eyes, and therefore to hym was committed the keeping of the transformed Cow Io: So called because that in the print of a Cowesfoote, there is figured

an I in the middest of an O.

His name) he meaneth Aaron; whose name for more Decorum, the shephearde sayth he hath forgot, lest his remembraunce and skill in antiquities of holy writ should seeme to exceede the meanenesse of the Person.

Not so true) for Aaron in the absence of Moses started aside, and committed Idolatry.

In purple) Spoken of the Popes and Cardinalles, which use such tyrannical colours and pompous paynting

Belts) Girdles

Ghtterand) Glittering. A Participle vsed some-time in Chaucer, but altogether in I. Goore.

Theyr Pan) that is the Pope, whom they count theyr God and greatest shepheard.

Palinode) A shephearde, of whose report he seemeth to speake all thys.

Wisards) greate léarned heads.

Welter) wallowe. Kerne) a Churle or Farmer.

Sike mister men) such kinde of men

Surly) stately and prowde. Melling) medling.

Bett) better. Bynempte) named. Gree) for degree.

Algrin the name of a shepheard afforesayde, whose

myshap he alludeth to the chaunce, that happened to the Poet Æschylus, that was brayned with a shellfishe.

#### Embleme.

By thys poesye Thomalin confirmeth that, which in hys former speach by sondrye reasons he had proued. For being both hymselfe sequestred from all ambition and also abhorring it in others of hys cote, he taketh occasion to prayes the meane and lowly state, as that wherein is safetie without feare, and quiet without danger, according to the saying of olde Philosophers, that vertue dwelleth in the middest, being enuironed with two contrary vices: whereto Morrell repleth with two contrary vices: whereto Morrell repleth

with continuaunce of the same Philosopher opinion, that albeit all bountye dwelleth is mediocritie, yet perfect felicitye dwelleth is supremacie. For they say, and most true it is that happinesse is placed in the highest degress on as if any thing be higher or better, then this streight way ceaseth to be perfect happine Much like to that, which once I heard alleage in defence of humilitye out of a great doctou Suorum Christus humillimus: which saying gentle man in the company taking at the rebownd, beate backe again with lyke saying canother Doctoure, as he sayde. Suorum deu altissimus.

# August.



Ægloga octaua.

#### ARGVMENT.

In this Æglogue is set forth a delectable controversie, made in imitation of that in Theocritus: whereto also Virgile fashioned his third and seuenth Æglogue. They choose for impere of their strife, Cuddie a neatheards boye, who having ended their cause, reciteth also himselfe a proper song, whereof Colin he sayth was Authour.

## WILLYE, PERIGOT, CYDDIE.

TEll me Perigot, what shalbe the game, Wherefore with myne thou dare thy musick matche?

Or bene thy Bagpypes renne farre out of frame?
Or hath the Crampe thy ioynts benomd with ache?

# PERIGOT.

Ah Willye, when the hart is ill assayde, How can Bagpipe, or ioynts be well apayd?

#### WILLYE.

What the foule euill hath thee so bestadde? Whilom thou was peregall to the best, And wont to make the iolly shepeheards gladd With pyping and dauncing, didst passe the rest.

#### PERICOT

Ah Willye now I haue learnd a newe daunce My old musick mard by a newe mischaunce

#### WILLYE.

Mischiefe mought to that new emischaunce befall. That so hath raft vs of our meriment

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Pcr.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

W al.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Per.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

Wil.

Per.

70

But reede me, what payne doth thee so appall? Or louest thou, or bene thy younglings miswent?

#### PERIGOT.

Loue hath misled both my younglings, and mee: 1 Dyne for payne, and they my payne to sec.

Perdie and wellawaye: ill may they thriue: Neuer knewe I louers sheepe in good plight. 20 But and if in rymes with me thou dare striue, Such fond fantsies shall soone be put to flight.

#### PERIGOT.

That shall I doe, though mochell worse I fared: Neuer shall be sayde that Perigot was dared.

Then loe Perigot the Pledge, which I plight: A mazer ywrought of the Maple warre: Wherein is enchased many a fayre sight Of Beres and Tygres, that maken fiers warre: And ouer them spred a goodly wild vine. Entrailed with a wanton Yuie twine.

Thereby is a Lambe in the Wolues iawes: But see, how fast renneth the shepheardswayne, To saue the innocent from the beastes pawes: And here with his shepehooke hath him slayne. fell me, such a cup hast thou euer sene? Well mought it beseme any haruest Queene.

#### Perigot.

Thereto will I pawne yonder spotted Lambe, Of all my flocke there his sike another: For I brought him vp without the Dambe. But Colin Clout rafte me of his brother, That he purchast of me in the playne field: Sore against my will was I forst to yield.

#### WILLYE.

Sicker make like account of his brother. But who shall judge the wager wonne or lost?

### PERIGOT.

That shall yonder heardgrome, and none other, Which ouer the pousse hetherward doth post.

#### WILLYE.

But for the Sunnebeame so sore doth vs beate, Were not better, to shunne the scortching heate?

#### PERIGOT.

Well agreed Willy: then sitte thee downe swayne: Sike a song neuer heardest thou, but Colin sing.

#### CVDDIE.

Gynne, when ye lyst, ye iolly shepheards twayne: Sike a judge, as Cuddie, were for a king.

SPENSER

Perigot. T fell vpon a holly eue, hev ho hollidave. Willye.

> When holly fathers wont to shrieue: now gynneth this roundelay. Sitting vpon a hill so hye

Wil. hey ho the high hyll, Per. The while my flocke did feede thereby the while the shepheard selfe did spill: Wil. Per. I saw the bouncing Bellibone,

Wil. hev ho Bonibell. Per. Tripping ouer the dale alone,

she can trippe it very well: Well decked in a frocke of gray, hey ho gray is greete,

And in a Kirtle of greene saye, the greene is for maydens meete:

A chapelet on her head she wore, hey ho charelet, Of swecte Violets therein was store,

she sweeter then the Violet. My sheepe did leave theyr wonted foode,

hey ho seely sheepe, And gazd on her, as they were wood,

woode as he, that did them keepe. As the bonilasse passed bye, hey ho bonilasse.

Per. She roude at me with glauncing eye, Wil. as cleare as the christall glasse: Per. All as the Sunnye beame so bright,

Wil. hey ho the Sunne beame, Glaunceth from Phæbus face forthright, so loue into thy hart did streame:

Or as the thonder cleaues the cloudes, hey ho the Thonder. Wherein the lightsome leuin shroudes,

11 11. so cleaues thy soule a sonder: Per. Or as Dame Cynthias silver raye Wil. hey ho the Moonelight. Per.

Vpon the glyttering wave doth playe: such play is a pitteous plight. The glaunce into my heart did glide,

Wil. hey ho the glyder, Per. Therewith my soule was sharply gryde,

Wil. such woundes soone wexen wider. Hasting to raunch the arrow out, Wil.

hev ho Perigot. I left the head in my hart roote: it was a desperate shot. 100 There it ranckleth ay more and more,

hey ho the arrowe, Ne can I find salue for my sore:

loue is a curelesse sorrowe. And though my bale with death I bought. hey ho heavie cheere.

Yet should thilk lasse not from my thought: so you may buye gold to deare.

But whether in paynefull loue I pyne, Per. Wil. hey ho pinching payne, Per. Or thriue in welth, she shalbe mine. Wil. but if thou can her obteine.

Per. And if for gracelesse greefe I dye, Wil. hey ho gracelesse griefe, Per. Witnesse, shee slewe me with her eye:

Wil. let thy follye be the priefe.

Per. And you, that sawe it, simple shepe, Wil. hey ho the fayre flocke,

Per. For price thereof, my death shall weepe, Wil. and mone with many a mocke.

So learnd I loue on a hollye cue, Per Wil. hey ho holidaye.

That euer since my hart did greue. Per.

Wil. now endeth our roundelay.

#### CVDDYE.

Sicker sike a roundle neuer heard I none. Little lacketh Perigot of the best. And Willye is not greatly ouergone, So weren his vndersongs well addrest.

#### WILLYE.

Herdgrome, I feare me, thou have a squint eye: Areede vorightly, who has the victorye? 130

# CVDDIE.

Fayth of my soule, I deeme ech haue gayned. For thy let the Lambe be Willye his owne: And for Perigot so well hath hym payned, To him be the wroughten mazer alone.

# PERIGOT.

Perigot is well pleased with the doome: Ne can Willye wite the witelesse herdgroome.

#### WILLYE

Neuer dempt more right of beautye I weene, The shepheard of Ida, that judged beauties Queene.

## CVDDIE.

But tell me shepherds, should it not yshend Your roundels fresh, to heare a doolefull verse Of Rosalend (who knowes not Rosalend?) 141 That Colin made, ylke can I you rehearse.

#### PERICOT.

Now say it Cuddie, as thou art a ladde: With mery thing its good to medle sadde.

#### WILLY.

Fayth of my soule, thou shalt ycrouned be In Colins stede, if thou this song areede: For neuer thing on earth so pleaseth me, As him to heare, or matter of his deede.

Then listneth ech vnto my heauy laye. And tune your pypes as ruthful, as ye may. 150

YE wastefull woodes beare witnesse of my

Wherein my plaints did oftentimes resound. Ye carelesse byrds are privile to my cryes,

Which in your songs were wont to make a

Thou pleasaunt spring hast luld me oft a

Whose streames my tricklinge teares did ofte augment.

Resort of people doth my greefs augment,

The walled townes do worke my greater woe The forest wide is fitter to resound

The hollow Echo of my carefull cryes, 160 I hate the house, since thence my loue did

Whose waylefull want debarres myne eyes from sleepe.

Let stremes of teares supply the place of sleepe: Let all that sweete is, voyd: and all that may augment

My doole, drawe neare. More meete to wayle my woe,

Bene the wild woldes my sorrowes to resound.

Then bedde, or bowre, both which I fill with

When I them see so waist, and fynd no part Of pleasure past. Here will I dwell apart 169 In gastfull groue therefore, till my last sleepe Doe close mine eyes: so shall I not augment With sight of such a chaunge my restlesse woe: Helpe me, ye banefull byrds, whose shricking sound

Ys signe of dreery death, my deadly cryes Most ruthfully to tune. And as my cryes

(Which of my woe cannot bewray least part) You heare all night, when nature craueth sleepe,

Increase, so let your yrksome yells augment. Thus all the night in plaints, the daye in woe I vowed haue to wayst, till safe and sound She home returne, whose voyces siluer sound 181 To cheerefull songs can chaunge my chere-

lesse cryes. Hence with the Nightingale will I take part,

That blessed byrd, that spends her time of sleepe In songs and plaintiue pleas, the more taug-

The memory of hys misdeede, that bred her

And you that feele no woe, | when as the sound Of these my nightly cryes | ye heare apart, Let breake your sounder sleepe | and pitie augment.

PERIGOY.

() (olin, Colin, the shepheards love, 1)0 How I admire ech turning of thy verse: And Cuddie, fresh Cuddie the liefest bove. How dolefully his doole thou didst rehearse.

CUDDIE.

Then blowe your pypes shepheards, til you be at home: The night nigheth fast, yts time to be gone.

Perigot his Embleme. Vincenti gloria victi.

Willyes Embleme. Vinto non vitto.

Cuddies Embleme. Felice chi può.

20.

# GLOSSE.

Bestadde) disposed, ordered. Peregall) equall. Whelome) once. Ratte) bereft, deprined. Miswent) gon a straye lil may) according to Virgile.

Infelix o semper ouis pecus.

A mazer) So also do Theocritus and Virgile feigne

pledges of their strife. Such pretie descriptions energy where vseth Theoretius, to bring in his Idyllia. For which speciall cause inded he by that name termeth his Acglogues: for Idvilion in Greke significh the shape or picture of any thing, wherof his booke is ful. And not, as I have heard some fondly guesse, that they be called not Idylha, but Hædiha, of the Goteheards in them.

Entrailed) wrought betwene.

Haruest Queene) The manner of country folke in haruest tyme.

P-usse.) Pease.

It tell vpon) Perigot maketh hys song in prayse of his loue, to whom Willy answereth enery vnder verse. By Perigot who is meant, I can not vprightly say, but if it be, who is supposed, his love descrueth no lesse prayse, then he grueth her

Greete) weeping and complaint, Chaplet) a kind of Garlond lyke a crowne Leuen) Lightning. Cynthia) was sayd to be the Moone. Gryde) perced. But it) not valesse Squint eve) partiall judgement. Ech haue) so saith Virgile.

Et vitula tu dignus, et hic &c. So by enterchaunge of gyfts Cuddie pleaseth both partes.

Doome) judgement. Dempt) for deemed, judged. Wite the witelesse) blame the blamelesse. The shepherd of Ida) was sayd to be Paris. Beauties Queene) Venus, to whome Paris adindged the golden Apple, as the pryce of her beautie.

Embleme.

The meaning beroof is very ambignous: for Perigot by his poesie claming the conquest, and Willye not yeelding. Cuddle the arbiter of theyr cause, and Patron of his own, semeth to chalenge it, as his dew, saying, that he, is happy which can so abruptly ending but hee meaneth eyther him, that can win the best, or moderate him selfe being best, and leaue of with the best.

# September.



Ægloga Nona.

### ARGVMENT.

I Erein Diggon Dauie is deuised to be a shepheard, that in hope of more gayne, droue his sheepe into a farre countrye. The abuses whereof, and loose liuing of Popish prelates, by occasion of Hobbinols demaund, he discourseth at large.

HOBBINOL. DIGGON DAUIE.

Iggon Dauie, I bidde her god day:
Or Diggon her is, or I missaye.

DIGGON.

Her was her, while it was daye light, But now her is a most wretched wight. For day, that was, is wightly past, And now at earst the dirke night doth hast. HOBBINOLL.

Diggon areede, who has thee so dight?
Neuer I wist thee in so poore a plight.
Where is the fayre flocke, thou was wont to leade?

Or bene they chaffred? or at mischiefe dead?

Ah for loue of that, is to thee moste leefe, Hobbinol, I pray thee gall not my old griefe: Sike question ripeth vp cause of newe woe, For one opened mote vnfolde many moe.

# HOBBINOLL.

Nay, but sorrow close shrouded in hart I know, to kepe, is a burdenous smart. Eche thing imparted is more eath to beare: When therayne is faln, the cloudes wexen cleare. And nowe sithence I sawe thy head last, 19 Thrise three Moones bene fully spent and past. Since when thou hast measured much grownel, And wandred I wene about the world rounde, So as thou can many thinges relate: But tell me first of thy flocks astate.

#### DICCON.

My sheepe bene wasted, (wae is me therefore) The iolly shepheard that was of yore, Is nowe nor iollye, nor shepehearde more. In forrein costes, men sayd, was plentye: And so there is, but all of miserye. I dempt there much to haue eeked my store, 30 But such eeking hath made my hart sore. In tho countryes, whereas I haue bene, No being for those, that truely mene, But for such, as of guile maken gayne, No such countrye, as there to remaine. They setten to sale their shops of shame, And maken a Mart of theyr good name. The shepheards there robben one another. And layen baytes to beguile her brother.

Or they will buy his sheepe out of the cote, 40 Or they will caruen the shepheards throte. The shepheards swayne you cannot wel ken, But it be by his pryde, from other men: They looken bigge as Bulls, that bene bate, And bearen the cragge so stiffe and so state As cocke on his dunghill, crowing cranck.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Diggon, I am so stiffe, and so stanck,
That vneth may I stand any more:
And nowe the Westerne wind bloweth sore,
That nowe is in his chiefe souereigntee,
Beating the withered leafe from the tree.
Sitte we downe here vnder the hill:
Tho may we talke, and tellen our fill,
And make a mocke at the blustring blast.
Now say on Diggon, what euer thou hast.

#### DIGGON.

Hobbin, ah hobbin, I curse the stounde,
That euer I cast to haue lorne this grounde.
Wel-away the while I was so fonde,
To leaue the good, that I had in honde,
In hope of better, that was vncouth:
So lost the Dogge the flesh in his mouth.
My seely sheepe (ah seely sheepe)
That here by there I whilome vsd to keepe,
All were they lustye, as thou didst see,
Bene all sterued with pyne and penurce.
Hardly my selfe escaped thilke payne,
Driuen for neede to come home agayne.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Ah fon, now by thy losse art taught,
That seeldome chaunge the better brought.
Content who liues with tryed state,
Neede feare no chaunge of frowning fate:
But who will seeke for vnknowne gayne,
Oft liues by losse, and leaues with payne.

#### DIGGON.

I wote ne Hobbin how I was bewitcht With vayne desyre, and hope to be enricht. But sicker so it is, as the bright starre Seemeth ay greater, when it is farre: I thought the soyle would have made me rich: But nowe I wote, it is nothing sich. For eyther the shepeheards bene ydle and still, And ledde of theyr sheepe, what way they wyll: Or they bene false, and full of couctise, And casten to compasse many wrong emprise. But the more benefraight with fraud and spight, Ne in good nor goodnes taken delight: But kindle coales of conteck and yre, Wherewith they sette all the world on fire: Which when they thinken agayne to quench With holy water, they doen hem all drench.

They saye they con to heauen the high way, But by my soule I dare vndersaye, 9r They neuer sette foote in that same troade, But balk the right way, and strayen abroad. They boast they han the deuill at commaund: But aske hem therefore, what they han paund. Marriethat great Panbought with deare borrow, To quite it from the blacke bowre of sorrowe. But they han sold thilk same long agoe: For thy woulden drawe with hem many moe. But let hem gange alone a Gods name: 100 As they han brewed, so let hem beare blame.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Diggon, I praye thee speake not so dirke. Such myster saying me seemeth to mirke.

Then playnely to speake of shepheards most what, Badde is the best (this english is flatt.) Their ill hauiour garres men missay, Both of their doctrine, and of their faye. They sayne the world is much war then it wont. All for her shepheards bene beastly and blont. Other sayne, but how truely I note, All for they holden shame of theyr cote. Somesticke not to say, (whote cole on her tongue) That sike mischicle graseth hem emong, All for they casten too much of worlds care, To deck her Dame, and enrich her heyre: For such encheason, If you goe nye, Fewe chymneis recking you shall espye: The fatte Oxe, that wont ligge in the stal, Is nowe fast stalled in her crumenall. Thus chatten the people in theyr steads. 120 Ylike as a Monster of many heads. But they that shooten neerest the pricke. Sayne, other the fat from their beards doen lick. For bigge Bulles of Basan brace hem about, That with theyr hornes butten the more stoute: But the leane soules treaden vnder foote. And to seeke redresse mought little boote: For liker bene they to pluck away more. Then ought of the gotten good to restore. For they bene like foule wagmoires ouergrast, That if thy galage once sticketh fast, The more to wind it out thou doest swinck, Thou mought ay deeper and deeper sinck. Yet better leave of with a little losse, Then by much wrestling to leese the grosse.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Nowe Diggon, I see thou speakest to plaine: Better it were, a little to feyne, And cleanly couer, that cannot be cured. Such il, as is forced, mought nedes be endured. But of sike pastoures howe done the flocks creepe?

### DIGGON.

Sike as the shepheards, sike bene her sheepe, For they nill listen to the shepheards voyce, But if he call hem at theyr good choyce, They wander at wil, and stray at pleasure, And to they foldes yead at their owne leasure. But they had be better come at their cal: For many han into mischiefe fall. And bene of rauenous Wolues yrent, All for they nould be buxome and bent.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Fye on thee Diggon, and all thy foule leasing, Well is knowne that sith the Saxon king, 151 Neuer was Woolfe seene many nor some, Nor in all Kent, nor in Christendome: But the fewer Woolues (the soth to sayne,) The more bene the Foxes that here remaine.

#### DIGGON.

Yes, but they gang in more secrete wise, And with sheepes clothing doen hem disguise, They walke not widely as they were wont For feare of raungers, and the great hunt: But priuely prolling two and froe, 160 Enaunter they mought be inly knowe.

#### HOBBINOL.

Or privile or pert yf any bene, We han great Bandogs will teare their skinne.

#### DIGGON.

Indeede thy ball is a bold bigge curre, And could make a jolly hole in theyr furre. But not good Dogges hem needeth to chace, But heedy shepheards to discerne their face. For all their craft is in their countenaunce, They bene so graue and full of mayntenaunce. But shall I tell thee what my selfe knowe, 170 Chaunced to Roffynn not long ygoe?

# HOBBINOL.

Say it out Diggon, what euer it hight, For not but well mought him betight, He is so meeke, wise, and merciable, And with his word his worke is convenable. Colin clout I wene be his selfe boye, (Ah for Colin he whilome my ioye) Shepheards sich, God mought vs many send, That doen so carefully theyr flocks tend.

#### DIGGON.

Thilk same shepheard mought I well marke: He has a Dogge to byte or to barke, Neuer had shepheard so kene a kurre, That waketh, and if but a leafe sturre. Whilome there wonned a wicked Wolfe, That with many a Lambe had glutted his gulfe. Or sleepe, as some doen, all the long day:

And euer at night wont to repayre Vnto the flocke, when the Welkin shone faire. Ycladde in clothing of seely sheepe. When the good old man vsed to sleepe. Tho at midnight he would barke and ball, 100 (For he had eft learned a curres call.) As if a Woolfe were emong the sheepe. With that the shepheard would breake his sleepe.

And send out Lowder (for so his dog hote) To raunge the fields with wide open throte. Tho when as Lowder was farre awaye. This Woluish sheepe would catchen his pray, A Lambe, or a Kidde, or a weanell wast: With that to the wood would he speede him fast. Long time he vsed this slippery pranck, 200 Ere Roffy could for his laboure him thanck. At end the shepheard his practise spyed, (For Roffy is wise, and as Argus eyed) And when at even he came to the flocke, Fast in theyr folds he did them locke, And tooke out the Woolfe in his counterfect

And let out the sheepes bloud at his throte.

#### HOBBINOLL.

Marry Diggon, what should him affraye, To take his owne where cuer it lave? For had his we and bene a little widder. 210 He would have devoured both hidder and shidder.

Mischiefe light on him, and Gods great curse, Too good for him had bene a great deale worse: For it was a perilous beast aboue all, And eke had he coud the shepherds call. And oft in the night came to the shepecote, And called Lowder, with a hollow throte, As if it the old man selfe had bene. The dog his maisters voice did it weene, Yet halfe in doubt, he opened the dore, And ranne out, as he was wont of yore. No sooner was out, but swifter then thought, Fast by the hyde the Wolfe lowder caught: And had not Roffy renne to the steuen, Lowder had be slaine thilke same euen.

#### HOBBINOLL.

God shield man, he should so ill haue thriue, All for he did his deuoyr beliue. If sike bene Wolues, as thou hast told, How mought we Diggon, hem be-hold.

#### DIGGON.

How, but with heede and watchfulnesse, 230 Forstallen hem of their wilinesse? For thy with shepheard sittes not playe,

But euer liggen in watch and ward, From soddein force theyr flocks for to gard. HOBBINOLL.

Ah Diggon, thilke same rule were too straight, All the cold season to wach and waite. We bene of fleshe, men as other bee. Why should we be bound to such miseree? What ever thing lacketh chaungeable rest, 240 Mought needes decay, when it is at best.

Ah but Hobbinol, all this long tale, Nought easeth the care, that doth me forhaile. What shall I doe? what way shall I wend, My piteous plight and losse to amend? Ah good Hobbinol, mought I thee praye, Of ayde or counsell in my decaye.

### HORBINOLL.

Now by my soule Diggon, I lament The haplesse mischief, that has thee hent, Nethel see thou seest my lowly saile, That froward fortune doth ever availe. But were Hobbinoll, as God mought please, Diggon should soone find fauour and ease. But if to my cotage thou wilt resort. So as I can, I wil thee comfort: There mayst thou ligge in a vetchy bed. Till fayrer Fortune shewe forth her head.

#### DIGGON.

Ah Hobbinol, God mought it thee requite. Diggon on fewe such freends did euer lite. Diggons Embleme. 160 Inopem me copia fecit.

#### GLOSSE.

The Dialecte and phrase of speache in this Dialogue, seemeth somewhat to differ from the comen. The cause whereof is supposed to be, by occasion of the party herein meant, who being very freend to the Author hereof, had bene long in torraine countryes, and there seene many disorders, which he here recounteth to Hobbinoll.

Bidde her) Bidde good morrow. For to bidde, is to praye, whereof commeth beades for prayers, and so they say, To bidde his beades, s to saye his prayers.

Wightly) quicklye, or sodenlye.

Chatfred) solde.

Dead at mischiefe) an viusuall speache, but much vsurped of Lidgate, and sometime of Chaucer. Leefe) deare. Ethe) casie. Thrice thre moones) nine monethes.

Measured) for traueled. Wae) woe Northernly.

Leked) encreased. Caruen) cutte. Cragge) neck. Kenne) know. State) stoutely. Stanck) wearie or fainte

And nowe) He applieth it to the tyme of the yeare, which is in thend of haruest, which they call the fall of the leafe; at which tyme the Westerne wynde beareth most swaye

A mocke) Imitating Horace, Debes ludibrium ventis.

Lorne, lefte.

Soote) swete.

Vacouthe) vnknowen.

Hereby there) here and there.

\ the brighte) Translated out of Mantuane.

Emprise) for enterprise. Per Syncopen.
ontok) strife.
Marrie that that is, their soules, which by pepish
Exorcismes and practises they damne to hell.
Marrie Park

Gange) goe. wis ... Warre) worse Blacke) hell Mister) maner Mirke) obscure. (rumenall) purse. Brace) compasse.

Encheson) occasion.

Ouergrast) ouergrowen with grasse.
Galage) shoe. The grosse) the whole.
Buxome and bent) meeke and obedient.

Saxon king) K. Edgare, that reigned here in Brytanye in the yeare of our Lorde. Which king caused all the Wolues, whereof then was store in thys countrye, by a proper policie to be

destroyed. So as neuer since that time, there have ben Wolues here founde, villesse they were brought from other countryes. And therefore Hobbinoll rebuketh him of vntruth, for saying there be Wolues in England.

Nor in Christendome) This saying seemeth to be strange and vireasonable; but indede it was wont to be an olde prouerbe and comen phrase. The original whereof was, for that most part of Ingland in the reigne of king Ethelbert was christened, Kent onely except, which remayned long after in mysbeliefe and vachristened, So that Kent was counted no part of Christendome.

Great hunt) Executing of lawer and justice.

Enaunter) least that.

Inly) inwardly. Afforesayde. Privie or pert) openly sayth Chaucer.

Roffy) The name of a shepchearde in Marot his Æglogue of Robin and the Kinge. Whome he here commendeth for greate care and wise

gouernance of his flock.

Colin cloute) Nowe I thinke no man doubteth but by Colin is euer meante the Authour selfe. Whose especiall good freend Hobbinoll sayth he is, or more rightly Mayster Gabriel Haruey: of whose speciall commendation, aswell in Poetrye as Rhetorike and other choyce learning, we have lately had a sufficient tryall in diverse his worker, but specially in his Musarum Lachrymæ, and his late Gratulationum Valdinensium which boke in the progresse at Audley in Essex, he dedicated in writing to her Maiestie. Afterward presenting the same in print vnto her Highnesse at the worshipfull Maister Capells in Hertfordshire. Beside other his sundrye most rare and very notable writings, partely under vinknown Tytles, and partly under counterfact names, as hys Tyrannomastix, his Ode Natalitia, his Rameidos, and esspecially that parte of Philomusus, his diuine Anticosmopolita, and diuers other of lyke importance. As also by the names of other shepheardes, he couereth the persons of diuers other his familiar freendes and best acquayntaunce

This tale of Roffy seemeth to coloure some particular Action of his. But what, I certeinly

know not.

Welkin) skie. Afforesaid. Wonned) haunted. A Weanell waste) a weaned youngling. Hidder and shidder) He and she. Male and Female. Beliue) quickly. Steuen) Noyse.

What euer) Ouids verse translated.

Quod caret alterna requie, durabile non est. Forehaile) drawe or distresse. Vetchie) of Pease strawe.

Embleme.

This is the saying of Narcissus in Ouid. For when

the foolishe boye by beholding hys face in the brooke, fell in loue with his owne likenesse: and not hable to content him selfe with much looking thereon, he cryed out, that plentye made him poore, meaning that much gazing had bereft him poore, meaning that much gashin it to other him of sence. But our Diggon vseth it to other purpose, as who that by tryall of many wayes had founde the worst, and through greate plentye was fallen into great penurie. This knowe, to have bene much vsed of the and to suche like effecte, as fyrste Narcisus spake it.

# October.



Ægloga decima.

# ARGVMENT.

N Cuddie is set out the perfecte paterne of I a Poete, whiche finding no maintenaunce of his state and studies, complayneth of the contempte of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: Specially having bene in all ages, and even amongst the most barbarous alwayes of singular accounts and honor, and being indede so worthy and commendable an arte: or rather no arte, but a divine gift and heavenly instinct not to bee gotten by laboure and learning, but adorned with both: and poured into the witte by a certaine Ινθουσιασμύς, and celestiall inspiration, as the Author hereof els where at large discourseth, in his booke called the English Poete, which booke being lately come to my hands, I mynde also by Gods grace vpon further advisement to publish.

PIERCE.

CVDDIE.

Vddie, for shame hold vp thy heauve head. And let vs cast with what delight to

And weary thys long lingring Phabus race. Whileme thou wont the shepheards laddes to leade.

In rymes, in ridles, and in bydding base: Now they in thee, and thou in sleepe art dead.

# CVDDYE.

Piers, I have pyped erst so long with payne, That all mine Oten reedes bene rent and wore: And my poore Muse hath spenther sparedstore, Yet little good hath got, and much lesse

gayne. Such pleasaunce makes the Grashopperso poore, Andliggeso layd, when Winter doth her straine. The dapper ditties, that I wont deuise, To feede youthes fancie, and the flocking fry, Delighten much: what I the bett for thy? They han the pleasure, I a sclender prise. I beate the bush, the byrds to them doe flye What good thereof to Cuddie can arise?

#### PIRES

Cuddie, the prayse is better, then the price,
The glory eke much greater then the gayne:
O what an honor is it, to restraine
The last of lawlesse youth with good aduice:
Or pricke them forth with pleasaunce of thy
vaine,

Whereto thou list their trayned willes entice. Soone as thou gynst to sette thy notes in frame, O how the rurall routes to thee doe cleaue: Seemeth thou dost their soule of sence bereaue, All as the shepheard, that did fetch his dame From *Plutoes* balefull bowre withouten leaue: His musicks might the hellish hound did tame.

# CVDDIE.

So praysen babes the Peacoks spotted traine, And wondren at bright Argus blazing eye: But who rewards him ere the more for thy? Or feedes him once the fuller by a graine? Sike prayse is smoke, that sheddeth in the skye, Sikewordsbene wynd, and wasten soone in vayne.

#### PIERS.

Abandon then the base and viler clowne, Lyft vp thy selfe out of the lowly dust: And sing of bloody Mars, of wars, of giusts, 39 Turne thee to those, that weld the awful crowne. To doubted Knights, whose woundlesse armour rusts.

And helmes vnbruzed wexen dayly browne.

There may thy Muse display her fluttryng wing, And stretch herselfeat large from East to West: Whither thou list in fayre Elisa rest, Or if thee please in bigger notes to sing, Aduaunce the worthy whome shee loueth best, That first the white beare to the stake did bring.

And when the stubborne stroke of stronger stounds,

Has somewhat slackt the tenor of thy string: Of loue and lustihead tho mayst thou sing, 51 And carrol lowde, and leade the Myllers rownde, All were Elisa one of thilke same ring. So mought our Cuddies name to Heauensownde.

#### CVDDYE

Indeede the Romish Tityrus, I heare, Through his Mecænas left his Oaten reede, Whereon he earst had taught his flocks to feede, And laboured lands to yield the timely eare, And eft did sing of warres and deadly drede, So as the Heauens did quake his verse to here.

But ah Mecanas is yelad in claye,
And great Augustus long ygoe is dead:
And all the worthies liggen wrapt in leade,
That matter made for Poets on to play:
For euer, who in derring doe were dreade,
The loftie verse of hem was loued aye.

But after vertue gan for age to stoupe, And mighty manhode brought a bedde of ease. The vaunting Poets found nought worth a pease, To put in preace emong the learned troupe. 70 Tho gan the streames of flowing wittes to cease, And sonnebright honour pend in shamefull coupe.

And if that any buddes of Poesie, Yet of the old stocke gan to shoote agayne: Or it mens follies mote be forst to fayne, And rolle with rest in rymes of rybaudrye: Or as it sprong, it wither must agayne: Tom Piper makes vs better melodie.

#### PIERS.

O pierlesse Poesye, where is then thy place?
If nor in Princes pallace thou doe sit: 80
(And yet is Princes pallace the most fitt)
Ne brest of baser birth doth thee embrace.
Then make thee winges of thine aspyring wit,
And, whence thou camst, flye backe to heauen
apace.

#### CVDDIE.

Ah Percy it is all to weake and wanne,
So high to sore, and make so large a flight:
Her peeced pyneons bene not so in plight,
For Colin fittes such famous flight to scanne:
He, were he not with loue so ill bedight,
Would mount as high, and sing as soote as
Swanne.

#### PIRES.

Ah fon, for love does teach him climbe so hie, And lyftes him vp out of the loathsome myre: Such immortall mirrhor, as he doth admire, Would rayse ones mynd aboue the starry skie. And cause a caytiue corage to aspire, For lofty love doth loath a lowly eye.

#### CVDDIE.

All otherwise the state of Poet stands,
For lordly loue is such a Tyranne fell:
That where he rules, all power he doth expell.
The vaunted verse a vacant head demaundes,
Ne wont with crabbed care the Muses dwell.
Vnwisely weaues, that takes two webbes in
hand.

Who euer casts to compasse weightye prise, And thinks to throwe out thondring words of

Let powre in lauish cups and thriftie bitts of meate,

For Bacchus fruite is frend to Phabus wise. And when with Wine the braine begins to sweate. The nombers flowe as fast as spring doth ryse. Thou kenst not Percie howe the ryme should

O if my temples were distaind with wine, 110 And girt in girlonds of wild Yuie twine, How I could reare the Muse on stately stage.

And teache her tread aloft in bus-kin fine. With queint Bellona in her equipage.

But ah my corage cooles ere it be warme, For thy, content vs in thys humble shade: Where no such troublous tydes han vs assayde. Here we our slender pipes may safely charme.

#### PIRES.

And when my Gates shall han their bellies lavd: Cuddie shall have a Kidde to store his farme.

> Cuddies Embleme. Azitante calescimus illo &c.

#### GLOSSE.

This Æglogue is made in imitation of Theocritus his xvi. Idilion, wherein hee reproued the Tyranne Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towarde Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towarde Poetes, in whome is the power to make men immortal for theyr good dedes, or shameful for their naughty lyfe. And the lyke also is in Mantuane, The style hereof as also that in Theocritus, is more loftye then the rest, and applyed to the heighte of Poeticall witte.

Cuddie) I doubte whether by Cuddie be specified the authour selfe, or some other. For in the eyght Æglogue the same person was brought in, singing a Cantion of Colms making, as he sayth. So that some doubt, that the persons be different. Whilome) sometime. Oaten reedes) Auena.

Ligge so layde) lye so faynt and valustye.

Dapper) pretye.

Frye) is a bold Metaphore, forced from the spawning fishes. For the multitude of young fish be

called the frye.

To restraine.) This place seemeth to conspyre with Plato, who in his first booke de Legibus sayth, that the first inuention of Poetry was of very that the first intention of Poetry was of very vertuous intent. For at what time an infinite number of youth vsually came to they great solemne feastes called Panegyrica, which they yesd enery flue yeers to hold, some learned man being more hable then the rest, for special gyftes of wytte and Musicke, would take vpon him to sing fine verses to the people, in prayse eyther of vertue or of victory or of immortality or such like. At whose wonderful gyft al men being astonied and as it were rauished, with delight, thinking (as it was indeed) that he was inspired from aboue, called him vatem: which kinde of men afterwarde framing their verses to lighter musick (as of musick be many kinds, some sadder, some lighter, some martiall, some heroical: and so diversely eke affect the mynds of men) found out lighter matter of Poesie also, some playing with loue, some scorning at mens fashions, some powred out in pleasures, and so were called Poetes or makers.

Sence bereaue) what the secrete working of Musick is in the myndes of men, aswell appeareth, hereby, that some of the auncient Philosophers, and those the moste wise, as Plato and Pythagoras held for opinion, that the mynd was made of a certaine harmonie and musicall nombers, for the great compassion and likenes of affection in thone and in the other as also by that memorable the great compassion and likenes of affection in those and in the other as also by that memorable the great compassion and likenes of affection in those and in the other as also by that memorable the great compassion and likenes of affection in the great compassion and likenes of affe

history of Alexander: to whom when as Timotheus the great Musitian playd the Phrygian melodie, the great middle plays the was distraught with such vinwonted fury, that streight way rysing from the table in great rage, he caused himselfe to be armed, as ready to goe to warre (for that musick is very war like:) And immediatly whenas the Musitian chaunged his stroke into the Lydian and Ionique harmony, he was so furr from warring, that he sat as styl, as if he had bene in matters of counsell. Such might is in musick. Wherefore Plato and Aristotle forbid the Arabian Melodie from children and youth. For that being altogither on the fyft and vii, tone, it is of great force to molifie and quench the kindly courage, which vseth to burne in yong brests So that it is not incredible which the Poete here sayth, that Musick can bereaue the soule of

The shepheard that) Orpheus: of whom is sayd, that by his excellent skil in Musick and Poetry, he recoursed his wife Eurydice from hell

Argus eyes) of Argus is before said, that Iuno to him committed hir husband Iupiter his Paragon Iò, bicause he had an hundred eyes: but afterwarde Mercury with hys Musick lulling Argus aslepe, slew him and brought Io away, whose eyes it is sayd that Iuno for his eternall memory placed in her byrd the Peacocks tayle. For those coloured spots indeede resemble eyes.

Woundlesse armour) vnwounded in warre, doe rust

through long peace.

Display) A poeticall metaphore: whereof the meaning is, that if the Poet list showe his skill in matter of more dignitie, then is the homely Æglogue, good occasion is him offered of higher veyne and more Heroicall argument, in the person of our most gratious soueraign, whom (as before) he calleth Elisa. Or if mater of knighthoode and cheualrie please him better, that there be many Noble and valiaunt men, that are both worthy of his payne in theyr descrued prayers, and also fauourers of hys skil and faculty.

The worthy) he meaneth (as I guesse) the most honorable and renowmed the Erle of Leycester. whom by his cognisance (although the same be also proper to other) rather then by his name he,

stately discourse, to matter of more pleasaunce | As soote as Swanne) The comparison seemeth to and delight.

The Millers) a kind of daunce.

Ring) company of dauncers. The Romish Tityrus) wel knowen to be Virgue, who

by Mecænas means was brought into the fauour of the Emperor Augustus, and by him moued to write in loftier kinde, then he erst had doen

Whereon) in these three verses are the three seuerall workes of Virgile intended. For in teaching his flocks to feede, is meant his Æglogues. In labouring of lands, is hys Bucoliques. In singing of wars and deadly dreade, is his divine Æneis figured.

In derring doe) In manhoode and cheualrie.

For euer) He sheweth the cause, why Poetes were wont be had in such honor of noble men; that is, that by them their worthines and valor shold through theyr famous Posies be commended to al posterities. Wherfore it is sayd, that Achilles had neuer bene so famous, as he is, but for Homeres immortal verses. Which is the only aduantage, which he had of Hector. And also that Alexander the great comming to his tombe in Sigeus, with naturall teares blessed him, that euer was his hap to be honoured with so excellent a Poets work: as so renowined and ennobled onely by hys meanes. Which being declared in a most eloquent Oration of Tulbes, is of Petrarch no lesse worthely sette forth in a sonet

Giunto Alexandre a la famosa tomba

Del fero Achille sospirando disse O fortunato che si chiara tromba.

Trouasti &c. And that such account hath bene alwayes made of Poetes, aswell sheweth this that the worthy Scipio in all his warres against Carthage and Numantia had euermore in his company, and that in a most familiar sort the good olde Poet Ennius: as also that Alexander destroying Thebes, when he was enformed that the famous Lytick Poet Pindarus was borne in that citie, not onely commaunded streightly, that no man should vpon payne of death do any violence to that house by fire or otherwise: but also specially spared most, and some highly rewarded, that were of hys kinne. So fauoured he the only name of a Poete. Whych prayse otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, that when he came to ransacking of king Darius coffers, whom he lately had ouerthrowen, he founde in a little coffer of siluer the two bookes of Homers works, as layd up there for speciall iewells and richesse, which he taking thence, put one of them dayly in his bosome, and thother every night layde under his pillowe. Such honor have Poete's alwayes found in the sight of princes and noble Which this author here very well sheweth, as els where more notably.

But after) he sheweth the cause of contempt of Poetry to be idlenesse and basenesse of mynd. Pent) shut up in slouth, as in a coope or cage.

Tom piper) An Ironicall Sarcasmus, spoken in derision of these rude wits, whych make more account of a ryming rybaud, then of skill grounded vpon learning and judgment. Ne brest) the meaner sort of men.

Her peeced pineons) vnperfect skil. Spoken wyth humble modestie.

be strange: for the swanne hath euer wonne small commendation for her swete singing : but it is sayd of the learned that the swan a little before hir death, singeth most pleasantly, as prophecying by a secrete instinct her neere destinie As wel sayth the Poete elswhere in one of his sonetts.

The silver swanne doth sing before her dying day As shee that feeles the deepe delight that is in death &c.

Immortall myrrhour) Beauty, which is an excellent object of Poeticall spirites, as appeareth by the worthy Petrachs saying.

Fiorir faceua il mio debile ingegno A la sua ombra, et crescer ne gli affanni.

A caytiue corage) a base and abiect minde.

For lofty loue) I think this playing with the letter to be rather a fault then a figure, aswel in our English tongue, as it hath bene alwayes in the Latine, called Cacozelon.

A vacant) imitateth Mantuanes saying, vacuum curis diuina cerebrum Poscit.

Lauish cups) Resembleth that comen verse Fæcundi calices quem non fecere disertain.

O if my) He seemeth here to be rauished with a Poetical furie. For (if one rightly mark) the numbers rise so ful, and the verse groweth so big, that it seemeth he hath forgot the meanenesse of shepheards state and stile

Wild yuie) for it is dedicated to Bacchus and therefore it is sayd that the Manades (that is Bacchus franticke priestes) vsed in theyr sacrifice to carry Thyrsos, which were pointed states or laueling

wrapped about with yuie. In buskin) it was the maner of Poetes and plaiers in tragedies to were buskins, as also in Comedies to use stockes and light shoes. So that the buskin in Poetry is vsed for tragical matter, as is said in Virgile. Sola sophoeleo tua carmina digna cothurno. And the like in Horace, Magnum loqui, nitique cothurno.

Queint) strange Bellona; the goddesse of battaile that is Pallas, which may therefore wel be called queint for that (as Lucian saith) when Iupiter hir father was in traucile of her, he caused his sonne Vulcane with his axe to hew his head. Out of which leaped forth lustely a valiant damsell armed at all povntes, whom seeing Vulcane so faire and comely, lightly leaping to her, proferred her some cortesie, which the Lady disdeigning, shaked her speare at him, and threatned his saucine see. Therefore such straungenesse is well applyed to her.

Equipage.) order. Tydes) seasons. Chaime) temper and order. For Charmes were wont to be made by verses as Ouid sayth.

#### Aut si carminibus.

#### Embleme.

Hereby is meant, as also in the whole course of this Æglogue, that Poetry is a diuine instinct and vnnatural rage passing the reache of comen reason. Whom Piersanswereth Epiphonematicos as admiring the excellencye of the skyll whereof in Cuddie hee hadde alreadye hadde a taste.

# Nouember.



Ægloga vndecima.

#### ARGVMENT.

IN this xi. Aglogue he bewayleth the death of some mayden of greate bloud, whom he calleth Dido. The personage is secrete, and to me altogether whknowne, albe of him selfe I often required the same. This Aglogue is made in imitation of Marot his song, which he made vpon the death of Loys the frenche Queene. But furre passing his reache, and in myne opinion all other the Eglogues of this booke.

THENOT. COLIN.

Olin my deare, when shall it please thee sing,
As thou were wont songs of some iouisaunce?
Thy Muse to long slombreth in sorrowing,
Lulled a sleepe through loues misgouernaunce.
Now somewhat sing, whose endles souenaunce,
Emong the shepeheards swaines may aye remaine.

Whether thee list thy loued lasse aduaunce, Or honor *Pan* with hymnes of higher vaine.

COLIN.

Thenot, now nis the time of merimake.

Nor Pan to herye, nor with loue to playe: 10

Sike myrth in May is meetest for to make,
Or summer shade under the cocked have.

But nowe sadde Winter welked hath the day. And Phabus weary of his yerely taske, Ystabled hath his steedes in lowlye laye, And taken vp his ynne in Fishes haske. Thilke sollein season sadder plight doth aske: And loatheth sike delightes, as thou does prayse:

The mornefull Muse in myrth now list ne maske, As shee was wont in youngth and sommer dayes.

But if thou algate lust light virelayes, And looser songs of loue to vnderfong Who but thy selfe deserues sike Poetes prayse? Relieue thy Oaten pypes, that sleepen long.

### THENOT.

The Nightingale is souereigne of song, Before him sits the Titmose silent bee: And I vnfitte to thrust in skilfull thronge, Should Colin make judge of my foolerce. Nay, better learne of hem, that learned bee, And han be watered at the Muses well: 30 The kindlye dewe drops from the higher tree, And wets the little plants that lowly dwell. But if sadde winters wrathe and season chill. Accorde not with thy Muses meriment: To sadder times thou mayst attune thy quill, And sing of sorrowe and deathes dreeriment.

For deade is Dido, dead alas and drent, Dido the greate shepehearde his daughter sheene:

The fayrest May she was that euer went, Her like shee has not left behinde I weene. 40 And if thou wilt bewayle my wofull tene: I shall thee giue yond Cosset for thy payne: And if thy rymes as rownd and rufull bene, As those that did thy Rosalind complayne, Much greater gyfts for guerdon thou shalt gayne,

Then Kidde or Cosset, which I thee bynempt: Then vp I say, thou iolly shepeheard swayne, Let not my small demaund be so contempt.

#### COLIN.

Thenol to that I choose, thou doest me tempt, But ah to well I wote my humble vaine, 50 And howe my rymes bene rugged and vnkempt: Yet as I conne, my conning I will strayne.

VP then Melpomene thou mournefulst Muse of nyne.

Such cause of mourning neuer hadst afore: Vp grieslie ghostes and vp my rufull ryme, Matter of myrth now shalt thou haue no more. For dead shee is, that myrth thee made of yore. Dido my deare alas is dead,

Dead and lyeth wrapt in lead:

O heauie herse,

Let streaming teares be poured out in store:
O carefull verse.

Shepheards, that by your flocks on Kentish downes abyde,

Waile ye this wofull waste of natures warke: Waile we the wight, whose presence was our pryde:

Waile we the wight, whose absence is our carke. The sonne of all the world is dimme and darke:

The earth now lacks her wonted light, And all we dwell in deadly night,

O heauie herse.

Breake we our pypes, that shrild as lowde as Larke.

O carefull verse.

Why doe we longer liue, (ah why liue we so long)

Whose better dayes death hath shut vp inwoe? The fayrest floure our gyrlond all emong, Is faded quite and into dust ygoe.

Sing now ye shepheards daughters, sing no moe The songs that *Colin* made in her prayse, But into weeping turne your wanton layes,

O heause herse, 80
Now is time to dye. Nay time was long ygoe,
O carefull verse.

Whence is it, that the flouret of the field doth fade,

And lyeth buryed long in Winters bale: Yet soone as spring his mantle doth displaye, It floureth fresh, as it should neuer fayle? But thing on earth that is of most availe,

As vertues braunch and beauties budde, Reliuen not for any good.

O heavie herse, 90
The braunch once dead, the budde eke needes must quaile.

O carefull verse.

She while she was, (that was, a woful word to sayne)

For beauties prayse and plesaunce had no pere-So well she couth the shepherds entertayne, With cakes and cracknells and such country

Ne would she scorne the simple shepheards swaine,

For she would cal hem often heme

And give hem curds and clouted Creame.
O heavie herse,

Als Colin cloute she would not once disdayne.

O carefull verse.

But nowe sike happy cheere is turnd to heauie chaunce,

Such pleasaunce now displast by dolors dint: All Musick sleepes, where death doth leade the

And shepherds wonted solace is extinct.

The blew in black, the greene in gray is tinct,
The gaudie girlonds deck her graue,

The faded flowres her corse embrane.

O heavie herse, 110
Morne nowe my Muse, now morne with teares
b, print.

O carefull verse.

O thou greate shepheard Lobbin, how great is thy griefe,

Where benethenosegayes that she dight for thee: The colourd chaplets wrought with a chiefe, The knotted rushrings, and gilte Rosemaree? For shee deemed nothing too deere for thee.

Ah they bene all yelad in clay,

One bitter blast blewe all away.

O heavie herse, 120
Thereof nought remaynes but the memoree.
O carefull verse.

Ay me that dreerie death should strike so mortall stroke.

That can vndoe Dame natures kindly course: The faded lockes fall from the loftie oke, The flouds do gaspe, for dryed is theyr sourse, And flouds of teares flowe in theyr stead | Why then weepes Lobbin so without remore? perforse.

The mantled medowes mourne,

Theyr sondry colours tourne.

O heavie herse.

The heavens doe melt in teares without remorse. O carefull verse.

The feeble flocks in field refuse their former foode.

And hang theyr heads, as they would learne to weepe:

The beastes in forest wavle as they were woode. Except the Wolues, that chase the wandring sheepe:

Now she is gon that safely did hem keepe, The Turtle on the bared braunch.

Laments the wound, that death did launch. O heavie herse.

And Philomele her song with teares doth steepe. O carefull verse.

The water Nymphs, that wont with her to sing and daunce.

And for her girlond Olive braunches beare. Now balefull boughes of Cypres doen aduaunce: The Muses, that were wont greene bayes to weare.

Now bringen bitter Eldre braunches seare. The fatall sisters eke repent.

Her vitall threde so soone was spent.

O heavie herse.

Morne now my Muse, now morne with heavie cheare.

O carefull verse.

O trustlesse state of earthly things, and slipper

Of mortal men, that swincke and sweate for nought.

And shooting wide, doe misse the marked scope:

Now haue I learnd (a lesson derely bought) That nys on earth assuraunce to be sought: For what might be in earthlie mould, That did her buried body hould, O heauie herse. 160

Yet saw I on the beare when it was brought O carefull verse.

But maugre death, and dreaded sisters deadly spight,

And gates of hel, and fyric furies forse: She hath the bonds broke of eternall night, Her soul: vnbodied of the burdenous corpse. O Lobb, thy losse no longer lament.

Dido nis dead, but into heaven hent. O happye herse.

Cease now my Muse, now cease thy sorrower sourse.

O joyfull verse.

Why wayle we then? why weary we the Gods with playnts.

As if some euill were to her betight?

She raignes a goddesse now emong the saintes. That whilome was the saynt of shepheards light:

And is enstalled nowe in heavens hight.

I see thee blessed soule, I see,

Walke in Elisian fieldes so free.

O happy herse, 180 Might I once come to thee (O that I might) O iovfull verse.

Vnwise and wretched men to weete whats good or ill.

We deeme of Death as doome of ill desert: But knewe we fooles, what it vs bringes vntil, Dye would we dayly, once it to expert.

No daunger there the shepheard can astert: Favre fieldes and pleasaunt layes there bene, The fieldes ay fresh, the grasse ay greene:

O happy herse, Make hast ye shepheards, thether to reuert, O joyfull verse.

Dido is gone afore (whose turne shall be the next?)

There lines shee with the blessed Gods in blisse, There drincks she Nectar with Ambrosia mixt, And ioyes enioyes, that mortall men doe misse The honor now of highest gods she is,

That whilome was poore shepheards pryde, While here on earth she did abyde.

O happy herse, Ceasse now my song, my woe now wasted is. O ioyfull verse.

#### THENOT.

Ay francke shepheard, how bene thy verses meint

With doolful pleasaunce, so as I ne wotte, Whether reioyce or weepe for great constrainte? Thyne be the cossette, well hast thow it gotte. Vp Colin vp, ynough thou morned hast, Now gynnes to mizzle, hye we homeward fast.

Colins Embleme.

La mort rv mord.

210

### GLOSSE.

louis iunce)myrth. Souenaunce) remembraunce. Herie) honour.

Welked) shortned or empayred. As the Moone being in the waine is sayde of Li leate to welk In lowly lay) according to the season of the moneth

November, when the sonne draweth low in the South toward his Tropick or returne.

In fishes haske) the sonne, reigneth that is, in the pad, wherein they use to cary fish. Virelaies) a light kind of song.

Bee watred) For it is a saying of Poetes, that they haue dronk of the Muses well Castalias, whereof was before sufficiently sayd.

Dieriment) dreety and heavy cheere,

The great shepheard) is some man of high degree, and not as some vamely suppose God Pan. person both of the shephearde and of Dido is viknowen and closely buried in the Authors conceipt. But out of doubt I am, that it is not Rosalind, as some imagin: for he speaketh some after of her also

Shene) fayre and shining. Inne) sorrow.

May) for mayde. Guerdon) reward

Bynempt) bequethed.

Cosset) a lambe brought vp without the dain Vikempt) Incompti Not comed, that is rude and unhansome.

Melpomene) The sadde and waylefull Muse vsed of Poets in honor of Tragedies: as saith Virgile Melpomene Tragico proclamat mæsta boatu.

Vp griesly gosts) The maner of Tragicall Poetes, to call for helpe of Furies and damned ghostes so is Hecuba of Euripides, and Tantalus brought in of Seneca. And the rest of the rest.

Herse) is the solemne obsequie in funeralles. Wast of) decay of so beautifull a peece

Carke) care.

Ah why) an elegant Epanorthosis. As also soone Nay time was long ago

Flouret) a diminutiue for a little floure. This is a notable and sententious comparison A minore a | ma us

Reliuen not) live not againe 5 not in they earthly bedies: for in heaven they emoy their due teward.

The braunch) He meaneth Dido, who being, as it were the mayne braunch now withered the buddes that is beautie (as he sayd afore) can no more flourish.

With cakes) fit for shepheards bankets.

Heame) for home. After the northerne pronouncing

Tinct) deyed or stayned.

The gaudie) the meaning is, that the things, which were the ornaments of her lyfe, are made the honor of her funerall, as is vsed in burialls.

Lobbin) the name of a shepherd, which seemeth to haue bene the louer and deere frende of Dido.

Rushrings) agreeable for such base gyftes. Faded lockes) dryed leaues. As if Nature her selfe bewayled the death of the Mayde.

Sourse) spring. Mantled medowes) for the sondry flowres are like a Mantle or couerlet wrought with many colours. Philomele) the Nightingale. Whome the Poetes faine once to haue bene a Ladye of great beauty, till being ranished by hir sisters husbande, she desired to be turned into a byrd of her name, Whose complaintes be very well set forth of Ma. George Gaskin a wittie gentleman, and the very chefe of our late rymers, who and if some partes of learning wanted not (albee it is well knowen he altogyther wanted not learning) no doubt would have attayned to the excellencye of those famous Poets. For gifts of wit and naturall promptnesse appeare in hym aboundantly.

Cypresse) used of the old Paynims in the furnishing of their funerall Pompe. And properly the signe

of all sorow and heatinesse,

The fatall sisters) Clotho Lachesis and Atropos, daughters of Herebus and the Nighte, whom the Poctes fayne to spinne the life of man, as it were a long thirde, which they drawe out in length, till his fatal howie and timely death be come; but if by other casualtie his dayes be abridged then one of them, that is Atropos, is sayde to h we cut the threde in twain. Here of commeth a common verse.

Clotho colum baiulat, lachesis trahit, Atropos

O trustlesse) a gallant exclamation moralized with great wisedom and passionate with great affection

Beare) a frame, wheron they vie to lay the dead corse.

Funes) of Poetes be feyned to be three, Persephone Alecto and Megera, which are sayd to be the Authours of all eurll and mischiefe.

Eternall might) Is death or darknesse of hell.

Betight) happened. I see) A linely Icon, or representation as if he saw her in heaven present.

Elysian fieldes) be deuised of Poetes to be a place of pleasure like Paradise, where the happye soules

doe rest in peace and eternal happynesse. Dye would) The very expresse saying of Plato in Phædone.

Astert) befall vnwares.

Nectar and Ambrosia) be feigned to be the drink and foode of the gods: Ambrosia they like to Manna in scripture and Nectar to be white like Creme, whereof is a proper tale of Hebe, that spilt a cup of it, and stayned the heavens, as yet appeareth. But I have already discoursed that at large in my Commentarye vpon the dreames of the same Authour. Meynt) Mingled.

#### Rmbleme

Which is as much to say, as death biteth not. For although Ly course of nature we be borne to dye, and being ripened with age, as with a timely harnest, we must be gathered in time, or els of our selues we fall like rotted ripe fruite fro the tree yet death is not to be counted for earl, nor (as the Poete sayd a little before) as doome of ill desert. For though the trespasse of the first man brought death into the world, as the guerdon of sinne, yet being ouercome by the death of one, that dyed for al, it is now made (as Chaucer sayth) the grene path way to lyfe. So that it agreeth well with that was sayd, that Death byteth not (that is) hurteth not at all.

# December.



Ægloga Duodecima.

#### ARGVMENT.

This Æglogue (euen as the first beganne) is ended with a complaynte of Colin to God Pan. Wherein as weary of his former wayes, he proportioneth his life to the foure seasons of the yeare, comparing hys youthe to the spring time, when he was fresh and free from loues follye. His manhoode to the sommer, which he sayth, was consumed with greate heate and excessive drouth caused throughe a Comet or blasinge starre, by which hee meaneth loue, which passion is comenly compared to such flames and immoderate heate. His riper yeares hee resembleth to an unseasonable harneste wherein the fruites fall ere they be rype. His latter age to winters chyll and frostie season, now drawing neare to his last ende.

The gentle shepheard satte beside a springe, All in the shadowe of a bushye brere, That Colin hight, which wel could pype and

For he of Tityrus his songs did lere.

There as he satte in secreate shade alone, Thus gan he make of loue his piteous mone.

O soueraigne Pan thou God of shepheards all, Which of our tender Lambkins takest keepe: And when our flocks into mischaunce mought fall, Doest saue from mischiefe the vnwary sheepe:

Als of their maisters hast no lesse regarde, Then of the flocks, which thou doest watch and ward:

I thee beseche (so be thou deigne to heare, Rude ditties tund to shepheards Oaten reede, Or if I euer sonet song so cleare,

As it with pleasaunce mought thy fancie feede)
Hearken awhile from thy greene cabinet,
The rurall song of carefull Colinet.

Whilomein youth, when flowrd my joy full spring. Like Swallow swift I wandred here and there: For heate of heedlesse lust me so did sting, 21 That I of doubted daunger had no feare. I went the wastfull woodes and forest wyde.

Withouten dreade of Wolues to bene espyed. I wont to raunge amydde the mazie thickette. And gather nuttes to make me Christmas game: And loyed oft to chace the trembling Pricket, Or hunt the hartlesse hare, til shee were tame.

What wreaked I of wintrye ages waste,
Tho deemed I, my spring would euer laste.
How often haue I scaled the craggie Oke,
All to dislodge the Rauen of her neste:
Howe haue I wearied with many a stroke
The stately Walnut tree, the while the rest
Vnder the tree fell all for nuts at strife:
For ylike to me was libertee and lyfe.

And for I was in thilke same looser yeares, (Whether the Muse so wrought me from my birth.

Or I tomuch beleeued my shepherd peres)
Somedele ybent to song and musicks mirth.
A good olde shephearde, Wrenock was his

name, 4

Made me by arte more cunning in the same.

Fro thence I durst in derring doe compare With shepheards swayne, what euer fedde in field:

And if that Hobbinol right indgement bare, To Pan his owne selfe pype I neede not yield. For if the flocking Nymphes did folow Pan, The wiser Muses after Colm ranne.

But ah such pryde at length was ill repayde, The shepheards God (perdie God was he none) My hurtlesse pleasaunce did me ill vpbraide, My freedome lorne, my life he lefte to mone. Loue they him called, that gaue me checkmate.

But better mought they have behote him Hate.

Tho gan my louely Spring bid me farewel, And Sommer season sped him to display (For loue then in the Lyons house did dwell) The raging fyre, that kindled at his ray.

A comett stird vp that vnkindly heate, That reigned (as men sayd) in Venus scate.

Forth was I ledde, not as I wont afore, 61
When choise I had to choose my wandring waye:
But whether luck and loues vnbridled lore
Would leade me forth on Fancies bitte to playe,
The bush my bedde the bramble was my

The bush my bedde, the bramble was my bowre,

The Woodes can witnesse many a wofull stowre

Where I was wont to seeke the honey Bee, Working her formall rownes in Wexen frame: The grieslie Todestoole growne there mought I see

And loathed Paddocks lording on the same.

And where the chaunting birds luld me a

The ghastlie Owle her gricuous ynne doth keepe.

Then as the springe gives place to elder time, And bringeth forth the fruite of sommers pryde: All so my age now passed youngthly pryme, To thinges of ryper reason selfe applyed.

And learnd of lighter timber cotes to frame, Such as might saue my sheepe and me fro shame.

To make fine cages for the Nightingale, And Baskets of bulrushes was my wont: 86 Who to entrappe the fish in winding sale Was better seene, or hurtful beastes to hont? I learned als the signes of heauen to ken, How Phabe fayles, where Venus sittes and when.

And tryed time yet taught me greater thinges, The sodain rysing of the raging seas:

The soothe of byrds by beating of their wings, The power of herbs, both which can hurt and ease:

And which be wont t'enrage the restlesse sheepe,

And which be wont to worke eternall sleepe.

But ah vnwise and witlesse *Colin cloute*, 91 That kydst the hidden kinds of many a wede: Yet kydst not ene to cure thy sore hart roote, Whose ranckling wound as yet does rifelye bleede.

Why livest thou stil, and yet hast thy deathes wound?

Why dyest thou stil, and yet aliue art founde?

Thus is my sommer worne away and wasted, Thus is my haruest hastened all to rathe: The care that budded faire, is burnt and blasted,

And all my hoped gaine is turnd to scathe. 100 Of all the seede, that in my youth was sowne, Was nought but brakes and brambles to be mowne.

My boughes with bloosmes that crowned were at firste.

And promised of timely fruite such store,
Are left both bare and barrein now at erst
The flattring fruite is fallen to grownd before,
And rotted, ere they were halfe mellow ripe:
My haruest wast, my hope away dyd wipe.

The fragrant flowres, that in my garden grews, Bene withered, as they had bene gathered long.

Theyr rootes bene dryed vp for lacke of dewe, Yet dewed with teares they han be euer among. Ah who has wrought my *Rosalind* this spight To spil the flowres, that should her girlond dight?

And I, that whilome wont to frame my pype, Vnto the shifting of the shepheards foote: Sike follies nowe haue gathered as too ripe And cast hem out, as rotten and vnsoote.

The loser Lasse I cast to please nomore, One if I please, enough is me therefore. 120 And thus of all my haruest hope I have Nought reaped but a weedye crop of care: Which, when I thought have thresht in swelling

Cockel for corne, and chaffe for barley bare. Soone as the chaffe should in the fan be fynd. All was blowne away of the wavering wynd.

So now my yeare drawes to his latter terme. My spring is spent, my sommer burnt vp quite: My harueste hasts to stirre vp winter sterne, And bids him clayme with rigorous rage hys right.

So nowehestormes with many asturdy stoure. So now his blustring blast eche coste doth scoure.

The carefull cold hath nypt my rugged rynde, And in my face deepe furrowes eld hath pight: My head besprent with hoary frost I fynd, And by mynegic the Crow his clawed ooth wright.

Delight is layd abedde, and pleasure past, No sonne now shines, cloudes han allouercast. Now leave ye shepheards boyes your merry glee. My Muse is hoarse and weary of thys stounde. Here will I hang my pype vpon this tree, 141 Was neuer pype of reede did better sounde.

Winter is come, that blowes the bitter blaste. And after Winter dreerie death does hast.

Gather ye together my little flocke. My little flock, that was to me so liefe: Let me, ah lette me in your folds ye lock, Ere the breme Winter breede you greater griefe. Winter is come, that blowes the balefull breath.

And after Winter commeth timely death.

Adieu delightes, that lulled me asleepe, Adieu my deare, whose loue I bought so deare: Adieu my little Lambes and loued sheepe,

Adieu ye Woodes that oft my witnesse were: Adieu good Hobbinol, that was so true, Tell Rosalind, her Colin bids her adieu.

Colins Embleme.

### GLOSSE.

Tityrus) Chaucer, as hath bene oft sayd.

Lambkins) young lambes. Als of their) Semeth to expresse Virgils verse

Pan curat oues ouiumque magistros.

Deigne) voutchsafe Cabinet) Colinet) diminutiues.

Mazie) For they be like to a maze whence it is hard to get out agayne.

Peres) felowes and companions.

Musick) that is Poetry as Terence sayth Qui artem tractant musicam, speking of Poetes.

Derring doe) aforesayd.

Lions house) He imagineth simply that Cupid. which is loue, had his abode in the whote signe Leo, which is in middest of somer; a pretical legory, whereof the meaning is, that loue in him wrought an extraordinarie heate of lust.

His ray) which is Cupides beame or flames of Loue. A Comete) a blasing starre, meant of beautie, which was the cause of his whote loue.

Venus) the goddesse of beauty or pleasure. Also a signe in heaven, as it is here taken. So he meaneth that beautie, which hath alwayes aspect to Venus, was the cause of all his vinquietnes in loue.

Where I was) a fine discription of the change of hys lyfe and liking; for all things nowe seemed to hym to have altered their kindly course.

Lording) Spoken after the maner of Paddocks and Frogges sitting which is indeed Lordly, not removing nor looking once a side, vnlesse they be sturred.

Then as) The second part. That is his manhoode. Cotes) sheepecotes. For such be the exercises of shepheards.

Sale) or Salow a kind of woodde like Wyllow, fit to wreath and bynde in leapes to catch fish withall.

Phiebe fayles) The Eclipse of the Moone, which is

alwayes in Cauda or Capite Draconis, signes in heauen.

Venus) .s. Venus starre otherwise called Hesperus and Vesper and Lucife, both because he seemeth to be one of the brightest starres, and also first ryseth and setteth last. All which skill in starres being conuenient for shepheardes to knowe as Theocritus and the rest vse

Raging seaes) The cause of the swelling and ebbing of the sea commeth of the course of the Moone sometime encreasing, sometime wayning and decreasing.

Sooth of byrdes) A kind of sooth saying vsed in elder tymes, which they gathered by the flying of hyrds; First (as is sayd) inuented by the Thuscanes, and from them deriued to the Romanes, who (as is sayd in Liuie) were so supersticiously rooted in the same, that they agreed that every Nobleman should put his sonne to the Thuscanes, by them to be brought vp in that knowledge.

Of herbes) That wonderous thinges be wrought by herbes, aswell appeareth by the common working of them in our bodies, as also by the wonderful enchauntments and sorceries that have bene wought by them; insomuch that it is sayde that Circe a famous sorceresse turned men into sondry kinds of beastes and Monsters, and onely by herbes: as the Poete sayth Dea saua poten tibus herbis &c.

Kidst) knewest. Eare' of corne.

Scathe) losse hinderaunce. Euer among) Euer and anone.

Thus is my) The thyrde parte wherein is set forth his ripe yeres as an untimely harnest, that bringeth little fruite.

The flagraunt flowres) sundry studies and laudable partes of learning, wherein how our Poete is seene, be they witnesse which are prime to his study.

So now my yeere) The last part, wherein is described his age by comparison of wyntrye stormes. Carefull (old) for care is sayd to coole the blood. Glee) mirth.

Hoary frost) A metaphore of hoary heares scattred

lyke to a gray frost.

Breeme shart e and bitter. Adiew delights) is a conclusion of all. Where in sixe verses he comprehendeth briefly all that was sixe verses ne comprehendent orient all that was touched in this booke. In the first verse his delights of youth generally. In the second, the lone of Rosalind, in the thyrd, the keeping of sheepe, which is the argument of all Æglogues. In the fourth his complaints. And in the last two his professed fren Iship and good will to his good trend Hobbinolt.

#### Embleme,

the meaning wherof is that all thinges perish and cone to theyr last end, but workes of learned wits and monuments of Poetry abile for euer And therefore Horace of his Odes a work though ful indede of great wit and learning, yet of no so great weight and importaunce bol ily sayth.

Exegi monimentum ære perennius, Quod nec imber nec aquilo votar &c. Therefore let not be enuied, that this Poete in his Fpilogue sayth he hath made a Calendar, that shall endure as long as time &c. folowing the ensample of Horace and Ould in the like.

Grande opus exegi quod nec louis ira nec iguis, Nec ferrum poterit nec edax abolere vetustas &c.

Le I have made a Calender for every years, That steele in strength, and time in durance shall outweare:

And if I marked well the starres revolution,
It shall continewe till the worlds dissolution To teach the ruder shepheard how to jeede his sheepe,

Ant from the falsers fraud his folded flocke to

keefe Goe lyttle Calender, thou hast a free passeporte, Goe but a lowly gate emongste the menner sorte.
Dare not to match il v pype with I ityrus hys style, Nor with the Pagrim that the Ploughman

playde a whyle But followe them firre off, and their high steppes adore, The better please, the worse despise, I aske nomore

Merce non mercede.

## and and a second a

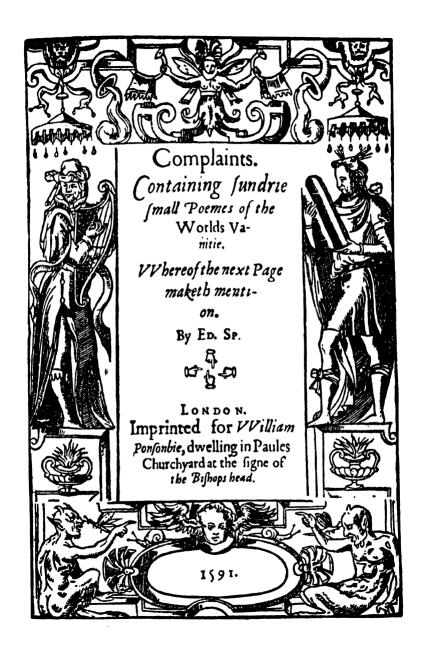


# Imprinted at London by Hugh Singleton, dwelling in Creede lane at the signe of the gylden

at the signe of the gylden

Tunn neere vnto

Ludgate



## A note of the sundrie Poemes contained in this Volume.

- 1 The Ruines of Time.
- 2 The Teares of the Muses.
- 3 Virgils Gnat.
- 4 Prosopopoia, or Mother Hubberds Tale.
- 5 The Ruines of Rome: by Bellay.
- 6 Muiopotmos, or The Tale of the Butterflie.
- 7 Visions of the Worlds vanitie.
- 8 Bellaves visions.
- o Petrarches visions.

## The Printer to the

#### Gentle Reader.

Faerie Queene, finding that it hath found a fauourable passage amongst you; I haue sithence endeuoured by all good meanes (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your delights,) to get into my handes such smale Poemes of the same Authors; as I heard were disperst abroad in sundrie hands, and not easie to bee come by, by himselfe; some of them having bene diverslie imbeziled and purloyned from him, since his departure ouer Sea. Of the which I have by good meanes gathered togeather these fewe parcels present, which I have caused to bee imprinted altogeather, for that they al seeme to containe like matter of argument in them: being all complaints and the new Poet, I take leave.

CINCE my late setting foorth of the meditations of the worlds vanitie, verie graue and profitable. To which effect I vnderstand that he besides wrote sundrie others, namelie Ecclesiastes, and Canticum canticorum translated, A senights slumber, The hell of louers, his Purgatorie, being all dedicated to Ladies; so as it may seeme he ment them all to one volume. Besides some other Pamphlets looselie scattered abroad: as The dying Pellican, The howers of the Lord, The sacrifice of a sinner, The seuen Psalmes, &c. which when I can either by himselfe, or otherwise attaine too, I meane likewise for your fauour sake to set foorth. In the meane time praying you gentlie to accept of these, and graciouslie to entertaine



#### Dedicated

## To the right Noble and beautifull Ladie, the La. Marie

Countesse of Pembrooke.

MOST Honourable and bountiful Ladie, me: for that I have not shewed anie thankefull there bee long suhens deepe sowed in my remembrance towards him or any of them; but brest, the seede of most entire love and humble affection unto that most braue Knight your noble fulnesse. Whome chieflie to satisfie, or els to brother deceased; which taking roote began in his life time somewhat to bud forth: and to shew themselves to him, as then in the weakenes of! their first spring: And would in their riper tended to the renowming of that noble race, from strength (had it pleased high God till then to drawe out his dates) spired forth fruit of more perfection. But since God hath disdeigned the world of that most noble Spirit, which was the hope of all learned men, and the Patron of my young Muses; togeather with him both their hope of anie further fruit was cut off: and also the tender delight of those their first blossoms nipped and quite dead. Yet sithens my late cumming into England, some frends of mine (which might much prevaile with me, and indeede commaund me) knowing with howe straight bandes of duette I was teed to him: as also bound vnto that noble nouse, (of which the chiefe hope then rested in him) have sought to revive them by upbraiding

suffer their names to sleep in silence and forgetauorde that foule blot of unthankefulnesse, I have concerned this small Poeme, intituled by a generall name of the worlds Ruines: yet speciallie inwhich both you and he sprong, and to the eternizing of some of the chiefe of them late deceased. The which I dedicate vnto your La. as whome it most speciallie concerneth: and to whome

I acknowledge my selfe bounden, by manie singular fauours and great graces.

> I pray for your Honourable happinesse: and so humblie kisse your handes.

Your Ladiships cuer

humblie at commaund.

E.S.

## The Ruines of Time.

T chaunced me on day beside the shore Of silver streaming Thamesis to bee, Nigh where the goodly Verlame stood of yore, Of which there now remaines no memorie, Nor anie little moniment to see. By which the trauailer, that fares that way, This once was she, may warned be to say.

There on the other side, I did behold A Woman sitting sorrowfullie wailing. Rending her yeolow locks, like wyrie golde, to About her shoulders carel slie downe trailing, And streames of teares from her faire eyes forth railing.

In her right hand a broken rod she held. Which towards heaven shee seemd on high to weld.

Whether she were one of that Rivers Nymphes, Which did the losse of some dere loue lament, I doubt; or one of those three fatall Impes, Which draw the dayes of men forth in extent; Or th'auncient Genius of that Citie brent: But seeing her so piteouslie perplexed, 20 I (to her calling) askt what her so vexed.

Ah what delight (quoth she) in earthlie thing, Or comfort can I wretched creature haue? Whose happines the heauens enuying, From highest staire to lowest step me draue, And haue in mine owne bowels made my graue, That of all Nations now I am forlorne, The worlds sad spectacle, and fortunes scorne.

Much was I mooued at her piteous plaint,
And felt my heart nigh riuen in my brest
With tender ruth to see her sore constraint,
That shedding teares awhile I still did rest,
And after did her name of her request.
Name haue I none (quoth she) nor anie being,
Bereft of both by Fates vniust decreeing.

I was that Citie, which the garland wore
Of Britaines pride, deliuered vnto me
By Romane Victors, which it wonne of yore;
Though nought at all but ruines now I bee,
And lye in mine owne ashes, as ye see:
Verlame I was; what bootes it that I was
Sith now I am but weedes and wastfull gras?
O vaine worlds glorie, and vnstedfast state
Of all that liues, on face of sinfull earth,
Which from their first vntill their vtmost
date

Tast no one hower of happines or merth, But like as at the ingate of their berth, They crying creep out of their mothers woomb. So wailing backe go to their wofull toomb. Why then dooth flesh, a bubble glas of

breath,
Hunt after honour and aduauncement vaine,
And reare a trophee for deuouring death,
With so great labour and long lasting paine,
As if his daies for euer should remaine?
Sith all that in this world is great or gaie,
Doth as a vapour vanish, and decaie.

Looke backe, who list, vnto the former ages, And call to count, what is of them become: Where be those learned wits and antique Sages, Which of all wisedome knew the perfect somme: Where those great warriors, which did ouercomme

The world with conquest of their might and maine,

And made one meare of th'earth and of their raine?

What nowe is of th'Assyrian Lyonesse, Of whome no footing now on earth appeares? What of the Persian Beares outragiousnesse, Whose memorie is quite worne out with yeares? Who of the Grecian Libbard now ought heares, That ouerran the East with greedie powre, 6, And left his whelps their kingdomes to deuoure. And where is that same great seuen headded

beast,

That made all nations vassals of her pride,
To fall before her feete at her beheast,
And in the necke of all the world did ride?
Where doth she all that wondrous welth nowe
hide?

With her own weight down pressed now shee lies,

And by her heaps her hugenesse testifies.

O Rome thy ruine I lament and rue,
And in thy fall my fatall ouerthrowe,
That whilom was, whilst heauens with equall
yewe 80

Deignd to behold me, and their gifts bestowe, The picture of thy pride in pompous shew: And of the whole world as thou wast the Empresse.

So I of this small Northerne world was Princesse. To tell the beawtie of my buildings fayre, Adornd with purest golde, and precious stone; To tell my riches, and endowments rare That by my foes are now all spent and gone: To tell my forces matchable to none. Were but lost labour, that few would beleeue, And with rehearsing would me more agreeue. High towers, faire temples, goodly theaters, Strong walls, rich porches, princelie pallaces, Large streetes, braue houses, sacred sepulchers, Sure gates, sweete gardens, stately galleries, Wrought with faire pillours, and fine imageries. All those (O pitie) now are turnd to dust, And ouergrowen with blacke obliuions rust. Theretoo for warlike power, and peoples store, In Britannie was none to match with mee, 100

In Britannie was none to match with mee, 100 That manie often did abie full sore:

Ne Troynouant, though elder sister shee,
With my great forces might compared bee;
That stout Pendragon to his perill felt,
Who in a siege seauen yeres about me dwelt.
But long ere this Bunduca Britonnesse
Her mightie hoast against my bulwarkes brought,

Bunduca, that victorious conqueresse,
That lifting vp her braue heroick thought
Boue womens weaknes, with the Romanus
fought,
110

Fought, and in field against them thrice preuailed:

Yet was she foyld, when as she me assailed

And though at last by force I conquered were Of hardie Sazons, and became their thrall; Yet was I with much bloodshed bought full deere.

And prize with slaughter of their Generall: The moniment of whose sad funerall, For wonder of the world, long in me lasted; But now to nought through spoyle of time is wasted.

Wasted it is, as if it neuer were,
And all the rest that me so honord made,
And of the world admired eu'rie where,
Is turnd to smoake, that doth to nothing fade;
And of that brightnes now appeares no shade,
But greislie shades, such as doo haunt in hell
With fearfull fiends, that in deep darknes dwell.

Where my high steeples whilom vsde to stand, On which the lordly Faulcon wont to towre, There now is but an heap of lyme and sand, For the Shriche-owle to build her balefull bowre:

And where the Nightingale wont forth to powre Her restles plaints, to comfort wakefull Louers, There now haunt yelling Mewes and whining Plouers.

And where the christall *Thamis* wont to slide In silver channell, downe along the Lee, About whose flowrie bankes on either side A thousand Nymphes, with mirthfull iollitee Were wont to play, from all annoyance tree; There now no rivers course is to be seene, 139 But moorish fennes, and marshes ever greene.

Seemes, that that gentle Riuer for great griefe Of my mishaps, which oft I to him plained; Or for to shunne the horrible mischiefe, With which he saw my cruell foes me pained, And his pure streames with guiltles blood oft stained.

From my vnhappie neighborhood farre fled, And his sweete waters away with him led.

There also where the winged ships were seene In liquid waues to cut their fomie waie, 149 And thousand Fishers numbred to haue been, In that wide lake looking for plenteous praie Of fish, which they with baits vsde to betraie, Is now no lake, nor anie fishers store, Nor euer ship shall saile there anie more.

They all are gone, and all with them is gone, Ne ought to me remaines, but to lament My long decay, which no man els doth mone, And mourne my fall with dolefull dreriment. Yet it is comfort in great languishment, To be bemoned with compassion kinde,

And mitigates the anguish of the minde.

But me no man bewaileth, but in game, Ne sheddeth teares from lamentable eie: Nor anie liues that mentioneth my name To be remembred of posteritie. Sauc One that maugre fortunes injurie. And times decay, and enuies cruell tort. Hath writ my record in true-seeming sort. Cambden the nourice of antiquitie. And lanterne vnto late succeeding age. 170 To see the light of simple veritie. Buried in ruines, through the great outrage Of her owne people, led with warlike rage. Cambden, though time all moniments obscure, Yet thy just labours ever shall endure. But whie (vnhappie wight) doo I thus crie. And grieve that my remembrance quite is raced Out of the knowledge of posteritie. And all my antique moniments defaced? Sith I doo dailie see things highest placed, 180 So soone as fates their vitall thred have shorne, Forgotten quite as they were neuer borne. It is not long, since these two eyes beheld A mightie Prince, of most renowmed race, Whom England high in count of honour held, And greatest ones did sue to gaine his grace Of greatest ones he greatest in his place, Sate in the bosome of his Soueraine, And Kight and loyall did his word maintaine. I saw him die, I saw him die, as one Of the meane people, and brought foorth on beare. I saw him die, and no man left to mone His dolefull fate, that late him loued deare. Scarce anie left to close his eylids neare; Scarce anie left vpon his lips to laie The sacred sod, or Requiem to saic. () trustlesse state of miserable men, That builde your blis on hope of earthly thing, And vainly thinke your selves halfe happie then, When painted faces with smooth flattering 200 Doo fawne on you, and your wide praises sing, And when the courting masker louteth lowe, Him true in heart and trustie to you trow. All is but fained, and with oaker dide. That euerie shower will wash and wipe away, All things doo change that vnder heaven abide,

And after death all friendship doth decaie.

He now is dead, and all is with him dead,

Saue what in heauens storehouse he vplaid: His hope is faild, and come to passe his dread,

And euill men, now dead, his deeds vpbraid:

Spite bites the dead, that living never baid.

Therefore what euer man bearst worldlie sway, Liuing, on God, and on thy selfe relie;

For when thou diest, all shall with thee die. 210

He now is gone, the whiles the Foxe is crept Into the hole, the which the Badger swept. He now is dead, and all his gloric gone, And all his greatnes vapoured to nought, That as a glasse vpon the water shone, 220 Which vanisht quite, so soone as it was sought. His name is worne alreadie out of thought, Ne anie Poet seekes him to reuiue; Yet manie Poets honourd him aliue.

Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloude.

Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloute, Care now his idle bagpipe vp to raise, Ne tell his sorrow to the listning rout Of shepherd groomes, which wont his songs to praise:

Praise who so list, yet I will him dispraise, Vntill he quite him of this guiltie blame: 230 Wake shepheards boy, at length awake for shame.

And who so els did goodnes by him gaine, And who so els his bounteous minde did trie, Whether he shepheard be, or shepheardsswaine, (For manie did, which doo it now denie) Awake, and to his Song a part applie: And I, the whilest you mourne for his decease, Will with my mourning plaints your plaint increase.

He dyde, and after him his brother dyde, 239 His brother Prince, his brother noble Peere, That whilste he liued, was of none enuyde, And dead is now, as liuing, counted deare, Deare vnto all that true affection beare: But vnto thee most deare, O dearest Dame, His noble Spouse, and Paragon of fame.

He whilest he liued, happie was through thee, And being dead is happie now much more; Liuing, that lincked chaunst with thee to bee, And dead, because him dead thou dost adore As liuing, and thy lost deare loue deplore. 250 So whilst that thou, faire flower of chastitie, Dost liue, by thee thy Lord shall neuer die.

Thy Lord shall neuer die, the whiles this verse Shall liue, and surely it shall liue for euer: For ever it shall liue, and shall rehearse His worthie praise, and vertues dying neuer. Though death his soule doo from his bodie seuer. And thou thy selfe herein shalt also liue; Such grace the heauens doo to my verses giue.

Ne shall his sister, ne thy father die, 260
Thy father, that good Earle of rare renowne,
And noble Patrone of weake pouertie;
Whose great good deeds in countrey and in towne
Haue purchast him in heauen an happie crowne;
Where he now liueth in eternall blis,
And left his sonne t'ensue those steps of his.

He noble bud, his Grandsires liuelie hayre, Vnder the shadow of thy countenaunce Now ginnes to shoote vp fast, and flourish fayre In learned artes and goodlie gouernaunce, 270 That him to highest honour shall aduaunce. Braue Impe of Bedford, grow apace in bountie, And count of wisedome more than of thy Countie.

Ne may I let thy husbands sister die,
That goodly Ladie, sith she eke did spring
Out of this stocke, and famous familie,
Whose praises I to future age doo sing,
And foorth out of her happie womb did bring
The sacred brood of learning and all honour;
In whom the heauens powrde all their gifts
vpon her.

280

Most gentle spirite breathed from aboue, Out of the bosome of the makers blis, In whom all bountie and all vertuous loue Appeared in their natiue propertis, And did enrich that noble breast of his, With treasure passing all this worldes worth, Worthie of heauen it selfe, which brought it forth.

His blessed spirite full of power diuine And influence of all celestiall grace, Loathing this sinfull earth and earthlie slime, Fled backe too soone vnto his natiue place, 291 Too soone for all that did his loue embrace, Too soone for all this wretched world, whom he Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

Yet ere his happie soule to heauen went Out of this fleshlie goale, he did deuise Vnto his heauenlie maker to present His bodie, as a spotles sacrifise; And chose, that guiltie hands of enemies Should powre forth th'offring of his guiltles blood:

So life exchanging for his countries good.

O noble spirite, liue there euer blessed, The worlds late wonder, and the heauens new iov,

Liue euer there, and leaue me here distressed With mortall cares, and cumbrous worlds aroy. But where thou dost that happines enioy, Bid me, O bid me quicklie come to thee, That happie there I maie thee alwaies see.

Yet whilest the fates affoord me vitall breath, I will it spend in speaking of thy praise, 31 on And sing to thee, vntill that timelie death By heauens doome doo ende my earthlie daies: Thereto doo thou my humble spirite raise, And into me that sacred breath inspire, Which thou there breathest perfect and entire.

Then will I sing: but who can better sing,
Than thine owne sister, peerles Ladie bright,
Which to thee sings with deep harts sorrowing,
Sorrowing tempered with deare denght.
That her to heare I feele my feeble spright 320
Robbed of sense, and rauished with ioy,
Sad ioy made of mourning and anoy.

Yet will I sing: but who can better sing, Than thou thy selfe, thine owne selfes valiance, That whilest thou liuedst, madest the forrests ring,

And fields resownd, and flockes to leap and daunce,

And shepheards leave their lambs vnto mischaunce,

To runne thy shrill Arcadian Pipe to heare:

O happie were those dayes, thrice happie were.

But now more happie thou, and wretched wee, Which want the wonted sweetnes of thy voice, Whiles thou now in *Elistan* fields so free, With *Orpheus*, and with *Linus*, and the choice Of all that euer did in rimes reioyce, Conucrsest, and doost heare their heaven lie layes, and they heare thing, and thing doo better.

And they heare thine, and thine doo better praise.

So there thou liuest, singing cuermore, And here thou liuest, being cuer song Of vs, which liuing loued thee afore, And now thee worship, mongst that blessed

Of heauenlie Poets and Heroes strong.
So thou both here and there immortall art,
And euerie where through excellent desart.

But such as neither of themselues can sing, Nor yet are sung of others for reward, Die in obscure obliuion, as the thing Which neuer was, ne euer with regard Their names shall of the later age be heard, But shall in rustic darknes euer lie, Vales they mentioned be with infamic.

What booteth it to haue been rich aliue? What to be great? what to be gracious? When after death no token doth suruiue, Of former being in this mortall hous, But sleepes in dust dead and inglorious, Like beast, whose breath but in his nostrels is, And hath no hope of happinesse or blis.

How manie great ones may remembred be, Which in their daies most famous lied id florish? Of whome no word we heare, nor signe now see, But as things wipt out with a sponge to perishe, Because they liuing, cared not to cherishe No gentle wits, through pride or couetize, Which might their names for euer memorize.

Prouide therefore (ve Princes) whilst ye liue. That of the Muses ve may friended bec, Which vnto men eternitie do giue; For they be daughters of Dame memorie, And love the father of eternitie. And do those men in golden thrones repose, Whose merits they to glorifie do chose. 371 The seuen fold yron gates of grislie Hell, And horrid house of sad Proserpina. They able are with power of mightie spell To breake, and thence the soules to bring awaie Out of dread darkenesse, to eternall day. And them immortall make, which els would die In foule forgetfulnesse, and nameles lie. So whilome raised they the puissant brood

So whilome raised they the puissant brood Of golden girt Alemena, for great merite, 380 Out of the dust, to which the Oelaran wood Had him consum'd, and spent his vitall spirite: To highest heauen, where now he doth inherite All happinesse ir Hebes siluer bowre, Chosen to be her dearest Paramoure.

So raisde they eke faire Ledaes warlick twinnes, And interchanged life vnto them lent, That when th'one dies, th'other then beginnes To shew in Heauen his brightnes orient; And they, for pittie of the sad wayment, 390 Which Orpheus for Eurydice did make, Her back againe to life sent for his sake.

So happie are they, and so fortunate,
Whom the Pierian sacred sisters loue,
That freed from bands of impacable fate,
And power of death, they liue for aye aboue,
Where mortall wreakes their blis may not
remoue:

But with the Gods, for former vertues meede, On Nectar and Ambrosia do feede.

For deeds doe die, how euer noblie donne, 400 And thoughts of men do as themselues decay. But wise wordes taught in numbers for to runne, Recorded by the Muses, liue for ay; Ne may with storming showers be washt away, Ne bitter breathing windes with harmfull blast, Nor age, nor enuie shall them euer wast.

In vaine doo earthly Princes then, in vaine Seeke with Pyramides, to heauen aspired; Or huge Colones, built with costlie paine; Or brasen Pillours, neuer to be fired, 410 Or Shrines, made of the mettall most desired; To make their memories for euer liue; For how can mortall immortalitie giue?

Such one Mausolus made, the workisgreat wonder, But now no remnant doth thereof remaine: Such one Marcellus, but was torne with thunder: Such one Listppus, but is worne with raine: Such one King Edmond, but was rent for gaine. All such vaine moniments of earthlie masse, Deuour'd of Time, in time to nought doo passe.

But fame with golden wings aloft doth flie, 421 Aboue the reach of ruinous decay, And with braue plumes doth beate the azure skie,

Admir'd of base-borne men from farre away: Then who so will with vertuous deeds assay To mount to heauen, on *Pegasus* must ride, And with sweete Poets verse be glorifide.

For not to haue been dipt in Lethe lake, Could saue the sonne of Thetis from to die; But that blinde bard did him immortall make With verses, dipt in deaw of Castalie: 431 Which made the Easterne Conquerour to crie, O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue found So braue a Trompe, thy noble acts to sound.

Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read Good Melibæ, that hath a Poet got,
To sing his living praises being dead,
Deserving neuer here to be forgot,
In spight of envie, that his deeds would spot:
Since whose decease, learning lies vnrcgarded,
And men of armes doo wander vnrewarded.

Those two be those two great calamities,
That long agoe did grieue the noble spright
Of Salomon with great indignities;
Who whilome was aliue the wisest wight.
But now his wisedome is disprooued quite;
For he that now welds all things at his will,
Scorns th'one and th'other in his deeper skill.

O griefe of griefes, O gall of all good heartes, To see that vertue should dispised bee 450 Of him, that first was raisde for vertuous parts, And now broad spreading like an aged tree, Lets none shoot vp, that nigh him planted bee: O let the man, of whom the Muse is scorned, Nor aliue, nor dead be of the Muse adorned.

O vile worlds trust, that with such vaine illusion Hath so wise men bewitcht, and ouerkest, That they see not the way of their confusion, O vainesse to be added to the rest, That do my soule with inward griefe infest: Let them behold the piteous fail of mee: 461 And in my case their owne ensample see.

And who so els that sits in highest seate
Of this worlds glorie, worshipped of all,
Ne feareth change of time, nor fortunes threate,
Let him behold the horror of my fall,
And his owne end vnto remembrance call;
That of like ruine he may warned bee,
And in himselfe be moou'd to pittie mee.

Thus having ended all her piteous plaint, 470 With dolefull shrikes shee vanished away, That I through inward sorrowe wexen faint, And all astonished with deepe dismay, For her departure, had no word to say: But sate long time in sencelesse sad affright, Looking still, if I might of her have sight.

Which when I missed, hauing looked long, My thought returned greeued home againe, Renewing her complaint with passion strong, Forruth of that same womans pitcous paine; 480 Whose wordes recording in my troubled braine, I felt such anguish wound my feeble heart, That frosen horror ran through euerie part.

So inlie greeuing in my groning brest, And deepelie muzing at her doubtfull speach, Whose meaning much I labored foorth towreste, Being aboue my slender reasons reach; At length by demonstration me to teach, Before mine cies strange sights presented were, Like tragicke Pageants seeming to appeare. 490

1

I saw an Image, all of massie gold, Placed on high vpon an Altare faire, That all, which did the same from farre beholde, Might worship it, and fall on lowest staire. Not that great Idoll might with this compaire, To which th' Assyrian tyrant would have made The holie brethren, falslie to have praid.

But th'Altare, on the which this Image staid, Was (O great pitie) built of brickle clay, That shortly the foundation decaid, 500 With showers of heauen and tempests worne away:

Then downe it fell, and low in ashes lay, Scorned of euerie one, which by it went; That I it seing, dearelie did lament.

2

Next vnto this a statelie Towre appeared, Built all of richest stone, that might bee found. And nigh vnto the Heauens in height vpreared, But placed on a plot of sandie ground: Not that great Towre, which isso much renownd For tongues confusion in holie writ, 510 King Ninus worke, might be compar'd to it.

But O vaine labours of terrestriall wit, That buildes so stronglie on so frayle a soyle, As with each storme does fall away, and flit, And giues the fruit of all your trauailes toyle, To be the pray of Tyme, and Fortunes spoyle: I saw this Towre fall sodainlie to dust, That nigh with griefe thereof my heart was brust. Then did I see a pleasant Paradize,
Full of sweete flowres and daintiest delights, 520
Such as on earth man could not more deuize,
With pleasures choyce to feed his cheerefull
soriebts:

sprights; Not that, which Merlin by his Magicke slights Made for the gentle squire, to entertaine His fayre Belphabe, could this gardine staine. But O short pleasure bought with lasting paine, Why will hereafter anie flesh delight In earthlie blis, and ioy in pleasures vaine, Since that I sawe this gardine wasted quite, That where it was scarce seemed anie sight? 530 That I, which once that beautie did beholde, Could not from teares my melting eyes withholde.

Soone after this a Giaunt came in place, Of wondrous power, and of exceeding stature, That none durst vewe the horror of his face, Yet was he mildeof speach, and meckeof nature. Not he, which in despight of his Creatour With railing tearmes defied the Iewish hoast, Might with this mightie one in hugenes boast. For from the one he could to th' other coast, 540 Stretch his strong thighes, and th'Occaean ouerstride.

And rearth his hand into his enemies hoast. But see the end of pompe and fleshlie pride; One of his feete vnwares from him did slide, That downe hee fell into the deepe Abisse, Wheredrownd with him is all his earthlie blisse.

Then did I see a Bridge, made all of golde, Ouer the Sea from one to other side, Withouten prop or pillour it t'vpholde, But like the coulored Rainbowe arched wide: Not that great Arche, which *Traian* edifide, 551 To be a wonder to all age ensuing, Was matchable to this in equall vewing. But (ah) what bootes it to see earthlie thing In glorie, or in greatnes to excell, Sith time doth greatest things to ruine bring? This goodlie bridge, one foote not fastened well, Gan faile, and all the rest downe shortlie fell, Ne of so braue a building ought remained, 559 That griefe thereof my spirite greatly pained.

I saw two Beares, as white as anie milke, Lying together in a mightie caue, Of milde aspect, and haire as soft as silke, That saluage nature seemed not to haue, Nor after greedie spoyle of blood to craue: Two fairer beasts might not elswhere be found, Although the compast world were sought around.

But what can long abide aboue this ground In state of blis, or stedfast happinesse? The Caue, in which these Beares lav sleeping sound. Was but earth, and with her owne weightinesse Voon them fell, and did vnwares oppresse. That for great sorrow of their sudden fate, Henceforth all worlds felicitie I hate. Much was I troubled in my heavie spright. At sight of these sad spectacles forepast, That all my senses were bereaued quight. And I in minde remained sore agast. Distraught twixt feare and pitie; when at last I heard a voyce, which loudly to me called, 580 That with the suddein shrill I was appalled. Behold (said it) and by ensample see, That all is vanitie and griefe of minde, Ne other comfort in this world can be, But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclinde; For all the rest must needs be left behinde: With that it bad me, to the other side To cast mine eye, where other sights I spide.

Nopen that famous Rivers further shore,
There stood a snowie Swan of heavenly hiew,
And gentle kinde, as euer Fowle afore; 591
A fairer one in all the goodlie criew
Of white Strimonian brood might no man view:
There he most sweetly sung the prophecie
Of his owne death in dolefull Elegie.
At last, when all his mourning melodie
He ended had, that both the shores resounded,
Feeling the fit that him forewarnd to die,
With loftic flight aboue the earth he bounded,
Andout of sight to highest heaven mounted: 600
Where now he is become an heavenly signe;
There now the ioy is his, here sorrow mine.

Whilest thus I looked, loe adowne the *Lee*, I sawe an Harpe stroong all with siluer twyne, And made of golde and costlie yuorie, Swimming, that whilome seemed to haue been The harpe, on which *Dan Orpheus* was seene Wylde beasts and forrests after him to lead, But was th'Harpe of *Philisides* now dead.

At length out of the Riuer it was reard 610 And borne aboue the cloudes to be diuin'd, Whilst all the way most heauenly noyse was heard

Of the strings, stirred with the warbling wind, That wrought both ioy and sorrow in my mind. So now in heauen a signe it doth appeare, The Harpe well knowne beside the Northern Beare. Soone after this I saw on th'other side,
A curious Coffer made of *Heben* wood,
That in it did most precious treasure hide,
Exceeding all this baser worldes good: 620
Yet through the ouerflowing of the flood
It almost drowned was, and done to nought,
That sight thereof much grieu'd my pensiue thought.

At length when most in perill it was brought, Two Angels downe descending with swift flight, Out of the swelling streame it lightly caught, And twixt their blessed armes it carried quight Aboue the reach of anie liuing sight:
So now it is transform'd into that starre, In which all heauenly treasures locked are. 630

Looking aside I saw a stately Bed, Adorned all with costly cloth of gold, That might for anie Princes couche be red, And deckt with daintie flowres, as if it shold Be for some bride, her ioyous night to hold: Therein a goodly Virgine sleeping lay; A fairer wight saw neuer summers day.

I heard a voyce that called farre away And her awaking bad her quickly dight, For lo her Bridegrome was in readic ray 64c To come to her, and seeke her loues delight: With that she started vp with cherefull sight, When suddeinly both bed and all was gone, And I in languor left there all alone.

Still as I gazed, I beheld where stood A Knight all arm'd, vpon a winged steed, The same that was bred of *Medusaes* blood, On which *Dan Perseus* borne of heauenly seed, The faire *Andromeda* from perill freed: Full mortally this Knight ywounded was, 650 That streames of blood foorth flowed on the gras.

Yet was he deckt (small ioy to him alas)
With manie garlands for his victories,
And with rich spoyles, which late hedid purchas
Through braue atcheiuements from his enemies:
Fainting at last through long infirmities,
Ile smote his steed, that straight to heauen
him bore,
And left me here his losse for to deplore.

,

Lastly I saw an Arke of purest golde Vpon a brazen pillour standing hie, 660 Which th'ashes seem'd of some great Prince to hold,

Enclosde therein for endles memorie Of him, whom all the world did glorifie: Seemed the heauens with the earth did disagree. Whether should of those ashes keeper bec.

At last me seem'd wing footed *Mercurie*, From heauen descending to appease their strife, The Arke did beare with him aboue the skie, And to those ashes gaue a second life, To liue in heauen, where happines is rife: 670 At which the earth did grieue exceedingly, And I for dole was almost like to die.

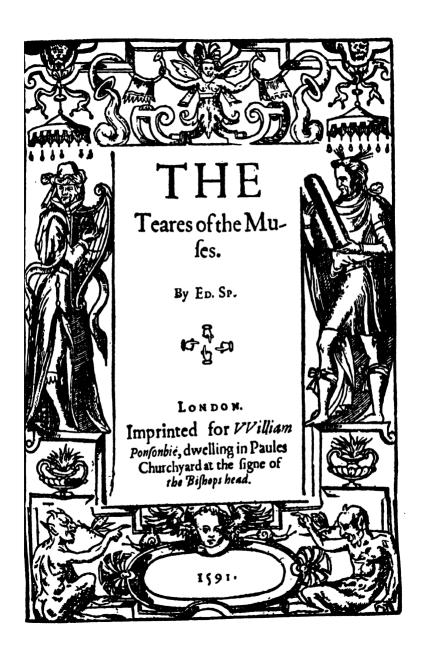
#### L'Envoy.

Immortall spirite of *Philisides*, Which now art made the heauens ornament, That whilome wast the worlds chiefst riches: Giue leaue to him that lou'de thee to lament His losse, by lacke of thee to heauen hent, And with last duties of this broken verse, Broken with sighes, to decke thy sable Herse. And ye faire Ladie th'honor of your daies, 680 And glorie of the world, your high thoughts

Vouchsafe this moniment of his last praise, With some few siluer dropping teares t'adorne: And as ye be of heauenlie off spring borne, So wnto heauen let your high minde aspire, And loath this drosse of sinfull worlds desire.

FINIS.

scorne:



### TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE

the Ladie Strange.

M Ost braue and noble Ladie, the things that make ye so much honored of the world as ye bee, are such, as (without my simple lines testimonie) are throughlie knowen to all men; namely, your excellent beautie, your vertuous behauter, and your noble match with that most honourable Lord the verie Paterne of right Nobilitie: But the causes for which ye haue thus deserued of me to be honoured (if honour it be at all) are, both your particular bounties, and also some private bands of affinitie, which it hath pleased your Ladiship to acknowledge. Of which whenas I found my selfe in no part worthie, I deuised this last slender meanes, both to inti-

mate my humble affection to your Ladiship and also to make the same universallic knowen to the world; that by honouring you they might know me, and by knowing me they might honor you. Vouchsafe, noble Lady, to accept this simple remembrance, thogh not worthy of your self, yet such, as perhaps by good acceptance therof, ye may hereafter cull out a more meet and memorable evidence of your own excellent deserts. So recommending the same to your Ladiships good liking, I humbly take leaue.

Your La: humbiy euer.

Ed. Sp.

## The Teares of the Muses.

The golden brood of great Apolloes wit, Those piteous plaints and sorrowfull sad tine, Which late ye powred forth as ye did sit Beside the siluer Springs of Helicone, Making your musick of hart-breaking mone.

For since the time that *Phæbus* foolish sonne Ythundered through *Ioues* auengefull wrath, For trauersing the charret of the Sunne Beyond the compasse of his pointed path, 10 Of you his mournfull Sisters was lamented, Such mournfull tunes were neuer since inuented.

Nor since that faire Calliope did lose Her loued Twinnes, the dearlings of her ioy, Her Palid, whom her vnkindly foes The fatall Sisters, did for spight destroy, Whom all the Muses did bewaile long space; Was euer heard such wayling in this place.

For all their groues, which with the heauenly

Of theirsweeteinstruments were wont to sound, And th'hollow hills, from which their siluer voyces Were wont redoubled Echoes to rebound, Did now rebound with nought but rufull cries, And yelling shrieks throwne vp into the skies.

The trembling streames which wont in chanels cleare

To romble gently downe with murmur soft, And were by them right tunefull taught to be are A Bases part amongst their consorts oft;

Now forst to ouerflowe with brackish teares, With troublous noyse did dull their daintie eares. 30

The ioyous Nymphes and lightfoote Faeries Which thether came to heare their musick sweet,

And to the measure of their melodies
Did learne to moue their nimble shifting feete;
Now hearing them so heauily lament,
Like heauily lamenting from them went.

And all that els was wont to worke delight Through the diuine infusion of their skill, And all that els seemd faire and fresh in sight, So made by nature for to serue their will, 40 Was turned now to dismall heauinesse, Was turned now to dreadfull vglinesse.

Ay me, what thing on earth that all thing breeds,

Might be the cause of so impatient plight? What furie, or what feend with felon deeds Hath stirred vp so mischieuous despight? Can griefe then enter into heauenly harts, And pierce immortall breasts with mortall smarts?

Vouchsafe ye then, whom onely it concernes, To me those secret causes to display; 50 For none but you, or who of you it learnes, Can rightfully aread so dolefull lay. Begin thou eldest Sister of the crew, And let the rest in order thee ensew. Clio.

Heare thou great Father of the Gods on hie That most art dreaded for thy thunder darts: And thou our Syre that raignst in *Castalie* And mount *Parnasse*, the God of goodly Arts: Heare and behold the miserable state Of vs thy daughters, dolefull desolate. 60

Behold the fowle reproach and open shame, The which is day by day vnto vs wrought By such as hate the honour of our name, The foes of learning, and each gentle thought; They not contented vs themselues to scorne, Doo seeke to make vs of the world forlorne.

Ne onely they that dwell in lowly dust, The sonnes of darknes and of ignoraunce; But they, whom thou great *loue* by doome values

Didst to the type of honour earst aduaunce; 70 They now puft vp with sdeignfull insolence, Despise the brood of blessed Sapience.

The sectaries of my celestiall skill,
That wont to be the worlds chiefe ornament,
And learned Impes that wont to shoote vp still,
And grow to hight of kingdomes government
They ynderkeep, and with their spredding armes
Doo beat their buds, that perish through their
harmes.

It most behoues the honorable race Of mightie Peeres, true wisedome to sustaine, And with their noble countenaunce to grace 81. The learned forheads, without gifts or gaine: Or rather learned themselues behoues to bee; That is the girlond of Nobilitie.

But (ah) all otherwise they doo esteeme Of th'heauenly gift of wisdomes influence, And to be learned it a base thing deeme; Base minded they that want intelligence: For God himselfe for wisedome most is praised, And men to God thereby are nighest raised. 90

But they doo onely striue themselues to raise Through pompous pride, and foolish vanitie; In th'eyes of people they put all their praise, And onely boast of Armes and Auncestrie: But vertuous deeds, which did those Armes first give

To their Grandsyres, they care not to atchiue.

So I, that doo all noble feates professe
To register, and sound in trump of gold;
Through their bad dooings, or base slothfulnesse,

Finde nothing worthie to be writ, or told: 100 For better farre it were to hide their names, Than telling them to blazon out their blames.

So shall succeeding ages haue no light Of things forepast, nor moniments of time, And all that in this world is worthie hight Shall die in darknesse, and lie hid in slime: Therefore I mourne with deep harts sorrowing, Because I nothing noble haue to sing.

With that she raynd such store of streaming teares.

That could have made a stonie heart to weep, And all her Sisters rent their golden heares, III And their faire faces with salt humour steep. So ended shee: and then the next anew, Began her grieuous plaint as doth ensew.

#### Melpomene.

O who shall powre into my swollen eyes A sea of teares that neuer may be dryde, A brasen voice that may with shrilling cryes Pierce the dull heauens and fill the ayer wide, And yron sides that sighing may endure, 110 waile the wretchednes of world impure?

Ah wretched world the den of wickednesse, Deformd with filth and fowle iniquitie; Ah wretched world the house of heauinesse Fild with the wreaks of mortall miserie; Ah wretched world, and all that is therein The vassals of Gods wrath, and slaues of sin.

Most miscrable creature vnder sky
Man without vnderstanding doth appeare;
For all this worlds affliction he thereby,
And Fortunes freakes is wisely taught to
beare:

130

Of wretched life the onely joy shee is, And th'only comfort in calamities.

She armes the brest with constant patience, Against the bitter throwes of dolours darts. She solaceth with rules of Sapience The gentle minds, in midst of worldlie smarts: When he is sad, shee seeks to make him meric, And doth refresh his sprights when they be werie.

But he that is of reasons skill bereft,
And wants the staffe of wisedome him to stay,
Is like a ship in midst of tempest left
Withouten helme or Pilot her to sway,
Full sad and dreadfull is that ships event:
So is the man that wants intendiment.

Whie then doo foolish men so much despize
The precious store of this celestiall riches?
Why doo they banish vs, that patronize
The name of learning? Most vnhappie
wretches.

The which lie drowned in deep wretchednes, Yet doo not see their owne vnhappines. 150

SPENSER

My part it is and my professed skill The Stage with Tragick buskin to adorne, And fill the Scene with plaint and outcries shril

Of wretched persons, to misfortune borne But none more tragick matter I can finde Than this, of men depriu'd of sense and minde.

For all mans life me seemes a Tragedy, Full of sad sights and sore Catastrophees; First comming to the world with weeping eye, Where all his dayes like dolorous Trophees, 160 Are heapt with spoyles of fortune and of feare, And he at last laid forth on balefull beare.

So all with rufull spectacles is fild,
Fit for Megera or Persephone;
But I that in true Tragedies am skild,
The flowre of wit, finde nought to busie me:
Therefore I mourne, and pitifully mone,
Because that mourning matter I haue none.
Then gan she wofully to waile, and wring
Her wretched hands in lamentable wise;
170
And all her Sisters thereto answering,
Threw forth lowd shrieks and drerie dolefull
cries.

So rested she: and then the next in rew, Began her grieuous plaint as doth ensew.

#### Thalia

Where be the sweete delights of learnings treasure,

That wont with Comick sock to beautefie The painted Theaters, and fill with pleasure The listners eyes, and eares with melodie; In which I late was wont to raine as Queene, And maske in mirth with Graces well beseene?

O all is gone, and all that goodly glee, 181
Which wont to be the glorie of gay wits
Is layd abed, and no where now to see;
And in her roome vnseemly Sorrow sits,
With hollow browes and greisly countenaunce,
Marring my ioyous gentle dalliaunce.

And him beside sits vgly Barbarisme And brutish Ignorance, yerept of late Out of dredd darknes of the deep Abysme, Where being bredd, he light and heauen does hate

They in the mindes of men now tyrannize, And the faire Scene with rudenes foule disguize. All places they with follie haue possest, And with vaine toyes the vulgare entertaine But me haue banished, with all the rest That whilome wont to wait vpon my traine, Fine Counterfesaunce and vahurtfull Sport, Delight and Laughter deckt in seemly sort.

All these, and all that els the Comick Stage
With seasoned wit and goodly pleasance
graced,
By which mans life in his likest image
Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced;
And those sweete wits which wont the like to
frame.

Are now despized, and made a laughing game.

And he the man, whom Nature selfe had made To mock her selfe, and Truth to imitate, With kindly counter vnder Mimick shade, Our pleasant Willy, ah is dead of late: With whom all ioy and iolly meriment Is also deaded, and in dolour drent.

In stead thereof scoffing Scurrilitie, And scornfull Follie with Contempt is crept, Rolling in rymes of shameles ribaudrie Without regard, or due Decorum kept, Each idle wit at will presumes to make, And doth the Learneds taske vpon him take

But that same gentle Spirit, from whose pen Large streames of honnie and sweete Nectar flowe.

Scorning the boldnes of such base-borne men, Which dare their follies forth so rashlie throwe: Doth rather choose to sit in idle Cell, 221 Than so himselfe to mockerie to sell.

So am I made the seruant of the manie, And laughing stocke of all that list to scorne, Not honored nor cared for of anie; But loath'd of losels as a thing forlorne: Therefore I mourne and sorrow with the rest Vntill my cause of sorrow be redrest.

Therewith she lowdly did lament and shrike, Pouring forth streames of teares abundantly, And all her Sisters with compassion like, 231 The breaches of her singults did supply. So rested shee: and then the next in rew Began her grieuous plaint, as doth ensew.

#### Euterpe.

Like as the dearling of the Summers pryde, Faire Philomele, when winters stormie wrath The goodly fields, that earst so gay were dyde In colours diuers, quite despoyled hath, All comfortlesse doth hide her chearlesse head During the time of that her widowhead: 240

So we, that earst were wont in sweet accord All places with our pleasant notes to fill, Whilest fauourable times did vs afford Free libertie to chaunt our charmes at will: All comfortlesse ypon the bared bow, Like wofull Culuers doo sit wayling now. For far more bitter storme than winters stowre The beautie of the world hath lately wasted, And those fresh buds, which wont so faire to

Hathmarred quite, and all their blossoms blasted: And those yong plants, which wont with fruit

t'abound. Now without fruite or leaves are to be found. A stonie coldnesse hath benumbd the sence And liuelie spirits of each liuing wight, And dimd with darknesse their intelligence, Darknesse more than Cymerians daylic night? And monstrous error flying in the ayre, Hath mard the face of all that semed fayre. Image of hellish horrour, Ignorance. Borne in the bosome of the black Abysse, 260 And fed with furies milke, for sustenaunce Of his weake infancie, begot amisse By yawning Sloth on his owne mother Night: So hee his sonnes both Syre and brother hight. He armd with blindnesse and with boldnes stout, (For blind is bold) hath our fayre light defaced; And gathering vnto him a ragged rout Of Faunes and Salyres, hath our dwellings raced Andour chast bowers, in which all vertue rained. With brutishnesse and beastlie filth hath stained. The sacred springs of horsefoot Helicon, So oft bedeawed with our learned layes, And speaking streames of pure Castalion, The famous witnesse of our wonted praise, They trampled haue with their fowle footings

And like to troubled puddles have them made. Our pleasant groues, which planted were with

That with our musick wont so oft to ring, And arbors sweet, in which the Shepheards

Were wont so oft their Pastoralls to sing, 280 They have cut downe and all their pleasaunce mard.

That now no pastorall is to bee hard. In stead of them fowle Goblins and Shriekowles, With fearfull howling do all places fill; And feeble Eccho now laments and howles, The dreadfull accents of their outcries shrill. So all is turned into wildernesse, Whilest Ignorance the Muses doth oppresse. And I whose joy was earst with Spirit full To teach the warbling pipe to sound aloft, 290 My spirits now dismayd with sorrow dull, Doo mone my miserie in silence soft. Therefore I mourne and waile incessantly, Till please the heavens affoord me remedy.

Therewith shee wayled with exceeding woe And pitious lamentation did make, And all her sisters seeing her doo soe, With equall plaints her sorrowe did partake. So rested shee: and then the next in rew, Began her grieuous plaint as doth ensew. 300

Terpsichore. Who so hath in the lap of soft delight Beene long time luld, and fed with pleasures sweet.

Feareles through his own fault or Fortunes

spight. To tumble into sorrow and regreet, Yf chaunce him fall into calamitie, Findes greater burthen of his miseria So wee that earst in ioyance did abound And in the bosome of all blis did sit, Like virgin Queenes with laurell garlands cround, For vertues meed and ornament of wit, Sith ignorance our kingdome did confound, Bee now become most wretched wightes on ground:

And in our royall thrones which lately stood In th'hearts of men to rule them carefully, He now hath placed his accursed brood, By him begotten of fowle infamy Blind Error, scornefull Follie, and base Spight. Who hold by wrong, that wee should have by right.

They to the vulgar sort now pipe and sing, And make them merrie with their fooleries, 320 They cherelie chaunt and rymes at randon fling, The fruitfull spawne of their ranke fantasies: They feede the eares of fooles with flattery, And good men blame, and losels magnify: All places they doo with their toyes possesse, And raigne in liking of the multitude, The schooles they fill with fond new fanglenesse, And sway in Court with pride and rashnes rude; Mongst simple shepheards they do boast their skill. And say their musicke matcheth Phabus quill.

The noble hearts to pleasures they allure, 331 And tell their Prince that learning is but vaine, Faire Ladies loues they spot with thoughts impure, And gentle mindes with lewd delights distaine: Clerks they to loathly idlenes entice, And fill their bookes with discipline of vice. So every where they rule and tyrannize, For their vsurped kingdomes maintenaunce, The whiles we silly Maides, whom they dispize, And with reprochfull scorne discountenaunce, From our owne natiue heritage exilde, Walk through the world of euery one reuilde.

Nor anie one doth care to call vs in, Or once vouchsafeth vs to entertaine, Vnlesse some one perhaps of gentle kin, For pitties sake compassion our paine, And yeeld vs some reliefe in this distresse: Yet to be so relieu'd is wretchednesse.

So wander we all carefull comfortlesse, Yet none doth care to comfort vs at all; 350 So seeke we helpe our sorrow to redresse, Yet none vouchsafes to answere to our call: Therefore we mourne and pittilesse complaine, Because none liuing pittieth our paine.

With that she wept and wofullie waymented, That naught on earth her griefe might pacifie; And all the rest her dolefull din augmented, With shrikes and groanes and grieuous agonie. So ended shee: and then the next in rew, Began her piteous plaint as doth ensew. 360

#### Erate

Ye gentle Spirits breathing from aboue, Where ye in *Venus* siluer bowre were bred, Thoughts halfe deuine, full of the fire of loue, With beawtie kindled and with pleasure fed, Which ye now in securitie possesse, Forgetfull of your former heauinesse:

Now change the tenor of your ioyous layes, With which ye vse your loues to deifie, And blazon foorth an earthlie beauties praise, Aboue the compasse of the arched skie: 370 Now change your praises into piteous cries, And Eulogies turne into Elegies.

Such as ye wont whenas those bitter stounds Of raging loue first gan you to torment, Andlaunch your hearts with lamentable wounds Of secret sorrow and sad languishment, Before your Loues did take you vnto grace; Those now renew as fitter for this place

For I that rule in measure moderate
The tempest of that stormie passion, 380
And vse to paint in rimes the troublous state
Of Louers life in likest fashion,
Am put from practise of my kindlie skill,
Banisht by those that Loue with leawdnes fill.

Loue wont to be schoolmaster of my skill And the deuicefull matter of my song; Sweete Loue deuoyd of villanie or ill, But pure and spotles, as at first he sprong Out of th'Almighties bosome, where he nests; From thence infused into mortall brests. 300 Such high conceipt of that celestiall fire, The base-borne brood of blindnes cannot pesse.

The base-borne brood of blindnes cannot gesse, Ne euer dare their dunghill thoughts aspire Vnto so loftie pitch of perfectnesse, But rime at riot, and doo rage in loue; Yet little wote what doth thereto behoue.

Faire Cytheree the Mother of delight,
And Queene of beautie, now thou maist go pack;
For lo thy Kingdome is defaced quight,
Thy scepter rent, and power put to wrack; 400
And thy gay Sonne, that winged God of Loue,
May now goe prune his plumes like ruffed Doue
And ye three Twins to light by Venus brought,

And ye three Twins to light by Venus brought, The sweete companions of the Muses late, From whom what euer thing is goodly thought Doth borrow grace, the fancie to aggrate; Go beg with vs, and be companions still As heretofore of good, so now of ill.

For neither you nor we shall anie more Finde entertainment, or in Court or Schoole: For that which was accounted heretofore 411 The learneds meed, is now lent to the foole, He sings of loue, and maketh louing layes, And they him heare, and they him highly prayse.

With that she powred foorth a brackish flood Of bitter teares, and made exceeding mone; And all her Sisters seeing her sad mood, With lowd laments her answered all at one. So ended she: and then the next in rew Began her grieuous plaint, as doth ensew. 420

#### Calliope

To whom shall I my euill case complaine, Or tell the anguish of my inward smart, Sith none is left to remedie my paine, Or deignes to pitie a perplexed hart: But rather seekes my sorrow to augment With fowle reproach, and cruell banishment. For they to whom I vsed to applie The faithfull service of my learned skill, The goodly off-spring of loues progenie. That wont the world with famous acts to fill: Whose liuing praises in heroick style, It is my chiefe profession to compyle. They all corrupted through the rust of time, That doth all fairest things on earth deface, Or through vnnoble sloth, or sinfull crime, That doth degenerate the noble race: Haue both desire of worthie deeds forlorne, And name of learning vtterly doo scorne. Ne doo they care to haue the auncestrie Of th'old Heroes memorizde anew. 440 Ne doo they care that late posteritie Should know their names, or speak their praises But die forgot from whence at first they sprong,

But die forgot from whence at first they sprong As they themselues shalbe forgot ere long. What bootes it then to come from glorious Forefathers, or to have been nobly bredd? What oddes twixt Irus and old Inachus. Twixt best and worst, when both alike are dedd; If none of neither mention should make, Nor out of dust their memories awake? Or who would euer care to doo braue deed, Or striue in vertue others to excell; If none should yeeld him his deserved meed, Due praise, that is the spur of dooing well? For if good were not praised more than ill, None would choose goodnes of his owne freewill. Therefore the nurse of vertue I am hight, And golden Trompet of eternitie, That lowly thoughts lift vp to heavens hight, And mortall men haue powre to deifie: Bacchus and Hercules I raisd to heaven. And Charlemaine, amongst the Starris seauen. But now I will my golden Clarion rend, And will henceforth immortalize no more: Sith I no more finde worthie to commend For prize of value, or for learned lore: For noble Peeres whom I was wont to raise, Now onely seeke for pleasure, nought for praise. Their great reuenues all in sumptuous pride They spend, that nought to learning they may spare;

And the rich fee which Poets wont diuide, Now Parasites and Sycophants doo share: Therefore I mourne and endlesse sorrow make, Both for my selfe and for my Sisters sake. With that she lowdly gan to waile and shrike, And from her eyes a sea of teares did powre, And all her sisters with compassion like, Did more increase the sharpnes of her showre. So ended she: and then the next in rew Began her plaint, as doth herein ensew.

#### Vrania.

What wrath of Gods, or wicked influence
Of Starres conspiring wretched men t'afflict,
Hath powrd on earth this noyous pestilence,
That mortall mindes doth inwardly infect
With loue of blindnesse and of ignorance,
To dwell in darkenesse without souenance?
What difference twixt man and beast is left,
When th'heauenlie light of knowledge is put out,
And th'ornaments of wisdome are bereft?
Then wandreth he in error and in doubt,
Yoweeting of the danger hee is in,
Through fleshes frailtie and deceipt of sin.
In this wide world in which they wretches stray,
It is the onelie comfort which they haue,
It is their light, their loadstarre and their day;
But hell and darkenesse and the griste graue

Is ignorance, the enemie of grace,
That mindes of men borne heauenlie doth
debace.

Through knowledge we behold the worlds creation,

How in his cradle first he fostred was; 500 And iudge of Natures cunning operation, How things she formed of a formelesse mas: By knowledge wee do learne our selues to knowe,

And what to man, and what to God wee owe. From hence wee mount aloft vnto the skie, And looke into the Christall firmament, There we behold the heauens great *Hierarchie*, The Starres pure light, the Spheres swift mourment.

The Spirites and Intelligences fayre, 509
And Angels waighting on th'Almighties chayre.
And there, with humble minde and high
insight.

His loue, his truth, his glorie, and his might, And mercie more than mortall men can vew. O soueraigne Lord, O soueraigne happinesse To see thee, and thy mercie measurelesse:

Such happines haue they, that doo embrace

The precepts of my heauenlie discipline;
But shame and sorrow and accursed case
Haue they, that scorne the schoole of arts
diuine,
And banish me, which do professe the skill

And banish me, which do professe the skill To make men heauenly wise, through humbled will.

How euer yet they mee despise and spight, I feede on sweet contentment of my thought, And please my selfe with mine owne selfedelight,

In contemplation of things heauenlie wrought: So, loathing earth, I looke vp to the sky, And being driuen hence, I thether fly.

Thence I behold the miserie of men,
Which want the blis that wisedom would them
breed, 530

And like brute beasts doo lie in loathsome den, Of ghostly darkenes, and of gastlie dreed: For whom I mourne and for my selfe complaine, And for my Sisters eake whom they disdaine. With that shee wept and waild so pityouslie, As if her eyes had beene two springing wells

And all the rest her sorrow to supplie,
Did throw forth shrieks and cries and dreery
yells.

It is their light, their loadstarre and their day; So ended shee, and then the next in rew, But hell and darkenesse and the grislie graue Began her mournfull plaint as doth ensew 540

#### Polvhymnia.

A dolefull case desires a dolefull song, Without vaine art or curious complements, And squallid Fortune into basenes flong, Doth scorne the pride of wonted ornaments. Then fittest are these ragged rimes for mee. To tell my sorrowes that exceeding bee: For the sweet numbers and melodious measures. With which I wont the winged words to tie. And make a tunefull Diapase of pleasures, Now being let to runne at libertie By those which have no skill to rule them right, Haue now quite lost their naturall delight. Heapes of huge words vphoorded hideously. With horrid sound though having little sence, They thinke to be chiefe praise of Poetry; And thereby wanting due intelligence, Haue mard the face of goodly Poesie, And made a monster of their fantasie: Whilom in ages past none might professe 559 But Princes and high Priests that secret skill, The sacred lawes therein they wont expresse. And with deepe Oracles their verses fill: Then was shee held in soueraigne dignitie, And made the noursling of Nobilitie. But now nor Prince nor Priest doth her main-

tayne,
But suffer her prophaned for to bee
Of the base vulgar, that with hands vncleane
Dares to pollute her hidden mysterie.
And treadeth vnder foote hir holie things,
Which was the care of Kesars and of Kings.

One onelie liues, her ages ornament,
And myrrour of her Makers maiestie;
That with rich bountie and deare cherishment,
Supports the praise of noble Poësie:
Ne onelie fauours them which it professe,
But is her selfe a peereles Poëtresse.

Most peereles Prince, most peereles Poëtresse.

Most peereles Prince, most peereles Poëtresse, The true Pandora of all heauenly graces, Diuine Elisa, sacred Emperesse: Liue she for euer, and her royall P'laces 580 Be fild with praises of diuinest wits, That her eternize with their heauenlie writs.

Some few beside, this sacred skill esteme, Admirers of her glorious excellence, Which being lightned with her beawties beme, Are thereby fild with happie influence: And lifted vp aboue the worldes gaze, To sing with Angels her immortall praize.

But all the rest as borne of saluage brood, And hauing beene with Acorns alwaies fed, Can no whit fauour this celestiall food, 591 But with base thoughts are into blindnesse led, And kept from looking on the lightsome day: For whome I waile and weepe all that I may. Eftsoones such store of teares she forth did

As if shee all to water would have gone; And all her sisters seeing her sad stowre, Did weep and waile and made exceeding mone.

And all their learned instruments did breake, The rest, vntold, no louing tongue can speake.

FINIS.

## Virgils Gnat.

Long since dedicated

## To the most noble and excellent Lord,

the Earle of Leicester, late deceased.

W Rong'd, yet not daring to expresse my paine,
To you (great Lord) the causer of my care,
In cloudie teares my case I thus complaine
Vnto your selfe, that onely privile are:

But if that any Oedipus vnware Shall chaunce, through power of some divining spright, To reade the secrete of this riddle rare, And know the purporte of my euill plight,

Let him rest pleased with his owne insight, Ne further seeke to glose vpon the text: For griefe enough it is to grieued wight To feele his fault, and not be further vext.

But what so by my selfe may not be showen, May by this Gnatts complaint be easily knowen.

## Virgils Gnat.

E now haue playde (Augustus) wantonly, Tuning our song vnto a tender Muse, And like a cobweb weauing slenderly, Haue onely playde: let thus much then excuse This Gnats small Poeme, that th'whole history Is but a iest, though enuie it abuse: But who such sports and sweet delights doth blame, Shall lighter seeme than this Gnats idle name. Hereafter, when as season more secure Shall bring forth fruit, this Muse shall speak to

In bigger notes, that may thy sense allure, And for thy worth frame some fit Poesie, The golden offspring of Latona pure, And ornament of great *loues* progenie. Phabus shall be the author of my song. Playing on yuorie harp with siluer strong. He shall inspire my verse with gentle mood Of Poets Prince, whether he woon beside Faire Xanthus sprincled with Chimaras blood: Or in the woods of Astery abide; Or whereas mount Parnasse, the Muses brood, Doth his broad forhead like two hornes divide, And the sweete waves of sounding Castaly With liquid foote doth slide downe easily. Wherefore ye Sisters which the glorie bee Of the Pierian streames, fayre Naiades, Go too, and dauncing all in companie. Adorne that God: and thou holie Pales. To whome the honest care of husbandrie Returneth by continual successe. Haue care for to pursue his footing light; Throgh the wide woods, and groues, with green kaues dight

Professing thee I lifted am aloft
Betwixt the forrest wide and starrie sky:
And thou most dread (Octauius) which oft
To learned wits giuest courage worthily,
O come (thou sacred childe) come sliding soft,
And fauour my beginnings graciously:
Fornot these leaues do sing that dreadfull stound,
When Giants bloud did staine Phlegraan
ground.

Nor how th'halfe horsy people, Centaures hight-Fought with the bloudie Lapithaes at bord, Nor how the East with tyranous despight Burnt th'Attick towres, and people slew with sword:

Nor how mount Alhos through exceeding might Was digged downe, nor yron bands abord The Pontick sea by their huge Nauy cast, My volume shall renowne, so long since past.

Nor Hellespont trampled with horses feete, 49 When flocking Persians did the Greeks affray; But my soft Muse, as for her power more meete, Delights (with Phabus friendly leaue) to play An easie running verse with tender feete. And thou (dread sacred child) to thee alway, Let euerlasting lightsome glory striue, Through the worlds endles ages to suruiue.

And let an happie roome remaine for thee Mongst heauenly ranks, where blessed soules do rest:

And let long lasting life with ioyous glee, As thy due meede that thou descruest best, 60 Hereafter many yeares remembred be Amongst good men, of whom thou oft are blest; Liue thou for euer in all happinesse: But let vs turne to our first businesse.

The fiery Sun was mounted now on hight Vp to the heauenly towers, and shot each where Out of his golden Charet glistering light; And fayre Aurora with her rosic heare, The hatefull darknes now had put to flight, When as the shepheard seeing day appeare, 70 His little Goats gan driue out of their stalls, To feede abroad, where pasture best befalls.

To an high mountaines top he with them went, Where thickest grasse did cloath the open hills: They now amongst the woods and thickets ment,

Now in the valleies wandring at their wills, Spread themselues farre abroad through each descent;

Some on the soft greene grasse feeding their fills;

Some clambring through the hollow cliffes on hy, Nibble the bushie shrubs, which growe thereby.

Others the vtmost boughs of trees doe crop,
And brouze the woodbine twigges, that freshly
bud;
82

This with full bit doth catch the vtmost top Of some soft Willow, or new growen stud; This with sharpe teeth the bramble leaves doth

And chaw the tender prickles in her Cud; The whiles another high doth ouerlooke Her owne like image in a christall brooke.

O the great happines, which shepheards haue, Who so loathes not too much the poore estate, With minde that ill vse doth before depraue, Ne measures all things by the costly rate 92 Of riotise, and semblants outward braue; No such sad cares, as wont to macerate And rend the greedie mindes of couetous men, Do euer creepe into the shepheards den.

Ne cares he if the fleece, which him arayes, Be not twice steeped in Assyrian dye, Ne glistering of golde, which vnderlayes 99 The summer beames, doe blinde his gazing eye. Ne pictures beautie, nor the glauncing rayes Ofpreciousstones, whence no good commeth by; Ne yet his cup embost with Imagery Of Bætus or of Alcons vanity.

Ne ought the whelky pearles esteemeth hee. Which are from Indian seas brought far away: But with pure brest from carefull sorrow free, On the soft grasse his limbs doth oft display, In sweete spring time, when flowres varietie With sundrie colours paints the sprincled lay; There lying all at ease, from guile or spight, 111 With pype of fennie reedes doth him delight. There he, Lord of himselfe, with palme bedight, His looser locks doth wrap in wreath of vine: There his milk dropping Goats be his delight, And fruitefull Pales, and the forrest greene, And darkesome caues in pleasaunt vallies pight, Whereas continuall shade is to be seene, And where fresh springing wells, as christall neate. Do alwayes flow, to quench his thirstie heate. O who can lead then a more happie life, Than he, that with cleane minde and heart sincere, No greedy riches knowes nor bloudie strife, No deadly fight of warlick fleete doth feare, Ne runs in perill of foes cruell knife, That in the sacred temples he may reare A trophee of his glittering spoyles and treasure, Or may abound in riches aboue measure. Of him his God is worshipt with his sythe, And not with skill of craftsman polished: 130 He ioyes in groues, and makes himselfe full

With sundrie flowers in wilde fieldes gathered; Ne frankincens he from Panchæa buyth, Sweete quiet harbours in his harmeles head, And perfect pleasure buildes her ioyous bowre, Free from sad cares, that rich mens hearts deuowre.

This all his care, this all his whole indeuour To this his minde and senses he doth bend, How he may flow in quiets matchles treasour, Content with any food that God doth send; And how his limbs, resolu'd through idle leisour, Vnto sweete sleepe he may securely lend, 142 In some coole shadow from the scorching heat, The whiles his flock their chawed cuds do eate. O flocks, O Faunes, and O ye pleasaunt springs Of Tempe, where the countrey Nymphs are rife, Through whose not costly care each shepheard sings

As merrie notes vpon his rusticke Fife.

As that Ascræan bard, whose fame now rings Through the wide world, and leads as joyfulllife. Free from all troubles and from worldly toyle. In which fond men doe all their dayes turmovle. In such delights whilst thus his carelesse time This shepheard drives, vpleaning on his batt. And on shrill reedes chaunting his rustick rime. Hyperion throwing foorth his beames full hott, Into the highest top of heaven gan clime, And the world parting by an equal lott. Did shed his whirling flames on either side. As the great *Ocean* doth himselfe divide. Then gan the shepheard gather into one His stragling Goates, and draue them to a foord, Whose cærule streame, rombling in Pible stone, Crept vnder mosse as greene as any goord. Now had the Sun halfe heaven overgone, When he his heard back from that water foord. Draue from the force of Phæbus boyling ray, Into thick shadowes, there themselues to lay. Soone as he them plac'd in thy sacred wood (O Delian Goddesse) saw, to which of yore Came the bad daughter of old Cadmus brood, Cruell Agaue, flying vengeance sore Of king Nictileus for the guiltie blood, Which she with cursed hands had shed before: There she halfe frantick having slaine hersonne, Did shrowd her selfe like punishment to shonne. Here also playing on the grassy greene. Woodgods, and Satyres, and swift Dryades, With many Fairies oft were dauncing seene. Not so much did Dan Orpheus represse, The streames of Hebrus with his songs I weene, As that faire troupe of woodie Goddesses Staied thee, (O Peneus) powring foorth to thee, From cheereful lookes, great mirth and gladsome glee. The verie nature of the place, resounding

With gentle murmure of the breathing ayre, A pleasant bowre with all delight abounding In the fresh shadowe did for them prepayre, To rest their limbs with wearines redounding. For first the high Palme trees with braunches faire, Out of the lowly vallies did arise. And high shoote vp their heads into the skyes. And them amongst the wicked Lotos grew, Wicked, for holding guilefully away Vlysses men, whom rapt with sweetenes new, Taking to hoste, it quite from him did stay, And eke those trees, in whose transformed hew The Sunnes sad daughters waylde the rash decay Of Phaeton, whose limbs with lightening rent, They gathering vp, with sweete teares did lament.

And that same tree, in which Demophoon,
By his disloyalty lamented sore,
Eternall hurte left vnto many one:
Whom als accompanied the Oke, of yore
Through fatall charmes transformd to such an
one:

The Oke, whose Acornes were our foode, before That Ceres seede of mortall men were knowne. Which first Triptoleme taught how to be sowne. Here also grew the rougher rinded Pine, The great Argoan ships braue ornament Whom golden Fleece did make an heauenly signe: Which coueting, with his high tops extent, To make the mountaines touch the starres divine. Decks all the forrest with embellishment. And the blacke Holme that loues the watrie vale. And the sweete Cypresse, signe of deadly bale. Emongst the rest the clambring Yuie grew, Unitting his wanton armes with grasping hold, Least that the Poplar happely should rew Her brothers strokes, whose boughes she doth enfold

With her lythe twigs, till they the top survew, And paint with pallid greene her buds of gold. Next did the Myrtle tree to her approach, Not yet vnmindfull of her olde reproach.

But the small Birds in their wide boughs embowring,

Chaunted their sundrie tunes with sweete consent.

And vnder them a siluer Spring forth powring His trickling streames, a gentle murmure sent; Thereto the frogs, bred in the slimie scowring Of the moist moores, their iarring voyces bent: And shrill grashoppers chirped them around: All which the ayrie Echo did resound. 232 In this so pleasant place this Shepheards flocke Lay euerie where, their wearie limbs to rest, On euerie bush, and euerie hollow rocke Where breathe on them the whistling wind

mote best:

The whiles the Shepheard self tending hisstocke, Sate by the fountaine side, in shade to rest, Where gentle slumbring sleep oppressed him, Displaid on ground, and seized euerie lim. 240 Of trecherie or traines nought tooke he keep, But looslie on the grassie greene dispredd, His dearest life did trust to careles sleep; Which weighing down his drouping drowsie hedd, In quiet rest his molten heart did steep, Deuoid of care, and feare of all falshedd: Had not inconstant fortune, bent to ill, Bid strange mischance his quietnes to spill. For at his wonted time in that same place 249 An huge great Serpent all with speckles pide,

To drench himselfe in moorish sline did trace. There from the boyling heate himselfe to hide: He passing by with rolling wreathed pace, With brandisht tongue the emptie aire did gride, And wrapt his scalie boughts with fell despight, That all things seem'd appalled at his sight. Now more and more having himselfe enrolde. His glittering breast he lifteth vp on hie, And with proud yount his head aloft doth holde: His creste aboue spotted with purple die, 260 On eucrie side did shine like scalie golde, And his bright eyes glauncing full dreadfullie, Did seeme to flame out flakes of flashing fyre, And with sterne lookes to threaten kindled yre. Thus wise long time he did himselfe dispace There round about, when as at last he spide Lying along before him in that place, That flocks grand Captaine, and most trustie guide:

Eftsoones more fierce in visage, and in pace, Throwing his firie eyes on euerie side, He commeth on, and all things in his way Full stearnly rends, that might his passage stay. Much he disdaines, that anie one should dare To come vnto his haunt; for which intent He inly burns, and gins straight to prepare The weapons, which Nature to him hath lent; Fellie he hisseth, and doth fiercely stare, And hath his lawes with angrie spirits rent, That all his tract with bloudie drops is stained, And all his foldes are now in length outstrained. Whom thus at point prepared, to preuent, A litle noursling of the humid ayre, A Gnat vnto the sleepie Shepheard went. And marking where his ey-lids twinckling rare, Shewd the two pearles, which sight vnto him lent. Through their thin couerings appearing fayre, His little needle there infixing deep, Warndhim awake, from death himselfe to keep. Wherewith enrag'd, he fiercely gan vpstart, And with his hand him rashly bruzing, slewe As in auengement of his heedles smart, That streight the spirite out of his senses flew, And life out of his members did depart: When suddenly casting aside his vew, He spide his foe with felonous intent, And feruent eyes to his destruction bent. All suddenly dismaid, and hartles quight, He fled abacke, and catching hastic holde Of a yong alder hard beside him pight, It rent, and streight about him gan beholde, What God or Fortune would assist his might. But whether God or Fortune made him bold Its hard to read: yet hardie will he had To ouercome, that made him lesse adrad.

The scalie backe of that most hideous snake Enwrapped round, oft faining to retire, And oft him to assaile, he fiercely strake Whereas his temples did his creast-front tyre; And for he was but slowe, did slowth off shake, And gazing ghastly on (for feare and yre 310 Hadblentso much his sense, that lesse he feard;) Yet when he saw him slaine, himselfe he cheard.

By this the night forth from the darksome bowre Of *Herebus* her teemed steedes gan call, And laesie *Vesper* in his timely howre From golden *Oeta* gan proceede withall; Whenas the Shepheard after this sharpe stowre, Seing the doubled shadowes low to fall, Gathering his straying flocke, does homeward fare.

And vnto rest his wearie ioynts prepare. 320
Into whose sense so soone as lighter sleepe
Was entered, and now loosing cuerie lim,
Sweete slumbring deaw in carelesnesse did
steepe,

The Image of that Gnat appeard to him, And in sad tearmes gan sorrowfully weepe, With greislie countenaunce and vi-age grim, Wailing the wrong which he had done of late, In steed of good hastning his cruell fate. Said he, what haue I wretch deseru'd, that thus

Said he, what haue I wretch deseru'd, that thus Into this bitter bale I am outcast, 330 Whilest that thy life more deare and precious Was than mine owne, so long as it did last? I now in lieu of paines so gracious, Am tost in th'ayre with euerie windie blast: Thou safe deliuered from sad decay, Thy careles limbs in loose sleep dost display. So liuest thou, but my poore wretched ghost Is forst to ferrie ouer Lettes Riuer, And spoyld of Charon too and fro am tost. Seest thou, how all places quake and quiuer 340

Seest from most places diske and quiter 34 Lightned with deadly lamps on euerie post? Tisiphone each where doth shake and shiuer Her flaming fire brond, encountring me, Whose lockes vncombed cruell adders be.

And Cerberus, whose many mouthes doe boy.

And Cerberus, whose many mouthes doo bay, And barke out flames, as if on fire he fed; Adowne whose necke in terrible array, I'en thousand snakes cralling about his hed Doo hang in heapes, that horribly affray, And bloodie eyes doo glister firie red; 350 He oftentimes me dreadfullie doth threaten, With painfull torments to be sorely beaten.

Ay me, that thankesso much should faile of meed,
For that I thee restor'd to life againe,
Euenfrom the doore of death and deadlie dreed.
Where then is now the guerdon of my paine?

Where the reward of my so piteous deed? The praise of pitie vanisht is in vaine, And th'antique faith of Iustice long agone Out of the land is fled away and gone. 360

I saw anothers fate approaching fast. And left mine owne his safetie to tender: Into the same mishap I now am cast. And shun'd destruction doth destruction render: Not vnto him that neuer hath trespast. But punishment is due to the offender. Yet let destruction be the punishment, So long as thankfull will may it relent. I carried am into waste wildernesse. Waste wildernes, amongst Cymerian shades, Where endles paines and hideous heavinesse Is round about me heapt in darksome glades. For there huge Othos sits in sad distresse, Fast bound with serpents that him oft inuades: Far of beholding Ephialtes tide, Which once assai'd to burne this world so wide.

Which once assai'd to burne this world so wide. And there is mournfull *Tityus* mindefull yet Of thy displeasure, O *Latona* faire; Displeasure too implacable was it, That made him meat for wild foules of the ayre: Much do I feare among such fiends to sit; 381 Much do I feare back to them to repayre, To the black shadowes of the *Stygian* shore, Where wretched ghosts sit wailing euermore.

There next the vtmost brinck doth he abide, That did the bankets of the Gods bewray, Whose throat through thirst to nought nigh being dride

His sense to seeke for ease turnes euery way: And he that in auengement of his pride, For scorning to the sacred Gods to pray, 300 Against a mountaine rolls a mightie stone. Calling in vaine for rest, and can haue none. Go ye with them, go cursed damosells, Whose bridale torches foule Erynnis tynde, And Hymen at your Spousalls sad, foretells Tydings of death and massacre vnkinde: With them that cruell Colchid mother dwells, The which conceiu'd in her reuengefull minde, With bitter woundes her owne deere babes to

And murdred troupes vpon great heapes to kay. There also those two Pandionian maides, 401 Calling on Itis, Itis euermore, Whom wretched boy they slew withguiltie blades; For whome the Thracian king lamenting sore, Turn'd to a Lapwing, fowlie them vpbraydes, And fluttering round about them still does sore: There now they all eternally complaine Of others wrong, and suffer endles paine.

But the two brethren borne of Cadmus blood, Whilst each does for the Soueraignty contend, Blinde through ambition, and with vengeance

Each doth against the others bodie bend His cursed steele, of neither well withstood, And with wide wounds their carcases doth rend; That yet they both doe mortall foes remaine, Sith each with brothers bloudie hand was slaine. Ah (waladay) there is no end of paine, Nor chaunge of labour may intreated bee: Yet I beyond all these am carried faine, Where other powers farre different I see, 420 And must passe ouer to th' Elisian plaine: There grim Persephone encountring mee, Doth vrge her fellow Furies earnestlie, With their bright firebronds me to terrifie. There chast Alceste lives inviolate, Free from all care, for that her husbands daies She did prolong by changing fate for fate. Lo there liues also the immortall praise Of womankinde, most faithfull to her mate, Penelope: and from her farre awayes A rulesse rout of yongmen, which her woo'd All slaine with darts, lie wallowed in their blood. And sad Eurydice thence now no more Must turne to life, but there detained bee, For looking back, being forbid before: Yet was the guilt thereof, Orpheus, in thee. Bold sure he was, and worthie spirite bore, That durst those lowest shadowes goe to see, And could beleeue that anic thing could please Fell Cerberus, or Stygian powres appease. 440 Ne feard the burning waves of Phlegeton, Nor those same mournfull kingdomes, com-

passed
With rustie horrour and fowle fashion,
And deep digd vawtes, and Tartar couered
With bloodie night, and darke confusion,
And iudgement seates, whose Iudge is deadlie
dred.

A iudge, that after death doth punish sore The faults, which life hath trespassed before. But valiant fortune made Dan Orpheus bolde: For the swift running riuers still did stand, 450 And the wilde beasts their furie did withhold, To follow Orpheus musicke through the land: And th'Okes deep grounded in the earthly molde Did moue, as if they could him vnderstand; And the shrill woods, which were of sense bereau'd,

Through their hard barke his siluer sound receau'd.

And eke the Moone her hastie steedes did stay, Drawing in teemes along the starrie skie,

And didst (O monthly Virgin) thou delay Thy nightly course, to heare his melodie? 460 The same was able with like louely lay The Oucene of hell to moue as easily, To yeeld Eurydice vnto her fere, Backe to be borne, though it vnlawfull were. She (Ladie) having well before appropued, The feends to be too cruell and seuere, Obseru'd th'appointed way, as her behooued, Ne cuer did her ev-sight turne arere, Ne euer spake, ne cause of speaking mooued . But cruell Orpheus, thou much crueller, Seeking to kisse her, brok'st the Gods decree, And thereby mad'st her euer damn'd to be. Ah but sweete loue of pardon worthie is, And doth deserve to have small faults remitted; If Hell at least things lightly done amis Knew how to pardon, when ought is omitted: Yet are ye both received into blis, And to the seates of happie soules admitted. And you, beside the honourable band Of great Heroes, doo in order stand. There be the two stout sonnes of Aeacus, Fierce Peleus, and the hardie Telamon, Both seeming now full glad and ioyeous Through their Syres dreadfull iurisdiction, Being the Judge of all that horrid hous: And both of them by strange occasion. Renown'd in choyce of happic marriage Through Venus grace, and vertues cariage. For th'one was rauisht of his owne bondmaide, The faire Ixione captiu'd from Troy: But th'other was with Thetis loue assaid, Great Nereus his daughter, and his ioy. On this side them there is a yongman layd, Their match in glorie, mightie, fierce and coy; That from th'Argolick ships, with furious yre, Bett back the furie of the Troian fyre. O who would not recount the strong diuorces Of that great warre, which Troianes oft behelde. And oft beheld the warlike Greekish forces, 499 When Teucrian soyle with bloodie rivers swelde, And wide Sigæan shores were spred with corses, And Simois and Xanthus blood outwelde, Whilst Hector raged with outragious minde, Flames, weapons, wounds in Greeks fleete to haue tynde.

For Ida selfe, in ayde of that fierce fight, Out of her mountaines ministred supplies, And like a kindly nourse, dial yeeld (for spight) Store of firebronds out of her nourseries, Vnto her foster children, that they might Inflame the Nauie of their enemies, 510 And all the Rhetzan shore to ashes turne, Where lay the ships, which they did seeke to burne.

Gainst which the noble sonne of Telamon Opposd'himselfe, and thwarting his huge shield. Them battell bad, gainst whom appeard anon Hector, the glorie of the Troian field: Both fierce and furious in contention Encountred that their mightie strokes so shrild. As the great clap of thunder, which doth ryue

The ratling heavens, and cloudes as under dryue. So th'one with fire and weapons did contend To cut the ships, from turning home againe To Argos, th'other stroug for to defend The force of Vulcane with his might and maine. Thus th'one Aeacide did his fame extend: But th'other ioy'd, that on the Phrygian playne Hauing the blood of vanquisht Hector shedd, He compast Troy thrice with his bodie dedd.

Againe great dole on either partie grewe, That him to death vnfaithfull Paris sent. 530 And also him that false Vlysses slewe, Drawne into danger through close ambushment: Therefore from him Laërtes sonne his vewe Doth turne aside, and boasts his good event In working of Strymonian Rhæsus fall. And efte in Dolons subtile surprysall.

Againe the dreadfull Cycones him dismay. And blacke Læstrigones, a people stout: Then greedie Scilla, vnder whom there bay Manie great bandogs, which her gird about: Then doo the Aetnean Cyclops him affray, 541 And deep Charybdis gulphing in and out: Lastly the squalid lakes of Tartarie, And griesly Feends of hell him terrifie There also goodly Agamemnon bosts. The glorie of the stock of Tantalus, And famous light of all the Greekish hosts,

Vnder whose conduct most victorious, The Dorick flames consum'd the Iliack posts. Ah but the Greekes themselves more dolorous, To thee, O Troy, paid penaunce for thy fall. In th'Hellespont being nigh drowned all. Well may appeare by proofe of their mischaunce,

The chaungfull turning of mens slipperie state, That none, whom fortune freely doth aduaunce, Himselfe therefore to heaven should elevate: For loftie type of honour through the glaunce Of enuies dart, is downe in dust prostrate; And all that vaunts in worldly vanitie, Shall fall through fortunes mutabilitie. 560

Th' Argolicke power returning home againe, Enricht with spoyles of th' Ericthonian towre, Did happie winde and weather entertaine, And with good speed the fomie billowes scowre: No signe of storme, no feare of future paine, Which soone ensued them with heavie stowre. I Trembling their forces, sound their praises lowd.

Nevers to the Seas a token gaue. The whiles their crooked keeles the surges claue. Suddenly, whether through the Gods decree. Or haplesse rising of some froward starre, 570 The heavens on everie side enclowded bee: Black stormes and fogsare blowen vp from farre. That now the Pylote can no loadstarre see, But skies and seas doo make most dreadfull

The billowes striuing to the heavens to reach. And th'heavens striuing them for to impeach, And in auengement of their bold attempt. Both Sun and starres and all the heauenly

powres Conspire in one to wreake their rash contempt, And downe on them to fall from highest towres:

The skie in pieces seeming to be rent, Throwes lightning forth, and haile, and harmful showres.

That death on euerie side to them appeares In thousand formes, to worke more ghastly feares.

Some in the greedie flouds are sunke and drent, Some on the rocks of Caphareus are throwne: Some on th' Euboick Cliffs in pieces rent; Some scattred on the Hercæan shores vnknowne; And manie lost, of whom no moniment Remaines, nor memorie is to be showne: 590 Whilst all the purchase of the Phrigian pray Tost on salt billowes, round about doth stray.

Here manie other like Heroes bee, Equall in honour to the former crue. Whom ye in goodly seates may placed see, Descended all from Rome by linage due, From Rome, that holds the world in souereigntie. And doth all Nations vnto her subdue: Here Fabij and Decij doo dwell, Horatij that in vertue did excell. 600

And here the antique fame of stout Camill Doth euer liue, and constant Curtius, Who stifly bent his vowed life to spill For Countreyes health, a gulph most hideous Amidst the Towne with his owne corps did fill, T'appease the powers; and prudent Mutius, Who in his flesh endur'd the scorching flame, To daunt his foe by ensample of the same. And here wise Curius, companion Of noble vertues, liues in endles rest; 610

And stout Flaminius, whose devotion Taught him the fires scorn'd furie to detest; And here the praise of either Scipion Abides in highest place aboue the best, To whom the ruin'd walls of Carthage vow'd,

Liue they for euer through their lasting praise:
But I poore wretch am forced to retourne
To the sad lakes, that *Phæbus* sunnie rayes
Doo neuer see, where soules doo alwaies mourne,
And by the wayling shores to waste my dayes,
Where *Phlegeton* with quenchles flames doth
burne;
622

By which just Minos righteous soules doth seuer From wicked ones, to liue in blisse for euer.

Me therefore thus the cruell fiends of hell Girt with long snakes, and thousand yron chaynes,

Through doome of that their cruell Iudge, compell

With bitter torture and impatient paines, Cause of my death, and iust complaint to tell. For thou art he, whom my poore ghost complaines 630

To be the author of her ill vnwares, That careles hear'st my intollerable cares.

Them therefore as bequeathing to the winde, I now depart, returning to thee neuer, And leaue this lamentable plaint behinde. But doo thou haunt the soft downe rolling riuer, And wilde greene woods, and fruitful pastures minde,

And let the flitting aire my vaine words seuer. Thus having said, he heavily departed 639 With piteous crie, that anie would have smarted.

Now, when the sloathfull fit of lifes sweete rest Had left the heauie Shepheard, wondrous cares His inly grieued minde full sore opprest; That balefull sorrow he no longer beares, Forthat Gnats death, which deeply was imprest: But bends what euer power his aged yeares Him lent, yet being such, as through their might He lately slue his dreadfull foe in fight.

By that same Riuer lurking vnder greene, Eftsoones he gins to fashion forth a place, 650 And squaring it in compasse well beseene, There plotteth out a tombe by measured space:

His yron headed spade tho making cleene,
To dig vp sods out of the flowrie grasse,
His worke he shortly to good purpose
brought.

Like as he had conceiu'd it in his thought.

An heape of earth he hoorded vp on hie, Enclosing it with banks on everie side, And thereupon did raise full busily A little mount, of greene turffs edifide; 660 And on the top of all, that passers by Might it behold, the toomb he did provide Of smoothest marble stone in order set, That never might his luckie scape forget.

And round about he taught sweete flowres to

The Rose engrained in pure scarlet die,
The Lilly fresh, and Violet belowe,
The Marigolde, and cherefull Rosemarie,
The Sparian Mirtle, whence sweet gumb does
flowe,

The purple Hyacinthe, and fresh Costmarie, And Saffron sought for in *Cilician* soyle, 671 And Lawrell th'ornament of *Phabus* toyle.

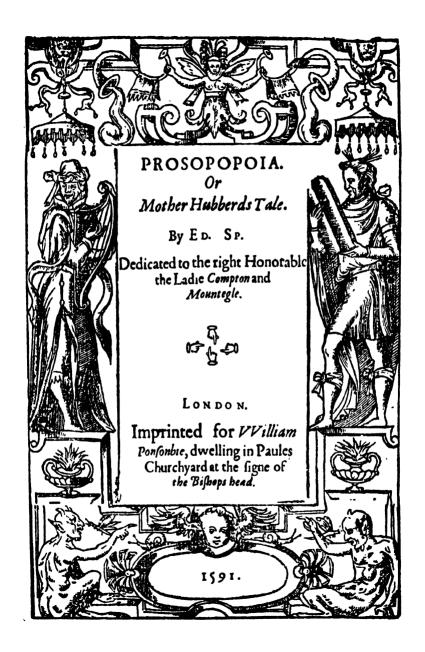
Fresh Rhododaphne, and the Sabine flowre Matching the wealth of th'auncient Frankincence.

And pallid Yuie building his owne bowre, And Box yet mindfull of his olde offence, Red Amaranthus, lucklesse Paramour, Oxeye still greene, and bitter Patience; Ne wants there pale Narcisse, that in a well Seeing his beautie, in loue with it fell: 680

And whatsoeuer other flowre of worth, And whatso other hearb of louely hew The ioyous Spring out of the ground brings forth,

To cloath her selfe in colours fresh and new; He planted there, and reard a mount of earth, In whose high front was writ as doth ensue.

To thre, small Gnat, in lieu of his life saued, The Shepheard hath thy deaths record engraved.



## To the right Honourable, the Ladie Compton and Mountegle.

Most faire and vertuous Ladie; having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knowen to your Ladiship, the humble affection and faithfull duetie, which I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare to that House, from whence yee spring, I have at length found occasion to remember the same, by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooued to set them foorth. Simple is the device, and the composition meane, yet carrieth some delight.

even the rather because of the simplicitie and meannesse thus personated. The same I beseech your Ludiship take in good part, as a pledge of that profession which I have made to you, and keepe with you untill with some other more worthie labour, I do redeeme it out of your hands, and discharge my vimost dutie. Till then wishing your Ladiship all increase of honour and happinesse, I humblie take leaue.

#### Vour La : euer

humbly;

Ed. Sp.

## Prosopopoia: or Mother Hubberds Tale.

T was the month, in which the righteous

That for disdaine of sinfull worlds vpbraide, Fled back to heauen, whence she was first con-

Into her siluer bowre the Sunne received; And the hot Syrian Dog on him awayting, After the chased Lyons cruell bayting, Corrupted had th'ayre with his noysome breath, And powr'd on th'earth plague, pestilence, and

Emongst the rest a wicked maladie Raign'd emongst men, that manie did to die, Depriu'd of sense and ordinarie reason; That it to Leaches seemed strange and geason. My fortune was mongst manie others moe, To be partaker of their common woe; And my weake bodie set on fire with griefe, Was rob'd of rest, and naturall reliefe. In this ill plight, there came to visite mee Some friends, who sorie my sad case to see, Began to comfort me in chearfull wise, And meanes of gladsome solace to deuise. 20 But seeing kindly sleep refuse to doe His office, and my feeble eyes forgoe, They sought my troubled sense how to deceaue With talke that might vnquiet fancies reaue

And sitting all in seates about me round, With pleasant tales (fit for that idle stound) They cast in course to waste the wearie howres. Some tolde of Ladies, and their Paramoures; Some of braue Knights, and their renowned Squires:

Some of the Faeries and their strange attires; And some of Giaunts hard to be beleeued, 31 That the delight thereof me much releeued. Amongst the rest a good old woman was, Hight Mother Hubberd, who did farre surpas The rest in honest mirth, that seem'd her well: She when her turne was come her tale to tell. Tolde of a strange adventure, that betided Betwixt the Foxe and th'Ape by him mis-

The which for that my sense it greatly pleased, All were my spirite heavie and diseased, He write in termes, as she the same did say, So well as I her words remember may. No Muses aide me needes heretoo to call; Base is the style, and matter meane withall.

¶ Whilome (said she) before the world was ciuill.

The Foxe and th'Ape disliking of their euill And hard estate, determined to seeke Their fortunes farre abroad, lyeke with his lveke:

For both were craftie and vnhappie witted; Two fellowes might no where be better fitted. The Foxe, that first this cause of griefe did finde, Gan first thus plaine his case with words vnkinde. Neighbour Ape, and my Gossip eke beside, (Both two sure bands in friendship to be tide,) To whom may I more trustely complaine The euill plight, that doth me sore constraine, And hope thereof to finde due remedie? Heare then my paine and inward agonie. Thus manie yeares I now haue spent and worne, In meane regard, and basest fortunes scorne, Dooing my Countrey seruice as I might, 61 No lesse I dare saie than the prowdest wight; And still I hoped to be vp aduaunced, For my good parts; but still it hath mischaunced.

Now therefore that no lenger hope I see,
But froward fortune still to follow mee,
And losels lifted high, where I did looke,
I meane to turne the next leafe of the booke.
Yet ere that anie way I doo betake,
I meane my Gossip priuie first to make. 70
Ah my deare Gossip, (answer'd then the Ape,)
Deeply doo your sad words my wits awhape,
Both for because your griefe doth great

appeare.

And eke because my selfe am touched neare: For I likewise haue wasted much good time, Still wayting to preferment vp to clime. Whilest others alwayes have before me stept. And from my beard the fat away have swept; That now vnto despaire I gin to growe, And meane for better winde about to throwe. Therefore to me, my trustic friend, aread 81 Thy councell: two is better than one head. Certes (said he) I meane me to disguize In some straunge habit, after vncouth wize. Or like a Pilgrime, or a Lymiter, Or like a Gipsen, or a Juggeler, And so to wander to the worlds ende. To seeke my fortune, where I may it mend For worse than that I have, I cannot meete. Wide is the world I wote and eueric streete oo Is full of fortunes, and aduentures straunge Continuallie subject vnto chaunge. Say my faire brother now, if this deuice Doth like you, or may you to like entice. Surely (said th'Ape) it likes me wondrous well: And would ye not poore fellowship expell. My selfe would offer you t'accompanie In this aduentures chauncefull ieopardie. For to wexe olde at home in idlenesse, Is disaduentrous, and quite fortunelesse: 100 Abroad where change is, good may gotten bee. The Foxe was glad, and quickly did agree: So both resolu'd, the morrow next ensuing, So soone as day appeard to peoples vewing, On their intended journey to proceede; And ouer night, whatso theretoo did neede,

Each did prepare, in readines to bee. The morrow next, so soone as one might see Light out of heavens windowes forth to looke. Both their habiliments vnto them tooke. 110 And put themselves (a Gods name) on their way. Whenas the Ape beginning well to wev This hard aduenture, thus began t'aduise; Now read Sir Reynold, as ye be right wise, What course ye weene is best for vs to take, That for our selues we may a living make. Whether shall we professe some trade or skill? Or shall we varie our deuice at will. Euen as new occasion appeares? Or shall we tie our selues for certaine yeares To anie seruice, or to anie place? For it behoues ere that into the race We enter, to resolue first herevoon. Now surely brother (said the Foxe anon) Ye have this matter motioned in season: For euerie thing that is begun with reason Will come by readie meanes vnto his end; But things miscounselled must needs miswend. Thus therefore I aduize vpon the case, That not to anie certaine trade or place, 130 Nor anie man we should our selues applie: For why should he that is at libertie Make himselfe bond? sith then we are free borne. Let vs all seruile base subjection scorne:

Let vs all seruile base subjection scorne;
And as we bee sonnes of the world so wide,
Let vs our fathers heritage diuide,
And chalenge to our selues our portions dew
Of all the patrimonie, which a few
Now hold in hugger mugger in their hand,
And all the rest doo rob of good and land. 140
For now a few haue all and all haue nought,
Yet all be brethren ylike dearly bought:
There is no right in this partition,
Ne was it so by institution
Ordained first, ne by the law of Nature,
But that she gaue like blessing to each creture
As well of worldly liuelode as of life,
Nor ought cald mine or thine: thrice happie
then

Was the condition of mortall men. 150
That was the golden age of Saturne old,
But this might better be the world of gold:
For without golde now nothing wilbe got.
Therefore (if please you) this shalbe our plot:
We will not be of anie occupation,
Let such vile vassalls borne to base vocation
Drudge in the world, and for their liuing droyle
Which haue no wit to liue withouten toyle.
But we will walke about the world at pleasure
Like two free men, and make our ease a treasure.

Free men some beggers call, but they be free, And they which call them so more beggers bee: For they doo swinke and sweate to feed the other.

Who live like Lords of that which they doo gather.

And yet doo neuer thanke them for the same, But as their due by Nature doo it clame. Such will we fashion both our selues to bee. Lords of the world, and so will wander free Where so vs listeth, vncontrol'd of anie: Hard is our hap, if we (emongst so manie) 170 Light not on some that may our state amend; Sildome but some good commeth ere the end. Well seemd the Ape to like this ordinaunce: Yet well considering of the circumstaunce, As pausing in great doubt awhile he staid, And afterwards with grave advizement said: I cannot my lief brother like but well The purpose of the complot which ye tell: For well I wot (compar'd to all the rest Of each degree) that Beggers life is best: 180 And they that thinke themselves the best of all. Oft-times to begging are content to fall. But this I wot withall that we shall ronne Into great daunger like to bee vndonne, Thus wildly to wander in the worlds eye, Without pasport or good warrantie, For feare least we like rogues should be reputed.

And for eare marked beasts abroad be bruted: Therefore I read, that we our counsells call, How to preuent this mischiefe ere it fall. 100 And how we may with most securitie, Beg amongst those that beggers doo defic. Right well deere Gossip ve aduized haue, (Said then the Foxe) but I this doubt will saue: For ere we farther passe, I will deuise A pasport for vs both in fittest wize. And by the names of Souldiers vs protect; That now is thought a civile begging sect. Be you the Souldier, for you likest are For manly semblance, and small skill in warre: I will but wayte on you, and as occasion 201 Falls out, my selfe fit for the same will fashion. The Pasport ended, both they forward went, The Ape clad Souldierlike, fit for th'intent. In a blew iacket with a crosse of redd And manie slits, as if that he had shedd Much blood throgh many wounds therein receaued.

Which had the vse of his right arme bereaued; Ypon his head an old Scotch cap he wore, With a plume feather all to peeces tore: 210 His breeches were made after the new cut, Al Portugese, loose like an emptie gut;

And his hose broken high aboue the heeling, And his shooes beaten out with traueling. But neither sword nor dagger he did beare, Seemes that no foes reuengement he did feare; In stead of them a handsome bat he held, On which he leaned, as one farre in elde. Shape light on him, that through so false

Shame light on him, that through so false illusion,

Doth turne the name of Souldiers to abusion, And that, which is the noblest mysterie, 221 Brings to reproach and common infamie. Long they thus trauailed, yet neuer met Aduenture, which might them a working set: Yet manie waies they sought, and manie tryed: Yet for their purposes none fit espyed. At last they chaunst to meete vpon the way A simple husbandman in garments gray; Yet though his vesture were but meane and bace, A good yeoman he was of honest place, 230 And more for thrift did care than for gay clothing:

Gay without good, is good hearts greatest loathing.

The Foxe him spying, bad the Ape him dight To play his part, for loe he was in sight, That (if he er'd not) should them entertaine, And yeeld them timely profite for their paine Eftsoones the Ape himselfe gan vp to reare, And on his shoulders high his bat to beare, As if good seruice he were fit to doo; But hittle thrift for him he did it too: 240 And stoutly forward he his steps did straine, That like a handsome swaine it him became: When as they nigh approached, that good man Seeing them wander loosly, first began T'enquire of custome, what and whence they were?

To whom the Ape, I am a Souldiere, That late in warres have spent my deerest blood,

And in long scruice lost both limbs and good, And now constrain'd that trade to ouerguie, I driuen am to seeke some meanes to liue: Which might it you in pitie please t'afford, I would be readie both in deed and word, 252 To doo you faithfull seruice all my dayes. This yron world (that same he weeping sayes) Brings downe the stowtest heartstolowest state: For miserie doth brauest mindes abate, And make them seeke for that they wont to scorne,

Of fortune and of hope at once forlorne. The honest man, that heard him thus complaine, Was grieu'd, as he had felt part of his paine: And well disposd' him some reliefe to showe, Askt if in husbandrie he ought did knowe.

To plough, to plant, to reap, to rake, to sowe, Tohedge, to ditch, to thrash, to thetch, to mowe; Or to what labour els he was prepar'd? For husbands life is labourous and hard. Whenas the Ape him hard so much to talke Of labour, that did from his liking balke, He would haue slipt the coller handsomly, And to him said; good Sir, full glad am I, 270 To take what paines may anie liuing wight: But my late maymed limbs lack wonted might To doo their kindly seruices, as needeth: Scarce this right hand the mouth with diet feedeth.

So that it may no painfull worke endure, Ne to strong labour can it selfe enure. But if that anie other place you have, Which askes small paines, but thriftines to saue, Or care to ouerlooke, or trust to gather, Ye may me trust as your owne ghostly father. With that the husbandman gan him auize 282 That it for him were fittest exercise Cattell to keep, or grounds to ouersee; And asked him, if he could willing bee To keep his sheep, or to attend his swyne, Or watch his mares, or take his charge of kyne? Gladly (said he) what euer such like paine Ye put on me, I will the same sustaine: But gladliest I of your fleecie sheepe (Might it you please) would take on me the keep.

For ere that vnto armes I me betooke, Vnto my fathers sheepe I vsde to looke, That yet the skill thereof I haue not loste: Thereto right well this Curdog by my coste (Meaning the Foxe) will serue, my sheepe to gather,

And drive to follow after their Belwether.
The Husbandman was meanly well content,
Triall to make of his endeuourment,
And home him leading, lent to him the charge
Of all his flocke, with libertie full large,
Go Giuing accompt of th'annuall increace
Both of their lambes, and of their woolley fleece.
Thus is this Ape become a shepheard swaine
And the false Foxe his dog (God giue them
paine)

For cre the yeare haue halfe his course out-run, And doo returne from whence he first begun, They shall him make an ill accompt of thrift. Now whenas Time flying with winges swift, Expired had the terme, that these two iauels Should render vp a reckning of their trauels Vnto their master, which it of them sought, Exceedingly they troubled were in thought, Ne wist what answere vnto him to frame, Ne how to scape great punishment, or shame,

For their false treason and vile theeuerie.
For not a lambe of all their flockes supply
Had they to shew: but euer as they bred,
They slue them, and vpon their fleshes fed:
For that disguised Dog lou'd blood to spill,
And drew the wicked Shepheard to his will.
So twixt them both they not a lambkin left,
And when lambes fail'd, the old sheepes liues
they reft;

That how t'acquite themselues vnto their Lord. They were in doubt, and flatly set abord. The Foxe then counsel'd th'Ape, for to require Respite till morrow, t'answere his desire: For times delay new hope of helpe still breeds. The goodman granted, doubting nought their

deeds. And bad, next day that all should readie be. But they more subtill meaning had than he: For the next morrowes meed they closely ment. For feare of afterclaps for to preuent. And that same evening, when all shrowded were In careles sleep, they without care or feare, Cruelly fell yoon their flock in folde, And of them slew at pleasure what they wolde: Of which whenas they feasted had their fill. For a full complement of all their ill, They stole away, and tooke their hastie flight, Carried in clowdes of all-concealing night. So was the husbandman left to his losse. 341 And they vnto their fortunes change to tosse. After which sort they wandered long while, Abusing manie through their cloaked guile; That at the last they gan to be descryed Of euerie one, and all their sleights espyed. So as their begging now them failed quyte: For none would give, but all men would them

wyte: Yet would they take no paines to get their liuing. But seeke some other way to gaine by giuing. Much like to begging but much better named: For manie beg, which are thereof ashamed. And now the Foxe had gotten him a gowne, And th'Apea cassocke sidelong hanging downe; For they their occupation meant to change, And now in other state abroad to range: For since their souldiers pas no better spedd, They forg'd another, as for Clerkes booke-redd. Who passing foorth, as their aduentures fell, Through manie haps, which needs not here to tell: At length chaunst with a formall Priest to meete

Whom they in civill manner first did greete, And after askt an almes for Gods deare love. The man straight way his choler vp did move, And with reproachfull tearmes gan them reuile. For following that trade so base and vile; And askt what license, or what Pas they had? Ah (said the Ape as sighing wondrous sad) Its an hard case, when men of good descruing Must either driven be perforce to steruing, Or asked for their pas by euerie squib, That list at will them to reuile or snib: And yet (God wote) small oddes I often see Twixt them that aske, and them that asked bee. Natheles because you shall not vs misdeeme. But that we are as honest as we seeme. Yee shall our pasport at your pleasure see. And then ye will (I hope) well mooued bee. Which when the Priest beheld, he vew'd it nere, As if therein some text he studying were, 380 But little els (God wote) could thereof skill: For read he could not euidence, nor will, Ne tell a written word, ne write a letter, Ne make one title worse, ne make one better: Of such deep learning little had he neede. Ne yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that breede Doubts mongst Divines, and difference of texts, From whence arise diversitie of sects, And hatefull heresies, of God abhor'd: But this good Sir did follow the plaine word, Ne medled with their controuersies vaine. All his care was, his seruice well to saine, And to read Homelies vpon holidayes: When that was done, he might attend his playes; An easie life, and fit high God to please. He having overlookt their pas at ease. (ian at the length them to rebuke againe, That no good trade of life did entertaine, But lost their time in wandring loose abroad, Seeing the world, in which they bootles boad, Had wayes enough for all therein to liue; 401 Such grace did God vnto his creatures give. Said then the Foxe; who hath the world not From the right way full eath may wander wide. We are but Nouices, new come abroad, We have not yet the tract of anie troad, Nor on vs taken anie state of life, But readie are of anie to make preife. Therefore might please you, which the world haue proued, Vs to aduise, which forth but lately moued,

We have not yet the tract of anie troad,
Nor on vs taken anie state of life,
But readie are of anie to make preife.
Therefore might please you, which the world
have proued,
Vs to advise, which forth but lately moved,
Of some good course, that we might vndertake;
Ye shall for ever vs your bondmen make.
The Priest gan wexe halfe proud to be so praide,
And thereby willing to affoord them aide;
It seemes (said he) right well that ye be Clerks,
Both by your wittie words, and by your werks.
Is not that name enough to make a living
To him that hath a whit of Natures giving?

How manie honest men see ye arize
Daylie thereby, and grow to goodly prize? 420
To Deanes, to Archdeacons, to Commissaries,
To Lords, to Principalls, to Prebendaries;
All iolly Prelates, worthie rule to beare,
Who euer them enuie: yet spite bites neare.
Why should ye doubt then, but that ye likewise
Might vnto some of those in time arise?
In the meane time to liue in good estate,
Louing that love, and hating those that hate;
Being some honest Curate, or some Vicker
Content with little in condition sicker.
430
Ah but (said th'Ape) the charge is wondrous
great,

To feed mens soules, and hath an heavie threat. To feede mens soules (quoth he) is not in man: For they must feed themselves, doo what

we can.

We are but charg'd to lay the meate before: Eate they that list, we need to doo no more. But God it is that feedes them with his grace, The bread of life powr'd downe from heauenly place.

438
Therefore said he, that with the budding rod Did rule the Iewes, All shalbe taught of God. That same hath Iesus Christ now to him raught, By whom the flock is rightly fed, and taught

We but his shepheard, and the Priest is hee;
We but his shepheard swaines ordain'd to bee.
Therefore herewith doo not your selfe dismay;
Ne is the paines so great, but beare ye may;
For not so great as it was wont of yore,
It's now a dayes, ne halfe so streight and sore:
They whilome vsed duly euerie day
449
Their seruice and their holie things to say,
At morne and euen, besides their Anthemes

sweete,

Their penie Masses, and their Complynes meete, Their Diriges, their Trentals, and their shrifts, Their memories, their singings, and their gifts. Now all those needlesse works are laid away: Now once a weeke vpon the Sabbath day, It is enough to doo our small denotion, And then to follow any merrie motion. Ne are we tyde to fast, but when we list, Ne to weare garments base of wollen twist, But with the finest silkes vs to aray, That before God we may appeare more gay, Resembling Aarons glorie in his place: For farre vnfit it is, that person bace Should with vile cloaths approach Gods maiestie, Whom no vncleannes may approachen nie: Or that all men, which anie master serue, Good garments for their seruice should deserue; But he that serues the Lord of hoasts most high, And that in highest place, t'approach him nigh, And all the peoples prayers to present Before his throne, as on ambassage sent Both too and fro, should not deserue to weare A garment better, than of wooll or heare. Beside we may have lying by our sides Our louely Lasses, or bright shining Brides: We be not tyde to wilfull chastitie, But have the Gospell of free libertie. By that he ended had his ghostly sermon, The Foxe was well induc'd to be a Parson: 480 And of the Priest eftsoones gan to enquire, How to a Benefice he might aspire. Marie there (said the Priest) is arte indeed. Much good deep learning one thereout may reed, For that the ground worke is, and end of all, How to obtaine a Beneficiall. First therefore, when ye have in handsome wise Your selfe attyred, as you can deuise, Then to some Noble man your selfe applye, Or other great one in the worldes eye, That hath a zealous disposition To God, and so to his religion: There must thou fashion eke a godly zeale, Such as no carpers may contravre reueale: For each thing fained, ought more warie bee. There thou must walke in sober grauitee, And seeme as Saintlike as Saint Radegund: Fast much, pray oft, looke lowly on the ground, And vnto euerie one doo curtesie meeke: These lookes (nought saying) doo a benefice And be thou sure one not to lacke or long.

Seeke, Soo And be thou sure one not to lacke or long. But if thee list vnto the Court to throng, And there to hunt after the hoped pray, Then must thou thee dispose another way: For there thou needs must learne, to laugh, to

lie. To face, to forge, to scoffe, to companie, To crouche, to please, to be a beetle stock Of thy great Masters will, to scorne, or mock: So maist thou chaunce mock out a Benefice, Vnlesse thou canst one conjure by deuice. Or cast a figure for a Bishoprick: And if one could, it were but a schoole-trick. These be the waves, by which without reward Liuings in Court be gotten, though full hard. For nothing there is done without a fee: The Courtier needes must recompenced bee With a Beneuolence, or haue in gage The Primitias of your Parsonage: Scarse can a Bishoprick forpas them by, But that it must be gelt in privitie. Doo not thou therefore seeke a liuing there, But of more private persons seeke elswhere, Whereas thou maist compound a better penie, Ne let thy learning question'd be of anie.

For some good Gentleman that hath the right Vnto his Church for to present a wight, Will cope with thee in reasonable wise; That if the liuing yerely doo arise
To fortie pound, that then his yongest sonne Shall twentie haue, and twentie thou hast wonne:
Thou hast it wonne, for it is of franke gift, And he will care for all the rest to shift; Both that the Bishop may admit of thee, And that therein thou maist maintained bee. This is the way for one that is vnlern'd Liuing to get, and not to be discern'd. But they that are great Clerkes, haue nearer wayes,

For learning sake to liuing them to raise: Yet manie eke of them (God wote) are driuen, T'accept a Benefice in peeces riuen. How saist thou (friend) haue I not well discourst

Vpon this Common place (though plaine, not wourst)?

Better a short tale, than a bad long shriuing. Needes anie more to learne to get a liuing? Now sure and by my hallidome (quoth he) Ye a great master are in your degree: Great thankes I yeeld you for your discipline, And doo not doubt, but duly to encline My wits theretoo, as ye shall shortly heare. The Priest him wisht good speed, and well to fare.

So parted they, as eithers way them led. But th'Ape and Foxe ere long so well them sped, Through the Priests holesome counsell lately tought,

And through their owne faire handling wisely wroght,

That they a Benefice twixt them obtained; And craftie Reynold was a Priest ordained; And th'Ape his Parish Clarke procur'd to bee. Then made they reuell route and goodly glee. But ere long time had passed, they so ill Did order their affaires, that th'euill will Of all their Parishners they had constraind; Who to the Ordinarie of them complain'd, How fowlie they their offices abusd', And them of crimes and heresies accusd'; That Pursicants he often for them sent: But they neglected his commaundement. So long persisted obstinate and bolde, Till at the length he published to holde A Visitation, and them cyted thether: Then was high time their wits about to geather; What did they then, but made a composition With their next neighbor Priest for light condition.

To whom their liuing they resigned quight For a few pence, and ran away by night. So passing through the Countrey in disguize, They fled farre off, where none might them surprize.

And after that long straied here and there, Through euerie field and forrest farre and nere; Yet neuer found occasion for their tourne, But almost steru'd, did much lament and

At last they chaunst to meete vpon the way The Mule, all deckt in goodly rich aray, With bells and bosses, that full lowdly rung, And costly trappings, that to ground downe

Lowly they him saluted in meeke wise, But he through pride and fatnes gan despise Their meanesse; scarce vouchsafte them to requite.

Whereat the Foxe deep groning in his sprite, Said, Ah sir Mule, now blessed be the day, That I see you so goodly and so gay 590 In your attyres, and eke your silken hyde Fil'd with round flesh, that euerie bone doth hide.

Seemes that in fruitfull pastures ye doo liue, Or fortune doth you secret fauour giue. Foolish Foxe (said the Mule) thy wretched need Praiseth the thing that doth thy sorrow breed. For well I weene, thou canst not but enuie My wealth, compar'd to thine owne miscrie, That art so leane and meagre waxen late, That scarse thy legs vphold thy feeble gate. Ay me (said then the Foxe) whom cuill hap Vnworthy in such wretchednes doth wrap, And makes the scorne of other beasts to bee: But read (faire Sir, of grace) from whence come

Or what of tidings you abroad doo heare? Newes may perhaps some good vnweeting beare. From royall Court I lately came (said he) Where all the brauerie that eye may see, And all the happinesse that heart desire, Is to be found; he nothing can admire, That hath not seene that heavens portracture: But tidings there is none I you assure, Saue that which common is, and knowne to all, That Courtiers as the tide doo rise and fall. But tell vs (said the Ape) we doo you pray, Who now in Court doth beare the greatest sway. That if such fortune doo to vs befall, We may seeke fauour of the best of all. Marie (said he) the highest now in grace, 619 Be the wilde beasts, that swiftest are in chace; For in their speedie course and nimble flight The Lyon now doth take the most delight:

But chieflie, ioves on foote them to beholde. Enchaste with chaine and circulet of golde: So wilde a beast so tame ytaught to bee, And buxome to his bands, is joy to see. So well his golden Circlet him beseemeth: But his late chayne his Liege vnmeete esteemeth: For so braue beasts she loueth best to see. In the wilde forrest raunging fresh and free. Therefore if fortune thee in Court to live, 631 In case thou euer there wilt hope to thriue. To some of these thou must thy selfe apply: Els as a thistle-downe in th'ayre doth flie. So vainly shalt thou too and fro be tost. And loose thy labour and thy fruitles cost. And yet full few, which follow them I see. For vertues bare regard advanced bee. But either for some gainfull benefit. Or that they may for their owne turnes be fit. Nath'les perhaps ye things may handle soe, That ye may better thrine than thousands moe. But (said the Ape) how shall we first come in, That after we may fauour seeke to win? How els (said he) but with a good bold face. And with big words, and with a stately pace, That men may thinke of you in generall, That to be in you, which is not at all: For not by that which is, the world now deemeth, (As it was wont) but by that same that seemeth. Ne do I doubt, but that ye well can fashion Your selves theretoo, according to occasion: So fare ye well, good Courtiers may ye bee; So proudlie neighing from them parted hee. Then gan this craftie couple to deuize. How for the Court themselves they might aguize:

For thither they themselves meant to addresse, In hope to finde there happier successe: So well they shifted, that the Ape anon Himselfe had cloathed like a Gentleman, 660 And the slie Foxe, as like to be his groome. That to the Court in seemly sort they come. Where the fond Ape himselfe vprearing hy Voon his tiptoes, stalketh stately by, As if he were some great Magnifico, And boldlie doth amongst the boldest go. And his man Reynold with fine counterfesaunce Supports his credite and his countenaunce. Then gan the Courtiers gaze on euerie side, And stare on him, with big lookes basen wide, Wondring what mister wight he was, and whence:

For he was clad in strange accoustrements, Fashion'd with queint deuises neuer seene In Court before, yet there all fashions beene Yet he them in newfanglenesse did pas: But his behauiour altogether was

Alla Turchesca, much the more admyr'd. And his lookes loftie, as if he aspyr'd To dignitie, and sdeign'd the low degree: That all which did such strangenesse in him see, By secrete meanes gan of his state enquire. And privily his servant thereto hire: Who throughly arm'd against such couerture. Reported vnto all, that he was sure A noble Gentleman of high regard, Which through the world had with long trauel far'd. And seene the manners of all beasts on ground; Now here arriu'd, to see if like he found. 688 Thus did the Ape at first him credit gaine. Which afterwards he wisely did maintaine With gallant showe, and daylie more augment Through his fine feates and Courtly complement; For he could play, and daunce, and vaute, and spring. And all that els pertaines to reueling, Onely through kindly aptnes of his joynts. Besides he could doo manie other poynts, The which in Court him served to good stead: For he mongst Ladies could their fortunes read Out of their hands, and merie leasings tell, And juggle finely, that became him well: 700 But he so light was at legier demaine, That what he toucht, came not to light againe; Yet would he laugh it out, and proudly looke, So would he scoffe them out with mockerie. For he therein had great felicitie:

And tell them, that they greatly him mistooke. And with sharp quips joy'd others to deface, Thinking that their disgracing did him grace: So whilst that other like vaine wits he pleased, And made to laugh, his heart was greatly eased. But the right gentle minde would bite his lip, To heare the lauell so good men to nip: For though the vulgar yeeld an open eare, And common Courtiers loue to gybe and fleare At euerie thing, which they heare spoken ill, And the best speaches with ill meaning spill; Yet the braue Courtier, in whose beauteous thought

Regard of honour harbours more than ought, Doth loath such base condition, to backbite Anies good name for enuie or despite: He stands on tearmes of honourable minde, Ne will be carried with the common winde Of Courts inconstant mutabilitie. Ne after euerie tattling fable flie; But heares, and sees the follies of the rest, And thereof gathers for himselfe the best: He will not creepe, nor crouche with fained

And vnto all doth yeeld due curtesie; But not with kissed hand belowe the knee. As that same Apish crue is wont to doo: For he disdaines himselfe t'embase theretoo. He hates fowle leasings, and vile flatterie. Two filthie blots in noble Gentrie: And lothefull idlenes he doth detest, The canker worme of euerie gentle brest: The which to banish with faire exercise Of knightly feates, he daylie doth deuise: Now menaging the mouthes of stubborne steedes. Now practising the proofe of warlike deedes, Now his bright armes assaying, now his speare, Now the nigh aymed ring away to beare: At other times he casts to sew the chace Of swift wilde beasts, or runne on foote a race. T'enlarge his breath (large breath in armes most needfull) Or els by wrestling to wex strong and heedfull. Or his stiffe armes to stretch with Eughen bowe, And manly legs, still passing too and fro. Without a gowned beast him fast beside: A vaine ensample of the *Persian* pride. Who after he had wonne th' Assyrian foe. Did euer after scorne on foote to goe. Thus when this Courtly Gentleman with toyle Himselfe hath wearied, he doth recoyle Vnto his rest, and there with sweete delight Of Musicks skill reviues his toyled spright, Or els with Loues, and Ladies gentle sports, The ioy of youth, himselfe he recomforts: Or lastly, when the bodie list to pause, His minde vnto the Muses he withdrawes: Sweete Ladie Muses, Ladies of delight, Delights of life, and ornaments of light: With whom he close confers with wise discourse, Of Natures workes, of heavens continual course, Of forreine lands, of people different, Of kingdomes change, of divers government, Of dreadfull battailes of renowmed Knights: With which he kindleth his ambitious sprights To like desire and praise of noble fame, The onely vpshot whereto he doth ayme: For all his minde on honour fixed is. 77I To which he leuels all his purposis. And in his Princes seruice spends his dayes, Not so much for to gaine, or for to raise Himselfe to high degree, as for his grace. And in his liking to winne worthie place; Through due deserts and comely carriage, In whatso please employ his personage, That may be matter meete to gaine him praise; For he is fit to vse in all assayes, Whether for Armes and warlike amenaunce, But walkes vpright with comely stedfast pace, Or else for wise and civill governaunce.

For he is practiz'd well in policie. And thereto doth his Courting most applie: To learne the enterdeale of Princes strange, To marke th'intent of Counsells, and the change Of states, and eke of private men somewhile, Supplanted by fine falshood and faire guile: Of all the which he gathereth, what is fit T'enrich the storehouse of his powerfull wit, Which through wise speaches, and graue con-

ference He daylie eekes, and brings to excellence. Such is the rightfull Courtier in his kinde: But vnto such the Ape lent not his minde; Such were for him no fit companions, Such would descrie his lewd conditions: But the yong lustie gallants he did chose To follow, meete to whom he might disclose His witlesse pleasance, and ill pleasing vaine. A thousand wayes he them could entertaine, With all the thriftles games, that may be found With mumming and with masking all around, With dice, with cards, with balliards farre vnfit, With shuttelcocks, misseeming manlie wit, With courtizans, and costly riotize. Whereof still somewhat to his share did rize: Ne, them to pleasure, would be sometimes scorne A Pandares coate (so basely was he borne); Thereto he could fine louing verses frame, And play the Poet oft. But ah, for shame et not sweete Poets praise, whose onely pride is vertue to aduaunce, and vice deride, Be with the worke of losels wit defamed, Ne let such verses Poetrie be named: Yet he the name on him would rashly take. Mangre the sacred Muses, and it make A seruant to the vile affection Of such, as he depended most vpon, And with the sugrie sweete thereof allure thast Ladies eares to fantasies impure. 820 To such delights the noble wits he led Which him relieu'd, and their vaine humours

With fruitles follies, and visound delights. But if perhaps into their noble sprights Desire of honor, or braue thought of armes Did euer creepe, then with his wicked charmes And strong conceipts he would it drive away, Ne suffer it to house there halfe a day. And whenso loue of letters did inspire Their gentle wits, and kindly wise desire, 830 That chieflie doth each noble minde adorne, Then he would scoffe at learning, and eke scorne The Sectaries thereof, as people base And simple men, which neuer came in place Of worlds affaires, but in darke corners mewd, Muttred of matters, as their bookes them shewd, | That had not power to doo him good or ill

Ne other knowledge ever did attaine. But with their gownes their grauitie maintaine. From them he would his impudent lewde speach Against Gods holie Ministers oft reach, And mocke Divines and their profession: What else then did he by progression. But mocke high God himselfe, whom they pro-

But what car'd he for God, or godlinesse? All his care was himselfe how to aduaunce, And to vohold his courtly countenaunce By all the cunning meanes he could deuise; Were it by honest wayes, or otherwise, He made small choyce: yet sure his honestie Got him small gaines, but shameles flatteric, And filthie brocage, and vnseemly shifts, 851 And borowe base, and some good Ladies gifts: But the best helpe, which chiefly him sustain'd, Washisman Raynoldspurchase which he gain'd. For he was school'd by kinde in all the skill Of close conueyance, and each practise ill Of coosinage and cleanly knaueric, Which oft maintain'd his masters braueric. Besides he vide another slipprie slight. 860 In taking on himselfe in common sight, False personages, fit for euerie sted, With which he thousands cleanly coosined: Now like a Merchant, Merchants to deceaue, With whom his credite he did often leaue In gage, for his gay Masters hopelesse dett: Now like a Lawyer, when he land would lett, Or sell fee-simples in his Masters name, Which he had neuer, nor ought like the same: Then would he be a Broker, and draw in 860 Both wares and money, by exchange to win: Then would be seeme a Farmer, that would sell Bargaines of woods, which he did lately fell, Or corne, or cattle, or such other ware, Thereby to coosin men not well aware; Of all the which there came a secret fee To th'Ape, that he his countenaunce might bec. Pesides all this, he vsd' oft to beguile Poore suters, that in Court did haunt some while:

For he would learne their busines secretly, And then informe his Master hastely, That he by meanes might cast them to preuent. And beg the sute, the which the other ment. Or otherwise false Reynold would abuse The simple Suter, and wish him to chuse Ilis Master, being one of great regard In Court, to compas anie sute not hard, In case his paines were recompenst with reason: So would he worke the silly man by treason To buy his Masters friuolous good will,

So pitifull a thing is Saters state. Most miserable man, whom wicked fate Hath brought to Court, to sue for had vwist. That few haue found, and manie one hath mist; Full little knowest thou that hast not tride. What hell it is, in suing long to bide: To loose good dayes, that might be better spent; To wast long nights in pensive discontent: To speed to day, to be put back to morrow; To feed on hope, to pine with feare and sorrow: To have thy Princes grace, yet want her Peeres; To have thy asking, yet waite manie yeeres; To fret thy soule with crosses and with cares; To eate thy heart through comfort lesse dispaires: To fawne, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to ronne.

To spend, to giue, to want, to be vndonne. Vnhappie wight, borne to desastrous end, That doth his life in so long tendance spend. Who euer leaues sweete home, where meane estate

In safe assurance, without strife or hate, 910 Findes all things needfull for contentment meeke:

And will to Court for shadowes vaine to seeke. Or hope to gaine, himselfe will a daw trie: That curse God send vnto mine enemie. For none but such as this bold Ape vnblest, Can euer thriue in that valuckie quest; Or such as hath a Reynold to his man. That by his shifts his Master furnish can. But yet this Foxe could not so closely hide His craftie feates, but that they were descride At length, by such as sate in justice seate, 921 Who for the same him fowlie did entreate; And having worthily him punished, Out of the Court for euer banished. And now the Ape wanting his huckster man, That wont prouide his necessaries, gan To growe into great lacke, ne could vpholde His countenaunce in those his garments olde: Ne new ones could he easily prouide. Though all men him vncased gan deride, 930 Like as a Puppit placed in a play, Whose part once past all men bid take away: So that he driven was to great distresse, And shortly brought to hopelesse wretchednesse. Then closely as he might, he cast to leave The Court, not asking any passe or leaue; But ran away in his rent rags by night, Ne euer stayd in place, ne spake to wight, Till that the Foxe his copesmate he had found. To whome complayning his vnhappy stound, At last againe with him in trauell loynd, 941 And with him far'd some better chaunce to fynde.

So in the world long time they wandered, And mickle want and hardnesse suffered; That them repented much so foolishly To come so farre to seeke for misery, And leaue the sweetnes of contented home, Though eating hipps, and drinking watry fome. Thus as they them complayned too and fro, Whilst through the forest rechlesse they did goe, Lo where they spide, how in a gloomy glade. The Lyon sleeping lay in secret shade, 952 His Crowne and Scepter lying him beside, And hauing doft for heate his dreadfull hide: Which when they sawe, the Ape was sore afrayde,

And would have fled with terror all dismayde. But him the Foxe with hardy words did stay, And bad him put all cowardize away:
For now was time (if euer they would hope)
To ayme their counsels to the fairest scope,
And them for euer highly to advaunce, 961
In case the good which their owne happee channee

Them freely offred, they would wisely take. Scarse could the Ape yet speake, so did he quake, Yet as he could, he askt how good might growe. Where nought but dread and death do seeme in show.

Now (sayd he) whiles the Lyon sleepeth sound May we his Crowne and Mace take from the ground,

And eke his skinne the terror of the wood, Wherewith we may our selues (if we thinke good) 970

Make Kings of Beasts, and Lords of forests all. Subject vnto that powre imperiall. Ah but (sayd the Ape) who is so bold a wretch, That dare his hardy hand to those outstretch: When as he knowes his meede, if he be spide. To be a thousand deathes, and shame beside ? Fond Ape (sayd then the Foxe) into whose brest Neuer crept thought of honor, nor braue gest. Who will not venture life a King to be, And rather rule and raigne in soueraign see, Than dwell in dust inglorious and bace, Where none shall name the number of his place? One ioyous houre in blisfull happines, I chose before a life of wretchednes. Be therefore counselled herein by me. And shake off this vile harted cowardree. If he awake, yet is not death the next, For we may coulor it with some pretext Of this, or that, that may excuse the cryme: Else we may flye; thou to a tree mayst clyme, And I creepe vnder ground; both from his reach:

Therefore be rul'd to doo as I doo teach.

The Ape, that earst did nought but chill and quake,

Now gan some courage vnto him to take,
And was content to attempt that enterprise,
Tickled with glorie and rash couetise.
But first gan question, whether should assay
Those royall ornaments to steale away?
Marie that shall your selfe (quoth he theretoo)
For ye be fine and nimble it to doo; 1000
Of all the beasts which in the forrests bee,
Is not a fitter for this turne than yee:
Therefore, mine owne deare brother take good

nart,
And euer thinke a Kingdome is your part.
Loath was the Ape, though praised, to aduenter,
Yet faintly gan into his worke to enter,
Afraid of euerie leafe, that stir'd him by,
And euerie stick, that vnderneath did ly;
Vpon his tiptoes nicely he vp went,
For making noyse, and still his eare he lent
To euerie sound, that vnder heauen blew,
Now went, now stept, now crept, now backward drew.

That it good sport had been him to have eyde: Yet at the last (so well he him applyde,) Through his fine handling, and cleanly play, He all those royall signes had stolne away And with the Foxes helpe them borne aside, Into a secret corner vnespide. Whither whenas they came, they fell at words, Whether of them should be the Lord of Lords: For th'Ape was stryfull, and ambicious; And the Foxe guilefull, and most couetous, That neither pleased was, to have the rayne Twixt them divided into even twaine, But either (algates) would be Lords alone: For Loue and Lordship bide no paragone. I am most worthie (said the Ape) sith I For it did put my life in icopardie: 1028 Thereto I am in person, and in stature Most like a man, the Lord of eueric creature, So that it seemeth I was made to raigne, And borne to be a Kingly soueraigne. Nay (said the Foxe) Sir Ape you are astray: For though to steale the Diademe away Were the worke of your nimble hand, yet I Did first deuise the plot by pollicie; So that it wholly springeth from my wit: For which also I claime my selfe more fit Than you, to rule: for gouernment of state Will without wisedome soone be ruinate. And where ye claime your selfe for outward

shape 1041 Most like a man, Man is not like an Ape In his chiefe parts, that is, in wit and spirite: But I therein most like to him doo merite

For my slie wyles and subtill craftinesse,
The title of the Kingdome to possesse.
Nath'les (my brother) since we passed are
Vnto this point, we will appease our iarre,
And I with reason meete will rest content,
That ye shall haue both crowne and gouernment,
To50
Vpon condition, that ye ruled bee
In all affaires, and counselled by mee;
And that ye let none other euer drawe
Your minde from me, but keepe this as a lawe:
And herevpon an oath vnto me plight.
The Ape was glad to end the strife so light,
And thereto swore: for who would not oft
sweare,

And oft vnsweare, a Diademe to beare?
Then freely vp those royall spoyles he tooke,
Yet at the Lyons skin he inly quooke; 1060
But it dissembled, and vpon his head
The Crowne, and on his backe the skin he did,
And the false Foxe him helped to array.
Then when he was all dight he tooke his way
Into the forest, that he might be seene
Of the wilde beasts in his new glory sheene.
There the two first, whome he encountred, were
The Sheepe and th' Asse, who striken both with
feare

At sight of him, gan fast away to flye, But vnto them the Foxe alowd did cry. 1070 And in the Kings name bad them both to stay, Vpon the payne that thereof follow may. Hardly naythles were they restrayned so, Till that the Foxe forth toward them did goe, And there disswaded them from needlesse feare, For that the King did favour to them beare: And therefore dreadles bad them come to Corte: For no wild beasts should do them any torte There or abroad, ne would his maiestye 1079 Vse them but well, with gracious clemencye, As whome he knew to him both fast and true; So he perswaded them, with homage due Themselues to humble to the Ape prostrate, Who gently to them bowing in his gate, Receyued them with chearefull entertayne. Thenceforth proceeding with his princely trayne, He shortly met the Tygre, and the Bore, Which with the simple Camell raged sore In bitter words, seeking to take occasion, Vpon his fleshly corpse to make invasion: But soone as they this mock-King did espy, Their troublous strife they stinted by and by, Thinking indeed that it the Lyon was: He then to proue, whether his powre would pas As current, sent the Foxe to them streight way, Commaunding them their cause of strife bewray;

And if that wrong on eyther side there were, That he should warne the wronger to appeare The morrow next at Court, it to defend; In the meane time vpon the King t'attend. The subtile Foxe so well his message sayd, That the proud beasts him readily obayd: Whereby the Ape in wondrous stomack woxe, Strongly encorag'd by the crafty Foxe; That King indeed himselfe he shortly thought, And all the Beasts him feared as they ought: And followed vnto his palaice hye, Where taking Conge, each one by and by Departed to his home in dreadfull awe, 1100 Full of the feared sight, which late they sawe. The Ape thus seized of the Regall throne, Eftsones by counsell of the Foxe alone, Gan to prouide for all things in assurance, That so his rule might lenger have endurance. First to his Gate he pointed a strong gard, That none might enter but with issue hard: Then for the safegard of his personage, He did appoint a warlike equipage Of forreine beasts, not in the forest bred, But part by land, and part by water fed; For tyrannie is with strange ayde supported. Then vnto him all monstrous beasts resorted Bred of two kindes, as Griffons, Minotaures, Crocodiles, Dragons, Beauers, and Centaures: With those himselfe he strengthned mightelie, That feare he neede no force of enemie. Then gan he rule and tyrannize at will, Like as the Foxe did guide his graceles skill, And all wylde beasts made vassals of his pleasures.

And with their spoyles enlarg'd his private treasures.

No care of iustice, nor no rule of reason, No temperance, nor no regard of season Did thenceforth euer enter in his minde. But crueltie, the signe of currish kinde, And sdeignfull pride, and wilfull arrogaunce; Such followes those whom fortune doth adnaunce.

But the false Foxe most kindly plaid his part: For whatsoeuer mother wit, or arte Could worke, he put in proofe: no practise slie, No counterpoint of cunning policie, No reach, no breach, that might him profit

But he the same did to his purpose wring. Nought suffered he the Ape to give or graunt, But through his hand must passe the Figurt. All offices, all leases by him lept, And of them all whatso he likte, he kept. lustice he solde iniustice for to buy, And for to purchase for his progeny.

Ill might it prosper, that ill gotten was, But so he got it, little did he pas. 1150 He fed his cubs with fat of all the soyle. And with the sweete of others sweating toyle. He crammed them with crumbs of Benefices. And fild their mouthes with meeds of malefices. He cloathed them with all colours saue white, And loded them with lordships and with might. So much as they were able well to beare, That with the weight their backs nigh broken

He chaffred Chavres in which Churchmen were

And breach of lawes to privile ferme did let; No statute so established might bee. Nor ordinaunce so needfull, but that hee Would violate, though not with violence, Yet vnder colour of the confidence The which the Ape repos'd in him alone. And reckned him the kingdomes corner stone, And euer when he ought would bring to pas, His long experience the platforme was: And when he ought not pleasing would put by, The cloke was care of thrift, and husbandry, For to encrease the common treasures store; But his owne treasure he encreased more And lifted up his loftic towres thereby. That they began to threat the neighbour sky; The whiles the Princes pallaces fell fast To ruine: (for what thing can euer last?) And whilest the other Peeres for pouertie Were forst their auncient houses to let lie. And their olde Castles to the ground to fall. Which their forefathers famous ouer all 1180 Had founded for the Kingdomes ornament, And for their memories long moniment. But he no count made of Nobilitie, Nor the wilde beasts whom armes did glorifie, The Realmes chiefe strength and girlond of the

All these through fained crimes he thrust adowne, Or made them dwell in darknes of disgrace: For none, but whom he list might come in place. Of men of armes he had but small regard, But kept them lowe, and streigned verie hard. For men of learning little he esteemed; 1191 His wisedome he aboue their learning deemed. As for the rascall Commons least he cared; For not so common was his bountie shared; Let God (said he) if please, care for the manic, I for my selfe must care before els anie: So did he good to none, to manie ill, So did he all the kingdome rob and pill, Yet none durst speake, ne none durst of him plaine;

So great he was in grace, and rich through gaine.

Ne would he anie let to haue accesse Vnto the Prince, but by his owne addresse: For all that els did come, were sure to faile. Ver would be further none but for auaile. For on a time the Sheepe, to whom of vore The Foxe had promised of friendship store. What time the Ape the kingdome first did gaine, Came to the Court, her case there to complaine. How that the Wolfe her mortall enemie Had sithence slaine her Lambe most cruellie; And therefore crau'd to come vnto the King. To let him knowe the order of the thing. Soft Gooddie Sheepe (then said the Foxe) not soe: Vnto the King so rash ye may not goe, He is with greater matter busied. 1215 Than a Lambe, or the Lambes owne mothers hed. Ne certes may I take it well in part, That ye my cousin Wolfe so fowly thwart. And seeke with slaunder his good name to blot: For there was cause, els doo it he would not. Therefore surcease good Dame, and hence depart. So went the Sheepe away with heavie hart. So manie moe, so euerie one was vsed. That to give largely to the boxe refused. Now when high Ioue, in whose almightie hand The care of Kings, and power of Empires stand, Sitting one day within his turret hye, From whence he vewes with his blacklidded eve. Whatso the heaven in his wide vawte containes, And all that in the deepest earth remaines, The troubled kingdome of wilde beasts behelde, Whom not their kindly Souereigne did welde, But an vsurping Ape with guile suborn'd, Had all subuerst, he sdeignfully it scorn'd In his great heart, and hardly did refraine, But that with thunder bolts he had him slaine. And driven downe to hell, his dewest meed: But him auizing, he that dreadfull deed Forbore, and rather chose with scornfull shame Him to auenge, and blot his brutish name Vnto the world, that neuer after anie 1241 Should of his race be voyd of infamie: And his false counsellor, the cause of all, To damne to death, or dole perpetuall, From whence he neuer should be quit, nor stal'd. Forthwith he Mercurie vnto him cal'd, And bad him flie with neuer resting speed Vnto the forrest, where wilde beasts doo breed, And there enquiring princily, to learne, What did of late chaunce to the Lyon stearne, That he rul'd not the Empire, as he ought; And whence were all those plaints vnto him brought

Of wrongs and spoyles, by saluage beasts committed:

Which done, he bad the Lyon be remitted

Into his seate, and those same treachours vile Be punished for their presumptuous guile. The Sonne of *Maia* soone as he receiu'd That word, streight with his azure wings he ckau'd

The liquid clowdes, and lucid firmament: Ne staid, till that he came with steep descent Vnto the place, where his prescript did showe. There stouping like an arrowe from a bowe, He soft arrived on the grassie plaine, And fairly paced forth with easie paine, Till that vnto the Pallace nigh he came. Then gan he to himselfe new shape to frame, And that faire face, and that Ambro iall hew, Which wonts to decke the Gods immortall crew. And beautefie the shinie firmament. He doft, wifit for that rude rabblement. So standing by the gates in strange disguize, He gan enquire of some in secret wize, Both of the King, and of his gouernment, And of the Foxe, and his false blandishment: And euermore he heard each one complaine Of foule abuses both in realme and raine. Which yet to proue more true, he meant to see, And an ey-witnes of each thing to bee. Tho on his head his dreadfull hat he dight, Which maketh him invisible in sight, And mocketh th'eyes of all the lookers on, Making them thinke it but a vision. Through power of that, he runnes through enemies swerds:

Through power of that, he passeth through the herds

Of rauenous wilde beasts, and doth beguile Their greedie mouthes of the expected spoyle: Through power of that, his cunning thecueries He wonts to worke, that none the same espics; And through the power of that, he putteth on What shape he list in apparition. That on his head he wore, and in his hand He tooke Caduceus his snakie wand, With which the damned ghosts he gouerneth, And furies rules, and Tartare tempereth. With that he causeth sleep to seize the eyes, And feare the harts of all his enemyes; And when him list, an vniuersall night Throughout the world he makes on euerie 1298 wight;

As when his Syre with Alcumena lay. Thus dight, into the Court he tooke his way, Both through the gard, which neuer did descride, And through the watchmen, who him neuer spide: Thenceforth he past into each secrete part, Whereas he saw, that sorely grieu'd his hart, Each place abounding with fowle iniuries, And fild with treasure rackt with robberies:

Each place defilde with blood of guiltles beasts, Which had been slaine, to serue the Apes beheasts:

Gluttonie, malice, pride, and couetize,
And lawlesnes raigning with riotize;
1310
Besides the infinite extortions.

Done through the Foxes great oppressions,
That the complaints thereof could not be tolde.
Which when he did with lothfull eyes beholde,
He would no more endure, but came his way,
And cast to seeke the Lion, where he may,
That he might worke the auengement for this
shame

On those two caytiues, which had bred him blame.

And seeking all the forrest busily, 1319 At last he found, where sleeping he did ly: The wicked weed, which there the Foxe did lay, From vnderneath his head he tooke away, And then him waking, forced up to rize. The Lion looking vp gan him auize, As one late in a traunce, what had of long Become of him: for fantasie is strong. Arise (said Mercurie) thou sluggish beast, That here liest senseles, like the corpse deceast, The whilste thy kingdome from thy head is rent, And thy throne royall with dishonour blent: Arise, and doo thy selfe redeeme from shame, And be aueng'd on those that breed thy blame. Thereat enraged, soone he gan vpstart, Grinding his teeth, and grating his great hart, And rouzing vp himselfe, for his rough hide He gan to reach; but no where it espide. Therewith he gan full terribly to rore, And chafte at that indignitie right sore. But when his Crowne and scepter both he

wanted, Lord how he fum'd, and sweld, and rag'd, and panted; 1340

panted;
And threatned death, and thousand deadly

To them that had purloyn'd his Princely honours.

With that in hast, disroabed as he was, He toward his owne Pallace forth did pas; And all the way he roared as he went, That all the forrest with astonishment Thereof did tremble, and the beasts therein Fled fast away from that so dreadfull din. At last he came vnto his mansion, 1349 Where all the gates he found fast lockt anon, And manie warders round about them stood: With that he roar'd alowd, as he were wood, That all the Pallace quaked at the stound, As if it quite were riuen from the ground, And all within were dead and hartles left; And th'Ape himselfe, as one whose wits were reft.

Fled here and there, and euerie corner sought. To hide himselfe from his owne feared thought. But the false Foxe when he the Lion heard, Fled closely forth, streightway of death afeard, And to the Lion came, full lowly creeping, 1361 With fained face, and watrie eyne halfe weeping, T'excuse his former treason and abusion, And turning all vnto the Apes confusion: Nath'les the royall Beast forbore beleeuing. But bad him stay at ease till further preeuing. Then when he saw no entrance to him graunted. Roaring vet lowder that all harts it daunted. Vpon those gates with force he fiercely flewe, And rending them in pieces, felly slewe 1370 Those warders strange, and all that els he met. But th'Ape still flying, he no where might get: From rowme to rowme, from beame to beame he fled

All breathles, and for feare now almost ded:
Yet him at last the Lyon spide, and caught.
And forth with shame vnto his judgement brought.

Then all the beasts he causd' assembled bee, To heare their doome, and sad ensample see: The Foxe, first Author of that treacherie, He did vncase, and then away let flie. 1380 But th'Apes long taile (which then he had) he quight

Cut off, and both eares pared of their hight; Since which, all Apes but halfe their eares have left

And of their tailes are vtterlie bereft.

So Mother *Hubberd* her discourse did end: Which pardon me, if I amisse haue pend; For weake was my remembrance it to hold, And bad her tongue that it so bluntly tolde.

FINIS.

### Ruines of Rome: by Bellay.

TE heauenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie I Vnder deep ruines, with huge walls opprest, But not your praise, the which shall never die Through your faire verses, ne in ashes rest:

If so be shrilling vovce of wight aliue May reach from hence to depth of darkest hell, Then let those deep Abysses open riue, That ye may vnderstand my shreiking yell.

Thrice having seene under the heavens yeale Your toombs devoted compasse over all. Thrice vnto you with lowd voyce I appeale, And for your antique furie here doo call.

The whiles that I with sacred horror sing Your glorie, fairest of all earthly thing.

Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise, And sharped steeples high shot vp in ayre: Greece will the olde Ephesian buildings blaze; And Nylus nurslings their Pyramides faire;

The same yet vaunting Greece will tell the storie

Of loues great Image in Olympus placed, Mausolus worke will be the Carians glorie, And Crete will boast the Labyrinth, now raced;

The antique Rhodian will likewise set forth The great Colosse, erect to Memorie; And what els in the world is of like worth, Some greater learned wit will magnifie.

But I will sing aboue all moniments Seuen Romane Hils, the worlds 7. wonder-

ments.

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome here

And nought of Rome in Rome perceiu'st at all, These same olde walls, olde arches, which thou seest,

Olde Palaces, is that which Rome men call. Behold what wreake, what ruine, and what

And how that she, which with her mightie powre

Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd herselfe at last, The pray of time, which all things doth denowre. Rome now of Rome is th'onely funerall, And onely Rome of Rome hath victorie; Ne ought saue Tyber hastning to his fall Remaines of all: O worlds inconstancie. That which is firme doth flit and fall away.

And that is flitting, doth abide and stay.

She, whose high top about the starres did sore. One foote on Thetis, th'other on the Morning, One hand on Scythia, th'other on the More. Both heaven and earth in roundnesse compassing.

loue fearing, least if she should greater growe. The old Giants should once againe vprise, Her whelm'd with hills, these 7. hils, which be

Tombes of her greatnes, which did threate the skies:

Vpon her head he heapt Mount Saturnal. Voon her bellie th'antique Palatine. Voon her stomacke laid Mount Quirinal. On her left hand the noysome Esquiline,

And Calian on the right; but both her feete Mount Viminall and Aventine doo meete.

Who lists to see, what ever nature, arte, And heaven could doo, O Rome, thee let him see, In case thy greatnes he can gesse in harte. By that which but the picture is of thee.

Rome is no more: but if the shade of Rome May of the bodie yeeld a seeming sight, It's like a corse drawne forth out of the tombe By Magicke skill out of eternall night:

The corpes of Rome in ashes is entombed, And her great spirite rejoyned to the spirite Of this great masse, is in the same enwombed; But her braue writings, which her famous merite In spight of time, out of the dust doth reare. Doo make her Idole through the world appeare.

Such as the Berecynthian Goddesse bright In her swift charret with high turrets crownde. Proud that so manie Gods she brought to light; Such was this Citie in her good daies found:

This Citie, more than that great Phrygian mother

Renowm'd for fruite of famous progenie. Whose greatnes by the greatnes of none other. But by her selfe her equall match could see: Rome onely might to Rome compared bee.

And onely Rome could make great Rome to tremble:

So did the Gods by heavenly doome decree. That other earthlie power should not resemble Her that did match the whole earths puissaunce.

And did her courage to the heavens advaunce

Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights, Which onely doo the name of Rome retaine, Olde moniments, which of so famous sprights The honour yet in ashes doo maintaine:

Triumphant Arcks, spyres neighbours to the skie,

That you to see doth th'heauen it selfe appall, Alas, by little ve to nothing flie. The peoples fable, and the spoyle of all:

And though your frames do for a time make

Gainst time, yet time in time shall ruinate Your workes and names, and your last reliques

My sad desires, rest therefore moderate: For if that time make ende of things so sure, It als will end the paine, which I endure.

Through armes and vassals Rome the world

subdu'd. That one would weene, that one sole Cities strength

Both land and sea in roundnes had suruew'd. To be the measure of her bredth and length:

This peoples vertue yet so fruitfull was Of vertuous nephewes, that posteritie Striuing in power their grandfathers to passe,

The lowest earth join'd to the heaven hie : To th'end that having all parts in their power, Nought from the Romane Empire might be

quight, And that though time doth Commonwealths

Yet no time should so low embase their hight, That her head earth'din her foundations deep. Should not her name and endles honour keep.

Ye cruell starres, and eke ye Gods vnkinde, Heauen enuious, and bitter stepdame Nature, Be it by fortune, or by course of kinde

That ye doo weld th'affaires of earthlie creature; Why have your hands long sithence traveiled To frame this world, that doth endure so long? Or why were not these Romane palaces Made of some matter no lesse firme and strong? I say not, as the common voyce doth say,

That all things which beneath the Moone haue

Are temporall, and subject to decay: But I say rather, though not all agreeing With some, that weene the contrarie in

thought: That all this whole shall one day come to nought.

As that braue sonne of Aeson, which he charmes Atcheiu'd the golden Fleece in Colchid land,

Out of the earth engendred men of armes Of Dragons teeth, sowne in the sacred sand:

So this braue Towne, that in her youthle An Hydra was of warriours glorious,

Did fill with her renowmed nourslings praise The fire sunnes both one and other hous:

But they at last, there being then not living An Hercules, so ranke seed to represse: Emongst themselves with cruell furie striuing. Mow'd downe themselves with slaughter merci-

lesse: Renewing in themselves that rage vnkinde,

Which whilom did those earthborn brethren blinde.

Mars shaming to have given so great head To his off-spring, that mortall puissaunce Puft vp with pride of Romane hardie head, Seem'd aboue heauens powre it selfe to aduaunce:

Cooling againe his former kindled heate, With which he had those Romane spirits fild. Did blowe new fire, and with enflamed breath, Into the Gothicke colde hot rage instil'd:

Then gan that Nation, th'earths new Giant brood.

To dart abroad the thunder bolts of warre. And beating downe these walls with furious

Into her mothers bosome, all did marre; To th'end that none, all were it *love* his sire Should boast himselfe of the Romane Empire.

Like as whilome the children of the earth Heapt hils on hils, to scale the starrie skie, And fight against the Gods of heavenly berth. Whiles love at them his thunderbolts let flie:

All suddenly with lightning ouerthrowne, The furious squadrons downe to ground did

That th'earth vnder her childrens weight did

And th'heauens in glorie triumpht ouer all: So did that haughtie front which heaped was On these seuen Romane hils, it selfe vpreare Ouer the world, and lift her loftie face Against the heauen, that gan her force to

But now these scorned fields bemone her fall. And Gods secure feare not her force at all.

13

Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring, for the deep wounds of victours raging blade, for ruthlesse spoyle of souldiers blood-desiring, the which so oft thee (*Rome*) their conquest

Ne stroke on stroke of fortune variable, Ne rust of age hating continuance,

Nor wrath of Gods, nor spight of men vnstable, Nor thou opposd' against thineowne puissance;

Nor th'horrible vprore of windes high blow-

mg.

Nor swelling streames of that God snakie-paced, Which hath so often with his overflowing Thee drenched, haue thy pride so much abaced; But that this nothing, which they haue thee

left, 18t Makes the world wonder, what they from thee reft.

T.t

As men in Summer fearles passe the foord, Which is in Winter lord of all the plaine, And with his tumbling streames doth beare abourd

The ploughmans hope, and shepheards labour

And as the coward beasts use to despise The noble Lion after his lines end,

Whetting their teeth, and with vaine foolhardise Daring the foe, that cannot him defend: 190 And as at *Troy* most dastards of the Greekes

And as at 1109 most clastards of the Greekes

Did braue about the corps of Hector colde;

So those which whilome wont with pallid cheekes

The Romane triumphs glorie to behold, Now on these ashie tombes shew boldnesse vaine,

And conquer'd dare the Conquerour disdaine.

15

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoasts, Which ioying in the brightnes of your day, Brought foorth those signes of your presumptuous boasts

Which now their dusty reliques do bewray; Tell me ye spirits (sith the darksome riuer Of Styx, not passable to soules returning, Enclosing you in thrice three wards for euer, Doo not restraine your images still mourning)

Tell me then (for perhaps some one of you Yet here aboue him secretly doth hide) Doo ye not feele your torments to accrewe, When ye sometimes behold the ruin'd pride

Of these old Romane works built with your hands, 209

Now to become nought els, but heaped sands?

16

Like as ye see the wrathfull Sea from farre, In a great mountaine heap't with hideousnoyse, Ettsoones of thousand billowes shouldred narre, Against a Rocke to breake with dreadfull poyse: Like as ye see fell Boreas with sharpe blast, Tossing huge tempests through the troubled

Eftsoones having his wide wings spent in wast, To stop his wearie cariere suddenly:

And as ye see huge flames spred diuerslie, Gathered in one vp to the heauens to spyre, Eftsoones consum'd to fall downe feebily: So whilom did this Monarchie aspyre 22

As waues, as winde, as fire spred ouer all, Till it by fatall doome adowne did fall.

1'

So long as *Ioues* great Bird did make his flight, Bearing the fire with which heauen doth vs fray, Heauen had not feare of that presumptuous might,

With which the Giaunts did the Gods assay.

But all so soone, as scortching Sunne had brent 229
His wings, which wont the earth to ouerspredd,
The earth out of her massie wombe forth sent

The earth out of her massie wombe forth sent That antique horror, which made heauen adredd Then was the Germane Rauen in disguise

That Romane Eagle scene to cleaue asunder, And towards heauen freshly to arise

Out of these mountaines, now consum'd to pouder.

In which the foule that serues to beare the

lightning,

Is now no more seen flying, nor alighting.

18

These heapes of stones, these old wals which ye see, 239

Were first enclosures but of saluage soyle; And these braue Pallaces which maystred bee Of time, were shepheards cottages somewhile.

Then tooke the shepheards Kingly ornaments
And the stout hynde arm'd his right hand with
steele:

Estsoones their rule of yearely Presidents Grow great, and sixe months greater a great deele:

Which made perpetuall, rose to so great might, That thence th Imperiall Eagle rooting tooke, Tillth'heauenit selfe opposing gainst her might, Her power to Peters successor betooke; 250

Who shepheardlike, (as fates the same foreseeing)

Doth shew, that all things turne to their first being.

All that is perfect, which th'heauen beautefies;

All that's imperfect, borne belowe the Moone; All that doth feede our spirits and our eies; And all that doth consume our pleasures soone; All the mishap, the which our daies out-

weares,

All the good hap of th'oldest times afore, Rome in the time of her great ancesters, Like a Pandora, locked long in store. 260

But destinie this huge *Chaos* turmoyling, In which all good and cuill was enclosed, Their heauenly vertues from these woes assoyl-

Caried to heauen, from sinfull bondage losed:
But their great sinnes, the causers of their
paine,

Vnder these antique ruines yet remaine.

20

No otherwise than raynic cloud, first fed With earthly vapours gathered in the ayre, Eftsoones in compas arch't, to steepe his hed, Doth plonge himselfe in *Tethys* bosome faire;

And mounting vp againe, from whence he came.

With his great bellie spreds the dimmed world, Till at the last dissoluing his moist frame, In raine, or snowe, or haile he forth is horld;

In raine, or snowe, or halfe he forth is horld;
This Citie, which was first but shepheards
shade.

Vprising by degrees, grewe to such height, That Queene of land and sea her selfe she made. At last not able to beare so great weight,

Her power disperst, through all the world did vade;

To shew that all in th'end to nought shall fade. 280

The same which *Pyrrhus*, and the puissaunce Of *Afrike* could not tame, that same braue Citie, Which with stout courage arm'd against mischaunce.

Sustein'd the shocke of common enmitie;
Long as her ship tost with so manie freakes,
Had all the world in armes against her bent,
Was neuer seene, that anie fortunes wreakes
Could breake her course begun with braue
intent.
288

But when the object of her vertue failed, Her power it selfe against it selfe did arme; As he that hauing long in tempest sailed, Faine would ariue, but cannot for the storme, If too great winde against the port him driue, Doth in the port it selfe his vessell riue. 22

When that braue honour of the Latine name,

Which mear'd her rule with Africa, and Byze, With Thames inhabitants of noble fame,

And they which see the dawning day arize;
Her nourslings did with mutinous vprore

Harten against her selfe, her conquer'd spoile, Which she had wonne from all the world afore, Of all the world was spoyl'd within a while.

So when the compast course of the vniucrse In sixe and thirtie thousand yeares is ronne, The bands of th'elements shall backe reuere To their first discord, and be quite vndonne: The seedes, of which all things at first were

bred, Shall in great *Chaos* wombe againe be hid.

23

O warie wiscdome of the man, that would That Carthage towres from spoile should be forborne, 310

To th'end that his victorious people should With cancring laisure not be ouerworne;

He well foresaw, how that the Romane courage,

Impatient of pleasures faint desires, Through idlenes would turne to civill rage And be her selfe the matter of her fires.

For in a people given all to ease,
Ambition is engendred easily;
As in a vicious bodie, grose disease
Soone growes through humours superfluitic.
That came to passe, when swolne with

plentics pride, 321 Nor prince, nor peere, nor kin they would abide.

24

If the blinde furie, which warres breedeth oft, Wonts not t'enrage the hearts of equall beasts.

Whether they fare on foote, or flie aloft, Or armed be with clawes, or scalie creasts:

What fell *Erynnis* with hot burning tongs. Did grype your hearts, with noysome rage imbew'd.

That each to other working cruell wrongs, Your blades in your owne bowels you embrew'd? 330

Was this (ye Romanes) your hard destinie? Or some old sinne, whose vnappeased guilt Powr'd vengeance forth on you eternallie? Or brothers blood, the which at first was spilt Vpon your walls, that God might not endure, Vpon the same to set foundation sure?

25

O that I had the *Thracian* Poets harpe, For to awake out of th'infernall shade Those antique *Cæsars*, sleeping long in darke, The which this auncient Citie whilome made:

Or that I had Amphions instrument, 341 To quicken with his vitall notes accord, The stonie ioynts of these old walls now rent, By which th' Ausonian light might be restor'd:

Or that at least I could with pencill fine. Fashion the pourtraicts of these Palacis, By paterne of great Virguls spirit diuine; I would assay with that which in me is,

To builde with leuell of my loftic style, 349 That which no hands can euermore compyle.

26

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure,

Him needeth not to seeke for vsage right Of line, or lead, or rule, or squaire, to measure Her length, her breadth, her deepnes, or her hight:

But him behooues to vew in compasse round All that the Ocean graspes in his long armes; Be it where the yerely starre doth scortch the ground,

Or where colde *Boreas* blowes his bitter stormes.

Rome was th'whole world, and al the world

was Rome, And if things nam'd their names doo equalize, When land and sea ye name, then name ye

And naming Rome ye land and sea comprize:
For th'auncient Plot of Rome displayed plaine.

The map of all the wide world doth containe.

27

Thou that at *Rome* astonisht dost behold The antique pride, which menaced the skie, These haughtie heapes, these palaces of olde, These wals, these arcks, these baths, these temples hie; 368

Iudge by these ample ruines vew, the rest The which iniurious time hath quite outworne, Since of all workmen helde in reckning best, Yet these olde fragments are for paternes borne:

Then also marke, how Rome from day to day, Repayring her decayed fashion,

Renewes herselfe with buildings rich and gay; That one would iudge, that the Romaine Dæmon

Doth yet himselfe with fatall hand enforce, Againe on foote to reare her pouldred corse. SPENSER 25

He that hath seene a great Oke drie and dead, Yet clad with reliques of some Trophees olde, Lifting to heaven her aged hoarie head, 381 Whose foote in ground hath left but feeble holde:

But halfe disbowel'd lies aboue the ground, Shewing her wreathed rootes, and naked armes, And on her trunke all rotten and vnsound

Onely supports herselfe for meate of wormes; And though she owe her fall to the first winde, Yet of the deuout people is ador'd,

And manie yong plants spring out of her rinde; Who such an Oke hath seene let him record 390 That such this Cities honour was of yore, And mongst all Cities florished much more.

29

All that which Aegypt whilome did deuise, All that which Greece their temples to embraue, After th'Ionicke, Atticke, Doricke guise, Or Corinth skil'd in curious workes to graue;

All that Lysippus practike arte could forme, Apelles wit, or Phidias his skill,

Was wont this auncient Citie to adorne,

And the heaven it selfe with her wide wonders fill;

All that which Athens ever brought forth wise,

All that which Afrike euer brought forth strange, All that which Asie euer had of prise,

Was here to see. O meruelous great change:
Rome liuing, was the worlds sole ornament,
And dead, is now the worlds sole moniment.

Like as the seeded field greene grasse first shows.

Then from greene grasse into a stalke doth spring.

And from a stalke into an eare forth-growes,
Which eare the frutefull graine doth shortly

And as in season due the husband mowes
The wauing lockes of those faire yeallow heares,
Which bound in sheaues, and layd in comely
rowes.

Vpon the naked fields in stackes he reares: So grew the Romane Empire by degree, Till that Barbarian hands it quite did spill,

And left of it but these olde markes to see, Of which all passers by doo somewhat pill: As they which gleane, the reliques vse to

gather,
Which th'husbandman behind him chanst to

Which th'husbandman behind him chanst to scater. 420

8

blie.

31

That same is now nought but a champian wide.

Where all this worlds pride once was situate. No blame to thee, whosoeuer dost abide By Nyle, or Gange, or Tygre, or Euphrate, Ne Afrike thereof guiltie is, nor Spaina, Nor the bolde people by the Thamis brincks, Nor the braue warlicke brood of Alemaine, Nor the borne Souldier which Rhine running drinks:

Thou onely cause, O Ciuill furie, art 429
Which sowing in th' Aemathian fields thy spight,
Didst arme thy hand against thy proper hart;
To th'end that when thou wast in greatest hight
To greatnes growne, through long prosperitie,
Thou then adowne might'st fall more horri-

Hope ye my verses that powteritie
Of age ensuing shall you euer read?
Hope ye that euer immortalitie
So meane Harpes worke may chalenge for her
meed?

If vnder heauen anie endurance were, 430. These moniments, which not in paper writ, But in Porphyre and Marble doo appeare, Might well haue hop'd to haue obtained it.

Nath'les my Lute, whom *Phabus* deignd to giue,

Cease not to sound these olde antiquities: For if that time doo let thy glorie liue, Well maist thou boast, how euer base thou bee.

That thou art first, which of thy Nation

Th'olde honour of the people gowned long.

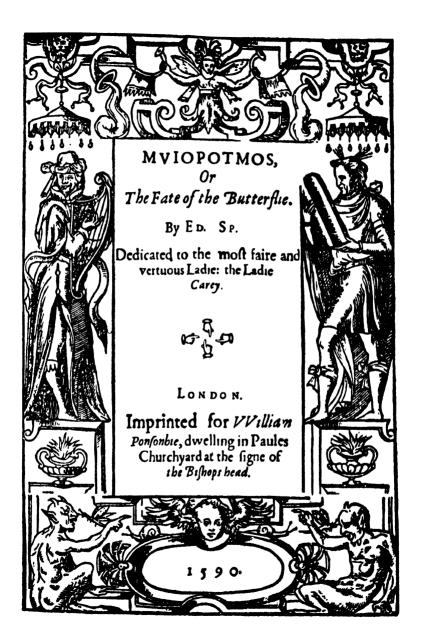
#### L'Envoy.

Bellay, first garland of free Poësie
That France brought forth, though fruitfull of
braue wits, 45°
Well worthie thou of immortalitie,
That long hast traueld by thy learned writs,
Olde Rome out of her ashes to reviue,
And giue a second life to dead decayes:
Needes must he all eternitie surviue,
That can to other giue eternall dayes.
Thy dayes therefore are endles, and thy
prayse
Excelling all, that ever went before;
And after thee, gins Bartas hie to rayse
His heavenly Muse, th'Almightie to adore. 460

Liue happie spirits, th'honour of your name.

And fill the world with neuer dying fame.

FINIS.



## To the right worthy and vertuous Ladie; the La: Carey.

Most brave and bountifull La: for so excellent fauours as I have received at your sweet handes, to offer these fewe leaves as in recompence, should be as to offer flowers to the Gods for their divine benefites. Therefore I have determined to give my selfe wholy to you, as quite abandoned from my selfe, and absolutely vowed to your services: which in all right is ever held for full recompence of debt or damage to have the person yeelded. My person I wot wel how little worth it is. But the faithfull minde and humble zeale which I beare unto your La: may perhaps be more of price, as may please you to account and use the poore service thereof; which taketh glory to advance your excellent partes and noble vertues, and to spend it selfe in honouring

you: not so much for your great bounty to my self, which yet may not be unminded; nor for name or kindreds sake by you vouchsafed, beeng also regardable; as for that honorable name, which yee haue by your braue deserts purchast to your self, and spred in the mouths of al men: with which I haue also presumed to grace my verses, and under your name to commend to the world this smal Poeme, the which beseeching your La: to take in worth, and of all things therein according to your wonted graciousnes to make a milde construction, I humbly pray for your happines.

Your La: euer humbly; E. S.

### Muiopotmos: or The Fate of the Butterflie.

Sing of deadly dolorous debate, Stir'd vp through wrathfull Nemesis despight,

Betwixt two mightie ones of great estate,
Drawne into armes, and proofe of mortall fight,
Through prowd ambition, and hartswelling hate.
Whilest neither could the others greater might
And sdeignfull scorne endure; that from small
iarre

Their wraths at length broke into open warre. The roote whereof and tragicall effect, Vouchsafe, O thou the mournfulst Muse of nyne, That wontst the tragick stage for to direct, 11 In funerall complaints and waylfull tyne, Reueale to me, and all the meanes detect, Through which sad Clarion did at last declyne To lowest wretchednes: And is there then Such rancour in the harts of mightie men? Of all the race of siluer-winged Flies Which doo possesse the Empire of the aire, Betwixt the centred earth, and azure skies, Was none more fauourable, nor more faire, 20 Whilst heaven did favour his felicities, Then Clarion, the eldest sonne and haire Of Muscaroll, and in his fathers sight Of all aliue did seeme the fairest wight. With fruitfull hope his aged breast he fed Of future good, which his yong toward yeares, Full of braue courage and bold hardyhed, Aboue th'ensample of his equal peares,

Did largely promise, and to him forered (Whilst oft his heart did melt in tender teares) That he in time would sure proue such an one, As should be worthie of his fathers throne. The fresh yong flie, in whom the kindly fire Of lustfull youngth began to kindle fast, Did much disdaine to subject his desire To loathsome sloth, or houres in ease to wast, But ioy'd to range abroad in fresh attire; Through the wide compas of the ayrie coast, And with vnwearied wings each part t'inquire Of the wide rule of his renowmed sire. For he so swift and nimble was of flight, That from this lower tract he dar'd to stie Vp to the clowdes, and thence with pineons light.

To mount aloft vnto the Christall skie,
To vew the workmanship of heauens hight:
Whence downe descending he along would fie
Vpon the streaming rivers, sport to finde;
And oft would dare to tempt the troublous
winde.

So on a Summers day, when season milde With gentle calme the world had quieted, 50 And high in heauen Hyperions fierie childe Ascending, did his beames abroad dispred, Whiles all the heauens on lower creatures smilde; Yong Clarion with vauntfull lustie head, After his guize did cast abroad to fare; And theretoo gan his furnitures prepare.

His breastplate first, that was of substance

pure,
Before his noble heart he firmely bound,
That mought his life from yron death assure,
And ward his gentle corpes from cruell wound:
For it by arte was framed, to endure 61
The bit of balefull steele and bitter stownd,
No lesse than that, which Vulcane made to
sheild

Achilles life from fate of Troyan field.

And then about his shoulders broad he threw An hairie hide of some wilde beast, whom hee In saluage forrest by adventure slew, And reft the spoyle his ornament to bee: Which spredding all his backe with dreadfull yew.

Made all that him so horrible did see, Thinke him Alcides with the Lyons skin, When the Næmean Conquest he did win.

Vpon his head his glistering Burganet,
The which was wrought by wonderous deuice,
And curiously engrauen, he did set:
The mettall was of rare and passing price;
Not Bulbo steele, nor brasse from Corinth fet,
Nor costly Oricalche from strange Phænice;
But such as could both Phæbus arrowes ward,
And th'hayling darts of heauen beating hard.

Therein two deadly weapons fixt he bore, 81 Strongly outlaunced towards either side, Like two sharpe speares, his enemies to gore: Like as a warlike Brigandine, applyde To light, layes forth her threatfull pikes afore.

The engines which in them sad death doo hyde:

So did this flie outstretch his fearefull hornes, Yet so as him their terrour more adornes.

Lastly his shinie wings as siluer bright, Painted with thousand colours, passing farre All Painters skill, he did about him dight: 91 Not halfe so manie sundrie colours arre In Iris bowe, ne heauen doth shine so bright, Distinguished with manie a twinckling starre, Nor Iunoes Bird in her ey-spotted traine So manie goodly colours doth containe.

Ne (may it be withouten perill spoken)
The Archer God, the sonne of Cytheree,
That ioyes on wretched louers to be wroken,
And heaped spoyles of bleeding harts to see,
Beares in his wings so manie a changefull token.
Ah my liege Lord, forgiue it vnto mee,
If ought against thine honour I haue tolde;
Yet sure those wings were fairer manifolde.

Full manie a Ladie faire, in Court full oft Beholding them, him secretly enuide, And wisht that two such fannes, so silken soft, And golden faire, her Loue would her prouide; Or that when them the gorgeous Flie had doft,

Some one that would with grace be gratifide, From him would steale them priuily away, And bring to her so precious a pray.

Report is that dame *Venus* on a day, In spring when flowres doo clothe the fruitful ground.

Walking abroad with all her Nymphes to play, Bad her faire damzels flocking her around, To gather flowres, her forhead to array: Emongst the rest a gentle Nymph was found, Hight Astery, excelling all the crewe In curtoous vsage, and vnstained hewe.

Who being nimbler ioynted than the rest, And more industrious, gathered more store Of the fields honour, than the others best; Which they in secret harts enuying sore, Tolde *Venus*, when her as the worthiest She praisd', that *Cupide* (as they heard before) Did lend her secret aide, in gathering Into her lap the children of the spring.

Whereof the Goddesse gathering iealous feare, Not yet vnmindfull, how not long agoe 130 Her sonne to Psyche secrete loue did beare, And long it close conceal'd, till mickle woe Thereof arose, and manie a rufull teare; Reason with sudden rage did ouergoe, And giuing hastie credit to th'accuser, Was led away of them that did abuse her.

Eftsoones that Damzel by her heauenly might, She turn'd into a winged Butterflie, In the wide aire to make her wandring flight; And all those flowres, with which so plenteouslie

Her lap she filled had, that bred her spight, She placed in her wings, for memorie Of her pretended crime, though crime none

Since which that flie them in her wings doth beare.

Thus the fresh Clarion being readie dight, Vnto his iourney did himselfe addresse, And with good speed began to take his flight: Ouer the fields in his franke lustinesse, And all the champion he soared light, And all the countrey wide he did possesse, Feeding vpon their pleasures bounteouslie, That none gainsaid, nor none did him enuie.

The woods, the rivers, and the medowes green. With his aire-cutting wings he measured wide. Ne did he leaue the mountaines bare vnseene. Nor the ranke grassie fennes delights vntride. But none of these, how ever sweete they

Mote please his fancie, nor him cause t'abide: His choicefull sense with euerie change doth

No common things may please a wavering wit.

To the gay gardins his vnstaid desire Him wholly caried, to refresh his sprights: There lauish Nature in her best attire. Powres forth sweete odors, and alluring sights: And Arte with her contending, doth aspire T'excell the naturall, with made delights: And all that faire or pleasant may be found, In riotous excesse doth there abound.

There he arriving, round about doth flie. From bed to bed, from one to other border, And takes suruey with curious busic eye, 171 Of euerie flowre and herbe there set in order: Now this, now that he tasteth tenderly, Yet none of them he rudely doth disorder. Ne with his feete their silken leaves deface : But pastures on the pleasures of each place.

And euermore with most varietie, And change of sweetnesse (for all change is sweete)

He casts his glutton sense to satisfie, 179 Now sucking of the sap of herbe most meete, Or of the deaw, which yet on them does lie, Now in the same bathing his tender feete: And then he pearcheth on some braunch

To weather him, and his moyst wings to dry.

And then againe he turneth to his play, To spoyle the pleasures of that Paradise: The wholsome Saulge, and Lauender still gray, Ranke smelling Rue, and Cummin good for

The Roses raigning in the pride of May, Sharpe Isope, good for greene wounds remedies, Faire Marigoldes, and Bees alluring Thime, Sweete Marioram, and Daysies decking prime.

Coole Violets, and Orpine growing still, Embathed Balme, and chearfull Galingale, Fresh Costmarie, and breathfull Camomill, Dull Poppie, and drink-quickning Setuale. Veyne-healing Veruen, and hed-purging Dill, Sound Sauorie, and Bazill hartie-hale. Fat Colworts, and comforting Perseline. Colde Lettuce, and refreshing Rosmarine. 200 How he might anie in his trap betray.

And whatso else of vertue good or ill Grewe in this Gardin, fetcht from farre away. Of euerie one he takes, and tastes at will, And on their pleasures greedily doth pray. Then when he hath both plaid, and fed his fill.

In the warme Sunne he doth himselfe embay. And there him rests in riotous suffisaunce Of all his gladfulnes, and kingly ioyaunce.

What more felicitie can fall to creature, Than to enjoy delight with libertie. And to be Lord of all the workes of Nature. To raine in th'aire from earth to highest skie. To feed on flowres, and weeds of glorious feature.

To take what ever thing doth please the eie? Who rests not pleased with such happines, Well worthie he to taste of wretchednes.

But what on earth can long abide in state? Or who can him assure of happie day; Sith morning faire may bring fowle euening

And least mishap the most blisse alter may? For thousand perills lie in close awaite About vs daylie, to worke our decay: That none, except a God, or God him guide, May them auoyde, or remedie prouide.

And whatso heavens in their secret doome Ordained haue, how can fraile fleshly wight Forecast, but it must needs to issue come? The sea, the aire, the fire, the day, the night, And th'armies of their creatures all and some Do serue to them, and with importune might Warre against vs the vassals of their will. 231 Who then can saue, what they dispose to spill?

Not thou, O Clarion, though fairest thou Of all thy kinde, vnhappie happie Flie. Whose cruell fate is wouen euen now Of *loues* owne hand, to worke thy miserie: Ne may thee helpe the manie hartie vow. Which thy olde Sire with sacred pietie Hath powred forth for thee, and th'altars sprent:

Nought may thee saue from heavens avengement. 210

It fortuned (as heavens had behight) That in this gardin, where yong Clarion Was wont to solace him, a wicked wight The foe of faire things, th'author of confusion, The shame of Nature, the bondslaue of spight, Had lately built his hatefull mansion, And lurking closely, in awayte now lay,

But when he spide the ioyous Butterflie
In this faire plot dispacing too and fro,
Fearles of foes and hidden ieopardie,
Lord how he gan for to bestirre him tho,
And to his wicked worke each part applie:
His heart did earne against his hated foe,
And bowels so with ranckling poyson swelde,
That scarce the skin the strong contagion
helde.

The cause why he this Flie so maliced, Was (as in stories it is written found)
For that his mother which him bore and bred, The most fine-fingred workwoman on ground, Arachne, by his meanes was vanquished 261
Of Pallas, and in her owne skill confound, When she with her for excellence contended, That wrought her shame, and sorrow neuer ended.

For the *Tritonian* Goddesse hauing hard Her blazed fame, which all the world had fil'd, Came downe to proue the truth, and due reward For her prais-worthie workmanship to yeild But the presumptuous Damzel rashly dar'd The Goddesse selfe to chalenge to the field, And to compare with her in curious skill 271 Of workes with loome, with needle, and with quill.

Minerua did the chalenge not refuse,
But deign'd with her the paragon to make:
So to their worke they sit, and each doth chuse
What storie she will for her tapet take.
Arachne figur'd how Ioue did abuse
Europa like a Bull, and on his backe 278
Her through the sea did beare; so liuely scene,
That it true Sea, and true Bull ye would weene.

She seem'd still backe vnto the land to looke, And her play-fellowes aide to call, and feare The dashing of the waues, that vp she tooke Her daintie feete, and garments gathered neare:

But (Lord) how she in euerie member shooke, When as the land she saw no more appeare, But a wilde wildernes of waters deepe: Then gan she greatly to lament and weepe.

Before the Bull she pictur'd winged Loue, With his yong brother Sport, light fluttering Vpon the waues, as each had been a Doue; The one his bowe and shafts, the other Spring A burning Teade about his head did moue, As in their Syres new loue both triumphing: And manie Nymphes about them flocking round, And manie Tritons, which their hornes did sound.

And round about, her worke she did empale With a faire border wrought of sundrie flowres, Enwouen with an Yuie winding trayle: 299 A goodly worke, full fit for Kingly bowres, Such as Dame Pallas, such as Enuic pale, That al good things with venemous tooth deuowres,

Could not accuse. Then gan the Goddesse bright

Her selfe likewise vnto her worke to dight.

She made the storie of the olde debate, Which she with Neptune did for Alhens trie: Twelue Gods doo sit around in royall state, And Ioue in midst with awfull Maiestie, To iudge the strife betweene them stirred late: Each of the Gods by his like visnomic 310 Eathe to be knowen; but Ioue aboue them all, By his great lookes and power Imperiall.

Before them stands the God of Seas in place, Clayming that sea-coast Citie as his right, And strikes the rockes with his three-forked mace:

Whenceforth issues a warlike steed in sight, The signe by which he chalengeth the place, That all the Gods, which saw his wondrous might

Did surely deeme the victorie his due: 319 But seldome seene, foreiudgement proueth true.

Then to her selfe she giues her Aegide shield, And steelhed speare, and morion on her hedd, Such as she oft is seene in warlicke field: Then sets she forth, how with her weapon dredd She smote the ground, the which streight foorth did yield

A fruitfull Olyue tree, with berries spredd, That all the Gods admir'd; then all the storie She compast with a wreathe of Olyues hoarie.

Emongst those leaves she made a Butterflie, With excellent device and wondrous slight, Fluttring among the Olives wantonly, 31 That seem'd to live, so like it was in sight. The veluet nap which on his wings doth lie, The silken downe with which his backe is dight, His broad outstretched hornes, his hayrie thies, His glorious colours, and his glistering eies.

Which when Arachne saw, as ouerlaid, And mastered with workmanship so rare, She stood astonied long, ne ought gainesaid, And with fast fixed eyes on her did stare, 340 And by her silence, signe of one dismaid, The victorie did yeeld her as her share: Yet did she inly fret, and felly burne, And all her blood to poysonous rancor turne.

That shortly from the shape of womanhed Such as she was, when Pallas she attempted, She grew to hideous shape of dryrihed, Pined with griefe of follie late repented: Eftsoones her white streight legs were altered To crooked crawling shankes, of marrowe empted,

And her faire face to fowle and loathsome hewe, And her fine corpes to a bag of venim grewe.

This cursed creature, mindfull of that olde Enfestred grudge, the which his mother felt, So soone as *Clarion* he did beholde, His heart with vengefull malice inly swelt, And weauing straight a net with manie a folde About the caue, in which he lurking dwelt, With fine small cords about it stretched wide, So finely sponne, that scarce they could be spide.

Not anie damzell, which her vaunteth most In skilfull knitting of soft silken twyne; 362 Nor anie weauer, which his worke doth boast In dieper, in damaske, or in lyne; Nor anie skil'd in workmanship embost; Nor anie skil'd in loupes of fingring fine, Might in their diuers cunning euer dare, With this so curious networke to compare.

Ne doo I thinke, that that same subtil gin. The which the *Lemnian* God framde craftilie, *Mars* sleeping with his wife to compasse in, That all the Gods with common mockerie 372 Might laugh at them, and scorne their shamefull sin.

Was like to this. This same he did applie, For to entrap the careles *Clarion*, That rang'd each where without suspition.

Suspition of friend, nor feare of foe,
That hazarded his health, had he at all,
But walkt at will, and wandred too and fro,
In the pride of his freedome principall:
Litle wist he his fatall future woe,
But was secure, the liker he to fall.
He likest is to fall into mischaunce,
That is regardles of his gouernaunce.

Yet still Aragnoll (so his foe was hight)
Lay lurking couertly him to surprise,
And all his gins that him entangle might,
Drest in good order as he could deuise.
At length the foolish Flie without foresight,
As he that did all daunger quite despise,
Toward those parts came flying careleslie,
Where hidden was his hatefull enemie.

Who seeing him, with secrete ioy therefore Did tickle inwardly in euerie vaine, And his false hart fraught with all treasons store.

Was fil'd with hope, his purpose to obtaine: Himselfe he close vpgathered more and more Into his den, that his deceiptfull traine By his there being might not be bewraid, Ne anie noyse, ne anie motion made.

Like as a wily Foxe, that hauing spide, Where on a sunnie banke the Lambes doo play, Full closely creeping by the hinder side, Lyes in ambushment of his hoped pray, Ne stirreth limbe, till seeing readie tide, He rusheth forth, and snatcheth quite away One of the litle yonglings vnawares:

So to his worke \*Aragnoll\* him prepares.

Who now shall give vnto my heavie eyes
A well of teares, that all may overflow?

410
Or where shall I finde lamentable cryes,
And mournfull tunes enough my griefe to
show?

Helpe O thou Tragick Muse, me to deuise Notes sad enough, t'expresse this bitter throw: For loe, the drerie stownd is now arriued, That of all happines hath vs depriued.

The luckles Clarion, whether cruell Fate, Or wicked Fortune faultles him misled, Or some vngracious blast out of the gate Of Aeoles raine perforce him drove on hed, Was (O sad hap and howre vnfortunate) 42 With violent swift flight forth caried Into the cursed cobweb, which his foe Had framed for his finall ouerthroe.

There the fond Flie entangled, strugled long, Himselfe to free thereout; but all in vaine. For striuing more, the more in laces strong Himselfe he tide, and wrapt his winges twaine In lymie snares the subtill loupes among; That in the ende he breathelesse did remaine, And all his youghly forces idly spent, 431 Him to the mercie of th'auenger lent.

Which when the greisly tyrant did espie, Like a grimme Lyon rushing with fierce might Out of his den, he seized greedelie On the resistles pray, and with fell spight, Vnder the left wing stroke his weapon slie Into his heart, that his deepe groning spright In bloodie streames foorth fled into the aire, His bodie left the spectacle of care.

### Visions of the worlds vanitie.

Ne day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe,

My spirit, shaking off her earthly prison, Began to enter into meditation deepe Of things exceeding reach of common reason;

Such as this age, in which all good is geason, And all that humble is and meane debaced, Hath brought forth in her last declining season, Griefeofgood mindes, to see goodnessed disgraced.

On which when as my thought was throghly placed,

Vnto my eyes strange showes presented were, Picturing that, which I in minde embraced, That yet those sights empassion me full nere.

Such as they were (faire Ladie) take in worth, That when time serues, may bring things

better forth.

In Summers day, when *Phæbus* fairly shone, I saw a Bull as white as driuen snowe, With gilden hornes embowed like the Moone, In a fresh flowring meadow lying lowe:

Vp to his eares the verdant grasse did growe, And the gay floures did offer to be eaten; 20 But he with fatnes so did ouerflowe,

That he all wallowed in the weedes downe beaten, Ne car'd with them his daintielips to sweeten: Till that a Brize, a scorned little creature, Through his faire hide his angrie sting did threaten,

And vext so sore, that all his goodly feature, And all his plenteous pasture nought him pleased:

So by the small the great is oft diseased.

Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile,
Vpon a sunnie banke outstretched lay 30
In monstrous length, a mightie Crocodile,
Thatcram'd withguiltlesblood, and greedie pray
Of wretched people trauailing that way,
Thought all things lesse than his disdainful

pride. I saw a little Bird, cal'd *Tedula*,

The least of thousands which on earth abide,
That forst this hideous beast to open wide
The greisly gates of his deuouring hell,
And let him feede, as Nature doth prouide,
Vpon his iawes, that with blacke venime swell.
Why then should greatest things the least

disdaine, 41
Sith that so small so mightie can constraine?

The kingly Bird, that beares lows thunder clap,

One day did scorne the simple Scarabee, Proud of his highest seruice, and good hap, That made all other Foules his thralls to bee:

The silly Flie, that no redresse did see, Spide where the Eagle built his towring nest, And kindling fire within the hollow tree, Burnt up his yong ones, and himselfe distrest;

Ne suffred him in anie place to rest, 5 But droue in *loues* owne lap his egs to lay; Where gathering also filth him to infest, Forst with the filth his egs to fling away:

For which when as the Foule was wroth, said *loue*.

Lo how the least the greatest may reproue.

5

Toward the sea turning my troubled eye, I saw the fish (if fish I may it cleepe)
That makes the sea before his face to flye.

That makes the sea before his face to flye, 59
And with his flaggie finnes doth seeme to sweepe
The formic waues out of the dreadfull deep,

The huge *Leuiathan*, dame Natures wonder, Making his sport, that manie makes to weep: A sword-fish small him from the restdid sunder,

That in his throat him pricking softly vnder, His wide Abysse him forced forth to spewe, That all the sea did roare like heauens thunder, And all the waues were stain'd with filthie hewe.

Hereby I learned haue, not to despise, What euer thing seemes small in common eyes. 70

An hideous Dragon, dreadfull to behold, Whose backe was arm'd against the dint of speare

With shields of brasse, that shone like burnisht golde.

And forkhed sting, that death in it did beare, Stroue with a Spider his vnequall peare: And bad defiance to his enemie.

The subtill vermin creeping closely neare, Did in his drinke shed poyson priuilie;

Which through his entrailes spredding diversly,

Made him to swell, that nigh his bowells brust, And him enforst to yeeld the victorie, That did so much in his owne greatnesse trust.

O how great vainnesse is it then to scorne The weake, that hath the strong so oft forlorne. High on a hill a goodly Cedar grewe, Of wondrous length, and streight proportion, That farre abroad her daintie odours threwe; Mongst all the daughters of proud *Libanon*,

Her match in beautie was not anie one. Shortly within her inmost pith there bred 90 A litle wicked worme, perceiu'd of none, That on her sap and vitall moysture fed:

Thenceforth her garland so much honoured Began to die, (O great ruth for the same) And her faire lockes fell from her loftie head, That shortly balde, and bared she became.

I, which this sight beheld, was much dismayed.

To see so goodly thing so soone decayed.

8

Soone after this I saw an Elephant, Adorn'd with bells and bosses gorgeouslie, 100 That on his backe did beare (as batteilant) A gilden towre, which shone exceedingle;

That he himselfe through foolish vanitie, Both for his rich attire, and goodly forme, Was puffed vp with passing surquedrie, And shortly gan all other beasts to scorne,

Till that a little Ant, a silly worme,
Into his nosthrils creeping, so him pained,
That casting downe his towres, he did deforme
Both borrowed pride, and natiue beautie
stained.

Let therefore nought that great is, therein glorie,

Sith so small thing his happines may varie.

Looking far foorth into the Ocean wide, A goodly ship with banners brauely dight, And flag in her top-gallant I espide, Through the maine sea making her merry

flight:
Faire blew the winde into her bosome right;
And th'heauens looked louely all the while,
That she did seeme to daunce, as in delight,
And at her owne felicitie did smile.

All sodainely there cloue vnto her keele
A little fish, that men call Remora,
Which stopt her course, and held her by the
heele.

That winde nor tide could moue her thence away.

Straunge thing me seemeth, that so small a thing

Should able be so great an one to wring.

10

A mighty Lyon, Lord of all the wood, Hauing his hunger throughly satisfide, With pray of beasts, and spoyle of liuing blood, Safe in his dreadles den him thought to hide:

His sternesse was his prayse, his strength his pride,

And all his glory in his cruell clawes.

I saw a wasp, that fiercely him defide,
And bad him battaile even to his jawes:

Sore he him stong, that it the blood forth drawes,

And his proude heart is fild with fretting ire: In vaine he threats his teeth, his tayle, his

And from his bloodie eyes doth sparkle fire;
That dead himselfe he wisheth for despight.
So weakest may anoy the most of might.

11

What time the Romaine Empire bore the raine

Of all the world, and florisht most in might, The nations gan their soueraigntie disdaine, And cast to quitt them from their bondage quight:

So when all shrouded were in silent night, The Galles were, by corrupting of a mayde, Possest nigh of the Capitol through slight, Had not a Goose the treachery bewrayde.

If then a Goose great Rome from ruine stayde, And Ioue himselfe, the patron of the place, Preserud from being to his foes betrayde, 151 Why do vaine men mean things so much deface. And in their might repose their most assur-

Sith nought on earth can chalenge long endurance?

12

When these sad sights were ouerpast and gone,

My spright was greatly moued in her rest, With inward ruth and deare affection, To see so great things by so small distrest:

Thenceforth I gan in my engrieued brest To scorne all difference of great and small, 160 Sith that the greatest often are opprest, And vnawares doe into daunger fall.

And ye, that read these ruines tragicall Learne by their losse to loue the low degree, And if that fortune chaunce you vp to call To honours seat, forget not what you be: For he that of himselfe is most secure, Shall finde his state most fickle and vnsure.

### The Visions of Bellay.

T was the time, when rest soft sliding downe From heauens hight into mens heavy eyes, In the forgetfulnes of sleepe doth drowne The carefull thoughts of mortall miseries:

Then did a Ghost before mine eyes appeare, On that great rivers banck, that runnes by Rome.

Which calling me by name, bad me to reare My lookes to heauen whence all good gifts do

And crying lowd, loe now beholde (quoth hee)
What vnder this great temple placed is:

10
Lo all is nought but flying vanitee.

So I that know this worlds inconstancies, Sith onely God surmounts all times decay, In God alone my confidence do stay.

2

On high hills top I saw a stately frame, An hundred cubits high by just assize, With hundreth pillours fronting faire the same,

All wrought with Diamond after Dorick wize: Nor brick, nor marble was the wall in view, But shining Christall, which from top to base Out of her womb a thousand rayons threw, On hundred steps of Afrike golds enchase:

Golde was the parget, and the seeling bright Did skine all scaly with great plates of golde; The floore of *Iasp* and *Emeraude* was dight. O worlds vainesse. Whiles thus I did behold, An earthquake shooke the hill from lowest

And ouerthrew this frame with ruine great.

Then did a sharped spyre of Diamond bright,

Ten feete each way in square, appeare to mee, Iustly proportion'd vp vnto his hight, 31 So far as Archer might his leuel see:

The top thereof a pot did seeme to beare, Made of the mettall, which we most do honour, And in this golden vessell couched weare The ashes of a mightie Emperour:

Vpon foure corners of the base were pight, To beare the frame, foure great Lyons of gold; A worthy tombe for such a worthy wight. Alas this world doth nought but grieuance

hold.

I saw a tempest from the heauen descend, Which this braue monument with flash did rend.

I saw raysde vp on vuorie pilloures tall, Whose bases were of richest mettalls warke, The chapters Alablaster, the fryses christall, The double front of a triumphall Arke:

On each side purtraid was a Victorie, Clad like a Nimph, that wings of siluer weares, And in triumphant chayre was set on hie, The auncient glory of the Romaine Peares. 50

No worke it seem'd of earthly craftsmans wit, But rather wrought by his owne industry, That thunder-dartes for *loue* his syre doth fit. Let me no more see faire thing ynder sky.

Sith that mine eyes have seene so faire a sight With sodain fall to dust consumed quight.

5

Then was the faire *Dodonian* tree far seene, Vpon seauen hills to spread his gladsome gleame,

And conquerours bedecked with his greene, Along the bancks of the Ausonian streame:

There many an auncient Trophee was addrest, 61

And many a spoyle and many a goodly show.

And many a spoyle, and many a goodly show, Which that braue races greatnes did attest, That whilome from the *Troyan* blood did flow.

Rauisht I was so rare a thing to vew, When lo a barbarous troupe of clownish fone The honour of these noble boughs down threw, Vhder the wedge I heard the tronck to grone; And since I saw the roote in great disdaine

A twinne of forked trees send forth againe.

I saw a Wolfe vnder a rockie caue 71 Noursing two whelpes; I saw her litle ones In wanton dalliance the teate to craue, While she her neck wreath'd from them for the

I saw her raunge abroad to seeke her food, And roming drough the field with greedie rage T'embrew her teeth and clawes with lukewarm

blood
Of the small heards, her thirst for to asswage.
I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended

I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended
Downe from the mountaines bordring Lombardie,
80
That with an hundred speares her flank wide

rended.

I saw her on the plaine outstretched lie,

Throwing out thousand throbs in her owne soyle:

Soone on a tree vphang'd I saw her spoyle.

I saw the Bird that can the Sun endure. With feeble wings assay to mount on hight, By more and more she gan her wings t'assure, Following th'ensample of her mothers sight:

I saw her rise, and with a larger flight To pierce the cloudes, and with wide pinneons To measure the most haughtie mountaines

Vntill she raught the Gods owne mansions:

There was she lost, when suddaine I behelde. Where tumbling through the ayre in firie fold; All flaming downe she on the plaine was felde, And soone her bodie turn'd to ashes colde.

I saw the foule that doth the light dispise, Out of her dust like to a worme arise

I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes Did wash the ground work of an old great wall:

I saw it couer'd all with griesly shadowes, That with black horror did the ayre appall.

Thereout a strange beast with seuen heads

That townes and castles under her brest did

And seem'd both milder beasts and fiercer foes

Alike with equall rauine to deuoure. Much was I mazde, to see this monsters kinde

In hundred formes to change his fearefull hew, When as at length I saw the wrathfull winde, Which blows cold storms, burst out of Scithian

That sperst these cloudes, and in so short as

This dreadfull shape was vanished to nought.

Then all astonied with this mighty ghoast, An hideous bodie big and strong I sawe, With side long beard, and locks down hanging

Sterne face, and front full of Saturnlike awe;

Who leaning on the belly of a pot, Pourd foorth a water, whose out gushing flood Ran bathing all the creakie shore aflot. Whereon the Troyan prince spilt Turnus blood;

And at his feete a bitch wolfe suck did yeeld To two young babes: his left the Palme tree stout,

His right hand did the peacefull Olive wield. And head with Lawrell garnisht was about. Sudden both Palme and Olive fell away. And faire greene Lawrell branch did quite

decay.

tο

Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire. Folding her armes to heaven with thousand throbs.

And outraging her cheekes and golden haire. To falling rivers sound thus tun'd her sobs.

Where is (quoth she) this whilom honoured face ? Where the great glorie and the auncient praise,

In which all worlds felicitie had place, When Gods and men my honour vp did raise?

Suffisd' it not that civill warres me made The whole worlds spoile, but that this Hydranew, Of hundred *Hercules* to be assaide,

With seven heads, budding monstrous crimes

So many Neroes and Caligulaes Out of these crooked shores must dayly rayse? 140

Vpon an hill a bright flame I did see, Wauing aloft with triple point to skie, Which like incense of precious Cedar tree, With balmie odours fil'd th'avre farre and nie.

A Bird all white, well feathered on each wing, Hereout vp to the throne of Gods did flie, And all the way most pleasant notes did sing, Whilst in the smoake she vnto heauen did stie. Of this faire fire the scattered rayes forth

On euerie side a thousand shining beames: When sudden dropping of a siluer dew

(O grieuous chance) gan quench those precious

That it which earst so pleasant sent did yeld, Of nothing now but novous sulphure smeld.

I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle, As cleare as Christall gainst the Sunnie beames, The bottome yeallow, like the golden grayle That bright Pactolus washeth with his streames;

It seem'd that Art and Nature had assembled All pleasure there, for which mans hart could

And there a noyse alluring sleepe soft trembled, Of manie accords more sweete than Mermaids

song: The seates and benches shone as yuorie,

And hundred Nymphes sate side by side about; When from nigh hills with hideous outcrie, A troupe of Satyres in the place did rout,

Which with their villeine feete the streame did ray,

Threw down the seats, and droue the Nymphs away.

13

Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee, Which did to that sad *Florentine* appeare, 170 Casting mine eyes farre off, I chaunst to see, Vpon the *Latine* Coast herselfe to reare:

But suddenly arose a tempest great, Bearing close enuie to these riches rare, Which gan assaile this ship with dreadfull threat.

This ship, to which none other might compare.

And finally the storme impetuous

Sunke vp these riches, second vnto none,

Within the gulfe of greedie Nereus.

I saw both ship and mariners each one, 180
And all that treasure drowned in the maine:

But I the ship saw after raisd' againe.

14

Long hauing deeply gron'd these visions sad, I saw a Citie like vnto that same, Which saw the messenger of tidings glad; But that on sand was built the goodly frame: It seem'd her top the firmament did rayse, And no lesse rich than faire, right worthie

sure (If ought here worthie) of immortall dayes, Or if ought vnder heauen might firme endure. Much wondred I to see so faire a wall: 191
When from the Northerne coast a storme
arose.

Which breathing furie from his inward gall On all, which did against his course oppose, Into a clowde of dust sperst in the aire The weake foundations of this Citie faire.

15

At length, euen at the time when Morpheus Most trulie doth vnto our eyes appeare, Wearie to see the heauens still wauering thus, I saw Typhaeus sister comming neare; 200 Whose head full brauely with a morion

hidd,
Did seeme to match the Gods in Maiestie.

She by a rivers bancke that swift downe slidd.

Ouer all the world did raise a Trophee hie; An hundred vanquisht Kings under her lay, With armes bound at their backs in shamefull

Whilst I thus mazed was with great affray, I saw the heauens in warre against her rize:

Then downe she stricken fell with clap of thonder,

That with great noyse I wakte in sudden wonder. 210

FINIS.

### The Visions of Petrarch.

formerly translated.

Being one day at my window all alone, So manie strange things happened me to see,

As much it grieueth me to thinke thereon.

At my right hand a Hynde appear'd to mee,
So faire as mote the greatest God delite;
Two eager dogs did her pursue in chace,
Of which the one was blacke, the other
white:

With deadly force so in their cruell race

They pincht the haunches of that gentle
beast.

That at the last, and in short time I spide, 10 Vnder a Rocke where she alas opprest. Fell to the ground, and there vntimely dide. Cruell death vanquishing so noble beautie, Oft makes me wayle so hard a destenie.

After at sea a tall ship did appeare,
Made all of Heben and white Yuorie,
The sailes of golde, of silke the tackle were,
Milde was the winde, calme seem'd the sea to
bee.

The skie eachwhere did show full bright and faire;

With rich treasures this gay ship fraighted was: 20

But sudden storme did so turmoyle the aire, And tumbled vp the sea, that she (alas)

Strake on a rock, that vnder water lay,
And perished past all recouerie.
O how great ruth and sorrowfull assay,
Doth vex my spirite with perplexitie,
Thus in a moment to see lost and drown'd.

So great riches, as like cannot be found.

Then heavenly branches did I see arise Out of the fresh and lustie Lawrell tree, Amidst the yong greene wood: of Paradise Some noble plant I thought my selfe to see:

Such store of birds therein vshrowded were. Chaunting in shade their sundrie melodie, That with their sweetnes I was rauish't nere. While on this Lawrell fixed was mine eie.

The skie gan euerie where to ouercast, And darkned was the welkin all about. When sudden flash of heavens fire out brast. And rent this royall tree quite by the roote.

Which makes me much and euer to complaine: For no such shadow shalbe had againe.

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise A spring of water, mildly rumbling downe. Whereto approched not in anie wise The homely shepheard, nor the ruder clowne;

But manie Muses, and the Nymphes withall, That sweetly in accord did tune their voyce To the soft sounding of the waters fall, That my glad hart thereat did much rejoyce.

But while herein I tooke my chiefe delight, I saw (alas) the gaping earth denoure The spring, the place, and all cleane out of sight.

Which yet aggreeues my hart euen to this

And wounds my soule with rufull memorie, To see such pleasures gon so suddenly.

I saw a Phœnix in the wood alone, With purple wings, and crest of golden hewe; Strange bird he was, whereby I thought anone, That of some heavenly wight I had the vewe: Vntill he came vnto the broken tree. And to the spring, that late deuoured was. What say I more? each thing at last we see

Doth passe away: the Phoenix there alas

Spying the tree destroid, the water dride. Himselfe smote with his beake, as in disdaine. And so foorthwith in great despight he dide: That yet my heart burnes in exceeding paine, For ruth and pitie of so haples plight.

O let mine eyes no more see such a sight. 70

At last so faire a Ladie did I spie, That thinking yet on her I burne and quake: On hearbs and flowres she walked pensively, Milde, but yet loue she proudly did forsake:

White seem'd her robes, yet wouen so they

As snow and golde together had been wrought. Aboue the wast a darke clowde shrouded her. A stinging Serpent by the heele her caught;

Wherewith she languisht as the gathered

And well assur'd she mounted vp to joy. 80 Alas, on earth so nothing doth endure, But bitter griefe and sorrowfull annoy: Which make this life wretched and miserable. Tossed with stormes of fortune variable.

When I behold this tickle trustles state Of vaine worlds glorie, flitting too and fro, And mortall men tossed by troublous fate

In restles seas of wretchednes and woe, I wish I might this wearie life forgoe. And shortly turne vnto my happie rest, Where my free spirite might not anie moe

Be vext with sights, that doo her peace molest. And ye faire Ladie, in whose bounteous brest All heauenly grace and vertue shrined is. When ye these rythmes doo read, and vew the

rest, Loath this base world, and thinke of heavens hlis:

And though ye be the fairest of Gods creatures, Yet thinke, that death shall spoyle your goodly features.

FINIS.

### Daphnaïda.

# An Elegie vpon the

death of the noble and vertuous

Douglas Howard, Daughter and heire of Henry Lord Howard, Vifcount Byndon, and wife of Arthure Gorges Efquier.

Dedicated to the Right honorable the Lady Helena, Marquesse of Northampton.

By Ed. Sp.



At London
Printed for William Ponsonby, dwelling in
Paules Churchyard at the signe of the
Bishops head 1591.

#### TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND VER-

tuous Lady Helena Marquesse of North-hampton.

Have the rather presumed humbly to offer I unto your Honour the dedication of this little Poëme, for that the noble and vertuous Gentlewoman of whom it is written, was by match neere alied, and in affection greatly devoted unto your Ladiship. The occasion why I wrote the same, was aswell the great good fame which I heard of her deceased, as the particular goodwill which I beare unto her husband Master Arthur Gorges. a louer of learning and vertue, whose house, as your Ladiship by mariage hath honoured, so doe I find the name of them by :nany notable records, to be of great antiquitie in this Realme; and such as have ever borne themselves with honourable reputation to the world, and unspotted loyaltie to their Prince and Countrey: besides

so lineally are they descended from the Howards. as that the Lady Anne Howard, eldest daughter to Iohn Duke of Norfolke, was wife to Sir Edmund, mother to Sir Edward, and grandmother to Sir William and Sir Thomas Gorges Knightes. And therefore I doe assure my selfe, that no due honour done to the white Lyon but will be most gratefull to your Ladiship, whose husband and children do so neerely participate with the bloud of that noble family. So in all dutie I recommende this Pamphlet, and the good acceptance thereof, to your honourable fauour and protection. London this first of Ianuarie. 1591.

Your Honours humbly euer.

Ed. Sp.

### Daphnaïda.

With griefe of mournefull great mishap opprest,

Fit matter for his cares increase would finde: Let reade the rufull plaint herein exprest Of one (I weene) the wofulst man aliue; Euen sad Alcyon, whose empierced brest Sharpe sorrowe did in thousand peeces riue. But who so else in pleasure findeth sense, Or in this wretched life dooth take delight. Let him be banisht farre away from hence: Ne let the sacred Sisters here be hight, Though they of sorrowe heavilie can sing: For even their heaviesong would breede delight: But here no tunes, saue sobs and grones shall ring. In stead of them, and their sweete harmonic. Let those three fatall Sisters, whose sad hands Doo weave the direfull threds of destinie, And in their wrath breake off the vitall bands. Approach hereto: and let the dreadfull Queene Of darkenes deepe come from the Stygian strands.

And grisly Ghosts to heare this dolefull teene. In gloomie euening, when the wearie Sun After his dayes long labour drew to rest, And sweatie steeds now having ouer run The compast skie, gan water in the west,

Hat euer man he be, whose heavie minde | I walkt abroade to breath the freshing ayre In open fields, whose flowring pride opprest With early frosts, had lost their beautie faire.

> There came vnto my minde a troublous thought, Which dayly dooth my weaker wit possesse, Ne lets it rest, vntill it forth haue brought 31 Her long borne Infant, fruit of heauinesse, Which she conceived hath through meditation Of this worlds vainnesse and lifes wretchednesse.

That yet my soule it deepely doth empassion.

So as I muzed on the miserie, In which men live, and I of many most, Most miserable man; I did espie Where towards me a sory wight did cost, Clad all in black, that mourning did bewray: And Iaakob staffe in hand deuoutlie crost, 41 Like to some Pilgrim come from farre away.

His carelesse locks, vncombed and vnshorne, Hong long adowne, and beard all ouer growne, That well he seemd to be sum wight forlorne; Downe to the earth his heavie eyes were throwne

As loathing light: and euer as he went, He sighed soft, and inly deepe did grone, As if his heart in peeces would have rent. Approaching nigh, his face I vewed nere,
And by the semblant of his countenance,
Me seemd I had his person seene elsewhere,
Most like Alcyon seeming at a glaunce;
Alcyon he, the iollie Shepheard swaine,
That wont full merrilie to pipe and daunce,
And fill with pleasance euery wood and plaine.

Yet halfe in doubt because of his disguize, I softlie sayd Alcyon? There with all He lookt a side as in disdainefull wise, Yet stayed not: till I againe did call. 60 Then turning back he saide with hollow sound Who is it, that dooth name me, wofull thrall, The wretchedst man that treades this day on ground?

One, whome like wofulnesse impressed deepe, Hath made fit mate thy wretched case to heare, And giuen like cause with thee to waile and weepe:

Griefe findes some ease by him that like does beare.

Then stay Alcyon, gentle shepheard stay, (Quoth I) till thou have to my trustie eare Committed, what thee dooth so ill apay.

Cease foolish man (saide he halfe wrothfully)
To seeke to heare that which cannot be told:
For the huge anguish, which dooth multiplie
My dying paines, no tongue can well vnfold:
Ne doo I care, that any should bemone
My hard mishap, or any weepe that would,
But seeke alone to weepe, and dye alone.

Then be it so (quoth I) that thou art bent To die alone, vnpitied, vnplained, Yet ere thou die, it were conucnient 80 To tell the cause, which thee theretoo constrained:

Least that the world thee dead accuse of guilt, And say, when thou of none shalt be maintained, That thou for secret crime thy blood hast spilt.

Who life dooes loath, and longs to bee vnbound From the strong shackles of fraile flesh (quothhe) Nought cares at all, what they that liue on ground

Bround
Deeme the occasion of his death to bee:
Rather desires to be forgotten quight,
Than question made of his calamitie,
OF For harts deep sorrow hates both life and light.
Yet since so much thou seemst to rue my griefe,
And carest for one that for himselfe cares nought,
(Signe of thy loue, though nought for my reliefe:
For my reliefe exceedeth liuing thought)
I will to thee this heauie case relate.
Then harken well till it to ende be brought,
For neuer didst thou heare more haplesse fate.

Whilome I vsde (as thou right well doest know)
My little flocke on westerne downes to keepe,
Not far from whence Sabrinaes streame doth
flow,
101

And flowrie bancks with siluer liquor steepe: Nought carde I then for worldly change or chaunce.

For all my ioy was on my gentle sheepe, And to my pype to caroll and to daunce.

It there befell, as I the fields did range Fearelesse and free, a faire young Lionesse, White as the natiue Rose before the chaunge, Which Venus blood did in her leaues impresse, I spied playing on the grassie playne 110 Her youthfull sports and kindhe wantonnesse, That did all other Beasts in beawtie staine.

Much was I moued at so goodly sight; Whose like before mine eye had seldome seene, And gan to cast, how I her compasse might, And bring to hand, that yet had neuer beene: So well I wrought with mildnes and with paine, That I her caught disporting on the grene, And brought away fast bound with siluer chaine.

And afterwards I handled her so fayre, 120 That though by kind shee stout and saluage were,

For being borne an auncient Lions haire, And of the race, that all wild beastes do feare; Yet I her fram'd and wan so to my bent, That shee became so meeke and milde of cheare, As the least lamb in all my flock that went.

For shee in field, where euer I did wend, Would wend with me, and waite by me all day: And all the night that I in watch did spend, If cause requir'd, or els in sleepe, if nay, 130 Shee would all night by mee or watch, or sleepe; And euermore when I did sleepe or play, She of my flock would take full warie keepe.

Safe then and safest were my sillie sheepe, Ne fear'd the Wolfe, ne fear'd the wildest beast: All were I drown'd in carelesse quiet deepe: My louelie Lionesse without beheast: So carefull was for them and for my good, That when I waked, neither most nor least I found miscaried or in plaine or wood.

140 Oft did the Shepeheards, which my hap did heare,

And oft their lasses which my luck enuide, Daylie resort to me from farre and neare, To see my Lyonesse, whose praises wide Were spred abroad; and when her worthinesse Much greater than the rude report they tri'de, They her did praise, and my good fortune blesse. Long thus I ioyed in my happinesse,
And well did hope my ioy would haue no end:
But oh fond man, that in worlds ficklenesse
Reposedst hope, or weenedst her thy frend,
That glories most in mortall miseries,
And daylie doth her changefull counsels bend
To make new matter fit for Tragedies.

For whilest I was thus without dread or dout, A cruell Satyre with his murdrous dart, Greedie of mischiefe ranging all about, Gaue her the fatall wound of deadlie smart: And reft fro me my sweete companion, And reft fro me my loue, my life, my hart: My Lyonesse (ah woe is mee) is gon.

Out of the world thus was she reft awaie,
Out of the world, vnworthie such a spoyle;
And borne to heauen, for heauen a fitter pray:
Much fitter than the Lyon, which with toyle
Alcides slew, and fixt in firmament;
Her now I seek throughout this earthlie soyle,
And seeking misse, and missing doe lament.

Therewith he gan afresh to waile and weepe, That I for pittie of his heauie plight, 170 Could not abstaine mine eyes with teares to steepe:

But when I saw the anguish of his spright Some deale alaid, I him bespake againe. Certes Alcyon, painfull is thy plight, That it in me breeds almost equall paine.

Yet doth not my dull wit well vnderstand The riddle of thy loued Lionesse; For rare it seemes in reason to be skand That man, who doth the whole worlds rule possesse.

Should to a beast his noble hart embase, 180 And be the vassall of his vassalesse:
Therefore more plaine aread this doubtfull case.

Then sighing sore, Daphne thou knewest (quoth he)

She now is dead; ne more endured to say: But fell to ground for great extreamitie, That I beholding it, with deepe dismay Was much appald, and lightlie him vprearing, Reuoked life that would haue fled away, All were my self through griefe in deadly drearing.

Then gan I him to comfort all my best, 190
And with milde counsaile stroue to mitigate
The stormie passion of his troubled brest;
But he thereby was more empassionate:
As stubborne steed, that is with curb restrained,
Becomes more fierce and feruent in his gate;
And breaking foorth at last, thus dearnelie
plained.

What man henceforth, that breatheth vitall ayre, Will honour heauen, or heauenlie powers adore? Which so vniustlie doe their iudgments share; Mongst earthlie wightes, as to afflict so sore The innocent, as those which do transgresse, And do not spare the best or fayrest, more Than worst or fowlest, but doe both oppresse.

If this be right, why did they then create
The world so fayre, sith fairenesse is neglected?
Or whie be they themselues immaculate,
If purest things be not by them respected?
She faire, shee pure, most faire most pure shee
was,

Yet was by them as thing impure rejected: Yet shee in purenesse, heauen it selfe did pas. In purenesse and in all celestiall grace, 211 That men admire in goodlie womankinde, Shee did excell, and seem'd of Angels race, Liuing on earth like Angell new diuinde, Adorn'd with wisedome and with chastitie: And all the dowries of a noble mind. Which did her beautie much more beautifie.

No age hath bred (since fayre Astræa left The sinfull world) more vertue in a wight, And when she parted hence, with her she reft Great hope; and robd her race of bountie quight:

quaght:
Well may the shepheard lasses now lament,
For dubble losse by her hath on them light;
To loose both her and bounties ornament.

Ne let Elisa royall Shepheardesse
The praises of my parted loue enuy,
For she hath praises in all plenteousnesse
Powr'd vpon her like showers of Castaly
By herown Shepheard, Colin herowne Shepherd,
That her with heauenly hymnes doth deifie,
Of rustick muse full hardly to be betterd. 231

She is the Rose, the glorie of the day, And mine the Primrose in the lowly shade, Mine, ah not mine; amisse I mine did say: Not mine but his, which mine awhile her made: Mine to be his, with him to liue for ay: O that so faire a flower so soone should fade, And through vntimely tempest fall away. She fell away in her first ages spring, Whil'st wet her leafe was greene and fresh her

Whil'st yet her leafe was greene, and fresh her rinde, 240 And whil'st her braunch faire blossomes foorth did bring.

She fell away against all course of kinde:
For age to dye is right, but youth is wrong;
She felaway like fruit blowne downe with winde:
Weepe Shepheard weepe to make my undersong.

What hart so stony hard, but that would weepe, And poure foorth fountaines of incessant teares?

What Timon, but would let compassion creepe Into his brest, and pierce his frosen eares? In stead of teares, whose brackish bitter well I wasted haue, my heart blood dropping weares, To thinke to ground how that faire blossome fell. 252

Yet fell she not, as one enforst to dye, Ne dyde with dread and grudging discontent, But as one toyld with trauaile downe doth lye, So lay she downe, as if to sleepe she went, And closde her eyes with carelesse quietnesse; The whiles soft death away her spirit hent, And soule assoyld from sinful fleshlinesse.

Yet ere that life her lodging did forsake, 260 She all resolu'd and ready to remoue, Calling to me (ay me) this wise bespake; Alcyon, ah my first and latest loue, Ah why does my Alcyon weepe and mourne, And grieue my ghost, that ill mote him behoue, As if to me had chanst some euill tourne?

I, since the messenger is come for mee, That summons soules vnto the bridale feast Of his great Lord, must needes depart from thee.

And straight obay his soueraine beheast: 270 Why should *Aleyon* then so sore lament, That I from miserie shall be releast, And freed from wretched long imprisonment?

Our daies are full of dolor and disease, Our life afflicted with incessant paine, That nought on earth may lessen or appease. Why then should I desire here to remaine? Or why should he that loues me, sorie bee For my deliuerance, or at all complaine My good to heare, and toward loyes to see? I goe, and long desired haue to goe, I goe with gladnesse to my wished rest, Whereas no worlds sad care, nor wasting woe May come their happie quiet to molest, But Saints and Angels in celestiall thrones Eternally him praise, that hath them blest; There shall I be amongst those blessed ones. Yet ere I goe, a pledge I leaue with thee Of the late love, the which betwixt vs past, My yong Ambrosia, in lieu of mee Loue her: so shall our loue for euer last. Thus deare adieu, whom I expect ere long: So having said, away she softly past: Weep Shepheard weep, to make mine vndersong.

So oft as I record those piercing words, Which yet are deepe engrauen in my brest, And those last deadly accents, which like swords Did wound my heart and rend my bleeding chest, With those sweet sugred speaches doo compare, The which my soule first conquerd and possest, The first beginners of my endles care; 301

And when those pallid cheekes and ashy hew, In which sad death his pourtraicture had writ, And when those hollow eyes and deadly view, On which the clowde of ghastly night did sit, I match with that sweet smile and chearful

brow, Which all the world subdued vnto it; How happie was I then, and wretched now?

How happie was I, when I saw her leade 300 The Shepheards daughters dauncing in a rownd? How trimly would she trace and softly tread The tender grasse with rosie garland crownd? And when she list aduance her heauenly voyce, Both Nimphs and Muses nigh she made astownd. And flocks and shepheards caused to reioyce.

But now ye Shepheard lasses, who shall lead Your wandring troupes, or sing your virelayes? Or who shall dight your bowres, sith she is dead That was the Lady of your holy dayes? Let now your blisse be turned into bale, 320 And into plaints connert your joyous playes, And with the same fill every hill and dale.

Let Bagpipe neuer more be heard to shrill, That may allure the senses to delight; Ne euer Shepheard sound his Oaten quill Vnto the many, that prouoke them might To idle pleasance: but let ghastlinesse And drery horror dim the chearfull light, To make the image of true heauinesse.

Let birds be silent on the naked spray, 330 And shady woods resound with dreadfull yells: Let streaming floods their hastic courses stay, And parching drougth drie vp the christall wells:

Let th'earth be barren and bring foorth no flowres,

And th'ayre be fild with noyse of dolefull knells, And wandring spirits walke vntimely howres. And Nature nurse of euery liuing thing, Let rest her selfe from her long wearinesse, And cease henceforth things kindly forth to bring.

But hideous monsters full of vglinesse: 340 For she it is, that hath me done this wrong, No nurse, but Stepdame, cruell, mercilesse, Weepe Shepheard weepe to make my vnder song.

My little flocke, whom earst I lou'd so well. And wont to feede with finest grasse that grew, Feede ve hencefoorth on bitter Astrofell, And stinking Smallage, and vnsauerie Rew: And when your mawes are with those weeds corrupted.

Be ye the pray of Wolues: ne will I rew, That with your carkasses wild beasts be glutted.

Ne worse to you my sillie sheepe I pray, 351 Ne sorer vengeance wish on you to fall Than to my selfe, for whose confusde decay To carelesse heavens I doo daylie call: But heavens refuse to heare a wretches cry. And cruell death doth scorne to come at call. Or graunt his boone that most desires to dye.

The good and righteous he away doth take, To plague th'vnrighteous which aliue remaine: But the vngodly ones he doth forsake, By liuing long to multiplie their paine: Els surely death should be no punishment. As the great ludge at first did it ordaine, But rather riddance from long languishment.

Therefore my Daphne they have tane away; For worthic of a better place was she: But me vnworthie willed here to stay, That with her lacke I might tormented be. Sith then they so have ordred, I will pay Penance to her according their decree, And to her ghost doo seruice day by day.

For I will walke this wandring pilgrimage Throughout the world from one to other end. And in affliction wast my better age. My bread shall be the anguish of my mind, My drink the teares which fro mine eyes do

My bed the ground that hardest I may finde: So will I wilfully increase my paine.

And she my loue that was, my Saint that is, When she beholds from her celestiall throne. (In which shee joyeth in eternall blis) My bitter penance, will my case bemone, And pitie me that living thus doo die: For heavenly spirits have compassion On mortall men, and rue their miserie.

So when I have with sorowe satisfide Th'importune fates, which vengeance on me

And th'heauens with long languor pacifide, She for pure pitie of my sufferance meeke, Will send for me; for which I daylie long, 300 And will till then my painfull penance eeke:

Hencefoorth I hate what euer Nature made. And in her workmanship no pleasure finde: For they be all but vaine, and quickly fade. So soone as on them blowes the Northern winder They tarrie not, but flit and fall away. Leauing behind them nought but griefe of minde.

And mocking such as thinke they long will stay

I hate the heaven, because it doth withhold Me from my loue, and eke my loue from me. I hate the earth, because it is the mold Of fleshly slime and fraile mortalitie: I hate the fire, because to nought it flyes, I hate the Ayre, because sighes of it be, I hate the Sea, because it teares supplyes.

I hate the day, because it lendeth light To see all things, and not my loue to see: I hate the darknesse and the drery night, Because they breed sad balefulnesse in mee: I hate all times, because all times doo five All So fast away, and may not stayed bee, But as a speedie post that passeth by.

I hate to speake, my voyce is spent with crying: I hate to heare, lowd plaints have duld mine

I hate to tast, for food withholds my dying: I hate to see, mine eyes are dimd with teares. I hate to smell, no sweet on earth is left: I hate to feele, my flesh is numbd with feares: So all my senses from me are bereft.

I hate all men, and shun all womankinde; The one, because as I they wretched are, The other, for because I doo not finde My loue with them, that wont to be their

And life I hate, because it will not last, And death I hate, because it life doth marre, And all I hate, that is to come or past.

So all the world, and all in it I hate. Because it changeth euer too and fro, And neuer standeth in one certaine state, 430 But still vnstedfast round about doth goe, Like a Mill wheele, in midst of miserie, Driuen with streames of wretchednesse and woe. That dying liues, and liuing still does dye.

So doo I liue, so doo I daylie die. And pine away in selfe-consuming paine, Sith she that did my vitall powres supplie. And feeble spirits in their force maintaine Is fetcht fro me, why seeke I to prolong My wearie daies in dolor and disdaine? Weep Shepheard, weep to make my vnder song. I Weep Shepheard weep to make my vnder song Why doo I longer liue in lifes despight? And doo not dye then in despight of death: Why doo I longer see this loathsome light, And doo in darknesse not abridge my breath, Sith all my sorrow should haue end thereby, And cares finde quiet; is it so vneath To leaue this life, or dolorous to dye?

To liue I finde it deadly dolorous;
For life drawes care, and care continuall woe:
Therefore to dye must needes be ioyeous,
And wishfull thing this sad life to forgoe.
But I must stay; I may it not amend,
My Daphne hence departing bad me so,
She bad me stay, till she for me did send.

Yet whilest I in this wretched vale doo stay, My wearie feete shall euer wandring be, That still I may be readie on my way, When as her messenger doth come for me: Ne will I rest my feete for feeblenesse, 460 Ne will I rest my limmes for frailtie, Ne will I rest mine eyes for heauinesse.

But as the mother of the Gods, that sought For faire Eurydice her daughter deere Throghout the world, with wofull heavie thought;

So will I trauell whilest I tarrie heere, Ne will I lodge, ne will I euer lin, Ne when as drouping *Titan* draweth neere To loose his teeme, will I take vp my Inne.

Ne sleepe (the harbenger of wearie wights)
Shall euer lodge vpon mine ey-hds more; 471
Ne shall with rest refresh my fainting sprights,
Nor failing force to former strength restore:
But I will wake and sorrow all the night
With Philumene, my fortune to deplore,
With Philumene, the partner of my plight.

And euer as I see the starres to fall, And vnder ground to goe, to give them light Which dwell in darknes, I to minde will call, How my faire Starre (that shinde on me so bright) 480

Fell sodainly, and faded vnder ground; Since whose departure, day is turnd to night, And night without a *Venus* starre is found.

But soone as day doth shew his deawie face, And calls foorth men vnto their toylsome trade, I will withdraw me to some darksome place, Or some deepe caue, or solitarie shade; There will I sigh and sorrow all day long, And the huge burden of my cares vnlade: 489 Weep Shepheard, weep, to make my vndersong.

Hencefoorth mine eyes shall neuer more behold Faire thing on earth, ne feed on false delight Of ought that framed is of mortall moulde, Sith that my fairest flower is faded quight: For all I see is vaine and transitorie, Ne will be helde in anie stedfast plight, But in a moment loose their grace and glorie.

And ye fond men on fortunes wheele that ride, Or in ought vnder heauen repose assurance, Be it riches, beautie, or honors pride: 500 Be sure that they shall haue no long endurance, But ere ye be aware will flit away; Fornought of themis yours, but th' onely vsance Of a small time, which none ascertaine may.

And ye true Louers, whom desastrous chaunce Hath farre exiled from your Ladies grace, To mourne in sorrow and sad sufferaunce, When ye doo heare me in that desert place Lamenting lowde my Daphnes Elegie, Helpe me to wayle my miserable case, 510 And when life parts, youchsafe to close mine eye.

And ye more happic Louers, which enioy The presence of your dearest loues delight, When ye doo heare my sorrowfull annoy, Yet pittie me in your empassiond spright, And thinke that such mishap, as chaunst to me, May happen vnto the most happiest wight; For all mens states alike vnstedfast be.

And ye my fellow Shepheards, which do feed Your carelesse flocks on hils and open plaines, With better fortune, than did me succeed, 521 Remember yet my vndeserued paines; And when ye heare, that I am dead or slaine, Lament my lot, and tell your fellow swaines That sad Alcyon dyde in lifes disdaine.

And ye faire Damsels, Shepheards dere delights, That with your loues do their rude hearts possesse.

When as my hearse shall happen to your sightes, Vouchsafe to deck the same with Cyparesse; And euer sprinckle brackish teares among, 530 In pitie of my vndeseru'd distresse, The which I wretch, endured haue thus long.

And ye poore Pilgrimes, that with restlesse toyle Wearie your selues in wandring desert wayes, Till that you come, where ye your vowes assoyle,

When passing by ye read these wofull layes On my graue written, rue my *Daphnes* wrong, And mourne for me that languish out my dayes: Cease Shepheard, cease, and end thy vndersong. Thus when he ended had his heauie plaint,
The heauiest plaint that euer I heard
sound,
541

His cheekes wext pale, and sprights began to faint,

As if againe he would have fallen to ground; Which when I saw, I (stepping to him light) Amound him out of his stonic swound, And gan him to recomfort as I might.

But he no waie recomforted would be,
Nor suffer solace to approach him nie.
But casting vp a sdeinfull eie at me,
That in his traunce I would not let him lie,
Did rend his haire, and beat his blubbred face
As one disposed wilfullie to die,
That I sore grieu'd to see his wretched case.

Tho when the pang was somewhat ouerpast, And the outragious passion nigh appeased, I him desirde, sith daie was ouercast, And darke night fast approched, to be pleased To turne aside vnto my Cabinet, And staie with me, till he were better eased Of that strong stownd, which him so sore beset.

But by no meanes I could him win thereto, Ne longer him intreate with me to staie, But without taking leaue, he foorth did goe With staggring pace and dismall lookes dismay,

As if that death he in the face had seene, Or hellish hags had met vpon the way: But what of him became I cannot weene.

HINIS.

# COLIN CLOVTS Come home againe.

By Ed. Spencer.



LONDON
Printed for VV illiam Ponfonbie.

1 5 9 5.

### TO THE RIGHT

### worthy and noble Knight

Sir Walter Raleigh, Captaine of her Maiesties Guard, Lord Wardein of the Stanneries, and Lieutenant of the Countie of

Cornwall.

 $(\cdot,\cdot)$ 

SIR, that you may see that I am not fuuours and sundrie good turnes shewed to me at alwaies ydle as yee thinke, though not my late being in England, and with your good greatly well occupied, nor altogether undutifull, countenance protect against the malice of euil though not precisely officious, I make you present of this simple pastorall, unworthie of your higher conceipt for the meanesse of the stile, but agreeing with the truth in circumstance and matter. The which I humbly beseech you to accept in part of paiment of the infinite debt in which I acknowledge my selfe bounden unto you, for your singular !

countenance protect against the malice of euill mouthes, which are alwaies wide open to carpe at and misconstrue my simple meaning. I pray continually for your happinesse. From my house of Kilcolman the 27. of December. 1591.

Yours euer humbly.

Ed. St.

### COLIN CLOVTS come home againe.

That after Tityrus first sung his lay, Laies of sweet loue, without rebuke or blame. Sate (as his custome was) vpon a day,

Charming his oaten pipe vnto his peres, The shepheard swaines that did about him

Who all the while with greedie listfull eares, Did stand astonisht at his curious skill. Like hartlesse deare, dismayd with thunders

At last when as he piped had his fill, He rested him: and sitting then around, One of those groomes (a iolly groome was he, As euer piped on an outen reed, And lou'd this shepheard dearest in degree, Hight Hobbinol) gan thus to him areed.

Colin my liefe, my life, how great a losse Had all the shepheards nation by thy lacke? And I poore swaine of many greatest crosse: That sith thy Muse first since thy turning backe

"He shepheards boy (best knowen by that | Was heard to sound as she was wont on hye, Hast made vs all so blessed and so blythe. 21 Whilest thou wast hence, all dead in dole did lie: The woods were heard to waile full many a

> And all their birds with silence to complaine: The fields with faded flowers did seem to mourne, And all their flocks from feeding to refraine: The running waters wept for thy returne, And all their fish with languour did lament: But now both woods and fields, and floods

Sith thou art come, their cause of meriment, 30 That vs late dead, hast made againe aliue: But were it not too painfull to repeat The passed fortunes, which to thee befell In thy late voyage, we thee would entreat, Now at thy leisure them to vs to tell.

To whom the shepheard gently answered

Hobbin thou temptest me to that I couet: For of good passed newly to discus, By dubble vsurie doth twise renew it.

And since I saw that Angels blessed eie, 40 Her worlds bright sun, her heauens fairest light.

My mind full of my thoughts satietie,
Doth feed on sweet contentment of that sight:
Since that same day in nought I take delight,
Ne feeling haue in any earthly pleasure,
But in remembrance of that glorious bright,
My hies sole blisse, my hearts eternall threasure.
Wake then my pipe, my sleepie Muse awake,
Till I haue told her praises lasting long:
Hobbin desires, thou maist it not forsake,

Harke then ye iolly shepheards to my song.

With that they all gan throng about him

With hungrie eares to heare his harmonie: The whiles their flocks deuoyd of dangers feare, Did round about them feed at libertie.

One day (quoth he) I sat, (as was my trade) Vnder the foote of *Mole* that mountaine hore, Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade, Of the greene alders by the *Mullass* shore: There a straunge shepheard chaunst to find me

Whether allured with my pipes delight, Whose pleasing sound yshrilled far about, Or thither led by chaunce, I know not right: Whom when I asked from what place he came, And how he hight, himselfe he did ycleepe, The shepheard of the Ocean by name. And said he came far from the main-sea deene.

He sitting me beside in that same shade, Prouoked me to plaie some pleasant fit, And when he heard the musicke which I made, He found himselfe full greatly pleasd at it: 71 Yet æmuling my pipe, he tooke in hond My pipe before that æmuled of many, And plaid theron; (for well that skill he cond) Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any. He pip'd, I sung; and when he sung, I piped, By chaunge of turnes, each making other mery, Neither enuying other, nor enuied, So piped we, yntill we both were weary.

There interrupting him, a bonie swaine, 80 That Cuddy hight, him thus atweene bespake: And should it not thy readie course restraine, I would request thee Colin, for my sake, To tell what thou didst sing, when he did plaie. For well I weene it worth recounting was, Whether it were some hymne, or morall laie, Or carol made to praise thy loued lasse.

Nor of my loue, nor of my losse (quoth he). I then did sing, as then occasion fell: For loue had me forlorne, forlorne of me, oo That made me in that desart chose to dwell.

But of my riuer Bregogs loue I soong, Which to the shiny Mulla he did beare, And yet doth beare, and euer will, so long As water doth within his bancks appeare.

Of fellow ship (said then that bony Boy)
Record to vs that louely lay againe:
The staie whereof, shall nought these eares
annov.

Who all that Colin makes, do couet faine.

Heare then (quoth he) the tenor of my tale,
In sort as I it to that shepheard told:

No leasing new, nor Grandams fable stale,
But auncient truth confirm'd with credence old.

Old father Mole, (Mole hight that mountain gray
That walls the Northside of Armulla dale)

That walls the Northside of Armulla dale)
He had a daughter fresh as floure of May,
Which gaue that name vnto that pleasant vale;
Mulla the daughter of old Mole, so hight
The Nimph, which of that water course has
charge,

That springing out of Mole, doth run downe right
To Buttenant, where spreading forth at large, It gineth name vnto that auncient Cittie.
Which Kilnemullah eleped is of old:
Whose ragged ruines breed great ruth and pittie,

To trauailers, which it from far behold. Full faine she lou'd, and was belou'd full faine, Of her owne brother riuer, Bregog hight, So hight because of this deceitfull traine, Which he with Mulla wrought to win delight. But her old sire more carefull of her good, 120 And meaning her much better to preferre, Did thinke to match her with the neighbour flood.

Which Allo hight, Broad water called farre:
And wrought so well with his continuall paine,
That he that riuer for his daughter wonne:
The dowre agreed, the day assigned plaine,
The place appointed where it should be doone.
Nath lesse the Nymph her former liking held;
For loue will not be drawne, but must be
ledde.

And Bregog did so well her fancie weld,
130
That her good will he got her first to wedde.
But for her father sitting still on hie,
Did warily still watch which way she went,
And eke from far obseru'd with lealous eie,
Which way his course the wanton Bregog bent,
Him to deceiue for all his watchfull ward,
The wily louer did deuise this slight:
First into many parts his streame he shar'd,
That whilest the one was watcht, the other
might

Passe vnespide to meete her by the way; 140
And then besides, those little streames so
broken

He vnder ground so closely did conuay,
That of their passage doth appeare no token,
Till they into the Mullaes water slide
So secretly did he his loue enioy:
Yet not so secret, but it was descride,
And told her father by a shepheards boy.
Who wondrous wroth for that so foule despight,
In great auenge did roll downe from his hill
Huge mightie stones, the which encomber might
His passage, and his water-courses spill. 151
So of a Riuer, which he was of old,
He none was made, but scattred all to nought,
And lost emong those rocks into him rold,
Did lose his name: so deare his loue he bought.
Which house said him Thestulis basude

Which having said, him Thestylis bespake, Now by my life this was a mery lay: Worthie of Colin selfe, that did it make. But read now eke of friendship I thee pray, What dittie did that other shepheard sing? For I do couet most the same to heare. As men vse most to couet forreine thing. That shall I eke (quoth he) to you declare. His song was all a lamentable lay, Of great vnkindnesse, and of vsage hard, Of Cynthia the Ladie of the sea. Which from her presence faultlesse him debard. And euer and anon with singults rife. He cryed out, to make his vndersong Ah my loues queene, and goddesse of my life, Who shall me pittie, when thou doest me wrong?

Then gan a gentle bony lasse to speake,
That *Marin* hight, Right well he sure did
plaine:

That could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure breake,

And moue to take him to her grace againe. But tell on further *Colin*, as befell Twixt him and thee, that thee did hence dissuade.

When thus our pipes we both had wearied well.

(Quoth he) and each an end of singing made, He gan to cast great lyking to my lore, 180 And great dislyking to my lucklesse lot: That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore, Into that waste, where I was quite forgot. The which to leaue, thenceforth he counseld mee.

Vnmeet for man, in whom was ought regardfull, And wend with him, his *Cynthia* to see: Whose grace was great, and bounty most rewardfull.

Besides her peerlesse skill in making well
And all the ornaments of wondrous wit,
Such as all womankynd did far excell:
Such as the world admyr'd and praised it:
So what with hope of good, and hate of ill,
He me perswaded forth with him to fare:
Nought tooke I with me, but mine oaten quill:
Small needments else need shepheard toprepare.
So to the sea we came; the sea? that is
A world of waters heaped vp on hie,
Rolling like mountaines in wide wildernesse,
Hornble, hideous, roaring with hoarse crie.

And is the sea (quoth Coridon) so fearfull?

Fearful much more (quoth he) then hart can
fear:

201

Thousand wyld beasts with deep mouthes gaping direfull

Therin stil wait poore passengers to teare.
Who life doth loath, and longs death to behold,
Before he die, alreadie dead with feare,
And yet would liue with heart halfe stonie
cold.

Let him to sea, and he shall see it there.
And yet as ghastly dreadfull, as it seemes,
Bold men presuming life for gaine to sell,
Dare tempt that gulf, and in those wandring
stremes

Seek waies vnknowne, waies leading down to

For as we stood there waiting on the strond, Behold an huge great vessell to vs came, Dauncing upon the waters back to lond, As if it scornd the daunger of the same, Yet was it but a wooden frame and fraile, Glewed togither with some subtile matter, Yet had it armes and wings, and head and taile, And life to moue it selfe upon the water. Strange thing, how bold and swift the monster was.

That neither car'd for wynd, nor haile, nor raine,

Nor swelling waves, but thorough them did

So proudly, that she made them roare againe. The same aboord vs gently did receaue, And without harme vs farre away did beare, So farre that land our mother vs did leaue, And nought but sea and heauen to vs appeare. Then hartlesse quite and full of inward feare, That shepheard I besought to me to tell, 229 Vnder what skie, or in what world we were, In which I saw no liuing people dwell. Who me recomforting all that he might, Told me that that same was the Regiment Of a great shepheardesse, that Cynthia hight, His liege his Ladie, and his lifes Regent

If then (quoth I) a shepheardesse she bee, Where be the flockes and heards, which she doth

keep?

And where may I the hills and pastures see, On which she vseth for to feed her sheepe?
These be the hills (quoth he) the surges hie.
On which faire Cynthia her heards doth feed:
Her heards be thousand fishes with their frie,
Which in the bosome of the billowes breed.
Of them the shepheard which hath charge in chief.

Is Triton blowing loud his wreathed horne: At sound whereof, they all for their relief Wend too and fro at euening and at morne. And Proteus eke with him does driue his heard Of stinking Seales and Porepisces together, With hoary head and deawy dropping beard, Compelling them which way he list, and whether.

whether.

And I among the rest of many least,
Haue in the Ocean charge to me assignd:
Where I will liue or die at her beheast,
And serue and honour her with faithfull mind.
Besides an hundred Nymphs all heauenly
borne.

And of immortall race, doo still attend To wash faire *Cynthiaes* sheep, when they be shorne,

And fold them vp, when they have made an end. Those be the shepheards which my Cynthia serve.

At sea, beside a thousand moe at land: For land and sea my Cynthia doth descrue To haue in her commandement at hand. Thereat I wondred much, till wondring more And more, at length we land far off descryde: Which sight much gladed me; for much afore I feard, least land we neuer should haue ey de: Thereto our ship her course directly bent, As if the way she perfectly had knowne. 269 We Lunday passe; by that same name is men An Island, which the first to west was showne. From thence another world of land we kend, Floting amid the sea in icopardic, And round about with mightie white rocks

hemd,

Against the seas encroching crueltie.

Those same the shepheard told me, were the fields

In which dame Cynthia her landheards fed, Faire goodly fields, then which Armulla yields None fairer, nor more fruitfull to be red. The first to which we nigh approched, was An high headland thrust far into the sea, 281 Like to an horne, whereof the name it has, Yet seemed to be a goodly pleasant lea:

There did a loftie mount at first vs greet, Which did a stately heape of stones vpreare, That seemd amid the surges for to fleet, Much greater then that frame, which vs did beare:

There did our ship her fruitfull wombe valude, And put vs all ashore on Cymhias lund. What land is that thou meanst (then Cudde

What land is that thou meanst (then Cuddy sayd) 290

And is there other, then whereon we stand?
Ah Cuddy (then quoth Colin) thous a fon,
That hast not seene least part of natures worke:
Much more there is vnkend, then thou doest
kon.

And much more that does from mens knowledge lurke.

For that same land much larger is then this, And other men and beasts and birds doth feed: There fruitfull corne, faire trees, fresh herbageis And all things else that liuing creatures need. Besides most goodly riuers there appeare, 300 No whit inferiour to thy Funchins praise, Or vnto Allo or to Mulla cleare: Nought hast thou foolish boy seene in thy daies. But if that land be there (quoth he) as here, And is theyr heauen likewise there all one? And if like heauen, be heauenly graces there,

Like as in this same world where we do wone?

Both headen and headenly graces do much

more (Quoth he) abound in that same land, then this. For there all happic peace and plenteous store Conspire in one to make contented blisse: 311 No wayling there nor wretchednesse is heard, No bloodic issues nor no leprosies, No griesly famine, nor no raging sweard,

No nightly bodrags, nor no hue and cries;
The shepheards there abroad may safely lie,
On hills and downes, withouten dread or
daunger:

No rauenous wolues the good mans hope destroy,

Nor outlawes fell affray the forest raunger. There learned arts do florish in great honor, And Poets wits are had in peerlesse price: 321 Religion hath lay powre to rest vpon her, Aduancing vertue and suppressing vice. For end, all good, all grace there freely growes, Had people grace it gratefully to vse: For God his gifts there plenteously bestowes. But gracelesse men them greatly do abuse.

But say on further, then said Corylas,
The rest of thine aduentures, that betyded.
Foorth on our voyage we by land did passe,
(Quoth he) as that same shepheard still vs
guyded,
331

Vntill that we to Cynthiaes presence came: Whose glorie, greater then my simple thought, I found much greater then the former fame; Such greatnes I cannot compare to ought: But if I her like ought on earth might read, I would her lyken to a crowne of lillies. Vpon a virgin brydes adorned head, With Roses dight and Goolds and Daffadillies; Or like the circlet of a Turtle true. 340 In which all colours of the rainbow bee; Or like faire Phebes garlond shining new, In which all pure perfection one may see. But vaine it is to thinke by paragone Of earthly things, to judge of things divine: Her power, her mercy, and her wisedome, none Can deeme, but who the Godhead can define. Why then do I base shepheard bold and blind, Presume the things so sacred to prophane? More fit it is t'adore with humble mind. The image of the heavens in shape humane.

With that Alexis broke his tale asunder, Saying, By wondring at thy Cynthiaes praise, Colin, thy selfe thou mak'st vs more to wonder, And her vpraising, doest thy selfe vpraise. But let vs heare what grace she shewed thee, And how that shepheard strange, thy cause

aduanced?

The shepheard of the Ocean (quoth he)
Vnto that Godlesse grace me first enhanced,
And to mine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare, 360
That she thenceforth therein gan take delight,
And it desir'd at timely houres to heare,
All were my notes but rude and roughly
dight.

For not by measure of her owne great mynd, And wondrous worth she mott my simple song. But ioyd that country shepheard ought could fynd

Worth harkening to, emongst the learned throng.

Why? (said Alexis then) what needeth shee That is so great a shepheardesse her selfe, And hath so many shepheards in her fee, 370 To heare thee sing, a simple silly Elfe? Or be the shepheards which do serue her laesie, That they list not their mery pipes applie? Or be their pipes vntunable and craesie, That they cannot her honour worthylie?

Ah nay (said Colin) neither so, nor so: For better shepheards be not vnder skie, Nor better hable, when they list to blow Their pipes aloud, her name to glorifie. There is good Harpalus, now woxen aged 380 In faithfull seruice of faire Cynthia: And there is Corydon though meanly waged, Yet hablest wit of most I know this day.

And there is sad Aleyon bent to mourne, Though fit to frame an euerlasting dittie, Whose gentle spright for Daphnes death doth

Sweet layes of loue to endlesse plaints of pittie. Ah pensiue boy pursue that braue conceipt, In thy sweet Eglantine of Meriflure, Lift vp thy notes vnto their wonted height, 300 That may thy Muse and mates to mirth allure. There eke is Palin worthie of great praise, Albe he enuie at my rustick quill: And there is pleasing Alcon, could be raise His tunes from laies to matter of more skill. And there is old Palemon free from spight, Whose carefull pipe may make the hearer rew: Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right, That sung so long vntill quite hoarse he grew. And there is Alabaster throughly taught, 400 In all this skill, though knowen yet to few: Yet were he knowne to Cynthia as he ought. His Elisers would be redde anew. Who lives that can match that heroick song, Which he hath of that mightie Princesse made? O dreaded Dread, do not thy selfe that

wrong,
To let thy fame lie so in hidden shade:
But call it forth, O call him forth to thee,
To end thy glorie which he hath begun:
That when he finisht hath as it should be, 410
No brauer Poeme can be vnder Sun.
Nor Po nor Tyburs swans so much renowned,
Nor all the brood of Greece so highly praised,
Can match that Muse when it with bayes is
crowned.

And to the pitch of her perfection raised. And there is a new shepheard late vp sprong, The which doth all afore him far surpasse: Appearing well in that well tuned song, Which late he sung vnto a scornfull lasse. Yet doth his trembling Muse but lowly flie, As daring not too rashly mount on hight, 421 And doth her tender plumes as yet but trie, In loues soft laies and looser thoughts delight. Then rouze thy feathers quickly Daniell, And to what course thou please thy selfe advance:

But most me seemes, thy accent will excell, In Tragick plaints and passionate mischance. And there that shepheard of the Ocean is, That spends his wit in loues consuming smart: Full sweetly tempred is that Muse of his 430 That can empierce a Princes mightie hart. There also is (ah no, he is not now) But since I said he is, he quite is gone, Amyntas quite is gone and lies full low, Hauing his Amaryllis left to mone.

Helpe, O ye shepheards helpe ye all in this, Helpe Amaryllus this her losse to mourne: Her losse is yours, your losse Amontas is. Amyntas floure of shepheards pride forlorne: He whilest he liued was the noblest swaine. That ever piped in an oaten quill: Both did he other, which could pipe, maintaine, And eke could pipe himselfe with passing skill. And there though last not least is Aetion. A gentler shepheard may no where be found: Whose Muse full of high thoughts invention, Doth like himselfe Heroically sound. All these, and many others mo remaine. Now after Astrofell is dead and gone: But while as Astrofell did live and raine. Amongst all these was none his Paragone. All these do florish in their sundry kynd, And do their Cynthia immortall make: Yet found I lyking in her royall mynd, Not for my skill, but for that shepheards sake.

Then spake a louely lasse, hight Lucida, Shepheard, enough of shepheards thou hast told.

Which fauour thee, and honour Cynthia:
But of so many Nymphs which she doth hold
In her retinew, thou hast nothing sayd; 460
That seems, with none of them thou fauor
foundest.

Or art ingratefull to each gentle mayd, That none of all their due deserts resoundest.

As she is next her in nobilitie.

That I of gentle Mayds should ill descrue:
For that my selfe I do professe to be
Vassall to one, whom all my dayes I serue;
The beame of beautie sparkled from aboue,
The floure of vertue and pure chastitie,
The blossome of sweet ioy and perfect loue, 470
The pearle of peerlesse grace and modestie:
To her my thoughts I daily dedicate,
To her my heart I nightly martyrize:
To her my loue I lowly do prostrate,
To her my life I wholly sacrifice:
My thought, my heart, my loue, my life is sliee,

As she is next her in nobilitie.
Ne lesse praise worthie Galathea seemes,
Then best of all that honourable crew,
Faire Galathea with bright shining beames,
Inflaming feeble eyes that her do view.
She there then waited vpon Cynthia,
Yet there is not her won, but here with vs
About the borders of our rich Coshma,
Now made of Maa the Nymph delitious.
Ne lesse praiseworthie faire Newra is,
As she is next her in nobilitie.

And I hers euer onely, euer one: One euer I all vowed hers to bee, One euer I, and others neuer none.

Then thus Melissa said; Thrise happie Mayd, Whom thou doest so enforce to deifie: 481 That woods, and hills, and valleyes thou hast made

Her name to eccho vnto heauen hie.
But say, who else vouchsafed thee of grace?
They all (quoth he) me graced goodly well,
That all I praise, but in the highest place,
\*\*Frania, sister vnto \*\*Astrofell,

In whose braue mynd, as in a golden cofer, All heauenly gifts and riches locked are: More rich then pearles of Ynde, or gold of Opher, And in her sex more wonderfull and rare. 491 Ne lesse praise worthie I Theana read, Whose goodly beames though they be ouer dight

With mourning stole of carefull wydowhead, Yet through that darksome vale do glister bright:

She is the well of bountie and braue mynd, Excelling most in glorie and great light: She is the ornament of womankind, And Courts chief garlond with all vertues dight. Therefore great Cynthia her in chiefest grace Doth hold, and next vnto her selfe aduance, Well worthie of so honourable place, 502 For her great worth and noble gouernance. Ne lesse praise worthie is her sister deare, Faire Marian, the Muses onely darling: Whose beautie shyneth as the morning cleare, With siluer deaw vipon the roses pearling. Ne lesse praise worthie is Mansilia, Best knowne by bearing vp great Cynthiaes

traine: That same is she to whom Daphnaida 510 Voon her neeces death I did complaine. She is the paterne of true womanhead, And onely mirrhor of feminitie: Worthie next after Cynthia to tread, As she is next her in nobilitie. Ne lesse praise worthie Galathea seemes, Then best of all that honourable crew. Faire Galathea with bright shining beames, Inflaming feeble eyes that her do view. She there then waited vpon Cynthia, Yet there is not her won, but here with vs About the borders of our rich Coshma. Now made of Maa the Nymph delitious. Ne lesse praisworthie faire Neara is, Neara ours, not theirs, though there she be, For of the famous Shure, the Nymph she is, She is the blosome of grace and curtesie, Adorned with all honourable parts: She is the braunch of true nobilitie, Belou'd of high and low with faithfull harts. Ne lesse praisworthie Stella do I read, Though nought my praises of her needed arre, Whom verse of noblest shepheard lately dead Hath prais'd and rais'd aboue each other starre.

Ne lesse praisworthie are the sisters three, The honor of the noble familie: Of which I meanest boast my selfe to be, And most that vnto them I am so nie. Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis, 540
Phillis the faire, is eldest of the three:
The next to her, is bountifull Charillis.
But th'youngest is the highest in degree.
Phyllis the floure of rare perfection,
Faire spreading forth her leaues with fresh delight,

That with their beauties amorous reflexion, Bereaue of sence each rash beholders sight. But sweet *Charillis* is the Paragone Of peerlesse price, and ornament of praise, Admyr'd of all, yet enuied of none, 550 Through the myld temperance of her goodly raies.

Thrice happie do I hold thee noble swaine, The which art of so rich a spoile possest, And it embracing deare without disdaine, Hast sole possession in so chaste a brest: Of all the shepheards daughters which there bee. (And yet there be the fairest vnder skie, Or that elsewhere I euer yet did see) A fairer Nymph yet neuer saw mine eie: She is the pride and primrose of the rest, 560 Made by the maker selfe to be admired: And like a goodly beacon high addrest, That is with sparks of heavenle beautie fired. But Amaryllis, whether fortunate, Or else vnfortunate may I aread, That freed is from Cupids yoke by fate, Since which she doth new bands aduenture

Shepheard what euer thou hast heard to be In this or that praysd diuersly apart, 569 In her thou maist them all assembled see, And seald vp in the threasure of her hart. Ne thee lesse worthie gentle Flauia, For thy chaste life and vertue I esteeme: Ne thee lesse worthie curteous Candida, For thy true loue and loyaltie I deeme. Besides yet many mo that Cynthia serue, Right noble Nymphs, and high to be com-

mended:
But if I all should praise as they deserue,
This sun would faile me ere I halfe had ended.
Therefore in closure of a thankfull mynd, 580
I deeme it best to hold eternally,
Their bounteous deeds and noble fauours shrynd,
Then by discourse them to indignifie.

So having said, Aglaura him bespake:
Colin, well worthie were those goodly fauours
Bestowd on thee, that so of them doest make,
And them requitest with thy thankfull labours.
But of great Cynthiass goodnesse and high grace,
Finish the storie which thou hast begunne.

More eath (quoth he) it is in such a case 590 How to begin, then know how to have donne.

540 | For euerie gift and euerie goodly meed. Which she on me bestowd, demaunds a day. And euerie day, in which she did a deed, Demaunds a yeare it duly to display. Her words were like a streame of honny fleeting. The which doth softly trickle from the hiue: Hable to melt the hearers heart vnweeting, And eke to make the dead againe aliue. Her deeds were like great clusters of ripe grapes, Which load the braunches of the fruitfull vine: Offring to fall into each mouth that gapes, And fill the same with store of timely wine. Her lookes were like beames of the morning Sun. Forth looking through the windowes of the East: When first the fleecie cattell have begun Voon the perled grasse to make their feast. Her thoughts are like the fume of Franckincence.

Which from a golden Censer forth doth rise:
And throwing forth sweet odours mounts fro
thence 610

In rolling globes vp to the vauted skies. There she beholds with high aspiring thought, The cradle of her owne creation: Emongst the seats of Angels heauenly wrought, Much like an Angell in all forme and fashion.

Colin (said Cuddy then) thou hast forgot Thy selfe, me seemes, too much, to mount so hie Such loftie flight, base shepheard seemeth not, From flocks and fields, to Angels and to skie.

True (answered he) but her great excellence, Lifts me aboue the measure of my might: 621 That being fild with furious insolence, I feele my selfe like one yrapt in spright. For when I thinke of her, as oft I ought, Then want I words to speake it fitly forth: And when I speake of her what I haue thought, I cannot thinke according to her worth. Yet will I thinke of her, yet will I speake. So long as life my limbs doth hold together, And when as death these vitall bands shall breake,

Her name recorded I will leaue for euer.
Her name in euery tree I will endosse,
That as the trees do grow, her name may grow:
And in the ground each where will it engrosse,
And fill with stones, that all men may it know.
The speaking woods and murmuring waters fall,
Her name lie teach in knowen termes to frame:
And eke mylambs when for their dams they call,
lie teach to call for Cynthia by name.
And long while after I am dead and rotten:
Amongst the shepheards daughters dancing
rownd.

My layes made of her shall not be forgotten.
But sung by them with flowry gyrlonds crownd.

And ye, who so ye be, that shall surviue:
When as ye heare her memory renewed,
Be witnesse of her bountie here aliue,
Which she to Colin her poore shepheard shewed.

Much was the whole assembly of those heards, Moov'd at his speech, so feelingly he spake: And stood awhile astonisht at his words, 650 Till Thestylis at last their silence brake, Saying, Why Colin, since thou foundst such grace With Cynthia and all her noble crew: Why didst thou euer leaue that happie place, In which such wealth might vnto thee accrew? And back returnedst to this barrein soyle, Where cold and care and penury do dwell: Here to keep sheepe, with hunger and with toyle,

Most wretched he, that is and cannot tell. Happie indeed (said Colin) I him hold, 600 That may that blessed presence still enjoy, ()f fortune and of enuy vncomptrold, Which still are wont most happie states t'annoy: But I by that which little while I prooued: Some part of those enormities did see, The which in Court continually hooued, And followd those which happie seemd to bee. Therefore I silly man, whose former dayes Had in rude fields bene altogether spent, Durst not aduenture such vnknowen wayes, Nor trust the guile of fortunes blandishment, But rather chose back to my sheep to tourne, Whose vtmost hardnesse I before had tryde, Then having learnd repentance late, to mourne Emongst those wretches which I there descryde.

Shepheard (said *Thestylis*) it seemes of spight Thou speakest thus gainst their felicitie, Which thou enuiest, rather then of right That ought in them blameworthie thou doest

Cause haue I none (quoth he) of cancred will.

To quite them ill, that me demeand so well:
But selfe-regard of priuate good or ill,
Moues me of each, so as I found, to tell,
And eke to warne yong shepheards wandring
wit,

Which through report of that liues painted blisse,

Abandon quiet home, to seeke for it,
And leaue their lambes to losse, misled amisse.
For sooth to say, it is no sort of life,
For shepheard fit to lead in that same place,
Where each one seeks with malice and with
strife,
600

To thrust downe other into foule disgrace, Himselfe to raise: and he doth soonest rise That best can handle his deceitfull wit, In subtil shifts, and finest sleights deuise, Either by slaundring his well deemed name, Through leasings lewd, and fained forgerie: Or else by breeding him some blot of blame, By creeping close into his secrecie; To which him needs a guilefull hollow hart, Masked with faire dissembling curtesie, 700 A filed toung furnisht with tearmes of art, No art of schoole, but Courtiers schoolery. For arts of schoole haue there small counten-

Counted but toyes to busic ydle braines,
And there professours find small maintenance,
But to be instruments of others gaines.
Ne is there place for any gentle wit,
Vulesse to please, it selfe it can applie:
But shouldred is, or out of doore quite shit,
As base, or blunt, vnmeet for melodie. 710
For each mans worth is measured by his weed,
As harts by hornes, or asses by their eares:
Yet asses been not all whose eares exceed,
Nor yet all harts, that hornes the highest beares.
For highest lookes haue not the highest mynd,
Nor haughtie words most full of highest
thoughts:

But are like bladders blowen vp with wynd,
That being prickt do vanish into noughts.
Euen such is all their vaunted vanitie,
Nought else but smoke, that fumeth soone away;
Such is their glorie that in simple eie 721
Seeme greatest, when their garments are most

So they themselues for praise of fooles do sell, And all their wealth for painting on a wall; With price whereof, they buy a golden bell, And purchace highest rowines in bowre and hall:

Whiles single Truth and simple honestie
Do wander vp and downe despys'd of all;
Their plaine attire such glorious gallantry 729
Disdaines so much, that none them in doth call.

Ah Colin (then said Hobbinol) the blame Which thou imputest, is too generall, As if not any gentle wit of name, Nor honest mynd might there be found at all. For well I wot, sith I my selfe was there. To wait on Lobbin (Lobbin well thou knewest) Full many worthie ones then waiting were, As euer else in Princes Court thou vewest. Of which, among you many yet remaine, 739 Whose names I cannot readily now ghesse: Those that poore Sutors papers do retaine, And those that skill of medicine professe. And those that do to Cynthia expound The ledden of straunge languages in charge: For Cynthia doth in sciences abound, And gives to their professors stipends large.

Therefore vniustly thou doest wyte them all, For that which thou mislikedst in a few.

Blame is (quoth he) more blamelesse generall, Then that which private errours doth pursew: For well I wot, that there amongst them bee, Full many persons of right worthic parts, 752 Both for report of spotlesse honestie, And for profession of all learned arts, Whose praise hereby no whit impaired is. Though blame do light on those that faultic bee, For all the rest do most-what fare amis, And yet their owne misfaring will not see: For either they be puffed vp with pride. Or fraught with enuie that their galls do swell, Or they their dayes to ydlenesse divide, Or drownded lie in pleasures wastefull well, In which like Moldwarps nousling still they lurke.

Vnmyndfull of chiefe parts of manlinesse, And do themselues for want of other worke, Vaine votaries of laesie loue professe, Whose seruice high so basely they ensew, That Cupid selfe of them ashamed is, And mustring all his men in Venus vew, Denies them quite for seruitors of his.

And is loue then (said Corylas) once knowne In Court, and his sweet lore professed there? I weened sure he was our God alone: And only woond in fields and forests here. Not so (quoth he) loue most aboundeth

For all the walls and windows there are writ, All full of loue, and loue, and loue my deare, And all their talke and studie is of it.

Ne any there doth braue or valiant seeme,
Vnlesse that some gay Mistresse badge he beares:

Ne any one himselfe doth ought esteeme, Vnlesse he swim in loue vp to the eares. But they of loue and of his sacred lere, (As it should be) all otherwise deuise, Then we poore shepheards are accustomd here, And him do sue and serue all otherwise. For with lewd speeches and licentious deeds, His mightie mysteries they do prophane, And vse his ydle name to other needs, But as a complement for courting vaine. 700 So him they do not serue as they professe, But make him serue to them for sordid vses, Ah my dread Lord, that doest liege hearts possesse,

Auenge thy selfe on them for their abuses. But we poore shepheards, whether rightly so, Or through our rudenesse into errour led, Do make religion how we rashly go, To serve that God, that is so greatly dred;

For him the greatest of the Gods we deeme. Borne without Syre or couples, of one kynd, For Venus selfe doth soly couples seeme, 801 Both male and female, through commixture iovad So pure and spotlesse Cupid forth she brought. And in the gardens of Adonis nurst: Where growing, he his owne perfection wrought. And shortly was of all the Gods the first. Then got he bow and shafts of gold and lead. In which so fell and puissant he grew, That *love* himselfe his powre began to dread. And taking vp to heauen, him godded new. From thence he shootes his arrowes every where Into the world, at randon as he will. On vs fraile men, his wretched vassals here. Like as himselfe vs pleaseth, saue or spill. So we him worship, so we him adore With humble hearts to heaven volifted hie. That to true loues he may vs euermore Preferre, and of their grace vs dignifie: Ne is there shepheard, ne yet shepheards swaine, What euer feeds in forest or in field, That dare with euil deed or leasing vaine Blaspheme his powre, or termes vnworthie yield Shepheard it seemes that some celestiall rage

Shepheard it seemes that some celestial rage Of loue (quoth Cuddy) is breath'd into thy brest, That powreth forth these oracles so sage, Of that high powre, wherewith thou art possest. But neuer wist I till this present day Albe of loue I alwayes humbly deemed, That he was such an one, as thou doest say. And so religiously to be esteemed.

\*\*Note: That God the Priest thou shouldest becomed that God the Priest thou shouldest becomed that God the Well may it seeme by this thy deep insight. That of that God the Priest thou shouldest become the control of the mysterie of his might, As if his godhead thou didst present see.

Of loues perfection perfectly to speake,

Or of his nature rightly to define. Indeed (said Colin) passeth reasons reach, And needs his priest t'expresse his powre diume. For long before the world he was y'bore And bred aboue in Venus bosome deare: 840 For by his powre the world was made of yore, And all that therein wondrous doth appeare. For how should else things so far from attone And so great enemies as of them bee, Be euer drawne together into one. And taught in such accordance to agree? Through him the cold began to couet heat. And water fire; the light to mount on hie, And th'heauie downe to peize; the hungry t'eat And vovdnesse to seeke full satietie. So being former foes, they wexed friends, And gan by litle learne to loue each other: So being knit, they brought forth other kynds Out of the fruitfull wombe of their great mother.

Then first gan heaven out of darknesse dread For to appeare, and brought forth chearfull day: Next gan the earth to shew her naked head. Out of deep waters which her drownd alway. And shortly after, everie living wight Crept forth like wormes out of her slimie nature. Soone as on them the Suns life giving light. Had powred kindly heat and formall feature. Thenceforth they gan each one his like to loue, And like himselfe desire for to beget, The Lyon chose his mate, the Turtle Doue Her deare, the Dolphin his owne Dolphinet: But man that had the sparke of reasons might, More then the rest to rule his passion, Chose for his love the fairest in his sight. Like as himselfe was fairest by creation. For beautie is the bayt which with delight Doth man allure, for to enlarge his kynd, Beautie the burning lamp of heavens light, Darting her beames into each feeble mynd: Against whose powre, nor God nor man can fynd. Defence, ne ward the daunger of the wound. But being hurt, seeke to be medicand Of her that first did stir that mortall stownd. Then do they cry and call to love apace. With praiers lowd importuning the skie. 880 Whence he them heares, and when he list shew

Doesgraunt themgrace that otherwise would die. So loue is Lord of all the world by right, And rules the creatures by his powrfull saw: All being made the vassalls of his might, Through secret sence which therto doth them draw.

Thus ought all louers of their lord to deeme: And with chaste heart to honor him alway: But who so else doth otherwise esteeme, Are outlawes, and his lore do disobay. So For their desire is base, and doth not merit, The name of loue, but of disloyall lust: Ne mongst true louers they shall place inherit, but as Exuls out of his court be thrust.

So hauing said, Melissa spake at will, Celin, thou now full deeply hast divynd: Of loue and beautie, and with wondrous skill, Hast Cupid selfe depainted in his kynd. To thee are all true louers greatly bound, Bo that doest their cause so mightily defend: But most, all wemen are thy debtors found, That doest their bountiestill so much commend.

That ill (said Hobbinol) they him requite, For having loued euer one most deare: He is repayd with scorne and foule despite, That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth heare.

Indeed (said Lucid) I have often heard
Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed:
For being to that swaine too cruell hard,
That her bright glorie else hath much defamed.
But who can tell what cause had that faire
Mayd

To vise him so that vised her so well:
Or who with blame can justly her vibrayd,
For louing not? for who can loue compell?
And sooth to say, it is foolhardie thing,
Rashly to wyten creatures so diuine,
For demigods they be and first did spring
From heauen, though graft in frailnesse
feminine.

And well I wote, that oft I heard it spoken, How one that fairest *Helene* did reuile: 920 Through judgement of the Gods to been ywroken

Lost both his eyes and so remaynd long while, Till he recanted had his wicked rimes, And made amends to her with treble praise: leware therefore, ye groomes, I read betimes, How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise. Ah shepheards (then said Colin) ye ne weet How great a guilt vpon your heads ye draw:

To make so bold a doome with words vnmeet, Of thing celestiall which ye neuer saw. 930 For she is not like as the other crew Of shepheards daughters which emongst you

Of shepheards daughters which emongst you bee,

But of diuine regard and heauenly hew, Excelling all that euer ye did see.

Not then to her that scorned thing so base, But to my selfe the blame that lookt so hie: So hie her thoughts as she her selfe haue place, And loath each lowly thing with loftie eie. Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to grant To simple swaine, sith her I may not loue: Yet that I may her honour paravant, 941 And praise her worth, though far my wit aboue, Such grace shall be some guerdon for the griefe, And long affliction which I haue endured: Such grace sometimes shall giue me some

reliefe,
And ease of paine which cannot be recured.
And ye my fellow shepheards which do see
And heare the languours of my too long dying,
Vnto the world for euer witnesse bee,
That hers I die, nought to the world denying,
This simple trophe of her great conquest. 951

So having ended, he from ground did rise, And after him vprose eke all the rest: All loth to part, but that the glooming skies Warnd them to draw their bleating flocks to

FINIS.



### ASTROPHEL.

# A Pastorall Elegie vpon

the death of the most Noble and valorous Knight, Sir Philip Sidney.

#### Dedicated

To the most beautifull and vertuous Ladie, the Countesse of Essex.



# Astrophel.

Hepheurds that wont on pipes of oaten reed. Off times to plaine your loues concealed smart: And with your piteous layes have learnd to breed Compassion in a countrey lasses hart. Heirken ve gentle shepheards to my song, and tlace my dolefull plaint your plaints emong. To you alone I sing this mournfull verse, The mournfulst verse that ever man heard tell: To you whose softened hearts it may empierse, With dolours dart for death of Astrophel. To you I sing and to none other wight, For well I wot my rymes bene rudely dight. Yet as they been, if any nycer wit Shall hap to heare, or couet them to read : I hinke he, that such are for such ones most fit, Made not to please the living but the dead. .Ind if in him found pity euer place, Let him be moov'd to bity such a case.

A Gentle Shepheard borne in Arcady,
Of gentlest race that ener shepheard bore:
About the grassie bancks of Hamony,
Did keepe his sheep, his little stock and store.
Full carefully he kept them day and night,
In fairest fields, and Astrophel he hight.
Young Astrophel the pride of shepheards praise,
Young Astrophel the rusticke lasses loue:
Far passing all the pastors of his daies,
In all that seemly shepheard might behoue, to
In one thing onely fayling of the best,
That he was not so happie as the rest.
For from the time that first the Nymph his
mother

Hun forth did bring, and taught her lambs to feed, A sclender swaine excelling far each other, In comely shape, like her that did him breed,

He grew vp fast in goodnesse and in grace, And doubly faire wox both in mynd and face. Which daily more and more he did augment, With gentle ysage and demeanure myld: 20 That all mens hearts with secret rauishment He stole away, and weetingly beguyld. Ne spight it selfe that all good things doth spill, Found ought in him, that she could say was ill. His sports were faire, his ioyance innocent, Sweet without sowre, and honny without gall: And he himselfe seemd made for meriment, Merily masking both in bowre and hall. There was no pleasure nor delightfull play, When Astrophel so ever was away.

For he could pipe and daunce, and caroli sweet, Emongst the shepheards in their shearing feast: As Somers larke that with her song doth greet The dawning day forth comming from the East. And layer of love he also could compose. Thrise happie she, whom he to praise did chose. Full many Maydens often did him woo. Them to vouchsafe emongst his rimes to name, Or make for them as he was wont to doo. For her that did his heart with loue inflame. For which they promised to dight, for him, 41 Gay chapelets of flowers and gyrlonds trim. Andmanya Nymph both of the wood and brooke, Soone as his oaten pipe began to shrill: Both christall wells and shadie groues forsooke, To heare the charmes of his enchanting skill. And brought him presents, flowers if it were prime. Or mellow fruit if it were harnest time.

Or henow run it it were hardest whit.
Yet wood Gods for them often sighed sore: 50
Ne for their gifts vnworthie of his wit,
Yet not vnworthie of the countries store.
For one alone he cared, for one he sight,
His lifes desire, and his deare loues delight.
Stella the faire, the fairest star in skie,
As faire as Venus or the fairest faire:
A fairer star saw neuer huing eie,
Shothersharppointedbrames throughpurestaire.
Her he did loue, her he alone did honor,
His thoughts, his rimes, his songs were all ypon

To her he vowd the seruice of his daies, On her he spent the riches of his wit: For her he made hymnes of immortall praise, Of onely her he sung, he thought, he writ. Her, and but her, of lone he worthie deemed, For all the rest but litle he esteemed.

her.

Ne her with ydle words alone he wowed, And verses vaine (yet verses are not vaine) But with braue deeds to her sole service vowed, And bold atchieuements her did entertaine. 70 For both in deeds and words he nourtred was, Both wise and hardie (too hardie alas).

In wrestling nimble, and in renning swift,
II: In shooting steddie, and in swimming strong:
Well made to strike, to throw, to leape to lift,
And all the sports that shepheards are emong.
In euery one he vanquisht euery one,
He vanquisht all, and vanquisht was of none.

Besides, in hunting, such felicitie,
Or rather infelicitie he found:

That euery field and forest far away,
He sought, where saluage beasts do most
abound.

No beast so saluage but he could it kill, No chace so hard, but he therein had skill.

Such skill matcht with such courage as he had, Did prick him foorth with proud desire of praise:

To seek abroad, of daunger nought y'drad, His mistresse name, and his owne fame to raise. What needeth perill to be sought abroad, Since round about vs. it doth make aboad?

It fortuned, as he that perilous game In forreine soyle pursued far away: Into a forest wide and waste he came Where store he heard to be of saluage pray. So wide a forest and so waste as this, Nor famous Ardeyn, nor fowle Arlo is.

There his welwouen toyles and subtil traines He laid, the brutish nation to enwrap: So well he wrought with practise and with paines,

That he of them great troups did soone entrap. Full happie man (misweening much) was hee, So rich a spoile within his power to see.

Eftsoones all heedlesse of his dearest hale, Full greedily into the heard he thrust: To slaughter them, and worke their finall bale, Least that his toyle should of their troups be brust.

Wide wounds emongst them many one he made, Now with his sharp borespear, now with his blade.

His care was all how he them all might kill,
That none might scape (so partiall vnto none)
Ill mynd so much to mynd anothers ill,
As to become vnmyndfull of his owne.
But pardon that vnto the cruell skies,
That from himselfe to them withdrew his eies.

So as he rag'd emongst that beastly rout, A cruell beast of most accursed brood Vpon him turnd (despeyre makes cowards stout) And with fell tooth accustomed to blood, 118 Launched his thigh with so mischieuous might, That it both bone and muscles ryued quight.

So deadly was the dint and deep the wound, And so hugestreames of blood thereout did flow, That he endured not the direfull stound, But on the cold deare earth himselfe did throw. The whiles the captue heard his nets did rend, And hauing none to let, to wood did wend.

Ah where were ye this while his shepheard peares. To whom aliue was nought so deare as hee: And ve faire Mayds the matches of his yeares Which in his grace did boast you most to bee? Ah where were ye, when he of you had need. To stop his wound that wondrously did bleed? Ah wretched boy the shape of dreryhead. And sad ensample of mans suddein end: Full litle faileth but thou shalt be dead. Vnpitied, vnplaynd, of foe or frend. Whilest none is nigh, thine eylids up to close, And kisse thy lips like faded leaves of rose. A sort of shepheards sewing of the chace, As they the forest raunged on a day: By fate or fortune came vnto the place. Where as the lucklesse boy yet bleeding lay. Yet bleeding lay, and yet would still have bled, Had not good hap those shepheards thether led. They stopt his wound (too late to stop it was) And in their armes then softly did him reare: Tho (as he wild) vnto his loued lasse, His dearest loue him dolefully did beare. The dolefulst beare that euer man did see, Was Astrophel, but dearest vnto mee. She when she saw her loue in such a plight, With crudled blood and filthie gore deformed: That wont to be with flowers and gyrlonds dight, And her deare fauours dearly well adorned, Her face, the fairest face, that eye mote see, She likewise did deforme like him to bee. Her yellow locks that shone so bright and long, As Sunny beames in fairest somers day She fiersly tore, and with outragious wrong From her red cheeks the roses rent away. 160 And her faire brest the threasury of iov. She spoyld thereof, and filled with annoy. His palled face impictured with death, She bathed oft with teares and dried oft: And with sweet kisses suckt the wasting breath, Out of his lips like lillies pale and soft. And oft she cald to him, who answerd nought, But onely by his lookes did tell his thought. The rest of her impatient regret, And piteous mone the which she for him made, No toong can tell, nor any forth can set, 171 But he whose heart like sorrow did inuade. At last when paine his vitall powres had spent, His wasted life her weary lodge forwent. Which when she saw, she staied not a whit, But after him did make vntimely haste: Forth with her ghost out of her corps did flit, And followed her make like Turtle chaste.

To prove that death their hearts cannot divide,

Which living were in love so firmly tide.

The Gods which all things see, this same beheld. And pittying this paire of louers trew. Transformed them there lying on the field, Into one flowre that is both red and blew. It first growes red, and then to blew doth fade. Like Astrophel, which thereinto was made. And in the midst thereof a star appeares, As fairly formd as any star in skyes: Resembling Stella in her freshest yeares, Forth darting beames of beautic from her eyes, And all the day it standeth full of deow. 101 Which is the teares, that from her eyes did flow. That hearbe of some. Starlight is cald by name. Of others Penthia, though not so well But thou where euer thou doest finde the same, From this day forth do call it Astrophel. And when so euer thou it vp doest take, Do pluck it softly for that shepheards sake. Hereof when tydings far abroad did passe. The shepheards all which loued him full deare, And sure full deare of all he loued was. Did thether flock to see what they did heare. And when that pitteous spectacle they vewed. The same with bitter teares they all bedewed. And every one did make exceeding mone. With inward anguish and great griefe opprest: And every one did weep and waile, and mone, And meanes deviz'd to shew his sorrow best. That from that houre since first on grassie

Shepheards kept sheep, was not like mourning

But first his sister that Clorinda hight, The gentlest shepheardesse that lives this day: And most resembling both in shape and spright Her brother deare, began this dolefull lay. Which least I marre the sweetnesse of the vearse.

In sort as she it sung, I will rehearse.

Y me, to whom shall I my case complaine.

That may compassion my impatient griefe? Or where shall I enfold my inward paine, That my enriuen heart may find reliefe? Shall I vnto the heavenly powres it show? Or vnto earthly men that dwell below? To heavens? ah they alas the authors were. And workers of my vnremedied wo: For they foresee what to vs happens here, And they foresaw, yet suffred this be so.

From them comes good, from them comes also il.

That which they made, who can them warne to spill.

To men? ah they alas like wretched bee, And subject to the heavens ordinance: Bound to abide what ever they decree. Their best redresse, is their best sufferance.

How then can they, like wretched, comfort

The which no lesse, need comforted to bee? Then to my selfe will I my sorrow mourne. Sith none aliue like sorrowfull remaines: And to my selfe my plaints shall back retourne, To pay their vsury with doubled paines.

The woods, the hills, the rivers shall resound The mournfull accent of my sorrowes ground.

Woods, hills and rivers, now are desolate, Sith he is gone the which them all did grace: And all the fields do waile their widow state. Sith death their fairest flowre did late deface.

The fairest flowre in field that ever grew. Was Astrophel; that was, we all may rew,

What cruell hand of cursed foe vnknowne, 31 Hath cropt the stalke which bore so faire a flowre?

Vitimely cropt, before it well were growne, And cleane defaced in vntimely howre.

Great losse to all that ever him did see, Great losse to all, but greatest losse to mee.

Breake now your gyrlonds, O ve shephcards

Sith the faire flowre, which them adorad, is gon: The flowre, which them adornd, is gone to ashes,

Neuer againe let lasse put gyrlond on. In stead of gyrlond, weare sad Cypres nowe, And bitter Elder, broken from the bowe.

Ne euer sing the loue-layes which he made, Who euer made such layes of loue as hee? Ne euer read the riddles, which he sayd Vnto your sclues, to make you mery glee.

Your mery glee is now laid all abed, Your mery maker now alasse is dead.

Death the denourer of all worlds delight, Hath robbed you and reft fro me my joy: 50 Both you and me, and all the world he quight Hath robd of joyance, and left sad annoy.

loy of the world, and shepheards pride was

Shepheards hope neuer like againe to see. Oh death that hast vs of such riches reft, Tell vs at least, what hast thou with it done? What is become of him whose flowre here left Is but the shadow of his likenesse gone.

Scarse like the shadow of that which he was, Nought like, but that he like a shade did pas.

But that immortall spirit, which was deckt With all the dowries of celestiall grace: By soueraine choyce from th'heuenly quires

select,
And lineally deriv'd from Angels race,
O what is now of it become, aread.
Ay me, can so diuine a thing be dead?
Ah no: it is not dead, ne can it die,
But liues for aie, in blisfull Paradise:
Where like a new-borne babe it soft doth lie.
In bed of lillies wrapt in tender wise.

And compast all about with roses sweet,
And daintie violets from head to feet.

There thousand birds all of celestiall brood,
To him do sweetly caroll day and night:
And with straungenotes, of him well vnderstood,
Lull him a sleep in Angelick delight;

Whilest in sweet dreame to him presented bee Immortall beauties, which no eye may see.

But he them sees and takes exceeding pleasure Of their diuine aspects, appearing plaine, 80 And kindling loue in him aboue all measure, Sweet loue still ioyous, neuer feeling paine

For what so goodly forme he there doth see, He may enjoy from lealous rancor free.

There liueth he in euerlasting blis, Sweet spirit neuer fearing more to die: Ne dreading harme from any foes of his, Ne fearing saluage beasts more crueltie.

Whilest wehere wretches waile his private lack, And with vaine vowes do often call him back. But live thou there still happie, happie spirit, And give vs leave thee here thus to lament: Not thee that doest thy heavens ioy inherit, But our owne selves that here in dole are drent.

Thus do we weep and waile, and wear our eies, Mourning in others, our owne miseries.

Which when she ended had, another swaine Of gentle wit and daintie sweet deuice: Whom Astrophel full deare did entertaine, 99 Whilest here he liv'd, and held in passing price, Hight Thestylis, began his mournfull tourne, And made the Muses in his song to mourne. And after him full many other moe, As euerie one in order lov'd him best, Gan dight themselues t'expresse their inward woe.

With dolefull layes vnto the time addrest, The which I here in order will rehearse, As fittest flowres to deck his mournfull hearse.

# The mourning Muse of Thestylis.

Ome forth ye Nymphes come forth, forsake your watry bowres, Forsake your mossy caues, and help me to lament: Help me to tune my dolefull notes to gurgling sound Of Liffies tumbling streames: Come let salt teares of ours, Mix with his waters fresh. O come, let one consent Ioyne vs to mourne with wailfull plaints the deadly wound Which fatall clap hath made; decreed by higher powres. The dreery day in which they haue from vs vrent The noblest plant that might from East to West be found. Mourne, mourn, great Philips fall, mourn we his wofull end, Whom spitefull death hath pluct vntimely from the tree, Whiles yet his yeares in flowre, did promise worthic frute.

Ah dreadfull Mars why didst thou not thy knight defend? What wrathfull mood, what fault of ours hath moued thee Of such a shining light to leaue vs destitute? Thou with benigne aspect sometime didst vs behold, Thou hast in Britons valour tane delight of old, And with thy presence oft vouchsaft to attribute Fame and renowme to vs for glorious martiall deeds. But now thy ireful bemes haue chill'd our harts with cold; Thou hast estrang'd thy self, and deignest not our land: Farre off to others now, thy fauour honour breeds, And high disdaine doth cause thee shun our clime (I feare) For hadst thou not bene wroth, or that time neare at hand, Thou wouldst haue heard the cry that woful England made, Eke Zelands piteous plaints, and Hollands toren heare

10

20

Would haply have appeas'd thy divine angry mynd: Thou shouldst have seen the trees refuse to yeeld their shade, And wailing to let fall the honor of their head, And birds in mournfull tunes lamenting in their kinde: Vp from his tombe the mightie Cormeus rose, Who cursing oft the fates that this mishap had bred. His hoary locks he tare, calling the heavens vnkinde. The Thames was heard to roare, the Reyne and eke the Mose, The Schald, the Danow selfe this great mischance did rue, With torment and with grief; their fountains pure and cleere Were troubled, and with swelling flouds declar'd their woes. The Muses comfortles, the Nymphs with paled hue, The Siluan Gods likewise came running farre and necre, And all with teares bedeawd, and eyes cast vp on hie, O help, O help ve Gods, they ghastly gan to crie. O chaunge the cruell fate of this so rare a wight, And graunt that natures course may measure out his age. The beasts their foode forsooke, and trembling fearfully, Each sought his caue or den, this cry did them so fright. Out from amid the waves, by storme then stirr'd to race This crie did cause to rise th'old father Ocean houre, Who grave with eld, and full of majestic in sight, Spake in this wise. Refrain (quoth he) your teares and plaints, Cease these your idle words, make vame requests no more. No humble speech nor mone, may moue the fixed stint Of destime or death: Such is his will that paints The earth with colours fresh: the darkest skies with store Of starry lights: And though your teares a hart of flint Might tender make, yet nought herein they will preuaile. Whiles thus he said, the noble knight, who gan to feele His vitall force to faint, and death with cruell dint Of direfull dart his mortall bodie to assaile, With eyes lift up to heav'n, and courage franke as steele, 60 With cheerfull face, where valour lively was exprest, But humble mynd he said. O Lord if ought this fraile And earthly carcasse have thy service sought t'aduaunce, If my desire haue bene still to relieue th'opprest: If Justice to maintaine that valour I have spent Which thou me gau'st; or if henceforth I might aduaunce Thy name, thy truth, then spare me (Lord) if thou think best; Forbeare these varipe yeares. But if thy will be bent, If that prefixed time be come which thou hast set, Through pure and feruent faith, I hope now to be plast, In th'euerlasting blis, which with thy precious blood Thou purchase didst for vs. With that a sigh he fet, And straight a cloudie mist his sences ouercast, His lips waxt pale and wan, like damaske roses bud Cast from the stalke, or like in field to purple flowre, Which languisheth being shred by culter as it past. A trembling chilly cold ran through their veines, which were With eies brimfull of teares to see his fatall howre Whose blustring sighes at first their sorrow did declare, Next, murmuring ensude; at last they not forbeare Plaine outcries, all against the heau'ns that enuiously Depriv'd vs of a spright so perfect and so rare. The Sun his lightsom beames did shrowd, and hide his face

For griefe, whereby the earth feard night eternally:
The mountaines eachwhere shooke, the rivers turn'd their streames,
And th'aire gan winterlike to rage and fret apace:
And grisly ghosts by night were seene, and fierie gleames,
Amid the clouds with claps of thunder, that did seeme
To rent the skies, and made both man and beast aftard:
The birds of ill presage this lucklesse chance foretold,
By dernfull noise, and dogs with howling made man deeme
Some mischief was at hand: for such they do esteeme
As tokens of mishap, and so have done of old.

Ah that thou hadst but heard his louely Stella plaine Her greeuous losse, or seene her heavie mourning cheere, While she with woe opprest, her sorrowes did vnfold. Her haire hung lose neglect, about her shoulders twaine. And from those two bright starres, to him sometime so deere, Her heart sent drops of pearle, which fell in foyson downe Twixt lilly and the rose. She wroong her hands with paine, And piteously gan say, My true and faithfull pheere, Alas and woe is me, why should my fortune frowne On me thus frowardly to rob me of my joy? What cruell enuious hand hath taken thee away, And with thee my content, my comfort and my stay? Thou onelie wast the ease of trouble and annoy: When they did me assaile, in thee my hopes did rest. Alas what now is left but grief, that night and day Afflicts this wofull life, and with continuall rage Torments ten thousand waies my miserable brest? O greedie enuious heau'n what needed thee to haue Enricht with such a lewell this vnhappie age. To take it back againe so soone? Alas when shall Mine eies see ought that may content them, since thy graue My onely treasure hides the loyes of my poore hart? As here with thee on earth I liv'd, euen so equall Methinkes it were with thee in heau'n I did abide: And as our troubles all we here on earth did part, So reason would that there of thy most happie state I had my share. Alas if thou my trustie guide Were wont to be, how canst thou leave me thus alone In darknesse and astray; weake, wearie, desolate, Plung'd in a world of woe, refusing for to take Me with thee, to the place of rest where thou art gone. This said, she held her peace, for sorrow tide her toong; And insteed of more words, seemd that her eies a lake Of teares had bene, they flow'd so plenteously therefro: And with her sobs and sighs, th'aire round about her roong.

100

110

190

If Venus when she waild her deare Adonis staine, Ought moov'd in thy fiers hart compassion of her woe, His noble sisters plaints, her sighes and teares emong. Would sure haue made thee milde, and inly rue her paine: Aurora halfe so faire, her selfe did neuer show, When from old Tühons bed, shee weeping did arise. The blinded archer-boy, like larke in showre of raine Sat bathing of his wings, and glad the time did spend Vnder those cristall drops, which fell from her faire eies, And at their brightest beames him proynd in louely wise. Yet sorie for her grief, which he could not amend,

	333
The gentle boy gan wipe her eies, and clear those lights,	
Those lights through which, his glory and his conquests shine.	140
The Graces tuckt her hair, which hung like threds of gold, Along her yuorie brest the treasure of delights.	
All things with her to weep, it seemed, did encline,	
The trees, the hills, the dales, the caues, the stones so cold.	
The aire did help them mourne, with dark clouds, raine and mist,	
Forbearing many a day to cleare it selfe againe,	
Which made them eftsoones feare the daies of Pirrha shold,	
Of creatures spoile the earth, their fatall threds vntwist.	
For <i>Phorbus</i> gladsome raies were wished for in vaine, And with her quinering light <i>Latonas</i> daughter faire.	
And Charles-waine eke refus'd to be the shipmans guide.	
On Neptune warre was made by Acolus and his traine,	
Who letting loose the winds, tost and tormented th'aire,	
So that on eu'ry coast men shipwrack did abide,	
Or else were swallowed vp in open sea with waues,	
And such as came to shoare, were beaten with despaire.	
The Medwaies siluer streames, that wont so still to slide,	
Were troubled now and wrothe: whose hidden hollow caues	
Along his banks with fog then shrowded from mans eye, Ay Phillip did resownd, aie Phillip they did crie.	160
His Nimphs were seen no more (thogh custom stil it craues)	100
With haire spred to the wynd themselves to bath or sport.	
Or with the hooke or net, barefooted wantonly	
The pleasant daintie fish to entangle or deceive.	
The shepheards left their wonted places of resort,	
Their bagpipes now were still; their louing mery layes	
Were quite forgot; and now their flocks, men might perceiue	
To wander and to straie, all carelesly neglect.  And in the stead of mirth and pleasure, nights and dayes,	
Nought els was to be heard, but woes, complaints and mone.	130
But thou (O blessed soule) doest haply not respect,	-,-
These teares we shead, though full of louing pure affect,	
Hauing affixt thine eyes on that most glorious throne,	
Where full of maiestie the high creator reignes.	
In whose bright shining face thy ioyes are all complete,	
Whose love kindles thy spright, where happie alwaies one,	
Thou liu'st in blis that earthly passion neuer staines; Where from the purest spring the sacred Nectar sweete	
Is thy continuall drinke: where thou doest gather now	
Of well emploied life, th'inestimable gaines.	(80
There Venus on thee smiles, Apollo gives thee place,	
And Mars in reverent wise doth to thy vertue bow,	
And decks his fiery sphere, to do thee honour most.	
In highest part whereof, thy valour for to grace,	
A chaire of gold he setts to thee, and there doth tell	
Thy noble acts arew, whereby even they that boast Themselves of auncient fame, as Pirrhus, Hanniball,	
Scipio and Casar, with the rest that did excell	
In martiall prowesse, high thy glorie do admire.	
Ail haile therefore O worthie Phillip immortall,	190
The flowre of Sydneyes race, the honour of thy name,	
Whose worthie praise to sing, my Muses not aspire,	
But sorrowfull and sad these teares to thee let fall,	
Yet with their verses might so farre and wide thy fame Extend, that enuies rage, nor time might end the same.	
servered reme curaco rake, mor time, miking eigh rife same	

# A pastorall Aeglogue vpon the death of Sir Phillip Sidney Knight, &c.

Lycon. Colin.

Colin, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd,

This wofullstownd, wherein all things complaine
This great mishap, this greeuous losse of owres.
Hear'st thou the Oroun? how with hollow
sownd

He slides away, and murmuring doth plaine, And seemes to say vnto the fading flowres, Along his bankes, vnto the bared trees; Phillisides is dead. Vp iolly swaine, Thou that with skill canst tune a dolefull lay.

Help him to mourn. My hart with grief doth

treese

Hoarse is my voice with crying, else a part Sure would I beare, though rude: But as I may, With sobs and sighes I second will thy song, And so expresse the sorrowes of my hart.

Colin. Ah Lycon, Lycon, what need skill, to

A grieued mynd powre forth his plaints? how long

Hath the pore Turtle gon to school (weenest thou)

To learne to mourne her lost make? No, no, each

Creature by nature can tell how to waile.

Seest not these flocks, how sad they wander now?

Seemeth their leaders bell their bleating tunes In dolefull sound. Like him, not one doth faile With hanging head to shew a heauic cheare. What bird (I pray thee) hast thou seen, that prunes

Himselfe of late? did any cheerfull note Come to thine eares, or gladsome sight appeare Vnto thine eies, since that same fatall howre? Hath not the aire put on his mourning coat, And testified his grief with flowing teares? Sith then, it seemeth each thing to his powre Doth vs inuite to make a sad consort; 31 Come let vs ioyne our mournfull song with theirs.

Griefe will endite, and sorrow will enforce Thy voice, and *Eccho* will our words report.

Lyc. Though my rude rymes, ill with thy

verses frame,

That others farre excell, yet will I force My selfe to answere thee the best I can, And honor my base words with his high name. But if my plaints annoy thee where thou sit In secret shade or cave; vouchsafe (O Pan) To pardon me, and here this hard constrain With patience while I sing, and pittie it.

And eke ye rurall Muses, that do dwell In these wilde woods; If euer piteous plaint We did endite, or taught a wofull minde With words of pure affect, his griefe to tell, Instruct me now. Now Colin then goe on, And I will follow thee, though farre behinde.

Colin. Phillisides is dead. O harmfull death, O deadly harme. Vnhappie Albion 50 When shalt thou see emong thy shepheards all, Any so sage, so perfect? Whom vneath Enuie could touch for vertuous life and skill; Curteous, valiant, and liberall.

Behold the sacred *Pales*, where with haire Vitrust she sitts, in shade of yonder hill. And her faire face bent sadly downe, doth send A floud of teares to bathe the earth; and there Doth call the heau'ns despightfull, enuious, Cruell his fate, that made so short an end 60 Of that same life, well worthic to haue bene Prolongd with many yeares, happie and famous.

The Nymphs and *Oreades* her round about Do sit lamenting on the grassic grene; And with shrill cries, beating their whitest brests,

Accuse the direfull dart that death sent out To give the fatall stroke. The starres they blame.

That deafe or carelesse seeme at their request. The pleasant shade of stately groues they shun; They leaue their cristall springs, where they wont frame

Sweet bowres of Myrtel twigs and Lawrel faire, To sport themselues free from the scorching

And now the hollow caues where horror darke Doth dwell, whence banisht is the gladsome aire They seeke; and there in mourning spend their time

With wailfull tunes, whiles wolues do howle and barke,

And seem to beare a bourdon to their plaint. Lyc. Phillisides is dead. O dolefull ryme. Why should my toong expresse thee? who is left 79 Now to vphold thy hopes, when they do faint,

Lycon vnfortunate? What spitefull fate, What lucklesse destinie hath thee bereft Of thy chief comfort; of thy onely stay? Where is become thy wonted happie state. (Alas) wherein through many a hill and dale, Through pleasant woods, and many an vnknowne way.

Along the bankes of many silver streames, Thou with him yodest; and with him didst scale

The craggie rocks of th'Alpes and Appenine? Still with the Muses sporting, while those beames Or vertue kindled in his noble brest, 91 Which after did so gloriously forth shine? But (woe is me) they now yquenched are All suddeinly, and death hath them opprest. Loe father Neptune, with sad countenance, How he sitts mourning on the strond now bare, Yonder, where th'Ocean with his rolling waites the white fecte washeth (wailing this mischance)

Of Douer cliffes. His sacred skirt about 60. The sca-gods all are set; from their moist caucs All for his comfort gathered there they be. The Thamis rich, the Humber rough and stout, The Truitfull Seuerne, with the rest are come. To helpe their Lord to mourne, and eke to see the dolefull sight, and sad pomp funerall. Of the dead corps passing through his kingdome.

And all their heads with Cypres gyrlonds

With wofull shrikes salute him great and small. Eke wailfull Eccho, forgetting her deare 109 Narcissus, their last accents, doth resownd.

Col. Phillisides is dead. O lucklesse age; Owidowworld; Obrookes and fountains electe: O hills, O dales, O woods that oft haue rong With his sweet caroling, which could asswage The hercest wrath of Tygre or of Beare. Ye Siluans, Fawnes, and Satyres, that emong These thickets oft have daunst after his pipe, Ye Nymphs and Navades with golden heare, That oft have left your purest cristall springs To harken to his layes, that coulden wipe 120 Away all gricfe and sorrow from your harts. Alas who now is left that like him sings? When shall you heare againe like harmonie? So sweet a sownd, who to you now imparts? Loe where engraved by his hand yet lives The name of Stella, in yonder bay tree.

Happie name, happie tree; faire may you grow, And spred your sacred branch, which honor gues,

To famous Emperours, and Poets crowne.

Vnhappie flock that wander scattred now, 130 What maruell if through grief ye woxen leane, Forsake your food, and hang your heads adowne?

For such a shepheard neuer shall you guide, Whose parting, hath of weale bereft you cleane. 

Lie. Phillisides is dead. O happie sprite, That now in heau'n with blessed soules doest bade:

Looke down a while from where thou sitst

And see how busic shepheards be to endite Sad songs of grief, their sorrowes to declare, And gratefull memory of their kynd loue. 140 Behold my selfe with Colin, gentle swaine (Whose lerned Muse thou cherisht most whyslare)

Where we thy name recording, seeke to case. The inward torment and tormenting paine, That thy departure to vy both hath bred; Ne can each others sorrow yet appease. Behold the fountains now left desolate, And withred grasse with cypres boughes be spred,

Behold these floures which on thy grave we strew;

Which faded, show the givers faded state, 150 (Though eke they show their feruent zeale and pure)

Whose onely comfort on thy welfare grew. Whose praiers importune shall the head'ns for ay,

That to thy ashes, rest they may assure: That learnedst shepheards honor may thy name With yeerly praises, and the Nymphs alway Thy tomb may deck with fresh and sweetest flowres;

And that for euer may endure thy faine.

Colin. The Sun (lo) hastned liath his face to steep

In western waues: and th'aire with stormy showres 160

Warnes vs to drive homewards our silly sheep, Lycon, lett's rise, and take of them good keep.

Virtule summa : cælera fortuna.

L.B.

# An Elegie, or friends pas-

sion, for his Astrophill.

Written upon the death of the right Honourable sir Phillip Sidney Knight, Lord gouernour of Flushing.

A S then, no winde at all there blew,
No swelling cloude, accloid the aire.
The skie like glasse of watchet hew,
Reflected Phœbus golden haire,
The garnisht tree, no pendant stird,
No voice was heard of anie bird.

There might you see the burly Beare
The Lion king, the Elephant,
The maiden Vnicorne was there,
So was Acteons horned plant,
And what of wilde or tame are found,
Were coucht in order on the ground.

Alcides speckled poplar tree,
The palme that Monarchs do obtaine,
With Loue inice staind the mulberie,
The fruit that dewes the Poets braine,
And Phillis philbert there away,
Comparde with mirtle and the bay.

The tree that coffins doth adorne,
With stately height threatning the skie,
And for the bed of Loue forlorne,
The blacke and dolefull Ebonie,
All in a circle compast were,
Like to an Amphitheater.

Vpon the branches of those trees,
The airie winged people sat,
Distinguished in od degrees,
One sort in this, another that,
Here Philomell, that knowes full well,
What force and wit in loue doth dwell.

The skiebred Egle roiall bird,
Percht there vpon an oke aboue,
The Turtle by him neuer stird,
Example of immortall loue.
The swan that sings about to dy,
Leauing Meander, stood thereby.

And that which was of woonder most,
The Phoenix left sweet Arabie:
And on a Cædar in this coast,
Built vp her tombe of spicerie,
As I coniecture by the same,
Preparde to take her dying flame.

In midst and center of this plot, I saw one groueling on the grasse: A man or stone, I knew not what. No stone, of man the figure was, And yet I could not count him one, More than the image made of stone.

At length I might perceiue him reare
His bodie on his elbow end:
Earthly and pale with gastly cheare,
Voon his knees he vpward tend,
Seeming like one in vncouth stound,
To be ascending out the ground.

A gricuous sigh forthwith he throwes, As might haue torne the vitall strings, Then down his checks the teares so flows. As doth the streame of many springs. So thunder rends the cloud in twaine, And makes a passage for the raine.

60

70

80

Incontinent with trembling sound,
He wofully gan to complaine,
Such were the accents as might wound,
And teare a diamond rocke in twaine.
After his throbs did somewhat stay,
Thus heauily he gan to say.

O sunne (said he) seeing the sunne, On wretched me why dost thou shine, My star is falne, my comfort done, Out is the apple of my eine, Shine vpon those possesse delight, And let me liue in endlesse night.

O griefe that liest vpon my soule, As heauie as a mount of lead, The remnant of my life controll, Consort me quickly with the dead, Halfe of this hart, this sprite and will, Di'de in the brest of Astrophill.

And you compassionate of my wo,
Gentle birds, beasts and shadie trees,
I am assurde ye long to kno,
What be the sorrowes me agreeu's,
Listen ye then to that insu'th,
And heare a tale of teares and ruthe.

AN EI	LEGIE.	557
You knew, who knew not Astrophill, (That I should liue to say I knew, And haue not in possession still) Things knowne permit me to renew, Of him you know his merit such, I cannot say, you heare too much.	Although thy beautie do exceed, In common sight of eu'ry eie, Yet in his Poesies when we reede, It is apparant more thereby, He that hath loue and indgement too, Sees more than any other doo.	140
Within these woods of Arcadic, He chiefe delight and pleasure tooke, And on the mountaine Partheme, Ypon the chrystall liquid brooke, The Muses met him eu'ry day, That taught him sing, to write, and say. When he descended downe the mount, His personage seemed roost dunne, A thousand graces one might count, Vpon his louely cheerfull eine. 100 To heare him speake and sweetly smile, You were in Paradise the while. A sweet attractive kinde of grace,	Aboue all others this is hee, Which erst approoued in his song, That loue and honor might agree, And that pure loue will do no wrong, Sweet saints, it is no sinne nor blame, To loue a man of vertuous name.	150
A full assurance given by lookes, Continuall comfort in a face, The lineaments of Gospell bookes, I trowe that countenance cannot fie, Whose thoughts are legible in the eie. Was neuer eie, did see that face, Was neuer eare, did heare that tong, Was neuer minde, did minde his grace, That euer thought the trauell long,	He wrote of loue with high conceit, And beautic reard aboue her height. Then Pallas afterward attyrde, Our Astrophill with her deuice, Whom in his armor heaven admyrde, As of the nation of the skies,	160
But eies, and eares, and eu'ry thought, Were with his sweete perfections caught. O God, that such a worthy man, In whom so rare desarts did raigne, Desired thus, must leaue vs than, And we to wish for him in vaine, O could the stars that bred that wit, In force no longer fixed sit. Then being fild with learned dew,	Such maiestie (quoth he) is seeld, Such maiestie my mart may mar, Perhaps this may a suter be,	170
Most rare and rich of heatenly blis, The highest in his fancie stood,	This word (was slaine) straightway did mot And natures inward life strings twitch, The skie immediately aboue, Was dimd with hideous clouds of pitch, The wrastling winds from out the ground Fild all the aire with ratling sound. The bending trees exprest a grone, And sigh'd the sorrow of his fall, The forrest beasts made ruthfull mone,	

The Turtle doue with tunes of ruthe. Shewd feeling passion of his death, Me thought she said I tell thee truthe, Was never he that drew in breath. Vnto his love more trustie found.

Than he for whom our griefs abound. The swan that was in presence heere, Began his funerall dirge to sing. 200 Good things (quoth he) may scarce appeere, But passe away with speedie wing.

This mortall life as death is tride. And death gives life, and so he di'de.

The generall sorrow that was made, Among the creatures of kinde, Fired the Phoenix where she laide. Her ashes flying with the winde. So as I might with reason see,

That such a Phoenix nere should bee. Haply the cinders driven about. May breede an offspring neere that kinde, But hardly a peere to that I doubt, It cannot sinke into my minde,

That vnder branches ere can bee. Of worth and value as the tree.

The Egle markt with pearcing sight, The mournfull habite of the place. And parted thence with mounting flight. To signifie to love the case.

What sorrow nature doth sustaine. For Astrophill by enuie slaine.

And while I followed with mine eie. The flight the Egle voward tooke. And things did vanish by and by. And disappeared from my looke.

The trees, beasts, birds, and groue was

220

2 10

So was the friend that made this mone.

This spectacle had firmly wrought. A deepe compassion in my spright. My molting hart issude, me thought, In streames forth at mine eies aright, And here my pen is forst to shrinke, My teares discollors so mine inke.

# An Epitaph vpon the right Honourable sir Phillip Sidney knight: Lord gouernor of Flushing.

And want thy wit, thy wit high, pure, diuine, Is far beyond the powre of mortall line, Nor any one hath worth that draweth breath. Yet rich in zeale, though poore in learnings lore, And friendly care obscurde in secret brest, And loue that enuie in thy life supprest.

Thy deere life done, and death, hath doubled more.

And I, that in thy time and living state. Did onely praise thy vertues in my thought, As one that seeld the rising sun hath sought, With words and teares now waile thy timelesse fate.

Drawne was thy race, aright from princely line, Nor lesse than such, (by gifts that nature gaue, The common mother that all creatures have.) Doth vertue shew and princely linage shine. A king gaue thee thy name a kingly minde, That God thee gaue, who found it now too deere For this base world, and hath resumde it neere. To sit in skies, and sort with powres divine. 20

'O praise thy life, or waile thy worthie Kent thy birth daies, and Oxford held thy youth,

> The heavens made hast, and staid nor yeers, nor time.

> The fruits of age grew ripe in thy first prime. Thy will, thy words: thy words the seales of

> Great gifts and wisedom rare imployd thee thence.

> To treat from kings, with those more great than kings,

> Such hope men had to lay the highest things, On thy wise youth, to be transported hence.

Whence to sharpe wars sweet honor did thee call.

Thy countries love, religion, and thy friends Of worthy men, the marks, the lines and ends, And her defence, for whom we labor all.

There didst thou vanguish shame and tedious age,

Griefe, sorrow, sicknes, and base fortunes might: Thy rising day, saw neuer wofull night, But past with praise, from of this worldly stage. Back to the campe, by thee that day was | Nations thy wit, our mindes lay vp thy loue, brought,

First thine owne death, and after thy long fame; Teares to the soldiers, the proud Castilians shame:

Vertue exprest, and honor truly taught.

What hath he lost, that such great grace hath woon.

Young yeeres, for endles vecres, and hope visure Of fortunes gifts, for wealth that still shall dure, On happie race with so great praises run.

England doth hold thy luns that bred the same. Harinders thy valure where it last was tried, The Campe thy sorrow where thy bodie died, Thy friends, thy want; the world, thy vertues

Letters thy learning, thy losse, yeeres long to come. In worthy harts sorrow hath made thy tombe. Thy soule and spright enrich the heavens

Thy liberall hart imbalind in gratefull teares, Young sighs, sweet sighes, sage sighes, bewaile thy fall.

Enuie her sting, and spite hath left her gall. Malice her selfe, a mourning garment weares.

That day their Hanniball died, our Scipio fell. Scipio, Cicero, and Petrarch of our time,

Whose vertues wounded by my worthlesse

Let Angels speake, and heaven thy praises tell.

## Another of the same.

C llence augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth. He onely like himselfe, was second vnto nore,

Stald are my thoughts, which lou'd, and lost, the wonder of our age:

Yet quickned now with fire, though dead with trost ere now.

Enrag'd I write, I know not what: dead, quick, I know not how.

Hard harted mindes relent, and rigors teares

And enure strangely rues his end, in whom no fault she found.

Knowledge her light hath lost, valor hath slaine her knacht.

Sidney is dead, dead is my friend, dead is the worlds delight.

Place pensine wailes his fall, whose presence was her pride,

Time crieth out, my ebbe is come; his life was my spring tide, Fame mournes in that she lost the ground of

her reports.

Ech living wight laments his lacke, and all in sundry sorts.

He was (wo worth that word) to ech well thinking minde,

A spotlesse friend, a matchles man, whose vertue euer shinde.

Declaring in his thoughts, his life, and that he

Highest conceits, longest foresights, and deepest works of wit.

Whose deth (though life) we rue, and wrong, and al in vain do mone.

Their losse, not hun waile they, that fill the world with cries,

Death slue not him, but he made death his ladder to the skies.

Now sinke of sorrow I, who line, the more the

Who wishing death, whom deth denies, whose thred is all to long.

Who tied to wretched life, who lookes for no

Must spend my ener dving daies, in neuer ending griefe.

Harts ease and onely I, like parallels run on, Whose equall length, keep equall bredth, and neuer meet in one,

Yet for not wronging him, my thoughts, my vorrowes cell.

Shall not run out, though leake they will, for liking him so well.

Farewell to you my hopes, my wonted waking dreames.

Farewell sometimes enjoyed joy, eclipsed are thy beames.

Farewell selfe pleasing thoughts, which quietnes brings foorth.

And farewel friendships sacred league, vniting minds of woorth.

And farewell mery hart, the gift of guiltlesse Now rime, the sonne of rage, which art no kin

Let all that sweete is voyd; in me no mirth may dwell.

Phillip, the cause of all this woe, my lives content, farewell.

to skill,

And all sports, which for liues restore, var.etie And endles griefe, which deads my life, yet knowes not how to kill,

Go seeke that haples tombe, which if ye hap to finde.

Salute the stones, that keep the lims, that held so good a minde.

FINIS.

LONDON Printed by T. C. for William Ponsonbie. 1595.

# AMORETTI AND Epithalamion.

Written not long since by Edmunde Spenser.



Printed for William Penfonby. 1595,

# To the Right Worshipfull Sir Robart Need-

#### ham Knight.

S Ir, to gratulate your safe return from gentle Muse for her former perfection long Ireland, I had nothing so readie, nor wished for in Englande, nowe at the lengt: thought any thing so meete, as these sweete conceited Sonets, the deede of that wel deseruing gentleman, maister Edmond Spenser: whose name sufficiently warranting the worthinesse of the work: I do more confidently presume to publish it in his absence, vnder your name to whom (in my poore opinion) the patronage therof, doth in some respectes properly appertaine. For, besides your judgement and delighte in learned poesie: This

crossing the Seas in your happy companye (though to your selfe vnknowne) seemeth to make chovse of you, as meetest to give her deserued countenaunce, after her retourne: entertaine her, then, (Right worshipfull) in sorte best beseeming your gentle minde, and her merite, and take in worth my good will herein, who seeke no more, but to shew my selfe yours in all dutifull affection.

W. P.

# G: W. senior, to the Author

Arke is the day, when Phæbus face is shrowded.

and weaker sights may wander soone astray: but when they see his glorious raies vnclowded.

with steddy steps they keepe the perfect way: So while this Muse in forraine landes doth stay, inuention weepes, and pens are cast aside, the time like night, depriud of chearefull day, and few do write, but (ah) too soone may slide.

Then, hie thee home, that art our perfect guide, and with thy wit illustrate Englands fame, dawnting thereby our neighbors auncient pride,

that do for poesie, challendge cheefest name. So we that liue and ages that succeede. With great applause thy learned works shall

Ah Colin, whether on the lowly plaine, pyping to shepherds thy sweete roundelaies: or whether singing in some lofty vaine, heroick deedes, of past, or present daies. Or whether in thy louely mistris praise, thou list to exercise thy learned quill. thy muse hath got such grace, and power to please. with rare invention beautified by skill. As who therein can ever joy their fill! O therefore let that happy muse proceede

to clime the height of vertues sacred hill, where endles honor shall be made thy meede. Because no malice of succeeding daies, can rase those records of thy lasting praise.

#### SONNET, I.

Appy ye leaues when as those lilly hands, which hold my life in their dead doing

shall handle you and hold in loues seft band, lyke captiues trembling at the victors sight. And happy lines, on which with starry light,

those lamping eyes will deigne sometimes to

and reade the sorrowes of my dving spright. written with teares in harts close bleeding book.

And happy rymes bath'd in the sacred brooke, of *Helicon* whence she derived is,

when ve behold that Angels blessed looke, my soules long lacked foode, my heavens blis. Leaues, lines, and rymes, seeke her to please

whom if ye please. I care for other none.

#### SONNET. II.

Nquiet thought, whom at the first I bred, Of th'inward bale of my loue pined hart: and sithens have with sighes and sorrowes feel. till greater then my wombe thou woxen art.

Breake forth at length out of the inner part, in which thou lurkest lyke to vipers brood: and seeke some succour both to ease my smart and also to sustayne thy selfe with food.

But if in presence of that favrest proud thou chance to come, fall lowly at her feet: and with meeke humblesse and afflicted mood, pardon for thee, and grace for me intreat.

Which if she graunt, then liue, and my loue cherish.

if not, die soone, and I with thee will perish.

#### SONNET. 111.

The souerayne beauty which I doo admyre, witnesse the world how worthy to be prayzed:

the light wherof hath kindled heauenly fyre, in my fraile spirit by her from basenesse

raysed.

That being now with her huge brightnesse dazed, base thing I can no more endure to view: but looking still on her I stand amazed, at wondrous sight of so celestiall hew.

So when my toung would speak her praises dew, it stopped is with thoughts astonishment: and when my pen would write her titles true, it rauisht is with fancies wonderment:

Yet in my hart I then both speake and write the wonder that my wit cannot endite.

#### SONNET. 1111.

N Ew yeare forth looking out of Ianus gate, Dothseeme to promise hope of new delight: and bidding th'old Adieu, his passed date bidsallold thoughts to die in dumpish spright. And calling forth out of sad Winters night, fresh loue, that long hath slept in cheerlesse bower:

wils him awake, and soone about him dight his wanton wings and darts of deadly power. For lusty spring now in his timely howre,

is ready to come forth him to receive: and warnes the Earth with divers colord flowre.

to decke hir selfe, and her faire mantle weaue. Then you faire flowre, in whom fresh youth doth raine,

prepare your selfe new loue to entertaine.

#### SONNET, V.

Ndely thou wrongest my deare harts desire, In finding fault with her too portly pride: the thing which I doo most in her admire, is of the world vnworthy most enuide. For in those lofty lookes is close implide,

scorn of base things, and sdeigne of foule dishonor:

thretning rash eies which gaze on her so wide, that loosely they ne dare to looke vpon her. Such pride is praise, such portlinesse is honor, that boldned innocence beares in hir eies: and her faire countenance like a goodly

banner, spreds in defiaunce of all enemies.

Was neuer in this world ought worthy tride, without some spark of such self-pleasing pride,

#### SONNET. VI.

BE nought dismayd that her vnmoued mind doth still persist in her rebellious pride: such loue not lyke to lusts of baser kynd, the harder wonne, the firmer will abide.

The durefull Oake, whose sap is not yet dride, is long ere it conceiue the kindling fyre: but when it once doth burne, it doth diuide, great heat, and makes his flames to heauen aspire.

So hard it is to kindle new desire.

in gentle brest that shall endure for euer: deepe is the wound, that dints the parts entire with chast affects, that naught but death can seuer.

Then thinke not long in taking litle paine, to knit the knot, that ever shall remaine.

#### SONNET, VII.

Ayre eyes, the myrrour of my mazed hart, what wondrous vertue is contaynd in you, the which both lyfe and death forth from you dart

into the object of your mighty view?
For when ye mildly looke with louely hew,
then is my soule with life and loue inspired
but when ye lowre, or looke on me askew,
then doe I die, as one with lightning fyred.
But since that lyfe is more then death desyred,
looke euer louely, as becomes you best,
that your bright beams of my weak eies

may kindle liuing fire within my brest. Such life should be the honor of your light, such death the sad ensample of your might.

admyred,

#### SONNET. VIII.

M Ore then most faire, full of the liuing fire, Kindled abone vnto the maker neere: no eies but ioyes, in which all powers conspire, that to the world naught else be counted deare. Thrugh your bright beames doth not the blinded guest,

shoot out his darts to base affections wound: but Angels come to lead fraile mindes to rest in chast desires on heauenly beauty bound.

You frame my thoughts and fashion me within, you stop my toung, and teach my hart to speake.

you calme the storme that passion did begin, strong thrugh your cause, but by your vertue weak.

Dark is the world, where your light shined neuer;

well is he borne, that may behold you euer.

#### SONNET. 1X.

Ong-while I sought to what I might com-

those powrefull eies, which lighten my dark

spright,

vet find I nought on earth to which I dare resemble th'ymage of their goodly light. Not to the Sun: for they doo shine by night;

nor to the Moone: for they are changed neuer:

nor to the Starres: for they have purer sight; nor to the fire: for they consume not euer; Nor to the lightning: for they still perseuer; nor to the Diamond: for they are more tender:

nor vnto Christall: for nought may them

nor vnto glasse: such basenesse mought offend her;

Then to the Maker selfe they likest be. whose light doth lighten all that here we see.

#### SONNET. X.

7 Nrighteous Lord of loue, what law is this, That me thou makest thus tormented be: the whiles she lordeth in licentious blisse of her freewill, scorning both thee and me. See how the Tyrannesse doth ioy to see

the huge massacres which her eyes do make: and humbled harts brings captives vnto thee, that thou of them mayst mightie vengeance take.

But her proud hart doe thou a little shake and that high look, with which she doth

comptroll

her sport.

all this worlds pride, bow to a baser make, and al her faults in thy black booke enroll. That I may laugh at her in equal sort, as she doth laugh at me and makes my pain

SONNET. X1.

Ayly when I do seeke and sew for peace, And hostages doe offer for my truth: she cruell warriour doth her selfe addresse to battell, and the weary war renew'th. Ne wilbe moou'd with reason or with rewth, to graunt small respit to my restlesse toile: but greedily her fell intent poursewth, Of my poore life to make vnpittied spoile. Yet my poore life, all sorrowes to assoyle, I would her yield, her wrath to pacify: but then she seekes with torment and turmoyle,

to force me live, and will not let me dv. All paine hath end and euery war hath peace, but mine no price nor prayer may surcease.

#### SONNET. XII.

Ne day I sought with her hart-thrilling cies tomake a truce, and termes to entertaine: all fearelesse then of so false enimies. which sought me to entrap in treasons traine.

So as I then disarmed did remaine.

a wicked ambush which lay hidden long in the close couert of her guilefull eyen, thence breaking forth did thick about me throng.

Too feeble I t'abide the brunt so strong, was forst to yeeld my selfe into their hands: who me captiuing streight with rigorous wrong,

haue euer since me kept in cruell bands. So Ladie, now to you I doo complaine, against your eies that justice I may gaine.

#### SONNET, XIII.

N that proud port, which her so goodly graceth.

whiles her faire face she reares vp to the skie: and to the ground her eie lids low embaseth, most goodly temperature ve may descry,

Myld humblesse mixt with awfull maiesty. For looking on the earth whence she was borne, her minde remembreth her mortalitie, what so is fayrest shall to earth returne.

But that same lofty countenance seemes to scorne

base thing, and thinke how she to heauen may clime:

treading downeearth as lothsome and forlorne, that hinders heauenly thoughts with drossy slime.

Yet lowly still youchsafe to looke on me. such lowlinesse shall make you lofty be.

#### SONNET. XIIII.

R Etourne agayne my forces late dismayd, Vnto the siege by you abandon'd quite, great shame it is to leave like one afrayd, so fayre a peece for one repulse so light. Gaynst such strong castles needeth greater might.

then those small forts which ye were wont belay:

such haughty mynds enur'd to hardy fight, disdayne to yield vnto the first assay.

Bring therefore all the forces that we may, and lay incessant battery to her heart, playnts, prayers, vowes, ruth, sorrow, and dismay.

those engins can the proudest loue conuert. And if those fayle, fall downe and dy before her, so dying liue, and liuing do adore her.

#### SONNET. XV.

YE tradefull Merchants, that with weary toyle,

do seeke most pretious things to make your

and both the Indias of their treasures spoile, what needeth you to seeke so farre in vaine? For loe my loue doth in her selfe containe

all this worlds riches that may farre be found, if Saphyres, loe her cies be Saphyres plaine, if Rubies, loe hir lips be Rubies sound:

If Pearles, hir teeth be pearles both pure and round;

if Yuorie, her forhead yuory weene;

if Gold, her locks are finest gold on ground; if siluer, her faire hands are siluer sheene.

But that which fairest is, but few behold, her mind adornd with vertues manifold.

#### SONNET. XVI.

Ne day as I vnwarily did gaze on those fayre eyes my loues inamortall light:

the whiles my stonisht hart stood in amaze, through sweet illusion of her lookes delight. I mote perceiue how in her glauncing sight, legions of loues with little wings did fly: darting their deadly arrowes fyry bright, at euery rash beholder passing by.

at euery rash beholder passing by.

One of those archers closely I did spy,
ayming his arrow at my very hart:
when suddenly with twincle of her eye,
the Damzell broke his misintended dart.

Had she not so doon, sure I had bene slayne,
yet as it was, I hardly scap't with paine.

#### SONNET, XVII.

He glorious pourtraict of that Angels face, Made to amaze weake mens confused skil: and this worlds worthlesse glory to embase, what pen, what pencil can expresse her fill? For though he colours could deuize at will, and eke his learned hand at pleasure gride, least trembling it his workmanship should spill,

yet many wondrous things there are beside. The sweet eve-glaunces, that like arrows glide, the charming smiles, that rob sence from the hart:

the louely pleasance and the lofty pride,

cannot expressed be by any art.

A greater craftesmans hand thereto doth neede, that can expresse the life of things indeed.

#### SONNET. XVIII.

The rolling wheele that runneth often round.
The hardest steele in tract of time doth teare:

and drizling drops that often doe redound, the firmest flint doth in continuance weare.

Yet cannot I, with many a dropping teare, and long intreaty, soften her hard hart: that she will once youchsafe my plaint to heare, or looke with pitty on my payneful smart.

But when I pleade, she bids me play my part, and when I weep, she sayes teares are but water:

and when I sigh, she sayes I know the art, and when I waile she turnes hir selfe to laurhter.

So doe I weepe, and wayle, and pleade in vaine, whiles she as steele and flint doth still remayne.

#### SONNET, XIX.

The merry Cuckow, messenger of Spring, His trompet shrill hath thrise already sounded:

that warnes al louers wayt vpon their king, who now is comming forth with girland crouned.

With noyse whereof the quyre of Byrds resounded

their anthemes sweet devized of loues prayse, that all the woods theyr ecchoes back rebounded.

as if they knew the meaning of their layer But mongst themall, which did Loues honor rave no word was heard of her that most it ought, but she his precept proudly disobayes, and doth his ydle message set at nought.

Therefore O loue, vnlesse she turne to thee ere Cuckow end, let her a rebell be.

#### SONNET. XX.

IN vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace, and doe mynchumbled hart before her poure the whilesher footshe in my necke doth place, and tread my life downe in the lowly floure. And yet the Lyon that is Lord of power, and reigneth ouer euery beast in field, in his most pride disdeigneth to deuoure the silly lambe that to his might doth yield. But she more cruell and more saluage wylde, then either Lyon or the Lyonesse: shames not to be with guiltlesse bloud defylde, but taketh glory in her cruelnesse.

Fayrer then fayrest, let none euer say,

that we were blooded in a yrelded pray,

#### SONNET, XXI.

7As it the worke of nature or of Art. which tempred so the feature of her face, that pride and meeknesse mixt by equal part. doe both appeare t'adorne her beauties grace? For with mild pleasance, which doth pride displace.

she to her loue doth lookers eyes allure: and with sterne countenance back again doth

their looser lookes that stir vp lustes impure. With such strange termes her eyes she doth inure.

that with one looke she doth my life dismay: and with another doth it streight recure. her smile me drawes, her frowne me driues

Thus doth she traine and teach me with her lookes.

such art of eyes I neuer read in bookes.

#### SONNET. XXII.

"His holy season fit to fast and pray. Men to denotion ought to be inclyed: therefore, I lykewise on so holy day, for my sweet Saynt some service fit will find. Her temple fayre is built within my mind, in which her glorious ymage placed is, on which my thoughts doo day and night

lyke sacred priests that neuer thinke amisse. There I to her as th'author of my blisse. will builde an altar to appease her yre: and on the same my hart will sacrifise, burning in flames of pure and chast desvre: The which vouchsafe O goddesse to accept, amongst thy deerest relicks to be kept.

#### SONNET. XXIII.

Enclose for her Vlisses sake. Deuiz'd a Web her wooers to deceaue. in which the worke that she all day did make the same at night she did againe vnreaue. Such subtile craft my Damzell doth conceaue, th'importune suit of my desire to shonne: for all that I in many dayes doo weave. in one short houre I find by her vndonne. So when I thinke to end that I begonne, I must begin and neuer bring to end: for with one looke she spils that long I sponne, and with one word my whole yeares work doth rend.

Such labour like the Spyders web I fvnd, whose fruitlesse worke is broken with least

wynd.

#### SONNET, XXIIII.

W/Hen I behold that beauties wonderment. And rare perfection of each goodly part: of natures skill the onely complement. I honor and admire the makers art.

But when I feele the bitter balefull smart. which her fayre eyes vnwares doe worke in

that death out of theyr shiny beames doe

I thinke that I a new Pandora see: Whom all the Gods in councell did agree. into this sinfull world from heaven to send: that she to wicked men a scourge should bee. for all their faults with which they did offend. But since ye are my scourge I will intreat,

that for my faults ye will me gently beat.

#### SONNET, XXV.

Ow long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure, And know no end of her owne mysery: but wast and weare away in termes vusure, twixt feare and hope depending doubtfully. Yet better were attonce to let me die, and shew the last ensample of your pride: then to torment me thus with cruelty, to proue your powre, which I too wel haue tride.

But yet if in your hardned brest ye hide, a close intent at last to show me grace: then all the woes and wrecks which I abide, as meanes of blisse I gladly wil embrace. And wish that more and greater they might be, that greater meede at last may turne to mee.

#### SONNET. XXVI.

Weet is the Rose, but growes vpon a brere: Sweet is the lumpere, but sharpe his bough; sweet is the Eglantine, but pricketh nere; sweet is the firbloome, but his braunches rough.

Sweet is the Cypresse, but his rynd is tough, sweet is the nut, but bitter is his pill; sweet is the broome-flowre, but yet sowre enough:

and sweet is Moly, but his root is ill. So euery sweet with soure is tempred still, that maketh it be coueted the more: for easie things that may be got at will, most set of men doe set but little store. Why then should I accoumpt of little paine, that endlesse pleasure shall vnto me gaine.

#### SONNET. XXVII.

Aire proud now tell me why should faire be Sith all worlds glorie is but drosse vncleane: and in the shade of death it selfe shall shroud. how euer now thereof ve little weene. hat goodly Idoll now so gay beseene, shall doffe her fleshes borowd fayre attyre: and be forgot as it had never beene, that many now much worship and admire. Ne any then shall after it inquire. ne any mention shall thereof remaine: but what this verse, that neuer shall expyre, shall to you purchas with her thankles paine. Faire be no lenger proud of that shall perish, but that which shal you make immortall,

#### SONNET, XXVIII.

cherish.

He laurell leafe, which you this day doe gues me great hope of your relenting mynd: for since it is the badg which I doe beare, ve bearing it doe seeme to me inclind: The powre thereof, which ofte in me I find, let it lykewise your gentle brest inspire with sweet infusion, and put you in mind of that proud mayd, whom now those leaves attyre:

Proud Daphne scorning Phaebus louely fyre, on the Thessalian shore from him did the: for which the gods in theyr reuengefull yre did her transforme into a laurell tree.

Then fly no more fayre love from Phebus chace, but in your brest his leafe and love embrace.

#### SONNET, XXIX.

C Ee how the stubborne damzell doth depraue Imy simple meaning with disdaynfull scorne: and by the bay which I vnto her gaue, accoumpts my selfe her captiue quite forlorne. The bay (quoth she) is of the victours borne, vielded them by the vanquisht as they r meeds, and they therewith doe poetes heads adorne, Yet cannot all these flames in which I fry, to sing the glory of their famous deedes.

But sith she will the conquest challeng needs, let her accept me as her faithfull thrall, that her great triumph which my skill ex- But still the more she feruent sees my fit, ceeds.

I may in trump of fame blaze over all. Then would I decke her head with glorious baves.

and fill the world with her victorious prayse.

#### SONNET. XXX.

Y loue is lyke to yee, and I to fyre M how comes it then that this her cold so great Stound. Convention is not dissolu'd through my so hot desyre, but harder growes the more I her intreat? Or how comes it that my exceeding heat is not delayd by her hart frosen cold: but that I burne much more in boyling sweat, and feele my flames aggmented manifold? What more miraculous thing may be told that fire which all thing melts, should harden

and yee which is congeald with sencelesse cold. should kindle fyre by wonderfull deuyse? Such is the powre of lone in gentle mind, that it can alter all the course of kynd.

#### SONNET, XXXI.

H why hath nature to so hard a hart Aguen so goodly giftes of beautics grace? whose pryde depraues each other better part, and all those pretious ornaments deface. Sith to all other beastes of bloody race, a dreadfull countenaunce she given hath. that with theyr terrour al the rest may chace, and warne to shun the daunger of theyr

But my proud one doth worke the greater scath, through sweet allurement of her louely hew: that she the better may in bloody bath of such poore thralls her cruell hands embrew. But did she know how ill these two accord, such cruelty she would have soone abhord.

#### SONNET, XXXII. "He paynefull smith with force of feruent

heat. the hardest yron soone doth mollify: that with his heavy sledge he can it beat, and fashion to what he it list apply. her hart more harde then yron soft awhit: ne all the playnts and prayers with which I doe beat on th'anduyle of her stubberne wit: the more she frieseth in her wilfull pryde: and harder growes the harder she is smit. with all the playnts which to her be applyde. What then remaines but I to ashes burne, and she to stones at length all frosen turne?

#### SONNET. XXXIII.

Reat wrong I doe, I can it not deny, to that most sacred Empresse my dear dred, not finishing her Queene of faëry, that mote enlarge her liuing prayses dead: But lodwick, this of grace to me aread: doe ye not thinck th'accomplishment of it, sufficient worke for one mans simple head, all were it as the rest but rudely writ. How then should I without another wit, thinck euer to endure so tædious toyle, sins that this one is tost with troublous fit, of a proud loue, that doth my spirite spoyle. Ceasse then, till she vouchsafe tograwnt me rest, or lend you me another liuing brest.

#### SONNET. XXXIIII.

L Yke as a ship that through the Ocean wyde, by conduct of some star doth make her way, whenas a storme hath dimd her trusty guyde, out of her course doth wander far astray. So I whose star, that wont with her bright ray, me to direct, with cloudes is ouercast, doe wander now in darknesse and dismay, through hidden perils round about me plast. Yet hope I well, that when this storme is past my *Itelice* the lodestar of my lyfe will shine again, and looke on me at last, with louely light to cleare my cloudy grief. Till then I wander carefull comfortlesse, in secret sorow and sad pensiuenesse.

#### SONNET. XXXV.

M Y hungry eyes through greedy couetize, still to behold the object of their paine, with no contentment can themselues suffize: but having pine and having not complaine. For lacking it they cannot lyfe sustayne, and having it they gaze on it the more: in their amazement lyke Narcissus vaine whose eyes him statu'd: so plenty makes me poore.

Yet are mine eyes so filled with the store of that faire sight, that nothing else they brooke,

but lothe the things which they did like before.

and can no more endure on them to looke.

All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to me,
and all their showes but shadowes, sauing she.

#### SONNET. XXXVI.

TEll me when shall these wearie woes have end,

Or shall their ruthlesse torment neuer cease: but al my dayes in pining languor spend, without hope of aswagement or release.

Is there no meanes for me to purchace peace, or make agreement with her thrilling eyes: but that their cruelty doth still increace, and dayly more augment my miseryes.

But when ye haue shewed all extremityes, then thinke how litle glory ye haue gayned: by slaying him, whoselyfe though ye despyse, mote haue your life in honour long maintayned.

But by his death which some perhaps will mone, ye shall condemned be of many a one.

#### SONNET. XXXVII.

Hat guyle is this, that those her golden tresses,

She doth attyre vnder a net of gold: and with sly skill so cunningly them dresses, that which is gold or heare, may scarse be told?

Is it that mens frayle eyes, which gaze too bold, she may entangle in that golden snare: and being caught may craftily enfold, theyr weaker harts, which are not wel aware? Take heed therefore, myne eyes, how ye doe

henceforth too rashly on that guilefull net, in which if euer ye entrapped are, out of her bands ye by no meanes shall get. Fondnesse it were for any being free, to couet fetters, though they golden bee.

#### SONNET, XXXVIII.

A Rion, when through tempests cruel wracke, He forth was thrown into the greedy seas: through the sweet musick which his harp did make allu'rd a Dolphin him from death to ease.

But my rude musick, which was wont to please some dainty eares, cannot with any skill, the dreadfull tempest of her wrath appease, nor moue the Dolphin from her stubborne will. But in her pride she dooth perseuer still, all carelesse how my life for her decayse: yet with one word she can it saue or spill, to spill were pitty, but to saue were prayse. Chose rather to be prayed for dooing good, then to be blam'd for spilling guiltlesse blood.

#### SONNET, XXXIX.

S Weet smile, the daughter of the Queene of loue,

Expressing all thy mothers powrefull art: with which she wonts to temper angry loue, when all the gods he threats with thundring dart.

Sweet is thy vertue as thy selfe sweet art, for when on me thoushinedst late in sadnesse, a melting pleasance ran through euery part, and me reuiued with hart robbing gladnesse. Whylest rapt with joy resembling heauenly madnes.

my soule was rauisht quite as in a traunce; and feeling thence no more her sorowes sadnesse.

fed on the fulnesse of that chearefull glaunce, More sweet than Nectar or Ambrosiall meat, seemd every bit, which thenceforth I did eat.

#### SONNET, XL.

Mark when she smiles with amiable cheare, And tell me whereto can ye lyken it: when on each eyelid sweetly doe appeare an hundred Graces as in shade to sit.

Lykest it seemeth in my simple wit vnto the fayre sunshine in somers day:

that when a dreadfull storme away is flit, thrugh the broad world doth spred his goodly ray: At sight whereof each bird that sits on spray,

and enery beast that to his den was fled comes forth afresh out of their late dismay, and to the light lift vp theyr drouping hed. So my storme beaten hart likewise is cheared,

with that sunshine when cloudy looks are cleared.

#### SONNET, XLL

Is it her nature or is it her will, to be so cruell to an humbled foe? if nature, then she may it mend with skill, if will, then she at will may will forgoe.

But if her nature and her wil be so, that she will plague the man that loues her

that she will plague the man that loues her most: and take delight t'encrease a wretches woe,

then all her natures goodly guifts are lost.

And that same glorious beauties yelle boast, is but a bayt such wretches to beguile:

as being long in her loues tempest tost, she meanes at last tomake her piteous spoyle. O fayrest fayre let neuer it be named,

that so fayre beauty was so fowly shamed.

#### SONNET. XLII.

The love which me so cruelly tormenteth, So pleasing is in my extreamest paine: that all the more my sorrow it augmenteth, the more I love and doe embrace my bane.

Ne doe I wish (for wishing were but vaine) to be acquit fro my continuall smart: but ioy her thrall for euer to remayne.

and yield for pledge my poore captyued hart; The which that it from her may neuer start,

let her, yf please her, bynd with adamant chayne:

and from all wandring loues which mote peruart,

his safe assurance strongly it restrayne. Onely let her abstaine from cruelty, and doe me not before my time to dy.

#### SONNET. XLIII.

Shall I then silent be or shall I speake? And if I speake, her wrath renew I shall: and if I silent be, my hart will breake,

or choked be with overflowing gall.
What tyranny is this both my hart to thrall,
and eke my toung with proud restraint to tie?
that nether I may speake nor thinke at all,
but like a stupid stock in allence die.

Yet I my hart with silence secretly will teach to speak, and my just cause to

and eke mine eies with meeke humility, loue learned letters to her eyes to read. Which her deep wit, that true harts thought

can spel,
will soone conceiue, and learne to construe
well.

#### SONNET. XLIIII.

WHen those renoumed noble Peres of Greece,

thrugh stubborn pride amongst themselues did iar

forgetfull of the famous golden fleece, then Orpheus with his harp they rstrife did bar.

But this continuall cruell ciuill warre, the which my selfe against my selfe doe make: whilest my weak powres of passions warreid arre.

no skill can stint nor reason can aslake. But when in hand my tunelesse harp I take, then doe I more augment my foes despight: and griefe renew, and passions doe awake to battaile, fresh against my selfe to fight. Mongst whome the more I seeke to settle peace, the more I fynd their malice to increace.

#### SONNET. XLV. Platon

Eaue lady in your glasse of christall clene. Your goodly selfe for euermore to vew: and in my selfe, my inward selfe I meane. most liuely lyke behold your semblant trew. Within my hart, though hardly it can shew thing so divine to vew of earthly eve. the fayre Idea of your celestiall hew, and euery part remaines immortally:

And were it not that through your cruelty. with sorrow dimmed and deformd it were: the goodly ymage of your visnomy. clearer then christall would therein appere. But if your selfe in me ve playne will see. remoue the cause by which your favre beames darkned be.

#### SONNET, XLVI.

V/Hen my abodes prefixed time is spent. My cruell fayre streight bids me wend my way:

but then from heaven most hideous stormes are sent

as willing me against her will to stay. Whom then shall I or heaven or her obay? the heavens know best what is the best forme: but as she will, whose will my life doth sway. my lower heauen, so it perforce must bee.

But ye high heuens, that all this sorowe see, sith all your tempests cannot hold me backe: aswage your stormes, or else both you and she. will both together me too sorely wrack.

Enough it is for one man to sustaine

the stormes, which she alone on me doth raine.

#### SONNET. XLVII.

Rust not the treason of those smyling

vntill ye haue theyr guylefull traynes well tryde:

for they are lyke but vnto golden hookes, that from the foolish fish they r bayts doe hyde: So she with flattring smyles weake harts doth guyde

vnto her loue, and tempte to theyr decay, whome being caught she kills with cruell pryde, and feeds at pleasure on the wretched pray:

Yet euen whylst her bloody hands them slav. her eyes looke louely and voon them smyle: that they take pleasure in her cruell play, and dying doe them selues of payne beguvle. O mighty charm which makes men loue theyr

bane. and thinck they dy with pleasure, live with

payne.

#### SONNET. XLVIII.

Nnocent paper, whom too cruell hand Did make the matter to avenge her yre: and ere she could thy cause wel vnderstan did sacrifize vnto the greedy fyre.

Well worthy thou to have found better hyre then so bad end for hereticks ordayned: yet heresy nor treason didst conspire, but plead thy maisters cause vniustly payned. Whom she all carelesse of his griefe constrayned to vtter forth the anguish of his hart: and would not heare, when he to her com-

playned, the piteous passion of his dying smart.

Yet live for ever, though against her will, and speake her good, though she requite it ill.

#### SONNET, XLIX.

Ayre cruell, why are ye so fierce and cruell? Is it because your eyes have powre to kill? then know, that mercy is the mighties iewell, and greater glory thinke to saue, then spill. But if it be your pleasure and proud will, to shew the powre of your imperious eyes: then not on him that neuer thought you ill, but bend your force against your enemyes. Let them feele th'utmost of your crueltyes, and kill with looks, as Cockatrices doo: but him that at your footstoole humbled

with mercifull regard, give mercy too. Such mercy shal you make admyred to be, so shall you live by giving life to me.

#### SONNET, L.

Ong languishing in double malady, of my harts wound and of my bodies griefe, there came to me a leach that would apply fit medicines for my bodies best reliefe. Vayne man (quod I) that hast but little priefe in deep discourry of the mynds disease, is not the hart of all the body chiefe? and rules the members as it selfe doth please. Then with some cordialls seeke first to appease the inward languour of my wounded hart, and then my body shall have shortly ease: but such sweet cordialls passe Physitions

Then my lyfes Leach doe you your skill reueale. and with one salue both hart and body heale

#### SONNET, L.I.

Oe I not see that favrest ymages Of hardest Marble are of purpose made? for that they should endure through many

ne let they famous moniments to fade. Why then doe I, vntrainde in louers trade, her hardnes blame which I should more com-

sith neuer ought was excellent assayde. which was not hard t'atchine and bring to

Ne ought so hard, but he that would attend, mote soften it and to his will allure: so doe I hope her stubborne hart to bend, and that it then more stedfast will endure. Onely my paines wil be the more to get her, but having her, my joy wil be the greater.

#### SONNET, L11.

O oft as homeward I from her depart, I goe lyke one that having lost the field, is prisoner led away with heavy hart. despoyld of warlike armes and knowen shield. So doe I now my selfe a prisoner yeeld, to sorrow and to solitary paine: from presence of my dearest deare exylde, longwhile alone in languor to remaine. There let no thought of joy or pleasure vaine, dare to approch, that may my solace breed: but sudden dumps and drery sad disdayne. of all worlds gladnesse more my torment feed. So I her absens will my penaunce make, that of her presens I my meed may take.

#### SONNET, LIII.

He Panther knowing that his spotted hyde Doth please all beasts, but that his looks them frav.

within a bush his dreadfull head doth hide, to let them gaze whylest he on them may

Right so my cruell fayre with me doth play, for with the goodly semblant of her hew she doth allure me to mine owne decay, and then no mercy will vnto me shew. Great shame it is, thing so divine in view, made for to be the worlds most ornament, to make the bayte her gazers to embrew. good shames to be to ill an instrument. But mercy doth with beautie best agree. as in theyr maker ye them best may see.

#### SONNET, LIIII.

F this workls Theatre in which we stay, My loue lyke the Spectator ydly sits beholding me that all the pageants play, discussing diversly my troubled wits. Sometimes I joy when glad occasion fits, and mask in myrth lyke to a Comedy: soone after when my joy to sorrow flits, I waile and make my woes a Tracedy. Yet she beholding me with constant eye, delights not in my merth nor rues my smart: but when I laugh she mocks, and when

she laughes, and hardens euermore her hart. What then can moue her? if nor merth nor

she is no woman, but a sencelesse stone.

#### SONNET, LV.

CO oft as I her beauty doe behold. And therewith doe her cruelty compare, I margade of what substance was the mould the which her made attonce so cruell faire. Not earth: for her high thoghts more heavenly

not water; for her loue doth burne like fyre: not avre; for she is not so light or rare, not fyre; for she doth friese with faint desire. Then needs another Element inquire whereof she mote be made; that is the skye. for to the heaven her haughty lookes aspire: and eke her mind is pure immortall hye. Then sith to heaven we lykened are the best, be lyke in mercy as in all the rest:

#### SONNET, LVI.

Ayre ye be sure, but cruell and vinkind, As is a Tygre that with greedinesse hunts after bloud, when he by chance doth

a feeble beast, doth felly him oppresse. Favre be ye sure, but proud and pittilesse, as is a storme, that all things doth prostrate: finding a tree alone all comfortlesse, beats on it strongly it to ruinate.

Favre be ve sure, but hard and obstinate, as is a rocke amidst the raging floods: gaynst which a ship of succour desolate, doth suffer wreck both of her selfe and goods. That ship, that tree, and that same beast am I,

whom ye doe wreck, doe ruine, and destroy.

#### SONNET. LVII.

SWeet warriour when shall I haue peace with you?

High time it is, this warre now ended were: which I no lenger can endure to sue, ne your incessant battry more to beare:

So weake my powres, so sore my wounds

appeare.

that wonder is how I should liue a iot, seeing my hart through launched euery where with thousand arrowes, which your eies have shot:

Yet shoot ye sharpely still, and spare me not, but glory thinke to make these cruel stoures, ye cruel one, what glory can be got, in slaving him that would line gladly yours?

Make peace therefore, and graunt me timely grace. that all my wounds will heale in little space.

#### SONNET, LVIII.

By her that is most assured to her selfe.

Yeake is th'assurance that weake flesh reposeth

In her owne powre, and scorneth others ayde: that soonest fals when as she most supposeth her selfe assurd, and is of nought affrayd.

All flesh is frayle, and all her strength vnstayd, like a vaine bubble blowen vp with ayre: deuouring tyme and changeful chance haue prayd

her glories pride that none may it repayre. Ne none so rich or wise, so strong or fayre, but fayleth trusting on his owne assurance: and he that standeth on the hyghest stayre fals lowest: for on earth nought hath enduraunce.

Why then doe ye proud fayre, misdeeme so farre, that to your selfe ye most assured arre.

#### SONNET. LIX.

Thrise happie she, that is so well assured
Vnto her selfe and setled so in hart:
that nether will for better be allured,
ne feard with worse to any chaunce to start:
But like a steddy ship doth strongly part
the raging waues and keepes her course
aright:

ne ought for tempest doth from it depart, ne ought for fayrer weathers false delight. Such selfe assurance need not feare the spight of grudging foes, ne fauour seek of friends: but in the stay of her owne stedfast might, nether to one her selfe nor other bends.

Most happy she that most assured doth rest, but he most happy who such one loues best.

#### SONNET. LX.

Hey that in course of heauenly spheares are skild,

To euery planet point his sundry yeare: In which her circles voyage is fulfild,

as Mars in three score yeares doth run his

So since the winged God his planet cleare, began in me to moue, one yeare is spent: the which doth longer vnto me appeare,

then al those fourty which my life outwent. Then by that count, which louers books inuent, the spheare of Cupid fourty yeares containes: which I haue wasted in long languishment.

that seemd the longer for my greater paines. But let my loues fayre Planet short her wayes this yeare ensuing, or else short my dayes.

#### SONNET. LXI.

The glorious image of the makers beautic,
My souerayne saynt, the Idoll of my
thought,

dare not henceforth aboue the bounds of dewtie,

t'accuse of pride, or rashly blame for ought. For being as she is divinely wrought,

and of the brood of Angels heuenly borne: and with the crew of blessed Saynts vpbrought, each of which did her with theyr guifts

The bud of ioy, the blossome of the morne, the beame of light, whom mortal eyes admyre:

what reason is it then but she should scorne base things, that to her loue too bold aspire? Such heauenly formes ought rather worshipt be, then dare be lou'd by men of meane degree.

#### SONNET. LXII.

The weary yeare his race now hauing run, The new begins his compast course anew: with shew of morning mylde he hath begun, betokening peace and plenty to ensew.

So let vs, which this chaunge of weather vew, chaunge eeke our mynds and former lines

the old yeares sinnes forepast let vs eschew, and fly the faults with which we did offend. Then shall the new yeares joy forth freshly send, into the glooming world his gladsome ray: and all these stormes which now his beauty

shall turne to caulmes and tymely cleare away. So likewise loue cheare you your heavy spright, and chaunge old yeares annoy to new delight.

#### SONNET, LXIII.

A Fter long stormes and tempests sad assay, Which hardly I endured heretofore: in dread of death and daungerous dismay. with which my silly barke was tossed sore: I doe at length descry the happy shore, m which I hope ere long for to arryue: tavre sovle it seemes from far and fraught with store

of all that deare and daynty is alyue. Most happy he that can at last atchyue the ioyous safety of so sweet a rest: whose least delight sufficeth to deprive remembrance of all paines which him opprest. All pames are nothing in respect of this, all sorrowes short that gaine eternall blisse.

#### SONNET, LXIIII.

Omming to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found) Me seemd I smelt a gardin of sweet flowres: that dainty odours from them threw around for damzels fit to decke their louers bowres. Her hps did smell lyke vnto Gillyflowers. her ruddy cheekes lyke vnto Roses red: her snowy browes lyke budded Bellamoures, her louely eyes lyke Pincks but newly spred.

Her goodly bosome lyke a Strawberry bed, her neck lyke to a bounch of Cullambynes: her brest lyke lillyes, ere theyr leaves be shed, her nipples lyke yong blossomd lessemynes. Such fragrant flowres doe give most odorous smell.

but her sweet odour did them all excell.

#### SONNET. LXV.

'He doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre loue, is vaine,

That fondly feare to loose your liberty, when loosing one, two liberties ye gayne, and make him bond that bondage earst dyd fly. Sweet be the bands, the which true love doth tve. without constraynt or dread of any ill: the gentle birde feeles no captivity within her cage, but singes and feeds her fill. There pride dare not approch, nor discord spill the league twixt them, that loyal loue hath

but simple truth and mutuall good will, seekes with sweet peace to salue each others. And that thy loue we weighing worthily, wound:

There fayth doth fearlesse dwell in brasen towre.

bound:

bowre.

#### SONNET, LXVI.

O all those happy blessings which ye haue, I with plenteous hand by heaven voon you thrown.

this one disparagement they to you gaue, that we your love lent to so meane a one. Yee whose high worths surpassing paragon. could not on earth have found one fit for

ne but in heaven matchable to none. why did ye stoup vnto so lowly state? But ye thereby much greater glory gate, then had ye sorted with a princes pere: for now your light doth more it selfe dilate.

and in my darknesse greater doth appeare. Yet since your light hath once enlumind me. with my reflex yours shall encreased be.

#### SONNET, LXVII.

Yke as a huntsman after weary chace, Seeing the game from him escapt away. sits downe to rest him in some shady place. with panting hounds beguiled of their pray: So after long pursuit and vaine assay,

when I all weary had the chace forsooke. the gentle deare returnd the selfe-same way. thinking to quench her thirst at the next brooke.

There she beholding me with mylder looke, sought not to fly, but fearelesse still did bide: till I in hand her yet halfe trembling tooke, and with her owne goodwill hir fyrmely tyde. Strange thing me seemd to see a beast so wyld, so goodly wonne with her owne will beguvid.

#### SONNET, LXVIII.

Ost glorious Lord of lyfe, that on this

Didst make thy triumph ouer death and sin: and having harrowd hell, didst bring away captiuity thence captiue vs to win:

This ioyous day, deare Lord, with ioy begin, and grant that we for whom thou diddest dye being with thy deare blood clene washt from

may live for ever in felicity.

may likewise love thee for the same againe: and for thy sake that all lyke deare didst buy, with loue may one another entertayne. and spotlesse pleasure builds her sacred So let vs loue, deare loue, lyke as we ought, loue is the lesson which the Lord vs taught.

#### SONNET, LXIX.

The famous warriors of the anticke world, Vsed Trophees to erect in stately wize: in which they would the records haue enrold, of theyr great deeds and valarous emprize. What trophee then shall I most fit deuize, in which I may record the memory

in which I may record the memory of my loues conquest, peerelesse beauties prise,

adorn'd with honour, loue, and chastity.
Euen this verse vowd to eternity,
shall be thereof immortall moniment;
and tell her prayse to all posterity,
that may admire such worlds rare wonderment.

The happy purchase of my glorious spoile, gotten at last with labour and long toyle.

#### Spring SONNET. LXX.

FResh spring the herald of loues mighty king,

In whose cote armour richly are displayd all sorts of flowers the which on earth do

in goodly colours gloriously arrayd.

Goe to my loue, where she is carelesse layd, yet in her winters bowre not well awake: tell her the ioyous time wil not be staid valesse she doe him by the forelock take. Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready make, to wayt on loue amongst his louely crew: where euery one that misseth then her make, shall be by him amearst with penance dew.

Make hast therefore sweet loue, whilest it is

for none can call againe the passed time.

#### SONNET, LXXL

I loy to see how in your drawen work,
Your selfe vnto the Bee ye doe compare;
and me vnto the Spyder that doth lurke,
in close awayt to catch her vnaware.
Right so your selfe were caught in cunning snare

of a deare foe, and thralled to his loue: in whose streight bands ye now captiued are so firmely, that ye neuer may remoue.

But as your worke is wouen all aboue, with woodbynd flowers and fragrant Eglantine:

so sweet your prison you in time shall proue, with many deare delights bedecked fyne. And ali thensforth eternall peace shall see, betweene the Spyder and the gentle Bee,

#### SONNET. LXXII.

Ft when my spirit doth spred her bolder winges,

In mind to mount vp to the purest sky: it down is weighd with thoght of earthly things

and clogd with burden of mortality,

Where when that souerayne beauty it doth spy, resembling heavens glory in her light: drawne with sweet pleasures bayt, it back doth fly,

and vnto heauen forgets her former flight. There my fraile fancy fed with full delight, dothbath in blisse and mantleth most at ease, ne thinks of other heauen, but how it might herharts desire with most contentment please. Hart need not with none other happinesse.

but here on earth to have such heuens blisse.

#### SONNET, LXXIII.

Being my selfe captyued here in care, My hart, whom none with serule bands can tye,

but the fayre tresses of your golden hayre, breaking his prison forth to you doth fly. Lyke as a byrd that in ones hand doth spy desired food, to it doth make his flight: euen so my hart, that wont on your fayre eye to feed his fill, flyes backe vnto your sight. Doe you him take, and in your bosome bright, gently encage, that he may be your thrall: perhaps he there may learne with rare delight,

to sing your name and prayses ouer all.

That it hereafter may you not repent,
him lodging in your bosome to haue lent.

#### SONNET. LXXIIII.

Most happy letters fram'd by skilfull trade,

with which that happy name was first desynd:

the which three times thrise happy hath me made,

with guifts of body, fortune and of mind. The first my being to me gaue by kind, from mothers womb deriu'd by dew descent, the second is my souereigne Queene most kind, that honour and large richesse to me lent. The third my loue, my liues last ornament,

The third my loue, my liues last ornament, by whom my spirit out of dust was raysed; to speake her prayse and glory excellent, of all alive most worthy to be praysed.

Ye three Elizabeths for euer liue,

that three such graces did vnto me giue.

#### SONNET. LXXV.

Ne day I wrote her name vpon the strand, but came the waues and washed it away: agayne I wrote it with a second hand, but came the tyde, and made my paynes his pray.

Vayne man, sayd she, that doest in vaine assay, a mortall thing so to immortalize, for I my schue shall lyke to this decay, and eek my name bee wyped out lykewize. Not so, (quod I) let baser things deuize to dy in dust, but you shall liue by fame: my verse your vertues rare shall eternize, and in the heuens wryte your glorious name. Where whenas death shall all the world subdew, our loue shall liue, and later life renew.

SONNET, LXXVI

FAyre bosome fraught with vertues richest tresure,

The neast of loue, the lodging of delight: the bowre of blisse, the paradice of pleasure, the sacred harbour of that heuculy spright. How was I ranisht with your louely sight, and my frayle thoughts too rashly led astray? whiles diumg deepe through amorous insight, on the sweet spoyle of beautie they did pray.

And twixt her paps like early fruit in May, whose haruest seemd to hasten now apace: they loosely did theyr wanton winges display, and there to rest themselues did boldly place. Sweet thoughts I enuy your so happy rest, which oft I wisht, yet neuer was so blest.

#### SONNET, LXXVII.

As it a dreame, or did I see it playne, a goodly table of pure yvory: all spred with iuncats, it to entertayne the greatest Prince with pompous roialty. Mongst which there in a siluer dish did ly twoo golden apples of vnualewd price: far passing those which Hercules came by, or those which Atalanta did entice.

Exceeding sweet, yet voyd of sinfull vice, That many sought yet none could euer taste, sweet fruit of pleasure brought from paradice

by loue himselfe, and in his garden piaste. Her brest that table was so richly spredd, my thoughts the guests, which would thereon haue fedd

#### SONNET. LXXVIII.

Ackyng my loue I go from place to place, lyke a young fawne that late hath lost the hynd:

and seeke each where, where last I sawe her face.

whose ymage yet I carry fresh in mynd. I seeke the fields with her late footing synd, I seeke herbowre withher late presence deckt, yet nor in field nor bowre I her can fynd; yet field and bowre are full of her aspect.

But when myne eyes I thereunto direct, they ydly back returne to me agayne, and when I hope to see theyr trew object, I fynd my selfe but fed with fancies vayne. Ceas is then myne eyes, to seeke her selfe to see, and let my thoughts behold her selfe in mee.

#### SONNET, LXXIX.

M En call you fayre, and you doe credit it, For that your selfe ye dayly such doe see: but the trew fayre, that is the gentle wit, and vertuous mind, is much more prayed of me.

For all the rest, how ever fayre it be, shall turne to nought and loose that glorious hew:

but onely that is permanent and free from frayle corruption, that doth flesh ensew. That is true beautie: that doth argue you to be diuine and borne of heauenly seed; deriu'd from that fayre Spirit, from whom al true.

and perfect beauty did at first proceed. He onely fayre, and what he fayre hath made, all other fayre lyke flowres vntymely fade.

#### SONNET, LXXX.

A Fter so long a race as I have run
Through Facry land, which those six
books compile,
give leave to rest me being halfe fordonne,
and gather to my selfe new breath awhile.

Then as a steed refreshed after toyle, out of my prison I will breake anew: and stoutly will that second worke assoyle, with strong endeuour and attention dew. Till then giue leaue to me in pleasant mew, to sport my muse and sing my loues sweet

praise: the contemplation of whose heauenly hew, my spirit to an higher pitch will rayse.

But let her prayses yet be low and meane, fit for the handmayd of the Faery Queene.

#### SONNET, LXXXI.

Ayre is my loue, when her fayre golden

with the loose wond ve wauing chance to marke:

fayre when the rose in her red cheekes

or in her eyes the fyre of loue does sparke. Fayre when her brest lyke a rich laden barke, with pretious merchandize she forth doth lay: favre when that cloud of pryde, which oft doth dark

her goodly light with smiles she drives away. But fayrest she, when so she doth display, the gate with pearles and rubyes richly dight: through which her words so wise do make their way

to beare the message of her gentle spright. The rest be works of natures wonderment, but this the worke of harts astonishment.

#### SONNET, LXXXII.

Oy of my life, full oft for louing you I blesse my lot, that was so lucky placed: but then the more your owne mishap I rew, that are so much by so meane love embased. For had the equall heuens so much you graced in this as in the rest, ye mote inuent som heuenly wit, whose verse could have

enchased your glorious name in golden moniment. But since ye deignd so goodly to relent to me your thrall, in whom is little worth, that little that I am, shall all be spent, in setting your immortall prayses forth. Whose lofty argument vplifting me, shall lift you vp vnto an high degree.

SONNET. LXXXIII.

MY hungry eyes, through greedy couetize, still to behold the object of theyr payne: with no contentment can themselves suffize, but having pine, and having not complayne. For lacking it, they cannot lyfe sustayne. and seeing it, they gaze on it the more: in theyr amazement lyke Narcissus vayne

Yet are myne eyes so filled with the store of that fayre sight, that nothing else they

whose eyes him staru'd: so plenty makes me

but loath the things which they did like before. and can no more endure on them to looke. All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to me, and all theyr shewes but shadowes, sauing she.

#### SONNET, LXXXIIII.

Et not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre breake out, that may her sacred peace molest:

ne one light glance of sensuall desyre Attempt to work her gentle mindes vnrest. But pure affections bred in spotlesse brest, and modest thoughts breathd from well

tempred sprites goe visit her in her chast bowre of rest,

accompanyde with angelick delightes. There fill your selfe with those most ioyou-

sights, the which my selfe could neuer yet attayne but speake no word to her of these sad plights. which her too constant stiffenesse doth constrayn.

Onely behold her rare perfection. and blesse your fortunes fayre election.

### SONNET. LXXXV.

'He world that cannot deeme of worthy things.

when I doe praise her, say I doe but flatter: so does the Cuckow, when the Mauis sings, begin his witlesse note apace to clatter.

But they that skill not of so heavenly matter, all that they know not, enuy or admyre, rather then enuy let them wonder at her, but not to deeme of her desert aspyre.

Deepe in the closet of my parts entyre, her worth is written with a golden guill: that me with heavenly fury doth inspire, and my glad mouth with her sweet prayses fill Which when as fame in her shrill trump shall thunder

let the world chose to enuy or to wonder.

## SONNET. LXXXVI.

Enemous toung, tipt with vile adders sting. Of that selfe kynd with which the Furies fell theyr snaky heads doc combe, from which a spring

of poysoned words and spitefull speeches well. Let all the plagues and horrid paines of hell, vpon thee fall for thine accursed hyre: that with false forged lyes, which thou didst tel, in my true loue did stirre vp coles of yre,

The sparkes whereof let kindle thine own fyre. and catching hold on thine owne wicked hed consume thee quite, that didst with guile

conspire

in mysweet peace such breaches to have bred Shame be thy meed, and mischiefe thy reward, dew to thy selfe that it for me prepard.

## SONNET, LXXXVII.

C Ince I did leave the presence of my love. Many long weary dayes I have outworne: and many nights, that slowly seemd to moue they rsad protract from evening vntill morne. For when as day the heaven doth adorne. I wish that night the noyous day would end: and when as night hath vs of light forlorne. I wish that day would shortly reascend. Thus I the time with expectation spend. and faine my griefe with chaunges to beguile, that further seemes his terme still to extend. and maketh euery minute seeme a myle. So sorrow still doth seeme too long to last, but ioyous houres doo fly away too fast.

### SONNET. LXXXVIII.

Ince I have lackt the comfort of that light. The which was wont to lead my thoughts astray:

I wander as in darkenesse of the night, affrayd of euery dangers least dismay.

Ne ought I see, though in the clearest day, whenothers gaze voon they rshadowes vayne: but th'onely image of that heauenly ray, whereof some glance doth in mine eie remayne.

Of which beholding the Idaa playne, through contemplation of my purest part: with light thereof I doe my selfe sustayne, and thereon feed my loue-affamisht hart. But with such brightnesse whylest I fill my

I starue my body and mine eyes doe blynd.

#### SONNET, LXXXIX.

Yke as the Culuer on the bared bough, Sits mourning for the absence of her mate: and in her songs sends many a wishfull vow, for his returne that seemes to linger late. So I alone now left disconsolate,

mourne to my selfe the absence of my loue: and wandring here and there all desolate, seek with my playnts to match that mournful doue:

Ne ioy of ought that vnder heauen doth houe, can comfort me, but her owne ioyous sight: whose sweet aspect both God and man can

in her vnspotted pleasauns to delight. Dark is my day, whyles her fayre light I mis, and dead my life that wants such lively blis. SPENSER

N youth before I waxed old, The blynd boy Venus baby. For want of cunning made me bold. In bitter hyue to grope for houny. But when he saw me stung and cry. He tooke his wings and away did fly.

S Dane hunted on a day. She chaunst to come where Cupid lay, his quiuer by his head: One of his shafts she stole away, And one of hers did close conuay. into the others stead: With that love wounded my loves hart, but Diane beasts with Cupids dart.

Saw in secret to my Dame, I How little Cupid humbly came: and sayd to her All hayle my mother. But when he saw me laugh, for shame His face with bashfull blood did flame. not knowing Venus from the other, Then neuer blush Cupid (quoth I) for many haue err'd in this beauty.

[ Pon a day as love lay sweetly slumbring, all in his mothers lap:

A gentle Bee with his loud trumpet murm'ring, about him flew by hap.

Whereof when he was wakened with the novse. and saw the beast so small:

Whats this (quoth he) that gives so great a that wakens men withall?

In angry wize he flyes about, and threatens all with corage stout.

To whom his mother closely smiling sayd, twixt earnest and twixt game: See thou thy selfe likewise art lyttle made, if thou regard the same. And yet thou suffrest neyther gods in sky, nor men in earth to rest: But when thou art disposed cruelly, theyr sleepe thou doost molest. Then eyther change thy cruelty, or give lyke leave vnto the fly.

## AMORETTI.

Nathlesse the cruell boy not so content, would needs the fly pursue: And in his hand with heedlesse hardiment, him caught for to subdue. But when on it he hasty hand did lay, the Bee him stung therefore: Now out alasse (he cryde) and welaway, I wounded am full sore: The fly that I so much did scorne. hath hurt me with his little horne. Vnto his mother straight he weeping came. and of his griefe complayned: Who could not chose but laugh at his fond though sad to see him pained Think now (quod she) my sonne how great the of those whom thou dost wound: Full many thou hast pricked to the hart, that pitty neuer found: Therefore henceforth some pitty take, when thou doest spoyle of louers make.

She tooke him streight full pitiously lamenting, and wrapt him in her smock:

She wrapt him softly, all the while repenting, that he the fly did mock.

She drest his wound and it embaulmed wel with salue of soueraigne might:

And then she bath'd him in a dainty well the well of deare delight

Who would not oft be stung as this to be so bath'd in Venus blis?

The wanton boy was shortly wel recured, of that his malady:

of that his malady:
But he soone after fresh againe enured,
his former cruelty.
And since that time he wounded hath my
selfe

60

with his sharpe dart of loue:
And now forgets the cruell carelesse elfe
his mothers heast to proue.
So now I languish, till he please
my pining anguish to appease

FINIS.

# Epithalamion.





E learned sisters which have oftentimes
Beene to me ayding, others to adorne:
Whom ye thought worthy of your gracefull
rymes.

That even the greatest did not greatly scorne To heare theyr names sung in your simple layes,

But ioyed in theyr prayse.

And when ye list your owne mishaps to mourne, Which death, or loue, or fortunes wreck did rayse.

Your string could soone to sadder tenor turne, And teach the woods and waters to lament Your dolefull dreriment.

Now lay those sorrowfull complaints aside, And hauing all your heads with girland crownd, Helpe me mine owne loues prayses to resound, Ne let the same of any be enuide

So Orpheus did for his owne bride, So I vnto my selfe alone will sing,

The woods shall to me answer and my Eccho ring.

Arly before the worlds light giuing lampe, Hauing disperst the nights vnchearefull dampe, Doe ye awake, and with fresh lusty hed, Go to the bowre of my beloued loue, My truest turtle doue, Bid her awake; to Human is awake

Bid her awake; for Hymen is awake, And long since ready forth his maske to moue, With his bright Tead that flames with many a

flake,
And many a bachelor to waite on him,
In theyr fresh garments trim.
Bid her awake therefore and soone her dight,
For lo the wished day is come at last,
31
That shall for al the paynes and sorrowes past,
Pay to her vsury of long delight:
And whylest she doth her dight,
Doe ye to her of ioy and solace sing,
That all the woods may answer and your eccho
ring.

Ring with you all the Nymphes that you can heare
Both of the rivers and the forrests greene:
And of the sea that neighbours to her neare,
Al with gay girlands goodly wel beseene. 40
And let them also with them bring in hand,
Another gay girland
For my fayre love of lillyes and of roses,
Bound trueloue wize with a blew silke riband.
And let them make great store of bridale poses,
And let them eeke bring store of other flowers
To deck the bridale bowers.

And let the ground whereas her foot shall tread, For feare the stones her tender foot should wrong

Be strewed with fragrant flowers all along, 50 And diapred lyke the discolored mead. Which done, doe at her chamber dore awayt,

For she will waken strayt,

The whiles doe ye this song vnto her sing, The woods shall to you answer and your Eccho ring.

YE Nymphes of Mulla which with carefull heed,

The siluer scaly trouts doe tend full well, And greedy pikes which vse therein to feed, (Those trouts and pikes all others doo excell) And ye likewise which keepe the rushy lake, Where none doo fishes take,

Bynd vp the locks the which hang scatterd light,

And in his waters which your mirror make, Behold your faces as the christall bright, That when you come whereas my loue doth lie, No blemish she may spie.

And eke ye lightfoot mayds which keepe the deere,

That on the hoary mountaine vse to towre, And the wylde wolus, which seeke them to deuoure.

With your steele darts los chace from comming neer 70

Be also present heere,

To helpe to decke her and to help to sing, That all the woods may answer and your ecchoring.

WAke, now my loue, awake; for it is time, The Rosy Morne long since left Tithones bed,

All ready to her siluer coche to clyme, And Phœbus gins to shew his glorious hed. Hark how the cheerefull birds do chaunt theyr laies

And carroll of loues praise.

The merry Larke hir mattins sings aloft, 80 The thrush replyes, the Mauis descant playes The Ouzell shrills, the Ruddock warbles soft, So goodly all agree with sweet consent, To this dayes merriment.

Ah my deere loue why doe ye sleepe thats long, When meeter were that ye should now awake, T'awayt the comming of your ioyous make, And hearken to the birds louelearned song, The deawy leaues among.

For they of ioy and pleasance to you sing, 90 That all the woods them answer and theyr eccho ring.

Y loue is now awake out of her dreame, And her fayre eyes like stars that dimmed were

With darksome cloud, now shew theyr goodly beams

More bright then Hesperus his head doth rere. Come now ye damzels, daughters of delight, Helpe quickly her to dight,

But first come ye fayre houres which were begot In loues sweet paradice, of Day and Night, Which doe the seasons of the yeare allot, 100 And al that euer in this world is fayre Doe make and still repayre.

And ye three handmayds of the Cyprian Queene, The which doe still adorne her beauties pride. Helpe to addorne my beautifullest bride: And as ye her array, still throw betweene Some graces to be seene,

And as ye vse to Venus, to her sing. The whiles the woods shal answer and your eccho ring.

N Ow is my loue all ready forth to come. Let all the virgins therefore well awayt, And ye fresh boyes that tend vpon her groome Prepare your selues; for he is comming strayt. Set all your things in seemely good aray Fit for so joyfull day.

The joyfulst day that euer sunne did see. Faire Sun, shew forth thy fanourable ray, And let thy lifull heat not feruent be For feare of burning her sunshyny face, Her beauty to disgrace. 120 O fayrest Phœbus, father of the Muse, If ever I did honour thee aright, Or sing the thing, that mote thy mind delight, Doe not thy servants simple boone refuse, But let this day let this one day be myne,

Then I thy souerayne prayses loud wil sing, That all the woods shal answer and theyr eccho ring.

I Arke how the Minstrels gin to shrill aloud

Let all the rest be thine.

Their merry Musick that resounds from 1,30 far, 130 The pipe, the tabor, and the trembling Croud, That well agree withouten breach or iar. But most of all the Damzels doe delite, When they their tymbrels smyte. And thereunto doe daunce and carrol sweet,

That all the sences they doe rauish quite, street.

Crying aloud with strong confused noyce. As if it were one vovce. Hymen io Hymen, Hymen they do shout, 140 That even to the heavens theyr shouting shrill Doth reach, and all the firmament doth fill. To which the people standing all about. As in approuance doe thereto applaud And loud advaunce her laud. And evermore they Hymen Hymen sing. That al the woods them answer and theyr eccho

Oe where she comes along with portly pace Lyke Phoebe from her chamber of the East, Arysing forth to run her mighty race, Clad all in white, that seemes a virgin best, So well it her beseemes that ye would weene Some angell she had beene. Her long loose yellow locks lyke golden wyre. Sprinckled with perle, and perling flowres a tweene, Doe lyke a golden mantle her attyre, And being crowned with a girland greene, Seeme lyke some mayden Queene. Her modest eyes abashed to behold So many gazers, as on her do stare, 160 Vpon the lowly ground affixed are. Ne dare lift vp her countenance too bold, But blush to heare her prayses sung so loud,

So farre from being proud. Nathlesse doe ye still loud her prayses sing. That all the woods may answer and your eccho

Ell me ye merchants daughters did ye see So fayre a creature in your towne before, So sweet, so louely, and so mild as she, Adornd with beautyes grace and vertues store, Her goodly eyes lyke Saphyres shining bright, Her forehead yuory white,

Her cheekes lyke apples which the sun hath rudded.

Her lips lyke cherryes charming men to byte, Her brest like to a bowle of creame vncrudded, Her paps lyke lyllies budded, Her snowie necke lyke to a marble towre, And all her body like a pallace fayre, Ascending uppe with many a stately stayre,

To honors seat and chastities sweet bowre. Why stand ye still ye virgins in amaze, Voon her so to gaze.

Whiles ye forget your former lay to sing, The whyles the boyes run vp and downe the To which the woods did answer and your eccho ring.

Byt if ye saw that which no eyes can see,
The inward Leauty of her liuely spright,
Garnisht with heauenly guifts of high degree,
Much more then would ye wonder at that
sight,

And stand astonisht lyke to those which red Medusaes mazeful hed. 190 There dwels sweet loue and constant chastity,

Negard of honour and mild modesty,
There vertue raynes as Queene in royal throne,
And giueth lawes alone.

The which the base affections doe obay,
And yeeld theyr seruices vnto her will,
Ne thought of thing vncomely euer may
Thereto approch to tempt her mind to ill.
Had ye once seene these her celestial threasures,
200

And vnreuealed pleasures,

Then would ye wonder and her prayses sing.
That al the woods should answer and your echo
ring.

Pen the temple gates vnto my loue, Open them wide that she may enter in, And all the postes adorne as doth behoue, And all the pillours deck with girlands trim, For to recyue this Saynt with honour dew, That commeth in to you. With trembling steps and humble reuerence, She commeth in, before th'almighties vew, Of her ye virgins learne obedience, When so ye come into those holy places, To humble your proud faces: Bring her vp to th'high altar, that she may The sacred ceremonies there partake, The which do endlesse matrimony make, And let the roring Organs loudly play The praises of the Lord in lively notes. The whiles with hollow throates 220 The Choristers the ioyous Antheme sing, That al the woods may answere and their eccho ring.

Dehold whiles she before the altar stands
Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes
And blesseth her with his two happy hands,
How the red roses flush vp in her cheekes,
And the pure snow with goodly vermill stayne,
Like crimsin dyde in grayne,
That euen th'Angels which continually,
About the sacred Altare doe remaine,

230

Forget their seruce and about her Hy,
Ofte peeping in her face that seemes more
fayre,
The more they on it stare.
But her sad eyes still fastened on the ground,
Are gouerned with goodly modesty,
That suffers not one looke to glaunce awry,
Which may let in a little thought vinsownd.
Why blush ye loue to giue to me your hand,
The pledge of all our band?
Sing ye sweet Angels, Alleluya sing,
240
That all the woods may answere and youreccho
ring.

N Owalisdone; bring homethe bride againe, Bring home the triumph of our victory, Bring home with you the glory of her gaine, With ioyance bring her and with iollity. Neuer had man more joyfull day then this, Whom heaven would heave with blis. Make feast therefore now all this liue long day. This day for euer to me holy is, Poure out the wine without restraint or stay, Poure not by cups, but by the belly full, 251 Poure out to all that wull. And sprinkle all the postes and wals with wine, That they may sweat, and drunken be withall. Crowne ye God Bacchus with a coronall. And Hymen also crowne with wreathes of vine. And let the Graces daunce vnto the rest; For they can doo it best: The whiles the maydens doe theyr carroll sing, To which the woods shal answer and theyr eccho ring.

R Ing ye the bels, ye yong men of the towne, And leaue your wonted labors for this day: This day is holy; doe ye write it downe, That ye for euer it remember may. This day the sunne is in his chiefest hight, With Barnaby the bright, From whence declining daily by degrees, He somewhat loseth of his heat and light, When once the Crab behind his back he sees. But for this time it ill ordained was. To chose the longest day in all the yeare, And shortest night, when longest fitter weare: Yet neuer day so long, but late would passe. Ring ve the bels, to make it weare away, And bonefiers make all day, And daunce about them, and about them sing: that all the woods may answer, and your eccho ring.

H when will this long weary day have end, And lende me leave to come vnto my loue? How slowly do the houres they rnumbers spend? How slowly does sad Time his feathers moue? Hast thee O favrest Planet to thy home

Within the Westerne fome:

Thy tyred steedes long since haue need of rest. Long though it be, at last I see it gloome, And the bright evening star with golden creast Appeare out of the East.

Favre childe of beauty, glorious lampe of loue That all the host of heaven in rankes doost lead, And guydest louers through the nightes dread. How chearefully thou lookest from aboue, 291 And seemst to laugh atweene thy twinkling light As joving in the sight

Of these glad many which for joy doe sing, That all the woods them answer and their echo

ring.

Towceasse ve damsers your delights forepast; Enough is it, that all the day was youres: Now day is doen, and night is nighing fast: Now bring the Bryde into the brydall boures. Now night is come, now soone her disaray, And in her bed her lav; Laty her in lillies and in violets, And silken courteins over her display. And odourd sheetes, and Arras couerlets. Behold how goodly my faire loue does ly In proud humbity: Like viito Maia, when as Ioue her tooke, In Tempe, lying on the flowry gras. Twixt'slope and wake, after she weary was, With bathing in the Acidahan brooke. Now it is night, ye damsels may be gon,

And leave my loue alone. And leave likewise your former lay to sing: The woods no more shal answere, nor your echo ring.

Ow welcome night, thou night so long expected. That long daies labour doest at last defray, And all my cares, which cruell loue collected, Hast sumd in one, and cancelled for aye: Spread thy broad wing ouer my loue and me, That no man may vs see, And in thy sable mantle vs enwrap,

From feare of perrill and foule horror free. Let no false treason seeke vs to entrap, Nor any dread disquiet once annoy

The safety of our foy:

But let the night be calme and quietsome. Without tempestuous storms or sad afray: Lyke as when loue with fayre Alcinena lay, When he begot the great Tirynthian groome: Or lyke as when he with thy selfe did lie, 330 And begot Maiesty.

And let the mayds and yongmen cease to sing: Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho

Et no lamenting cryes, nor dolefull teares, Be heard all night within nor yet without: Ne let false whispers, breeding hidden feares, Breake centle sleepe with misconceined dout. Let no deluding dreames, nor dreadful sights Make sudden sad affrights;

Ne let housefyres, nor lightnings helpelesse harmes. Ne let the Pouke, nor other cuill sprights, Ne let mischiuous witches with theyr charmes, Ne let hob Goblins, names whose sence we see mat

Fray vs with things that be not. Let not the shriech Oule, nor the Storke be heard:

Nor the night Rauen that still deadly yels, Nor damned ghosts cald vp with mighty spels, Nor griesly vultures make vs once afleard: Ne let th'unpleasant Quyre of Frogs still crok-

350 Make vs to wish theyr choking. Let none of these theyr drery accents sing : Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho ring.

D Vt let stil Silence trew night watches keepe, That sacred peace may in assurance rayne, And tymely sleep, when it is tyme to sleepe, May poure his limbs forth on your pleasant playne.

The whiles an hundred little winged loues, Like divers fethered doves,

Shall fly and flutter round about your bed, And in the secret darke, that none reproues, Their prety stealthes shal worke, and snares 361 shal spread

To filch away sweet snatches of delight, Conceald through conert night.

Ye sonnes of Venus, play your sports at will, For greedy pleasure, carelesse of your toyes, Thinks more upon her paradise of loyes, Then what ye do, albe it good or ill.

All night therefore attend your merry play, For it will soone be day:

Now none doth hinder you, that say or sing, Ne will the woods now answer, nor your Eccho 371 ring.

peepes? Or whose is that faire face, that shines so

Is it not Cinthia, she that neuer sleepes, But walkes about high heaven al the night? O fayrest goddesse, do thou not enuy My loue with me to spy:

For thou likewise didst loue, though now

vnthought.

And for a fleece of woll, which privily, The Latmian shephard once vnto thee brought, His pleasures with thee wrought. Therefore to vs be fauorable now: And sith of wemens labours thou hast charge, And generation goodly dost enlarge, Encline thy will t'effect our wishfull vow. And the chast wombe informe with timely seed, That may our comfort breed:

Till which we cease our hopefull hap to sing. Ne let the woods vs answere, nor our Eccho

classic Nd thou great Iuno, which with awful The lawes of wedlock still dost patronize, And the religion of the faith first plight With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize: And eeke for comfort often called art Of women in their smart, Eternally bind thou this louely band. And all thy blessings vnto vs impart. And thou glad Genius, in whose gentle hand, The bridale bowre and geniall bed remaine, Without blemish or staine. And the sweet pleasures of theyr loues delight With secret ayde doest succour and supply, Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny. Send vs the timely fruit of this same night.

Ho is the same, which at my window And thou fayre Hebe, and thou Hymen free. Grant that it may so be.

Til which we cease your further prayse to

Ne any woods shal answer, nor your Eccho

pelietin astrology

Nd ye high heavens, the temple of the gods, A In which a thousand torches flaming bright Doe burne, that to vs wretched earthly clods, In dreadful darknesse lend desired light; And all ye powers which in the same remayne, More then we men can fayne, Poure out your blessing on vs plentiously, And happy influence vpon vs raine, That we may raise a large posterity. Which from the earth, which they may long

possesse, With lasting happinesse, Vp to your haughty pallaces may mount, 420 And for the guerdon of theyr glorious merit May heavenly tabernacles there inherit, Of blessed Saints for to increase the count. So let vs rest, sweet loue, in hope of this, And cease till then our tymely loyes to sing, The woods no more vs answer, nor our eccho ring.

C Ong made in lieu of many ornaments, With which my loue should duly have bene dect,

Which cutting off through hasty accidents, Ye would not stay your dew time to expect, But promist both to recompens. 431 Be vnto her a goodly ornament, And for short time an endlesse moniment.

FINIS

Imprinted by P. S. for William Ponsonby.



# Fowre Hymnes,

MADE BY Edm. Spenser.



London, Printed for VVilliam Ponsonby. 1596.

# TO THE RIGHT HO-NORABLE AND MOST VER-

tuous Ladies, the Ladie Margaret Countesse of Cumberland, and the Ladie Marie Countesse of Warwicke.

composed these former two Hymnes in the praise of Loue and beautie, and finding that the same too much pleased those of like age and disposition, which being too vehemently carried with that kind of affection, do rather sucke out poylon to their strong passion, then hony to their honest delight, I was moved by the one of you two most excellent Ladies, to call in the same. But being unable so to doe, by reason that many copies thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to amend, and by way of retractation to reforme them, making in stead of those two Hymnes of earthly or naturall love and beautie, two others of heavenly and celestiall. The which I doe dedicate iountly unto you two honorable

Haung in the greener times of my youth, sisters, as to the most excellent and rare ornational composed these former two Hamas and one and the other kinde, humbly beseeching you to vouchsafe the patronage of them, and to accet this my humble service, in lieu of the great graces and honourable fauours which ye dayly shee unto me, untill such time as I may by better meanes veeld you some more notable testimonis of my thankfull mind and dutifull denotion.

> And even so I pray for your happinesse. Greenwich this first of September. 1596.

Your Honors most bounden euer in all humble service.

Ed. Sp.

## AN HYMNE HONOVR OF LOVE.

And raging now therein with restlesse stowre, Doest tyrannize in eueric weaker part; Faine would I seeke to ease my bitter smart,

By any seruice I might do to thee. Or ought that else might to thee pleasing bee.

And now t'asswage the force of this new flame, And make thee more propitious in my need, I meane to sing the praises of thy name, And thy victorious conquests to areed; By which thou madest many harts to bleed Of mighty Victors, with wyde wounds embrewed,

And by thy cruell darts to thee subdewed.

Onely I feare my wits enfeebled late. Through the sharpe sorrowes, which thou hast me bred.

Should faint, and words should faile me, to relate The wondrous triumphs of thy great godhed. But if thou wouldst vouchsafe to overspred Me with the shadow of thy gentle wing, I should enabled be thy actes to sing.

Oue, that long since hast to thy mighty powre, Come then, O come, thou mightie God of loue, Perforce subdude my poore captined hart, Out of thy siluer bowres and secret blisse, Where thou doest sit in Venus lap aboue, Bathing thy wings in her ambrosiall kisse, That sweeter farre then any Nectar is ; Come softly, and my feeble breast inspire With gentle furie, kindled of thy fire.

> And ye sweet Muses, which have often proved The piercing points of his auengefull darts; And ye faire Nimphs, which oftentimes have

> The cruell worker of your kindly smarts, Prepare your selues, and open wide your harts, For to receive the triumph of your glorie, That made you merie oft, when ye were sorie.

> And ye faire blossomes of youths wanton breed, Which in the conquests of your beautie bost, Wherewith your louers feeble eyes you, feed, But sterue their harts, that needeth nourture

Prepare your selves, to march amongst his host, And all the way this sacred hymne do sing, Made in the honor of your Soueraigne king.

Reat god of might, that reignest in the mynd, And all the bodie to thy hest doest frame. Victor of gods, subduer of mankynd, That doest the Lions and fell Tigers tame, Making their cruell rage thy scornefull game, And in their roring taking great delight; Who can expresse the glorie of thy might? Or who aliue can perfectly declare, The wondrous cradle of thine infancie? When thy great mother Venus first thee bare, Begot of Plentie and of Penurie, Though elder then thine owne natiuitie; And yet a chyld, renewing still thy yeares And yet the eldest of the headenly Peares. For ere this worlds still mouing mightie masse, Out of great Chaos vgly prison crept, In which his goodly face long hidden was From heavens view, and in deepe darknesse

kept, Loue, that had now long time securely slept In Venus lap, vnarmed then and naked, Gan reare his head, by Clotho being waked.

And taking to him wings of his owne heate, Kindled at first from heauens heegining fyre, He gan to mone out of his idle seate, Weakely at first, but after with desyre Lifted aloft, he gan to mount vp hyre, And like fresh Eagle, make his hardle flight Through all that great wide wast, yet wanting hight.

Yet wanting light to guide his wandring way, His owne faire mother, for all creatures sake, Did lend him light from her owne goodly ray: Then through the world his way he gan to take, The world that was not till he did it make; Whose sundrie parts he from them schoes did scher,

The which before had lyen confused euer.

The earth, the ayre, the water, and the fyre, Then gan to raunge them selues in huge array, And with contrary forces to conspyre 80. Each against other, by all meanes they may hreatning their owne confusion and decay: Ayre hated earth, and water hated fyre, Till Loue relented their rebellious yre.

He then them tooke, and tempering goodly well Their contrary dislikes with loued meanes, Did place them all in order, and compell To keepe them selues within their sundrie raines, Together linkt with Adamantine chanies; Yet so, as that in euery liuing wight 90 They mixe themselues, and shew their kindly might.

So ever since they firmely have remained, And duly well observed his beheast; Through which now all these things that are contained

Within this goodly cope, both most and least Their being haue, and dayly are increast, Through secret sparks of his infused fyre, Which in the barraine cold he doth inspyre.

Thereby they all do liue, and moued are To multiply the likenesse of their kynd, 100 Whilest they seeke onely, without further care, To quench the flame, which they in burning fynd:

But man, that breathes a more immortall mynd, Not for lusts sake, but for eternitie, Seekes to enlarge his lasting progenie.

For having yet in his deducted spright, Some sparks remaining of that heavenly fyre, He is enlumind with that goodly light, Vitto like goodly semblant to aspyre: Therefore in choice of lone, he doth desyre That seemes on earth most heavenly, to embrace,

That same is Beautie, borne of heauenly race. For sure of all, that in this mortall frame Contained is, nought more dinine doth seeme, Or that resembleth more th'mmortall flame Of heauenly light, then Beauties glorious beame. What wonder then, if with such rage extreme Fraile men, whose eyes seek heauenly things to

At sight thereof so much enrauisht bee? 119

Which well perceining, that imperious boy, Doth therwith tip his sharp empoisned darts; Which glancing through the eyes with countenance coy,

Rest not, till they have pierst the trembling harts,

And kindled flame in all their inner parts, Which suckes the blood, and drinketh vp the lyfe

Of carefull wretches with consuming griefe,

Thenceforth they playne, and make ful piteous mone

Vnto the author of their balefull bane; The daies they waste, the nights they grieue and grone,

Their lives they loath, and heavens light disdaine; 130 No light but that, whose lampe doth yet remaine

Fresh burning in the image of their eye, They deigne to see, and seeing it still dye. The whylst thou tyrant Loue doest laugh and At their complaints, making their paine thy

play;

Whylest they lye languishing like thrals forlorne.

The whyles thou doest triumph in their decay. And otherwhyles, their dying to delay. Thou doest emmarble the proud hart of her. Whose loue before their life they doe prefer.

So hast thou often done (av me the more) 141 To me thy vassall, whose yet bleeding hart, With thousand wounds thou mangled hast so sore

That whole remaines scarse any little part, Yet to augment the anguish of my smart, Thou hast enfrosen her disdainefull brest, That no one drop of pitie there doth rest.

Why then do I this honor vnto thee. Thus to ennoble thy victorious name, Since thou doest shew no fauour vuto mee, Ne once moue ruth in that rebellious Dame. Somewhat to slacke the rigour of my flame? Certes small glory doest thou winne hereby, To let her live thus free, and me to dy.

But if thou be indeede, as men thee call. The worlds great Parent, the most kind preseruer

Of living wights, the soueraine Lord of all, How falles it then, that with thy furious feruour.

Thou doest afflict as well the not deseruer, 150 As him that doeth thy louely heasts despize, And on thy subjects most doest tyrannize?

Yet herein eke thy glory seemeth more, By so hard handling those which best thee serue,

That ere thou doest them vnto grace restore, Thou mayest well trie if they will ever swerve. And mayest them make it better to deserue; And having got it, may it more esteeme. For things hard gotten, men more dearely

deeme.

So hard those heavenly beauties be enfyred. As things divine, least passions doe impresse, The more of stedfast mynds to be admyred, The more they stayed be on stedfastnesse: But baseborne mynds such lamps regard the

Which at first blowing take not hastie fyre, Such fancies feele no loue, but loose desyre. For love is Lord of truth and loialtie, Lifting himselfe out of the lowly dust. On golden plumes up to the purest skie. Aboue the reach of loathly sinfull lust, Whose base affect through cowardly distrust Of his weake wings, dare not to heaven fly. But like a moldwarpe in the earth doth ly.

His dunghill thoughts, which do themselues enure

To dirtie drosse, no higher dare aspyre. Ne can his feeble earthly eyes endure The flaming light of that celestiall fyre. Which kindleth loue in generous desyre, And makes him mount aboue the natiue might Of heavie earth, vp to the heavens hight.

Such is the powre of that sweet passion. That it all sordid basenesse doth expell, And the refyned mynd doth newly fashion Vnto a fairer forme, which now doth dwell In his high thought, that would it selfe excell: Which he beholding still with constant sight, Admires the mirrour of so heavenly light.

Whose image printing in his deepest wit, He thereon feeds his hungrie fantasy, Still full, yet neuer satisfyde with it. Like Tantale, that in store doth sterued ly: So doth he pine in most satiety, For nought may quench his infinite desyre, Once kindled through that first conceived fyre.

Thereon his mynd affixed wholly is. Ne thinks on ought, but how it to attaine: His care, his ioy, his hope is all on this, That seemes in it all blisses to containe. In sight whereof, all other blisse seemes vaine. Thrise happie man, might he the same possesse; He faines himselfe, and doth his fortune blesse.

And though he do not win his wish to end, Yet thus farre happie he him selfe doth weene. That heavens such happie grace did to him lend, As thing on earth so heavenly, to have seene, His harts enshrined saint, his heavens queene. Fairer then fairest, in his fayning eye, Whose sole aspect he counts felicitye.

Then forth he casts in his vnquiet thought, What he may do, her fauour to obtaine: What braue exploit, what perill hardly wrought. What puissant conquest, what aduenturous paine.

May please her best, and grace vnto him gaine : He dreads no danger, nor misfortune feares, His faith, his fortune, in his breast he beares.

Thou art his god, thou art his mightie guyde, Thou being blind, letst him not see his feares, But carriest him to that which he hath eyde, Through seas, through flames, through thousand swords and speares:

Ne ought so strong that may his force with-

With which thou armest his resistlesse hand.

Witnesse Leander, in the Euxine waues, 231 And stout Æneas in the Troiane fyre, Acidles preassing through the Phrygian glaiues, And Orpheus daring to prouoke the yre Of damned fiends, to get his loue retyre: For both through heauen and hell thou makest way.

To win them worship which to thee obay.

And if by all these perils and these paynes, He may but purchase lyking in her eye. What heauens of ioy, then to himselfe he faynes, Eftsoones he wypes quite out of memory, 241 What euer ill before he did aby: Had it bene death, yet would he die againe, To liue thus happie as her grace to gaine.

Yet when he hath found fauour to his will, He nathemore can so contented rest, But forceth further on, and striueth still T'approch more neare, till in her immost brest, He may embosond bee, and loued best; And yet not best, but to be lou'd alone: 250 For loue can not endure a Paragone.

The feare whereof, O how doth it torment His troubled mynd with more then hellish paine!

And to his fayning fansie represent Sights neuer seene, and thousand shadowes vaine.

To breake his sleepe, and waste his ydle braine; Thou that hast neuer lou'd canst not beleeve, Least part of th'euils which poore louers greeve.

The gnawing enuie, the hart-fretting feare,
The vame surmizes, the distrustfull showes,
The false reports that flying tales doe beare,
The doubts, the daungers, the delayes, the woes,
The fayned friends, the vnassured foes,
With thousands more then any tongue can tell,
Doe make a louers life a wretches hell.

Yet is there one more cursed then they all,
That cancker worme, that monster Gelosie,
Which eates the hart, and feedes vpon the gall,
Turning all loues delight to miserie,
Through feare of loosing his felicitie.

Ah Gods, that cuer ye that monster placed
In gentle loue, that all his ioyes defaced.

By these, O Loue, thou doest thy entrance make, Vnto thy heaven, and doest the more endeere,

Vinto thy heauen, and doest the more endeere, Thy pleasures vinto those which them partake, As after stormes when clouds begin to cleare, The Sunne more bright and glorious doth appeare;

So thou thy folke, through paines of Purgatorie, Dost beare vinto thy blisse, and heavens glorie.

There thou them placest in a Paradize Of all delight, and ioyous happie rest, Where they doe feede on Nectar heauenly wize, With Hercules and Hebe, and the rest Of Penus dearlings, through her bountie blest. And lie like Gods in yuorie beds arayd, With rose and lillies ouer them displayd.

There with thy daughter Pleasure they doe play
Their hurtlesse sports, without rebuke or blame,
And in her snowy bosone boldly lay
28c
Their quiet heads, denoyd of guilty shame,
After full ioyance of their gentle game,

Then her they crowne their Goddesse and their Queene,

And decke with floures thy altars well beseene,

Ay me, deare Lord, that euer I might hope, For all the paines and woes that I endure, To come at length vnto the wished scope Of my desire; or might my selfe assure, That happie port for euer to recure. Then would I thinke these paines no paines at all,

And all my woes to be but penance small. 300

Then would I sing of thine immortall praise An heavenly Hymne, such as the Angels sing, And thy triumphant name then would I raise Boue all the gods, thee onely honoring, My guide, my God, my victor, and my king; Till then, dread Lord, vouchsafe to take of me This simple song, thus fram'd in praise of thee,

# AN HYMNE IN HONOVR OF BEAVTIE.

20

AH whither, Loue, wilt thou now carrie mee?
What wontlesse fury dost thou now inspire Into my feeble breast, too full of thee? Whylest seeking to aslake thy raging fyre. Thou in me kindlest much more great desyre, And vp aloft aboue my strength doest rayse The wondrous matter of my fyre to prayse.

That as I earst in praise of thine owne name, So now in honour of thy Mother deare, An honourable Hymne I eke should frame; And with the brightnesse of her beautie cleare. The rauisht harts of gazefull men might reare, To admiration of that heavenly light, From whence proceeds such soule enchaunting might.

Therto do thou great Goddesse, queene of

Mother of love, and of all worlds delight, Without whose souerayne grace and kindly dewtv.

Nothing on earth seemes fayre to fleshly sight. Doe thou vouchsafe with thy loue-kindling light,

T'illuminate my dim and dulled eyne, And beautifie this sacred hymne of thyne.

That both to thee, to whom I meane it most, And eke to her, whose faire immortall beame, Hath darted fyre into my feeble ghost, That now it wasted is with woes extreame, It may so please that she at length will streame Some deaw of grace, into my withered hart, After long sorrow and consuming smart.

Hat time this worlds great workmaister did cast

To make al things, such as we now behold, 30 It seemes that he before his eyes had plast A goodly Paterne, to whose perfect mould He fashiond them as comely as he could; That now so faire and seemely they appeare, As nought may be amended any wheare.

That wondrous Paterne wheresoere it bee, Whether in earth lavd vp in secret store. Or else in heaven, that no man may it see With sinfull eyes, for feare it to deflore, Is perfect Beautie which all men adore, Whose face and feature doth so much excell All mortal sence, that none the same may tell. | Exceld, in perfect limming every part.

Thereof as every earthly thing partakes, Or more or lesse by influence divine. So it more faire accordingly it makes, And the grosse matter of this earthly myne, Which clotheth it, thereafter doth refyne, Doing away the drosse which dims the light Of that faire beame, which therein is empight. For through infusion of celestiall powre, The duller earth it quickneth with delight, And life-full spirits privily doth powre Through all the parts, that to the lookers sight They seeme to please. That is thy soueraine might,

O Cyprian Queene, which flowing from the beame Of thy bright starre, thou into them doest streame.

That is the thing which giveth pleasant grace To all things faire, that kindleth lively fyre, Light of thy lampe, which shyning in the face, Thence to the soule darts amorous desyre, 60 And robs the harts of those which it admyre, Therewith thou pointest thy Sons poysned arrow.

That wounds the life, and wastes the inmost marrow.

marrow. When the control of the cont That beautie is nought else, but mixture made Of colours faire, and goodly temp'rament Of pure complexions, that shall quickly fade And passe away, like to a sommers shade, Or that it is but comely composition Of parts well measurd, with meet disposition. Hath white and red in it such wondrous powre, That it can pierce through th'eyes vnto the hart.

And therein stirre such rage and restlesse stowre,

As nought but death can stint his dolours smart?

Or can proportion of the outward part, Moue such affection in the inward mynd. That it can rob both sense and reason blynd? Why doe not then the blossomes of the field, Which are arayd with much more orient hew, And to the sense most daintie odours yield, 80 Worke like impression in the lookers vew? 40 Or why doe not faire pictures like powre shew, In which oftimes, we Nature see of Art

But ah, beleeue me, there is more then so That workes such wonders in the minds of men. I that have often prou'd, too well it know; And who so list the like assayes to ken, shall find by tryall, and confesse it then, That Beautie is not, as fond men misdeeme, An outward shew of things, that onely seeme.

For that same goodly hew of white and red, With which the cheekes are sprinckled, shall decay,

And those sweete rosy leaues so fairely spred Vpon the lips, shall fade and fall away To that they were, even to corrupted clay. That golden wyre, those sparckling stars so bright

Shall turne to dust, and loose their goodly light. But that faire lampe, from whose celestiall ray That light proceedes, which kindleth louers fire, shall neuer be extinguisht nor decay, 101 But when the vitall spirits doe expyre, Vitto her nature planet shall retyre, For it is heauenly borne and can not die, Being a parcell of the purest skie.

For when the soule, the which deriued was At first, out of that great immortall Spright, By whom all liue to loue, whilome did pas Downe from the top of purest heauens hight, To be embodied here, it then tooke light 110 And liuely spirits from that fayrest starre, Which lights the world forth from is first carre.

Which powre retayning still or more or lesse, When she in fleshly seede is eft enraced, Through euery part she doth the same impresse,

According as the heavens have her graced, And frames her house, in which she will be placed,

Fit for her selfe, adorning it with spoyle
Of th'heauenly riches, which she rolid erewhyle.
Theref it comes that there fairs soulle, which

Therof it comes, that these faire soules, which have 120

The most resemblance of that heauenly light, Frame to themselues most beautifull and braue their fleshly bowre, most fit for their delight, And the grosse matter by a soueraine might Tempers so trim, that it may well be seene, A pallace fit for such a virgin Queene.

So every spirit, as it is most pure, And hath in it the more of heavenly light, So it the fairer bodie doth procure To habit in, and it more fairely dight 130 With chearefull grace and amiable sight. For of the soule the bodie forme doth take: For soule is forme, and doth the bodie make.

Therefore where ever that thou doest behold A camely corpse, with beautie faire endewed, Know this for certaine, that the same doth hold A beauteous soule, with faire conditions thewed, Fit to receive the seede of vertue strewed. For all that faire is, is by nature good; That is a signe to know the gentle blood.

Yet oft it falles, that many a gentle mynd Dwels in deformed tubernacle drownd, Either by chaunce, against the course of kynd, Or through vnaptnetle in the substance fownd, Which it assumed of some stubborne grownd, That will not yield vnto her formes direction, But is perform'd with some foule imperfection.

And oft it falles (ay me the more to rew)
That goodly beautie, albe headenly borne,
Is foule abusd, and that celestiall hew,
150
Which doth the world with her delight adorne
Made but the bait of sinne, and sinners scorne;
Whilest enery one doth seeke and sew to laue it
But enery one doth seeke, but to depraue it.

Yet nathemore is that faire beauties blame, But theirs that do abuse it vnto ill: Nothing so good, but that through guilty shame May be corrupt, and wrested vnto will. Nathelesse the soule is faire and beauteous still, How ever fleshes fault it filthy make:

160
For things immortall no corruption take.

But ye faire Dames, the worlds deare ornaments,

And lively images of heavens light,
Let not your beames with such disturagements
Bedimd, and your bright gloriedarknedquight:
But mindfull still of your first countries aight,
Doe still preserve your first informed grace,
Whose shadow yet shynes in your beauteous
face.

Loath that foule blot, that hellish fierbrand, Disloiall lust, faire beauties foulest blame, 170 That base affections, which your eares would bland.

Commend to you by loues abused name;
But is indeede the bondslaue of defame,
Which will the garland of your glorie marre,
And quench the light of your bright shyning
starre.

But gentle Loue, that loiall is and trew, Will more illumine your resplendent ray, And adde more brightnesse to your goodly hew, From light of his pure fire, which by like way Kindled of yours, your likenesse doth display, Like as two mirrours by opposd reflexion, 18, Doe both expresse the faces first impression.

Therefore to make your beautie more appeare, It you behoues to loue, and forth to lay That heauenly riches, which in you ye beare, That men the more admyre their fountaine may, For else what booteth that celestiall ray, If it in darknesse be enshrined euer, That it of louing eyes be vewed neuer?

But in your choice of Loues, this well aduize, That likest to your selues ye them select, 191 The which your forms first sourse may sympathize,

And with like beauties parts be inly deckt:
For if you loosely loue without respect,
It is no loue, but a discordant warre,
Whose vnlike parts amongst themselues do
intro

For Loue is a celestiall harmonic,
Of likely harts composed of starres concent,
Which boyne together in sweete sympathie,
To worke ech others boy and true content,
Which they have harbourd since their first
descent 201

Out of their heauenly bowres, where they did

And know ech other here belou'd to bee.

Then wrong it were that any other twaine Should in loues gentle band combyned bee, But those whom heauen did at first ordaine, And made out of one mould the more t'agree: For all that like the beautie which they see, Streight do not loue: for loue is not so light, As streight to burne at first beholders sight.

But they which loue indeede, looke otherwise, With pure regard and spotlesse true intent, Drawing out of the obiect of their eyes, A more refyned forme, which they present Vnto their mind, voide of all blemishment; Which it reducing to her first perfection, Beholdeth free from fleshes frayle infection.

And then conforming it vnto the light, Which in it selfe it hath remaining still Of that first Sunne, yet sparckling in his sight, Thereof he fashions in his higher skill, 221 An heavenly beautie to his fancies will, And it embracing in his mind entyre, The mirrour of his owne thought doth admyre.

Which seeing now so inly faire to be, As outward it appeareth to the eye, And with his spirits proportion to agree, He theroon fixeth all his fantasie, And fully setteth his felicitie, Counting it fairer, then it is indeede, 230 And yet indeede her fairenesse doth exceede.

For louers eyes more sharply sighted bee Then other mens, and in deare loues delight See more then any other eyes can see, Through mutuall receipt of beames bright, Which carrie priuie message to the spright, And to their eyes that inmost faire display, As plaine as light discouers dawning day.

Therein they see through amorous eye-glaunces. Armies of loues still flying too and fro, 246 Which dart at them their litle fierie launces, Whom hauing wounded, backe againe they go, Carrying compassion to their louely foe; Who seeing her faire eyes so sharpe effect, Cures all their sorrowes with one sweete aspect.

In which how many wonders doe they reede To their conceipt, that others neuer see, Now of her smiles, with which their soules they feede,

Like Gods with Nectar in their bankets free, Now of her lookes, which like to Cordials bee; But when her words embassade forth she sends, Lord how sweete musicke that vnto them lends.

Sometimes upon her forhead they behold A thousand Graces masking in delight, Sometimes within her eye-lids they unfold Ten thousand sweet belgards, which to their sight

Doe seeme like twinckling starres in frostie night:

But on her lips, like rosy buds in May, So many millions of chaste pleasures play.

All those, O Cyherea, and thousands more 260 Thy handmaides be, which do on thee attend To decke thy beautie with their dainties store, That may it more to mortall eyes commend, And make it more admyr'd of foe and frend; That in mens harts thou mayst thy throne enstall

And spred thy louely kingdome ouer all.

Then lö tryumph, O great beauties Queene, Aduance the banner of thy conquest hie, That all this world, the which thy vassals beene, May draw to thee, and with dew fealtie, 270 Adore the powre of thy great Maiestie, Singing this Hymne in honour of thy name, Compyld by me, which thy poore liegeman am.

In lieu whereof graunt, O great Soueraine, That she whose conquering beautie doth captiue

My trembling hart in her eternall chaine, One drop of grace at length will to me giue, That I her bounden thrall by her may liue, And this same life, which first fro me she reaued.

May owe to her, of whom I it receaued.

And you faire Venus dearling, my deare dread, Fresh flowre of grace, great Goddesse of my life, When your faire eyes these fearefull lines shal read,

Deigne to let fall one drop of dew reliefe, That may recure my harts long pyning griefe, And shew what wondrous powre your beauty hath.

280 That can restore a damned wight from death.

FINIS

## AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

Oue, lift me vp vpon thy golden wings, From this base world vnto thy heauens hight,

Where I may see those admirable things, Which there thou workest by thy soueraine inight,

Farre aboue feeble reach of earthly sight, That I thereof an heauenly Hymne may sing Vnto the god of Loue, high heauens king.

Many lewd layes (ah woe is me the more) In praise of that mad fit, which fooles call

I have in th'heat of youth made heretofore, That in light wits did loose affection move. II But all those follies now I do zeproue, And turned have the tenor of my string, The heavenly prayses of true long to sing.

And ye that wont with greedy vaine desire To reade my fault, and wondring at my flame, To warme your selues at my wide sparckling fire,

Sith now that heat is quenched, quench my blame.

And in her ashes shrowd my dying shame: For who my passed follies now pursewes, as Beginnes his owne, and my old fault renewes.

DEfore this worlds great frame, in which al things
Are now containd, found any being place
Ere flitting Time could wag his eyas wings
About that mightie bound, which doth embrace
The rolling Spheres, and parts their houres by space,

That high eternall powre, which now doth moue In all these things, mou'd in it selfe by loue.

It lou'd it selfe, because it selfe was faire; (For faire is lou'd;) and of it selfe begot. Like to it selfe his eldest sonne and heire, Eternall, pure, and voide of sinfull blot, The firstling of his ioy, in whom no iot Of loues dislike, or pride was to be found, Whom he therefore with equall honour crownd.

With him he raignd, before all time prescribed, In endlesse gloric and immortall might, Together with that third from them deriued, Most wise, most holy, most almightic Spright, Whose kingdomes throne no thought of earthly wight

Can comprehend, much lesse my trembling verse With equall words can boje, it to reherse. Yet O most blessed Spirit, pure lampe of light, Eternall spring of grace and wisedome trew, Vouchsafe to shed into my barren spright, Some little drop of thy celestiall dew, That may my rymes with sweet infuse embrew, And giue me words equall vnto my thought. To tell the maruelles by thy mercie wrought. Yet being pregnant still with powrefull grace, And full of fruitfull loue, that loues to get 51 Things like himselfe, and to enlarge his race, His second brood though not in powre so great, Yet full of beautie, next he did beget An infinite increase of Angels bright, All glistring glorious in their Makers light.

To them the heavens illimitable hight,
Not this round heaven, which we from hence behold,
Adornd with thousand lamps of burning light,
And with ten thousand gemmes of shyning gold,
He gave as their inheritance to hold,
That they might serve him in eternall blis,
And be partakers of those loyes of his.

There they in their trinall triplicities
About him wait, and on his will depend,
Either with nimble wings to cut the skies,
When he them on his messages doth send,
Or on his owne dread presence to attend,
Where they behold the glorie of his light,
And caroll Hymnes of loue both day and night.

Both day and night is vnto them all one, 71 For he his beames doth still to them extend, That darknesse there appeareth neuer none, Ne hath their day, ne hath their blisse an end, But there their termelesse time in pleasure spend,

Ne euer should their happinesse decay, Had not they dar'd their Lord to disobay.

But pride impatient of long resting peace, Did puffe them vp with greedy bold ambition, That they gan cast their state how to increase Aboue the fortune of their first condition, Sin: The brightest Angell, euen the Child of light, Drew millions more against their God to fight.

Th'Almighty seeing their so bold assay, Kindled the flame of his consuming yre, And with his onely breath them blew away From heauens hight, to which they did aspyre, To deepest hell, and lake of damned fyre; Where they in darknesse and dread horror dwell,

Hating the happie light from which they fell.

So that next off-spring of the Makers loue, Next to himselfe in glorious degree, Degendering to hate, fell from aboue Through pride; (for pride and loue may ill agree)

And now of sinne to all ensample bee: How then can sinfull flesh it selfe assure, Sith purest Angels fell to be impure?

But that eternall fount of loue and grace,
Still flowing forth his goodnesse vnto all,
Now seeing left a waste and emptie place
In his wyde Pallace, through those Angels fall,
Cast to supply the same, and to enstall
A new vnknowen Colony therein,
Whose root from earths base groundworke
shold begin.

Therefore of clay, base, vile, and next to nought, Yet form'd by wondrous skill, and by his might: According to an heauenly patterne wrought, Which he had fashiond in his wise foresight, He man did make, and breathd a liuing spright Into his face most beautifull and fayre, III Endewd with wisedomes riches, heauenly, rare.

Such he him made, that he resemble might Himselfe, as mortall thing immortall could; Him to be Lord of euery liuing wight, He made by loue out of his owne like mould. In whom he might his mightie selfe behould: For loue doth loue the thing belou'd to see, That like it selfe in louely shape may bee.

But man forgetfull of his makers grace, 120 No lesse then Angels, whom he did ensew, Fell from the hope of promist heauenly place. Into the mouth of death, to sinners dew, And all his off-spring into thraldome threw. Where they for euer should in bonds remaine, Of neuer dead, yet euer dying paine.

Till that great Lord of Loue, which him at first Made of meere loue, and after liked well, Seeing him lie like creature long accurst, In that deepe horror of despeyred hell, 130 Him wretch in doole would let no lenger dwell, But cast out of that bondage to redeeme, And pay the price, all were his debt extreeme.

Out of the bosome of eternall blisse, In which he reigned with his glorious syre, He downe descended, like a most demisse And abiect thrall, in fleshes fraile attyre, That he for him might pay sinnes deadly hyre. And him restore vnto that happie state, In which he stood before his haplesse fate. 140

In flesh at first the guilt committed was, Therefore in flesh it must be satisfyde: Nor spirit, nor Angell, though they man surpas, Could make amends to God for mans misguyde. But onely man himselfe, who selfe did slyde. So taking flesh of sacred virgins wombe, For mans deare sake he did a man become.

And that most blessed bodie, which was borne Without all blemish or reprochfull blame, He freely gaue to be both rent and torne 150 Of cruell hands, who with despightfull shame Reuyling him, that them most vile became, At length him nayled on a gallow tree. And slew the iust, by most vniust decree.

O huge and most vnspeakeable impression Of loues deepe wound, that pierst the piteous hart

Of that deare Lord with so entyre affection, And sharply launching every inner part, Dolours of death into his soule did dart; Doing him die, that never it deserved, To free his foes, that from his heast had swerved. What hart can feele least touch of so sore

()r thought can think the depth of so deare wound ?

Whose bleeding sourse their streames yet neuer

But stil do flow, and freshly still redound. To heale the sores of sinful soules visound, And clease the guilt of that infected cryme, Which was enrooted in all fleshly slyme.

() blessed well of lone. O floure of grace. () glorious Morning starre, O lampe of light, Most huely image of thy fathers face, Eternall King of glorie, Lord of might. Mecke lambe of God before all worlds behight, How can we thee requite for all this good? Or what can prize that thy most precious blood?

Yet nought thou ask'st in heu of all this loue, But love of vs for guerdon of thy pame. Ay me; what can vs lesse then that behoue? Had he required life of vs againe. Hadit beenewrong to askehisownewithgaine? He gaue vs life, he it restored lost; Then life were least, that vs so litle cost.

But he our life hath left vnto vs free. Free that was thrall, and blessed that was band; Ne ought demaunds, but that we louing bee, As he hunselfe hath lou'd vs afore hand, And bound therto with an eternall band. Him first to love, that vs so dearely bought, And next, our brethren to his image wrought.

Hun first to loue, great right and reason is, Who first to vs our life and being gaue; And after when we fared had amisse, Vs wretches from the second death did saue; And last the food of life, which now we have, Euen himselfe in his deare sacrament, To feede our hungry soules vnto vs lent.

Then next to loue our brethren, that were made Of that selfe mould, and that selfe makers hand. That we, and to the same againe shall fade, Where they shall have like heritage of land. How euer here on higher steps we stand; 201 Which also were with selfe same price redeemed

That we, how euer of vs light esteemed. And were they not, yet since that louing Lord Commaunded vs to loue them for his sake. Euen for his sake, and for his sacred word, Which in his last bequest he to vs spake. We should them loue, and with their needs partake;

Knowing that whatsoere to them we give,

Such mercy he by his most holy reede Vnto vs taught, and to approve it trew, Ensampled it by his most righteous deede. Shewing vs mercie, miserable crew. That we the like should to the wretches shew. And loue our brethren; thereby to approue, How much himselfe that loued vs. we love.

Then rouze thy selfe, O earth, out of thy soyle, In which thou wallowest like to filthy swyne And doest thy mynd in durty pleasures moyle. Vinmindfull of that dearest Lord of thyne : 221 Lift vp to him thy heavie clouded eyne, That thou his soueraine bountie mayst behold. And read through love his mercies manifold.

Beginne from first, where he encradled was In simple cratch, wrapt in a wad of hay, Betweene the toylefull Oxe and humble Asse, And in what rags, and in how base aray, The glory of our heavenly riches lay, When him the silly Shepheards came to see, Whom greatest Princes sought on lowest knee.

From thence reade on the storie of his life. His humble carriage, his vnfaulty wayes, His cancred foes, his fights, his toyle, his strife. His paines, his pouerties his sharpe assayes. Through which he past his miserable dayes. Offending none, and doing good to all, Yet being malist both of great and small.

And looke at last how of most wretched wights. He taken was, betrayd, and false accused, 240 How with most scornefull taunts, and fell despights

He was renyld, disgrast, and foule abused, How scourgd, how crownd, how buffeted, how brused:

And lastly how twixt robbers crucifyde, With bitter wounds through hands, through feet and syde.

Then let thy flinty hart that feeles no paine, Empierced be with pittifull remorse. And let thy bowels bleede in every vaine, At sight of his most sacred heavenly corse, So torne and mangled with malicious forse, And let thy soule, whose sins his sorrows wrought. Melt into teares, and grone in grieved thought.

With sence whereof whilest so thy softened spirit

Is inly toucht, and humbled with meeke zeale, Through meditation of his endlesse merit. Lift vp thy mind to th'author of thy weale. And to his soueraine mercie doe appeale; Learne him to love, that loved thee so deare. We give to him, by whom we all doe live. 210 And in thy brest his blessed image beare. 250 With all thy hart, with all thy soule and

Thou must him love, and his beheasts em-

All other loues, with which the world doth

Weake fancies, and stirre vp affections base. Thou must renounce, and vtterly displace. And give thy selfe vnto him full and free, That full and freely gaue himselfe to thee.

Then shalt thou feele thy spirit so possest, And rauisht with deuouring great desire Of his deare selfe, that shall thy feeble brest Inflame with love, and set thee all on fire 270 With burning zeale, through every part entire, That in no earthly thing thou shalt delight, But in his sweet and amiable sight.

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee dve. And all earthes glorie on which men do gaze. Seeme durt and drosse in thy pure sighted eve Compar'd to that celestiall beauties blaze, Whose glorious beames all fleshly sense doth

With admiration of their passing light, Blinding the eyes and lumining the spright.

Then shall thy rauisht soule inspired bee 281 With heauenly thoughts, farre aboue humar of

And thy bright radiant eyes shall plainely see Th'Idee of his pure glorie, present still Before thy face, that all thy spirits shall fill With sweete enragement of celestiall loue, Kindled through sight of those faire things aboue.

FINIS.

# AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAVTIE.

R Apt with the rage of mine own rauisht Beginning then below, with th'easie vew thought, Of this base world, subject to fleshly eve

Through contemplation of those goodly sights, And glorious images in heaven wrought, Whose wondrous beauty breathing sweet delights,

Do kindle loue in high conceipted sprights: I faine to tell the things that I behold. But feele my with to faile, and tongue to fold.

Vouchsafe then. O thou most almightie Spright, From whom all guifts of wit and knowledge flow,

To shed into my breast some sparkling light Of thine eternall Truth, that I may show Some litle beames to mortall eyes below, Of that immortall beautie, there with thee, Which in my weake distraughted mynd I see.

That with the glorie of so goodly sight, The hearts of men, which fondly here admyre Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine delight, Transported with celestiall desyre Of those faire formes, may lift themselves vp

And learne to loue with zealous humble dewty

Of this base world, subject to fleshly eye, From thence to mount aloft by order dew, To contemplation of th'immortall sky, Of the soare faulcon so I learne to fly, That flags awhile her fluttering wings beneath. Till she her selfe for stronger flight can breath.

Then looke who list, thy gazefull eyes to feed With sight of that is faire, looke on the frame Of this wyde vniuerse, and therein reed The endlesse kinds of creatures, which by name Thou canst not count, much lesse their natures aime:

All which are made with wondrous wise respect, And all with admirable beautie deckt.

First th'Earth, on adamantine pillers founded, Amid the Sea engirt with brasen bands: Then th'Aire still flitting, but yet firmely bounded

On euerie side, with pyles of flaming brands, Neuer consum'd nor quencht with mortall hands;

And last, that mightie shining christall wall, Th'eternall fountaine of that heavenly beauty. Wherewith he hath encompassed this All.

By view whereof, it plainly may appeare, That still as every thing doth vpward tend, And further is from earth, so still more cleare And faire it growes, till to his perfect end Of purest beautie, it at last ascend: Ayre more then water, fire much more then ayre, And heaven then fire appeares more pure and fayre.

Looke thou no further, but affixe thine eye 50 On that bright shynie round still mouing Masse, The house of blessed Gods, which men call Skye, All sowd with glistring stars more thicke then grasse,

Whereof each other doth in brightnesse passe; But those two most, which ruling night and day, As King and Queene, the heauens Empire sway.

And tell me then, what hast thou euer scene, That to their beautie may compared bee, Or can the sight that is most sharpe and keene, Endure their Captains flaming head to see? 60 How much lesse those, much higher in degree, And so much fairer, and much more then these, As these are fairer then the land and seas?

For farre aboue these heauens which here we see, Be others farre exceeding these in light, Not bounded, not corrupt, as these same bee, But infinite in largenesse and in hight, Vnmouing, vncorrupt, and spotlesse bright, That need no Sunne t'illuminate their spheres, But their owne natiue light farre passing theirs.

And as these heauens still by degrees arize, 71 Vntill they come to their first Mouers bound, That in his mightie compasse doth comprize, And carrie all the rest with him around, So those likewise doe by degrees redound, And rise more faire, till they at last ariue To the most faire, whereto they all do striue.

Faire is the heauen, where happy soules haue place, In full enioyment of felicitie, Whence they doe still behold the glorious face

Of the diuine eternall Maiestie; 88 More faire is that, where those *Idees* on hie, Enraunged be, which *Plato* so admyred, And pure *Intelligences* from God inspyred.

Yet fairer is that heauen, in which doe raine The soueraine *Powers* and mightie *Potentates*, Which in their high protections doe containe All mortall Princes, and imperiall States; And fayrer yet, whereas the royall Seates And heauenly *Dominations* are set, From whom all earthly governance is fet. Yet farre more faire be those bright Cherubius, Which all with golden wings are overdight, And those eternall burning Scraphius, Which from their faces dart out fierie light; Yet fairer then they both, and much more bright Be th'Angels and Archangels, which attend On Gods owne person, without rest or end.

These thus in faire each other farre excelling, As to the Highest they approch more neare, Yet is that Highest farre beyond all telling, Fairer then all the rest which there appeare, Though all their beauties ioynd together were: How then can mortall tongue hope to expresse, The image of such endlesse perfectnesse?

Cease then my tongue, and lend vnto my mynd Leaue to bethinke how great that beautie is, Whose vtmost parts so beautifull I fynd: How much more those essentiall parts of his, His truth, his loue, his wisedome, and his his, His grace, his doome, his mercy and his might, By which he lends vs of himselfe a sight.

Those vnto all he daily doth display, And shew himselfe in th'image of his grace, As in a looking glasse, through which he may Be seene, of all his creatures vile and base, That are vnable else to see his face, His glorious face which glistereth else so bright, That th'Angels selues can not endure his sight.

But we fraile wights, whose sight cannot sustaine 120

The Suns bright beames, when he on vs doth shyne,

But that their points rebutted backe againe Are duld, how can we see with feeble eyne, The glory of that Maiestic diuine, In sight of whom both Sun and Moone are

darke, Compared to his least resplendent sparke?

The meanes therefore which vnto vs is lent, Him to behold, is on his workes to looke, Which he hath made in beauty excellent, And in the same, as in a brasen booke, 130 To reade enregistred in euery nooke His goodnesse, which his beautie doth declare For all thats good, is beautifull and faire.

Thence gathering plumes of perfect speculation, To impe the wings of thy high flying mynd, Mount vp aloft through heauenly contemplation, From this darke world, whose damps the soule do blynd,

And like the native brood of Eagles kynd, On that bright Sunne of glorie fixe thine eyes, Clear'd from grosse mists of fraile infirmities.

Humbled with feare and awfull reuerence, 141 Before the footestoole of his Maiestie. Throw thy selfe downe with trembling inno-

Ne dare looke vp with corruptible eye On the dred face of that great Deity. For feare, lest if he chaunce to looke on thee. Thou turne to nought, and quite confounded be. But lowly fall before his mercie seate. Close couered with the Lambes integrity, 149 From the just wrath of his avengefull threate, That sits vpon the righteous throne on hv: His throne is built voon Eternity, More firme and durable then steele or brasse, Or the hard diamond, which them both doth passe.

His scepter is the rod of Righteousnesse. With which he bruseth all his foes to dust. And the great Dragon strongly doth represse, Vnder the rigour of his judgement just; His scate is Truth, to which the faithfull trust; From whence proceed her beames so pure and bright,

That all about him sheddeth glorious light. Light farre exceeding that bright blazing sparke. Which darted is from Titans flaming head. That with his beames enlumineth the darke And dampish aire, wherby al things are red: Whose nature yet so much is maruelled Of mortall wits, that it doth much amaze The greatest wisards, which thereon do gaze. But that immortall light which there doth shine. Is many thousand times more bright, more

More excellent, more glorious, more diuine, Through which to God all mortall actions here. And euen the thoughts of men, do plaine appeare

For from th'eternall Truth it doth proceed, Through heauenly vertue, which her beames doe breed. With the great glorie of that wondrous light,

His throne is all encompassed around, And hid in his owne brightnesse from the sight Of all that looke thereon with eyes vnsound: And vnderneath his feet are to be found Thunder, and lightning, and tempestuous fyre, The instruments of his auenging yre. There in his bosome Sapience doth sit. The soueraine dearling of the Deity, Clad like a Queene in royall robes, most fit For so great powre and peerelesse maiesty. And all with gemmes and iewels gorgeously Adornd, that brighter then the starres appeare. And make her native brightnes seem more cleare. In th'only wonder of her selfe to rest.

And on her head a crowne of purest gold 100 Is set, in signe of highest soueraignty. And in her hand a scepter she doth hold. With which she rules the house of God on hy. And menageth the euer-mouing sky. And in the same these lower creatures all. Subjected to her powre imperiall.

Both heaven and earth obey vnto her will. And all the creatures which they both containe: For of her fulnesse which the world doth fill. They all partake, and do in state remaine, 200 As their great Maker did at first ordaine. Through observation of her high beheast, By which they first were made, and still increast.

The fairenesse of her face no tongue can tell, For she the daughters of all wemens race, And Angels eke, in beautie doth excell, Sparkled on her from Gods owne glorious face. And more increast by her owne goodly grace, That it doth farre exceed all humane thought, Ne can on earth compared be to ought.

Ne could that Painter (had he lived yet) Which pictured Venus with so curious guill. That all posteritie admyred it, Haue purtrayd this, for all his maistring skill; Ne she her selfe, had she remained still. And were as faire, as fabling wits do favne, Could once come neare this beauty souerayne.

But had those wits the wonders of their dayes Or that sweete Teian Poet which did spend His plenteous vame in setting forth her prayse, Seene but a glims of this, which I pretend, How wondrously would be her face commend, Aboue that Idole of his favning thought. That all the world shold with his rimes be fraught?

How then dare I, the nouice of his Art, Presume to picture so divine a wight, Or hope t'expresse her least perfections part, Whose beautie filles the heavens with her light. And darkes the earth with shadow of her sight? Ah gentle Muse thou art too weake and faint, The pourtraict of so heavenly hew to paint.

Let Angels which her goodly face behold And see at will, her soueraigne praises sing, And those most sacred mysteries vnfold, Of that faire loue of mightie heavens king. Enough is me t'admyre so heavenly thing. And being thus with her huge loue possest,

But who so may, thrise happie man him hold, Of all on earth, whom God so much doth grace. And lets his owne Beloued to behold:

241

For in the view of her celestiall face, All ioy, all blisse, all happinesse haue place, Ne ought on earth can want vnto the wight, Who of her selfe can win the wishfull sight.

For she out of her secret threasury, Plentic of riches forth on him will powre, Euen heauenly riches, which there hidden by Within the closet of her chastest bowre, Th'eternall portion of her precious dowre, 250 Which mighty God hath given to her free, And to all those which thereof worthy bee.

None thereof worthy be, but those whom shee Vouchsafeth to her presence to receaue, And letteth them her louely face to see, Wherof such wondrous pleasures they conceaue. And sweete contentment, that it doth bereaue Their soule of sense, through infinite delight, And them transport from flesh into the spright.

In which they see such admirable things, 260 As carries them into an extasy, And heare such heauenly notes, and carolings,

Of Gods high praise, that filles the brasen sky, And feele such ioy and pleasure inwardly, That maketh them all worldly cares forget, And onely thinke on that before them set.

Ne from thenceforth doth any fleshly sense, Or idle thought of earthly things remaine: But all that earst seemd sweet, seemes now offense, 269

And all that pleased earst, now seemes to paine. Their joy, their comfort, their desire, their gaine, Is fixed all on that which now they see, All other sights but fayned shadowes bee

And that faire lampe, which vseth to enflame The hearts of men with selfe consuming fyre, Thenceforth seemes fowle, and full of sinfull blame;

And all that pompe, to which proud minds aspyre

By name of honor, and so much desyre, Seemes to them basenesse, and all riches drosse, And all mirth sadnesse, and all lucre losse, 280

So full their eyes are of that glorious sight, And senses fraught with such satietie, That in nought else on earth they can deheht.

But in th'aspect of that felicitie, Which they have written in their inward ey; On which they feed, and in their fastened mynd

All happie joy and full contentment fynd.

Ah then my hungry soule, which long hast fed On idle fancies of thy foolish thought, 289 And with false beauties flattring bait misled, Hast after vaine deceiptfull shadowes sought, Which all are fled, and now have left thee nought,

But late repentance through thy follies prief; Ah cease to gaze on matter of thy grief.

And looke at last vp to that sourraine light, From whose pure beams al perfect beauty springs.

That kindleth lone in enery godly spright, Euen the lone of God, which loathing brings Of this vile world, and these gay seeming things;

With whose sweete pleasures being so possest, Thy straying thoughts henceforth for euer rest. 301



# Prothalamion

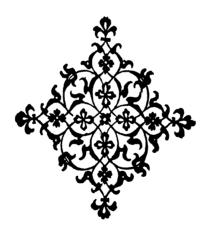
Or
A Spoulall Verse made by
Edm. Spenser.

# IN HONOVR OF THE DOV.

ble mariage of the two Honorable & vertuous

Ladies, the Ladie Elizabeth and the Ladie Katherine

Somerfet, Daughters to the Right Honourable the Earle of Worcester and spouled to the two worthso Gentlemen M. Henry Gilford, and M. Wilham Peter Esquyers.



AT LONDON.
Printed for VV silvam Panfonbys.
1596.

## Prothalamion.

Song.

Alme was the day, and through the trembling avre. Sweete breathing Zephyrus did softly play A gentle spirit, that lightly did delay Hot Titans beames, which then did glyster fayre: When I whom sullein care, Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay In Princes Court, and expectation vavne () idle hopes, which still doe fly away, Like empty shaddowes, did affect my brayne, Walkt forth to ease my payne Along the shoare of silver streaming Themmes, Whose rutty Bancke, the which his River bemmes, Was paynted all with variable flowers, And all the meades adornd with daintie gemmes, Fit to decke maydens bowres, And crowne their Paramours. Against the Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my Song.

There, in a Meadow, by the Rivers side, A Flocke of Nymphes I chaunced to espy, All louely Daughters of the Flood thereby, With goodly greenish locks all loose vntyde, As each had bene a Bryde. And each one had a little wicker basket, Made of fine twigs entrayled curiously, In which they gathered flowers to fill their flasket: And with fine Fingers, cropt full feateously The tender stalkes on hye. Of every sort, which in that Meadow grew, They gathered some; the Violet pallid blew, The little Dazie, that at evening closes, The virgin Lillie, and the Primrose trew, With store of vermeil Roses, To decke their Bridegromes posies, Against the Brydale day, which was not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my

Come softly swimming downe along the Lee;
Two fairer Birds I yet did neuer see:
The snow which doth the top of *Pindus* strew,
Did neuer whiter shew,
41
Nor Joue himselfe when he a Swan would be
For loue of *Leda*, whiter did appeare:
Yet *Leda* was they say as white as he,
Yet not so white as these, nor nothing neare;
So purely white they were,
That euen the gentle streame, the which them

With that, I saw two Swannes of goodly hewe,

Song.

bare,

Seem'd foule to them, and bad his billowes spare To wet their silken feathers, least they might Soyle their fayre plumes with water not so fayre, And marre their beauties bright, 51 That shone as heauens light, Against their Brydale day, which was not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my

Eftsoones the Nymphes, which now had Flowers their fill,
Ran all in haste, to see that siluer brood,
As they came floating on the Christal Flood.
Whom when they sawe, they stood amazed still,
Their wondring eyes to fill,

59

Their wondring eyes to fill, 59
Them seem'd they neuer saw a sight so fayre,
Of Fowles so louely, that they sure did deeme
Them heauenly borne, or to be that same payre
Which through the Skie draw Venus silver
Teeme,

For sure they did not seeme
To be begot of any earthly Seede,
But rather Angels or of Angels breede:
Yet were they bred of Somers-heat they say,
Insweetest Season, when each Flower and weede
The earth did fresh aray,
So fresh they seem'd as day,
Euen as their Brydale day, which was not long:
Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my
Song.

Then forth they all out of their baskets drew, Great store of Flowers, the honour of the field, That to the sense did fragrant odours yeild, All which vpon those goodly Birds they threw, And all the Waues did strew, That like old *Peneus* Waters they did seeme, When downe along by pleasant *Tempes* shore

Scattred with Flowres, through Thessaly they streeme, 80
That they appeare through Lillies plenteous store, Like a Brydes Chamber flore:

Two of those Nymphes, meane while, two Garlands bound,

Of freshest Flowres which in that Mead they found,

The which presenting all in trim Array,
Their snowie Foreheads therewithall they
crownd,

Whil'st one did sing this Lay, Prepar'd against that Day, Against their Brydale day, which was not long:

gainst their Brydale day, which was not long:
Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my
Song.

90

Ye gentle Birdes, the worlds faire ornament, And heavens glorie, whom this happie hower Doth leade vnto your louers blisfull bower, Iov may you have and gentle hearts content Of your loues couplement:

ĸ

And let faire Venus, that is Queene of loue, With her heart-quelling Sonne voon you smile, Whose smile they say, hath vertue to remoue All Loues dislike, and friendships faultie guile

For euer to assoile.

Let endlesse Peace your steadfast hearts accord, And blessed Plentie wait vpon your bord, And let your bed with pleasures chast abound, That fruitfull issue may to you afford, Which may your foes confound.

And make your loves redound,

Vpon your Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes run softlie, till I end my

So ended she; and all the rest around To her redoubled that her vndersong, Which said, their bridale dave should not be

And gentle Eccho from the neighbour ground, Their accents did resound.

So forth those joyous Birdes did passe along, Adowne the Lee, that to them murmurde low. As he would speake, but that he lackt a tong Yeat did by signes his glad affection show, Making his streame run slow.

And all the foule which in his flood did dwell Gan flock about these twaine, that did excell The rest, so far, as Cynthia doth shend The lesser starres. So they enranged well, Did on those two attend.

And their best service lend.

Against their wedding day, which was not long: Sweete Themmes run softly, till I end my song.

At length they all to mery London came, To mery London, my most kyndly Nurse. That to me gaue this Lifes first native sourse: Though from another place I take my name, An house of auncient fame. There when they came, whereas those bricky

The which on Themmes brode aged backe doe ryde. Where now the studious Lawyers have their

There whylome wont the Templer Knights to Till they decayd through pride:

Next whereunto there standes a stately place. Where oft I gayned giftes and goodly grace Of that great Lord, which therein wont to dwell Whose want too well now feeles my freendles case:

But Ah here fits not well Olde woes but ioves to tell

Against the bridgle dave, which is not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my Song.

Yet therein now doth lodge a noble Peer. Great Englands glory and the Worlds wide wonder.

Whose dreadfull name, late through all Spanie did thunder.

And Hercules two pillors standing neere. Did make to quake and feare:

Faire branch of Honor, flower of Cheualrie, That fillest England with thy triumphs fame, lov haue thou of thy noble victorie.

And endlesse happinesse of thine owne name

That promiseth the same: That through thy prowesse and victorious armes. Thy country may be freed from forraine harmes: And great Elisaes glorious name may ring Through althe world, fil'd with thy wide Alarmes. Which some braue muse may sing

To ages following, Vpon the Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I e.d my

Song.

From those high Towers, this noble Lord issu-

Like Radiant *Hesper* when his golden havre In th'Ocean billowes he hath Bathed fayre, Descended to the Rivers open vewing.

With a great traine ensuing.

Aboue the rest were goodly to bee seene Two gentle Knights of louely face and feature Beseeming well the bower of anie Queene, 170 With gifts of wit and ornaments of nature, Fit for so goodly stature:

That like the twins of love they seem'd in sight, Which decke the Bauldricke of the Heauens

They two forth pacing to the Riuers side, Received those two faire Brides, their Loues

delight, Which at th'appointed tyde,

Each one did make his Bryde,

Against their Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes runne softly, till I end my Song. 180

# MISCELLANEOVS SONNETS.

Haruey, the happy about happiest men, I read; that, sitting like a looker-on Of this worldes stage, doest note, with critique The sharpe dislikes of each condition;

And, as one carclesse of suspition, Ne fawnest for the fauour of the great, Ne fearest foolish reprehension Of faulty men, which daunger to thee threat: But freely doest of what thee list entreat,

## To the right worshipfull my singular good Frend, M. Gabriell Haruey, Doctor of the Lawes.

Like a great lord of peerclesse liberty; Litting the good up to high Honours seat, And the cull damning cuermore to dy;

For Life, and Death, is in thy doomefull

So thy renowne lines ener by endighting. Dublin, this xviij, of July, 1586.

> Your denoted frend during life. EDMVND SPENCER.

## H

## Prefixed to Nennio, or A Treatise of Nobility, &c.

And not by painted shewes and titles vaine, Deriued farre from famous Auncestrie: Behold them both in their right visnomy Here truly pourtrayt, as they ought to be, And striuing both for termes of dignitic, To be advanced highest in degree.

WHo so wil seeke by right deserts t attaine, And, when thou doost with equal insight see Vito the type of true Nobility, The ods twixt both, of both them deem aright The ods twixt both, of both them deem aright, And chuse the better of them both to thee: But thanks to him that it descrues, behight; To Nenna first, that first this worke created,

And next to Jones, that truely it translated.

ED. SPENSER.

## III

# Upon the Historie of George Castriot, alias Scanderbeg, king of the Epirots, translated into English.

And old Heroes, which their world did daunt With their great deedes, and fild their childrens eares ?

Who, rapt with wonder of their famous praise, Admire their statues, their Colossoss great, Their rich triumphall Arcks which they did raise.

W Herefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt | Their huge Pyramids, which do heauen threat. Herancient monuments of mightie peeres, | Lo one, whom later age hath brought to light, Matchable to the greatest of those great; Great both by name, and great in power and might.

And meriting a meere triumphant seate. The scourge of Turkes, and plague of infidels, Thy acts, O Scanderbeg, this volume tels. ED. SPENSER

## IV

## Prefixed to The Commonwealth and Government of Venice.

"He antique Babel, Empresse of the East, | Vpreard her buildinges to the threatned skie:

And second Babell, tyrant of the West, Her ayry Towers upraised much more high. But with the weight of their own surquedry, They both are fallen, that all the earth did

And buried now in their own ashes ly,

Yet shewing by their heapes how great they

But in their place doth now a third appeare, Fayre Venice, flower of the last worlds delight. And next to them in beauty draweth neare. But farre exceedes in policie of right. Yet not so fayre her buildinges to behold As Lewkenors stile that hath her beautie told.

EDM. SPENCER.

# APPENDIX

# OF EPIGRAMS AND SONNETS FROM:

# A THEATRE

wherein be repre-

fented as wel the miseries & calamities that follow the bos luptuous Whorldlings,

As also the greate ioyes and plesures which the faithfull do enioy.

An Argument both profitable and delectable, to all that fincerely loue the word of God.

Deuised by S. Iohn vander Noodt.

Scene and allowed according to the order appointed.

¶ Imprinted at London by
Henry Bynneman.
Anno Domini. 1569.
CVM PRIVILEGIO.

# Epigrams.

DEing one day at my window all alone, BSo many strange things hapned me to see, As much it grieueth me to thinke thereon. At my right hande, a Hinde appearde to me, So faire as mought the greatest God delite: Two egre Dogs dyd hir pursue in chace, Of which the one was black, the other white. With deadly force so in their cruell race They pinchte the haunches of this gentle beast, That at the last, and in shorte time, I spied, Vnder a rocke, where she (alas) opprest, Fell to the grounde, and there untimely dide. Cruell death vanauishing so noble beautie. Oft makes me waile so harde a destinie.

Fter at Sea a tall Ship dyd appere, Made all of Heben and white Inorie, The sailes of Golde, of Silke the tackle were: Milde was the winde, calme seemed the sea to be : The Skie eche where did shew full bright and faire. With riche treasures this gay ship fraighted was. But sodaine storme did so turmoyle the aire. And tombled vp the sea, that she, alas, Strake on a rocke that under water lay. O great misfortune, O great griefe, I say, Thus in one moment to see lost and drownde So great riches, as lyke can not be founde.

Hen heavenly branches did 1 see arise, 1 Out of a fresh and lusty Laurell tree Amidde the yong grene wood. Of Paradise Some noble plant I thought my selfe to see, Suche store of birdes therein yshrouded were, Chaunting in shade their sundry melodie. My sprites were rauisht with these pleasures there. While on this Laurell fixed was mine eve, The Skie gan enery where to onercast, And darkned was the welkin all aboute, When sodaine flash of heavens fire outbrast, And rent this royall tree quite by the roote. Which makes me much and ever to complaine, For no such shadow shal be had againe.

Ilthin this wood, out of the rocke did rise A Spring of water mildely romblyng downe. Whereto approched not in any wise The homely Shepherde, nor the ruder cloune. But many Muses, and the Nymphes withall. That sweetely in accorde did tune their voice Vnto the gentle sounding of the waters fall. The sight wherof dyd make my heart resource. But while I toke herein my chiefe delight. I sawe (alas) the gaping earth denoure The Spring, the place, and all cleane out of sight. Whiche yet agreues my heart even to this houre.

I Saw a Phænix in the wood alone. With purple wings and crest of golden hew. Straunge birde he was, wherby I thought anone, That of some heavenly wight I had the vew: Vntill he came unto the broken tree And to the spring that late denoured was. What say I more? Eche thing at length we see Doth passe away: the Phænix there, alas, Spying the tree destroyde, the water dride, Himselfe smote with his beake, as in disdaine, And so forthwith in great despite he dide. For pilie and love my heart yet burnes in paine.

A T last so faire a Ladie did I spie, That in thinking on hir I burne and quake, On herbes and floures she walked pensicuely. Milde, but yet loue she proudely did forsake. White seemed hir robes, yet would so they were, .1s snowe and golde together had bene urought. Aboue the waste a darke cloude shrouded hir, A stinging Serpent by the heele hir caught. Wherewith she languisht as the gathered floure And well assurde she mounted up to joy. Alas in earth so nothing doth endure But bitter griefe that dothe our hearts anoy. JY Song thus now in thy Conclusions, W Say boldly that these same six visions Do yelde unto thy lorde a sweete request.

Ere st be long within the earth to rest.

## Sonets.

T was the time when rest the gift of Gods I Sweetely sliding into the eyes of men, Doth drowne in the forgetfulnesse of slepe, The carefull travailes of the painefull day: Then did a ghost appeare before mine eyes On that great rivers banke that runnes by Rome. And calling me then by my propre name.

He bade me vpwarde vnio heauen looke. He cride to me, and loe (quod he) beholde, What under this great Temple is containde, Loe all is nought but flying vanitie. So I knowing the worldes unstedfastnesse, Sith onely God surmountes the force of tyme, In God alone do stav my confidence.

ON hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie I sawe, an hundred pillers ehe about, All of fine Diamant decking the front, And Jashiond were they all in Dorske wise Of bricke, ne yet of marble was the wall, But shining Christall, which from top to base Out of deepe vaute threw forth a thousand rayes V pon an hundred steps of purest golde. Golde was the parget: and the stelying eke Did shine all scaly with fine golden plates. The floore was laspis, and of Emeraude. O worldes vainenesse. A sodein earthquake loe, Shaking the hill euen from the bottome deepe. Threwe downe this building to the lowest stone.

Hen did appeare to me a sharped spire Of diamant, ten feete eche way in square, ustly proportionde up into his height, o hie as mought an Archer reache with sight. To not the top therof was set a pot lade of the mettall that we honour most. Ind in this golden vessell couched were the ashes of a mightic Emperour. To no foure corners of the base there lay To beare the frame, foure great Lions of golde. I worthie tombe for such a worthie corps. Ilas, nought in this worlde but griefe endures 4 sodaine tempest from the heaven, I saw, With flushe stroke downe this noble monument.

I Saw raisde up on pillers of Iuorie,
I Whereof the bases were of richest golde,
The chapters Alubaster, Christall frises,
The double front of a triumphall arke.
On eche side portraide was a victorie.
With golden wings in habite of a Nymph.
And set on hie upon triumphing chaire,
The auncient glorie of the Romane lordes.
The worke did shewe it selfe not wrought by man,
But rather made by his owne skilfull hande
That forgeth thunder dartes for love his sire.
Let me no more see faire thing under hauen.
Sith I have seene so faire a thing as this,
With sodaine falling broken all to dust.

Then I behelde the faire Dodonian tree, V pon seuen hilles throw forth his gladsome shade.

And Conquerers bedecked with his leaves Along the bankes of the Italian streame. There many auncient Trophees were erect, Many a spoile, and many goodly signes, To show the greatnesse of the stately race, That erst descended from the Troian bloud.

Rauishi I was to see so rare a thing, When barbarous villaines in disordred heape, Outraged the honour of these noble bowes. I hearde the tronke to grone under the wedge. And since I saw the roote in hie disdaine Sende forth againe a twinne of forked trees.

I Saw the birde that dares beholde the Sunne, I With feeble flight venture to mount to heaven. By more and more she gan to trust hir wings, Still folowing th'example of hir damme: I saw hir rise, and with a larger flight Surmount the toppes even of the hiest hilles, And piercethe cloudes, and with hir wings to reache The place where is the temple of the Gods, There was she lost, and sodenly I saw Where tombling through the aire in lompe of fire, All flaming downe she fell upon the plaine. I saw hir bodie turned all to dust, and saw the foule that shunnes the cherefull light Out of hir ashes as a worme arise.

I saw an indeous body big and strong, I saw an indeous body big and strong, I ong was his beard, and side did hang his hair, A grisly forehed and Saturneliske face. I caning against the belly of a pot the shed a water, whose outgushing streame Ran flowing all along the creekie shoare Where once the Troyan Duke with Turnus fought. And at his feete a bitch Wolfe did give sucke To two yong babes. In his right hand he bare The tree of peace, in left the conquering Palme, Ilis head was garnish with the Laurel bow. Then soaenly the Palme and Olive fell, And faire greene Laurel witherd up and dide.

And by a rivers side, a wailing Nimphe, Folding hir armes with thousand sighs to heaven

Did tune hir plaint to falling rivers sound, Renting hir faire visage and golden haire, Where is (quod she) this whilome honored face? Where is thy glory and the auncient praise, Where all worldes hap was reposed, When erst of Gods and man I worshipt was? Alas, suffisde it not that civile bate Made me the spoile and bootie of the world But this new Hydra mete to be assaide Euen by an hundred such as Hercules, With seven springing heds of monstrous crimes So many Nerves and Caligulaes

V Pon a hill I saw a kindled flame,
Mounting like waves with triple point to
heaven.

Which of incense of precious Ceder tree
With Balmelike odor did perfume the aire.
A bird all white, well fetherd on hir winges
Hereout did flie vp to the throne of Gods,
And singing with most plesant melodte
She climbed vp to heaven in the smoke.
Of this faire fire the faire dispersed rayes
Threne forth abrode a thousand shining leames,
When sodain dropping of a golden shoure
Gan quench the glystering flame. O greuous
chaunge!

That which erstwhile so pleasaunt scent did yelde, Of Sulphure now did breathe corrupted smel.

I Saw a fresh spring rise out of a rocke,
I Clere as Christall against the Sunny beames,
The bottome yellow like the shining land,
That golden Pactol drives upon the plaine.
It seemed that arte and nature strived to voyne
There in one place all pleasures of the eye.
There was to heare a noise alluring slepe
Of many accordes more swete than Mermaids
song,

The seales and benches shone as Iuorie,
An hundred Nymphes sate side by side about,
When from nie hilles a naked rout of Faunes
With hideous cry assembled on the place,
Which with their feete vncleane the voater fouted,
Thew down the seats, and droue the Nimphs to
flight.

A T length, even at the time when Morpheus Most truely doth appeare vnto our eyes, Wearse to see th'inconstance of the heavens: I saw the great Typhwus sister come, Itir head full brauely with a morian armed, In maiestie she seemde to matche the Gods. And on the shore, harde by a violent streame, She raisde a Trophee over all the worlde. An hundred vanquisht kings gronde at hir feete, Their armes in shamefull wise bounde at their backes.

While I was with so dreadfull sight afrayde, I saw the heavens warre against hir tho. And seing hir striken fall with clap of thunder, With so great noyse I start in sodaine wonder.

I Saw an vgly beast come from the sea, That seven heads, ten crownes, ten hornes did beare,

Having theron the vile blaspheming name. The cruell Leopard she resembled much: Feete of a beare, a Lions throte she had. The mightie Dragon gaue to hir his power. One of hir heads yet there I did espie, Still freshly bleeding of a grieuous wounde. One cride aloude. What one is like (quod he) This honoured Dragon, or may him withstand And then came from the sea a sauage beast, With Dragons speche, and shewde his force by fu With wondrous signes to make all wights adore The beast, in setting of hir image vp.

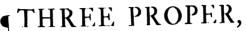
I Saw a Woman sitting on a beast Before mine eyes, of Orenge colour hew: Horrour and dreadfull name of blasphemie Filde hir with pride. And seuen heads I saw, Ten hornes also the stately beast did beare. She seemde with glorie of the scarlet faire, And with fine perle and golde puft up in heart. The urne of hooredome in a cup she bare. The name of Mysterie writ in hir face. The bloud of Martyrs dere were hir delite. Most fierce and fell this woman seemde to me. An Angell then descending downe from Heauen With thondring voice cride out aloude, and savd Now for a truth great Babylon is fallen.

Then might I see vpon a white horse set

The faithfull man with flaming counter

His head did shine with crounes set therupon. The worde of God made him a noble name. His precious robe I saw embrued with bloud. Then saw I from the heaven on horses white, A puissant armie come the selfe same way. Then cried a shining Angell as me thought, That birdes from aire descending downe on earth Should warre upon the kings, and eate their flesh. Then did I see the beast and Kings also loining their force to slea the faithfull man. But this fierce hatefull beast and all hir traine, Is pittlesse throwne downe in pit of fire.

Saw new Earth, new Heaven, sayde Sain John. And loe, the sea (quod he) is now no more. The holy Citie of the Lorde, from hye Descendeth garnisht as a loued spouse. A voice then sayde, beholde the bright abode Of God and men. For he shall be their God. And all their teares he shall wipe cleane away. Hir brightnesse greater was than can be founde Square was this Citie, and twelve rates it had. Eche gate was of an orient perfect pearle, The houses golde, the pavement precious stone. A lively streame, more cleere than Christall is. Ranne through the mid, sprong from triumpha seat. There growes lifes fruite unto the Churches good



and wittie, familiar Letters:

lately passed between two V-niuersitie men: touching the Earth-

niuerfitie men : touching the Earthquake in Aprill Iaft, and our Englift refourmed Verfifying.

With the Preface of a wellwiller to them both.



# IMPRINTED AT LON-

don, by H.Bynneman, dvvelling in Thames streate, neere vnto Baynardes Castell.

Anno Domini. 1580.

Cum gratia & prinilegio Kegia Maiestatu

# **9 TO THE CVRTEOVS** Buyer, by a VVelwiller of

the tyvo Authours.

Vrteous Buver, (for I write not to the enuious Carper) it was my good happe, as I interpreate it, nowe lately at the fourthe or fifte hande, to bee made acquainted with the three Letters following, by meanes of a faithfull friende, who with muche entreaty had procured the copying of them oute, at Immeritos handes. And I praye you, interprete it for your good happe, so soone after to come so easilye by them, throughe my meanes, who am onely to craue these twoo things at your handes, to thinke friendly of my friendly meaning, and to take them of me with this Presumption, In exiguo quandoque cespite latet lepus: and many pretious stones, thoughe in quantitie small, yet in qualitie and valewe are esteemed for great. The first, for a good familiar and sensible Letter, sure liketh me verye well, and gyueth some hope of good mettall in the Author, in whome I knowe myselfe to be very good parter otherwise. But shewe me, or Immerito, two Englyshe Letters in Printe, in all pointes equal to the other twoo, both for the matter it selfe, and also for the manner of handling, and save, wee neuer sawe good Englishe Letter in our liues. And yet I am credibly certified by the foresaide faithfull and honest friende, that himselfe hathe written manye of the same stampe bothe to Courtiers and others, and some of them discoursing uppon matter of great waight and importance, wherein he is said, to be fully as sufficient and hable, as in these schollerly pointes of Learning. The whiche Letters and Discourses I would very gladly see in Writing, but more gladly in Printe, if it might be obtayned. And at this time to speake my conscience in a worde of these two following, I esteeme them for twoo of the rarest, and finest Treaticas wel for ingenious deuising, as also for significant vttering, and cleanly conceying of his matter. that ever I read in this Tongue: and I hartily thanke God for bestowing vppon vs some such proper and hable men with their penne, as I hartily thanke the Author himselfe, for vsing his pleasaunte, and witty Talente, with so muche discretion, and with so little harme, contrarye to the veine of moste, whych haue thys singular conceyted grace in writing. If they

had bene of their owne setting forth, I graunt you they might have beene more curious, but beeyng so well, and so sufficiently done, as they are, in my simple judgement, and having so many notable things in them, togither with so greate varietie of Learning, worth the reading, to pleasure you, and to helpe to garnish our

Tongue, I feare their displeasure the lesse. And yet, if they thinke I haue made them a faulte, in not making them priny to the Publication: I shall be alwayes readye to make them the beste amendes I can, any other friendly waye. Surely, I wishe them bothe hartilye wel in the Lord, and betake you and them to his mercifull gouernemente, hoping, that he will at his pleasure con-

uerte suche good and diuine gifts as these, to the setting out of his own glory, and the benefite of his Churche. This XIX. of

Tune. 1580.

Your, and their unfayned friend, in the Lorde.



# Three proper wittie familiar Letters, lately passed betvvene tvvo Vniuersitie men, touching the Earthquake in April last, and our English reformed Versifying.

To my long approoued and singular good friende, Master G. H.

which al this while restraineth youre Penne. and wonted readinesse in propoking me vnto that, wherein your selfe nowe faulte. If there bee any such thing in hatching, I pray you hartily, lette vs knowe, before all the worlde see But if happly you dwell altogither in Iustinians Courte, and give your selfe to be denoured of secreate Studies, as of all likelyhood you doe: yet at least imparte some your olde, or newe, Latine, or Englishe, Eloquent and Gallant Poesies to vs, from whose eyes, you saye, you keepe in a manner nothing hidden. Little newes is here stirred: but that olde greate matter still depending. Honoure neuer better. I thinke the Earthquake was also there wyth you (which I would gladly learne) as it was here with vs: ouerthrowing divers old buildings, and peeces of Churches. Sure verye straunge to be hearde of in these Countries, and yet Theare some saye (I knowe not howe truely) that they have knowne the like before in their dayes. Sed quid vobis videtur magnis Philosophis? I like your late Englishe Hexameters so exceedingly well, that I also enure my Penne sometime in that kinde: whyche I fynd indeede, as I haue heard you often defende in worde, neither so harde, nor so harshe, that it will easily and fairely, yeelde it selfe to oure Moother tongue. For the onely, or chiefest hardnesse, whych seemeth, is in the Accente: whyche sometime gapeth, and as it were yawneth ilfauouredly,

\* Ood Master H. I doubt not but you have comming shorte of that it should, and some-I some great important matter in hande, time exceeding the measure of the Number, as in Carpenter, the middle sillable being vsed shorte in speache, when it shall be read long in Verse, seemeth like a lame Gosling, that draweth one legge after hir : and Heaven, beeing vsed shorte as one sillable, when it is in Verse, stretched out with a Diastole, is like a lame Dogge that holdes up one legge. But it is to be wonne with Custome, and rough words must be subdued with Use. For, why a Gods name may not we, as else the Greekes, have the kingdome of oure owne Language, and measure our Accentes, by the sounde, reserving the Quantitie to the Verse: Loe here I let you see my olde vse of toying in Rymes, turned into your artificial straightnesse of Verse, by this Tetrasticon. I beseech you tell me your fancie, without parcialitie.

See wee the blindefoulded pretie God, that feathered Archer.

Of Louers Miseries which maketh his bloodie Game i

Wote ye why, his Moother with a Veale hath coouered his Face?

> Trust me, least he my Looue happely chaunce to beholde.

Seeme they comparable to those two, which I translated you ex tempore in bed, the last time we lay togither in Westminster?

That which I eate, did I ioy, and that which I greedily gorged, As for those many goodly matters leaft I for others.

### 612 THREE PROPER AND WITTLE FAMILIAR LETTERS.

I would hartily wish, you would either send me the Rules and Precepts of Arte, which you observe in Quantities, or else followe mine, that M. Philip Sidney gave me, being the very same which M. Drant deuised, but enlarged with M. Sidneys own judgement, and augmented with my Observations, that we might both accorde and agree in one: leaste we ouerthrowe one an other, and be ouerthrown of the rest. Truste me, you will hardly believe what greate good liking and estimation Maister Dyer had of youre Salvricall Verses, and I, since the viewe thereof, having before of my selfe had speciall liking of Englishe Versifying, am even nowe aboute to give you some token, what, and howe well therein I am able to doe: for, to tell you trueth, I minde shortely at conuenient leysure, to sette forth a Booke in this kinde, whyche I entitle, Epithalamion Thamesis, whyche Booke I dare vndertake wil be very profitable for the knowledge, and rare for the Inuention, and manner of handling. For in setting forth the marriage of the Thames: I shewe his first beginning, and offspring, and all the Countrey, that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the Rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this Wedding, and their righte names, and right passage, &c. A worke beleeue me, of much labour, wherein notwith-

standing Master Holinshed hath muche furthered and advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their firste heades, and sourses: and also in tracing, and dogging out all their Course, til they fall into the Sea.

### O Tite, siquid, ego, Ecquid erit pretij ?

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my Dreames, and dying Pellicane, being fully finished (as I partely signified in my laste Letters) and presentlye to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my Faery Oucene, whyche I praye you hartily send me with al expedition: and your frendly Letters, and long expected Iudgement wythal, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes suche, as you ordinarilye vse, and I extraordinarily desire. Multum vale. Westminster. Quarto Nonas Aprilis 1580. Sed, amabi te, Meum Corculum tibi se ex animo commendat plurimum: jandiu murata, te nihil ad literas suas responsi dedisse. Vide quæso, ne id tibi Capitale sit: Mihi certé quidem erit, neque tibi hercle impune, vt opinor, Iterum vale, et quam voles sæpe.

> Yours alwayes to commaunde IMMERITO.

# Postscripte.

alone, being growen by meanes of the Glosse, (running continually in maner of a Paraphrase) full as great as my Calendar. Therin be some things excellently, and many things wittily discoursed of E. K. and the Pictures so singularly set forth, and purtrayed, as if Michael Angelo were there, he could (I think) nor amende the Veruntamen te sequor solim: nunquam verd best, nor reprehende the worst. I know you assequar.

I take best my Dreames shoulde come forth | woulde lyke them passing wel. Of my Stemmata Dudleiana, and especially of the sundry Apostrophes therein, addressed you knowe to whome, muste more aduisement be had, th.... so lightly to sende them abroade: howbeit, trust me (though I doe neuer very well,) yet in my owne fancie, I neuer dyd better:



# A Pleasant and pitthy familiar discourse, of the Earthquake in Aprill last.

To my loouing frende, M. Immerito.

Signor Immerito, after as many gentle God- into the Parlour, the Gentleman of the house, morrowes, as your self, and your sweete somewhat straungely affrighted, and in a Harte listeth: May it please your Maistershippe to dispense with a poore Oratour of yours, for breaking one principall graund Rule of our olde inviolable Rules of Rhetorick, in shewing himselfe somewhat too pleasurably disposed in a sad matter: (of purpose, to meete with A coople of shreude witte new marryed Gentlewomen, which were more Inquisitiue, than Capable of Natures works) I will report you a prettie conceited discourse, that I had with them no longer agoe, than yesternight, in a Gentlemans house, here in Essex. Where being in the company of certaine curteous Gentlemen, and those two Gentlewomen, it was my chaunce to be well occupyed, I warrant you, at Cardes, (which I dare saye I scarcely handled a whole tweluemoonth before) at that very instant, that the Earth under vs quaked, and the house shaked aboue: besides the moouing, and ratling of the Table, and fourmes, where wee sat. Wherevpon, the two Gentlewomen hauing continually beene wrangling with all the rest, and especially with my selfe, and even at that same very moment, making a great loude noyse, and much a doo: Good Lorde, quoth I, is it not woonderful straunge that the delicate voyces of two so propper fine Gentlewoomen, shoulde make such a suddayne terrible Earthquake? Imagining in good favth, nothing in the worlde lesse, than that it shoulde be any Earthquake in deede, and imputing that shaking to the suddayne sturring, and remoouing of some cumberous thing or other, in the vpper Chamber ouer our Heades: which onely in effect most of vs noted, scarcely perceyuing the rest, beeing so closely and eagerly set at our game, and some of vs taking on, as they did. But beholde, all

manner all agust, and telleth vs, as well as his Head and Tongue woulde give him leave, what a woonderous violent motion, and shaking there was of all things in his Hall: sensibly and visibly scene, as well of his owne selfe, as of many of his Seruauntes, and Neighbours there. I straite wayes beginning to thinke somewhat more seriously of the matter: Then I pray you, good Syr, quoth I, send presently one of your seruauntes farther into the Towne, to enquire, if the like bath happened there, as most likely is, and then must it needes be some Earthquake. Whereat the good fearefull Gentleman being a little recomforted, (as misdoubting, and dreading before, I knowe not what in his owne House, as many others did) and immediately dispatching his man into the Towne, wee had by and by certayne woord. that it was generall ouer all the Towne, and within lesse than a quarter of an howre after, that the very like behappened the next Towne too, being a farre greater and goodlyer Towne. The Gentlewoomens hartes nothing acquaynted with any such Accidentes, were maruellously daunted: and they, that immediately before were so eagerly, and greedily praying on vs. began nowe forsooth, very demurely, and deuoutely to pray vnto God, and the one especially, that was even nowe in the House toppe, I beseeche you hartily quoth shee, let vs leave off playing, and fall a praying. By my truely, I was neuer so scared in my lyfe, Me thinkes it maruellous straunge. What good Partener? Cannot you pray to your selfe, quoth one of the Gentlemen, but all the House must heare you, and ring All-in to our Ladyes Mattins? I see woomen are every way vehement, and affectionate. Your selfe was liker on the suddayne there commeth stumbling leven nowe, to make a fraye, than to pray: and

will you nowe needes in all hast bee on both your knees? Let vs, and you say it, first dispute the matter, what daunger, and terror it carryeth with it. God be praysed, it is already ceased, and heere be some present, that are able cunningly, and clearkly to argue the case. I beseeche you master, or mystresse, your zealous and devoute Passion a while. And with that turning to me, and smiling a little at the first: Nowe I pray you, Master H. what say you Philosophers, quoth he, to this suddayne Earthquake? May there not be some sensible Naturall cause therof, in the concauities of the Earth it self, as some forcible and violent Eruption of wynde, or the like? Yes no doubt, sir, may there, quoth I, as well, as an Intelligible Supernaturall: and peraduenture the great aboundaunce and superfluitie of waters, that fell shortly after Michaelmas last, beeying not as yet dryed, or drawen vp with the heate of the Sunne, which hath not yet recourred his full attractive strength and power, might minister some occasion thereof, as might easily be discoursed by Naturall Philosophie, in what sorte the poores, and ventes, and crannies of the Earth being so stopped, and fylled vp enery where with moysture, that the windie Exhaltations, and Vapors, pent vp as it were in the bowels thereof, could not otherwise get out. and ascende to their Naturall Originall place. But the Termes of Arte, and verye Natures of things themselues so vtterly vnknowen, as they are to most heere, it were a peece of woorke to lave open the Reason to every ones Capacitie.

I know well, it is we that you meane, quoth one of the Gentlewomen (whom for distinction sake, and bicause I imagine they would be loath to be named, I will hereafter call, Mystresse Inquisitiua, and the other, Madame Incredula:) now I beseeche you, learned Syr, try our wittes a little, and let vs heare a peece of your deepe Universitie Cunning. Seeing you Gentlewomen will allgates have it so, with a good will, quoth I: and then forsooth, very solemnly pawsing a whyle, most grauely, and doctorally proceeded, as followeth.

The Earth you knowe, is a mightie great huge body, and consisteth of many divers, and contrarie members, and vaines, and arteries, and concauities, wherein to avoide the absurditie of Vacuum, most necessarily, be very great store of substantiall matter, and sundry Accidentall humours, and fumes, and spirites, either good, or bad, or mixte. Good they cannot possibly all be, whereout is ingendred so much bad, as namely so many poysonfull, and vene- should be Gospell, that commeth from you

mous Hearbes, and Beastes, besides a thousand infectiue, and contagious thinges else. If they be bad, bad you must needes graunt is subject to bad, and then can there not, I warrant you. want an Object, for bad to worke vpon. If mixt, which seemeth most probable, yet is it impossible, that there should be such an equall. and proportionable Temperature, in all, and singular respectes, but sometime the Euill (in the diuels name.) will as it were interchaumeably haue his naturall Predominaunt Course. and issue one way, or other. Which euill working vehemently in the partes, and malitiously encountering the good, forcibly tosseth, and cruelly disturbeth the whole: Which conflict indureth so long, and is fostred with aboundaunce of corrupt putrified Humors, and vlfauoured grosse infected matter, that it must needes (as well, or rather as ill, as in mens and womens bodyes) brust out in the ende into one perillous disease or other, and sometime, for want of Naturall voyding such feuerous, and flatuous Spirites, as lurke within, into such a violent chill shiuering shaking Ague, as euen nowe you see the Earth haue. Which Ague, or rather enery fitte thereof, we schollers call grossely, and homely, Terræ motus, a mooning, or sturring of the Earth, you Gentlewomen, that be learned, somewhat more finely, and daintily, Terræ metus, a feare, and agony of the Earth: we being onely mooued, and not terrified, you being onely in a manner terrified, and scarcely mooued therewith. Nowehere, (and it please you) lyeth the poynt, and quidditie of the controuersie, whether our Motus, or your Metus, be the better, and more consonant to the Principles and Maximes of Philosophy? the one being manly, and deuoyde of dreade, the other woomannish, and most wofully quiuering, and shiuering for very feare. In sooth, I vse not to dissemble with Gentlewoomen: I am flatly of Opinion, the Earth whereof man was immediately made, and not wooman, is in all proportions and similitudes liker vs than you, and when it fortuneth to be distempered, and disseased, either in part, or in whole, I am persuaded, and I beleeue Reason, and Philosophy will beare me out in it, it only mooueth with the very impulsive force of the malady, and not trembleth, or quaketh for dastardly feare.

Nowe, I beseeche you, what thinke ye, Gentlewomen, by this Reason? Reason, quoth Madame Incredula: By my truly, I can neither picke out Rime, nor Reason, out of any thing I haue hearde yet. And yet me thinkes all Doctors of Cambridge. But I see well, all is not Gould, that glistereth. In deede, quoth Mistresse Inquisitiua, heere is much adooe, I trowe, and little helpe. But it pleaseth Master H. (to delight himselfe, and these Gentlemen) to tell vs a trim goodly Tale of Robinhood, I knowe not what. Or sucr if this be Gospell, I dowte, I am not in a good beleefe. Trust me truly, Syr your Eloquence farre passeth my Intelligence. Did I not tell you aforehand, quoth I, as muche? And yet would you needes presume of your Capacities in such profound mysteries of Philosophie, and Priuities of Nature, as these be? The very thinking whereof, (vnlesse happily it be per fidem implicitam, in beleeuing, as the learned beleeue, And saying, It is so, bycause it is so) is much enough, to caste you both into a fitte, or two, of a daungerous shaking feauer, vilesse you presently seeke some remedie to precent it. And in earnest, if ye wyll give me leave, voon that small skill I have in Extrinsecall, and Intrinsecall Physiognomic, and so foorth, I will wager all the money in my poore purse to a pottle of Hyppocrase, you shall both this night, within somwhat lesse than two howers and a halfe, after ye be layed, Dreame of terrible straunge Agues, and Agonyes as well in your owne prettie bodyes, as in the mightie great body of the Earth. You are very merily disposed. God be praysed, quoth Mistresse Inquisitina, I am glad to see you so pleasurable. No doubt, but you are maruellous pranie to our dreames. But I pray you now in a little good carnest, doo you Schollers thinke, that it is the very reason in deede, which you spake of even now? There be many of vs. good Mistresse, quoth I, of that opinion: wherin I am content to appeale to the knowledge of these learned Gentlemen here. And some againe, of our finest conceited heades defend this Position, (a very straunge Paradox in my fancie:) that the Earth hauing taken in too much drinke, and as it were over lauish ( ups, ! (as it hath sensibly done in a maner all this Winter past) now staggereth, and recleth, and tottereth, this way and that way, vp and downe, like a drunken man, or wooman (when their Alebench Rhetorick comes upon them, and specially the moouing Patheticall figure Pottypósis), and therefore in this forcible sort, you lately sawe, payneth it selfe to vomit vp againe, that so disordereth, and disquieteth the whole body within. And, for soothe, a fewe new Contradictorie fellowes make no more of

ncesing, or sobbing, or coffing, wherewithall they say, and as they say, say with great Physicall, and Naturall Reason, The Earth in some place, or other, ever lightly after any great, and suddayne alteration of weather, or diet, is exceedingly troubled, and movned, as namely this very Time of the yeare, after the extreeme pynching colde of Winter, and agayne in Autumne, after the extreeme parching heate of Sommer. But shall I tell you, Mistresse Inquisitina? The soundest Philosophers in deede, and very deepest Secretaries of Nature, holde, if it please you, an other Assertion, and maintayne this for truth: (which at the leastwise, of all other seemeth maruellous reasonable, and is questionlesse farthest off from Heresie;) That as the Earth, vpponit, hathmany stately, and boysterous and fierce Creatures, as namely, Men and Women, and divers Beastes, wheref some one is in maner continually at variaunce and fewde with an other, cuermore seeking to be reuenged vpon his enimic, which eft soones breaketh forth into professed and open Hostilitie: and then consequently followe set battels, and mortall warres: wherin the one partie bendeth all the force of his Ordinance and other Martiall furniture against the other; so likewise within it too, it hath also some, as vengibly and frowardly bent, as for Example, Woormes, and Moules, and Cunnyes, and such other valiauntly highminded Creatures, the Sonnes and daughters of Mars, and Bellona that nurrish ciuill debate, and contrarie factions amongst them schoes: which are seldome, or neuer ended too, without miserable bloudshed, and deadly warre; and then go me their Gunnes lustily off, and the one dischargeth his Peece couragiously at the other: and there is suche a Generall dub a dubbe amongst them, and such horrible Thundering on euery syde, and suche a monstrous cruell shaking of one an others Fortes and Castele, that the whole Earth agayne, or at the least, so muche of the Earth, as is over, or neere them, is terribly hoysed, and ---- No more Ands, or Ifs, for Gods sake, quoth the Madame, and this be your great Doctorly learning. Wee haue euen Enoughe alreadie for our Money: and if you shoulde goe a little farther, I feare mee, you woulde make vs nyghe as cunning as your selfe: and that woulde bee a great disgrace to the Universitie. Not a whitte, gentle Madame, quoth I, there be of vs, that have greater store in our bowgets, than we can well occupie our it, but a certaine vehement, and passionate sclues, and therefore we are glad as you see, when by the fauourable, and gratious aspect of some blessed Planet, and specially our Mercury, or your Venus, it is our good Fortune, to lighte on such good friendes, as you, and some other good Gentlewoomen be, that take pleasure, and comfort in such good things. Wherat Mistresse Inquisitiua, laughing right out, and beginning to demaunde I know not what, (me thought, shee made, as if it shoulde have been some goodly plausible Jest, wherat shee is, and takes her selfe prettily good:) Well, well, Master H. | shorter, all the better. To whom I made

have playde your part so cunningly with the Gentlewoomen, (as I warrant you shall be remembred of Inquisitiua, when you are gone. and may happely forget her: which I hope Mistresse Incredula will do sometyme too, by hir leaue:) I pray you in earnest, let vs men learne some thing of you too: and especially I would gladly heare your Iudgement, and resolution, whether you counte of Earthquakes. as Naturall, or Supernaturall motions. But the quoth the Gentleman of the house, now you answere, in effect, as followeth:

## Master Hs. short, but sharpe, and learned Iudgement of Earthquakes.

I fancie: The Earthquakes themselues I would saye are Naturall: as I veryly beleeue the Internal Causes thereof, are: I meane those two Causes, which the Logicians call, the Materiall, and the Formall: Marry, the Externall Causes. which are the Efficient and Finall, I take rather of the two, to be supernaturall. I must crave a little leaue to lave open the matter.

The Materiall Cause of Earthquakes, (as was superficially touched in the beginning of our speache, and is sufficiently prooued by Aristotle in the seconde Booke of his Meteors) is no doubt great aboundance of wynde, or stoare of grosse and drye vapors, and spirites, fast shut vp, and as a man would saye, emprysoned in the Caues, and Dungeons of the Earth: which winde, or vapors, seeking to be set at libertie. and to get them home to their Naturall lodgings, in a great fume, violently rush out, and as it were, breake prison, which forcible Eruption, and strong breath, causeth an Earthquake. As is excellently, and very lively expressed of Ouid, as I remember, thus:

Vis fera ventorum cæcis inclusa cauernis, Exspirare alique cupiens, luctataque frustra Liberiore frui calo, cum carcere Rima Nulla foret, toto nec peruia flatibus esset, Extentam tumefecit humum, ceu spiritus oris, Tendere vesicam solet, and so foorth.

The formall Cause, is nothing but the very manner of this same Motion, and shaking of the Earth without: and the violent kinde of striuing, and wrastling of the windes, and Exhalations within: which is, and must needes be done in this, or that sort, after one fashion. or other. Nowe, syr, touching the other two neuerthelesse is, we see, commonly performed,

Ruely Syr, under correction, and in my Causes, which I named Externall: The first immediate Efficient, out of all Question, i-God himselfe, the Creatour, and Continuer, and Corrector of Nature, and therefore Supernaturall, whose onely voyce carrieth such a reverend and terrible Majestie with it, that the very Earth againe, and highest Mountaines quake and tremble at the sounde and novse thereof: the text is rife in euery mans mouth: Locutus est Dominus et contremuit Terra: howbeit, it is not to be gainesayd, that is holden of all the auncient Naturall Philosophers, and Astronomers, for the principall, or rather sole Efficient, that the Influence, and heate of the Sunne, and Starres, and specially of the three superior Planets, Saturne, Iupiter, and Mars. is a secondarie Instrumentall Efficient of such motions.

> The finall, not onely that the wynde shoulde recouer his Naturall place, than which a naturall reasonable man goeth no farther, no not our excellentest profoundest Philosopherthemselues: but sometime also, I graunt, to testifie and denounce the secrete wrathe, and indignation of God, or his sensible punishment vppon notorious malefactours, or, a threatning Caueat, and forewarning for the inhabitantes, or the like, depending vppon a supernaturall Efficient Cause, and tending to a supernaturall Morall End.

> Which End, (for that I knowe is the very poynt, whereon you stande) albeit it Le acknowledged Supernaturall and purposed, as I sayd, of a supernaturall Cause, to whom nothing at all is impossible, and that can worke supernaturally, and myraculously without ordinarie meanes, and inferiour causes: vet

by the qualifying, and conforming of Nature, and Naturall things, to the accomplishment of his Divine and incomprehensible determination. For being, as the olde Philosophers call him, very Nature selfe, or as it hath pleased our later schoolemen to terme him, by way of distinction, Natura Naturans, he hath all these secondarie inferiour thinges, the foure Elementes, all sensible, and visensible, reasonable. and vareasonable Creatures, the whole worlde, and what socuer is contayned in the Compas of the worlde, being the workmanship of his owne hands, and, as they call them. Natura naturata. euer pliable and flexible Instrumentes at his Commaundement: to put in execution such Effectes, either ordinarie or extraordinarie, as shall seeme most requisite to his eternall Prouidence: and now in these latter dayes. very seldome, or in manner neuer worketh any thing so myraculously, and extraordinarily, but it may sensibly appeare, he vseth the service and Ministerie of his Creatures, in the atcheeuing thereof. I denie not, but Turthquakes (as well as many other fearefull Accidentes in the same Number.) are terrible signes, and, as it were certaine managing forerunners, and forewarners of the great latter day; and therefore out of controuersie the more reverendly to be considered vppon: and I acknowledge considering the Euentes, and sequeles, according to the collection and discourse of mans Reason, they have seemed to Prognosticate, and threaten to this, and that Citie, vtter ruyne and destruction: to such a Country, a generall effect. insignis Euentus.

But yet, notwithstanding, dare not I aforehand presume thus farre, or arrogate so much vnto my selfe, as to determine precisely and peremptorily of this, or every the like singular Earthquake, to be necessarily, and vindoubtedly a supernaturall, and immediate fatall Action of God, for this, or that singular intent, when as I am sure, there may be a sufficient Naturall. eyther necessarie or contingent Cause in the very Earth it selfe: and there is no question. but the selfe same Operation in Genere, or in specie, may at one tyme, proceeding of one Cause, and referred to one End, be preternaturall, or supernaturall: at another tyme. proceeding of an other, or the same Cause, and referred to an other End, but Ordinarie, and Naturall. To make shorte, I cannot see, and would gladly learne, howe a man on Earth. should be of so great authoritie, and so familiar acquaintance with God in Heauen, (vnlesse haply for the nonce he hath lately intertained some few choice singular ones of his privile Counsell) as to be able in such specialties, without any instifyable certificate, or warrant to reucale hys incomprehensible mysteries, and definitively to give sentence of his Maiesties secret and inscrutable purposes. As if they had a key for all the lockes in Heauen, or as if it were as cleare and resolute a case, as the Eclipse of the Sunne, that darkened all the Earth, or at the least all the Earth in those Countries, at Christes Passion, happening altogether prodigiously and Metaphysically in Plenilunio, not according to the perpetuall plague and pestilence: to an other place, the course of Nature, in Noullunio: in so much death of some mightie Potentate or great that Diomsius Arcopagua, or some other Prince: to some other Realme or Kingdome, graunde Philosopher, vpon the suddayne consome cruell imminent warres: and sundry the templation thereof, is reported in a certaine like dreadfull and particular Incidentes, as is Patheticall Exstasic to have cryed out, Aut notoriously enident by many olde and newe, rerum Natura pattur, aut Mundi machina very famous and notable Histories to that destructur: as my minde giveth me, some of Which of all other the auncient the simpler, and vnskilfulkr sort, will goe nye Romaines, long before the Natiutie of Christ, to doe vpon the present sight, and agony of did most religiously or rather superstitiously this Earthquake. Marry the Errour I graunt, observe, not without a number of solemne is the more tollerable, though perhappes it be Ceremonies, and Hollydayes for the nonce, otherwhiles, (and why not even nowe,) a very euer after any Earthquake, making full presumptuous Errour in deede, standing only account of some such great rufull casualtie voon these two weake and deceitfull groundes. or other, as otherwhyles fell out in very deede: Credulitie and Ignoraunce: if to be inwardly and namely, as I remember, the yeare Ante (not onely in Externall shewe, after an Hypobellum Sociale, which was one of the lament- criticall, and Pharisaicall manner) it certainly ablest, and myscrablest warres, that Italy doo vs good for our reformation, and amendeuer sawe: and Plinie, or I knowe not well ment, and seeme to preache vnto vs. Pæniwho, hath such a saying: Roma nunquam tentiam agite, (as in some respect every such tremuit, vt non futurus aliquis portenderetur straunge and rare Accident may seeme.) how Ordinarie, and Naturall so ever the Cause shall

appeare otherwise to the best learned: especially, as the Earthquake shall be knowne to endure a longer, or a shorter Tyme, or to be more or lesse generall, in more, or fewer places. Which two differences, touching the quantitie of Tyme, and Place, after I had a little more fully prosecuted, alledging certaine particuler Examples thereof, howe in some places huge Castels, in some Townes, in some great and mightie Cities, in some Shires and Seigniories, and Prouinces, in some whole Countryes, and Regions have been perillously mooued and shaken therewith: in one place, a long time together: in an other place, not so long, or at severall and parted times: in another, very short, as, God be thanked here euen nowe: and finally by the way, shewing a thirde and most notable difference of all, (as well for the present or imminent terrour and daunger, as otherwise) by the sundry species, and formes which Aristotle, Plinie, and other Meteorologicians have set downe of Experience, as they have heard, or read, or seen the earth to quake, to sturre, and hoyse vp Houses, Walles, Towers, Castelles, Churches, Minsters, whole Townes, whole Cities, whole Prouinces, without farther harme: to ruinate and ouerthrowe, and destroy some: to yawne and gape, and open lyke a graue, and consequently to swallow vp and deuour other: and sometime also to drinke vp whole rivers, and mightie bigge running waters withall, or to chaunge and alter their common woonted course some other way: to sinke and fall downewardes: to cast out and vomitte vp either huge vaste heapes, as it were Mountaines of Earth, or large llandes in the mayne Sea, neuer remembred, or seen before: or great overflowing waters, and fountaynes: or hotte scalding sulphurous lakes: or burning sparkles and flames of fire: to make a horrible hissing, gnashing, ratling, or some like woonderfull straunge novse, (which all Effectes are credibly reported, and constantly anouched, of our most famous and best allowed Philosophers) a fewe such particularities, and distinctions, compendiously and familiarly coursed ouer. The good Gentleman gaue me hartily, as appeared, very great thankes, and tolde me plainly, he neuer either read, or heard halfe so much of Earthquakes before: confessing withall, that he yeelded resolutely to my opinion: that an Earthquake might as well be supposed a Naturall Motion of the Earth. as a preternaturall, or supernaturall ominous worke of God: and that he thought it hard, Diuines.

and almost impossible, for any man, either by Philosophie, or Diuinitie, euermore to determine flatly the very certaintie either way. Which also in conclusion was the verdit, and finall resolution of the greater and sager part of the Gentlemen present: and namely of an auncient learned common Lawyer, that had been Graduate, and fellow of a Colledge in Cambridge, in Queene Maries dayes. Who tooke voon him, to knit up the matter, and as he said, determine the controuersie, with the authoritie of all the naturall Philosophers, old or newe, Heathen or Christian, Catholique or Protestant, that ever he read, or heard tell of. There Physickes quoth he, are in every mans hands: they are olde enough to speake for them selues, and wee are young enough to turne our Bookes. They that have Eyes and Tongues, let them see, and reade. But what say you nowe, quoth I, to the staying and quieting of the Earthe, beeing once a moouing? May it not seeme a more myraculous woorke, and greater woonderment, that it shoulde so suddainely stave againe, being mooued, than that it shoulde so suddainely mooue, beyng quiet and still? Mooue or turne, or shake me a thing in lyke order, be it neuer so small, and lesse than a pynnes Head, in comparison of the great mightie circuite of the Earth, and see if you shall not have much more a doo to staye it presently, beeing once sturred, than to sturre it at the very first. Whereat the Gentleman smyling, and looking merrily on the Gentlewoomen, heere is a schoole poynt, quoth he, that by your leaves, I beleeve will poase the better scholler of you both. But is it not more than tyme, thynke ye, wee were at Supper? And if you be a hungered, Maister H. you shall thanke no body but your selfe, that haue holden vs so long with your profounde and clerkly discourses, whereas our manner is to suppe at the least a long howre before this tyme. Beyng set, and newe occasion of speeche ministered, our Supper put the Earthquake in manner out of our myndes, or at the leastwise, out of our Tongues: sauing that the Gentlewoomen, nowe and then pleasauntly tyhyhing betweene them sclues, especially Mystresse Inquisitina, (whose minde did still runne of the drinking, and Neesing of the Earth.) repeated here, and there, a broken peece of that, which had been already sayde before Supper. With deepe iudgement no doubt, and to maruellous great purpose, I warrant you after the manner of women Philosophers, and n ghtes grave Meteorologicall Conference, the place where? the qualities, and dispositouching our Earthquake here in the Country: tions of the persons, amongst whom such, and which being in so many neighbour Townes, such an Ominous token is given. Least and Villages about vs, as I heare say of this happily through ouer great credulitie, and morning, maketh me presuppose, the like was rashnesse, we mistake Non causam pro causa. with you also at London, and elsewhere farther; and sophistically be entrapped Elencho Finium. of. And then for soothe, must I desire Maister: Truely, I suppose, he had neede be an excellent Immerito, to send me within a weeke or two, Philosopher, a reasonable good Historian, a some odde fresh paulting threehalfepennie learned Diuine, a wise discrete man, and Pamphlet for newes: or some Balductum generally, such a one as our Doctor Still, and Tragicall Ballet in Ryme, and without Reason, Toctor Byng are in Cambridge, that shoulde setting out the right myserable, and most show himselfe accordingly in this argument, wofull estate of the wicked, and damnable and to the judgement and contentation of the worlde at these perillous dayes, after the wisest, perfourme it exactly. My selfe rememdeuisers best manner: or whatsoener else shall ber nothing to the contrarie, either in Philohist take some of your braue London Eldertons 'sophie, or in Histories, or in Diuinitie either, in the Head. In earnest, I could wishe some learned, and well aduized Universitie man, woulde vidertake the matter, and bestow some paynes in deede vppon so famous and materiall an argument. The generall Nature of Earthquakes by definition, and the speciall diversitie of them by division, being perfectly knowen: (a thing soone done) and a complete Induction of many credible and autenticall, both olde and newe, druine and prophane, Greeke, Lattine, and other Examples, (with discretion, and judgement, compyled and compared togither) being considerately and exactly made, (a thing not so easily done) much no doubt mucht be alledged too or fro, to terrific or pacifie vs, more or lesse. If it appeare by generall Experience, and the foresayde Historicall Induction of particulars, that Earthquakes, sine omni exceptione, are ominous, and significatine Effectes, as they saye of Comets, and carrie euer some Tragicall and horrible matter with or after them: as eyther destruction of Townes and Cities, or decay of some mightie Prince, or some particular, or generall plague, warre, or the lyke, (vt supra) whatsocuer the Materiall, or Formall cause be, Natural, or supernaturall, (howbeit for myneowne part I am resolued, as wel for the one, as for the other, that these two I speake of, both Matter and Fourme, are rather Naturall in both, than otherwise) it concerneth vs, vpon the vewe of so Effectuall and substaunciall cuidence, to conceiue seriously, and reuerently of the other two Causes: the first, supreme Efficient, whose Omnipotent Maiest'e hath nature self, and all naturall Creatures at com- in this, and the like behalfe. maundement: and the last finall, which we are to judge of as aduisedly, and prouidently, as possibly we can, by the consideration, and sunder.

And this summarily in Effect was our yester- | comparison of Circumstances, the tyme when: why I may not safely and lawfully subscribe to the judgement of the noble Italian Philosopher, and most famous learned Gentleman, whilest he hued, Lord of Mirandola, and Erle of Concordia, Counte Ioannes Franciscus Picus, in my opinion, very considerately, and partly Philosophically, partly Theologically set downe, in the sixt Chapter of his sixt Booke, against Cogging deceitfull Astrologers, and Southsayers, De rerum Pranotione, pro veritate Relligionis, contra Superstitiosas vanilates. In which Chapter, (if happely you have not read it already,) you shall finde many, but specially these three notable places, most effectuall and directly pertinent to the very purpose. The first more vniuersall. Natura opere fieri non potest, vt Ostentis, vt Monstris magni illi, seu dextri, seu sinistri euentus portendantur, et ab aliqua pendeant proxima causa, quæ et futura etiam proferat. Impostura Damonum, vt 1d fiat, viders potest. Sed et plæraque non monstrosa, non prodigiosa per sese, pro monstris tamen, et portentis, haberi possunt, et solent à quibusdam, quibus Rerum Natura non satis comperta est, causarum enim ignoratio, noua in re Admirationem parit. Propler quam, philosophari homines capisse, in exordijs primæ philosophia scribit Aristoteles. Wherein those two severall points, Impostura Damonum, and Ignoratio causarum, are no doubt maruellous probable, and moste worthy bothe presentlye to bee noted nowe, and more fully to be discussed hereafter: appearing vnto me the verie right principall Causes of so manye erroneous opinions, and fantasticall superstitious dreames

The seconde more speciall, as it were hitting the white in deede, and cleauing the Pinne in

Idem in Terræ motibus etiam, quod in fulguribus, fulminibusque interpretandis, obseruauit Antiquitas. Cuius Rei liber, Græco eloquio, nuper ad manus peruenil, in Orpheum relatus Autorem: sed per absurdum nimis, vt quod frequentissime fil, pro vario terræ anhelitu, pro ventorum violentia. vaporumque conductione. (marke you that?) ex eo rerum futurarum significationem petere, quorum nec effectus esse possunt, nec causa, prælerquam forte mortis inferendæ illis, qui fulmen exceperit, aut qui terrarum hiatu perierit. Sed nec ab eadem proxima deduci causa possunt, à qua et futuræ pendeant res, vi supra deductum est.

And then shortly after, the thirde, moste agreeable to the seconde, as flatlye determining on my side, and as directlye concluding the

same position as may be.

Nec sand Orpheus ille, si tamen Orpheus fuit, vllam affert omnind causam, cur quispiam ex terræ motibus, vrbium, hominum, regionum euenta præsagire possit. Solum vano narrat arbitrio: si terræ contigerit motus noctu, si æstate, si hyeme, si aurora, si interdiu, quid portendatur: Quæ certe, et saniore possunt arbitrio refelli, et Experientiæ testimonio, vi arbitror, non secus irrideri, ac supra Tagis portenta irrisimus, Haruspicinæ Autoris.

A moste excellent sounde Iudgement in my conceit: and ful wel beseeming so Honorable and admirable a Witte, as out of Question, Picus Mirandula had: who being yet scarcely thirty yeres of age, for his singularitie in al kind of knowleege, as wel diuine as prophane, was in Italy and France, as Paulus Iouius reporteth, surnamed Phænix, as the odde, and in effecte the onely singular learned man of Europe: and to make shorte: suche a one, in moste respectes, as I woulde wishe nowe to be tempering with this newe notorious incident: staving my selfe in the meane while vpon this probable and reasonable Interim of his: and preferring it before at the friuolous conjecturall Allegations, and surmises, that oure counterfaite, and reasonlesse Orphei oppose to the contrarye. But, Iesu, what is all this to Master Immerito? Forsoothe I knowe not by what mischaunce, these miserable balde odious three halfepenny fellowes, alas, a company of silly beetleheaded Asses, came into my minde, that wil needes be sturring, and taking on in everye suche rare and vnaccustomed event, as if they sawe farther in a Milstone, than all the worlde

Scribimus indocti, doctique Poemata passim and surely, as the worlde goeth nowe in Eng. lande, rather the firste, for aught I see, than the laste. O interim miseras Musas, et misera. biles: Where the faulte shoulde rest, vidental Oculi, atque capita Reip. Mihi quidem isthu. neque seritur admodum, neque metitur. No. valde mea nouos Bibliothecæ libros desiderat. seipsa, id est, quos habet, veteribus contenta est Quid plura? Tu vale, mi Immerito, atque ita tibi persuade, Aliquid esse eum, qui istorum longe est dissimillimus, quos Typographi nochi habent venales maxime. Commende mee to thine owne good selfe, and tell thy dying Pelli cane, and thy Dreames from me, I wil nowe leaue dreaming any longer of them, til with these eyes I see them forth indeede: And then againe, I imagine your Magnificenza, will holde vs in suspense as long for your nine Englishe Commædies, and your Latine Stemmata Dudleiana: whiche two shal go for my money. when all is done: especiallye if you woulde but bestow one sevennights pollishing and trimming vppon eyther. Whiche I praye thee hartily doe, for my pleasure, if not for their sake, nor thine owne profite. My Schollers Loue, of Reconcilement of contraries, is shrunke in the wetting: I hadde purposed to have dispatched you a Coppie thereof, long ere this. but, no remedie, hitherto it hath alwayes gone thus with me: Some newe occasion, or other. euer carrieth me from one matter to another. and will neuer suffer me to finishe eyther one or other. And truly, Experto crede, it is as true a Verse as ever was made, since the first Verse. that ever was made: Pluribus intentus minor est ad singula sensus: whiche my Anticosmopolita, thoughe it greeue him, can beste testifye. remayning still as we saye, in statu, quo, and neither an inche more forward, nor backewarde, than he was fully a tweluemonth since in the Courte, at his laste attendaunce vpon my Lorde there. But the Birde that will not sing in Aprill, nor in May, maye peraduenture sing in September: and yet me thinkes, Sat cit), si sat bene, if I coulde steale but one poore fortnight, to peruse him ouer afreshe, and coppy him out anewe. Whiche I hope in God to compasse shortly. But I beseech you, what Newes al this while at Cambridge? That was wont to be euer one great Question. What? Det mihi Maler ipsa bonam veniam, eius vl aliqua mihi liceat Secreta, uni cuidam de eodem besides, whereas euerie man, that hathe but gremio obsequentissimo filio, reuelare: et slo halfe an eye in his head, seeth them to be more paucis habeto. Nam alids fortasse pluribus ? blinde, than anye Buzzarde, or Bayarde, nunc non placet, non vacat, molestum esset.

fully, and Demosthenes nothing so much tudyed, as they were wonte: Line, and Salust possiblye rather more, than lesse: Lucian euer so much: Aristotle muche named, but ittle read: Xenophon and Plato, reckned unongest Discoursers, and conceited Supericiall fellowes: much verball and sophisticall angling: little subtile and effectual disputng: noble and royall Eloquence, the best and persuasiblest Eloquence: no such Orators againe, as redheadded Angelles: An exceeding greate difference, betweene the countenaunces. and portes of those, that are braue and gallaunt, and of those, that are basely, or meanly apparelled: between the learned, and virlearned, Tully, and Tom Tooly, in effect none at all.

Matchianell a great man: Castilio of no small reputation: Petrach, and Boccace in every mans mouth: Galateo, and Guazzo neuer so happy: ouer many acquainted with Vnico Aretino: The French and Italian when so highlye regarded of Schollers? The Latine and Greeke, when so lightly? The Queene mother at the beginning, or ende of enerve conference : many bargaines of Mounsieur: Shymeirs a noble gallant fellowe: all inquisitive after Newes, newe Bookes, newe Fashions, newe Lawes, newe Officers, and some after newe Elementes, and some after newe Heauens, and Helles to. Turkishe affaires familiarly knowen: Castels builded in the Avre: muche adoe, and little helpe: lacke would faine be a Gentle manne: in no age so little so muche made of, euery one highly in his owne fauour, thinking no mans penny, so good siluer as his own: Some thing made of Nothing, in spite of Nature: Numbers made of Ciphars, in spite of Arte: Geometricall Proportion seldome, or neuer vsed, Arithmeticall ouermuch abused: Oxen and Asses (notwithstanding the absurditie it seemed to Plautus) draw both togither in one, and the same Yoke: Conclusio fere sequitur deteriorem partem. The Gospell taughte, not learned: Charitie key colde: nothing good, but by Imputation: the Ceremoniall Lawe, in worde abrogated: the *Iudiciall* in effecte disanulled: the Morall indeede abandoned: the Lighte, the Lighte in every mans Lippes, but marke me their eyes, and tell me, if they looke not liker Howlets, or Battes, than Egles: as of olde Bookes, so of auntient Vertue, Honestie,

day freshe span newe Opinions: Heresie in Divinitie, in Philosophie, in Humanitie, in Manners, grounded muche vpon heresay: Doctors contemned: the Text knowen of moste, vnderstood of fewe, magnified of all, practised of none: the Druell not so hated, as the Pope: many Inuectives, small amendment: Skill they say controlled of Will: and Goodnesse mastered of Goods: but Agent, and Patient muche alike, neither Barrell greatly better Herring: No more adoc aboute Cappes and Surplesses: Maister Carturight nighe forgotten: The man you wot of, conformable, with his square Cappe on his rounde heade; and Non resident at pleasure: and yet Non-residents neuer better bayted, but not one the fewer, either I beleeve in Acte, or I beleeve, in Purpose. A number of our preachers sibbe to French Souldsors, at the first, more than Men, in the end, lesse than Women. Some of our pregnantest and soonest ripe Wits, of Hermogenes mettall for al the world: Olde men and Counsailours amongst Children: Children amongst Counsailours, and olde men: Not a fewe dubble faced Iani, and chaungeable Camelions: ouer-manye Clawbackes, and Pickethanks: Reedes shaken of euerie Wind: Lackes of bothe sides: Aspen leaves: painted Sheathes, and Sepulchres: Asses in Lions kins: Dunglecockes: slipperye Eles: Dormise: I blush to thinke of some, that weene themselves as fledge as the reste, being, God wot, as kallowe as the rest: euery yonker to speake of as politique, and as great a Commonwealths man as Bishoppe Gardner, or Doctor Wutton at the least: as if everie man nowe adayes having the framing of his own Horoscope, were borne in decimo cali domicilio, and had al the Wit, Wisedome, and Worshippe in the world at commaundement. Sed heus in aurem: Meministin' quod ait Varro? Omnes videmur nobis esse belli, festiul, saperdæ, cum sumus 1 Canopi: David, Vlisses, and Solon. fayned themselves fooles and madmen: our fooles and madmen faine themselves Davids. Vlisses, and Solons: and would goe nigh to deceive the cunningest, and best experienced Metaposcopus in a country: It is pity faire weather should euer do hurt, but I know what peace and quietnes hath done with some melancholy pickstrawes in the world: as good vnspoken as vnamended. And wil you needes Fidelitie, Equitie, newe Abridgementes: euery | haue my Testimoniall of youre olde Controllers

<sup>1</sup> In Nonius Marcellus de Compendiosa Doctrina s.v. saperdae. The true reading is cum simus carroi, but the first edition (c. 1470) gives canopi (possibly a misreading of (AIIPOI); corrected to campilici in the editions of 1471 and 1483.

new behauior? A busy and dizy heade, a brazen forehead: a ledden braine: a woodden wit: a copper face: a stony breast: a factious and eluish hearte: a founder of nouelties: a confounder of his owne, and his friends good gifts: a morning bookeworm, an afternoone maltworm: a right luggler, as ful of his sleights, wyles, fetches, casts of Legerdemaine, toyes to mocke Apes withal, odde shiftes, and knauish practizes, as his skin can holde. He often telleth me, he looueth me as himselfe, but out lyar out, thou lyest abhominably in thy throate. Iesu, I had nigh hand forgotten one thing, that ywis somtime I think often ynough vpon: Many Pupils, Iackemates, and Hayle fellowes wel met, with their Tutors, and by your leave, some too, because for sooth they be Gentlemen, or great heires, or a little neater and gayer than their fellowes, (shall I say it for shame? beleeue me, tis too true) their very own Tutors. Ah mala Licentia. ab initio non fuit sic. Stulta est omnis iuuenilis Doctrina. sine virili quadam Disciplina. Quasi verd pauperioribus duntaxat pueris, ac non multo magis generosæ, atque nobili Iuuentuti conuenial, pristinæ illius Institutionis, atque Educationis seueritas, et ingenuæ, et prudentis, et eruditæ, et cum Tutoris personæ, tum pupillo, etiam ipsi perquam accomodata. Vsquequaque sapere oportet : id erit telum acerrimum. Cælera fere, vt olim: Bellum inter Capita, et membra continuatum: deverbia publicis defensa scholis, privatis confirmata parietibus,

omnibus locis ostentata, Scire tuum nihil est, nisi te scire, hoc sciat alter. Plurimi passım fit Pecunia, Pudor parut penditur: Nihill habentur Literæ: Mihi crede, credendum nulli: O amice, amicus nemo. Quid tu interim! Quomodo te inquies, geris? Quomodo? Optimum est aliena frui insania. Video: taceo, rideo: Dixi. Et tamen addam, quod ait Satyricus ille:

Viuendum est recté, tum propter plurima, tum his

Præcipue causis, vt linguas Mancipiorum Contemnas.

E meo municipio, Postridie quam superiores de Terræmotu sermones haberentur, id est, su fallor, Aprilis septimo, Vesperi. With as manye gentle Goodnightes, as be letters in this tedious Letter.

Nosti manum tanquam tuam.

### POSTSCRIPTE.

This Letter may only be shewed to the two odde Gentlemen you wot of. Marry I would have those two to see it, as sone as you may conveniently.

Non multis dormio: non multis scribo: non cupio placere multis: Alij alios numeros laudant, præferunt, venerantur: Ego ferè apud nos, ferè apud vos Trinitatem.

Verbum sapienti sal: nosti cætera: et tres Charites habes ad unguem



# A Gallant familiar Letter, containing an Answere to that of M. Immerito, with sundry proper examples, and some Precepts of our Englishe reformed Versifying.

To my very friend M. Immerito.

preamble (for of the Earthquake I presuppose you have ere this received my goodly discoarse) and withall to let my late Englishe Hexametres goe as lightlye as they came: I cannot choose, but thanke and honour the good Aungell, (whether it were Gabriell or some other) that put so good a motion into the heads of those two excellent Gentlemen M. Sidney, and M. Dyer, the two very Diamondes of hir Maiesties Courte for many speciall and rare qualities; as to helpe forwarde our new famous enterprise for the Exchanging of Barbarous and Balductum Rymes with Artificial Verses: the one being in manner of pure and fine Goulde, the other but counterfet, and base vlfauoured Copper. doubt not but their huelie example, and Practise, wil premaile a thousand times more in short space, than the dead Aduertizement, and persuasion of M. Ascham to the same Effecte: whose Scholemaster notwithstanding I reuerence in respect of so learned a Motive. I would gladly be acquainted with M. Drants Prosodve, and I beseeche you, commende me to good M. Sidneys judgement, and gentle M. Immeritos Observations. I hope your nexte Letters, which I daily exspect, wil bring me in farther familiaritie and acquaintance with al three. Mine owne Rules and Precepts of Arte, I beleeue wil fal out not greatly repugnant, though peraduenture somewhat different: and yet am I not so resolute, but I can be content to reserve the Coppying out and publishing therof, vntil I have a little better consulted

C Ignor Immerito, to passe ouer youre needer of Madame Specienza. In the meane, take this lesse complaint, with the residue of your for a general Cancat, and say I have revealed one great mysterie viito you: I am of Opinion, there is no one more regular and justifiable direction, eyther for the assured, and infallible Certaintie of our English Artificiall Prosodye particularly, or generally to bring our Language into Arte, and to frame a Grammer or Rhetorike thereof: than first of all vniversally to agree yoon one and the same Ortographie, in all pointes conformable and proportionate to our Common Natural Prosodye: whether Sir Thomas Smithes in that respect be the most perfit, as surely it must needes be very good: or else some other of profounder Learning, and longer Experience, than Sir Thomas was, shewing by necessarie demonstration, wherin he is defectine, will undertake shortely to supplie his wantes, and make him more absolute. My selfe dare not hope to hoppe after him, til I see something or other, too, or fro, publickely and autentically established, as it were by a generall Counsel, or acte of Parliament: and then peraduenture, standing vppon firmer grounde, for Companie sake, I may aduenture to do as other do. Interim, credit me. I dare geue no Preceptes, nor set downe any Certaine General Arte: and yet see my boldenesse, I am not greatly squaimishe of my Particular Examples, whereas he that can but reasonably skil of the one, wil give easily a shreude gesse at the other: considering that the one fetcheth his original and offspring from the other. In which respecte, to say troth, we Beginners have the start, and advauntage of our Followers, who are to frame and conforme both their Examples, with my pillowe, and taken some farther aduize and Precepts, according to that President

which they have of vs: as no doubt Homer or some other in Greeke, and Ennius, or I know not who else in Latine, did preiudice, and ouerrule those, that followed them, as well for the quantities of syllables, as number of feete, and the like: their onely Examples going for current payment, and standing in steade of Lawes, and Rules with the posteritie. In so much that it seemed a sufficient warrant (as still it deth in our Common Grammer schooles) to make  $\tau i$  in  $\tau \mu \dot{n}$ , and v, in *Vnus* long, because the one hath right d' in Aide iers, and the other, Vnus homo nobis, and so consequently But to let this by-disputation in the rest. passe, which is already so throughly discoursed and canuassed of the best Philosophers, and

namely Aristoile, that poynt vs, as it were with the forefinger, to the very fountaines and head springes of Artes, and Artificiall preceptes. in the Analitiques, and Metaphysikes: most excellently set downe in these foure Golden Termes, the famoussest Termes to speake of in all Logique and Philosophie, integia, istocia, alodnois, exoguyn: shall I nowe by the way sende you a lanuarie gift in Aprill: and as it were shewe you a Christmas Gamboulde after Easter? Were the manner so very fine, as the matter is very good, I durst presume of an other kinde of Plaudite and Gramercie, than now I will: but being as it is, I beseeche you set parcialitie aside, and tell me your maisterships fancie.

# A Nevy yeeres Gift to my old friend Maister

George Rilchaunger: In commendation of three most precious Accidentes, Verine, Fame, and Wealth: and finally of the fourth. A Good Tonque.

lendeth Aboundaunce,

Fame with Aboundaunce maketh a man thrise blessed and happie.

So the Rewarde of Famous Vertue makes many

And the Regard of Wealthie Vertue makes many

O blessed Vertue, blessed Fame, blessed Aboundaunce.

O that I had you three, with the losse of thirtie Comencementes.

Nowe farewell Mistresse, whom lately I loued aboue all,

These be my three bonny lasses, these be my three bonny Ladves.

Not the like Trinitie againe, saue onely the Trinitie aboue all:

Worship and Honour, first to the one, and then to the other.

A thousand good leaves be for ever graunted Agrippa

For squibbing and declayming against many

Artes, and Craftes, deuisde by the Diuls and Sprites, for a torment,

And for a plague to the world: as both Pandora, Prometheus.

And that cursed good bad Tree, can testifie at all times.

Meere Geneganies and Bables, in comparison of

7 Ertue sendeth a man to Renowne, Fame | Toyes to mock Apes, and Woodcockes, in comparison of these.

> Ligling castes, and knicknackes, in comparison of these.

Yet behinde there is one thing, worth a prayer at all tymes.

A good Tongue, in a mans Head, A good Tongue in a woomans.

And what so precious matter, and foode for a good Tongue.

As blessed Vertue, blessed Fame, blessed Aboundaunce.

### L'Enuoy.

Maruell not, what I meane to send these Verses at Euensone:

On Newcyceres Euen, and Oldveeres End, as a Memento:

Trust me, I know not a ritcher lewell, newish or oldish,

Than blessed Vertue, blessed Fame, blessed Abundaunce.

O blessed Vertue, blessed Fame, blessed Aboun-

O that you had these three, with the losse of Fortie Valctes.

> He that wisheth, you may live to see a hundreth Good Netre yeares, every one happier, and merrier, than other.

Now to requite your Blindfolded prette God. (wherin by the way I woulde gladly learne, why, The, in the first, Ye in the first, and thirde, He, and My, in the last, being shorte, Me, alone should be made longer in the very same) Imagin me to come into a goodly Kentishe Garden of your old Lords, or some other Noble man, and spying a florishing Bay Tree there, to demaunde ex tempore, as followeth: Thinke vopon Petrarches

> Arbor vittoriosa, triomfale. Onor d' Imperadori, e di Poete:

and perhappes it will advance the wynges of your Imagination a degree higher: at the least if any thing can be added to the loftinesse of his conceite, whom gentle Mistresse Rosalinde, once reported to have all the Intelligences at commaundement, and an other time, Christened her Segnior Pegaso.

#### Encomium Lauri.

Hat might I call this Tree? A Laurell? Obonny Laurell:

Needes to thy bowes will I bow this knee, and vayle my bonetto:

Princely Poeta:

Th'one for Crowne, for Garland th'other thanketh Apollo.

Bay Tree,

of all men.

th'Emperour only?

And Poet of right stampe, overawith th'Emperour himselfe.

Who, but knowes Aretyne, was he not halfe Prince to the Princes.

And many a one there lines, as nobly minded at 1 all poyntes.

Now Farewell Bay Tree, very Queene, and Goddesse of all trees,

to the Garland.

Faine wod I craue, might I so presume, some farther acquaintaunce,

O that I might? but I may not: were to my destinie therefore.

Trust me, not one more lovall servaunt longes to thy Personage.

But what sayes Daphne? Non omni dormio, morse lucke :

Yet Farmell, Farmell, the Reward of those. that I honour:

Glory to Garden: Glory to Muscs: Glory to Vertue.

#### Partim Ioui, et Palladi. Partim Apollini et Musis.

But séeing I must néedes bewray my store, and set open my shoppe wyndowes, nowe I pray thee, and conjure thee by all thy amorous Regardes, and Exorcismes of Loue, call a Parliament of thy Sensible, and Intelligible powers together, and tell me, in Tom Trothes earnest, what Il secondo, et famoso Poeta. Messer Immerito, sayth to this bolde Sutyrifc all Libell lately deuised at the instaunce of a certayne worshipfull Hartefordshyre Gentleman, of myne olde acquayntaunce: in Gratiam auorundam Illustrium Anglofrancitalorum, hic et voique apud nos volitantium. Agediem verd. nosti homines, tanquam tuam ibsius culemi.

### Speculum Tuscanismi.

Since Galateo came in, and Tuscunisme gan vsurbe.

Vanitie aboue all: Villanie next her, Statelynes Empresse.

Who, but thou, the renowne of Prince, and No man, but Minion, Stoute, Lowle, Plaine, swayne, quoth a I ording:

No wordes but valorous, no workes but woomanish onely.

Thrice happy Daphne: that turned was to the For life Magnificoes, not a beck but glorious in shere.

Whom such servauntes serve, as challenge service : In deede most frivolous, not a looke but Tuscanish alwaves.

Who chiefe Lorde, and King of Kings, but His cringing side necke, Eyes glauncing, Fisnamie smirking,

With forefinger kisse, and braue embrace to the footewarde.

Largebelled Kodpeasd Dublet, unkodpeased halfe hose.

Stratte to the dock, like a shirte, and close to the britch, like a diveling.

A little Apish Hatte, conoched fast to the fate, like an Oy**sier,** 

Ritchest perle to the Crowne, and Jayrest Floure : French Camarick Ruffes, deepe with a witnesse, starched to the purpose.

> Euery one A per se A, his termes, and braueries in Print,

> Delicate in speach, queynte in araye: conceited in all boyntes:

> In Courtly guyles, a passing singular odds man. For Gallanies a braue Myrrour, a Primerose es

Honour.

A Diamond for nonce, a tellowe perelesse in England.

Not the like Discourser for Tongue, and head to be found out:

Not the like resolute Man, for great and serious affavres.

Not the like Lynx, to spie out secretes, and privities of States.

Eyed, like to Argus, Earde, like to Midas, Nosd, like to Naso.

Wingd, like to Mercury, fittst of a Thousand for

to be employde. This, nay more than this doth practise of Italy

in one yeare. None doe I name, but some doe I know, that

a peece of a tweluemonth: Hath so perfited outly, and inly, both body, both

soule. That none for sense, and senses, halfe matchable

with them. A Vulturs smelling, Apes tasting, sight of an

A spiders touching, Hartes hearing, might of

Compoundes of wisedome, witte, prowes, bountie, behautour,

All gallant Vertues, all qualities of body and soule :

O thrice tenne hundreth thousand times blessed and happy,

Blessed and happy Trauaile, Trauailer most blessed and happy.

Penatibus Hetruscis laribusque nostris Inquilinis:

Tell me in good sooth, doth it not too euidently appeare, that this English Poet wanted but a good patterne before his eyes, as it might be some delicate, and choyce elegant Poesie of good M. Sidneys, or M. Dyers, (ouer very Castor, and Pollux for such and many greater matters) when this trimme geere was in hatching: Much like some Gentlewooman, I coulde name in England, who by all Phisick and Physiognomie too, might as well haue brought forth all goodly faire children, as they haue now some ylfauored and deformed, had they at the tyme of their Conception, had in sight, the amiable and gallant beautifull Pictures of Adonis, Cupido, Ganymedes, or the like, which no doubt would have wrought such deepe impression in their fantasies, and imaginations, as their children, and perhappes their Childrens children too, myght haue thanked them for, as long as they shall have Tongues in their heades.

But myne owne leysure fayleth me: and to say troth, I am lately become a maruellous great straunger at myne olde Mistresse Poetries. being newly entertayned, and dayly employed in our Emperour Justinians service (saving that I haue alreadie addressed a certaine pleasurable, and Morall Politique Naturall mixte deuise, to his most Honourable Lordshippe, in the same kynde, wherevnto my next Letter. if you please mee well, may perchaunce make you privie:) marrie nowe, if it lyke you in the meane while, for varietie sake, to see howe I taske a young Brother of myne, (whom of playne Iohn, our Italian Maister hath Cristened his Picciolo Giouannibattista.) Lo here (and God will) a peece of hollydayes exercise. In the morning I gaue him this Theame out of Ouid, to translate, and varie after his best fashion.

Dum fueris falix, multos numerabis Amicos, Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris.

Aspicis, vi veniant ad candida tecta columba! Accipiat nullas sordida Turris Aues?

His translation, or rather Paraphrase before dinner, wus first this:

Whilst your Bearnes are fatte, whilst Cofers stuffd with aboundarince, Freendes will abound: If bearne waxe bare,

then adieu sir a Goddes nime.

See ye the Doones? they breede, and feede in gorgeous Houses:

Scarce one Doone doth lone to remaine in rumous Houses,

And then forsooth this: to make proofe of his facultie in Pentameters too, affecting a certaine Rithmus withall.

Whilst your Ritches abound, your friends will play the Placeboes,

If your wealth doe decay, friend, like a feend, will away.

Doones light, and delight in goodly faire tyld houses:

If your House be but olde, Doone to remone be ye bolde.

And the last and largest of all, this:

If so be goods encrease, then dayly encreaseth a goods friend.

If so be goods decrease, then straite decreaseth a goods friend. Then God night goods friend, who seldome

producth a good friend,

Give me the goods, and give me the good friend, take ve the goods friend.

Douchouse, and Louehouse, in writing differ

In deede scarcely so much, so resembleth an other an other.

Tyle me the Doouehouse trimly, and gallant, where the like storehouse? Fyle me the Doouchouse: leave it inhansome,

where the like poorehouse? Looke to the Louchouse: where the resort is there is a gave showe:

Gynne port, and mony fayle: straight sports and Companie faileth.

Beleeue me, I am not to be charged with aboue one, or two of the Verses: and a foure or five wordes in the rest. His afternoones Theame was borrowed out of him, whom one in your Coate, they say, is as much beholding vnto, as any Planet, or Starre in Heauen is vnto the Sunne: and is quoted as your self best remember, in the Close of your October.

Giunto Alessandro a la famosa tomba Del fero Achille, sospirando disse, () fortunato, che si chiara tromba Trouasti.

Within an houre, or there aboutes, he brought me these foure listic Hexameters, altered since not past in a worde, or two.

Achilles,

Sighing spake with a bigge voyce; O thrice blessed Achilles,

That such a Trump, so great, so loude, so glorious hast found,

As the renowned, and surprizing, Archivet Homer.

Vppon the viewe whereof, Ah my Syrrha, quoth I here is a gallant exercise for you in deede: we have had a little prettie triall of you(r, Latin, and Italian Translation: Let me see now I pray, what you can doo in your owne Tongue: And with that, reaching a certaine famous Booke, called the newe Shephardes Calender: I turned to Willyes, and Thomalins Emblemes, in Marche: and bad him make them eyther better, or worse in English verse. I gaue him an other howres respite: but before I looked for him, he suddainely rushed vpon me, and gaue me his deuise, thus formally set downe in a faire peece of Paper.

#### 1. Thomalins Embleme.

Of Honny, and of Gaule, in Loue there is store, The Honny is much, but the Gaule is more.

### 2. Willyes Embleme.

To be wise, and eke to Loue, is graunted scarce to God above.

#### 3. Both combined in one.

I one is a thing more fell, than full of Gaule, than of Honny.

And to be wire, and Loue, is a worke for a God, or a Goddes teere.

With a small voluntarie Supplement of his owne, on the other side, in commendation of hir most gratious, and thrice excellent Maiestie: Not the like Virgin againe, in Asia, or Afric, or

Europe, For Royall Vertues, for Maiestie, Bountie, Behautour

Rapum, vii vides.

In both not passing a worde, or two, corrected by mee. Something more I have of his, partly that very day begun, and partly continued since: but yet not so perfitly finished, that I dare committe the viewe, and examination thereof, to Messer Immeritoes Censure, whom after those same two incomparable and my-Noble Alexander, when he came to the tombe of taculous Gemini, Omni exceptione maiores, 1 recount, and chaulk vppe in the Catalogue of our very principall Englishe Aristarchi. Howbeit, I am nigh halfe perswaded, that in tyme (siquidem vitima primis respondeant) for length, bredth, and depth, it will not come far behinde your Epithalamion Thamesis: the rather, hauing so fayre a president, and patterne before his Eyes, as I warrant him, and he presumeth to have of that : both Master Collinshead, and M. Holli(n) shead too, being togither therein. But cuer, and euer, me thinkes your great Caloes, Ecquid ent pretij, and our little Catoes, Res age quæ prosunt, make suche a buzzing, and ringing in my head, that I have little loy to animate, and encourage either you, or him to goe forward, vnlesse ve might make account of some certaine ordinarie wages, at [at] the leastwise haue your meate, and drinke for your dayes workes. As for my selfe, howsoeuer I have toyed, and trifled heretofore, I am nowe taught, and I trust I shall shortly learne, (no remedie, I must of meere necessitie give you over in the playne fielde) to employ my trausyle, and tyme wholly or chiefely on those studies and practizes, that carrie as they saye, meate in their mouth, hauing euermore their eye vppon the *Tille De pane lucrando*, and their hand vpon their halfpenny. For, I pray now, what faith M. Cuddie, alias you know who, in the tenth Æglogue of the foresaid famous new Calender?

Piers, I have piped erst so long with payne, That all myne Olen reedes been rent, and wore, And my poore Muse hath spent hir spared store, Yet little good hath got, and much lesse gayne. Such pleasaunce makes the Grashopper so poore, And ligge so layde, when winter doth her strayne.

The Dapper Ditties, that I woont deutze, To feede youthes fancle, and the flocking fry, Delighten much: what I the bett for thy? They han the pleasure, I a sclender prize. I beate the bushe, the birdes to them doe flye, What good thereof to Cuddy can arise?

But Master Collin Cloute is not every body, and albeit his olde Companions, Master Cuddy, and Master Hobbinoll be as little beholding to their Mistresse Poetrie, as euer vou wilt: vet he peraduenture, by the meanes of hir special fauour, and some personall priuiledge, may happely live by dying Pellicanes, and purchase great landes, and Lordshippes, with the money, which his Calendar and Dreames have, and will affourde him. Extra iocum, I like your Dreames passingly well: and the rather, bicause they fauour of that singular extraordinarie veine and invention, whiche I ever fancied moste, and in a manner admired onelve in Lucian, Petrarche, Aretine, Pasquill, and all the most delicate, and fine conceited Grecians and Italians: (for the Romanes to speake of, are but verye Ciphars in this kinde:) whose chiefest endeuour, and drifte was, to have nothing vulgare, but in some respecte or other, and especially in lluely Hyperbolicall Amplifications, rare, queint, and odde in every pointe, and as a man woulde saye, a degree or two at the leaste, aboue the reache, and compasse of a common Schollers capacitie. In whiche respecte notwithstanding, as well for the singularitie of the manner, as the Divinitie of the matter, I hearde once a Diuine, preferre Saint lohns Revelation before al the veriest Mætaphysicall Visions, and iollyest conceited Dreames or Extasies, that ever were devised by one or other, howe admirable, or superexcellent socuer they seemed otherwise to the worlde. And truely I am so confirmed in this opinion, that when I bethinke me of the verie notablest, and

Vision, that ever I read, or hearde, me seemeth the proportion is so vnequall, that there hardly appeareth anye semblaunce of Comparison: no more in a manner (specially for Poets) than doth betweene the incomprehensible Wisedome of God, and the sensible Wit of Man, But what needeth this digression betweene you and me? I dare saye you wyll holde your selfe reasonably wel satisfied, if youre Dreames be but as well esteemed of in Englande, as Petrarches Visions be in Italy: whiche I assure you, is the very worst I wish you. But, see, how I have the Arte Memorative at commaundement. In good faith I had once againe nigh forgotten your Faerie Queene: howbeit by good chaunce, I have nowe sent hir home at the laste, neither in better nor worse case, than I founde hir. And must you of necessitie hauc my ludgement of hir in deede? To be plaine, I am voyde of al judgement, if your Nine Comædies, whervnto in imitation of Herodolus, you give the names of the Nine Muses, (and in one mans fansie not vnworthily) come not neerer Ariostoes Comædies, eyther for the finenesse of plausible Elocution, or the rarenesse of Poetical Invention, than that Eluish Oueene doth to his Orlando Furioso, which notwithstanding, you wil needes seeme to emulate, and hope to ouergo, as you flatly professed your self in one of your last Letters. Besides that you know, it hath bene the vsual practise of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all nations, and specially in Italie, rather to shewe, and aduaunce themselues that way, than any other: as namely, those three notorious dyscoursing heads, Bibiena, Machiauel, and Aretine did, (to let Bembo and Ariosto passe) with the great admiration, and wonderment of the whole countrey: being in deede reputed matchable in all points, both for conceyt of Witte, and eloquent decyphering of matters, either with Aristophanes and Menander in Greek, or with Plautus and Terence in Latin, or with any other, in any other tong. But I wil not stand greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be the Faerye Queene be fairer in your eie than the Nine Muses, and Hobgoblin runne away with the Garland from Apollo: Marke what I saye, and yet I will not say that I thought, but there an End for this once, and fare you well, till God or some good Aungell putte you in a better minde.

they seemed otherwise to the worlde. And truely I am so confirmed in this opinion, that suspitiouslye with an olde promise, to deliuer wonderful Propheticall, or Poetral mine owne matters from you, that loe, I muste

an honest Countrey Gentleman, sometimes a namelesse: sauing, that the Gentlewomans Scholler: At whose request, I bestowed this true, or counterfaite Christen name, must pawiting bongrely Rime vpon him, to present | necessarily be bewrayed.

needes be reuealing my friendes secreates, now this Maistresse withall. The parties shall bee

# ¶ To my good Mistresse Anne: the

# very lyfe of my lyfe, and onely beloued Mystresse.

Entle Mistresse Anne, I am plaine by Adieu, adleu pleasures, and profits all:

I was neuer so farre in loue with any creature. Happy were your servant, if hee coulde bee so Anned.

And you not unhappy, if you shoulde be so manned.

I loue not to gloze, where I loue indeede. Nowe God, and good Saint Anne, sende me good speede.

Suche goodly Vertues, suche amiable Grace, But I must not fall a praysing: I wante Time, and Place.

Oh, that I had mine olde Wittes at commainde-

I knowe, what I coulde say without controlement:

But let this suffice: thy desertes are suche: That no one in this worlde can love thee too

My selfe moste unworthy of any suche falicitie, But by imputation of thy gratious Curtesie. I leave to love the Muses, since I loved thee, Alas, what are they, when I thee see?

My Hart, and my Soule, but at one bodyes call. Woulde God, I might save to hir: My hartroote is thine:

And, (6 Pleasure of Pleasures) Thy sweete hartroote mine.

Nowe I beseeche thee by whatsoeuer thou lovest

Let it be, as I have saide, and, Soule, take thy

By the faith of true Loue, and by my truest Truely. Thou shall never putte forth thy Love to greater V surie.

And for other odde necessaries, take no care, Your servaunts Domonium shall ridde you of that feare.

I serue but two Saints, Saint Penny, and Saint Anne,

Commende this I muste, commaunde that I

Nowe, shall I be plaine? I praye thee even most hartily.

Requite Loue, with Loue: and farewell most hartily.

## Postscripte.

But the Heart of a Susanne, not worth the 11 my selfe, or my S. Penny may performe thy Haire of an Anne:

A Sus to Anne, if you can any Latine, or Pewter: And thus once againe, (full loath) I take my leave Shee Flesh, hir, Mother Fish, hir Father a

verve Newter. I woulde once, and might after, have spedde a Gods name:

But, if she cove it once, she is none of my

Nowe I praye thee moste hartily, Thricegentle Mistresse Anne.

Looke for no long service of so plaine a manne

But once loved before, and shee for sooth was And yet I assure thee, thou shall never want any seruice.

of thy sweete harte. With as many louing Farewels, as be louing pangs in my heart.

> He that longeth to be thine ovene inseparably, for euer and euer.

God helpe vs., you and I are wisely employed. (are wee not?) when our Pen and Inke, and Time, and Wit, and all runneth away in this goodly yonkerly veine: as if the world had

nothing else for vs to do: or we were borne to: be the only Nonproficients and Nihilagents of the world. Cuiusmodi tu nugis, alque naeniis nisi vná mecum (qui solemni quodam iureiurando, atque voto obstringor, relicto isto amoris Poculo, iuris Poculum primo quoque tempore exhaurire) iam tandem aliquando valedicas, (quod tamen, unum tibi, credo, Tur aburatur videbitur) nihil dicam amplius, Valeas. E meo municipio. Nono Calendas Maias.

But hoe I pray you, gentle sirra, a word with you more. In good sooth, and by the faith I beare to the Muses, you shal neuer have my subscription or consent (though you should charge me with the authoritie of fine hundreth Maister Drants.) to make your Carpenter our Carpenter, an inche longer, or bigger, than God and his Englishe people have made him. Is there no other Pollicie to pull downe Ryming, and set vone Versifying, but you must needes correcte Magnificat: and againste all order of Lawe, and in despite of Custome, forcibly vsurpe, and tyrannize vppon a quiet companye of wordes, that so farre beyonde the memorie Priviledges and Liberties, without any disturbance, or the leaste controlement? What? Is Horaces Ars Poetica so quite out of our Englishe Poets head, that he muste have his Remembrancer, to pull hym by the sleeue, and put him in mind, of, Penes vsum, et ius, et norma loquendi? Indeed I remember, who was wont in a certaine brauerie, to call our M. Valanger Noble M. Valanger. Else neuer heard I any, that durst presume so much over the Englishe, (excepting a fewe suche stammerers, as have not the masterie of their owne sillable, otherwise, than oure common speache, and generall receyued Custome woulde beare them oute. Woulde not I laughe, thinke you, to heare Messer Immerito come in baldely with his Maiestle, Royaltie, Honestre, Sciences, Faculties, Excellent, Tauernour, Manfully, Faithfully, and a thousande the like: in steade of Mairstie, Royaltie, Honestie, and so forth? And trowe you anye coulde forbeare the byting of his Lippe, or smyling in his Sleeue, if a rolly fellowe, and greate Clarke, (as it mighte be youre selfe.) reading a fewe Verses vnto him. for his own credite and commendation, should they are to be pronounced shorte in Prose, after nowe and then, tell him of, bargaineth, follow- the maner of the Latines, in suche wordes as ing, harrowing, thoroughly, Tranailers, or the like, in steade of, bargaineth, folliveing, harrowing, and the reste? Or will Segnior Immerito, bycause, may happe, he hathe a fat-bellved overruled by the vsuall, and common received

Archedeacon on his side, take vppon him to controll Maister Doctor Watson for his All Trauallers, in a Verse so highly extolled of Master Ascham? or Maister Ascham himselfe. for abusing Homer, and corrupting our Tongue. in that he saith:

Quite throughe a Doore flewe a shafte with a brasse head?

Nay, haue we not somtime, by your leave, both the Position of the firste, and Dipthong of the seconde, concurring in one, and the same sillable, which neuerthelesse is commonly and ought necessarily to be pronounced short? I have nowe small time, to bethink me of many examples. But what say you to the second in Merchanndise? to the third in Covenainteth? and to the fourth in Appurtenaunces? Durst you aduenture to make any of them long, either in Prose, or in Verse? I assure you I knowe who dareth not, and sudddinly feareth the displeasure of all true Englishmen if he should. Say you suddainly, it you liste: by my certainly, and certainty I wil of man, have so peaceably enjoyed their several not. You may preceive by the Premisses, (which very worde I woulde have you note by the wave to) the Latine is no rule for vs: or imagine aforehande, (bycause you are like to proue a great Purchaser, and leave suche store of money, and possessions behinde you) your Executors wil deale fraudulently, or violently with your successour, (whiche in a maner is every mans case) and it will fall oute a resolute pointe: the third in Executores, frauduliter, violeter, and the seconde in Successor, being long in the one, and shorte in the other: as in seauen hundreth more: suche as, disciple, recited, Tongues) as to alter the Quantitie of any one excited: tenement, or itour, laudible: and a number of their fellowes are long in English, short in Latine: long in Latine, short in English. Howbeit, in my fancy, such words, as trolently, diligently, magnificently, indifferently, seeme in a manner reasonably indifferent, and tollerable cither waye, neither woulde I greately stande with him, that translated the Verse.

> Cur mittis violas? vt me violentiiis vras? Why send you violets? to burne my poore hart violently.

> Marry so, that being left common for verse, these, Cathedra, Volucres, mediocres, Celebres.

> And thus farre of your Carpenter, and his fellowes, wherin we are to be moderated, and

sounde, and not to deuise any counterfaire fantasticall Accent of oure owne, as manye, otherwise not vnlearned haue corruptely and ridiculouslye done in the Greeke.

Nowe for your Heauen, Scauen, Eleauen, or the like. I am likewise of the same opinion: as cenerally in all words else: we are not to goe a little farther, either for the Prosody, or the ()rthography, (and therefore your Imaginarie Diastole nothing worthe) then we are licented and authorized by the ordinarie vse, and custome, and proprietie, and Idiome, and, as it were. Maiestie of our speach: whiche I accounte the only infallible, and soueraigne Rule of all Rules. And therefore having respecte thereynto, and reputing it Petty Treason to repolt therefro: dare hardly eyther in the Prosodie. or in the Orthography either, allowe them two sillables in steade of one, but woulde as well in Writing, as in Speaking, haue them yield, as Monosyllaba, thus: heavn, seavn, a leavn, as Maister Ascham in his Toxophilus doth Yrne, commonly written Yron:

I'p to the pap his string did he pull, his shafte to the harde vrne.

Especially the difference so manifestly appearing by the Pronunciation, betweene these twoo, a leavn a clocke and a leaven of Dore, whyche leaven admitteth the Diastole, you speake of. But see, what absurdities thys Alfanoured Orthographye, or rather Pseudography, hathe ingendred: and howe one errour still breedeth and begetteth an other. Haue wee not, Mooneth, for Moonthe: sithence, for since: uhilest, for whilste: phantasse, for phansie: euen, for con: Diuel, for Divl: God his wrath, for Goddes wrath: and a thousande of the same stampe: wherein the corrupte Orthography in the moste, hathe beene the sole, or principall cause of corrupte Prosodve in ouer many?

Marry, I confesse some wordes we have indeede, as for example, fayer, either for beautifull, or for a Marte: ayer, bothe pro acre, and tro harede, for we say not Heire, but plaine Canonically holde amongst vs, as Position Aire for him to, for else Scoggins Aier were a doeth with the Latines and Greekes. I saye, poore jest) whiche are commonly, and maye (peraduenture,) bycause, having not yet made indifferently be vsed eyther wayes. For you anye speciall Observation, I dare not precisely

the same sorte: sometime Monosyllaba, sometime Polysyllaba.

To conclude both pointes in one, I dare sweare prinately to your selfe, and will defende publiquely againste any, it is neither Heresie, nor Paradox, to sette downe, and stande vppon this assertion, (notwithstanding all the Prejudices and Presumptions to the contrarie, if they were tenne times as manye moe) that it is not, either Position, or Dipthong, or Diastole, or anye like Grammer Schoole Deuice, that doeth, or can indeede, either make long or short, or encrease, or diminish the number of Sillables, but onely the common allowed, and received Prosodye: taken vp by an vniuersall consent of all, and continued by a generall vse, and Custome of all. Wherein neuerthelesse I grant, after long aduise, and diligent observation of particulars, a certain Uniform Analogie, and Concordance, being in processe of time espyed out. Sometime this, sometime that, hath been noted by good wits in their Analyses, to fall out generally alyke? and as a man woulde saye, regularly in all, or moste wordes: as Position, Dipthong, and the like: not as firste, and essentiall causes of this, or that effecte, (here lyeth the point) but as Secundarie and Accidentall Signes, of this, or that Qualitie.

It is the vulgare, and natural Mother Prosodye, that alone worketh the feate, as the onely supreame Foundresse, and Reformer of Position, Dipthong, Orthographie, or whatsocuer else: whose Affirmatiues are nothing worth, if she once conclude the Negative: and whose secundar intentiones muste have their whole allowance and warrante from hir prima. And therefore in shorte, this is the verie shorte, and the long: Position neither maketh shorte. nor long in oure Tongue, but so farre as we can get hir good leaue. Peraduenture, vppon the diligent survewe, and examination of Particulars, some the like Analogie and Uniformity, might be founde oute in some other respecte, that shoulde as vniuersally and shal as well, and as ordinarily heare fayer, as affirme any generall certaintie: albeit I prefaire, and Aier, as Aire, and bothe alike: not sume, so good and sensible a Tongue, as ours onely of divers and sundrye persons, but often is, beeying wythall so like itselfe, as it is, canof the very same: otherwhiles using the one, not but haue something equipollent, and otherwhiles the other: and so died, or dyde: countervaileable to the beste Tongues, in some stied, or spide: tryed, or tride: fyer, or fyre: one such kinde of conformitie, or other. And mer, or myre: with an infinite companye of this forsooth is all the Artificial Rules and Pre-

# 632 THREE PROPER AND WITTIE FAMILIAR LETTERS.

cepts, you are like to borrowe of one man at

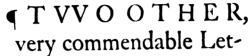
Sed amabo ile, ad Corculi tui delicatissimas Literas, propediem, quam polero, accuratissimò: tot interim illam exquisitissimis salutibus, alque salutationibus impertiens, quot habet in Capitulo, capillos semiaureos, semiargenteos, semiagenteos. Quid querts? Per tuam Venerem altera Rosalindula est: eamque non alter, sed idem ille, (tua, vi ante, bona cum gratia) copiosò amat Hobbinolus. O mea Domina Immerito, mea bellissima Collina Clouta, multo plus plurimim salue, alque vale.

You knowe my ordinarie Postscripte: you may communicate as much, or as little, as you list, of these Patcheries, and fragments, with the two Gentlemen: but there a straw, and you loue me: not with any else, friend or for, one, or other: vnlesse haply you have a special desire to imparte some parte hereof, to my good friend M. Daniel Rogers: whose curtesies are also registred in my Marble booke You know my meaning.

Nosti manum et stylum.

G.





ters, of the fame mens vvriting: both touching the forefaid Artificiall Verfifying, and certain other Particulars:

More lately delivered unto the Printer.



# IMPRINTED AT LON-

don, by H.Bynneman, dvvelling in Thames streate, neere vnto Baynardes Castell.

Anno Domini. 1580.

Cum gratia & privilegio Regia Maiestatis.



# ¶ To the VV orshipfull his very singular good friend, Maister G. H. Fellovv of Trinitie Hall in Cambridge.

Ood Master G. I perceive by your most thote, it is good striking, and minds of Nobles Tcurteous and frendly Letters your good will to be no lesse in deed, than I alwayes steemed. In recompence wherof, think I beseech you, that I wil spare neither speech, nor wryting, nor aught else, whensoeuer, and wheresoeuer occasion shal be offred me: yea, I will not stay, till it be offred, but will sake it, in al that possibly I may. And that you may perceive how much your Counsel in al things prenaileth with me, and how altogether I am ruled and ouer-ruled thereby: I am now determined to alter mine owne former purpose, and to subscribe to your aduizement: being notwithstanding resolved stil, to abide your farther My principal doubts are these. resolution. First, I was minded for a while to have intermitted the vttering of my writings: leaste by ouer-much cloying their noble cares, I should gather a contempt of my self, or else seeme rather for gaine and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetnesse that I have already tasted. Then also me seemeth the work too base for his excellent Lordship, being made in Honour of a private Personage vnknowne, which of some yl-willers might be vpbraided, not to be so worthie, as you knowe she is: or the matter not so weightie, that it should be offred to so weightie a Personage: or the like. The selfe former Title stil liketh me well ynough, and seeming, to frustrate any parte of your advice, I beeseeche you, without the leaste selfe loue of your own purpose, councell me for the beste: and the rather doe it faithfullye, and carefully, for that, in all things I attribute so muche to your judgement, that I am euermore content to adnihilate mine owne determinations, in respecte thereof. And indeede for your selfe to, it sitteth with you now, to call your wits, and senses togither, (which are alwaies at call) when occasion is so fairely offered of Estima-

varie, as their Estates. Verum ne quid durius. I pray you bethinke you well hereof, good Maister G. and forthwith write me those two or three special points and caucats for the nonce, De quibus in superioribus illis mellitissimis, longissimisque Litteris tuis. Your desire to heare of my late beeing with hir Maiestie, muste dye in it selfe. As for the twoo worthy Gentlemen, Master Sidney, and Master Dyer. they have me, I thanke them, in some vse of familiarity: of whom, and to whome, what speache passeth for youre credite and estimation, I leave your selfe to conceive, having alwayes so well conceined of my vufained affection, and zeale towardes you. And nowe they proclaimed in their keine waye, a generall surceasing and silence of balde Rymers, and also of the verie beste to: in steade whereof, they have by autho(ri)tie of their whole Senate, prescribed certaine Lawes and rules of Quantities of English sillables, for English Verse: having had thereof already greate practise, and drawen mee to their faction. Newe Bookes I heare of none, but only of one, that writing a certaine Booke, called The Schoole of Abuse, and dedicating it to Maister Sidney, was for hys labor scorned: if at leaste it be in the goodnesse of that nature to scorne. Suche follie is it, not to regarde aforchande the your fine Addition no lesse. If these, and the inclination and qualitie of him, to whome wee like doubtes, maye be of importaunce in your dedicate oure Bookes. Suche mighte I happily incurre, entituling My Slomber, and the other Pamphlets, vnto his honor. I meant them rather to Maister Dyer. But I am, of late, more in loue with my Englishe Versifying, than with Ryming: whyche I should haue done long since, if I would then have followed your councell. Sed te solum iam tum suspicabar cum Aschamo sapere: nunc Aulam video egreglos alere Portas Anglicos. Maister E. K. hartily desireth to be commended vnto your Worshippe: of whome, what accompte he tion and Preferment. For, whiles the yron is maketh, youre selfe shall hereafter perceive,

by hys paynefull and dutifull Verses of your | Poeta, tuaquae ipsius maximae in his rebus

Thus muche was written at Westminster yesternight: but comming this morning, beeyng the sixteenth of October, to Mystresse Kerkes, to have it delivered to the Carrier. I receyued youre letter, sente me the laste weeke: whereby I perceive you other whiles continue your old exercise of Versifying in English: whych glorie I had now thought shoulde have bene onely ours heere at London, and the Court.

Truste me, your Verses I like passingly well, and enuye your hidden paines in this kinde, or rather maligne, and grudge at your selfe, that woulde not once imparte so muche to me. But once, or twice, you make a breache in Maister Drants Rules: quod tamen condonabimus tanto reste.

autoritati. You shall see when we meete in London, (whiche, when it shall be, certifye vs) howe fast I have followed after you, in that Course: beware, leaste in time I ouertake you. Veruntamen te solùm sequar, (vt sæbenumer) sum professus,) nunquam sand assequar, dum viuam. And nowe requite I you with the like. not with the verye beste, but with the verye shortest, namely with a fewe lambickes: I dare warrant, they be precisely perfect for the feete (as you can easily judge) and varie not one inch from the Rule. I will imparte yours to Maister Sidney, and Maister Dyer, at my nexte going to the Courte. I praye you, keepe mine close to your selfe, or your verie entire friendes, Maister Preston, Maister Still, and the

#### Iambicum Trimetrum.

Nhappie Verse, the witnesse of my unhappie state, Make thy selfe fluttring wings of thy fast flying Thought, and fly forth unto my Loue, whersoeuer she be: Whether lying reastlesse in heavy bedde, or else Sitting so cheerelesse at the cheerfull boorde, or else Playing alone carelesse on hir heavenlie Virginals. If in Bed, tell hir, that my eyes can take no reste: If at Boorde, tell hir, that my mouth can eate no meate: If at hir Virginals, tel hir, I can heare no mirth. Asked why? say: Waking Loue suffereth no sleepe: Say, that raging Loue dothe appall the weake stomacke: Say, that lamenting Loue marreth the Musicall. Tell hir, that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me asleepe: Tell hir, that hir beautie was wonte to feede mine eves: Tell hir, that hir sweete Tongue was wonte to make me mirth. Nowe doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindely reste: Nowe doe I dayly starue, wanting my lively foode: Nowe doe I alwayes dye, wanting thy timely mirth. And if I waste, who will bewaile my heavy chaunce? And if I starue, who will record my cursed end? And if I dye, who will save: this was, Immerito?

ende, with a heartie Vale, of the best fashion: and nowe I hope, you will vouchsafe mee but loe, an ylfauoured myschaunce. My last an answeare of the largest size, or else farewell, whereof I made great accompt, and I tell you true, you shall bee verye deepe muche maruelled you shoulde make no men in my debte: notwythstandyng, thys other tion thereof, I am nowe tolde, (in the Diuels sweete, but shorte letter, and fine, but name) was thorough one mans negligence quite fewe Verses. But I woulde rather I might forgotten, but shoulde nowe vindoubtedly haue | yet see youre owne good selfe, and receive beene sent, whether I hadde come, or no. a Reciprocall farewell from your owne sweete Seing it can now be no otherwise, I pray mouth.

I thought once agayne here to have made an I you take all togither, wyth all their faultes:

# Ad Ornatissimum virum, multis iamdiu nominibus clarissimum, G. H. Immerito

sui, mox in Gallias nauigaturi,

EUTUYETY.

Sle malus egregium, sie non inimicus Ami- Calestes Diuumque thoros spreuisse beatos.

Sieque nouus veterem jubet ipse Poeta Portam, Saluere, ac calo post secula multa secundo lam reducem, cælo mage, quam nunc ipse, secundo

Viter. Ecce Deus, (mod) sit Deus ille, renixum ()ui vocet in scelus, et suratos perdat amores) Ecce Deus mihi clara dedit modò siena Marinus. El sua veligero lenis paral Acquora Ligno, Mox sulcanda, suas etiam pater Æolus Iras Ponit, et ingentes animos Aquilonis-Cuncta vijs sic apla meis: ego solus ineplus. Nam mihl nescio quo mens saucia vulnere, dudum

Fluctuat ancipiti Pelago, dum Nauita proram Inualidam validus rapit huc Amor, et rapit illuc. Consiliis Ratio melioribus vsa, decusque Immortale leui diffessa Cupidinis Arcu. Angimur hoc dubio, et portu vexamur in foso. Magne pharetrati nunc tu contemptor Amoris, (Id tibi Di) nomen precor haud impune remittant) Ilos nodos exsolue, et eris mihi magnus Apollo. Spiritus ad summos, scio, te generosus Honores Exstimulat, masusque docet spirare Poetam. Quam leuis est Amor, et tamen haud leuis est Amor omnis.

Ergo nihil laudi reputas aquale perenni, Præque sacrosancia splendoris imagine tanti, Catera, qua vecors, vii Numina, vulgus adorat, Prædia, Amicilias, urbana peculia, Nummos, Quæque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amores

Conculcare soles, vt humum, et ludibria sensus. Digna meo certe Harueio sententia, digna Oraiore amplo, et generoso peciore, quam non Stoica formidet veterum Sapientia vinclis Sancire æternis: sapor haud tamen omnibus idem.

Dicitur effæti proles facunda Lacrtæ, Quamlibet ignoti iactata per æquora Cæli, Inque procelloso longim exsul gurgite ponto, Tantim Amor, et Mulier, vel Amore potentior.

Tu tamen illudis: tua Magnificentia tanta est: Præque subumbrata Splendoris Imagine tanti, Praque illo Meritis famosis nomine parto. Cartera, quæ Vecors, vii Numina, vuleus adoral, Priedia, Amicilias, armenta, peculia, nummos, Quaque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amores.

()urque placent ori, quaque auribus, omnia temnis.

Næ tu grande sapis, Sapor at sapientia non est: Omnis et in paruis bene qui scit desipuisse, Sæpe supercilis palmam samentibus aufert. Ludit Aristippum modo tetrica Turba Sophorum. Milia purpureo moderantem verba Tyranno: Ludit Aristippus dictamina vana Sophorum. Quos leuis emensi male torquet Culicis ombra: Et quisquis placuisse studet Heroibus altis. Desipuisse studet, sic gratia crescit ineptis. Denique Laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vittis Insignire volet, Populoque placere fauenti, Desipere insanus discil, turpemque pudendæ Stultitice laudem quærit. Pater Ennius vnus Dictus in innumeris sapiens: laudatur at ipse Carmina vesano fudisse liquentia vino. Nec tu pace tua, nostri Cato Maxime sæcil. Nomen honorati sacrum mereare Poetæ, Quantamuis illustre canas, et nobile Carmen, Ni stultire velis, sic Stultorum omnia plena. Tuta sed in medio superest via gurgite, nam Oul Nec reliquis nimium vult destouisse videri. Nec sapuisse nimis, Sapientem dixeris vnum. Hinc te merserit unda, illinc combusserit Ignis. Nec tu delicias nimis aspernare fluentes, Nec serò Dominam venientem in vota, nec Aurum

Si sapis, ablatum, (Curijs ea, Fabricijsque Linque viris miseris miseranda Sophismata

Grande sui decus ij, nostri sed dedecus œui:) Præ tamen amplexu lachrymosæ Coniugis, Ortus Nec sectare nimis. Res viraque crimine plena.

I An Enclosure with the previous letter. This is the last farewell there referred to, written on 5 Oct. 1570, but not forwarded owing to some one's negligence, now recovered by Spenser, and enclosed with his later letter of 15th and 16th Oct.]

Hoc bene aui callet, (si quis tamen hoc bene l'austa precaretur: Deus illum aliquando recallet)

Scribe, vel invito sapientem hunc Socrate solum. Vis facit una pios: Iustos facit altera: et altra Egregie cordata, ac fortia pectora: verum Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit vtile dulci. Dij mihi, dulce diu dederant : verùm viile nunquam:

Vtile nunc etiam. 8 vtinamquoque dulce dedissent. Dij mihi, (quippe Dijs æquivalia maxıma paruis)

Ni nimis inuideant mortalibus esse beatis, Dulce simul tribuisse queant, simul viile: tanta Sed Fortuna tua est: pariter quæque vtile,

Dulce dat ad placitum: sæuo nos sydere nati Quæsitum imus eam per inhospita Caucasa

Perque Pyrenæos montes, Babilonaque turpem, Oudd si quæsitum nec ibi invenerimus, ingens Æquor inexhaustis permensi erroribus, vltra Fluctibus in medijs socij quæremus Vlyssis. Passibus inde Deam fessis comitabimur ægram, Nobile cui furtum quærenti defuit orbis.

Namque sinu pudet in patrio, tenebrisque pudendic Non nimis ingenio Iuuenem infalice, virentes

Officias frustra deperdere vilibus Annos. Frugibus et vacuas speratis cernere spicas. Ibimus ergo statim: (quis eunti fausta precetur?)

El pede Clivosas fesso calcabimus Alpes. Ouis dabit interea conditas rore Britanno. Quis tibi Litterulas? quis carmen amore petulcum?

Musa sub Oebalij desueta cacumine montis, Flebit inexhausto tam longa silentia planetu. Lugebitque sacrum lachrymis Helicona tacentem. Harneiusque bonus, (charus licet omnibus idem, Idque suo merito, prope suautor omnibus vnus.) Angelus et Gabriel, (quamuis comitatus amicis Innumeris, geniumque choro stipatus anueno) Immerito tamen vnum absentem sæpe requiret, Obtabitque, Viinam meus hic Edmundus adesset, Oui noua scripsissel, nec Amores conticuissel Ipse suos, el sæpe animo, verbisque benignis

ducat. etc.

Plura vellem per Charites, sed non licet per Musas.

Vale. Vale plurimim, Mi amabilissim Harueie, meo cordi, meorum omnium longcharissime.

I was minded also to haue sent you some English verses: or Rymes, for a farewell: but by my Troth, I have no spare time in the world. to thinke on such Toyes, that you knowe will demaund a freer head, than mine is presently I beseeche you by all your Curtesies, and Graces, let me be answered, ere I goe: which will be, (I hope, I feare, I thinke) the next weeke, it I can be dispatched of my Lorde. I goe thither. as sent by him, and maintained most what of him: and there am to employ my time, my body, my minde, to his Honours seruice. Thus with many superhartie Commendations, and Recommendations to your selfe, and all my friendes with you, I ende my last Farewell, not thinking any more to write vnto you, before I goe: and withall committing to your faithfull Credence the eternall Memorie of our euerlasting friendship, the inviolable Memorie of our vispotted friendshippe, the sacred Memorie of our vowed friendship: which I beseech you Continue with vsuall writings, as you may, and of all things let me heare some Newes from vou. As gentle M. Sidney, I thanke his good Worship, hath required of me, and so promised to doe againe. Qui monet, vt facias, quod sam facis, you knowe the rest. You may alwayes send them most safely to me by Mistress Kerke, and by none other. Soonce again, and yet once more, Farewell most hartily, mine owne good Master H. and loue me, as I loue you, and thinke vpon poore Immerito, as he thinketh vppon vou.

Leycester House. This. 5. of October, 1579.

Per marz, per terras, Vinus, mortuusque. Tuus Immerito.

# To my verie Friende,

M. Immerito.

I Iberalissima Signor Immerita, in good soothe .my poore Storehouse will presently affourd me nothing, either to recompence, or counteruaile your gentle Masterships, long, large, lauish, Luxurious, Laxatiue Letters withall, (now a Gods name, when did I euer in my life, hunt the Letter before? but, belike, theres no remedie. I must needes be euen with you once in my dayes,) but only forsoothe, a fewe Millions of Recommendations, and a running Coppie of the Verses enclosed. Which Verses, (extra iocum) are so well done in Lattin by two Doctors, and so well Translated into English by one odde Gentleman, and generally so well allowed of all, that chaunced to have the perusing of them: that trust mee, G, H, was at the first hardly intreated, to shame himselfe, and truely, now blusheth, to see the first Letters of his name, stande so neere their Names, as of necessitie they must. You know the Greeke prouerb, weediga word weedigan diangeria, and many colours, (as in a manner every thing else) that severally by themselves, seeme reasonably good, and freshe ynough, beyng compared, and ouermatched with their betters, are maruellously disgraced, and as it were, dashed quite oute of Countenaunce. I am at this instant, very busilye, and hotly employed in certaine greate and serious affayres: whereof, notwithstanding (for all youre vowed, and long experimented secrecie) you are not like to heare a worde more at the moste, till I my selfe see a World more at the leaste. And therefore, for this once I beseech you (notwithstanding your greate expectation of I knowe not what Volumes for an aunsweare) content your good selfe, with these Presentes, (pardon me, I came lately out of a Scriveners shop) and in lieu of many gentle Farewels, and goodly Godbewyes, at your departure: gyue me once againe leaue, to playe the Counsaylour a while, if it be but to justifie your liberall Mastershippes, Nostri Cato maxime sædi: and I coniure you by the Contents of the Verses, and Rymes enclosed, and by al the good, and bad Spirites, that attende vpon the Authors themselues, immediatly vpon the contemplation thereof, to abandon all other fooleries, and bonour Vertue, the onely immortall and suruiuing Accident amongst so manye mortall, and

cuer-perishing Substaunces. As I strongly presume, so good a Texte, so clearly handeled, by three so famous Doctours, as olde Maister Il ythitole, and the other two bee, may easily, and will fully perswade you, howsoeuer you tush at the fourths vnsutable Paraphrase. But a worde or two, to your large, lauishe, laxative Letters, and then for thys time, Adieu. Of my credite, youre doubtes are not so redoubted, as youre selfe ouer suspiciously imagine: as I purpose shortely to aduize you more at large. Your hotte vron, is so hotte, that it striketh mee to the hearte, I dare not come neare to strike it: The Tyde tarryeth no manne, but manye a good manne is fayne to tarry the Tyde. And I knowe some, whyche coulde be content to bee theyr own Garners, that are gladde to thanke other for theyr courtesie: But Beggars, they save, muste be no

Your new-founded aguss rays I honoure more, than you will or can suppose: and make greater accompte of the two worthy Gentlemenne, than of two hundreth Dionisis Areofugiae, or the verye notablest Senatours, that euer Athens dydde affourde of that number.

Your Englishe Trimetra I lyke better, than perhappes you will easily believe: and am to requite them wyth better, or worse, at more conuenient leysure. Marry, you must pardon me, I finde not your warrant so sufficiently good, and substauntiall in Lawe, that it can persuade me, they are all, so precisely perfect for the Feete, as your selfe ouer-partially weene, and ouer-confidently auouche: especiallye the thirde, whyche hathe a foote more than a Lowce (a wonderous deformitie in a righte and pure Senarie) and the sixte, whiche is also in the same Predicament, vnlesse happly one of the feete be sawed off wyth a payre of Syncopes: and then shoulde the Orthographie haue testified so muche: and in steade of Heauenli Virginals, you should have written, Heaunli Virgnals: and Virgnals againe in the ninth, and should have made a Curtoll of Immeriti in the laste: being all notwithstandyng vsuall, and tollerable ynoughe, in a mixte, and licentious Iambicke: and of two euilles, better (no doubte) the fyrste, than the laste: a thyrde superfluous sillable, than a dull SpondesThen me thinketh, you have in my fancie somwhat too many Spondees beside; and whereas Trochee sometyme presumeth in the firste place, as namely in the second Verse, Make thy, whyche thy, by youre Maistershippes owne authoritie muste needes be shorte, I shall be faine to supplye the office of the Arte Memoratiue, and putte you in minde of a pretty Fable in Abstenio the Italian, implying thus much, or rather thus little in effect.

A certaine lame man beyng invited to a solempne Nuptiall Feaste, made no more adoe, but sate me hym roundlye downe foremoste at the hyghest ende of the Table. The Master of the feast, suddainly spying his presumption, and hansomely remoouing him from thence, placed me this haulting Gentleman belowe at the nether end of the bourd: alledging for his defence the common verse: Sedes nulla datur, bræterguam sexta Trochæo: and pleasantly alluding to this foote, which standing vppon two syllables, the one long, the other short, (much like, of a like, his guestes feete) is alwayes thrust downe to the last place, in a true Hexameter, and quite thrust out of doores in a pure, and just Senarie. Nowe Syr, what thinke you, I began to thinke with my selfe, when I began to reade your warrant first: so boldly, and venterously set downe in so formall, and autentique wordes, as these, Precisely perfit, and not an inch from the Rule? Ah Syrrha, and Iesu Lord, thought I, haue we at the last gotten one, of whom his olde friendes and Companions may justly glory, In eo solim peccat, quod nihil peccat: and that is yet more exacte, and precise in his English Comicall lambickes, than ever M. Watson himselfe was in his Lattin Tragicall Iambickes, of whom M. Ascham reporteth, that he would never to this day suffer his famous Absolon to come abrode, onely because Anapastus in Loas paribus, is twice, or thrice vsed in steade of lambus? A small fault, ywisse, and such a one in M. Aschams owne opinion, as perchaunce woulde neuer haue beene espyed, no neither in Italy, nor in Fraunce. But when I came to the curious scanning, and fingering of every foote, and syllable: Lo here, quoth I, M. Watsons Anapæstus for all the worlde. A good horse, that trippeth not once in a iourney: and M. Immerito doth, but as M. Watson, and in a manner all other lambici haue done before him: marry he might haue spared his preface, or at the least, that same restrictive, and streightlaced terme, Precisely,

you, of my selfe, I beleeue, no peece of a fault marked at all. But this is the Effect of warrantes, and perhappes the Errour may rather proceede of his Master, M. Drantes Rule, than of himselfe. Howsoeuer it is, the matter is not great, and I alwayes was, and will euer continue of this Opinion. Pauca multis condonanda vitia Virtutibus, especially these beim no Vitia neither, in a common and licencious lambicke. Verùm ista obiter, non quidem contradicendi animo, aut etiam corrigendi mihi crede: sed nostro illo Academico, pristinoque more ratiocinandi. And to save trueth, partely too, to requite your gentle courtesie in beginning to me, and noting I knowe not what breache in your gorbellyed Maisters Rules: which Rules go for good, I perceive, and keepe a Rule, where there be no better in presence. My selfe neither sawe them, nor heard of them before: and therefore will neither praise them. nor dispraise them nowe: but vppon the surviewe of them, and farther conference, (both which I desire) you shall soone heare one mans opinion too or fro. Youre selfe remember, I was wonte to have some prejudice of the man: and I still remaine a fauourer of his deserued, and just commendation. Marry in these poyntes, you knowe, Partialitie in no case, may have a foote: and you remember mine olde Stoicall exclamation: Fie on childish affection, in the discoursing, and deciding of schoole matters. This I say, because you charge me with an vnknowne authoritie: which for aught I know yet, may as wel be either vnsufficient, or faultie, as otherwise: and I dare more than halfe promise, (I dare not save, warrant) you shall alwayes in these kinde of controuersies, finde me nighe hande answerable in mine owne defence. Reliqua omnia, quæ de hac supersunt Anglicorum versuum ratione, in aliud tempus reservabimus, ociosum magis. Youre Latine Farewell is a goodly brane yonkerly peece of work, and Goddilge yee, I am alwayes maruellously beholding vnto you, for your bountifull Titles: I hope by that time I have been resident a yeare or twoo in Italy, I shall be better qualifyed in this kind, and more able to requite your lauishe, and magnificent liberalitie that way. But to let Titles and Tittles passe, and come to the very pointe in deede, which so neare toucheth my lusty Trauavler to the quicke, and is one of the prædominant humors that raigne in our common Youths: Heus mi tu, bone proce, magne muliercularum amator, egregie Pamphile, eum and all had been well enough: and I assure aliquando tandem, qui te manet, qui mulierosos

mmes, gul vniuersam Fæministarum sectam. Respice finem. And I shal then be content to appeale to your owne learned experience, whether it be, or be not, too too true: quod dici solet à mi sæpe: à le ipso nonnunquam: ab expertis emnibus quotidie : Amare amarum : Nec deus, ut perhibent, Amor est, sed amaror, et error: et quicquid in eandem solet sententiam Empirious aggregari. Ac scite mihi quidem Agrippa Ouidianam illam, de Arte Amandi. itizendio videtur correxisse, meritoque, de Arte Meretricandi, inscripsisse. Nec verò ineptè ulius. Amatores Alchumistis comparauit, aureos, argenteosque montes, alque fontes lepide somniantibus, sed interim misere immanibus Carbonum fumis propemodum occaecatis, alque etiam suffocatis: præterquam celebratum illum Adami Paradisum, alium esse quendam pradicavit, stultorum quoque Amutorumque mirabilem Paradisum: illum verè, hunc phantasticè, finaticeque beatorum. Sed hac alias, fortassis oberius. Credite me, I will neuer linne buityng at you, til I haue rid you quite of this yonkerly, and womanly humor. And as for your speedy and hasty trauell: me thinks I dare stil wager al the Books and writings in my study, which you know, I esteeme of greater value, than al the golde and silver in my purse, or chest, that you wil not, (and yet I muste take heede, how I make my bargaine with so subtile and intricate a Sophister) that you shall not, I saye, bee gone over Sea, for al your saying, neither the next nor the nexte weeke. And then peradventure I may personally performe your Lippes can affoorde. And, thinke you I will Trinitie Hall, stillin my Gauerie. 23. Octob. 1579-leaue my Il Pellegrino so? No I trowe. In haste. My Lords Honor, the expectation of his l

friendes, his owne credite and preferment. tell me, he muste have a moste speciall care, and good regarde of employing his trausile to the best. And therfore I am studying all this fortnight, to reade him suche a l'ecture in Homers Odvsses, and Virgils Enegus, that I dare vndertake he shall not neede any further instruction, in Maister Turlers Trauayler, or Maister Zuingers Methodus Apodemica: but in his whole trausile abroade, and euer after at home, shall shewe himselfe a verie liuelye and absolute picture of Vlysses and Aineas. Wherof I have the stronger hope he muste needes proue a most capable and apt subjecte (I speake to a Logician) having the selfe same Goddesses and Graces attendant vpon his body and mind, that euermore guided them, and their actions; especially the ones Minerua, and the others Venus: that is (as one Doctor expoundeth it) the pollitique head, and wise government of the one; and the amiable behaulour, and gratious courtesie of the other: the two verve principall, and moste singular Companions, of a right Trauailer: and as perhaps one of oure subtile Loricians woulde save, the two inseparable, and indivisible accidents of the foresaide Subjects. De quibus ipsis, cælerisque omnibus artificis Apodemici instrumentis: inprimisque de Homerica illa, divinaque herba usido H un nudlover hoi Mercurius. aduer-Vlissem suum sus Cyrcca el pocula, el carmina, el venena, morbosque omnes præmuniuil: el coram, vtl spero, breui : et longe, vii soleo, copiosius : et request, and bestowe the sweetest Farewell, fortasse etiam, aliquanth, quam soleo, cum subvpon your sweetmouthed Mastershippe, that tilius cum vero Pollitice, Pragmaticeque magis. so vinsweete a Tong, and so sowre a paire of Interim tribus eris syllabis contentus, ac valebis.

Yours, as you knows G.H.

# Certaine Latin Verses, of the frailtie and mutabilitie of all things, sauing onely Ver-

tue: made by M. Doctor Norton, for the right
Worshipfull, M. Thomas Sackford, Master of
Requestes vnto hir Maiestie.

άκρος ιχα.

Th. TEmpora furtiuo morsu laniantur amæna, S S Eensim florescunt, occubitura breui.
A Anni vere salut, Senio mox conficiendus, C Cura, labor ditant, non eademque premunt?
F Fallax, vel vigili studio Sapientia parta:
O Oh, et magnatum gloria sæpe iacet, R Res inter varias flumuus, ruimusque gradatim
D Dulcia Virtutis præmia sola manent.

## The same paraphrastically varied by M. Doctor Gouldingam, at the request of olde M. Wythipoll of Ipswiche

T. TEmpora furtiuo labuntur dulcia cursu,
S. Subsiduntque breui, que viguere diu.
Autumno capitur, quicquid nouus educat annus:
C. Curta luuentutis gaudia, Fata secant.
F. Fallax Ambitio est, atque anxia cura tenendi,
O. Obscurum decus, et nomen inane Sophi.
R. Res Fors humanas incerio turbine voiuti,
Dulcia Virtutis præmia sola manent.

# Olde Maister Wythipols owne Translation.

Vr merry dayes, by theeuish bit are pluckt, and torne away, And euery lustic growing thing, in short time doth decay. The pleasaunt Spring times ioy, how soone it groweth olde? And wealth that gotten is with care, doth noy as much, be bolde. No wisedome had with Trauaile great, is for to trust in deede, For great Mens state we see decay, and fall downe like a weede. Thus by degrees we fleete, and sinke in worldly things full fast, But Vertues sweete and due rewardes stande sure in euery blast.

# The same Paraphrastically varied by Master G. H. at M. Peter Wythipolles request, for his Father.

These pleasant dayes, and Monthes, and yeares, by stellth do passe apace, And do not things, that florish most, soone fade, and lose their grace? Iesu, how soone the Spring of yeare, and Spring of youthfull rage, Is come, and gone, and ouercome, and ouergone with age? In paine is gaine, but doth not paine as much detract from health, As it doth adde vnto our store, when most we roll in wealth? Wisedome hir selfe must haue hir doome, and grauest must to graue, And mightiest power sib to a flower: what then remaines to craue? Nowe vp. now downe, we flowe, and rowe in seas of worldly cares, Vertue alone eternall is, and shee the Laurell weares.

### L'Enuoy.

Soone said, soone writ, soone learnd: soone trimly done in prose, or verse: Beleeud of some, practized of fewe, from Cradle to their Herse.

Virtui, non thi Feci.

# M. Peter Wythipoll.

Et Virtuti, et mihi: Virtutl, ad laudem: Mihi, ad vsum.

# CRITICAL APPENDIX.

### THE FAERIE OVEENE.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY.

The first three books of F. Q. were originally published in 1500. Books IV-VI, with a second edition of Books I-III, appeared in 1596. The fragmentary Book VII appeared first in the Folio of 1609. Except for this fragment, the text here printed is based on 1506. Some printers' errors have been corrected by reference to 1500, with its valuable list of Faults Escaped, cited in these notes as F.E. The authority of 1609 has been preferred in half a dozen places. The later folios of 1611-12-13, 1617, and 1679, have no independent authority. Spenser's poetical works were subsequently edited by I. Hughes, 1715; H. J. Todd, 1805; F. J. Child, 1855; J. P. Collier, 1862; R. Morris, 1869; A. B. Grosart, 1882-4; R. E. Neil Dodge, 1008. The F. Q. was also edited separately by J. Upton, 1758, R. Church, 1758-9, and Kate M. Warren. 1807-1900. J. Jortin's Remarks on Spenser's Poems (1734) contain some good emendations.

DEDICATION. The words ' and of Virginia' and 'to live with the eternitie of her fame' were added in 1506.

#### BOOK I.

Proem iv. 5. myl mine 1590.

I. ii. 1. But] And 1590. The 'But' of 1596 marks the contrast between the Knight's 'jolly appearance and his dedicated purpose.

v. 1. an innocent] and innocent 1500: an Innocent 1600.

ix. 6. sweete bleeding sweet, bleeding 1600. But 'sweete' is probably adverbial.

ix. o. seeldom] sildom 1609 passim. See 1596 : corr. F.E. on IV. xxiii. 5 below.

xii. 5. your hardy stroke 1590, &c.: corr. F.E. The corrections of F.E. are frequently ignored by 1596.

av. 6. poisonous] poisnous 1590. Spenser was more tolerant of resolved feet by 1596.

xx. 4. vildly] vilely 1609 passim. spelling 'vild' is rare after 1600.

xxi. 5. spring ebbe 1500, &c.: corr. F.E. to auale] t'auale 1590 : corr. F.E. See noie on 1. xii. 5 above. The correction of 't'auale' was obviously made by 1596 independently.

xxii. 3. longer] lenger 1590. But cf.

1. xxvi. 8.

xxviii. 8. passed] passeth 1596, 1609. xxx. 9. sits] fits 1609. But see Glossary. xxxi. 6. you] thee 1590.

xlviii. 9. with om. 1596, 1609. 1609 made

little use of 1500.

1. 3. thought haue] thought t'haue 1609. liii. 6. since no'vntruth sith n'vntruth 1609. In the quartos 'sith' and 'since' are used indifferently: 1600 tries to confine 'sith' to the causal, 'since' to the temporal sense.

II. xi. 3, 4. anon: shield, 1590, 1596: corr. 1609. The punctuation of 1609 is more logical than that of the quartos.

xvi. 8. idely, 1500, 1506: idlely 1600. xvii. 5. cruell spies] cruelties 1500, &c.:

corr. F.E.

xxii. 5. your] thy 1500. Cf. 1. xxxi. 6 above.

xxvii. 9. so dainty] so, Dainty 1609-10 show that Spenser is quoting the proverb Quae rara, cara'.

xxix. 2. shade him] shade 1506: shadow 1609, supplying the omission by conjecture. See note on 1. xlviii. 9 above.

xxix. 3. ymounted] that mounted 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

xxxii. q. ruefull plaints] tuefull plants 1590. F.E. corrects 'tuefull', but not plants'

xl. 1, xli. 5. Thens forth] Then forth 1500,

i.I. xi. 1. To whom] Whom 1596.

xxv. 7. inquerel inquire 1506. The rhyme favours 1500.

xxxii. 9. Who told her all that fell told, 1609-taking the words to mean 'Who told The all that befell her'. We should perhaps read l 'all that her fell'.

SPENSER

xxxiv. 9. spurnd] spurd 1590.

xxxvi. 7. mourning) morning 1596.

xxxviii. 7. the that F.E., referring probably to this line. (The references in F.E. are to pages only.)

IV. xii. 2. a om. 1596. 7. Realmes] Realme 1590.

xvi. 3. hurtlen] hurlen 1600; and so at Bk. I, 1v. xl. 1, and Bk. II, v. viii. 7. 9. glitterand] glitter and 1596, 1609.

xx. 3. From For 1596, 1609.

xxiii. 5. seldome] seeldome 1590, sildom 1609. 7. dry dropsie] dire dropsie conj. Upton, after Horace s' dirus hydrops'.

xxxii. 9. fifte] first 1590, &c. : corr. F.E. xxxvii. 6. Lucifera] Lucifer' 1590. See

note on 1. xv. 6 above.

xlv. 4. Sans ioy] Sans foy 1590. 6. cause of my new ioy] cause of new joy 1590, 1596: corr. F.E.

V. i. 9. he om. 1596.

ii. This stanza is imitated in Peele's David and Bethsabe, written probably before 1590. ii. 5. hurld] hurls 1590, 1596: hurles

1609 : corr. F.E.

vii. 9. helmets hewen deepe] hewen helmets deepe 1590.

xv. 2. thirstie] thristy 1590. 3. bath] bathe 1590, 1609.

xvii. 5. can] gan 1590. For 'can' = 'did' see Glossary.

xxiii. 8. Nightes children] Nights drad children 1609, not observing that 'Nightes' is dissyllabic.

xxiv. 9. for] and 1596, 1609.

xxvi. 6. am ame 1590. Otherwise eyerhymes are common in both quartos.

xxviii. 6. cliffs] clifts 1590, &c.: corr. F.E. So at Bk. I, 1x. xxxiv. 6. But Spenser found that he needed 'clift' for the rhyme in Bk. I, viii. xxii. 5.

xli. 2. nigh] high 1596, 1609.

xlv. 4. woundes] woundez 1609, observing the dissyllable.

li. 5. that] the 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

VI. i. 5. in] it 1590, &c. : corr. F.E.

v. 5. m] it 1590, &c.: corr. F.E. v. 5. win] with 1596, 1609.

viii. 7. misshapen] mishappen 1590: mishapen 1596.

xiv. 2. doubled double 1600.

xv. 2. Or] Of 1596, 1609: If conj. Hughes. xxiii. 8. noursled] nousled 1590 passim. 1596 uses 'nousle' as = 'nuzzle'.

xxvi. 5. fierce and fell] swifte and cruell F.E. See on v. xxxviii. 6 above.

1590: cerr. F.E. 9. as a tyrans law as tyrans law 1596: as proud tyrans law 1609.

xxxix. 7. quoth he qd. she 1590.

xliv. 1. fell] full 1500.

xlvii. 8. So they to fight] So they two fight 1596, 1609.

VII. v. 9. did] do 1590. xx. 3. the] that 1590.

xxii. 9. sight om. 1590.

xxii. 8. Whose] Her 1590. This stansa is imitated in 2 Tamburlaine, iv. 4, acted some years before 1590.

xxxvii. 7. trample] amble 1590. This is clearly an author's, not a printer's, change.

xlii. 6. inquire] inquere 1590.

xliii. 4. whilest] whiles 1590. 6. runne] come 1590: ronne F.E. 9. Gehons] Gebons 1596, 1609.

xlviii. 9. haue you] haue yee 1590.

VIII. Arg. 3. the Gyant] that Gyaunt 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

i. 6. through thorough 1590.

iii. 1. the] his 1590.

x. 3. auantage] aduantage 1590.

xi. 5-9. Imitated in 2 Tamburlaine, iv. 3; see note on VII. xxxii above. 9. murmur ring] murmuring 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

xxi. 5. their] his Grosart—after Church. But 'their' may mean 'Orgoglio's and Duessa's'.

xxiv. 6. his] her 1590.

xxvii. 7. eyes] eye 1590.

xxxiii. 5. sits] fits 1596, 1609. Bul see 1. xxx. 9 above and Glossary.

xli. 7. and om. 1596.

xliv. 4. delight] dislike conj. fortin: others despight. As 'delight' is repeated from l. 3, the form of the error is no guide.

IX. ix. 3. the that 1590. 5. Timons Cleons 1590: corr. F.E.

xi. 4. vnawares] vnwares 1506.

xii. q. on] at 1590, 1596; corr. F.E. and 1609.

xv. 8. vow] vowd 1590, perhaps rightly.

xviii. 9. as] the 1596, 1609. xxiv. 4. aspide] espide 1609.

xxxi. 5. mealt'th] mealt'h z 590, &c.: corr.

ed. after Bk. II, 11. iv. 5.

xxxii. 7. nor glee] nor fee conj. Church; cf. Bk. I, x. xliii. 6. Against this cf. Bk. VI,

v. xxxix. 3; VII. xlix. 9. xxxiii. 3. ypight] yplight 1590.

xxxiv. 6. cliffs] clifts 1590, &c.: corr.

lii. 1. saw] heard 1590.

relieu'd 1609.

3. reliu'd]

liii. 1. feeble] seely 1596: silly 1609. Comparison with VII. vi. 5, xi. 8 of this Book, where 'feeble' and 'fraile' occur together in lines which this was meant to recall, make it certain that 'seely' (= seelie) is a misprint for 'feeble'.

X. vii. 8. simple true. Cf. note on 1. ix. 6 above.

gan] can 1609. xv. 4. well] for 1590. See note on v. xvii. 5 above.

xvi. 8. be] her 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

xx. 5. om. 1590, 1596: add. 1609. is one of the places which lead us to assign some

independent authority to 1609.

xxvii. 6. His bodie in salt water smarting sorel His blamefull body in salt water sore 1500. Another clear case of author's correction, designed to remove ambiguity.

xxxiv. 8. worldes] worlds 1609. See on

v. xxiii. 8 and xlv. 4 above. xxxvi. 6. Their 1609: There 1590, 1596. o. call in commers-by call in-commers by 1500, 1506.

xxxix. 4. clothes] clothez 1609. See on v. xlv. 4 above.

lii. 6. Brings Bring 1590, 1596.

lvii. 5. pretious] piteous 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

lix. 2. frame] fame 1590, &c. : corr. F.E. lxii. 4. (Quoth he) as wretched, and liu'd in like paine] As wretched men, and liued in like 8. and battailes none are to paine 1500. be fought] and bitter battailes all are fought Q. As for loose loues are vaine] As 1590. for loose loues they are vaine 1590. But of. Bk. V, 111. xxii. 5 and 6.

lxiv. 7. doen nominate] doen then nominate 1506.

lxv. 3. place] face 1590.

XI. iii. This stansa appears for the first

time in 1596. v. 1. his] this 1590, &c. : corr. F.E. vi. 9. scared] feared 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

viii. 7. vast] vaste 1590 : wast 1596. xi. 5. asl all 1590, &c. : corr. F.E.

xxvi. 6. swinged] singed 1609 needlessly: the form 'swinge' is still common in dialect.

xxvii. 2. vaunt] daunt 1596, 1609. xxx. 5. one] it 1590, &c. : corr. F.E. xxxvii. 2. yelled yelded 1590, 1596. But tion better. elsewhere 'yelled' in F.Q. Cf., however,

'drownded' in the quarto of Colin Cloud 762. The true reading may be 'yelped'.

xxxix. 4, 7. sting and string transposed in

1596, 1609.

xli. 4. Nor 1609: For 1590, 1506. Spenser may have written 'For'. Negatives are similarly confused in Bk. V, VI. xxvi. 5 and 6.

li. 7, 8. The early editions have a semi-colon at 'spred' and a comma at 'darke', making 1. 8 refer to the lark.

XII. iii. 5. fond] found 1596, 1609. vii. 3. sungl song 1500-an eye-rhyme but

ambiguous. xi. 5. talants] talents 1590, &c.: corr. F.E. xvi. 1. pleasure] pleasures 1596, 1609.

xvii. 1. that] the 1596, 1609. no'te 1600, 1611.

xxi. 7. To tell that dawning day is drawing neare] To tell the dawning day is dawning neare 1596, 1609.

xxvii. 7. of and 1596, 1609. xxviii. 7. her] his 1596, 1609. Cf. xl. 9

below.

xxxviii. 3. frankencense 1596, 1609possibly a deliberate achaism. 1590 has frankincense. Cf. note on Bk. II, vii. iv. 8. xl. 9. His] Her 1596, 1609.

#### BOOK II.

beames Proem v. 4. else] elles 1590. beamez 1609.

I. i. 7. caytiues hands] caytiue hands 1600: 'caytiue bands' has been conjectured. ii. 7. natiue] natiues 1596, 1609.

iii. g. be] he 1609.

iv. 6, 7. These lines are transposed in 1596. 1609.

viii. 5. with fairel with a faire 1596.

xvi. I. liefe] life 1590.

xviii. 6. did he] he did 1590. xxxi. 2. handling | handling 1596.

xxxiii. 8. thrise] these 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

xxxix. 4. dolour] labour 1596, 1609. xl. 4. gore] gold 1596, 1609.

xliv. 6. reuenging auenging 1590.

xlix. 9. Mordant] Mortdant 1590, 1596; but cf. Argument.

lviii. 4. fry] frieze or frize conj. Church. 'Frize' (=freeze) gives the contrast destred the spelling 'fryze' would explain the corrup-

lix. 1. equall] euill 1596, 1609.

II. iv. 3. in lieu of in loue of conj. Church. vii. 7. chace The rhyme requires 'pray', and so Collier suggested. Spenser has this error—the substitution for a rhyming word of a metrically equivalent synonym which does not rhyme—in nine places in F.O.

ix. 1. whose] those 1596, 1609.

xxi. 1. cald] calth 1596, 1609—owing to the following ' forth'.

xxii. 2. boldly] bloudy 1596: boldy

1609.

xxviii. 2. both their champions] both her champions 1500; both their champion 1500.

1609.

xxix. 2. The quartos omit the comma after 'Erinnys', and insert it after 'harts'.

xxx. 1. there] their 1500, 1596.

xxxiv. 9. thought their] though ther 1590:

xxxvii. 1. Fast] First 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

xl. 5. peaceably] peaceable 1596, 1609. xlii. 6. make] The rhyme requires 'hold'. See on 11. vii. 7 above.

xliv. 4. introld] entrold 1590: enrold conj. edd.

III. iv. 5. A pleasing vaine of glory vaine did find] A pleasing vaine of glory he did find 1590. The reading of 1596 gives a play on words that is quite Spenserian.

ix. 7. From] For 1596.

xviii. 6. deuice] aduise 1596, 1609.

xx. 5. As ghastly bug their haire on end does reare] As ghastly bug does vnto them affeare 1590: 'vnto' corr. to 'greatly' F.E. Spenser may have originally written 'appeare'.

xxv. 1. Vpon her eyelids many Graces sate]. In his Glosse on June in S.C., E.K. quotes from Spenser's Pageaunts the line 'An hundred Graces on her eyeledde satte'.

xxviii. 7. play] The rhyme require 'sport'. See on 11. vii. 7 above.

xxxviii. 4. haue I] I haue 1590—transposed in 1596 for euphony.

xlv. 4. one foot] on foot 1590, 1596.

xlvi. 9. erne] yerne 1609. In the sixteenth century these two forms are both used to mean either 'long' or 'grieve'.

IV. Arg. 3. Phedon] Phaon 1590. x. 4. He is not] He is no 1590, &c. : corr. F.E.

xvii. 6. one] wretch 1590. 8. occasion] her guilful trech 1590. 9. light vpon]

wandring ketch 1590. These corrections all hang together, and are clearly Spenser's.

xxxv. This stansa was quoted by Abraham Fraunce in his Arcadian Rhetorike two years before F.Q. was published. Fraunce quotes it as from the Fairie Queene, 2 books, cant. 4', showing that by 1588 this part of the poem had been arranged as we have it.

xxxvi. 2. into] vnto 1596.

xli. 2. Pyrrochles 1590, &c., passim: corr. F.E.

xlv. 5. thus to fight] that did fight 2590.

V. Arg. And Furors chayne unives

Who him sore wounds, whiles Atin to Gymochles for ayd flyes. 1590.

v. 9. do not much me faile] doe me not much fayl 1590.

viii. 7. hurtle] hurle 1596 : hurlen 1609.

xii. 8, 9. The meaning seems to be 'Nor judge of thy might by fortune's unjust judgement, that hath (curse on her spite) thus laid me low: . For 'maugre' see Glossary.

xix. 4. shee] hee 1590, 1596. 7. do] gatte 1590—rejected as a provincialism perhaps: not elsewhere in F.Q., though used in S.C.

xxvii. 3. her] his 1596.

xxix. 5. pricking] prickling 1590.

xxxi. 5. Gaynd in Nemea] In Netmus gayned 1590: Nemus F.E.

xxxiv. 8. So, them deceives] So, he them deceives 1590, 1596.

VI. i. 7. restraine] abstaine 2590. 8. their] her 2590.

iii. 4. that nigh her breth was gone] as merry as Pope Ione 1590.
6. might to her to her might 1590.

v. 6. cut away] ? cut a way ?

xii. 9. her sweet smels throw] throwe her sweete smels 1590.

xiv. 9. a loud lay] a loue lay 1590. xviii. 7. griesly] griesy 1590: f.v.xxix.

5 above. xxvii. 9. there] their 1590, 1596.

xxix. 2. importune] importance 1596: important 1609.

xxxviii. 8. There by Thereby 1590, 1596. xliii. 7. lent this cursed light lent but this his cursed light 1590.

xlv. 3. Burning But 1596.

VII. iv. 4. yet] it 1596, 1609. 8. vpsi-8. occasion] downe] vpside downe 1590. This looks like 9. light vpon a deliberate return to an archaic form. vii. 3. heapes! hils 1500.

xii. 9. as] in 1590. xviii. 2. that om. 1596.

xxi. 5. infernall internall 1500

xxiv. 7. ought] nought 1590.

xxxvii. 1. as an 1590. 5. came cam 1590. zl. 5. that the 1590, &c.: corr. F.E.

7. But And 1590. golden yron 1590.

xli. 3. his] to 1596, 1609. lii. 6. With which Which with 1590, 1596:

Which-with 1600.

lx. 4. intemperate] more temperate 1590.

VIII. iii. 8. Come hither, come hither] Come hither, hither 1600.

xxv. 1. his cruell] same 1590, 1596: corr. F.E.: Which those same foes that doen awaite hereby 1609.

xxix. 7. vpreare] The rhyme requires 'vpheaue'. See on II. vii. 7 above.

xl. 4. so wisely as it ought] so well, as he it ought 1590, i.e. so well as he who owned it. Perhaps a correction of the printer, who misunderstood 'ought'.

xliv. 8. but bit no more] but bit not thore 1590- 'thore' being probably = 'there', on the analogy of 'tho'='then'

xlviii. 8. Prince Arthurl Sir Guyon 1500,

IX. vii. 5. Now hath] Seuen times 1590. 6. Walkt round] Hath walkte 1590. CJ. Bk. I, 1x. xv.

ix. 1. weete] wote 1590, &c.

xv. 3. Capitaine] Captaine 1590, 1596.

xvi. 8. with om. 1596. xxi. 1. them] him 1596.

xxxvii. 8. you loue] your loue 1590, 1596. xxxviii. 2. mood] word 1590 &c.: corr.

Drayton teste Collier. (Collier professed to have a copy of the IOII folio that had belonged to Drayton and had corrections in his hand.) 9. twelue moneths] three years 1590. See on IX. vii. 5 above.

xlix. 4. reason] season Drayton teste Collier.

X. vi. 6. safeties sake] safety 1590-a risyllable.

vii. 7. liued then] liueden 1590.

xv. 9. munifience] munificence 1590, 1609. One of the few places in which 1590 and 1609 combine against 1596.

xix. 5. in that impatient stoure] vpon the

present floure 1500.

xxiv. 8. Scuith guiridh om. 1590. 9. Exsant copies of 1500 in Bodl, and B.M. have only 'But'; but F.E. 'South South' shows of 'that' in the next line.

that some copies of 1590 had 'Seuith', and Church, Upton, and Todd had copies with the line in full.

xxxiv. 6. Then! Till 1506: When 1600.

xxxvii. 3. with vp 1596.

xxxviii. 2. of] or 1596, 1609.

xliii. 1. Sisillus Sifillus 1590, &c. correct spelling is given by Geoffrey of Monmouth.

xlix. 8. defrayd] did defray 1506, 1600-

mistaking the rhyme-scheme.

li. 7. Both in his armes, and crounel Both in armes, and crowne 1596: In armes, and eke in croune 1609.

lxv. q. enforst | haue forst 1500.

lxvii. 2. Ambrosel Ambrise 1506, 1600: Ambrose' in Geoffrey of Monmouth.

XI. ix. o. they that Bulwarke sorely rent] they against that Bulwarke lent 1590.

x. 2. dessignment] assignment 1590.

xi. 4. dismayd] mismayd (i.e. mismade) conj. Jortin.

xiii. 5. assayled] assayed 1500.

xxiii. 8. support] disport 1596, 1609.

xxvii. 5. Who] But 1590.

xxx. 9. suruiue] reuiue 1590 &c.: corr. F.E. xxxii. 5. vnrest] infest 1590.

XII. Arg. 1. by through 1590 passing through through passing 1590.

xiii. 9. honor] temple 1590.

xx. 8. their] the 1596, 1609.

xxi. 1. heedfull] earnest 1500.

xxiii. 9. Monoceros Monoceroses Child after lortin: but the accentuation 'immeasured' is paralleled by 'treasures' in Visions of Petrach, ii. 6.

xxxix. 8. vpstarting] vpstaring 1590.

xliii. 5. Nought feared their force] Nought feared they force conf. Church, i.e. ' they had no fear of force'. With 'their', 'feared' must be taken to mean 'frightened'.

li. 1. Thereto] Therewith 1590.

lxi. 8. tenderly | fearefully 1500. Ixxxi. 4. the same! that same 1590.

# lxxxiii. 7. spoyle] spoyld 1596, 1609.

#### BOOK III.

Proem iv. 2. Your selfe you! Thy selfe thou 1590.

I. xli. 8. lightly] highly 1590, 1596 evidently a misprint.

xlvii. 7. which] that 1590—changed because

lvi. 8. Basciomani Bascimano I 500. 'Basclomani' was perhaps coined as a substantive from 'bascio le mani'.

lx. 8. wary] weary 1596, 1609.

II. iv. 1. Guyon) should be Rederosse. viii. 5. Which I to proue! Which to proue, I I 500.

xxx. 5. in her warme bed her dight] her in her warme bed dight 1500.

xxxvi. 1. others] other 1500.

xlix. 7. a earthen Pot] an earthen Pot 1609. Spenser may have intended to pronounce 'yearthen'.

III. iv. 8. protensel pretence 1596, 1609. xxxv. 1. thy] the 1596, 1609.

xliv. 5. yeares om. 1596, 1609; shall be full supplide 1600. 6 to] vnto their 1590 -making a hexameter.

l. 9. (as earst ) om. 1590, 1596: add. 1609. liii. 3. (whom need new strength shall teach)] (need makes good schollers) teach I 500.

IV. viii. o. these thy 1500. xv. 6. speare] speares 1500, 1596. xxxiii. 4. raynes] traines 1596, 1609.

xxxix. 9. sith we no more shall meet] till we againe may meet 1590. Spenser has remembered that Cymoent is a heathen goddess. lix. 5. Dayes dearest children The children of day 1590.

V. v. 5. A] And 1596, 1609-perhaps due to ' And' in the next line.

xi. 1. ye] you 1596, 1609. xxi. 9. bloud] flood 1590.

xxxvii. 2. Had vndertaken after her, arriu'd] Had undertaken, after her arriu'd 1609. 1596 has no point. 6. follow followd 1590, perhaps rightly.

xxxix. q. his] their 1500.

xl. 4. loues sweet teene] sweet loues teene 9. liuing liking 1590. I 590.

lii. 6. admire :] admire 1590, 1596-connecting it with ' In gentle Ladies brest '.

liii. 3. Realmes Reames 1590. But cf. Bk. V, VII. xxiii. 6, 8, 9.

VI. iii. 9. was] were 1590 vi. 5. his beames] his hot beames 1609. xii. 4. beautie] beauties 1596, 1609.

xxv. 4. Which as a fountaine from her sweet lips went] From which, &c., 1590, 1596: corr. 1609. Of which conj. Church. I not observing the dissyllable.

xxvi. 4. both farre and nere om. 1500. xxviii. 6. thence] hence 1596, 1609. xxxix, 1, and to all] and all 1611-16 avoid the trisyllabic foot.

xl. 6. spydel The rhyme requires 'saw'. See on 11. vii. 7 above.

xliii. 5. heavy] heavenly 1500.

xlv. 4. And dearest loue, om. 1500, 1506 : add. 1609. See on Bk. I, x. xx. 5.

VII. ix. 3. two] to conj. Hughes. xiii. 6. had gazed]. Tode and Morris imply that some copies of 1596 read 'hath'. xviii. 5. be by by 1590: be 1596, 1609. that] by 1590.

xxii. 5. Monstrous mishapt] Monstrous, mishapt 1590. See on Bk. I, I. ix. 6.

xxxiv. 2. enclose]. The rhyme requires containe'. See on II. vii. 7 above.

xliii. 7. saw, with great remorse] saw with great remorse, 1590, 1596.

xlv. 1. the om. 1506, 1609. wakel awake 1600.

xlviii. 4. And many hath to foule confusion brought Till him Chylde Thopas to confusion brought 1500.

1. 2. thrust | thurst 1596, 1609.

VIII. ii. 7. broken] golden 1590. v. 1. aduisel deuice 1500. vii. 4. a womans] to womans 1590. xxiii. 8. the same this same 1500. xxx. 3. frory] frowy 1590, 1596. But see xxxv. 2 below, and Glossary under 'frowie'.

IX. iv. 5. her] his 1609.

xiii. 9. And so defide them each] And defide them each 1596: And them defied each 1600.

xiv. 7. to kenell] in kenell 1500. xxii. 1. Minerua] Bellona 1590. xxiv. 5. most om. 1506. xxvii. 5. that] with 1590.

xlviii. 6. to sea] to the sea 1596.

X. viii. 9. To take to his new louel To take with his new loue 1500.

xiii. 8. would beare did beare 1500.

xviii. 4. Then] So 1590.

xxxi. 3. with thy rudenesse bearel that with rudenesse beare 1590. 7. vertues vertuous 1590.

xl. 3. wastefull] faithfull 1500. xivi. 6. th' Earthes] the Earthes 1609XI. ii. 3. golden] golding 1590, 1596. iv. 4. that I did euer all, that I euer 1590.

c. him did] did him 1590. ix. 6. Or hast thou, Lord, Or hast, thou

Lord. 1500, 1596.

xii. 1. singultes] singulfes 1500, 1506. There is the same misspelling in F.Q. Bk. V, VI. xiii, C.C. 168, and Tears of the Muses, 232. xix. q. deathl life conj. lortin, which gives

the sense required.

xxii. 8. Foolhardy as th' Earthes children. the which madel Foolhardy as the Earthes

children, which made 1590.

xxvi. 8. and with imperious sway and imperious sway 1596: and his imperious sway 1609.

xxvii. 7. entred] decked 1500.

xxviii. 8. Like al Like to a 1590.

8. Stag conj. xxxix. 6. each] his 1590. Jortin: Hag 1590, &c. Jortin's conjecture is demonstrated by comparison with Natalis Comes, Mythologia, iv. 10, on which Spenser drew for this Canto.

xlvii. 9. heauen bright heuens hight conj.

Church.

XII. v. 7. concent] consent 1596. ix. 3. other] others 1590, 1596.

xii. 6. wingyheeld] winged heeld 1590. xvii. 6. a firebrand she did tosse] a fierbrand she tost conj. Church.

xviii. 8. an hony-lady Beel an hony-laden

conj. Uplon.

xxi. 7. fading failing conj. Church.

xxiii. 5. hand om. 1590, 1596 : corr. F.E. xxvi. 7. with that Damozell by the Damozell 1590-which makes the Damozell Brito-

xxvii. 3. and bore all away] nothing did remayne 1590.

xxxiii. 3. her selfe] the next 1500.

xxxiv. 4. her] him 1590, 1596. Cf. next

4. Shel He xlii. 2. She] He 1590. 5. her] him 1590: 1590 : corr. F.E. corr. F.E. Spenser seems momentarily to have forgotten Britomart's sex.

#### BOOK IV.

Title 5. TELAMOND] Triamond in 11. xxxi. 8,

Proem v. s. thereof whereof 1609.

1. xi. 6. then and 1609. xvi. 7. none] one 1609.

II. iii. 5. As] And 1600.

xxi. 7. knowen] known 1609.

xxii. 7. aduizing] avising 1609. See Glossary under 'aduize'.

III. ix. 6. n'ote] not 1596. q. of at 1600.

xviii. 2. so deadly it was ment] so deadly was it ment 1609.

xix. 5, 6. The warie fowle that spies him toward bend

His dreadfull souse, auoydes it shunning light.

The warie fowle that spies him toward bend, His dreadfull souse auoydes, it shunning light 1609.

xliii. 5. quiet agel quiet-age, suggested to Jorlin by a friend, is adopted by Morris. Not elsewhere in F.O.

1. 3. Tol Too 1506. lii. 1. feast] feasts 1600.

IV. i. 4. minds] liues 16(11)-12-13. (No genuine 1611 copy of Books IV-VI is known to the editors. Morris reports lives 1609: not so in our copies.)

ii. 3. els] als 1609. 'Els' separates, 'als' 4. Scudamour joins the two comparisons. Blandamour 1679 rightly.

viii. 2. Ferrau Ferrat 1596: Ferraugh in II. iv below.

x. 5. worse] worst 1596.

xvii. 4. maiden-headed] satyr-headed conj. Church, comparing Bk. III, VII. xxx. 6. Perhaps 'maiden-headed' = 'belonging to one of the Knights of Maidenhead'.

xix. 7. an heap] a heap 1600.

xxiv. 1. beamlike] brauelike 1596. But Upton reports 'beamlike' from one of his copies of 1596.

xlv. 1. t' auenge] t' euenge 1596.

V. iv. 4. Lemno] Lemnos 16(11)-12-13.

viii. 1. that] the 1609. ix. 8. Then The 1609.

xvi. 1. that the 1609. xxv. 5. one once 1596.

xxxi. 3. his] her 1596.

VI. xxiv. 8. his om. 1609, to avoid the trisyllable foot.

xxviii. 6. He] Her 1596: Him conj.

xliv. 4. in the morrow] on the morrow 160a.

xivi. 5. who she had left behind] whom 16(11)-12-13, but not in our copies of 1609. VII. i. 1. dart] darts 1609.

iv. 6. snatched vp from ground] snatcht vp from the ground 1609.

x. 9. ouersight] ore-sight 1609.

xii. 1. caytiue] captiue Collier, &c. But of. Bk. I, vII. xix. 3.

xxii. 1. Nor] For Collier.

xxv. 1. Which] With 1596.

xxxii. 7. oft] eft conj. Hughes, for the

xxxiii. 1. Thence forth she past] Thenceforth she past 1596.

xxxiv. 1. the sad Æmylia] the said Æmylia 1596.

xli. 6. euer] neuer 1609.

VIII. x. 4. ribbands] ribband 1609. xii. 3. him] her conj. Church.

lxiv. 1. this] his (1611)-12-13, but not our copies of 1609.

IX. Arg. 2. Parana] Æmylia conj. Church rightly.

i. 8. vertuous] vertues 1596.

iii. 3. these] this 1609.

xi. 9. him] them conj. Hughes.

xvii. 5. quest] guest 1596, 1609.

xxvi. 1. There] Their 1596: Then conj. Church.

xxx. 8. repayed] repayred 1596.

xxxvii. 2. Knight] Knights conj. Upton. xxxix. 8. a wretch and] a wretch I and 1596.

X. viii. 8. his] Upton reports 'this' from one of his quartos.

ix. 1. earne] yearne 1609 passim.

xvii. 5. adward] award 1609.

xix. 1. meanest nearest 1596.

xxiii. 2, 8. ghesse and bee are transposed in all but two of our copies.

xxvii. 1. Hylas] Hyllus 1596: Hylus

1609. But of. Bk. III, XII. vii. 9.

xxxv. 6. and hell them quight]. The meaning is either 'And hell requite them' or 'And cover them (i.e. the lands) quite'. But 'hell' =cover is not elsewhere in F.O., though 'vnhele' =uncover occurs in Bk. II, XII. XIV. 8. Hence 'mell' =confuse has been suggested. But even so there is a difficult parenthesis.

xlii. 6. eldest] elder 1609.

li. 9. girlonds) gardians conj. Church: guerdons conj. Collier.

lv. 8. warie] wearie conj. Uplon.

lvi. 4. To laugh at me] To laugh on me 1600.

XI. iv. 6. seven three occurs in two copies of 1596, and in all of 1609.

xvii. 6. times]. The rhyme requires 'age'
But see on Bk. 11, 11. vii. 7 above.

xxx. 5. none] one 1600.

xxxiv. 5. Grant] Guant 2596, 2609: corr. Child after Upton. The 'Grant' is the Granta, i.e. the Cam.

xliv. 4. deuided divided 1609 passim.

xlv. 1. louely louing 1609.

xlviii. 8. Eudore] Endore 1596, 1609:

lii. 7. but] both conj. edd., needlessly: 'floods and fountaines, though derived from

Ocean, are akin to sky and sun.

....

XII. iv. 9. disauentrous] disaduentrous 1609.

x. 4. shall] should 1609.

xiii.1, 2. Thus whilst his stony heart with

Was toucht, and mighty courage mollifide]
Thus whilst his stony heart was toucht with
tender ruth.

And mighty courage something mollifide 1609.

Spenser probably altered the text, meaning to omit 'tender'.

xxx. 4. t'adward] t'award 1609.

#### BOOK V.

Proem ii. 2. at earst] as earst 16(11)-12-13. But of. Bk.VI, III. viii. 7.

vii. 8. thirtie] thirteen conj. Child, which is

said to be astronomically correct.

xi. 2. stead] place 1596. The rhyme requires 'stead'—see on Bk. II, II. vii. 7 above. This is the only correction of this nature in 1609, and has been accepted as Spenserian. 9. Artegall Arthegal 1609 passim; and so generally in Bk. III.

II. Arg. 3. Munera] Momera 1596, 1609 2 corr. Hughes.

ii. 7. As] And 1596.

iv. 1. hee] she 1596. xi. 4. Who] Tho conj. Church: When

Morris. No correction is needed. xxxii. 4. earth] eare 1596.

xxxviii. 1. these] those 1609. xlvi. 9. way] lay 1609, to avoid the identical rhyme.

III. xi. 7, 9. the other] th' other 1596, 1600.

xl. 6. we] were 1596.

IV. i. 3. Had need haue] Had neede of z6(zz)-z2-z3.

xxii. 2. pinnoed] pinnioned 16(11)-12-13. xxvi. 1. Terpinel Turpine 1506.

xxxvi. 1. watchmen] watchman 1609. 8. their Queene her selle, halfe like a man] their Queene her selfe halfe, like a man 1596: their Queene her self, arm'd like a man 1600—perhaps rightly.

xxxvii. 1. neare] newe conj. Church. 3. so few] to feare conj. Collier. One or other correction seems needed for the rhyme: Church's

is the better.

xxxix. 3. doale] doile 1596. diuide] dauide 1596. Probably 'a' and 'i' interchanged. For 'doale' - portion see Glossarin xlviii. 3. Clarin] Clarind' 1609 passim. yesterday] yeester day 1596; but Spenser has 'yester' elsewhere.

V. xx. 8. a napron] an apron 1609. xxxviii. 8. And, though (vnlike) they should for euer last ] And, though vnlike, they should for euer last 1596. The meaning of 1609 is 'Though—which is unlikely—they should last, &c.'

, xli. 2. he] she 1609.

VI. iv. 7. from] for 1609.

v. 6, 7. For houres but dayes; for weekes, that passed were,

She told but moneths, to make them seeme more few 1506, 1600.

Church would transpose 'houres' and 'dayes',
'weekes' and 'moneths'. Spenser perhaps
means that she said 'three months' for
'twelve weeks' and then ignored the noun.

xvi. 7. That this is things compacte] thing conj. Church.

unj. Chia ti

xvii. 5. Heard] Here 1596. xxiv. 1. their] her 1600.

xxv. 9. Your nights want] your Knight's want conj. Church.

xxvi. 5. Ne lesse]. Sense requires 'Ne more', but no authority for this. Spenser probably meant at first to turn the sentence differently.

maxiii. 7. auenge] reuenge 16(11)-12-13—Morris and Grosart report 'reuenge' 1609; not so our copies.

xxxiv. 7. their] that 1609.

VII. vi. 9. her wreathed taile] his wreathed taile conj. Church—cf. stanza xv below.

maxviii. 5. bad] and 1600.

VIII. xl. 6. knowen] knowne 1596.

IX. xxvi. 4. FONT] FONS 1596, 1609. xliv. 1. appose] oppose 1609.

X. iii. 6. Armericke | Americke conj. Todd, very plausibly; otherwise 'Armericke' can only mean 'Armoric'.

vi. 4. and of her Peares] and her Peares
1600, to avoid the trisvillabic foot.

viii. 4. Idols] Idol conj. Church.

xxiv. 5. farewell open field] well fare conj. edd. needlessly: 'farewell' here = welcome.

xxvi. 3. so now ruinate] now so ruinate con;. Church.

xxxvii. 6. hard preased] had preased 1609.

XI. xxiv. 7. And Eagles wings] An Eagles

wings 1609.

xl. 6. She death shall by She death shall sure aby 16(11)-12-13, to complete the pentameter,

xli. 6. know] knew 1596, 1609: corr. Hughes.

li. 1. this] his 1609.

liv. 9. corruptfull] corrupted 16(11)-12-13; Morris and Grosart report 'corrupted' 1609; not so our copies.

lx. 2. had] haue 1609.

lxi. 7. meed]. The rhyme requires 'hyre'.

But see on Bk. II, II. vii. 7. 8. froward]
forward 1596. See Glossary.

XII. i. 9. enduren] endure 1596. xiv. 8. steale] steele 1609. But see Glossary.

xvii. 5. such] sure 1609.

#### BOOK VI.

I. viii. 7. wretched] wicked 16(11)-12-13. xxviii. 6. Ere he] Ere thou 1596. xl. 9. yearne] earne 1609.

II. iii. 2. deed and word] act and deed 1596. 3, 4. eyes ... eares] cares ... eyes corr. edd.; but there is no evidence that the error is not Spenser's own.

xxxix. 2. implements] ornaments 1609 probably an editorial improvement.

III. x. 2. Would to no bed] Would not to bed 1609.

xxi. 8. default] assault conj. Collier with much plausibility.

xxiii. 2. Serena] Crispina 1596 Bodl.—corr. at press.

xxiv. 5. in vaine om. 16(11)-12-13, to reduce the line to a pentameter.

xxviii. 6. soft footing) softing foot 1596, but that means to be out of danger. Possibly 1609: corr. 1679.

xxxv. 3. which That 1596 Bodl .- corr. at

Bodl.-corr. at press.

xliii. 4. approuel reproue 1506. 7. reproue] approue 1596.

IV. iv. 7. stroke] strokes 1609.

v. 7. He stayed not t'aduize] He stayd not to aduize 1609.

xiii. 8. Where] There 1596.

xvi. 8. hurts hurt 16(11)-12-13, for the sake of the grammar.

xxx. s. these] those 1600. xxxiii. 2. sides] side 1609.

V. Arg. 1. Matilda] Serena corr. Hughes, rightly.

xxviii. 2. liue] liues 1609.

xxxix. 3. glee] gree 1609. For 'gree' cf. Bk. V, VI. xxi. 7; for 'glee', Bk. I, 1x. xxxii. 7.

xli. 2. there] their 1596.

VI. Arg. 3. 'He' refers to Prince Arthur, but no correction is possible.

xvii. 7. Calidore | Calepine corr. Hughes,

xxxv. 6. fight] right 1596. xxxvi. 1. thy this 1609.

VII. i. 1. the] a 1609.

xxxv. 8. there] their 1609. xlix. 9. Words Swords conj. Church, plausibly.

VIII. xvii. 6. From For 1596.

xlv. 9. a loud] aloud 1609.

xlvii. 3. toyles] toyle 1609. 6. lost | tost Drayton teste Collier.

1. 4. what they ought] what shee ought 1600, taking 'ought' - owned.

IX. iv. 9. time] tine conj. Church.

vi. 5. him] them 1596. xxvi. 1. eare] care 1609.

xxviii. 6. the heavens] th' heavens 1596,

xxxvi. 8. Oenone | Benone 1596, 1609: corr. Hughes.

xlv. q. bought] sought conj. Church. xlvi. 5. which there did dwell] which there did well 1596, 1609: corr. 16(11)-12-13.

X. ii. q. in the port on the port 1596. The seeding of 1609 recalls 'in portu nauigare',

1506 preserves some lost nautical phrase.

xxiv. 7. froward) forward 1596, 1600: corr. 16(11)-12-13. Cf. Glossary on S.C. xxxvii. 9. did for her] for her did 1596 for April: ... they (the Graces) be painted naked, . . . the one having her backe toward us, and her face fromwarde.'

xxxiv. 9. to helpe her all too late] to helpe

ere all too late Drayton teste Collier

xxxvi. 6. And hewing off her head, (he) it presented] (he) om. 1596, 1609.

xliv. 3-7. ] 1609 marks a parenthesis and reads 'And ' for 'But ' in 1. 8.

XI. xi. 6. that | the 1600. xix. 4. pretended] protended conj. Collier. xxiv. 1. reliu'd] reuiv'd 1609

XII. xii. 8. loos] praise 1609-possibly Spenser's own correction, because of the preceding 'losse'; or the editor of 1609 did not recognise 'loos'.

xl. 7. learned] gentle 1609-from the next

xli. 3. clearest cleanest conj. Hughes, perhaps rightly.

#### BOOK VII.

VI. x. 1. That] Tho Hughes.

xxii. 9. hot] her Hughes.

xxxviii. 2. wealths] wealth Hughes, &c., perhaps rightly.

xliv. 4. Fanchin] called Funchin in C.C. 301. The Funschin is a tributary of the Blackwater. Here Spenser perhaps intended an elymological connexion with Faunus.

VII. ii. 3. feeble] sable 1609: Hughes.

ix. 7. Plaint of kindes Plaint of kinde Upton after Chaucer, Parlement of Foules 316. x. 4. mores] more Hughes, &c.: others explain 'mores' as - roots; see Glossary.

xvi. 3. thy] my 16(11)-12-13. lv. 7. saine] faine 16(11)-12-13.

VIII. ii. 9. Sabaoths] Sabbath's Upton and Church, distinguishing between 'Sabaoth' = hosts and 'Sabbath' - rest. But this seems to spoil the point of the stanza.

#### LETTER TO RALEIGH.

1. 16. by-accidents by accidents 1590

### THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER.

Five Quarto editions of the Shep. Cal. | appeared in the poet's lifetime-in 1579, 1581, 1586, 1591, and 1597. They are referred to below as Qq 1-5 respectively. An exhaustive collation of these editions proves conclusively that though some of the corrections may have been made at Spenser's instigation, he cannot be regarded as in any way responsible for the general form of the text after Q r. Each Q was printed from its predecessor, and the first Folio, 1611 (F), from Q 5. Each edition corrects a few errors, reproduces many, and initiates others. The present text, therefore, is printed from O I, and the following notes record departures from O I. adding a few characteristic readings from other copies to illustrate their relation with one another.

#### EPISTIE.

p. 417, l. 41. oftentimes Qq 2-5: ofentimes Q.

p. 417, A56. cleane Qq 3-5, F: cleare 0 1: clean 0 2.

p. 417, B14. not . . . seene Qq 3-5, F: no . . . seme Oq 1, 2.

p. 417, B38. though it cannot Qq 3-5, F:

though cannot Qq 1, 2. p. 418, A32. habilities: Qq = 3-5, F: habilities? Qq 1, 2.

#### GENERALL ARGUMENT.

p. 419, A12. more Shepherds, then Goatheards Q 5, F: most shepheards, and Goteheards Qq 1-4.

p. 419, A16. invention Qq 2-5, F: inveri-

cion O 1.

p. 420, A20. Abib F: Abil Qq 1-5. p. 420, B32. Shepheard Q 2: Sepheard Q I: shepheards Qq 3-5, F.

#### JANVARY.

49. hower, Qq 2-5, F: hower. () 1.

#### FEBRUARY.

137. Wherefore I rede thee hence to remove F.

142. ouercrawed Qq 3-5, F: ouerawed Qq 1, 2; overcrawed is the northern form of overcrowed. Cf. Hamlet, v. ii. 368.

151 ponder Qq 1-3: pond Qq 4, 5, F. ever, that Spenser wrote bloosmes', for

This error of Qq 4, 5, and F led to the inclusion of 'pond' in Johnson's Dictionary as a genuine Spenserian form.

176. woundes Qq 2-4: wounds Qq 1, 5. F.

218. earth Qq 1-5: ground F.

229-30. late: For . . . disconsolate, Qq 1-3: late: Yor (stc) . . . disconsolate, Q4: late, Yore . . . disconsolate. Q 5, F.

#### MARCH.

4. nigheth F: nighest Qq 1-5. Morris suggests 'nighës'.

57. greene. Qq 3-5, F: greene, Qq 1, 2. 85. seeing, I Q 5, F: seeing I, Qq 1-4. Gloss to 23. by loue sleeping Oq I, 2: by

our sleeping Oq 3, 4: by sleeping O 5, F. Gloss to 23. pleasures, O 5. F: pleasures

Qq 1-4. Gloss to 79. wandring Qq 1-3: wingdring Q 4: winged Q 5, F. A good example of the gradual corruption of the text, and its emendation by the printer without reference to earlier

#### APRILL.

30. Forsake Og 2-5, F: For sake O 1. 64. angelick Q 1: angelike Q 2: angellike  $Qq_{3-5}$ : angel-like F.

113. not not Oq 1, 2.

135. finesse, Qq 1-4: finenesse, Q 5, F. Gloss to 50. simplye Qq 1-4: plainly Q 2, F.

Gloss to 63. Embellish) beautifye Qq 1.2: Emblemish) beautifie Q 3: Emblemish) beautified Q 4: Emblemisht) beautified Q 5: embellisht, beautified F.

Gloss to 120. Behight F: Bedight Qq 1-5.

#### MAYE.

ARG. 1. fift Q 5, F: firste Qq 1-4 7. 8. woods . . . buds Q 5, F: Wods . . . Buds Qq 1-3: Woods ... Boods Q 4.

8. bloosming Qq 1-3: blossoming Qq 4, 5,

36. swinke? Q 5, F: swinck. Qq 1-4. 54. great Q 5, F: gread Qq 1-4.

82. worldly Qq 2-5, F: wordly Q 1. 113. shepheards Oq 2-5, F: shephears

177. reason, Q 5, F: reason. Qq 1-4. 187. blossomes Oq, F; it is probable, how'bloosmes' is the form given in the Gloss upon this passage Uf. also Jan. 34. Dec. 103.

192. jollitee. Qu 1-5, F omit full stop. 214. stroke.] Qq 1-5, F omit Jull stop.

261. were. Q 5, F: were, Qq 1-4. Gloss to 75. Algrind Q 5, F: Algrim Qq

Gloss to 189. mádos.] mapós Q I: Pathos  $Qq \supseteq$ , 3, 5, F: Patdos  $O \triangleleft$ .

#### IVNE.

16. shroud F: shouder Og 1-5.

21. shipheardes Q 1.

23. Rauens F: Rauene Qq 1, 2: Rauen Oq 3-5.

38. steps: F: steps Qq 1-5.

80. Now dead he is, &c. This stanza is omitted from Q 5 and F.

Gloss to 57. is is Q I.

Gloss to 103, undermine Q 5, F: undermynde Oq 1, 2: underminde Qq 3, 4.

11. tickle O 5, F: trickle Oq 1-4. 99. the starres ()q 1-5: a starre F.

177. glitterand () 1: glitter and Og 2-5, F. gold, Qq 4, 5, F · gold. Qq 1-3.

208. melting. Qq 2-5, F: melling, Q 1.

215. gree, Qq 3-5, F: gree. Qq 1, 2.

219. ill, Qq 2-5, F: ill, Q 1.

233. Thomalins (conj., v. 340): Palinodes Qq 1-5, F.

Gloss to 8. Seneneca (sic) Q 1. lapsu  $Q_{13-5}, F$ : lapsus  $Q_{11,2}$ .

Gloss to 33. then Qq 3-5, F: and Qq 1, 2.

#### AVGVST.

16 a. PERIGOR (sic) Q 1.

84. thy F: my Qq I-5.

104. curelesse conj. Collier: carelesse Qq, F. 105. bought, Qq 2-5, F: bought. Q 1.

134. hm Q I.

148. deede. Qq 3-5, F: deede, Qq 1, 2.

154. a part Qq 3-5: apart Qq 1, 2, F.

#### SEPTEMBER.

59. hond Qq 3-5, F: hande Qq 1, 2. 139. endured Qq 3-5, F: endured Qq 1, 2.

145. yead F: yeeld Qq 1-5

153. Chrisiendome Q 1.

163. privie *Qq 4*, 5, *F*: prive *Qq 1-3*. 165. theyr Qq 2, 3: thoyr Q 1: their Uq 4, 5, F.

160. They Q 5, F: The Qq 1-4

196. away, Qq 3-5, P: awaye. Qq 1, 2. 201. thanck. Q 5, F; thanck Qq 1-4. 207 a. Hobbinull Qq 2-5: D'zgon Q I 255. can. Qq 3-5, F: can: Qq 1, 2. Gloss to 20. Thrice F: These Qq 1-5. Gloss to 96. practtises Q 1. Gloss to 151. Date omitted Og, F. Gloss to 162. Privy F: Preuely Qq. Gloss to Emblem, p. 456, B4. looking Q 1. Gloss to Emblem, p. 456, B5. poore, Qq 2-5, F: poore. Q 1

#### OCTOBER.

ARG. 1. whishe Q 1. 2 chace, () 5, F: chace: Og 1-4.

6. dead. Q 5, F: dead? Qq 1-4. 76. rybaudrye: (24 4, 5, F: rybaudrye.

()q 1-3.

79. thy Oq 3-5, F: the Oq 1, 2.

96 a. CVDDIE. ()4 3-5, F: om. Q4 1, 2.

Gloss to 27. mattes () 1.

Gloss to 27. Arabian Qq 3-5, F: Aradian ()q 1, 2. Gloss to 78. Sarcasmus Qq 3-5, F: Sacras

mus ()q 1. 2.

#### NOVEMBER.

4. misgouernaunce F: misgouernaunce, Qq 1-5.

14. taske, F: taske: Qq 1-5.

85. doth displaye. So Qq. F. Hughes corrects to hath display'd, for the sake of rime, and that was doubtless Spenser's intention.

115. colourd. So Q 1. Spenser intended the reader to dwell upon the '1', so as almost to give the word the metrical value of a trisyllable.

128-9. mourne, . . . tourne, Qq 2-5, F: morune, . . . torune. Q 1.

132. carsefull Q 1.

159. hould, Oq 4, 5, F: hould. Oq 1-3.

Gloss to 30. Castalias Og 3-5. F: Castlias Qq 1, 2.

Gloss to 83. diminutiue Qq 3-5, F: dimumtine Qq 1, 2.

Gloss to 107. Tinct Qq 3-5, F: Tuict

Gloss to 145, the signe of Qq 3-5, F: the of Qq 1, 2.

Gloss to 158. Atropos, daughters Qq 3-5, F: Atropodas, ughters Qq 1. 2.

Gloss to 158. Atropos Qq 3-5, F: Atrhops

Qq 1, 2. Gloss to 186, express Oq 2-5, F : epresse Qq 1, 2.

#### DECEMBER.

33. stroke Q 5: stroke, Qq 1-4, F. 38. Muse, F 2: Muse Qq 1-5, F.

43. derring doe (v. Gloss, p. 120, l. 1)] derring to Qq, F.

64. playe, playe. Qq 1, 2: play. Qq 3-5, F. 69. see Qq 2-5, F: se Q 1.

80. t'enrage Q 5, F: to tenrage Qq 1, 2:

tenrage Qq 3, 4. 106. before, Qq 4, 5, F: before. Qq 1-3.

113. Rolalind O 1.

114. dight? Qq 3-5, F: dight, Qq 1, 2.

Colins Embleme.] All Qq and Ff fail w give the Embleme to December. It is first found in Hughes (1715)—Vivitur ingenio: caetera mortis erunt. It is possible that Hughes found it in some copy of a O or F. but more likely that he supplied it himself.

Gloss to 17. Cabinet Qq 3-5, F: Eabinet

Oq 1, 2. Gloss to Emblem. quod Oq 3-5, F: quæ Oq 1, 2.

Gloss to Emblem. ferrum Qq 3-5, F. ferum Oq 1, 2

#### COMPLAINTS. 1591.

The text is based on the O of 1591, the only edition of Complaints published in the lifetime | xi. 12. 1 note. of Spenser. Different extant copies of this Q supply for a few passages different readings. Our text is printed from the Bodleian copy, and variants are quoted from the Huth O. At the British Museum, among the Harleian MSS, is a transcript of Complaints dating from 15.6, which supplies a few variants. These are quoted as Harl. MS. F also in places enables us to correct the text, and in places gives new readings. The more important of these are recorded below, but where F merely corrects the punctuation of O the change has not been recorded unless it seems peculiarly significant and interesting.

#### THE RVINES OF TIME.

316, 323. I sing: F: I sing. O.

333. and with Linus, Huth O: and with Linus O: with Linus, F.

363. couetize F: couertize Q.

413. give. Q, F.

414. Mausolus F: Mansolus O.

447-8. For such as now have most the orld at will, Scorn . . . their F.

451. such as first were F. 453. him Q: them F.

454. O! let not those, F.

455. Aliue nor dead, F.

551. which F: with O.

571. Was but of earth, and with her weightinesse F.

574. worlds F: words O.

### THE TEARES OF THE MVSES.

113. anew Q, F: in rew conj. Collier, u. U. 177, 233, &c.

232. singults F: singulfs Q; v. F.Q. III.

288. Ignorance cf. l. 259: ignorance Q, F.

310. wit. O. F.

399. defaced F: deface O.

486. souenaunce Harl. MS.: souerance Q, F.

566. be F: beee Q. 600. louing Q: living F.

#### VIRGILS GNAT.

122. heart] hear Q: hart F.

149. Ascræan corr. Jorlin: Astræan Q, F. 233. Shepheards F: Speheards Q.

308. creast-front tyre F: creast fronttyre Q.

340. Seest thou not, F.

387. throat F: threat Q.

406. fluttering F: flattering O.

536. subtile  $\tilde{F}$ : slye O.

575. billowes Harl. MS.: billowe Q, F.

#### MOTHER HVBBERDS TALE.

[In all F copies that I have examined M.H.T. is dated either 1611 or 1612.]

53. Gossip F: Goship O. 67. high F: up on high Q.

87. worlds Q, giving a syllabic value to the 'r': worldes F.

185. Wildly to wander thus F.

308. winges Hughes: wings Q, Ff.

453. Diriges F: Dirges Q. 626. bands Q, F.

648. at all, F, Harl. MS.: all Q.

830. kindly wise desire Q, F: kindle wise desire Drayton teste Collier.

913. will a daw trie Q: a daw will try F.

i.e. will prove himself a fool. Grosart quoted a manuscript in his possession reading one day will'cry, but the emendation is unnecessary.

1108. Conge F: Couge Q.

1224. boxe Q, F, Harl. MS. Grosart quoted a manuscript reading toxe, but the change is unnecessary. 'boxe' = 'exchequer. treasury', a 'porter's box' for gratuities.
1231. The conj. J. C. Smith: And Q, F

1289. on on, Q, F.

#### RVINES OF ROME.

glorie. 21. Mausolus F: Mansolus O. Q, F.

32. Palaces, is that Palaces is that, Q: Palaces, is that, F.

48. The old Giants Huth Q: Th'old Giants Q: The Giants old F.

56. Viminall Huth Q, F: Vimnial Q.

145-6. heate; ... fild Q, F. 210. Now to become F: To become Q.

243. ornaments] ornament Q, F.

414. stackes F: stalkes O.

435. verses F: yerses Q.

#### MVIOPOTMOS.

(Dated 1590 in Complaints, and printed separately from the rest of the volume.)

149. champion he Q: champaine o're he

106. Huth O omits Dull.

250. dispacing Q: displacing Huth Q, F.

354. Enfestred Q: Enfested Huth Q, F. 370. framde crastilie Huth Q, F: did slily

frame O.

301. thoss O.

# VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE

110. native Huth Q, F: natures Q.

#### THE VISIONS OF BELLAY.

For the 1569 version of The Visions of Bellay and The Visions of Petrarch, v. Appendix.

12. inconstancies, inconstancies. Q, F. 22. On Morris conj.: One Q, F.

golds Q, F: Afrikes gold Morris cons 38. great Lyons O: Lyons great F.

43. pillers 1569: pillowes Q, F. 113. astonied F: astoined Q.

#### THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH.

27. monent Q.

20. Then 1560: The O.F. Q omits 7 above this sonnet.

85. behold Morris: beheld O, Ff.

#### DAPHNAIDA. 1591.

Q = 1591. Q = 1596. The text printed from Q I; obvious errors of punctuation silently corrected from Q 2 and F; all other changes recorded below.

The dedicatory letter is missing in B.M. copy

13. honourable F: honoarable Q.

388. th' heavens F: th'eavens Qq. 391. till Hughes 1715: tell Qq, F. 422-3. one, ... other, Q 2: one ... other

477. starres Q I: starre Q 2, F. 487. deepe Q 1: deere Q 2, F.

540. a sceinfull F: asceinfull Qq.

# COLIN CLOVTS COME HOME AGAINE. 1595.

Published with Astrophel, &c., in 1595. Our text follows Q, but is in places emended from F. These emendations, except in slight matters of punctuation, are recorded below. Of the non-Spenserian poems some (pp. 556-60) had already appeared in a Miscellany entitled The Phoenix Nest (1593). The text found therein gives some slight variants, which are quoted below as 1593.

#### COLIN CLOVT.

 knowen F: knowne Q. 168. singults F: singulfs Q. 380. Harpalus, . . . aged] Harpalus . . .

aged, Q: Harpalus, ... aged, F. 382. Corydon F: a Corydon Q.

487. Vrania F: Vriana Q.

600. clusters F: glusters Q.

601. braunches] Collier: bunches Q, F 670. Durst F: Darest Q. 699. needs Todd: needs, Q, F 757. fare F: far Q. 801. life giuing F 2: like giuing Q, F. 884. the F: their Q.

### ASTROPHEL.

50. often F: oft Q.

80. needeth F: need Q.

116. brood] brood: Q, F.

158. day] day: Q, F.

200. deare,] deare: Q.

The Lay of Clorinda] 17. wetched Q.

35. did see F: see Q.

# THE MOVENING MVSE OF THESTYLIS.

The Mourning Muse Each line of Q is printed in F as two short lines, the second without capital letter.

your F: you Q.
 Thou F: Tho Q.
 thy Hugher 1715: their Q, Ff.
 heau'ns F: heau's Q.

129. testified F: testfied Q.
153. head'ns F: head's Q.

# AN ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PASSION FOR HIS ASTROPHILL.

2. glasse P.N. (1593) F 2: grasse Q, F. 21. Ampitheater Q, F.

29. in P.N.: is Q, F.

36. Meander, F: Meander Q, P.N. 45. what.] that, Q, P.N.: that. F.

72. night F: might Q, P.N.

97. the mount P.N, F: to the mount

109. neuer P.N., F: euer Q.

134. Astrophill P.N., F: Astrophrill Q.

181. This P.N., F: His Q.

#### AN EPITAPH, &c.

36. of Q, P.N.: off F.

Another of the same] P.N. adds excellently
written by a most worthy Gentleman. I

divides into two each line of Q.

2. age: F: age, Q, P.N.

25. parallels F: parables Q, P.N.

39. seeke P.N., F: seekes Q.

# AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION. 1595.

First published in 1595, in a small 18° volume, the text of which is reproduced in this volume. The punctuation, which is very faulty, has been corrected chiefly from F. Other emendations are recorded below.

#### AMORETTI.

11. neighbors F: neighoures 18°.

2. roundelaies F: roudelaies 18°. VII. 2. you, you  $18^{\circ}$ , F. VIII. 5. the F: printed \$ 18°. X. 11. pride,] pride F, 18°. XI. 8. vnpitteid 18°. XIII. 6. borne, F: borne:  $18^{\circ}$ . XVII. 7. workmanship F: wormanship 13°. XIX. 4. crouned, 18°, F. XXI. 6. loue F: loues 18°. impure, 18°, F. XXIII. 4. unreaue,  $18^{\circ}$ , F. XXVIII. 2. giues F: guies 18°. XXIX. 4. forlorne, 188, F. XXXII. 9. fit: 18°, F. **XXXIII.** 9. wit.] wit:  $18^{\circ}$ : wit ? F.

XXXVIII. 8. will, 18°, F. XLV. 6. eye: 18°, F. XLVIII. 10. the F: th'  $18^{\circ}$ . L. 2. griese, F: greise: 18°. LIII. 1-2. hyde ... beasts, ... fray,] hyde ... beasts ... fray : 18° : hvde ... beasts . . . fray : F. 6. semblant 18°: semblance F. 10. ornament:  $18^{\circ}$ , F. LVI. 5. sure 18°, F. LVIII. 3. supposeth, 18°, F. 7. prayd, 18°, F. LIX. 4. start, 18°, F. LX. 4. spheare. F: spheare 182. LXII. 4. ensew, 18°, F. LXIII. 9, 11. atchyue, . . . depriue, 186 LXIIII. 8. spred, 18°, F. 12. lessemynes, 18°, F. LXV. 1. vaine 18°, F. LXVIII. 3. hell, F: hell 18°. 4. away, 18°, F. 6. thou F: thou 18.

LXXI. q. aboue, about, 18°, F.

LXXIII. 2. tye,] tye: 18°. F.

LXXV. 2. away F: a way  $18^{\circ}$ .

LXXVII. 11. paradicel paradice: 18°: Paradyse: F.

LXXXVIII. 9. the Idæa F: th'Idæa  $18^{\circ}$ .

LXXXIX. 3. vow F J: vew  $18^{\circ}$ , F.

#### EPITHALAMION

61. take, lake. 18', F.

67. deere] dore 18°. F.

218. play) play; 18°, F.
239. band ?] band, 18°; band. F.

290. nightes dread | nights dread 18°: nights sad dread F. Cf. F.Q. I. v. 23 note.

341. Poukel l'onke 18°, F.

356. poure F: ponre 18°.

185. thy F: they 18°.

#### FOURE HYMNES. 1596.

First published in 1596 ((1). The text; follows Q with some emendations of punctuation from F.

AN HYMNE OF LOVE.

81. hated F: hate O.

AN HYMNE IN HONOVR OF BEAVTIE.

14. soule F 3 (1679): foule Q, F. 47. clotheth Q: closeth F.

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

214. mercie, miserable crew,] mercie miserable crew, (): mercy (miserable crew) F.

215. feet & syde (): feet, through side F.

266. to thee Q: for thee F.

### AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAVTIE.

50. eyel eye, O. F.

121. Suns Lright Q Sun-bright F.

165. And dampish The dark & dampish O: The darke damp F.

170. more bright, F: O omits.

270. to paine. to paine, (): a paine. F.

294. on F: no Q.

298. the love O: the true love F.

# PROTHALAMION.

First published in 1596 (Q). The text follows Q, with some emendations of punctuation from F.

102. your F: you O.

## MISCELLANEOUS SONNETS.

which they originally appeared.

1. From Foure Letters, and Certaine Sonnets: Especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties, by him abused, &c. London. Imprinted by John Wolfe, 410, 1592.

II. From Nennio, Or a Treatise of Nobility, &c. Written in Italian by that famous Doctor and worthy Knight, Sir John Baptista Nenna of Bari. Done into English by William Jones, Gent., Q, 1595.

III. From Historie of George Castriot, sur-

Printed from copies of the volumes in named Scanderbeg, King of Albanie and Containing his famous actes, &c. Newly translated out of French into English by Z. 1. Gentleman. Imprinted for W. Ponsonby, 1596, F.

IV. From The Commonwealth and Government of Venice. Written by the Cardinal Gasper Contareno, and translated out of the Italian into English by Lewis Lewkenor, Esquire. London. Imprinted by Windet for Edmund Mattes, &c., 1500.

III. 1. vaunt] vaunt, 1596.

# GLOSSARY.

The Faerie Queene is referred to by book, canto, and stanza, thus: 111, iv. 41. Cross-references are not as a rule given to variant spellings showing the following interchanges of letters: i, y; e, ee, ea; o, oa, oo; u, w; s, z; c, s.

a, in: a Gods name p. 418, S. C. Sept. 100, Hubberd 111, Three Lett. pp. 611, 626, 629, Two Lett. p. 639. aband, to abandon, it. x. 65. abase, to lower, 11. i. 26, 1v. vi. 3, vi. vi. 31, viii. 5. abashed, pa. part. astonished, 1. xii. 29; discomfited, 11, iv. 8. abashment, fear, astonishment, III. viii. 16, 34. abate, to diminish, decrease, tr., 1, iii. 7, 11, ii. 19, v. ix. 35; to depress, Hubberd 256. aboare, refl. to comport oneself, v. xii. 19, VI. IX. 45. abet, sb. instigation, abetment, IV. in. 11. abet, vb. to support, uphold, 1, x, 64, 1v, 11i, 6, VI. V. 22. abide, to attend, 1. v. 17; to await, remain, rest. stop, III. v. 11, v. viii. 5, Two Lett. p. 635; pret. (1) abid, III. Iv. 32, (2) abode, III. XII. 37; to abide by, accept, v. i. 25; to endure, suffer, 11. i. 20, Thest. 154. abie, see aby. ablect, to cast down, throw down (with idea of degradation), III. xi. 13, v. ix. 9. abode, sb. delay, III. viii. 19; stay, II. i. I. abolish, to annul, destroy, is. iv. 45. abord, aboord, alongside, 111. x. 6; abroad, adrift, astray, Hubberd 324, R. R. 185; abroad, across, Gnat 46. abouts, about, 1. ix. 36. aboue, upstairs, IV. xii. 20. abray, for abrayd (see next), to awake (inir.), 1v. vi. 36. abrade, abrayd, pret. abrayd, to awake, arouse, startle, 111. i. 61, x. 50, xi. 8, 1v. iv. 22. abridge, to cut off, cut short, Daphn. 445. abridgement, cutting short, III. viii. 2. abuse, sb. injury, wrong, 11. v. 21. abuse, vb. to deceive, 1. i. 46, 11. i. Arg. 19, Muiop. 277; to ill-treat, misuse, vt. i. 22. abusion, deception, II. xi. II, IV. i. 7, V. xii. 40, Hubberd 1363; disgrace, discredit, Hubberd 220.

vii. 3, x. 3, vii. vi. 24.

aby , for abide (q.v.), abide by, submit to VL ii. 10. abysse, gulf, interior, Worlds Vanitie 66. acoident, attribute, Two Lett. p. 630. sooloy, to clog, choke; to encumber, render heavy, 11. vii. 15, S. C. Feb. 135; socloid, pa, part., Elegie 2. account, account, vi. viii. 21, p. 419, Hubberd 307, S. C. Oct. Atg. 7. accompted, pa. part. accounted, considered, 1. x. 6. accord, sb. consent, agreement, 11, iv. 21, ix. 2. accord, vb. to agree, S. C. Feb. Arg. 7; pa. part. iv. ix. 40; to reconcile, iv. v. 25. accordaunce, agreement, iii. 30, v. viii. secording, according to, 1. x. 50, xii. 15, II. iv. 26, xi. 11; accordingly, II. x. 71. accosto, accossto, to adjoin, border on, v. xi. 42; to fly near to or skim along the ground, vı. ii. 32. accoumpt, vb. to take into account, consideration, Amor. Son. 26. accourage, accourage, to encourage, ii, ii, 38, m. vini. 34. socourting, pres. part. entertaining (courteously), 11, 11, 16. accoustrement, apparel, Hubberd 672. accoy, pa. part, accoyd, accoied, to appease, soothe, IV. viii. 59; to daunt, subdue, S. C. Feb. 47. accoyl, to gather together, assemble, 11. ix. 30. accrew, to collect, combine, IV. vi. 18; to increase, v. v. 7, R. R. 207; to come as an addition or increase, S. C. p. 417, Clout 655. accusement, accusation, v. ix. 47. accustom, to be used, wont, III. i. 13. schates, provisions, II. ix. 31. soquainted, pret. became acquainted, Elegie acquit, to free, release, deliver, v. iv. 39, viii. 6; pa. part. (1) sequit, 1. vii. 52, Amor. Son. 42; (2) soquight, II. xii. 3; to perform, act, refl. VI. ii. 24. adamant, diamond (fig.), crystal, IV. xi. 31. aby, abie , to pay the penalty for, expiate, ii. iv. 40, viii. 33, Iv. vi. 8; to endure, suffer, III. adamant rocke, hard rock, 1. vii. 33. adaw, to daunt, subdue, III. vii. 13, v. ix. 35. iv. 38, R. T. 101; to endure, to remain, III.

S. C. Feb. 141; to become subdued, 1v. vi. 20;

aegide shield, the aegis or shield of Minerva.

adawed, adaw'd, pa. part. daunted, terrified,

Muiop. 321. v. v. 45, S. C. Feb. 141. mmule, to emulate, rival, Clout 72, 73. adayes, daily, S. C. March 42. serie, aerial, in the air, II, iii, 10. addeeme, to award, adjudge, v. iii. 15, vi. viii. Action, pseudonym = Drayton, Clout 444. 22. Aetn', Etna, volcano, III. ii. 32. addoom, to adjudge, vit. vii. 56. addresse, skill, dexterity, Hubberd 1202. afarra, afar, Elegie 167. afeared, affeard, ppl. adj. frightened, afraid, addresse, vb. to prepare, direct (refl.), 1. v. 6, IV. viii. 10, V. iii. 4; to direct one's course 11. iii. 45, 111. x. 52, 1v. i. 50. affamisht, ppl. adj. hungry : loue-affamisht. (refl.), 111. iv. 6, x. 40, Hubberd 657; to clothe (refl.), vi. ix. 36. addrest, pa. part. prepared, Amor. Son. 88. ready, set up, Iv. iii. 14, VI. ix. 40, S. C. Aug. affeare, to frighten, 11, iii. 20. 128, Bellay 61, Clout 562, Past. Elegie 106, affect, sb. kind feeling, affection, passion, vi. i. 45, v. 24, Past. Aeglogue 46, Amor. Son. p. 550; arrayed, clothed, equipped, armed, 6; imitation, counterfeit, Love 180. 1, ii. 11, 111, vi. 39. adioyned, pret. approached, drew near, 111. vii. affect, vb. to like, have a preference for, VI. VI. 7, x. 37. 42. affection, passion, II, IV, 34, XI, I, III, iii, I, VI. admirable, wonderful, 1. vii. 36. vi. 7. admiraunce, admiration, v. x. 30. affectionate, pa. part.: well a. = having admire, to wonder, wonder at, 11. Prol. 4, 1V. become very affectionate, well beloved, III. v. 38, vi. viii. 27. iii. 62. adnihilate, to annihilate, destroy, Two Lett. afflance, betrothal, 11. iv. 21. p. 635. affide, see affy. adore, to adorn, IV. xi. 46. adorne, adornment, III. xii. 20. affixed, fixed, set, 111. ii. II. afflicted, ppl. adj. cast down, humble, Amor. adowne, adv. down, t. vii. 24, VI. viii. 49. Son. 2. Past. Aeglogue 132, Hubberd 1186; frep. 1. afford, affoord, to bestow, give, 11. viii. 19, vii. 31. vi. i. 26; to consent, ii. vi. 19. adrad, adred(de), pa. part. frightened, 111. i. 62, IV. iii. 25, viii. 47, Gnat 304, R. R. 232; affrap, to strike, 11, i. 26, 111, ii. 6. affray, sb. fear, terror, v. x. 19. adrad, pret. was afraid, v. i. 22. affray, vb. to frighten, terrify, iii. v. 27, S. C. aduantaged, pret. benefited, Three Lett. p. June (Glosse, p. 443). 612. affray, pa. part., frightened, afraid, v. ix. 24. aduaunce, to extol, praise, 1. v. 16, S. C. Oct. affrended, pa. part. made friends, reconciled, 47, Nov. 7; to claim, 11. iv. 36; aduaunst, fa. part. moved, impelled, 11. i. 20. IV. iii. 50. affret, encounter, onslaught, 111. ix. 16, 1v. ii. aduenture, sb. enterprise, 1. iv. 6; chance, 15, in. 6, 11. accident, Iv. ii. 20, iii. 20, V. viii. 15. affright, sb. fear, fright, 11, iii. 19, x1, 16. aduenture, aduenter, vb. to attempt, venaffright, pa. part. frightened, II. v. 37. ture, v. iv. 31, Hubberd 1005, Three Lett. p. affront, to face, confront, oppose, attack, I. viii. 13, 111. iv. 7, 1v. iii. 22. aduewed, pa. part. viewed, surveyed, v. iii. affy, to betroth, espouse, vi. iii. 7; affide, -yde, pa. part. 1v. viii. 53, v. iiv. 2, vi. iii. 49; enaduise, auise, -me, to perceive, view, notice, leok at, 1. v. 40, 11. ix. 38, 59, xii, 66, 111, ix. trusted, v. v. 53. aflot, in a state of overflow or submersion, 23, xii. 10, 1v. ii. 22, iv. 25, vi. xii. 16; to Bellay 119. consider, bethink oneself, remember (often refl.), 1, i. 33, iii. 19, viii. 15, 11. Prol. 2, vi. afore, before, beforehand, in front, 1. xii. 1, 1v. vii. 7, v. v. 3, xii. 6, R. R. 258. 27, 111. i. 18, ii. 22, iii. 6, 59, IV. xii. 28, VI. afore hand, formerly, H. Love 186. xii, 12, vii, vi. 21, Hubberd 1238; to advise, afterclaps, unexpected strokes or events, 1v. viii. 58. aduisement, advice, counsel, consideration, Hubberd 332. after-send, to pursue, send after, i. v. 10. 1. iv. 12, 11. v. 13, ix. 9, p. 412, S. C. Oct. Arg. agast, aghast, pret. frightened, terrified, 1. ix. 16, Hubberd 176, Two Lett. p. 635. 21, 111. v. 3, V1. vi. 52. adward, sb. award, IV. X. 17. adward, so, to award, IV. xii. 30. age, 1v. iii. 43. See quiet age.

agent, one who acts, Three Lett. p. 621. aggrace, sb. favour, goodwill, 11, viii. 56. aggrace, agrace, vb. to favour; agrast, pret., 1. x. 18; to add grace to, 11. xii. 58. aggrate, to please, gratify, 11. v. 33, ix. 34, xii, 42, 111, vi. 50, viii. 36, v. xi, 19, vi. x. 33, Teares 406. intr. iv. ii. 23. aglet, aygulet, tag, spangle, 11, iii. 26, vi. ii. 5. agonyes, strifes, contentions, which were held to be due to Saturn's influence, 11. ix. 52. agraste, see aggrace. agree, to settle, 11. iv. 3. agreeable, in accord, similar, Three Lett. p. agreeably, similarly, vi. vii. 3. agreeue, to cause to grieve, R. T. 91, Elegie 82. agrise, agrise, to cause to shudder, horrify, 11. vi. 46, 111. ii. 24, vii. vii. 6; Impers. v. x. 28; agryz'd, rrl. adj. of horrible appearance, IV. Viii. 12. aguise, aguise, to array, deck, equip, fashion, 11. i. 21, 31, vi. 7, 111. ii. 18, v. m. 4, Hubberd 656. a hungered, hungry, Three Lett. p. 618. aime, to guess, conjecture, H. Beautie 33. Alabaster, pseudonym, Clout 400. alablaster, alabaster, 111. ii. 42, VI. viii. 42, Bellay 45. alaid, fa. fart. allayed, Dafhn. 173. Albanese-wyse, after the manner of the Albanese (Albanians?), 111, xii. 10, albe, albee, although, i. x. 44, S. C. Jan. 67. Apr. 99; in spite of, v. vin. 3, S. C. May 265. Alcon, rseudonym, Clout 394. Alcyon, pseudonym, Clout 384. alegge, allegge, alleviate, assuage, iii ii. 15, S. C. March 5. aleggeaunce, alleviation, 111. v. 42. alew = halloo; lamentation, v. vi. 13. algate, algates, entirely, altogether, always, 11. i. 2, 111. iv. 26, 1v. vi. 13, 44; by any means, Hubberd 1025; at all, in any way, 111. viii. 9; nevertheless, v. viii. E, S. C. Nov. 21. Algrin, pseudonym, S. C. July 213. alienate, pa. part. alienated, withdrawn, S. C. Apr. Arg. 9. all, though, although, 11. xii. 57, 111. i. 21, vi. 47, vii. 9, 40, S. C. June 72; all were it = although it were, S. C. May 58. all and some, entirely, altogether, 111. xii. 30. all as, as if, S. C. Feb. 4. all for, just because, S. C. Sept. 109, 111, 114. Alla Turchesca, in the Turkish fashion, Hubberd 677.

almner, almoner, 1. z. 38. almóst, v. v. 10. alone, only, IV. v. 25. along, without interruption, throughout, III. iv. 3. alow, to, to praise, p. 409. alow, adv. below, vi. viii. 13. Al Portugese, in the Portuguese fashion, Hubberd 212. als, alls, also, 11. i. 7, 1v. iv. 2, xi. 31, vi. xii. 11, p. 410, S. C. March 40; both (als . . . . and), S. C. July 8. alsoone, as soon, S. C. July 101. altogether, without exception, S. C. July, P. 447. alway, always, v. ix. 24, Clout 888. amain, amayne, at once, hastily, 1, vi. 41; with force, violently, 111. xi. 41, 1v. iii. 47, v. 38, vı. vi. 27, viii. 27. amarous, lovely, 11. xii. 64. Amaryllis, a shepnerdess, Clout 435, 540. amate 1, to dismay, daunt, cast down, t. i. §1, 111. iv. 27, vii. 35, xi. 21, vii. vi. 19. amated, pa. part. dismayed, overwhelmed, 11. ii. g, v. xi. 64. amate2, to keep company with, II. ix. 34. amase, amazement, 111. vii. 7, 1v. ii. 17, v. vii. 25, Amor. Son. 16, Epith. 181. ambássage, embassy, Hubberd 472. ambushment, ambush, iv. x. 30, Gnat 532. amearst, pa. part. punished, amerced, Amor. Son. 79. amonago, to domesticate, control, 11. iv. 11. amenance, amenaunce, bearing, conduct, behaviour, 11. viii. 17, 1x. 5, 111. i. 41, 1v. iii. 5, Hubberd 781. amend, to retrieve, restore, m. iii. 23. amendment, amends, 11. i. 20. ámiáble, IV. x. 31, 56. amis1, hood, cape (orig. an article of costume of the religious orders, made of, or lined with, grey fur), 1. iv. 18. amis2, misdeed, fault, 11. i. 19. amisse, wrongly, in mistake, Daphn. 234. amounted, pret. mounted, ascended, i. is. 54. amoue, ammoue, to move, stir, cause emotion, 1. iv. 45, ix. 18, 111, ix. 24; to touch, 111. xi. 13; to arouse (from sleep, &cc.), Daphn. 545 Amyntas, pseudonym, Clout 434. and, if, Three Lett. p. 632. anduile, anduyle, anvil, 1. xi. 42, 1v. iv. 23, Amor. Son. 32. ángelick, angelic, Astrophel, p. 550 l. 76. annexe, to add, IV. viii. 35-

24. ánticke, sb. antique, relic; ancient or strange figures or designs, 11. iii. 27, vii. 4. 111. xi. 51. anticke, antique, adi, former, ancient, olden. R. R. 232, 266, Amor. Son. 69. apace, copiously, IV, xi, II; fast, V. viii 5. apay, appay, pa. part. apaid, apayd, to please, satisfy, 11, xii, 28, 1v. ix. 40, S. C. Aug. 6. Daphn. 70; to repay, requite, v. v. 33; ill apaid = ill requited, 11. ix. 37, v. xi. 64. appall, to check, quell, weaken, II. ii. 32, iii. 44, 111. i. 46; to fail, falter, 1v. vi. 26. apparaunce, appearance, III. i. 52. apparition, appearance, semblance, Hubberd 1200. appeach, to accuse, be an accusation to, 11. viii. 44, xi. 40, v. v. 37, ix. 47. appeale, appele: praiers to a. = to say prayers, 111. ii. 48; to remind, v. 1x. 39. appease, to check, cease, 1. iii. 29. appellation, appeal, vii. vi. 35. apply, pa. part. applide, applyde, to employ, use, 1. i. 38; to ply, follow, 1. x. 46; to steer, direct, 11. v. 10 (refl.), vi. 5, vii. I, v. iv. 21, xi. 6; to administer, 11. xii. 32; to prepare, make ready, Muiop. 84. appose, to examine, question, v. ix. 44. approuance, approval, 11. xii. 76, Epith. 144. approue, approuen, to prove, demonstrate, test, 1. vi. 26, ix. 37, 111. i. 27, 1v. x. 1, v. x. 5. vi. viii. 14, Elegie 152; to commend, approve. III. i. 26. approved ppl. adj. tested, ii. v. 8. arboret, small tree, shrub, II. vi. 12. arck, arke, box, chest, Iv. iv. 15; arch, R.R. 80, 368, Bellay 46, Misc. Sonn. iii, Epigrams p. 607. aread, areed, pa. part. ared, to c unsel, advise, teach, 1. Prol. 1; to tell, make known, proclaim, describe, show, L viii. 31, 33, ix. 23, 28, x. 17, n. iii. 14, m. iv. 59, v. xii. 9, vn. vi. 46, Love 11, Cloud 15; to divine, guess, discover, detect, understand, II. i. 7, IV. V. 15, V. iii. 35, xii. 9, vi. vii. 10; to decide, adjudge, vii. vii. Arg.; to take, assume, vi. ix. 33. areare, arere, back, backward, be! ind, behindhand, 11, xi, 36, 111, vii. 24, x. 23, vi. iv. 5, Gnat 468. aret, see arrot.

43, ix. 35, R. T. 305, 322, Petrarch 82,

Daphn. 514, Amor. Son. 62.

mediately, v. xi. 37.

arew, in a row, v. xii. 20; in order, consecuannoy, anoy, grief, annoyance, 1. vi. 17, 11. ii. tively, Thest, 186. argument, theme, subject, III. ix. I; proof. anon, anone, again, v. viii. q; at once, imtoken, manifestation, vi. vii. 1. aright, rightly, v1. vii. 31; direct, Epitaph (i) 13. answer, aunawere, to make a responsive a rights, aright, rightly, v. x. 4. sound, re-echo, 11. xii. 33; to repeat (correarise, to rise, Hubberd 419, 426, spondingly), Iv. v. 33; to return, requite, v. i. arming: a. sword = sword forming part of arms or armour, 11. vi. 47. armorie, armour, 1. i. 27, 111. iii. 59. arras, tapestry, 1. iv. 6, 111. xi. 30. arraught, pret. of arreach, to seize, II. x. 34. array, aray, to afflict, v. ii. 25, vi. ii. 42. arreare, to raise, vi. viii. 23. arret, aret, to entrust, deliver, consign, II. vin. 8, xi. 7, 111. viii. 7, 1v. v. 21. 88, as if, as though, 1. viii. 23 l. Q. xi. 21 l. 4. 11. ix. 11, 111. vii, 36, S. C. Dec. 110, as that, in such a manner as .... 1. i. 30. as then, till then, v. iv. 36. ascértaine, Daphn. 504. askaunce, sideways (with idea of disfavour), 11. vii. 7, 111. i. 41, S. C. March 21. askew, askewe, sidelong (cf. askaunce), asquint, angrily, 111. x. 29, v. xii. 29, S. C. Mar. Glosse, Amor. Son. 7. aslake, to assuage, appease, 1. iii. 36, Amor. Son. 44, Beautie 4. aslombering, pres. part, slumbering, 11, xii. 72. aslope, aslant (fig.), III. iv. 52. aspéot, II. xii. 53, III. vi. 12, vii. 22, xii. 7, 14, iv. x. 30. aspire, pa. part. aspyred, to inspire, IV. x. 26; to desire, aim at, v. 1x. 41; to ascend, rise up, R. T. 408. assaile, to attack, 1. vii. 6. assay, sb. value, quality, 1, ii, 13, 111, iv. 18, v. viii. 37; tribulation, affliction, i. vii. 27, Petrarch 25; trial, attempt, assault, attack, 11. iii. 12, 15, v. iv. 23, v. 52, Beautie 88; to all assayes = at every juncture, on every occasion, v. ix. 30. assay, vb., pa. part. assaid, to try, test, touch, I. iv. 8, viii. 2, II. iii. 4, VI. ix. 33; to assail, assault, afflict, 1. ii. 24, vi. 11, 1v. ix. 30, Gnat 491; to affect, v. xi. 64, S. C. Aug. 5. assemblaunce, assembly, v. iv. 21. assieged, besieged, II. xi. 15. assignment, design, 11. xi. 10 assize, measure, Bellay 16. assot, to befool, besot, bewilder, beguile, II. x. 8. pa. part. assott, S. C. Mar. 25; assotted 11. viii. 23. assoyle, assoile, to absolve, free, release, 1. x.

> 52, 14. v. 19, 111. viii. 32, vt. v. 37, viii. 6, R. R. 263, Daphn. 259; to dispel, 111. i. 58, 1V. V. 30.

50.

Amor. Son. 11, Proth. 100; to expiate, 1v. atweene, adv. in between, Cloud 81, Epith. vi. 25; to determine, vii. vii. 38; to discharge, acquit oneself of, Daphn. 535, Amor. Son. 80. assurance, certainty, m. iv. 9; security, v. xi. assure, to secure, keep safe (also fig.), 11. viii. 30, 111, ii. 23, v. xii, 2; to be sure, assert, 11, x. 8; to make sure of, have confidence in, Bellay 87. assynd, pret, pointed out, 1, vii, 28. astart, astert, to start up, 111, ii. 20; to happen to, befall, S. C. Nov. 187. astate, state, condition, S. C. Sept. 24. astond, astound, ppl. adj. stunned, amazed. 1. ii. 31, vii. 7, Darkn. 314. satonied, ppl. adj. = pa. part. of astony, stunned, 1. ii. 15, S. C. July 227; astonished, Bellay 113. astonish, to stun, iv. viii. 43. astonying, ppl. adj. causing amazement, confounding, v. ii. 54. astound, pret. struck, iv. vii. o. astrofell, astrophel, a bitter substance, perhaps astrophyllum stat-leaf, or Aster Tripolium: Daphn. 346, Past Elegie 196. Astrofell, pseudonym = Sir Philip Sidney, Clout atchieuen, to finish, conclude (successfully), 1. atonce, attonce, immediately, 1. iii. 5, xi. 13; together, m. ini. 40, x. 17; already, S. C. Feb. 38. atone, attone, together, 11. i. 42, 111. ix. 2, Iv. iv. 14, ix. 30, v. xi. 43, S. C. May 30, Teares 418; agreed, united, II. 1, 19; agreement, Clout 843; at once, immediately, 1v. xii. q. attach, pret., pa. part. attacht, -ed, to seize, IV. ix. 6, v. v. 18, vi. vii. 35, 36; to attack, 111. viii. 33, vi. iii. 10. attaine, to reach, manage, IV, vii. 27, VI. viii. 15. attaint, to sully, stain, i. vu. 34, iv. i. 5. attemper, to moderate, regulate, II. ii. 39, xiii. 51; to attune, bring into harmony, 11, x11. 71, S. C. Apr. 5, June 8 attempted, tempted, v. xi. 63. attendement, intention, vi. vi. 18. attent, sb. attention, 111. ix. 52, v1. ix. 37. attent, ppl. adj. attentive, intent, vr. ix. 26. attone, see atone. attonement, agreement, concord, reconciliation, v. viii, 21, attones, together, S. C. March 53. attrapt, furnished, dressed (of a horse), 1v.iv. 39. backbite, to slander, Hubberd 710. **áttribute. »**6. v. iv. 28. backstarting, starting back, v. xi. 6L

atweene, atwene, prop. between, 11. i, 58, VI. VI. 37. atwixt, adv. in between, at intervals, 111, xii. a. aumayld, pa. part. enamelled, 11, iii, 27, autenticall, authentic, IV, xii, 32, autentique, authentic, Two Lett. p. 640. author, III. vi. q. auaile, sb. value, profit, benefit, v. v. 40. S. C. Nov. 87, Hubberd 1204. auaile, auale, so, to fall, sink, descend, lower, 1, i. 21, 1v. iii. 46, S. C. Jan. 73, Feb. 8, Sept. 251; to dismount, alight, 11, 1x, 10. auaunt, to advance, 11, hi. 6; to depart, be off. VI. VI. 21. auauntago, advantage, 11. v. q. suonge, revenge, IV. i. 52, ii. 15. auengement, vengeance, 1. iv. 34, 11. iv. 6, 111. v. 24, Hubberd 1317. auentre, to push, thrust forward, 111, i. 28, 1v. ıii. Q. vi. 11. auise, auise, &c., see aduise. auisofull, attentive, observant, iv. vi. 26. auoided, pa. part. emptied, 11. ix. 32; departed, withdrawn, 111, i. 58. auouche, to prove, establish, 1. x. 64; to state. maintain, Two Lett. pp. 618, 639. auoure, avowal: to make a. - to answer for. vı. iii, 48. auow, to yow, III, iv. 10. awaite, sb. watch, ambush, IV. X. 14, V. ix Q. aware, wary, alert, v. xi, 13. awarned, pa. part, warned, 111, x. 46. awayes, away, Gnat 430. awhape, to terrify, Iv. vii. 5, v. xi. 32, Hubberd ay, ever, 11, i. 60, 111. xi. 41, S. C. Feb. 198. Byor, air, Teares 118. aygulet, see aglet. syme, sb. intention, design, 11, vi. 10. aymod, pfl. adj. intended, desired, 11. iv. 46, 111. vii. 40. ayrie, airy. v. viii. 34. Cf. ayer. В babe, doll, S. C. May 240. bable, bauble, toy, Three Lett. p. 624. bace, ib. prisoner's base, v. viii. g; to bid bace = to challenge, 111. xi. 5; bydding base = prisoner's base, S. C. Oct. 5. bace, adj. low, deep, 1. v. 31, 11. xii. 8, 111. ii

baffuld, disgraced as a perjured knight, v. iii. 37, vi. vii. Arg. 27. baid, ee bay. baile, sb. charge, custody, vii. vi. 49; pledge, security, S. C. May 131. baile, vb. to deliver, liberate, Iv. ix. 7. bait, bayt, to bait (a bull, &c.), 1. xii. 35, 11. viii. 42, VI. V. 19. baite, to feed on a journey, 1. i. 32. balductum, trashy, rubbishy, Three Lett. pp. 619, 623. bale | (for baile, q.v.), release, S. C. Aug. bale 2, injury, fatal influence, 1. i. 16, S. C. Nov. 84; sorrow, grief, 1. vii. 28, ix. 29, 11. ii. 45, vi. x. 3, 8. bale 3, fire (cf. bale 2), 1. ix. 16. balefull, harmful, injurious, deadly, 1. ii. 2, 111. iii. 8; subjectively, full of pain, painful, S. C. Jan. 27. balefulnesse, distress, sorrow, 11, xii. 83. balke, sb. (fig.), omission, exception; lit. ridge or piece of land left unploughed by accident, vi. xi. 16. balke, vb. to quibble, bandy words, m. ii. 12; to stop short, refrain, IV. x. 25; to miss, stray from, S. C. Sept. 93; to lie out of the way, Hubberd 268. ball, to bawl, howl, S. C. Sept. 190. ballance: paire of b. = balances, scales, v. i. 11, ii. 30. balleardes, billiards, Hubberd 803. ban, banne, vh. to curse, Iv. ix. 9, v. vid. 28, 39, vi. ii 21. pret. band, v. ii. 18, xi. 12; pa. part. band, H. Love 184. band, sb. bond, vi. xii. 36; pledge, vi. i. 31; captivity, bondage (also plur.), IV. xi. I, VI. band, vb.1 to assemble, 1, iv. 36. band, vb. to ban, banish, 111, ii. 41. handog, mastifl, bloodhound, S. C. Sept. 163. Gnat 540. bane, destruction, death, 11. xi. 29. banes, banns, t. xii. 36. banket, bancket, banquet, 1. xi. 2, 111, vi. 22, 1v. vii. 20. banne, sb. curse, III. vii. 39. bannerall, small streamer attached to lance of knight, vi. vii. 26. barbes, armour of war-horse, II. ii. 11, barbican, watch-tower, II. ix. 25. bard, adorned with bars, II. iii. 27. bare, pret. bore, n. vii. 5, v. Prol. 1, S. C. Dec. 124. baseiomani, kissing of the hand, in. i. +6. base 1, lower part, v. ix. 16; pedestal, Bellay 44.

base 2, bass voice, low, deep sound, 11. xii. 33; a bass singer, T. M. 28. basen, basin: b. wide = as wide as a basin. Hubberd 670. basenesse, low estate, condition, vi. iii. I. basenet, a steel headpiece, vi. i. 31. bases 1, a plaited skirt appended to the doublet, reaching from the waist to the knee, v. v. 20. bases 2: bases light = sportive races, vi. x. 8. bash, to be abashed, daunted, II. iv. 37. bastard, base, 1. vi. 24, 11. iii. 42. baste, to sew, stitch, v. v. 3. bate 1, to abate, diminish, v. ix. 35, Epigrams p. 607. bate 2, pret. bit. 11. v. 7. bate's, pa. pirt. fed (cf. baite), S. C. Sept. bate 4, to bait (cf. bait), vi. vii. 40. batt, bat, stick, club, Gnat 154, Hubberd 217. battailous, ready for battle, warlike, pugnacious, 1. v. 2, II. vii. 37, III. iii. 47, v. v. 21, VI. vii. 41. batteilant, engaged in battle, combatant, Worlds Vanitie 101. battill, to become fat, vi. viii. 38. batton, club, baton, vi. vii. 46. bauldrick, baudricke, belt, girdle, 1. vii. 29. 11. iii. 29, Proth. 174; the zodiac, viewed as a gem-studded belt, v. i. 11. bay, sb, extremity, vi, i, 12; at, unto a b. = at close quarters, III. i. 22, Iv. vi. 41. bay, ub. to bay, bark, 1. v. 30, Gnat 345. pret. baid, R. T. 215. baye, to bathe (cf. embay, 1. ix. 13, &c.), 1. vii. 3. bayes, baies, laurels (fig.), IV. i. 47, VI. Vi. 4. baylieffe errant, a sheriff's officer going about the country executing writs, &c., vi. vii. 35. bayt, sb. bait, enticement, artifice, 11. v. 9, vii 10, vi. ix. 23. bayt, vb.1 to abate, let rest (see bate 1), II. xii bayt, vb.2 to speak gently or with bated breath 111, x. 6. bayted, fa. fart. fed, Three Lett. 621. bazil, a genus of aromatic, shrubby plant (Ocymum, N. O. Labiatæ), Muiop. 188. be, bee, been, fa. part. Iv. iii. 21, S. C. Sept beades, bedes, prayers: bidding his b. = saying his prayers, I. i. 30, X. 3. bead-men, men of prayer, 1. x. 36. beadroll, list, IV. ii. 32. beame 1, gleam, glitter (fig.), 1. xii. 27, 11. vii 45; ray, glance (fig.), Clout 493, 518.

part, held out hope, 1. xi, 38, 1v. iv. 40; beame 2, spear, shaft, 111, vii, 40. bear, to take (as a companion), 1. iv. 2 (pa. part. borne); beare up = to put the helm 'up', t. beare, bere, bier, m. xm. 36, vi. ii. 48, iii. 4, R. T. 191; transf. tomb, sepulchre, in. ii. 11; transf. corpse, burden, Past. Elegie 149. bearne, barn, granary, Three Lett. p. 626. beastly, adj. animal, I. iii. 44. beastly, adv. in a disgusting manner, iit. viii. 26. beastlyhead, beasthood, beastliness; your b. = your 'beastly' self, your personality as a beast, S. C. May 265. beat, to overcome, v. i. I. beath'd, heated, w. vii. 7. beaupere, companion, iii. i. 35. beck, nod, Three Lett. p. 625. becke, beak, 11. xi. 8. become, to come to, go to, 1. x. 16, 111. iv. 1; to suit, be becoming to, 1, x, 66, 11, 11, 14, viii, 23; to happen, 111. ix. 32. bed, to order, command, 1. ix. 41; to pray (cf. bid), vi. v. 35. bedide, pret. dyed, Iv. iv. 24. bedight, to equip, vi. v. 7. bedight, pa. part. adorned, equipped, 111. vi. 43, 1v. iv. 39. Gnat 113; afflicted, 11. vi. 50; ill b. = (1) stricken, st. i. 14, S. C. Oct. 89; (2) disfigured, 11. vii. 3. beduck, to dip, dive, ii. vi. 42. beetle stock, the stock or handle of a beetle Hubberd 507. befall, to be fitting, 1, x, 14; to occur, happen to be, Gnat 72. befeld, pa. part., iv. iii. 50. beforne, adv. before, S. C. May 104. fref., May 160. begin, beginning, III, III, 21. begor'd, stained with gore, iv. xi. 3. beguile, to deprive, 11. ii. 46, Hubberd 1285; pa. part. disappointed, foiled, 1. xi. 25. behalfe: in this b. = in this matter or respect, Three Lett. p. 619. behalue, behalf, iv. iv. 27. behappen, to happen, v. xi. 52. behaue, to conduct, regulate, 11. ivi. 40. beheast, beheat, command, bidding, 1. vi. Arg., 11, ii. 32, 111, iv. 31, 1v. ix. 31, R. T. 73, Daphn. 137, 270, Hubberd 1308, Love 93. behight, pa. part. behight, to deliver, grant, entrust, 1. x. 50, 11. viii. 9, 1v. xi. 6; to cali, name, 1. x. 64, 111. vii. 47, S. C. Apr. 120, May 201; to speak, address, Iv. ii. 23, VI. 38, v. iv. 25; to adjudge, pronounce, consider, Iv. i. 44, iii. 31, v. 7; to ordain, decide. 11. iii. 1, Mutop. 241, H. Love 173; 10 com-

mand, II. iv. 43. behot, behote, prel., pa.

called, S. C. Dec. 84. be-hold, to hold, retain, capture, S. C. Sept. 229. behoofe, advantage, profit, IV. vii. 37behot, so behight. behoue, to be proper, fitting; to be incumbent, necessary, iv. ix. 31, vi. v. 20. behooued, pa. part., Guat 467. belaccoyle, greeting, welcome, IV. vi. 25. belamoure, lover, 11. vi. 16; a flower (unidentified), Amor. Son. 64. belamy, lover, 11. vii. 52. belay, to besiege, encompass, Amor. xiv. belayd, pa. part. adorned, vi, ii. g. beldame, form of address to an aged woman, 111. ii. 43. belgard, kind, loving look, 11. iii. 25, 111. ix. 52, Beautie 256. beliue, biliue, byliue, forthwith, quickly, immediately, 1. v. 32, ix. 4, 11. viii. 18, 111. i. 18, v. 16, x. 10, S. C. Sept. 227. bell : to bear the b. m to obtain the prize, gain the victory, tv. iv. 25, v. 13. bellibone, fair maid, bonny lass, S. C. Apr. 92, Aug. 61. belyde, pret. counterfeited, 111. x. 7. bend, band, 11. iii. 27, vii. 30, v. v. 3, S. C. May 32. bene, beene, are, 1. i. 10, 111. i. 26, x. 16, 1v. i. 24, 11, 24, S. C. Apr. 124, Oct. 87, Past. Elegie Introd. 12, Beautie 269. boneficiall, a letter presenting to a benefice, Hubberd 486. beneuolence, gift, Hubberd 517. bent, sb. aim, purpose, intention, S. C. Epistle p. 417. bent, adj. obedient, S. C. Sept. 149. bents, stalks of reed-like grass, vi. iv. 4. bequesthed, ppl. adj. committed, entrusted, 1. x. 63. bere 1, see beare. bere 2, to bear, carry, IV. xii. 15. bereaue, to deprive of, 1. i. 52; to take away, remove, destroy, get rid of, 11. vii. 19, v. iv. 10, vi. 2. beraft, pa. part. bereft, robbed, Iv. ii. 10. bereaued, pa. part. stolen, carried off, v. iii. 30; taken away, Hubberd 208. berobbed, pa. part. robbed, 1. viii. 42, v. viii. beseeke, to beseech, IV. iii. 47. beseme, beseem, to besit, become, seem, be seemly, 1. viii. 32, 11. ix. 26, 37, 111. i. 55, 1v. ix. 20, v. v. 38, S. C. Aug. 36. beseeming,

ppl. adj., Three Lett. 620.

boscone, pa. part. provided, treated, v. x. 17,

vii. vii. 11. well b .- of good appearance, good looking, 1, xii, 8, 111, iii, 58, Gnat 651; accomplished, versed, read, Teares 180. gay b. = gaily apparelled, adorned, Amor. xxvii. besit, to become, befit, 11, vii, 10, besitting. ppl. adi. 1v. ii. 10. bespake, pret. addressed, v. iv. 50. bespredd, pa. part. adorned, 111. x. 44. besprint, ppl. adj., S. C. Nov. 111. sprent, pa. part., S. C. Dec. 135, besprinkled. bestaine, to stam, IV, vii. 27. bested, bestad, pa. part. situated, placed, III. x. 54. bestadde, disposed, ordered, S. C. Aug. 7. ill, sore, sorely b. = hard pressed. placed in a dangerous situation, 1. i. 24. 11. i. 30, 52, 1v. vii. 46, v. i. 22, vi. i. 4, vi. 18; ill bestedded, Iv. i. 3. bestedde, bestad, pret. beset, 111. v. 22, 1v. iii. 25. bestow, to place, arrange, II. ix. 28. bestrad, pret. bestrode, v. ii. 12. bet, pret, beat, 1. iii. 19, 11. ii. 22, xii. 63. pa. part. beaten, 1. vii. 28; storme-bet, 11. xii. 32. betake, to betake oneself, 1, v. 28, ix. 44; to deliver, give to, vt. xi. 51. betooke, pret. to entrust, III. vi. 28. beteeme, to grant, give, II. visi. 19. bethinke, to make up one's mind, 1. vi. 16. bethrall, to make captive, 1, viii, 28. betide, to befall, happen, 11. i. 35, 111. v. 11. betided, pret., Hubberd 37, Clout 329. betid, pret. 11. viii. 24, 1v. xii. 4, v. iii. 10, xii. 32. betight, fa. part., S. C. Sept. 173, Nov. 174. betidde, pa. part. 11. i. 26. bett, better, S. C. Oct. 15. beuer, the lower part of a helmet, t. vii. 31, 11. i. 29, 1v. vi. 25. beuy, company (of ladies), 11. ix. 34, v. ix. 31, S. C. Apr. 118, Glosse p. 434. bewaile, to mourn? (perk. an error), 1. vi. I. bowray, to disclose, reveal, betray, 1. iv. 39, v. 30, 111. iii. Arg., v. iii. 23, vt. iii. 1, Worlds Vanitie 148, S. C. Jan. Glosse, March 35, Hubberd 1096. bewraide pret. 111. iv. 61; perceived, 1v. ix. 28. biokerment, strife, bickering, v. iv. 6. bid, to pray, 1. i. 30. See beades. bide, byde 1, to endure, 1. iii. 31; to remain, abide, 1. x. 66, 11. ii. 9, vi. 19, 1v. i. 24. bide , to bid, offer, 111. viii. 16. biggen, cap (of a child), S. C. May 241. bight, to bite, I. xi. 16. Bilbo, Bilbao, noted for its swords, Mniop. 77. biliue, see beliue. bil, bill, a sword, weapon, v. xi. 58: forrest & = a digging or pruning implement, III. v. 21. | p. 411: blossoming, flowering.

bin, pa. part. been, I. i. 33; pres. are, v. i. 13. birchen, of a birch-tree, v. xi. 58. bit. bite. v. viii. 40. bittur, bittern, u. viii. 50. blacksmith, iv. v. 33. blame, sb. injury, hurt, 1. ii. 18, 111. i. q; fault, Beautie 155. blame, vb. to find fault with, S. C. July 38: to bring into discredit, vi. iii. II. blanck, entirely confounded, discomfitted, iii. iii. 17. bland, to sooth, flatter, cajole, Beautie 171. blandishment, cajolery, flattery, 1. ix. 14, Hubberd 1274. blasphémous, III. vii. 39, v. ii. 19. blasphémy, vi. xii. 25. blast, to wither, III. v. 48. blaze, to proclaim, describe, depict, portray. extol, 1. xi. 7, v. iii. 2, ix. 25, p. 410, S. C. p. 417, Apr. 43, Muiop. 265; to shine, 1, 1v. 16. blazed, fa. part. emblazoned, v. iii. 14 blazer, one who proclaims, extols, 'trumpeter,' 11. ix. 25. blazon (broade, out), to make known, proclaim, describe, I. Prol. I, Teares 102. blemishment, blemish, Iv. ii. 36. blend, vb.1 to blind, dazzle, 11. xii. 80, 1v. iii. 35. blent, pa. part. 11. iv. 7, Gnat 311. blend, vb.2 to mix, mingle, defile, obscure. blemish, 11. v11. 10, 111. ix. i. blent, pa. part. 1. vi. 42, 11. iv. 26, v. 5, xii. 7, 111. 1x. 33, xii. 29, v. iii. 37, vi. 13, Hubberd 1330. blere, to deceive, S. C. July 36. blesse, sb. bliss, 1. x. Arg., 1v. x. 23. bless, vb.1 to preserve, protect, guard, 1. ii. 18, vii. 12, IV. vi. 13. blesse, vb.2 to wave, brandish, 1. v. 6, viii. 22. blin, to cease from, stop, III. v. 22. blincked, affected with a blink, 111, ix. 4. blind, dark, without openings, IV. xi. 2. blist, pret.1 blessed, IV. vii. 46, S. C. July 174. blist, pret.2 brandished, vi. viii. 13. cf blesse, vb.2 blith, joyfully, 1. xi. 4. bliue, forthwith, 11. iii. 18. Cf. beliue. bloncket, grey: b. liveryes = grey coats, S. C. May 5. blont, rough, rude, unpolished, S. C. Sept. too. Cf. blunt. blooded, pa. part. wet or smeared with blood, Amor. Son. 20. bloodshéd, IL vi. 34. bloosme, blossom, bloom, IV. viii. 2, VI. Prol. 4, S. C. Jan. 34. blooming, ppl. adj. S. C. May 8; pres. part. blct, sb. blemish, disgrace, vi. xii. 41, Clout 607. blot, blotten, so, to sully, defame, blemish, 1v. i. 4, 51, v. ix. 38, vi. xii. 28. blubbred, ppl. adj. tear-stained, -swollen, 1. vi. 9, 11. i. 13, v. i. 13, Daphu. 551. blunt, uncultivated, vi. xi. o. boad 1, to bode, indicate, vii. vi. 23. boad, bode 2, pret, sojourned, dwelt, abode, v. xi. 60, Hubberd 400. Cf. bide 1. bodrag, bo(r)draging, hostile incurs in, raid, 11. x. 63. Clout 315. bollet, bullet, 1. vii. 13. bolt, arrow, S. C. March 70. bond, pa. part. bound, 1. 1. 3, 1v. vm. 21, Hubberd 133. bondáge, II. xi. I. bone, leg. S. C. March 52. bonefier, bonfire, Epith. 275. bonetto, bonnet, cap, Three Lett. p. 625. bongrely, bungling, slovenly, Three Lett. bonie, bony, comely, beautiful, Clout So, 96, bonilasse, a beautiful girl, S. C. Aug. 77-8. booke-redd, ppl. adj. educated, Hubberd 358. boone, petition, prayer, III. vii. 34, 1v. ii. 50, v. ix. 34. boorde, see bord. boot, gain, advantage, profit, III. xi. Q. v. ix. 10; booty, vii. vii. 38. boote, vb. to avail, profit, 1. iii. 20, 11. 1. 16, v. 3, m. xi. 16, iv. xii. 25, S. C. Sept. 127. bootelesse, unprofitable, useless, 1. ii. 2; adv. Hubberd 400. bord, boord, sb. table, 111. x. 6, Two Lett. p. 636; conversation, intercourse, tv. iv. 13; coast, vs. xii. t; at b. = against, alongside, Gnat A2. bord, boord, vb. to speak, address, accost, n. ii. 5, iv. 24, ix. 2, xii. 16, m. m. 19; to border on, approach, IV. xi. 43. bordraging, see bodrag. bore, pa. part. borne, iv. iv. 4. borrell, rude, rustic, S. C. July 95. borrow, borowe, pledge, security, S. C. May 131, Sept. 96, Hubberd 852: by my dear b = by our Saviour (Glosse), S. C. May 150. bosome, IV. xi. 43. bosse, projection in centre of shield, i. ii. 13, v. zi. 53, Worlds Vanitie 150. bouget, bow-, leathern pouch, iii. x. 29, Three Lett. p. 615. bought, coil, fold, knot, 1, i, 15, xi, 11, Gnat 255.

boult, to sift, 11. iv. 24. bound, to go, lead, 1, x, 67. bounse, to beat, thump, 111, xi, 27, bounteous, virtuous, III, i, 49, ii, 10, xi, 10, bountle, -y, goodness, virtue, II, iii, 4, 24 111. i. 49. ix. 4. bountiest, most virtuous, iii. v. 8. bountihed, bountyhed, generosity, 11. x. 3 111. i. 41, iii. 47. bourdon, burden, accompaniment (of a song), Past. Aeglogue 77. bourne, boundary, 11. vi. 10. bout, about, vi. v. 11. bousing, ppl. adj. drinking, tippling, t. iv. boue, above, IV. iv. 37, R. T. 110. bow-bent, bent like a bow, v. Prol. 6. bowr, muscle, i, viii, 41. bowre, sb. bower, inner room, chamber, t. i. 55, m. i. 58. bowre, vb. to lodge, shelter, vi. Prol. 4, vi. boystrous, rough, rude, 1. viii. 10, brace, to encompass, S. C. Sept. 124. brag, proudly, boastfully, S. C. Feb. 71. bragging, proud, boastful, S. C. Feb. 115. bragly, ostentatiously, boastfully, S. C. March brake, fern, bracken, 11. xi. 22, S. C. Dec. 103. brame, longing, III, ii. 52. bransle, dance, 111. x. 8. brast, pret, burst, 1. v. 31, viii. 4, 111. vii. 40, 1v. iti. 12, v. viii. 8, xi. 28, Petrarch 39. braue, splendidly, finely, i. iv. 8; beautiful, fair, 11. iii. 24, xii. 83, R. T. 94. brauely, gaily, splendidly, 11. vi. 13. brauery, finery, S. C. Efistle p. 418, Hubberd 608, 858, Three Lett. p. 625. brawned, brawny, well-developed, 1, viii. 41. bray, braie, to resound, cry out, gasp out, utter, give forth, 1. vi. 7, viii. 11, 11, i. 38, v. xi. 20. braynepan, skull, vi. vi. 30. breach, breaking, injury, 1. viii. 34, 11. xii. 56; gap, fissure, fracture, 11. vii. 28; sobbing

breaches = sobs which break out intermittingly, 111. iv. 35; violation, vi. ii. 42, Hubberd 1141. breaded, braided, plaited, 11. ii. 15, 111. ii. 50. breare, briar, 1. x. 35, 111. xi. 37. See also brere. breath'd. pret. rested, vi. xi. 47. breathfull, full of breath, IV. v. 38.

breche, breech, breeches, v. ix. 10, 8. C. Feb. 242. breed, to cause, produce, L vii. 17, III. L 37, Close 607.

iii. IQ.

buegle, glass beads, S. C. Feb. 66. breme, breem, cold, chill, rough, harsh, vii. buffe, blow, stroke, 1. ii. 17, xi. 24, 11. ii. vii. 40, S. C. Feb. 43, Dec. 148. bren, brenne, to burn, III. iii. 34. brent, pret. 1. ix. 10, 111. i. 47; pa. part. S. C. May 267; ppl. adj. 1. xi. 28, R. T. 19. brere, briar, 111. i. 46, S. C. May 10, Amor. Son. 26. briokle, fragile, brittle, IV. x. 39, R. T. 499. bridale, wedding, wedding feast, IV. XI. 9, V. ii. 3, Proth. 17. brigandine, a small, light vessel for fighting, 1v. ii. 16, Muiop. 84. brigant, brigand, vi. x. 39. brim, edge (of shield), iv. iii. 34; edge (of horizon), v. ix. 35; edge, limit, vi. xii. 26. brimstón, 11. x. 26. britch, breeches, Three Lett. p. 625. cf. breche. brize, bryse, gadfly (mod. breeze), vi. i. 24, Worlds Vanitie 24. broad-blazed, widespread, widely proclaimed. 1. X. II. brocage, pimping, procuration, S. C. p. 416, Hubberd 851. broch, to begin, commence, 111. i. 64. brode, abroad, afar, 1. iv. 16, Iv. iii. 5. brond, brand (of lightning), t. viii. 21; sword, brand, t. iv. 33, 11. viii. 22, 37. bronds = embers, brands, 11. vii. 36. brondiron, sword, 111. xii. 24, 1v. iv. 32, vi. viii. 10. brood, parentage, extraction, lineage, race, 1. iii. 8, x. 64, 11. vii. 8?, v. vii. 21. brooding, breeding, v. xi. 23. brooke, to endure, bear, remain, III. iv. 44, 1v. ii. 40, vi. iv. 21. broome, broom (plant), vi. ix. 5. brouse, twig, III. x. 45. broused, pa. part. eaten (by cattle), S. C. Feb. 236. brunt, stroke, assault, 11. vin. 37, v. xi. 59. S. C. p. 427, Amor. xii. at the instant b. = suddenly, at starting, vt. xi. 9. brusd, to, see tobrusd. brust, to burst, S. C. p. 435; pret. 111. i. 48

ity, 11. viii. 12, 1v. vii. 45, Teares 270.

buckle, to make ready, gird oneself (in

armour), v. xi. 10; refl. v. xii. 16, vi. viii. 12. | chemise, shirt, tuiic, 11. iii. 26, v. v. 2.

bug, apparition, goblin (cf. mod. bugbear), ii. iii. 20, xii. 25. bugle, wild ox or buffalo, i. viii. 3. bulke, hull or hold of a ship, v. xi. 29. bullion, solid gold or silver, III. i. 32. Bunduca, Boadicea, II. x. 54. burdenous, heavy, severe, v. xii. 19, S. C. May 132. burganet, steel cap used by infantry, especially pikemen, 11. viii. 45, 111. v. 31, Muiop. 73. burgein, to bud, vii. vii. 43. busket, small bush, S. C. May 10. buskin, high boot, i. vi. 16; = tragedy, S. C. Oct. 113. busse, a kiss, 111, x. 46. but, unless, S. C. May 265; only, S. C. Aug 112. but if = unless, 111. iii. 16, 1v. vin. 23. S. C. Sept. 143. buxome, yielding, unresisting, obedient, t. xi. 37, 111, 11, 23, vi. viii. 12, S. C. Sept. 149, Hubberd 616. by-, see bi-. by-accident, side issue, p. 407. by and by, immediately, 1. x. 1, 11. vii. 20. vni. 4, Hubberd 1092; in succession, one by one ?, vii. vii. 27. bydding base, see bace sh. by-disputation, incidental argument, Three Lett. p. 624. bynempt, named, mentioned, S. C. July 214. declared, uttered (on oath), promised, 11. 1. 60. S. C. Nov. 46 (Glosse bequethed). byte, to eat, 1. i. 23. Byse, Byzantium, R. R. 296. C cabinet, arbour, bower, 11. xii. 83. S C. Dec. 17; cottage, dwelling, Daphn. 558. cerule, deep blue, azure, Gnat 163. caitiue, caytiue, sb. villain, wretch, 11. i. 1. viii. 25, v. viii. 22, Worlds Vanitie 80; pa. viii. 37. caitiue, caytiue, adj. captive, I. vii. 19, ix. part. broken, burst, Iv. iv. 41, v. xi. 31. 11; mean, base, 11. iii. 35, 111. vii. 16. Past. Elegie 106; pres. part. brusting, 111. calamint, an aromatic herb of the genus bruted, bruited, noised abroad, Hubberd 188. Calamintha, 111. ii. 49. call, sb. netted cap or head-dress, 1. viii. 46. brutenesse, brutishnesse, brutality, stupidcamphora, a tree or plant which yields cambubble glas, glass as thin as a bubble, R. T. phor, 111. ii. 49. carmarick, cambric, Three Lett. p. 623.

camus, camis, a light, loose dress of s lk; a

```
can, knows, S. C. Feb. 77.
can, for gan, did, 1, i. 8, x . 30, 1v. iii. 20, iv.
 29, Vi. 3.
                                                   114.
canapee, canopy, t. v. 5.
cancred, venomous, corrupt, 1.1v. 30, 11, i. 1;
 malignant, ill-tempered, envious, iii. ix 3,
 Clout 680.
canoker worme, caterpillar or insect larva
 which destroys plants, S. C Feb. 179.
Candida, pseudonym, Clout 574.
canon bitt, a smooth, round bit, i. vii. 37.
cantion, song, S. C. p. 458.
canuase, to discuss, S. C. p. 420
capias, writ of arrest, vi. vii. 35.
capitayn, captam, 11. xi. 14.
capon, a term of reproach, coward, tti. viii. 15.
caprifole, honevsuckle or woodbine, ttt. vi. 44.
captiuaunce, captiuance, captivity, iii.
 vn. 45, v. vi. 17.
captine, to capture, v. viii. 2. captind, pret.
 II. iv. 16. captiued, captiu'd, pa. part. III.
 i. 2, v. vi. 11, vi. vin. 13, Gnat 490.
capuccio, hood of a cloak, iii, xii, 10.
card, chart, map, ii. vii. t, iii. ii. 7.
care, object or matter of concern, ii. x. 37;
  trouble, sorrow, grief, iv. viii. 5, v. xi. 13, vi
 ini. 24.
carefull, full of care, sad, sorrowful, t. i. 44.
  vi. 6, viii. 15, iii. i. 58, iv. vii. 41, S. C. Jan.
  Arg. 49, 78, May 190, Nov. 61.
 carelesse, unconscious, free from care, i. ii.
  45, Daphn. 137; untended, uncared for, IV.
  iv. 38.
 cáriere, career, course, R. R. 218
 carke, sorrow, grief, t. i. 44, S C. Nov. 66.
 carle, churl, base fellow, 1. 1x. 54, 11. x1. 16, 111.
  ix. 3, Iv. v. 44, vt. 111. 34.
 carol, carroll, sb. song, Clout 87, Epith. 259.
 carol, carroll, vb.: tr. to sing, vi. ix. 9; intr.
  to sing a lively or joyous strain, vi. ix. 5, S.C.
  Feb. 61, Oct. 52; (of birds) Epith. 79.
 caroling, sb. singing, vi. ix. 35, H. Beautie
  262.
 carriage, cariage, burden, vt. in. 34; action.
  conduct, Gnat 498; behaviour, demeanour,
  Hubberd 777.
 carrol, see carol.
 caruen, to cut, S. C. Sept. 41.
 caruer, (tree) used for carving work, 1 i. 9.
 case, condition, plight, IV. viii. 38, Proth. 140
 cast, sb. bout, 111. x. 35 l. 4; couple (of falcons),
   vi. vii. q; time, opportunity, vi. viii. 51;
   throw, S. C. Ppistle p. 417; trick, Three Lett.
   p. 622 l. 8. nere their utmost c. = almost dead,
                                                    chaunge, to cause a change, vi. ix. 32.
   VI. V. Q.
```

cast, vb. to resolve, purpose, plan, t. x. 2, x |

63 (reft.), xi. 28, m. vii. 38, vi. v. 17, S. C. Mar. 63, Oct. 2; to attempt, S. C. Feb. 189, Oct. 103, Hubberd 27; to consider, S. C. Sept. castory, colour (red or pink), extracted from castoreum, II. ix. 41. casualtye, chance, haphazardness, S.C. p. 416. causen, to explain, III. ix. 26. oaue, to make into a cave, IV. V. 33. cease, to stop, check, v. iv. 20, cemitare, scimitar, v. v. 3. contonel, sentinel, 1. ix 41, 1v. ii. 36. cortes, certainly, 1, vii. 52, 111, ii. 9, vii. 58. certifye, to notify, Two Lett. p. 636. Cosso, to cease, IV. ix. 1. cosure, stop, interruption, interval, it. x. 68. chaffar : to e. words - to bandy words, it. v. 2. chaffred, pa. part, sold, exchanged, S. C. Sept. 10; pret. Hubberd 1159. chairo, dear, 111. v. 51. chalenge, challenge, ab, claim, 11, viii. .7; accusation, iv. ix. 36. chalenge, vb. to claim, 1, iv. 20, iv. i. 35, ii. 28, iv. 8, v. 23, Hubberd 137; to track (the quarry), 11. i. 12, chamelot, camlet (an Fastern fabric): water c. = camlet with a wavy or watered surface, tv. 31.45. chamfred, furrowed, wrinkled, S. C. Feb. 43. champian, champion, open country, platti, v. ii. 15. vii. vi. 54. R. R. 421. Muiop. 149. plaine c. m open country, vi. iv. 26. championesse, female champion, warrior, tit. X11. 41. chappellane, chaplain, confessor, iii. vii. 58. chapter, capital of a column, Bellay 45, Epigrams p. 607. character, image, form, v. vi. 3. chargefull, onerous, vi. ix. 32. Charillia, pseudonym, Clout 540. charet, charret, chariot, 1. v. 38, 111. vii. 41, Teares 9 charme, sb. song, Teares 244. charme, vb. to play, tune, v. ix. 13. S. C. Oct. 118. Clout 5. chast, pure, stainless, 1. v 38. chaufe, chauff, sb. rage, passion, v. ii. 15, vi. ii. 21, v. 1Q. chaufe, vb. to rub, 1. vii. 21, VIL vii. 29; to chase, become angry, 1. vii. 37, 11. iv. 32, vi. xii. 36: to rage, 11. iii. 46. iv. iv. 29. chauffed, 1pl. adj. heated, rubbed, chafed, t. iii. 33; irritated, t. iii. 42, xi. 15. chauncefull, risky, hazardous, Hubberd 98.

chaw, 16. jaw, 1. iv. 30.

```
chaw, vb. to chew, 1, iv. 30, 111, X, 18, v, vi,
                                                 clew. plot-lit. a ball of thread, II. i. 8; ball
 10, xii. 30, Gnat 86; to meditate on, 11. iv.
chayre, throne, Teares 510.
chearen, to become cheered up, courageous,
 1. x. 2; to encourage, 1. iii. 34; pa. part.
 entertained, regaled, 111, i. 42.
cheere, chere, cheare, countenance, 1. i. 2,
 ii. 42, IV. i. 50; aspect, S. C. Feb. 26; food,
 S. C. July 188; mood, IV. ii. 51, S. C. Apr.
 60. Nov. 151, Past. Aeglogue 23.
checked, chequered, 11. xii. 18.
checklaton, ciclaton, a stuff of silk or cloth
 of gold, vi. vii. 43.
chepe, sb. price, charge, vi. xi. 40.
cherolie, cheerfully, cheerily, Teares 321.
cheriping, vol. sb. chirping, S. C. June 35.
cherishment, tenderness, cherishing, Teares
 576.
cherry, to cheer, delight, vi. x. 22.
cheuisaunce, enterprise, 11. ix. 8, 111. vii. 45,
 xi. 24. S. C. May 02.
cheuisaunce, a flower (wall-flower?), S. C.
 Apr. 143.
chickens: faithlesse chickens, heathen brood,
 111, iii. 46.
chiefe, head, top, S. C. Nov. 115.
chill, to shiver (with cold), Hubberd 993.
chimney, fireplace, 11, ix. 20.
chine, back, vi. iii. 3.
chippes, parings of bread-crust, S. C. July 188.
chorle, churl, III. vii. 15.
 chyld, to give birth to, vi. xii. 17.
chynd, pret. split asunder, broke, Iv. vi. 13.
 ciuil, civilized, Hubberd 45.
 ciuilite, civilization, vi. Prol. 4; courtesy,
  chivalry, 111. i. 44, vi. i. 26,
 olad, to clothe, vi. iv. 4.
 clambe, pret. climbed, vii. vi. 8.
 clame, to call, shout, IV. X. II.
 clap, sb. stroke, iv. x. 9, Gnat 519.
 clap, vb. to shut, slam, 111. xii. 3.
 clark, clerk, scholar, v. x. 1. Teares 335.
 claue, pret. cleaved, Gnat 568.
 clawbacke, sycophant, toady, Three Lett, p.
  621.
 oleane, cleene, cleene, entirely; adv. 1. i. 50,
  1v. vii. 13, v. x. 25, v11. vii. 52, S. C. pp. 426,
   443, 447; adj. pure, 1, x. 58.
 oleanly, adj. artful, Hubberd 857; adv. art-
  fully, Hubberd 862.
 clearkly, learnedly, Three Lett. p. 614.
 cleep, clepe, to call, name, 11, iii, 8, ix. 58,
   1v. x. 34, v1, x. 8, Worlds Vanitie 58, Clout
   113.
                                                   combrous, cumbrous, harassing, 1. i. 23, 11.
 clemence, clemency, v. vii. 22.
                                                   ix. 17.
```

```
(of silk), 111. xii. 14.
olieffe, cliff, ıv. xii. 5.
clift 1, cliff, 1. viii. 22, 11. xii. 4, 7, 8, 111. iv. 7.
clift 2, chink, opening, crack, IV. ix. 27.
clim, to climb, 111, iv. 42.
clinck, chink, keyhole, S. C. May 251.
clipping, pres. part. clasping, embracing, in.
 viti. 10.
clogd, encumbered, burdened, 111, x. 35.
clombe, pret. mounted, climbed, t. x. 49, iii.
 iii, 61, 1v. v. 46.
close, secret, hidden, 111. i. 56, 1v. iv. 16, Bellay
 174, Amor. Son. 25.
closely, secrely, 1. vi. 32, 111. ii. 28, vi. 16,
 Hubberd 331.
clouch, clutch, 111. x. 20, v. ix. 11.
clout, shred, rag, 1. ix. 36; cloth, S.C. May 242.
clouted , ppl. adj. covered with a clout or
 cloth, S. C. Mar. 50.
clouted 2 (cream), ppl. adj. clotted, S. C. Nov.
cloue, pret. cleaved, 11. ii. 3, vi. 31. clouen,
 pa. part. 1. v. 12.
cloyd, pret. pierced, gored, 111. vi. 48.
clyme, to climb, mount, 1. iv. 17.
coast 1, quarter, region, 111, iii. 6.
coast 2: on even c. = on equal terms, H. iii. 17
 cf. cost.
coasted, pret. approached, v. ii. 29.
coch, coach, iv. iii. 46.
cockatrice, serpent, identified with the
  basilisk, fabulously said to kill by its mere
  glance, Amor. Son. 40.
 cock-bote, a small, light boat, 111. viii. 24.
 cooked (hay), heaped up, made into haycocks,
  S, C. Nov. 12.
 cockel, cockle, a weed which grows in com-
  fields, S. C. Dec. 124.
 cognisaunce, recognition, 11. i. 31.
 colled, pret. embraced, 111. ii. 34.
 oolour, so. to disguise, hide, vi. x. 37.
 colourable, specious, plausible, deceptive, III.
  iii. 19, S. C. May Arg. 9.
 colourably, with a hidden meaning, meta-
  phorically, S. C. p. 427.
 coloure, sb. pretence, S. C. p. 455.
 coloured, ppl. adj. disguised, hidden, S. C.
  Feb. 162.
 colt wood, leaves, &c. of coltssoot, 111. ii. 49.
 colwort, plant of the cabbage kind (genus
  Brassica), Muiop. 200.
 comber, to encumber, S. C. Feb. 133. com-
  bred, ttl. adj. hindered, impeded, I. viii. 10.
```

```
combyned, joined, fastened, iv. x. 40, Beautie
comen, common, usual, S. C. June 45.
commandement, command, control, Clout
commen, common, to converse, II, ix, 41,
 v. ix. 4.
comment, to devise, invent (of a false state-
 ment), vii, vii, 53,
commixtion, copulation, vi. vi. 12.
commixture, mingling, mixture, vi. i. 8;
 copulation, Clout 802.
commodity, -ie, advantage, vi. xi. 10, Two
  Lett. p. 635.
commonly, familiarly, in intimate union, 1. x
  56.
compacte, agreed, arranged, v. vi. 16.
compacted, close, III. i. 23.
 compacture, compact structure, II. IX. 24.
 companie, sb. companion, 1v. i. 38.
 companie, vb. to be a gay companion, Hubberd
 compare, compaire 1 (with), to vie with,
  rival, 11. v. 29, Muiop. 271, Elegie 18.
 compare 3, to acquire, 1. iv. 28.
 compasse, proportion, 11, ix. 24; extent,
  range, 111. 1x. 46. in compas = around, 111. 111. 1c.
 compassion, vb. to pity, Clorinda 2.
 compast, ppl. adj. round, circular, 1v. iv. 30.
 compast, pa. part. contrived, iii. vii. 18;
  arranged (in a circle), Elegie 23.
 compel, to force to come, 11. i. 5; to force,
  constrain, 1. vi. 26.
 compile, compyle, to build, 111. iii. 10; to
   heap up, produce, 111, 11, 12, vi. 1; to compose
  (of a song), iv. viii. 4, Beautie 273; to com-
   pose, settle, IV. ix. 17.
  complaine, -playne, to lament, S.C. Nov.
   44; to compose as a complaint, Clout 511.
  complement, completeness, 111. v. 55; polite-
   ness, courtesy, vi. x. 23, Hubberd 692; ac-
   complishment, consummation, Hubberd 338;
   (mock) courtesy, civility, Clout 790.
  complexion, quality, character, 'hun our,
   'temperament,' 11. ini. 22, 111. vi. 8, vi. 38.
  complish, to accomplish, fulfil, v. xi. 41.
  complot, conspiracy, plot, Hubberd 178.
  complyne, the last service of the day in the
   Catholic ritual, Hubberd 452.
  comportance, bearing, behaviour, 11. i. 29.
  composition, agreement, v. x. 27; agreement
    (to pay money), VI. i. 43.
  compound, to settle, compose, 111. iii. 23; to
    settle, agree (as to terms), v. xii. 4.
  comprehend, to contain, IV. i. 27.
   comprise, to perceive, comprehend, 11. ix. 49;
```

```
to draw together, III. vi. 19; to contain, VI.
 vini. 18.
comprouinciall, of the same province, III.
 iii. 22.
oon, to know, S. C. July 45, Sept. 90.
conceipt, conceit, idea, v. vii. 38; concep-
 tion, pp. 407, 409, 435, Elegie 124; opinion,
 judgement, estimation, S. C. p. 427, Cloul
 p. 436.
conceiptfull, clever, vi. xii. 16.
conceiue, to perceive, v. v. 31, 35.
concent, sb. harmony, 111. xii. 5, Beautie 199.
concent, so. to harmonize, Iv. ii. 2.
concrew, to grow into a mass, Iv. vii. 40.
concurring, combining, Three Lett. p. 630.
cond. pret, learned, S.C. Feb. 92, Clout 74.
condigne, worthy, vii. vi. 11.
condiscend, to consent, v. i. 25.
conditions, qualities, in. ix. 4. Beautie 137.
conduct 1, management, 11. ii. 25.
conduct 2, guide, vi. xi. 35.
conference, conversation, Two Lett. p. 640.
confound, confounded, Muiop. 262.
confusion, destruction, S. C. May 219.
 congé, leave, farewell, 11. i. 34, in. 2, 111. i. I,
  Hubberd 1100.
 congregate, fa. part. congregated, assembled,
  vII. vi. 19.
 conjure, to entreat, i. xii. 27; to conspire, v.
  x. 26.
 conne, can, S. C. Epistle p. 417; to know,
  S. C. June 65.
 consent 1, wish, opinion, iv. viii. 50.
 consent<sup>2</sup>, harmony, Gnat 226. Ci. concent.
 consort, sb.1 companion, vii. vi. 51.
 consort, .b.2 accord, 1. xii. 4; harmony, sing-
  ing together, III. i. 40, Past. Acglogue 31.
 consort, vb. to combine, unite, it. xii. 70,
   Elegie 76.
 conspyre, to agree, S. C. p. 458.
 constraine, to bring about by force, v. vi. 19;
   to incur. Hubberd 561.
  constraint, force, 1. vii. 34; confinement, 1.
   x. 2; distress, 11. ii. 8, S. C. May 249.
  contagion, contagious quality or influence, v.
   vii. 11, Muiop. 256.
  containe, to restrain, control, III. ix. 7, v. xii.
   1, vi. vi. 7.
  contock, strife, discord, 111. i. 64, S. C. May
   163, Sept. 86.
  contempt, contemned, despised, S. C. Nov.
  contentation, satisfaction, Three Lett. p. 619.
  continent, land, earth, 111. iv. 30, v. 25.
  continuaunce, stay, delay, vi. iii. 19.
 contract, pa. part. contracted, III. ix. 42.
```

```
35; coucht, Elegie 12. couched, ptl.
contraire, to oppose, hinder, vii. vi. 7.
contráry, contrárie, II. ii. 24, xi. 6, III. ii.
                                                  adj, lowered, 1, iii, 34.
                                                 couchant, lying with the body rested on the
 40, Iv. i. 42, iii. 27.
contriue, to pass, spend (time), 11, ix. 48.
                                                  legs and the head lifted up (herald.), 111. ii. 25.
controlement, control, restraint, Three Lett.
                                                 could, knew, vi. v. 36.
                                                 count, consideration, esteem, IV. X. 18. care
controuerse, controversy, dispute, IV. v. 2.
                                                  and c. = important consideration, v. x. 16.
conusid, pa. part. removed, 1. ii. 24.
                                                 countenance, sb. demeanour, 1, iv. 15, 1v 1
conuenable, in agreement, conformable, S. C.
                                                  5; position, standing, v. ix. 38, S. C. May 80
                                                 countenance, vb. to make a show of, pretend.
 Sept. 175.
conuent, to summon together, vii. vii. 17.
                                                  11. ii. 16.
                                                 counter, sb. encounter, Teares 207.
convert, refl. to turn one's attention, v. ix. 37.
conveyance, underhand dealing, Hubberd
                                                 counter, adj. opposing, vi. xii. 1.
                                                 counterbuil, to rebuil, S. C. p. 427.
 846.
conuince, to conquer, III. ii. 21.
                                                 counter-oast, antagonistic artifice, vi. iii. 16.
                                                 counterchaunge, requital, III, ix. 16.
coosen, sb. kinsman, 111, iii. 13.
coosen, adi, kindred, 111. iv. 12.
                                                 counterfoct, false, counterfeit, S. C. Sept. 206
                                                 counterfesaunce, -feisance, counterfeiting,
coosin, vb. to cozen, cheat, Hubberd 874.
                                                   deception, 1. vni. 49, 111. vni. 8, 1v. iv. 27,
coosinage, fraud, Hubberd 857.
goosined, pret, defrauded, Hubberd 862.
                                                   Teares 197, Hubberd 667.
cope, sb. canopy, Love 95.
                                                  counterpoise, to counterbalance, v. ii. 46
                                                 counterpoint, counter-stroke, Hubberd 1140.
 cope, vb. to make an exchange, Hubberd 527.
 copesmate, partner, accomplice, Hubberd
                                                  counterpoynt, app. plot, trick, stratagem,
                                                   S. C. May Arg. p. 435.
  939.
 coportion, joint portion, vi. ii. 47.
                                                  counterpoys, to counterbalance, v. ii. 30.
                                                 counteruailable, to be matched or set up as
 corage, mind, nature, i. v. I, iii. ii. 10; anger,
                                                   equivalent, Three Lett. p. 631.
  wrath, 111. x. 30.
                                                  counteruaile, to resist, 11. vi. 29, vii. vi. 49;
 corbe, sb. corbel, iv. x 6.
                                                   to reciprocate, Two Lett. p. 630.
 corbe, adi, bent, crooked, S. C. Feb. 56.
 cordwayne, -waine, Spanish leather made
                                                  countie, domain of a count, earldom, R. T.
  originally at Cordova, 11. iii. 27, v1. ii. 6.
                                                  coupe, coop, cage, prison, S. C. Oct. 72.
 cormoyrant, cormorant, II. XII. 8.
                                                  couplement, union (of two), iv. iii. 52, Proth.
 coronall, circlet for head, coronet, 111. v. 53;
  wreath, garland, S. C. Feb. 178, Epith. 255.
                                                   05 : couple, vi. v. 24.
                                                  courd, pret. covered, protected, 11. viii. 9.
 coronation, carnation, S. C. Apr. 138.
 corpse, body (living), form, S. C. Nov. 168,
                                                  courst, pret. ran a course (in a tournament),
  Beautie 135. corps, body (dead), 1. v. 38.
                                                   1v. iv. 30; chased, v. iv. 44, ix. 16. coursed
                                                   (over) = recounted quickly, Three Lett. p. 618.
 corse, body (dead), 1. i. 24, ii. 24; body (living),
                                                  court, to pay court to, make love to, 11. ix. 34;
  1. viii. 40, 11, v. 23; stature, form, 1. iii. 42.
                                                   absol. 11. it. 15. courting, ppl. adj., R. T.
 corsine, sb. corrosive (grief, annoyance), iv.
  ix. 14.
                                                   202.
                                                  courting, frequenting the court, practice of
 Corydon, pseudonym, Clout 382.
 Coshma, pseudonym, Clout 522.
                                                   a courtier, Hubberd 784.
                                                  couth, could, 11. vii. 58, S. C. Jan. 10, Feb.
 cosset, hand-reared lamb, S. C. Nov. 42, 46,
                                                   190, June 41.
 cost, coste, sb. point (of compass), direction,
                                                  couert, concealing, ii. Prol. 5; covered, secret,
   vi. xii. I; side, Hubberd 204. on equall cost =
                                                   IV. Viii. Q.
   on equal ground, on equal terms, IV. iii. 24.
                                                  couerture, shelter, S. C. July 26; dissimula-
  cost, vb. to approach (cf. coast), Daphn, 30.
                                                   tion, deceit, Hubberd 683.
                                                  couet, to desire (with inf.), 1. xii. 20, 11. xii. 20.
  costmarie, an aromatic perennial plant allied
   to the pansy, Guat 670, Muiop. 195.
                                                  couetise, -ixe, covetousness, 1. iv. 29, 111. iv.
                                                   7, S. C. Sept. 82, Hubberd 996, 1309.
  cot, boat, 11. vi. Q.
  gote, house, S. C. July 162; profession, S. C.
                                                  cowardree, cowardice, Hubberd 986.
   Sept. 111.
                                                  cowched, laid down, placed, Three Lett. p.
  couch, to crouch, stoop, 111. i. 4. couched,
                                                   625.
   pa, part, set, placed, arranged, 1. x1. 9, Bellay cowheard, cowardly, v. viii. 50, x. 15.
```

cowherdise, cowardice, vi. x. 37. coy, adj. hidden, secluded, sv. x. 22. coye, so. to act coyly, affect reserve, Three Lett. p. 620. oracknelle, light, crisp biscuit, S. C. Jan. 18, Nov. 95. oraesie, cracked, Clout 374. orag, cragge, neck, S. C. Feb. 82, Sept. 45. craggy, rugged, rough, IV. vii. 25. crake, so. boasting, 11, xi. 10. crake, vb. to boast, brag, v. iii, 16, vii. vii. 50. crall, to crawl, 1. i. 2, 111. iii. 26. cranck, adv. boldly, lustily, S. C. Sept. 46. crank, sb. winding, vii. vii. 52. craple, grapple, claw, v. viii. 40. crased, ppl. adj. impaired, 111, ix. 26. cratch, manger, H. Love 226. creakie, full of creeks, Bellay 119. creast, helmet, iv. iv. 30. creast-front . front of excrescence on dragon's head, Guat 308. creasted, crested, adorned, 1v. i. 13. cremosin, 11. xi. 3, S. C. Apr. 59; cremsin, S. C. Feb. 130, crimson, crew, sb.1 company, band, 111, vii. 11, vii. vi. 14, Clout 931. crewe, sb. 2 pot, S. C. Feb. 209. crime, wrongdoing, sin collect.), it. xii. 75, vii. vii. 18; (criminal) cause, i. xi. 46; accusation. S. C. Feb. 162. crisped, ppl. adj. curled, n. m. 30. critique, critical, Misc. Sonn. i. crocke, pot, jar, v. ii. 33. crooke, gallows (cross), v. v. 18; bending (of 2 path), vii. vii. 52. croscut, to cut across, iii. x. 59. croslet, small cross, 1, vi. 36. croud, fiddle or viol, Epith. 131. crouper, crupper, 111. i. 6. cruddle, to curdie, S. C. Feb. 46. cruddy, curdled, 1. v. 29, 111, 111, 47, iv. 34. crudled, ppl. adj. curdled, t. vii. 6, 1x, 52, S. C. Feb. Arg. 11, Past. Elegie 152. cruell, cruelly, IV. vii. 30, Clout 909. crumenall, purse, pouch, S. C. Sept. 119. cud, inside of throat; place where cud is chewed?, Gnat 86. cuffling, striking ( = scuffling ?), iv. iv. 29. cull (out), to select, Tenres p. 480. cullambyne, Columbine (name of flower), Amor. Son. 64. cultor, ploughshare, Thed. 75. culuer, dove, 11. vii. 34, Teares 246, Amor. Son. 80. culuoring, culverin, a kind of cannon, v. x. 34. cumbrous, troublesome, 1. i. 23, R. T. 305. cunnye, cony, rabbit, Three Lett. p. 615.

ourat, ouriet, cuirass, v. v. 20, v. viii. 34, vi. v. 8.

oure, care, charge, 1. v. 44.

ourelease, incurable, irremediable, iii. x. 59,

vi. vi. 2. S. C. Aug. 104.

ourious, inquisitive, prying, tit. ix. 26; elaborate, Teares 542; ingenious, Clout 8; adv. carefully, iv. x. 22.

oursed, ill-fated, v. viii. 43.

ourtaxe, cutlass, iv. ii. 42.

curtoll, abbreviation, Two Lett. p. 639.

custome: of c. — as was usual, Hubberd 245.

out, fashion, shape, Hubberd 211.

cypher, letter, character, iii. ii. 25, 45.

D

dedalo, skiltul, in. Prol. 2; fertile, iv. x. 45. daffadillies, -downdillies, daffodis, iii. iv. 29, Xi. 32, S. C. Jan. 12, Apr. 140. daint, choice, damty, i. x. 2, iii. Prol. 2, iv. l. 5. dayntiest (superl.), II. xii. 42. dainty, daintiness, fastidiousness, i. ii. 27. dalliaunce, amorous talk or play, r. viii, 5, 11. ii. 35, Teares 186. dallie, to trifle, iv. i. 36. damb, dam (mill-d.), v. xi. 31. dambo, dam (of a lamb), S. C. Aug. 39. dame, lady, 11. vi. 22. damme, mother (of a bird), Epigrams p, damn, damne, to condemn, v. x. 4, Hubberd 1244, Misc. Sonn. i. damnifyde, pa. part. injured, t. xi. 52, tt. vi. 43. damozell, damel, 11. i. 19. Dan, a title; Master, Sir, 111, vni. 21, 1v. ii. 32. Danisk, Danish, IV. x. 31. Daphne, pseudonym, Clout 386. dapper, neat, pretty, S. C. Oct. 13. dared, pa, part, afraid, S. C. Aug. 24. darksom, dark, 111, iii. 12, 15. darraine, darrayne, to set troops in array, prepare, for battle, t. iv. 40, vii. 11, 11. ii. 20, III. i. 20, Iv. iv. 26, v. 24, v. ii. 15, xii. 9; to order, arrange (a battle), iv. ix. 4. darre, to dare, in. Prol. 2. darred, ppl. adj. frightened, terrified (cf. dared), vii. vi. 47. daw (jackdaw), fool, Hubberd 012. dayes-man, mediator, judge, 11. viii. 28. dayr'house, dairy, vii. vi. 48. daze, to bewilder, m. vii. 7. dazd, dazed, pa, part. dazzled, bewildered, t. i. 18. viii. 20, 111, vii. 13. Amor. Soil. 3; ppi. aaj. 1.

viii. 21.

pa. part. considered, 111. xi. 23; judged, pret. dead, to deaden, deprive of force, vigour, Epitaph (2) 38. deaded, pa. part. Iv. xii. 11. vii. 55, S. C. Aug. 137. 20, VI. VII. 25, XI. 33. dead-doing, death-dealing, murderous, 11. iii. 8. Amor. Son. 1. deadly, death-like, 1. iii. II; mortal, fatal, 1. vii. 23, xi. 40; adv. 111. i. 38. dealth, bestows, Iv. i. 6. 300. deare, sb. injury, harm, 1. vii. 48. deare, adj. 1 valuable, 111, iv. 23; (25 sb.) darling, 1. vii. 16. deare, adi. sore, grievous, 11. v. 38, xi. 34; hard, Past, Elegie 124. dearely, boldly, resolutely, 11. viii. 11; grievviii. 31. ously, at great cost, 1. iv. 42, v. iii. 36, R. T. 504 dearling, sb. lover, 1v. viii, 54; darling, Teares 14. 523. dearling, adj. darling, 1v. Prol. 5. dearnelie, dearnly, sorrowfully, dismally 11. i. 35, Daphn. 196. See also dernely. deaw, sb. dew, 1, i. 36, 39. deaw, vb. to bedew, sprinkle, 1. xi, 48, 11. ii. 6, v. xii. 13. deawy, -ie, dewy, 1. ii. 7, v. 2. 11. V. 22. debard, pa. part. stopped, v. ix. 36. debate, sb. struggle, battle, strife, contest, 11. viii. 54, x. 58, iv. Prol. 1, vi. iii. 22, viii. 13, Muiop. 305. debate, vo. to strive, contend, 11, i. 6, 111, ix. 14, vi. iv. 30. debatement, strife, contention, 11. vi. 39. Love 94. debonaire, gracious, courteous, 1. ii. 23, 111. i. 26, v. 8. 436. Debóra, 111. iv. 2. decay, sb. destruction, death, 1. ii. 41, vi. 48, 11. iii. 15, viii. 51, xi. 41, 111. vii. 41, xi. 52, v. viii. 40, ix. 31, xii. 12. decayes, ruins, R. R. 454. decayd, vb. pret. became weaker, vi. i. 21; pa. part. destroyed, 111. viii. 4. deceaved, pa. part. taken away by deceit, v. xii. 42. iii. 30. deceipt, deceit, S. C. p. 419, Teares 492. decesse, death, v. x. 11. v. iii. 40. decreed, fa. part. resolved on, determined, lecrowed, pret. decreased, iv. vi. 18. deducted, ppl. adj. reduced, weakened, Love 7, IV. i. 20. 106. deeme, deemen, to think, consider, 111. viii. 3, S. C. Feb. 38, Clout 575; to judge, 1v. iii. 4, v. 6, v. i. 28; to discern, distinguish. v. i. 8; to judge of, estimate, Love 168; to imagine, Amor. Son. 85. d. his payne == Clout 681.

deene, din, noise (fig.), p. 412. deface, to abash, put out of countenance, ii, iv. 25, Hubberd 707; to destroy, extinguish. 11. viii. 25, Worlds Vanitie 152, Amor. Son. 31. defaced, pa. part. destroyed, Teares See also defaste. defaicted, pa. part. defeated, S. C. p. 443. defame, disgrace, dishonour, 11. v. 26, 111. i. 27. v. i. 28, iii. 38, ix. 43, vi. v. 15. defaste, pa. part. of 'deface', destroyed, 11. iv. 14, 111, ii. 28. defast, broken (law), 11. defeasance, defeat, 1. xii, 12. defeature, undoing, ruin, IV, vi. 17. defend, to ward off, 11. xii. 63, 1v. iii. 32, Gnat deffly, deftly, skilfully, S. C. Apr. 111. define, to decide, settle, 1v. iii, 3. deflore, to deflower, desecrate, Beautie 39. deforme, hideous, deformed, 1, x11. 20, 11. x11. deformed, pa. part. rendered hideous, disfigured, deformed, ppl. adj. (fig.), hateful, 1. ix. 48. defray, to settle (fig.), appease, 1. v. 42, 11 v. 31. defraide, defrayd, pa. part. discharged, paid (fig.), v. xi. 41, vi. viii. 24. degendered, pa. fart. degenerated, v. Prol. 2. degendering, pres. part. degenerating, H. degenerate, to cause to degenerate, Teares degree: in faire d. = in a pleasant manner, 111. xii. 18; by d = according to rank, v. ix. 27;dearest in d. = as dearly as possible, Clout 14. deign, to notice (favourably), Thest, 21; to condescend to accept, S. C. Jan. 63. delay, to weaken, temper, 11. iv. 35, ix. 30, iv. viii. I. delayd, pa. part. quenched, iii. delice, deluce, see flowre delice. délices, delights, pleasures, 11. v. 28, 1v. x. 6, delight, charm, IV. xi. 6. dell, hole, S. C. March 51. delue, cave, pit, den, 11. vii. Arg., viii. 4, 111. iii. demaine, demeanour, bearing, 11. viii, 23. demeane, sb. demeanour, behaviour, 11. ix. 40, v. v. KI; treatment, vi, vi. 18. demeane, vb. to ill-treat, abuse, vi. vii. 39. demeand, pret. behaved to, treated (well), adjudge his punishment, IV. xii. 11. dempt, demeanure, III. i. 40, IV. i. 5, Past. Elegie 20;

demeasure, III. ix. 27: demeanour, behaviour. demerite, to merit, deserve, Elegie 130demisse, submissive, base, H. Love 136. dempt. see deeme. denay, to deny, 111. xi. 11, vi. xi. 15. denayd, pret. 111. vii. 57; pa. part. 1v. xii. 28. denominate, pa. part. called, S. C. p. 443. dent, stroke, blow, IV. vi. 15. deowe, deow, dew, 111. xii. 13, Past. Elegie 191. Cf. deaw. depainted, pa. part. depicted, 11, v. 11; described, Clout 808. depart, sb. departure, 111. vii. 20. depart, to divide, separate, 11. x. 14; to remove. 111. iv. 6. depasturing, consuming, feeding on (fig.), 11. depeincten, to depict, S. C. Apr. 69. peincted, pa. part. III. xi. 7. dependant, attached, hanging, 111. xii. 10. depend, to hang, S. C. Jan. 41. depending, pres. part. 11. xii. 4, Amor. Son. 25 (fig. wavering). depended, pret. (fig.), 1v. ix. 24. depraue, to defame, pervert, v. vii. 32, xii. 24. Amor. Son. 29. der-doing, doing of daring deeds, 1. vii. 10. dernely, dismally, grievously, 111. i. 14, xii. 34. dernfull, mournful, Thest. 90. derring do, doe, daring deeds, 11. iv. 42, v1. v. 37, S. C. Oct. 65, Dec. 43. derring dooer, daring door, iv. ii. 38. dorth, scarcity, I. ii. 27. deryue, to obtain, appropriate, v. ix. 41. deriued, pa. part. taken away, 1. in. 2; carried across, IV. iii. 13. descant, melody sung extempore upon a plainsong, ground, or bass, to which it forms the air, Epith. 81. descriue, to describe, 11, iii. 25, vi. xii. 21. descry, descrie, to perceive, discover, II. iv. 37, xii. 34, v. iii. 32; to reveal, iv. i. 32, vi. vii. 12. descride, -yde, pret. perceived, Hubberd 1301, Clout 675; revealed, 1. x. 34; pa. part. seen, revealed, vi. iii. 2; ppl. adj. perceived, II. xii. 35. desine, to indicate, iv. iii. 37, v. vii. 8, Amor. Son. 74. despairefull, hopeless, II. xii. 8. desperate, despairing, IV. 114. 25. despight, anger, i. i. 50, S. C. Jan. 76; dill, an umbelliserous annual plant with yellow wrong, injury, 11. i. 14, 111. i. 24, 1v. i. 52; spite, malice, itt. i. 65, Teares 46; defiance, 7. iii. 31, Daphn. 442. in despite of = in

spite of, Daphn. 443; in my d. - in spite of

me, III. iv. 14.

despightfull, malicious, spiteful, 11. i. 15. despiteous, malicious, 11. vii. 62. despoile, to undress, disrobe, 1. x. 17, 11. xi. 49. dosso, dais, IV. X. 50. desynde, pa. part. destined, Iv. vii. 30. detaine, sb. detention, v. vi. 15. detect, to expose, accuse, v. ix. 48; to reveal, Muiop. 13. détestable, 11. xii. 8. detter, debtor, v. v. 37. deuloefull, full of devices, ingenuity, ingenious, v. iii. 3, x. t, Teares 385. douise, deuise, to talk, converse, discourse, 1. x. 12, xii, 17, IV. vi. 10; to describe, recount, 111. i. 42, 1v. viii. 3, S. C. Jan. 65; to guess, 11. ix. 42, 111. x. 21; to plan, contrive, vi. ix. 30, 35, R. T. 295; to consider, vi. iv. 34, vii. 6. douised, pa. part. designed, drawn, 11. i. 31. deuoyd, empty, I. ix. 15. déuoyr, duty, S. C. Sept. 227. dow, due, 11. viii. 55; duly, v. v. 22. dewelap, dewlap, fold of loose skin hanging from throat of cattle, S. C. Feb. 74. dowest, most deserved, appropriate, Hubberd dowfull, duefull, due, IV. xi. 44, VII. vi. 35. diapase, diapason, 11. ix. 22, Teares 549. diapred, pa. part. variegated (with flowers), Epith. 51. dide: bloudie d., dyed with blood, 11. xi. 21. dieper, diaper; a textile fabric (cf. diapred), Muiop. 364. differd, pret. deferred, postponed, Iv. iv. 36. difference, variation, 11. xii. 71; alteration, 11.

xii. 87. diffused, ppl. adj. dispersed, scattered, v. xi. 47. dight, to deck, adorn, 1. iv. 14, S. C. May 11; to put on, 1. vii. 8, Muiop. 91, Hubberd 1279; to prepare, make (trans.), 11. xi. 2, Past. Elegie 41; to prepare (refl.), vi. ii. 18, v. 40, Hubberd 233; to direct oneself, repair, go (reft.), iv. i. 16, v. iv. 43; to persorm, do, v. ii. 18; to dress, vi. xii. 15. dight, pa. part. decked, equipped, adorned, 1. iv. 6, 11. xii. 53, 1v. x. 38, S. C. Jan. 22; dressed, IV. x. 38; placed, set, 111. i. 39; made, fashioned, S. C. Apr. 29. dilate, trans. to spread out, II. xii. 53; refl., Amor. Son. 66; to relate, enlarge upon, III. 111. 62, v. vi. 17; to expand, extend, vii. vii. 58.

flowers, 111. ii. 49, Muiop. 197. dint, sb. mark, dent, t. i. I; blow, v. i. to; stroke, Thest. 58. dolors d. = pang of grief, S. C. Nov. 104.

dinting, pres. part. striking, vs. x. 30.

dirige, dirge, Hubberd 453. dirk, to darken, S. C. Feb. 134. dirke, adj. dark, S. C. Sept. 6. dirke, adv. darkly (fig.), S. C. Sept. 102. disaccord, to refuse assent, vi. iii, 7. disaduaunce, to draw back, lower, iv. iii. 8, iv. 7. disaduentrous, disastrous, Hubberd 100. disaray, sb. disorderly undress, 11. iv. 40. disarayd, pa. part. stript, disrobed, 1. v. 41; despoiled, S. C. Feb. 105; pret. stript, 1. viii. 46. disattyre, to undress, vi. ix. 17. disauaunce, to hinder, III. xi. 24. disauentrous, unfortunate, disastrous, 1, vii. 48, ix. 11, 1v. viii. 51, xii. 4, v. xi. 55. disauenture, mishap, misfortune, 1. ix. 45, vi. disboweld, ppl. adj. disembowelled, R. R. 383. disburdned, pret. unloaded, 11. vi. 11. discarded, pret, cast or forced away (Spens.), v. v. 8. discided, pa. part. cut (in two) fig., 1v. i. 27. discipled, pa, part, taught, disciplined, iv. Prol. i. discipline, teaching, advice, Hubberd 547. disclame, to renounce, 111. x. 15, 1v. v. 25. disclost, pa. part, revealed, recounted, 111. iv. 13. disclos'd, unfastened, IV. v. 16. disclosing, pres. part. unfolding. discolour'd, ppl. adj. variously coloured. 1. iv. 31, 111. x. 21, xi. 47, Epith. 51. discomfited, ppl. adj. disconcerted, 111, i. 43. discommended, pret. spoke disparagingly of, v. v. 57 discordfull, quarrelsome, IV. ii. 30, iv. 3. discounselled, pret. dissuaded, 11. xii. 34, 111. discountenaunce, to show disapprobation of, Teares 340. discoure, to discover, 111. ii. 20; to reveal, 111. iii. 50, p. 407. discouer, to tell, reveal, 17, vi. 4. discouered, pa. part. uncovered, 1. ii. 7. discure, to reveal, 11. 1x. 42. discouerie, disclosure, v. v. 33. discourse, course of arms or combat, vi. viii. discourteise, discourteous, III. i. 55. discreet, becoming, suitable, moderate, 11. xi1. disoust, pa. part. shaken off (fig.), 111. i. 48. expose, II. xii. 66. displaid, -yed, pa. part. disdeigned, pret. thought unworthy, R. T. spread out, stretched out, 1. i. 16, 11. v. 32, Gnat 240, Love 286. disease, sb. trouble, distress, 111. v. 19, v1. v. disple, to subject to penance, 1. x. 27. 40, ix. 19. displeasance, displeasure, 11. x. 28, 1v. vi. 4.

disease. vb. to incommode, trouble, 1. xi. 38. 11. ii. 12, 24, S. C. July 124, Worlds Vanite 28. diseased, ppl. adj, troubled, afflicted vi. iii. 22, Hubberd 40. disentrayle, to draw forth from the entraile or inward parts, Iv. vi. 16, v. ix. 19. disentrayled, ppl. adj, 1v. iii, 28. disgrace, ill-favouredness, v. xii, 28. disguizement, disguise, 111. vii. 14, 1v. v. 20. dishabled, pret. disparaged, 11. v. 21. disherited, pa. part. dispossessed, banished from its rightful domain, S. C. Epistle p. 417. disinherit, to prevent from taking possession (fig.), v. v. 36. disleall, disloyal, 11. v. 5. dislikefull, distasteful, 1v. ix. 40. disloignd, pa. part. distant, removed, iv. x. 24. dismall day, one of the dies mali or unpropitious days, 11, vii, 26, viii, 51. dismay, sb. faintheartedness, terror, 11. xi. 41; ruin, v. ii. 50; dismaying influence, Amor. Son. 88. dismay, vb. to defeat, 11. v. 38, 111. iv. 25, v. ii. 8, vi. x. 13; to grieve (refl.), iv. i. 40. dismayd, -id, pa. part. defeated, 111. 1. 29; grieved, IV. i. 37; daunted, v. xi. 26. dismayd, ppl. adj. ill-made, misshapen, il. dismayfull, appalling, v. xi. 26. dismayfully, in dismay, v. vni. 38. dismayld, pret. stript the mail of, 11. vi. 29. dispace, to walk or move about, Gnat 265 (refl.). dispacing, pres. part., Muiop. 250. disparage, sb. misalliance, unequal match, iv. viii, 50. disparaged, pa. part. cast down, 11. x. 2. disparagement, disgrace of a misalliance, 111. viii. 12; low rank, iv. vii. 16. dispart, to pare as under, cleave, 1. x. 53, 111. xii 38, iv. ix. i. dispatcht, pret. freed, relieved, vi. in. 10. dispence, sb. dispensing or bestowing liberally. liberality, hospitality, 11, ix, 20, xii, 42, v, xi. dispence, 16. to make amends, 1. iii. 30, v. xi. dispiteous, unpitying, 1, ii. 15. display, to stretch out, spread out, 11. v. 30, x. 15, 111. ii. 47. Epith. 303; intr., S. C. May 196; to descry, discover, 11. xii. 76; to displease, to annoy, III. V. 19. disport, entertainment, amusement, sport, pleasure, 1, ii, 14, 11, vi, 26, 111, i, 40. disporting, pres. part, sporting, frolicking, Dapkn, 118. dispraise, -ze, to disparage, depreciate, vi. vni. 26, R. T. 220. dispred, dispredden, to spread out, abroad, 1. iv. 17, 11. ii. 40, 111. v. 51, v. xii. 13; (infr.) 1v. vii. 40. disprad, fa. part. v. xii. 36. dispred, -dd, pa. part. and fpl. adj. 11, 111. 30, p. 412 (fig.), Gnat 242. disprofesse, to renounce the profession of, iii. X1. 20. dispurusyance, want of provisions, in, x. 10. disquietnesse, trouble, unrest, 11. vii. 12. disseise, -ze, to deprive, dispossess, 1, xi, 20, vii. vii. 48. disshiuered, fpl. adj. shattered to pieces, iv. i. 21. dissolute, enfecbled, weak, 1. vii. 51; wanton, 111. viii. 14. distaine, to stain, in. iv. 17. distaind, -ynd, fa. fart. stamed, i. xi. 23, 111, vni. 49. S. C. Oct. 110; sullied, defiled (fig.), 11. iv. 22. distent, pa. fart. extended, beaten out, 11. VII. 5. disthronize, to dethrone, 11. X. 44. distinct, pa. part. marked, vi. m. 23. distort, ffl. adj. distorted, wrv, awry, iv. i. 28. v. xii. 36. distraine, to oppress, afflict, 1. vii. 38; to pull off, tear asunder, 11. xii. 82. distraught, pa. part. distracted, distressed, 1. 1x. 38, 1v. 111. 48, R. T. 579; pulled asunder, drawn in different directions, iv. vii. 31, v. v. 2. distraughted, ffl. adj. distracted, H. Beautic distroubled, ffl. adj. greatly troubled, iii. iv. 12. dit, ditty, 11. vi. 13. dites (for dights), lifts, raises, 1. viii. 18. diueling, young devil, imp, Three Lett. p. diuers, adv. differently, IV. V. 11. diuerse, diverting, distracting, 1, i. 10, 44, 11 ii. 3, Iv. i. 5. diuersly, in different ways, v. v. 2. diuerst, fret. turned aside, 111, iii. 62. diuide, to perform with 'divisions'; to descant, 1. v. 17, iii. i. 40; to penetrate, 1. xi. 18; to dispense, v. Prol. q; to allocate, Clout 761; to give forth in various directions, Amor.

Son. 6.

adj. Darkn. 214 : rendered divine. diuynd. pa. pari., Clout 806: described. dinoroed, pa. part, separated, I. iii. 2. do, doe, to cause, make, 1, vii. 14, 11, vi. 7, 111. n. 34, m. 39, v. 50, vii. 32, ix. 17, v. ix. 35, vi. v. 28. doen, inf. arch. to do, cause, make, 1 xii. 19, 11, iii. 12, 111, iv. 22. done, inf. 111. 1, 28, ii. 23. donne, inf. 111, vii. 12, vi. X. 32. doen, pa. part. 1. in. 14, 39, 111. x. 32; doen (done) be dead, to dye - put to death, pa. part., v.iv. 29, vi. viii. 29. donne, pa. part. iv. vi. 5. doon, 3rd pers. plur. arch. 1, ili. 36, 11. i. 29, 111. iv. 1, S. C. Feb. 6; to doe away - to banish, remove, 1, iii. 39, 111. ii. 33. vi. xi. 29; for nothing good to donne - goodfor nothing, III. vii. 12; hardly doen - done with difficulty, 1. ni. 14; well to donne - welldoing, 1. x. 33. doon, pa. part., Amor. Son. 16, doale, distribution, dealing (of blows), v. iv. 39. dock, buttocks (lit, tail), Three Lett. p. 625. doctorally, in the manner of a doctor, learnedly, Three Lett. p. 614. document, instruction, teaching, 1. x. 19. doffing, fres. fart, taking off. dofte, fret. 111, iv. 5, ix. 21. dole, IV. VII. Arg., v. xi. 14, Hubberd 1244, Clout 22. doole, grief, sorrow, 11. xii. 20, 111, x. 17, xi. 17, v. xi. 25, vi, vii. 39, S. C. Feb. 155, Aug. 165; mourning, lamentation, iv. viii. 3. dolor, dolour, grief, m. ii. 17, iv. viii. 3, S. C. Nov. 104. Dolphinet, pseudonym, Clout 866. don, to put on, wear, 111, vi. 38, vi. viii. 24, donne, dun, dark, S. C. May 265. doome, decree, 1. ix. 41; judgement, 11. v. 12, vii, 62, iv. iv. 36, S. C. Aug. 135; opinion, iv. x. 21; fate, v. iv. 39. dome, punishment, iv. xi. 38. doomefull, fatcful, vi. vi. 22, Misc. Sonn. 1. dooue, dove, Three Lett. p. 626. dortour, sleeping-room, vi. xii. 24. doted, stupid, 1. viii. 34. doubt, sb. fear, 111. v. 12, vi. ii. 29, viii. 321 danger, risk, v. xi. 47. doubt, vb. to fear, v. xi. 2, v1. iv. 27. doubted, redoubted, S. C. Oct. 41. doubtful, fearful, apprehensive, 1. vi. 12, vi. ii. 29, S. C. May 294; awful, 11. i. 22; adv. 11. vii. 6. dougepers, one of the twelve peers of Charlemagne celebrated in mediaeval romances, 111. x. 31. dout, fear, 111. xii. 37, v. xi. 18; doubt, 1v. L. 11, 14. douehouse, dovecot, Three Lett. p. 627. diuin'd, pa. part. R. T. 611: diuinde, tpl.

duefull, see dewfull. dowe, dough, Three Lett. p. 631. drad, pret. dreaded, feared, 11. i. 45, 111. xii. 18. v. vii. 38, x. 18; pa. part. 11. iv. 42; ptl. adj. vII. vi. 3, 25. draft, attraction, Iv. ii. 10. drapet, cloth, 11. ix. 27. draught, plot, artifice, 11. x. 51; drawing, stroke, Iv. vii. 31. draue, pret. drove, Gnat 162. dread, fury, 11. v. 16. dreadfull, fearful, apprehensive, 111. i. 37; awe-inspiring, v. vii. 40. dreadlesse, fearless, v. iii. II. dreare, sb. fall, IV. viii. 42; grief, sadness, V. x. 35; stroke, v. xii. 20; mishap, misfortune, vi. ii. 46, iii. 4. drore, dreariness, sadness, gloom, 1. viii. 40, 11. xii. 36. dreare, adj. dreadful, 11. xi. 8. drearing, sorrow, grief, Daphn. 189. dred, sb. 1. Prol. 4, 1v. viii. 17; dread, III. ii. 30; dreed, 1. vi. 2: object of reverence, attention, dreed, injury, 11, xii, 26. dreddest, most dreadful, IV. ii. 32. drenched, pa. part. drowned, iv. xi. 38, (fig.) VI. iii. 10. drent, pa. part. drowned, 11. vi. 49, vii. 61, xii. 6, S. C. Nov. 37, Gnat 585; (fig.) Teares 210, Clurinda 94. drerihed, drearyhead, dreariness, grief, iii. i. 16, 62, ii. 30, Past. Elegie 133; dismalness, gloom, 111. xii. 17, Muiop. 347. dreriment, dreeriment, dreariness, grief, sorrow, 1. ii. 44, viii. 9, 111. iv 30, S. C. Nov. 36, R. T. 158, Epith. 11. drery, bloody, gory, I. vi. 45. dresse, to arrange, prepare, 111. xi. 20. drest, pret. 1. ix. 54; carried on, IV. X. 54. dreuill, a dirty or foul person (orig. a slave), IV. ii. 3. drift, impetus, 1. viii. 22; plan, plot, 1. ii. 9, 11. xii, 69; aim, object, 111, x, 6, v, 1x, 42, p, 409. driue, to pass, spend, Gnat 154. driue, pret. drove, struck, v. xi. 5. driuen, pa. part. smelted, 11. vii. 5. drisling, falling in fine drops (of tears, water), L. iii. 6, S. C. Jan. 41, Amor. Son, 18. dromedare, dromedary, 1v. viii. 38. droome, drum, 1, ix. 41. drouping, drooping, tading, 1. i. 36, 11. x. 30. drouth, drought, thirst, 11. vii. 57. drouer, boat (used for fishing), 111. viii. 22. drowsy-hed, drowsiness, 1. ii. 7. droyle, to drudge, slave, Hubberd 157. drugs, medicine, II. i. 54. dryrihed, see drerihed. dub adubbe, scuffle, fight, Three Lett. p. 615. 45.

dumpish, dull, heavy, sad, IV. ii. 5, Amor. dumps, depression, Amor. Son. 52. dunglecocke, dunghill cock, i.e. coward. Three Lett. p. 621 duraunce, captivity, III. v. 42. durefull, lasting, enduring, 1v. x. 30, Amor. Son. 6. duresse, confinement, constraint, Iv. viii. 19.

xii. IO. dye, hazard, 1. ii. 36. each where, everywhere, i. x. 54, Muiop. 376. Thest. 84, Clout 634. earne, to yearn, long, 1. i. 3, vi. 25, ix. 18, 11 iii. 46, 111. x. 21, S. C. March 77; to be grieved, IV. xii. 24; to become angry, Muiop. 254. earnest, pledge, vr. xi. 40. earst, erst, formerly, a short time ago, lately, 1. v. 9, xi. 27, 111. ii. 27, viii. 2, 3, vi. 11i. 8, S. C. Oct. 7. at earst, erst = at first, formerly, 11. i. 29, iv. 39, vi. iii. 8; at length, now, 11. vi. 49, v. Prol. 2, vi. iii. 8, S. C. Dec. 105; at once, S. C. Sept. 6. easement, relief, vi. iv. 15. Easterlings, inhabitants of eastern countries. such as Eastern Germany and the Baltic coasts, п. х бз. eath, ethe, easy, u. iii. 40, iv. xi. 53, S. C. July 90, Sept. 17, Muiop. 311; ready, susceptible, IV. vi. 40; easily, Hubberd 404. edgd, pret. stimulated, 1v. ii. 17. edifyde, -ide, built, 1. i. 34 (pa. part.), Gnul 660; 111. i. 14 (ppl. adj.); R. T. 551 (pret.). eeke, eke, vb. to augment, increase, 1. v. 42, III. ii. 35, vi. 22, vii. 55, v. xii. 35. eekt, pa part. lengthened, Iv. ii. 53; eeked, increased S. C. Sept. 30. ooking, vol. sb. increasing, S. C. Sept. 31. efferced, pa. part. rendered fierce, maddened, 111. xi. 27. Ct. enflerced. efforce, to violate by force, 1. vi. 4; to force out, 111. ii. 15, v. ix. 47; to force open, 111. ix. 9, xii. 27. efforced, ppl. adj. uttered with effort, forced out, 11. viii. 4. efforat, pa. part. compelled by force, 111. xii. 43. effórt, 111. i. 52, xi. 46, v. ii. 5. effraide, ppl. adj. frightened, 1. i. 16. oft, afterwards, 11. iv. 18, viii. 41, S. C. Feb. 42; again, IV. iii. 21, VL ix. I, Beautie 114; also, S. C. Sept. 191, Gnat 536. eftsoones, forthwith, 1. i. 11, 111. i. 31, v. viii.

```
case, iii. i. 64 (cf. embosse). embost, pa.
eide, pa. part. kept in view, aimed at, 11, iv. 7;
 seen, IV. iv. 7.
eie, aye, ever, 11. iii. 19.
eine, eyes, p. 409, Elegie 64. Cf. eyen.
eke, adv. also, 11. i. 21, p. 411, S. C. Jan. 51,
 May 86, p. 434.
eld, old age, age, 1. viii. 47, x. 7, 11. iii. 16, 1v.
 ii. 33, xi. 24, vii. vii. 13, 31, S. C. Feb. 54,
 206, Dec. 134.
                                                   Gnat 224.
elect, ppl. adj. chosen, 111. vii. 22.
election, choice, v. v. 26, Amor. Son. 84.
elfe, (1) name applied to a knight, 1. i. 17, v.
 2, 11. vii. 7; (2) a masculine supernatural crea-
 ture, 11, x. 71, 111, iii. 26; (3) creature, 1v. v. 34.
olfin, elfish, 1. iv. 42, x. 63; elf, 1. x. 60.
Elisels, pseudonym, Clout 403.
ellope, to run away, v. iv. q.
                                                   R. R. 394.
elocution, literary style, S. C. Episile p. 419.
els, else, already, formerly, 1. v. 43; or else,
 11. viii, 33, S. C. March 114; otherwise, che-
 where, 11. ix. 8, 111. vi. 16, 1v. v. 28, Hubberd
embace, -se, to humble, humiliate, iii, vii,
  15, vi. i. 3, vi. 20 (refl.), R. R. 110; to lower,
 Daphn. 180, Amor. Son. 13. embased, pa.
                                                    v. iii. 33.
 part. degraded, Amor. Son. 82. embaste,
                                                  eme, uncle, 11, x, 47.
 pret. dishonoured, 111. i. 12; pa. part, 111. ix.
embard, pa. part. confined, imprisoned, 1. ii.
  31, vii. 44, 111. xi. 16.
                                                    139.
ambase, embaste, see embace.
embássade, quasi-adv. on an embassy, Beautie
embássage, message, 111. ix. 28.
                                                   emong, among, 11. xii. 10.
embathed, ppl. adj. fragrant (ellipt. for em-
 bathed in perfume), Muiop. 194.
                                                   iii. 47.
embatteld, -eild, ppl. adj. armed for battle,
 11. V. 2. V. viii. 34.
embaulm'd, pa. part. anointed, iv. vii. 40.
                                                    impair.
embay, to bathe, 1. x. 27, 11. i, 40, xii, 60
  (refl.); to bask, Muiop. 206. embayd, pret.
 bathed (fig.), pervaded, suffused, 1. ix. 13, 111.
                                                    31, v. iv. 50.
  vi. 7; pa. part. 11. viii. 55, 111. xii. 21.
embayed, ppl. adj. furnished with a bay, iv.
embayld, pa. part. enclosed, 11. iii. 27.
embellisht, pa. part. adorned, S. C. Feb. 118.
                                                    excited by passion.
embosome, to cherish, embrace (fig.), 11. iv.
  25; to plunge, implant (fig.), 11. xii. 29.
embosse 1, pa. part. embost, adorned, 111. i.
  32, IV. iv. 15, S. C. Feb. 66.
embosse 3, pa. part. embost, driven to extrem-
  ity, hard pressed (of a hunted animal), 111. i.
                                                    lation, 1, x. 56.
  22, xii. 17; embost with bale = exhausted (cf.
  embosse 3), 1, ix. 20,
 emboase 3, to plunge, 1. xi. 20; to cover, en- S. C. Feb. 53.
```

part, covered, encased (in armour), s. iii. 24: in ease embost = 'wrapped' in ease, vz. iv. 40. embowd, pa. part, encircled, 1, ix. 10. bowed, ppl. adj., Worlds Vanitie 17. embowelled, pa. part, disembowelled, 111, vii. 29; thrust into the bowels (fig.), vi. viii, 13. embowring, pres. part, sheltering (intr.), emboyled, ppl. adj. agitated, 1, xi, 28; pres, part, 11, iv. 9, v. 18, boiling (with anger). embrace 1, to fasten, buckle on (arms), 11. i. 26. embrace 2, to protect, 111, viii, 20; to love, vi. i. 3. embraste, pret. grasped, 11. iv. 14. embracement, embrace, 11, iv. 26, 111, viii, 10. embraue, to adom, m. i. 60, S. C. Nov. 109, embreaded, pa. part, plaited, braided, 111, vi. 18. embrew, to plunge, 1. xi, 36, 11. i, 37, 111, xii. 32, R. R. 330; to pour, emit moisture, 11. v. 33; to stain (with blood), vs. vili, 40, Bellay 77; to imbue, H. Love 47. embrewed, ppl. adj. blood-stained, 111. vi. 17. embrodered, ppl. adj. embroidered, 111. xil. q embusied, pa. part. occupied, iv. vii. 29. emeraude, emerald, 11. xii. 54. emmarble, to convert into marble (fig.), Love emmoue, to move (fig.), 1. ii. 21, 11, i. 50. emmoued, pa. part. 11. vii. 51, 111. xi. 4, xii. 2; enmoued, 1. vii. 38, ix. 48. emongst, amongst, 1. Prol. 1, viii. 37, 111. i. 39, empaire, 1, vii. 41, 11, x. 30, v. iv. 40, xi, 48 (to injure); empare, 1, x, 63; to diminish, empale, to encircle, border, Muiop. 297. emparlance, -aunce, treaty, parleying, tv. ix. empart, to assign, IV. vi. 32. empassion, to excite deeply, Worlds Vanitie 12, Daphn. 35. pa. part. empassioned, 1. iii. 2, 111. ix. 38, xi. 18, Daphn. 515; empassionate, v. ix. 46, Daphn. 193: stirred, empeach, sb. injury, detriment, 11. xil. 56. empeach, vo. to hinder, 1. viii. 34, 11. vii, 15. 111. iii. 53. xi. 12. vt. ii. 42. iv. 11. 10. empeopled, fa. part. established as the popuemperill, to imperil, endanger, sv. iv. 10. emperisht, -ed, pa. part. enfeebled, 111, vii. 20.

```
ene, even, S. C. Dec. 93.
empierce, to penetrate (fig.), Clout 431.
                                                 enfelon'd, ppl. adj. infuriated, v. viii. 48.
 pret. emperced (fig.), 11. ii. 1; empierst,
                                                 enflerced, pa. part. rendered fierce, 11. iv. 8.
 1. xi. 53, 11. viii. 45, 1v. xii. 19 (fig.); em-
                                                  Cf. efflerced.
 pierced, III. v. 19, xi. 41. empierst, pa.
                                                 enforce, to drive with force, iv. iv. 35; to
 part. (fig.), 111. ix. 39. empierced, ppl. adj.
                                                  emphasize, v. ix. 43; to strive, attempt, Clout
 (fig.), Daphn. 6.
empight, fixed in, implanted, penetrated : pret.
                                                  48i.
                                                 enforme, to affect, inspire, vi. vi. 3.
 11. iv. 46, 111. v. 20, 1v. iii. 10, v. x. 32; pa.
                                                 enfouldred, ppl. adj. like a thunder-cloud, i.
 part. vi. xii. 27, Beautie 49.
empire, vii. vi. 21.
                                                  enfrosen, pa. part. frozen (fig.), Love 146.
emplonged, pa. part. plunged, 111. x. 17.
                                                 enfyre, to harden by fire, Love 169.
empoysned, pa. part. III. v. 49; ppl. adj. III.
                                                  engine, trick, plot, 11. 1. 23, iv. 27; flur.
 vi. 13: poisoned.
                                                   wiles, 111. i. 57, x. 7, Amor. Son. 14.
emprize, -se, enterprise, undertaking (of a
                                                 engirt, pa. part. girt, surrounded, iv. vii. 7,
 chivalrous nature), 1. ix. 1, xii. 18, 11. iv. 12,
                                                   H. Beautie 37.
 vii. 39, v. iii. 15, iv. 2, vi. iv. 33; plur., S. C.
                                                  englut, to glut, fill (fig.), 11. ii. 23.
 Sept. 83.
empurpled, pa. part. made purple, reddened,
                                                  engore, to goad, infuriate (fig.), 11. viii. 42;
                                                   to wound deeply (refl.), vi. vii. q. engored,
 II. xii. 54, 111, vii. 17, 1v. vii. 6; fret. 111, xii.
                                                   pa. part. gored, wounded, 111. i. 38, v. 28;
empyring, ppl. adj. ruling, p. 409.
                                                   ppl. adj. 1v. ix. 31
                                                  engorga, to swallow up (fig.), 11. xu. 3. en-
enaunter, in case, lest by chance, S. C. Feb.
                                                   gorged, ppl. adj. devoured (fig.), 1. xi. 40
  200, May 78, Sept. 161.
                                                  engraffed, ppl. adj. 111. ii. 17; engraft, pa.
enbracement, embrace, 1. ii. 5.
                                                   part. 1v. ii. 10: implanted.
enbrewd, pa. part. stained, 1. vii. 17.
                                                  engrained, pa. part. dyed, S. C. Feb. 131,
 embrew.
                                                   Gnat 666.
enchace, to set, serve as a setting for, I. Xii.
                                                  engrasped, fret. 11. viii. 49; fa. fart. 11. V.
  23 (fig.), v. i. 11; to depict, 1v. v. 12; to en-
                                                   20: grasped, seized.
  grave (fig.), vi. iv. 35. pa. part. enchaced,
  -sed, Iv. x. 8, S. C. Aug. 27; to close in,
                                                  engraue<sup>1</sup>, to bury, 1. \times 42, 11. i. 60.
                                                  engraue<sup>2</sup>, to make (wounds) by incision, 111.
  enclose, v. x. 34. pa. part. enchaste,
  Hubberd 624. enchaced, -sed, fa. fart.
                                                   vii. 32; to cut into, iii. viii. 37.
                                                  engrieved, fpl. adj. 11. iv. 23 (ee), 111. i. 59.
  adorned, 11. ix. 24, Amor. Son. 82.
                                                   1v. vni. 7, vi. vni. 34, Worlds Vanitie 159;
 encheare, to cheer, encourage, vii. vi. 24.
 encheason, occasion, cause, 11. i. 30, S. C.
                                                   pa. part, 111. vi. 21; grieved.
                                                  engrosse, to take possession of, iii. iv. 38; to
  May 147, Sept. 116.
                                                   write in large letters, Clout 634. engrost,
 onclynd, pret. assented, vi. vii. 37.
                                                   pa. part. thickened, rendered gross, dense, 11.
 encomberment, disturbance, vi. viii. 38.
                                                   vi. 46, iii. iv. 13.
 encroch, to come on, advance, vi. xi. 47, S. C.
                                                  enhaunse, to raise, lift, 1. i. 17, v. 47 (fig.), 11.
                                                    vi. 31; to exalt, Clout 359. enhaunced,
 endamadge, to injure, 11. ini. 18; pret. v.
                                                   ppl. adj. lifted.
  viii. 14; pa. part. v1. xii. 38.
 endangerment, danger, v. ii. 20.
                                                  enlarge, -en, to set free, 1. viii. 37, 11. v. 18,
 endeuourment, endeavour, Hubberd 298.
                                                    viii, 61, ix. 13. enlargd, pa. part. 11. v. 19.
                                                  enlumine, to illuminate, shed lustre on, ii. ix.
 endew, to endow, 1. iv. 51, v. i. 2, VI. x. 14,
  vii. vii. 45, S. C. p. 433, Beautie 135.
                                                    4, v. Prol. 7, S. C. p. 417; pa. part. Amor.
                                                    Son. 66 (fig.), Love 108 (fig.).
 endighting, vbl. sb. inditing, composing,
  Sonnets p. 603.
                                                  enmoued, see emmoue.
 endite1, to censure, VI. xii. 41.
                                                  enrace, to implant, III. v. 52; fa. part. vi. x.
 endite, to give a literary form to, Past.
                                                    25, Beautie 114.
                                                   enragement, rapture, H. Love 286.
  Aeglogue 33.
                                                   enranckled, pa. part. enraged, 111. vini. 2.
 endlong, from end to end, iii. ix. 51, x. 19.
 endosse, to inscribe, portray (on the back), v.
                                                   enraunged, -anged, fa. fart. placed in a row,
                                                    rank, arranged, 1. xi. 13, xii. 7, 111. vi. 35, xii. 5,
   xi. 53, Clout 632.
                                                    H. Beautie 83, Proth. 122. enraunging,
 endur'd, pret. hardened, strengthened, 1v. vin.
                                                    pres. part. ranging, rambling in, vi. ii. 9.
   37.
```

enriuen, ppl. adj. torn, v. viu. 34. Clorinda entrailed, entrayld, entrayled, pa. part. entwined, interlaced, 11. ini. 27, v. 29, 111. vi. 4 (fig.). enrold, pa. part. enfolded, wrapped up, 11. xii. 44, xi. 46, iv. iii. 42, S. C. Aug. 30, Proth. 25. 25, 1v. iii. 41; coiled, vt. vi. 11, Gnat 257; entrall, .e, interior, II. xii. 6, 25. entrayle, mind, thought, vi. xi. 41. formed into a roll, vii, vii, 30, ensample, imitation, p. 407; warning, R. T. entreat, to occupy oneself in, II, vii, 43: to treat, deal with, Iv. x. 10, vi. i. 40, Hubberd 462. 0.22. Misc. Sonn. 1; to treat of, describe, v. i. 1. enseam, to contain, Iv. xi. 35. entrenched, pa. part, pierced, 111. xii. 20. ensew, ensewen, to follow, 1, iv. 40, v. 25, enure, to make use of, iv. ii. 29; to exercise, 111. i. 45, v. iv. 15, Teares 54. ensew'd, Amor. p. 578, Three Lett. p. 611. enur'd. fret. v1. ni. 50; to pursue, 111. x1. 5,( a profession) pa. part. mured, accustomed, Iv. viii, 27, VI. iv. ii. 46. ensue, to result from, i. iv. 34; viii. 14; committed, v. ix. 39. to follow, 11. iii. 2; to pursue (a profession), p. 412; fres. part. iv. ix. 5. ensude, fa. part. énuie, sb. emulation, m. i. 18. énuy, envy. 111. 1v. 47, v. 54, ix. 38. imitated, 11. xit. 59. enule, vb. to have malevolent feelings, be ensnarle, to catch, ensnare, v. ix. 9. angry, 11. ii. 19. pret. enuyde, 1v. iv. 44. entayl, vb. to penetrate, cut, 11, vi. 29; enenuy, to grudge, 1. ix. 1, 111. v. 50, vi. viii. 4. tayld, pa. part. carved, 11. in. 27. enwallowed, pa. part. rolled, iii. iv. 34, v. entayle, sb. carving, ornamentation, 11. vii. 4. M. 14. entent, intent, intention, S. C. May 102. Cf. enwombed, pa, part, pregnant, 11. i. 50, x. 50, intent. enterdeale, negotiation, v. vin. 21; interv. vn. 16; contained as in a womb), R. R. 67. enwrap, to capture (as in a fold), Past. Elegie course, Hubberd 785. enterprise, -se, sb. attempt, undertaking, 98. enwrapt, pret. wrapped, 1. xi. 23. opiphonoma, sentence or reflection concluding 1. viu. 15. v. x. Arg. a discourse, S. C. p. 440. epiphonematicos, enterpris, -se, -ze, vb. to entertain, 11. 11. 14; in the form of an epiphonema, S. C. p. 459. to attempt, undertake, ii. i. 19, v. viii. 11, equal, equitable, impartial, vii. vi. 35 l. 1. vi. viii. 18; to attempt to obtain, procure, iv. equalise, to equal, 111. ix. 44. An. 28. enterprisd, pa. part. undertaken, equipage, sb, equipment, retinue, 1. xi. 6, IV. xi. i. vii. 45. enterprised, ppl. adj. attempted, 17, S. C. Oct. 114. 111. xi. 24. equipaged, pa. part. arrayed, equipped, 11. ix. entertaine, to treat, 1. iii. 43; to accept, receive (pay), 11. ix. 6; to show hospitality to. equipollent, equivalent, Three Lett. p. 631. receive as a guest, v. xii. 10, Hubberd 235; ore, ever, S. C. Oct. 33. to take (a way), vi. iv. 24; to encounter, ere many yeares, many years ago, v. iv. 7. meet with, vi. xi. 46, Gnat 563; to treat of, Amor. Son. 12; to engage in, Hubberd 398. erect, to set up, establish, vi. vi. 34. erowhile, before, formerly, IV. xi. 2. entertainment, provisions, hospitality, t. x. ermelin, ermine (animal); stoat, 111. ii. 25. 37, II. ii. 35. ermine, fur of ermine, in. i. 59. entertake, to entertain, v. ix. 35. erne, see earne. entertayne, hospitality, Iv. viii. 27, v. ix. 37; reception, welcome, Hubberd 1085. errant, wandering, t. x. 10, 111, viii, 6, vt. v. entire, adj. fresh, 1. vi. 44; all of one piece, H. erst, see oarst. 1. vii. 33; perfect, genuine, sincere, 1. viii. 40, eschew, to escape, iv. viii. 56, vi. viii. 50; to 111. ii. 44, vii. 16, 1v. v. 4, ix. 13, v. xi. 61, vi. avoid, Amor. Son. 62. eschewd, pa. part. v. 38, viii. 3, H. Love 157; strong, 111. i. 47. untroubled, avoided, 11. x. 13. parts entire = inward, internal parts, Iv. viii. enloyne (refl.), to withdraw, 1. iv. 20. 23, 48, v. vii. 37, Amor. Son. 6, 85, H. Love espiall, sight, glimpse, Iv. x. 17; appearance, 271; mind e., Beautie 223. entire, adv. entirely, altogether, 11. v. 8, viii. v. iv. 15. essoyne, exemption, 1. iv. 20. 15, vi. viii. 15; sincerely, earnestly, vi. v. estate, state, condition, 1. iii. 7, 1v. ii. 20; rank, 23. V1. ii. 27. entirely, earnestly, 1. xi. 32, 111. ix. 51, vi. vii. estraunged, pa. part. removed abroad, S. C. Epistle p. 418. entitled, pa. part. dedicated, p. 415.

entraile, twisting, coil, 1. i. 16.

eterne, eternal, 111. vi. 37, 47.

etérnise, to render eternal, immortal, Teares 582; pa. part. 1. x. 50. éternize, Amor. Šon. 75. othe, see eath. ough, yew, 1. i. 9. eughen, ewghen, of yew, I. xi. 19, Hubberd Euphrates, Iv. xi. 21. euangely, gospel, II. x. 53. ouent, fate, Teares 143; fortune, Gnat 534. euill, poor, unskilful, vi. xi. 40. ewfte, eft, newt, v. x. 23. exanimate, ppl. adj. lifeless, 11. xii. 7. excheat, gain, t. v. 25; personal property, which fell by escheat (fig.), III. viii. 16. excrement, overflow, IV. xi. 35. expell, to discharge (an arrow), 11. xi. 24. experiment, sb. experience, practice, II. vii. 1, v. ii. 17. experimented, ppl. adj. experienced, practised, proved, Two Lett. p. 639. expert, vb. to experience, S. C. Nov. 186. expert, adj. or pa. part. experienced, tried, 11, vii, 1, 1v. xi, 10, v. ii. 16, vi. i. 36. expire, to fulfil a term, t. vii. 9; to breathe out, t. xi. 45; to bring to an end, Iv. i. 54; to continue for, IV. vi. 43. exprest, pret. expelled, ejected, 11. x. 43; pa. part. crushed out, II. xi. 42. extanie, astonishment, vii. vi. 23. extent, pa. part. stretched out, 11. vii. 61. extirpe, to root out, 1. x. 25. extold, pa. part. raised, vii. vii. 37. extort, pa. part, extorted, v. ii. 5, iii. 30, x. 25. extract, pa. part. descended, III. ix. 38. extreamitie, extreme suffering, Daphn. 185. extreate, extraction, v. x. i. extrinsocall, external, Three Lett. p. 615. exul. exile, Clout 894. eyas (attrib.), a young newly-fledged or -trained hawk, 1. xi. 34, H. Love 24 (fig.). eyde, pa. part. perceived, caught sight of, Clout 267. Cf. eide. eye, a brood (of pheasants), S. C. p. 434. eyen, -ne, eyes, 1. it 27, iv. 9, 21, x. 47, 111. vii. Q, VI. Xi. 22.

F

face, to maintain a false appearance, v. ix. 5.
fact, deed, t. iv. 34, ix. 37, 111. viii. 32, 1x.
38, v. ix. 43.
fail, to deceive, 11. v. 11, 111. xi. 46, 1v. xii.
23.
fain, -e, adj. eager, t. i. 6, 1v. vi. 33; apt,
wont, 1v. viii. 37; glad, 1. vi. 12, v1. iv. 16.

S. C. Feb. 67, May 305; adv. gladly, with pleasure, I. iv. 10, v. xii. 10. fain, fayne, vb.1 to delight, rejoice, v. xii. 36. fain'd. pret, desired, III. ix. 24, VI. iii. Q. fayning, ppl. adj. longing, wistful, Love 216. faine, fayne, feyne, feign, vb.2 to feign. pretend, 1. vii. 38, xii. 35, 11. i. 9, 1v. iv. 47. S. C. Sept. 137; to disguise, hide, 11. iii. 20; to mistake, Iv. vii. 15; to fashion, form, vi. viii. 44: to imagine wrongly, vt. xii. 19; refl. to imagine, Love 210. fained, fayned, pret. were anxious, v. viii. 24; ppl. ad pretended, 1. i. 50, ii. 30; disguised, 1. xii. 10, iv. i 7; imaginary, III. xii. 43. faire, adv. gently, 1. vii. 29; cleverly, 1. viii. 7. fairely, completely, entirely, Iv. vi. 13; gently, 11. vi. 40. faitor, faytor, -our, vagabond, villain, impostor, 1. iv. 47, xii. 35, iv. i. 44, iii. 11, vi. 1, 18, iv. 1, S. C. May 39, 170. fall, fallen, to befall, 11. xii. 68, 1v. i. 44. S. C. May 50, June 76; fall with = to make (land), v. xii. 4. false, adj. weak, insecure, 1. xi. 54. false, vb. to be false to, betray, deceive, S. C. p. 440; ppl. adj. 1. ii. 30, 11. xii. 44, 111. i. 47; falsed his blowes = made a feint, II. V. 9. falser, deceiver, S. C. May 305, Dec. p. 467. falses, sb. falsehoods, v. ii. 48. fancie, imagination, Beautie 222. fantasy, -sy, fancy, 11. xii. 42, S. C. Aug. 22; apprehension, vi. ix. 12. fare, sb. departure, journey, v. x. 16; food, S. C. Jan. 44. fare, vb. to go, proceed, 1. i. 11, iii. 16, 11. i. 4, ii. 12, v. x. 17; to act, proceed, iv. ix. 27, vi. xi. 48, xii. 31; far'd with = employed, used, 1v. iv. 41. farre forth, farforth, far, 111. Prol. 3, ix. 53. fast, ppl. adj. having a face, 11. xi. 12. fastned, pret. attached herself, III. ii. 26; took hold, v. iv. 15; ppl. ady. settled, confirmed, H. Beautie 286. fastnesse, security, safety, v. ix. 5, x. 18. fatal, ordained by fate, III. iii. 2, ix. 49. fato, destined term of life, III. viii. 2. faulchin, falchion; a broadsword, v. vii. 29. fault, to do wrong, offend, II. xi. 9, S. C. p. 419; to lack, be deficient in, S. C. p. 418, Three Lett. p. 611. faund, pret. fawned, 11. ix. 35. fauour, face, feature, v. vii. 39. fay 1, fairy, 11. x. 71, 1v. iii. 2. fay 2, faye, faith, v. viii. 19, S. C. Sept. feare, sb. companion, vi. viii. 25; to f. together, II. x. 64. See fore. fearefull, timid, vi. xii, 36. fearen, to frighten, 11, xii, 25, 111, iv. 15, vi. viii. 47, VII. vi. 15. feastfull, festival (adj.), vi. x. 22. feat, action, deed, 11. ix. 6, v. v. 7. feateously, dexterously, Proth. 27. feature, form, 1. viii. 49, 111. ix. 21; character, 1v. ii. 44. feculent, foul, 11. vii. 61. fee, tenure, 11, ii. 13; wealth, property, 11, vii. 56, 1v. i. 35, ix. 13, v. vii. 43, S. C. May 106; service, vi. \* 21, Clout 370. feebled, pa. part. weakened, 1, viii, 23. fooblesse, weakness, iv. viii, 37. fold, pa. part. broken, 1. viii. 47; overthrown, 1v. i. 34, iv. 18; prostrated, vii. vii. 13; pret. cast, 11. vi. 32. sell, sb. gall, rancour, 111. xi. 2. fell, adj. fierce, savage, 1, 11, 10, 111, xi, 27, 1v. 111. 8, ix. 20, v. ix. 1, Clout 808. foll, vb. pret. befell, iv. iv. 23. fellonest, most fierce, iv. ii. 32. folly, fiercely, cruelly, 1. v. 34, 11. xi. 24, vi. xi. 48, Muiop. 343, Gnat 277, Amor. Son. 56. felnesse, cruelty, fierceness, 11. vni. 37, 1v. viii. 23, v. xii. 32. felonous, fierce, fell, m. i. 65. feminitee, -ie, womanhood, 111. vi. 51, Clout fensible, strong, fortified, 11. ix. 21, 111. x. feood, feud, enmity, 1v. i. 26. fere, feare, companion, mate, t. x. 4, tv. iii. 52, x. 27, v. iii. 22, vi. ii. 31, xii. 4, p. 410. forme, enclosure, habitation (fig.), 111. v. 23; rent, Hubberd 1160. forry, ferry-boat, 11. vi. 19. fet, to fetch, 11. ix. 58; pret. v. iii. 11, rescued; Thest. 71, drew forth; fa. part. H. Beautie 01. derived. fetch, vb. to reach, 11. xii. 21. fetcht, fa. part. = taken, Daphn. 439. fotche, trick, Three Lett. p. 622. feutre, fewter, to put a spear into the 'fewter ' or rest, 1v. iv. 45, vi. 10. flaunt, a warrant addressed to the Irish Chancery for a grant under the great seal. Used gen. = warrant, Hubberd 1144. field, (ker.) the surface of an escutcheon or shield on which the 'charge' is displayed, 11. file, sb. catalogue, recital, vii. vi. 37.

file, fyle, vo. 1 to render smooth, polish, 1. i.

35 (fig.), 111. ii. 12 (fig.), p. 412. filed ppl. adj. polished (fig.), 11. i. 3, Clost 701. filed. file, vb. to defile, S. ('. July 192. filed, ppl. adj. 111. i. 62. fill: at f. = in abundance, vi. x. g. fillet, ribbon for the head, 1. iii. 4. fino, end, 11. xii. 59, 1v. iii. 37; in fine = finally, at last, S. C. Feb. 217. fingring, work done with the fingers, Muiop. firme, to fasten, fix, 11. vii. I. fisnamie, physiognomy, face, Three Lett. p. 625. Cf. physnomy. fit, fitt, sb.1 attack (of illness, &c.), condition, 1. i. 40, ii. 18, iv. 45, xi. 27, 11. xii. 44, 111. ii. 5; mortal crisis, feeling of impending death, 1. vi. 37, 11. vii. 66, R. T. 598; painful experience, sorrow, III. i. I, IV. vi. 30; access of rage, v. iv. 39; fitte, paroxysm, Three Lett. p. 614. fit, sb. strain of music, 1. xi. 7, Close 69. fit, fitte, vb. to be fitting, 11. ii. II, S. C. Oet. 88. fitted, pa. part. suited, IV. i. 12. flagg, to move feebly (of a bird's wings), p. 411. flaggy, -ie, drooping, 1. xi. 10, 111. iv. 33, vi. 39, Worlds Vanitie 60. flake, flash (of lightning, flame), 111. ii. 8, Epith. 27. flamed, ppl. adj. inflamed, 11. vi. 8. flaring, ppl. adj. spreading, v. xii. 38. flasht, pret. dashed, splashed, 11. vi. 42. flasket, a long shallow basket, Proth. 26. flatling, with the flat side (of a sword), v. v. 18. flatly, plainly, absolutely, Hubberd 324. flatt, plain, S. C. Sept. 105. flatuous, full of air or wind, Three Lett, p. 614. Flauia, pseudonym, Clout 572. flaw, rush, onset, v. v. 6. fleare, to jeer, mock, Hubberd 714. fledge, fledged, fully developed, Three Lett. p. 621. fleet, to float, 11. vii. 14, xii. 14, 1v. ix. 33, Clout 286, 596; to fly, flit, 111. ix. 7. fleshlinesse, lust, S. C. p. 423. flesht, pa. part. incited, vi. viii. 9. flex, flax, 111. i. 47. flit, vb. to give way, 1. iv. 5, R. T. 514; to depart, 11. vii. 66; to flutter, 111. xi. 42. flitted, pa. part. 1. ii. 19; ppl. adj. 1. vii. 21. flit, ppl. adj. departed, 11. xii. 44. flitting, ppl. adj. fleeting, changing, 1. xi. 18, 11. viii. 2. flit, flitt, adj. swift, fleet, II. iv. 38, vi. 20, III. xi. 39, p. 411; fleeting, changing, 111. i. 56;

light, iii. x. 57.

flong, pa. part. flung, Teares 543. flore, ground, 11. x. 10, vi. ii. 40. flote, to be flooded, III. vii. 34. flouret, flowrett, little flower, 11. vi. 7, S. C. Feb. 182. Nov. 81. flout, to mock, deride, vi. viii, II; pa. part. VII. vi. 50. flowre, ground, vi. vii. 8. See flore. flowre, floure, -deluce, -delice, flower of a plant of the genus Iris, 11. vi. 16, 1v. i. 31, S. C. Apr. 144. flud, flood, vii. vii. 33. flush, sb. a flight of birds suddenly started up, v. ii. 54. flushing, ppl. adj. rushing, flowing quickly, 1v. vi. 29. foen, see fone. foile, a thin sheet of metal, 1. iv. 4. fold: twise so many fold = twice as many, 11. viii. 41. folded, ppl. adj. shut in a fold (of sheep), S. C. p. 467. folke-mote, assembly, iv. iv. 6. foltring, ppl, adj. faltering, 1. vii. 24, 111. xi. 56. 12. foring, pres. part. giving forth as foam, t. v. 28; ppl. adj. covered with foam, 1. i. 1. fon, fool, S. C. Feb. 69, Apr. 158, Sept. 68, Oct. 91, Clout 292, fond, fonde, adj. foolish, 1. ix. 39, 111. i. 10, ii. 44, xii. 25, S. C. Sept. 58, Teares 327, Gnat 152, Daphn. 498. fond, vb. 1 pret. 1. x, 66; pa. part. 11, x11, 57; found. fond, vb.2 pret. tried, 111. vii. 26. fondling, fool, vi. vi. 42. fondly, foolishly, 111. xi, 38, v. iv. 26. fondnesse, folly, S. C. May 38, Amer. Son. 37. fone, 1. ii. 23, 11. viii. 21, 111. iii. 33. IV, V. 26, v. iii. 12, ii. 37, vi. xi. 20, Bellay 66; foen, 11, iii, 13 : foes. fonly, foolishly, S. C. May 58. food, feud, t. viii. 9, 11. i. 3. 18. foole-happie, lucky, 1. vi. 1. foole-hardise, -ize, folly, foolhardiness, it. ii. 17, iv. 42, R. R. 189. footewards, towards the foot, Three Lett. p. 625. footing, pres. part. stepping, walking, 1, vi. 8, vı, iii, 28. iii. 39. footpace: on f. = on foot, iv. viii. 34. for, notwithstanding, III. iv. 18; what is he for a . . . . what kind of a . . . is he, S. C. Apr. 17.

for end, finally, in short, Clout 324.

for that, because, v. xi. 54. for then, at the time, S.C. March 98. for thy, therefore, because, II. i. 14, vii. 6; ix. 40, III, iv. 26, S. C. July 71. for why, because, IV. xii. 15. forbeare, to give up, forth, II. i. 53; to leave alone, III. i. 22; to refrain from, cease, S. C. Apr. 15. forborne, pa. part. refrained from using, v. xi. 52; spared, R. R. 310. forbore, pa. part. v. xi. 54. forby, by, v. xi. 17. foreby, near, close by. 1. vi. 30, vii. 2, 111. v. 17, v. ii. 54; close by, past, 111. i. 15. fordoo, to destroy, v. xii. 3. fordonne, pa. part. ruined, undone, 1. x. 60, 11, i. 51, 111. vii. 34, 1v. ix. 28; 1v. v. 7 (auxiliary omitted); ppl. adj. exhausted, ruined, overcome, 1, v. 41, x. 47, 111. iii. 34, 1v. iv. 38. Amor. Son. 80. forecast, to contrive, plan, 1. iv. 45. forecast, pa. part. determined beforehand. in. foredamned, ppl. adj. utterly damned, iii. v foregoe, to go before, precede, iii v. 6. forewent, pa. part. S. C. July 117. forelay, pret, lay before, 11, iii. 29. forelent, pa. part. given up or resigned before hand, iv. iii, 6. forelifting, lifting up in front, t. xi. 15. forepast, ppl. adj. bygone, past, iv. i. 21, v 111. 40, Amor. Son. 62; former, Iv. iii. 44. forered, pret. betokened, Muiop. 29. foresay, to renounce, S. C. May 82. sayd, pa. part. excluded, S. C. July 60 foreshewed, pa. part, ordained, vii. vii. 45. foreside, front, upper side (fig ), v. iii. 30. foresight, 111. iii. 2, 1v. Prol. 1, viii. 44, x. 20, Muiop. 389. forestall, to prevent (by anticipation), I. iv. 45, 11. ix. II. forestalled, ppl. adj. taken beforehand, 11. iv. 30. foretaught, ppl. adj. previously taught, i. vii. forewent, see foregoe. forgat, pret. forgot, vii. 7. forged, false, I. ii. 36, VI. XII. 33, Amor. Son. forgerie, -y, -ye, deceit, artifice, 11. xii. 28, 111. i. 53, v. xi. 56, Clout 696; counterfeit, v. forgiue, to give, leave, vi. ix. 22. forgo, to give up, vi. iii. 39. forgon, -e, fa. part. relinquished, 11. iii. 12; allowed to go, v. viii. Q. forhaile, to distract (fig.), S. C. Sept. 243.

for-hent, pa. part. seized, overtaken, iii. iv. forlent, fret. gave up, iii, iv. 47. forlore, fpl. adj. forlorn, destroyed, lost, deserted, 1. viii. 39, 111. v. 50, Clout 182; pa. part. forsaken, abandoned, ii. iii. 31, iii. vi. 53, v. viii. 39, vi. xii. 12; pret. deserted, abandoned, 11. xii. 52, 111, iv. 34, ix. 52. forlore, adj. abandoned, depraved, v. xi. 61. forlorne, ppl. adj. forlorn, rumed, abandoned. 1, vii. 10, iii. 42; pa. part. abandoned, deserted, iv. viii. 15, Clout 90; led astray, Worlds Vanitie 84; bereft, deprived, S. C. formall, regular, S. C. Dec. 68, Hubberd 361, Clout 802. formally, expressly, ii. xii. 81. formerlie, -ly, a little time before, ii, xii, 67; first, beforehand, vi. i. 38, m. 38. forpas, to pass by, Hubberd 519; fret. 111 \ forpined, pfl. adj. wasted away, iii. x. 57. forray, sb. raid, iii. in. 58, vi. xi. 42. forray, vb. to ravage, raid, vi. xi. 40, viii. vii. 36; fret. 1, xii. 3. forrést, 111. x. 41. forsake, to avoid, t. xi. 24; to resonnce, it VI. 21. forslack, to neglect, vii. vii. 45. forslackt, -ed, pa. part. v. xii. 3, vi. xii. 12. forslow, -sloe, to delay, hinder, iv. v. 15, vii. vi. 16, S. C. June 119 forspent, fore-, pa. fart. atterly wasted, i. 1x. 43, 1v. v. 34forstall, forstallen, to prevent, impede, iii. i. 46, v. xit. 4, S. C. May 273. forswatt, ppl. adj. covered with sweat, S. C. April 99. forswonk, ppl. adj. tired with hard work, S. C. April 99. See awink. forthinke, to renounce, iv. xii. 14; to regret, forthright, straightway, immediately, 11. vii. 35; straight forward, ii. xi. 4, vi. vii. 7, S. C. Aug. 83. fortilage, a small fort, II. XII. 43. Fortune, sb. iv. iv. 37, v. iv. 6. fortune, vb. to happen, 1. iii. 5, vi. 20, 111. ii. 22, v. 18, vi. vii. 14, S. C. p. 447, Hubberd 631. fortunelessa, unfortunate, iv. viii. 27. fretted, fa. part. adomed, ii. ix. 37, iii. iii. fortunise, to make fortunate, vi. ix. 30. forwandring, fres. part. wandering astray, I. friend, to befriend, he'p, iv. ii. 7, x. 57. vi. 34. forwandred, prl. adj. wandered frigot, a light, swift vessel, frigate, 11, vi. 7, zii. astray, 111. zi. 20. forward, far, III. ix. 11.

forwarned, pa. part. prevented, i, ii, 18. forwasted, pret. 1. i. 5, 11, x. 52; ppl. adj. 1. xi. 1 : laid utterly waste, ravaged. forwearied, ppl. adj. 1, i. 32, ix. 13, xi. 45; pa. part. v. v. 50: utterly wearied. forwent, pret, of forgo, lett, iii, v. 10, iv vi. 11, Past. Elegie 174. forworne, fpl. adj. worn out, 1. vi. 35fonter, torester, iii. i. 17, iv. 45, 50, v. 13. fouldring, ppl. adj. thundering, ii. ii. 20. foule, bird, Bellay 97, Sonnets p. 607. fowle, adv. foully, iv. vii. 16. foy, allegiance, ii. x. 41. foyle, so 1 repulse, it, in, 13. foyle, sb.2 a thin layer (fig.), iv. ii. 19. foyle, vb. to deteat, overthrow, 11, x, 48, v found, pret, lunged, thrust, 11. v. 9, viii. 47, IV. 111. 25, V. v. 6. foyson, abundance, profusion, Thest. 98. fraight, ppl. adj. fraught, i. xii. 35, S. C. Sept. 84. frame, b. structure, construction, t. x. 59, 11. ii. 12, iii. i. 31, Clout 287; web (spiders f.), iv. ii. 50; in, out of f. . in, out of condition, order, S. C. Aug. 3, Oct. 25, frame, vh. to make, form, t. ii. 30, xii. 13, 111. i. 24, mi. 12, Teares 20, Muiop. 370; 10 support, 1, vin. 30; to direct, 111, 1, 20; to set on the way, vi. v. 40; to plan, iii, x. 16; refl. to direct, prepare, vi. vi. 25. ranchise, privilege, iv. ix. 37. franchisement, deliverance, v. xi. 36. francker, comp. more free, forward, II, ii. 37; frank, free, Hubberd 531. francklin, franklin, freeman, t. x. 6. franion, a loose woman, 11. ii. 37, v. iii. 22. fraught, pfl adj. filled (fig.), v. xi. 8, 20. fray, tb. to frighten, terrify, 1. i. 38, 52, iii. 19, xu. 11, 11, vni. 46, xii. 40, 111, iii, 12, v. xn. 15. fraye, sb. battle, affray, iv. i. 47. frayle, tender, iii. viii. 31; weak (transf.), iv. vi. 22. frend: with God to f. with God as help, i i. 28; with love to f., 111. iii. 14. frenne, stranger, enemy, S. C. Apr. 28. fresh, to freshen, revive, v. v. 45. fret, sb. a carved border, sv. xi. 27. fret, frett, vb. to devour, destroy, . vi. 44, ii.

iv. 14, Iv. vii. 12.

frise, fryse, frieze, decoration on a column, gainsaying, pres. part. protesting, p. 408. Bellay 45, Sonnets p. 607. gainsaid, -sayd, pret. opposed, 11. ii. 28: friske, sb. caper, gambol, IV. x. 46. frize, sb. frieze, coarse woollen cloth, vii, vii, 31, frise, vb. to freeze (fig.), vi. x. 33. 244, Sept. 131. fro, from, 1. iii. 28, vi. ix. 33. frolicke, vb. to rejoice, be merry, vi. iii. q. frollick, -e, adj. joyful, merry, vi. ix. 42, vii. vii. 39. fromwarde, adv. turned away from, S. C. P. 434 front, sb. forehead, 1, ii. 16. fronting, pres. part. serving as a front to, Bellay 17. frorne, pa. part. frozen, S. C. Feb. 243. frory, frosty, frozen, 111. viii, 30. 115. Cf. gin. froth-fomy, foaming, 1. xi. 23. frounce, to gather in folds, 1. iv. 14. froward, adj. perverse, 11. ii. 26, 111. v. 7, Hubberd 66; adv. = fromward, away, vt. x. frowie, musty, stale, S. C. July 111. Sept. 106. fruict, offspring, S. C. p. 435; fruit, S. C. Feb. 128. fry, sb. swarm, 1. xii. 7, S. C. Oct. 14. frie, spawn, young fish, Clout 242. fry, frie, vb. intr. to boil, seethe (of water), 11. xii. 45, v. ii. 15. fryse, see frise. fulfill, to fill, occupy, 11. xii. 30. fulmined, pa. part. fulminated, sent forth, 111. ii. 5. fume, sb.: in a great f. = at great pressure (of vapour), Three Lett. p. 616. fume, vb. to pass away, Clout 720. funerall, death, destruction, 11. v. 25, R. T. 117; grave, monument, R. R. 37. furniment, furnishing, fittings, Iv. iii. 38. furniture, gear, equipment, in. i. 11, vii. 18, S. C. p. 430, Mniop. 56 (plur.), Three Lett. p. 615. furre, furr, far, S. C. pp. 418, 427, 458. furst, first, III. xi. 1. fylde, pa. part, felt, vi. xii. 21. iii. 6. fyled, pa. part. filed, registered, vi. vii. 33. fynd, pa. part. made fine, driven off (of chaff), S. C. Dec. 125. geare. gagd, pa. fart. pledged, risked, 11. iii. 14. gage, sb. pledge, 1, iv. 39, xi. 41, p. 412, Hubberd 517, 865. gainesay, so. contradiction, m. ii. 15. (fig.). gain-, gainestriue, to resist, strive against, 11.

pa. part. denied, S. C. p. 427. galage, a wooden shoe (galoshe), S. C. Feb. Galathea, pseudonym, Clout 516. galingale, an aromatic East Indian plant, or English species of sedge, Muiop. 194. gall, bile, gall-bladder, 1. i. 10, ii, 6. gallimaufray, jumble, medley, S. C. p. 417. gallow tree, gallows, H. Love 153. game, joke, 1. xii. 8. gamesom, -e, sportive, III. iv. 30, VII. vi. 51. gan, did (properly began), 1. ii. 2, 11, vi. 30. viii. 8, 111. viii. 45, 48; with to, v. xi. 2, Dathy. gang, -e, to go, S. C. March 57, Sept. 100, 155. gard, protection, care, 111. in. 21. garish, to cure, III. v. 41. Cf. guarish. garland, chief ornament, 'glory', R. R. 449. garre, to make, cause, 11. v. 19, S. C. April 1, gasp, to gasp (fig.), S.C. Nov. 126. gasping. ppl. adj. gaping, gasping (fig.), S. C. Apr. 6. gastfull, fearful, S. C. Aug. 170. gat, pret. got, 111. v. 7. gate, sb.1 manner of going, gait, 1. viii. 12, 111. iv. 32, v. xii. 14, S. C. p. 467, Daphn. 195; way, path, 11. xii. 17. gate, sb.2 goat, S. C. May 177. gate, vb. pret. got, obtained, Amor. Son. 66. gaule, gall, bitterness, Three Lett. p. 627. gawdy green, green dyed with weld, vellowish green; S. C. May 4. game: at g. = astonished, bewildered, 11. ii. 5. gazefull, gazing intently, IV. x. 28, H. Beautie gazement, observation, v. iii. 17. gealosy, gelosy, -ie, jealousy, 1. xii. 41, 11. iv. 34, Love 267. geare, sb. dress, apparel, 11. iv. 26; fashion, 1v. xi. 45; equipment, apparatus, v. ii. 50, vı. viii. 16; affair, matter, business, v. viii. 30, vi. geare, vb. to jeer, 11. vi. 21. geason, uncommon, extraordinary, vi. iv. 37, Hubberd 12, Worlds Vanitie 5. goore, matter, 'stuff,' Three Lett. p. 626. Cf. golly, congealed, 111. iv. 40. gelt, sb.1 lunatic, IV. vii. 21. gelt, sb.2 gold, S. C. Feb. 65. golt, pa. part. gelded, vii. vi. 50, Hubberd 520 gent, gentle, 1. ix. 6, 27, 11. i. 30, xi. 17, 111. i.

44, iv. 45, 49, vii. 3.

gentlesse, gentleness, vi. iv. 3. gere, foul matter, vi. xii. 28. Cf. geare. german, brother, 1. v. 10, 13, 11, viii. 46. gerne, to grin, v. xii. 15. Cf. gren. gesse, to deem, think, IV. i. 7. gest 1, feat of arms, exploit, 1. x. 15, 11. ix. 53, 1v. iv. 36, x. 4, Hubberd 978. gost 2, gesture, sign, 11. ix. 26; countenance, mien, bearing, 111. ii. 24, viii. 8, vi. iv. 14. gether, to gather, S. C. Apr. 152. ghastlinesse, terribleness, terror, 11. ini. 44, Daphn. 327. ghantly, full of fear, m. i. 62; terrible, m. ii. 29. ghesse, to guess; to deem, judge, 1. vi. 13, 1v. v. 45, vi. ii. 45. ghest, fa. parl. 1. vi. 40. ghost, spirit, soul, 1, vn. 21, 11, 1, 42, 1v, 10, 13, vii. 41; person, creature, 11. viii. 26. ghoast, apparition, vision, Bellay 113. ghostly, spiritual, Hubberd 280, 479. giamboux, leg-armour, greaves, 11, vi. 29. gioft, gift, v. x. 14. gilden, ppl. adj. gilded, 111. iv. 17, vi. 11. 44; pa. part. vii. vii. 33. gillyflower, clove-scented pink, Amor. Son. 64. gin, sb. instrument of torture, rack, 1. v. 35; stratagem, plot, 11. iii. 13, 111. vii. 7; snare, net, Muior. 369, 387. gin, ginne, gynne, vb. to begin, i. i. 21, vi. 9, 17, xi. 21, 111, iti. 36, vii. 51, S. C. Feb. 2, 39, March 10, Oct. 25. gipsen, gipsy, Hubberd 86. girland, -lond, gyrl-, band, vr. ix. 8; 'glory, Hubberd 1185; garland, Past. Elegie 153. Cf. garland. giust, sb. joust, tournament, 1. i. 1, S. C. Oct.39 giust, vb. to joust, tilt, 111. x. 35, 1v. i. 11. glade, to gladden, vi. x. 44; pret., Clout 266. gladfull, joyful, 1v. vi. 34, v. iii. 34, 40, viii. 6. gladfulnes, joyfulness, Muiop. 208. gladsome, cheerful, pleasant, Hubberd 20. glaue, IV. vii. 28; glayue, v. xi. 58; glaiue, IV. x. 19, Love 233 : sword. glee, coupled with gold, app. = glitter, 1. ix. 32. v. x: 63; joy, mirth, happiness, Iv. ix. 13, vi. iii. 43; exaltation, prosperity, S. C. Feb. 224; take in g. = gladly accept, vi. v. 39. glenne, glen, valley, S. C. Afr. 26. glib, a thick mass of matted hair on the forehead and over the eyes, Iv. viii. 12. glims, a momentary shining, glimpse, v. vi. 29, vi. viii. 48, H. Beautie 221. glister, to glitter, shine, 111. i. 41, v. ix. 21, Clout 495. glistring, ppl. adj. 1. i. 14, iv. 8, vii. 34, 111, xi. 52; glyster, Proth. 4.

glitterand, ffl. adj. glittering, shining, 1. iv. 16, vii. 20, 11, xi. 17, S. C. July 177. glode, pret. glided, passed, IV. IV. 23. gloome, to gloon, become dusk, Epith. 284. glose, -se, to comment upon, interpret, Gnat p. 486; to flatter, talk speciously, Three Lett. p. 620. glosing, ppl. adj. flattering, deceitful, 111. viii. 14. glow, to be red as with glowing heat, iv. vii. 6. glutted, pa. part. filled, S. C. Sept. 155. gnarre, to snarl, growl, 1. v. 34. gobbeline, goblin, 11. x. 73. gobbet, piece (of flesh), lump (of food), 1. i. 20, x. 13, v. xii. 30. Godbewye, good-bye, Two Lett. p. 639. godded, pret. deified, Clout 810. Goddilge ye, God yield you - God bless you, Two Lett. p. 640. godhead, divinity, Clout 834. goe, pa. part. gone, S. C. July 118. gondelay, gondola, 11. vi. 2, 11. good, goods, property, v. i. 33; knew his g. .. knew how to behave, 1. x. 7. goodly, adv. courteously, 1. v. 15; beautifully, well, 11. vii. 53, Iv. ix. 14. goodlyhed, -lihead: thy, your g. - the personality of one who is goodly (a form of address), 11. in. 33, S. C. Feb. 184, May 270; goodly appearance, beauty, 111. ii. 38, vi. ii. 25. goold, marigold, Clout 339. gorbellyed, lit. corpulent; inflated, unwieldy, Two Lett. p. 640. gore, to pierce, wound, 11. vii. 13, 111. ii. 64. gored, ppl. adj. 1. iii. 35, v. 9. gore bloud, clotted blood, 11. i. 39. gorge, throat (internal), 1, i. 10, vi. iv. 22; maw, 1. xi. 13. gorget, armour for the throat, Iv. iii. 12. goshauke, a large short-winged hawk, v. iv. 42. gossip, relative, friend, 1. xii. 11, Hubberd 53, 103. got, fa. part. won, iv. i. 50; was got = h.d betaken herself, Iv. xi. 42. gourmandize, gur-, greediness, vi. viii. 38, gouernall, management, 11. xii. 48. gouernance, -aunos, conduct, demeanour, 11. i. 29, Muiop. 384, Clout 503; restraint, 11. iv. 7. gouerning, pres. part. supporting, 1. vi. 14; vol. sb. conduct, 1, viii, 28, gouernment, management (of body), 1. ix. 10; conduct, demeanour, IV. V. 20, V. Viii. 3; guidance, v. iv. 4 grace, kindness, mercy, 111. vii. 59; favour, Love 244, Clost 484, 500; graces = pleasing qualities, Epith. 107.

```
grace, vb. to favour, 1. x. 64, vi. xi. 6, Clout
                                                  grin, to gnash (the teeth), v. iv. 37.
                                                   gripe, grype, sb. grasp, v. xi. 27, vi. iv. 7.
 485. graced, ppl. adj. favoured, embellished,
 vi. ix. 8.
                                                   gripe, vb. to grasp, understand, p. 408. griped.
gracelesse, unfortunate, unlucky, IV. iii. 8;
                                                    ppl. adj. 1. xi. 41; grypt, pa. part. vi. 111.
 cruel, merciless, v. xii, 18, S. C. Aug. 113.
                                                     28: grasped.
graffed, pa. part. grafted, firmly fixed, S. C.
                                                   griple, sb. grasp, v.ii. 14; adj. grasping, greedy,
 Feb. 242.
                                                    1. iv. 31; tenacious, vi. iv. 6.
graft, ba, bart., graft in = engrafted upon.
                                                   gronefull, full of groans, mournful, 11, xi, 42
 Clout 918.
                                                   groome, young man, iv. v. 36, v. i. 12, vi. iv.
graile, -yle, gravel, 1. vii, 6, v. ix. 10, Bellay
                                                    42, 1x, 5; shepherd, Clout 12,
                                                   grosse, adj. heavy, 1. xi. 20; sb. the whole.
graine: died in g. = dyed thoroughly (orig. in
                                                    S. C. Sept. 135.
 scarlet), 1. vii. 1.
                                                   grossenesse, stupidity, S. C. p. 419.
gramercy, -ie, thank you, thanks, II. vii. 50;
                                                   ground, reason, cuise, Clorinda 24.
 sb., Three Lett. p. 624.
                                                   grounded, ppl. ad .: ill g. seeds = seeds planted
grange, dwelling-place, vii. vii. 21.
                                                    in bad soil, iv, iv, t; pa, part, based, Three
graple, sb. an instrument for grasping, v. viii. 42.
                                                     Lett. p. 621.
graplement, clutch, grasp, 11. xi. 20.
                                                   groundhold, anchors of a vessel, vi, iv. 1.
grapling, pres. part. gripping, wrestling, iv.
                                                   groueling, prone, having the face towards
                                                    the ground, flat, 11. i. 45, vin. 32, xi. 34, 111
grase (fig.), to move on devouring, to grow,
                                                    i. 38, iv. 17, v. 23, vi. 1, 30.
 be prevalent, S. C. Sept. 113.
                                                   groynd, pret. growled, vi. xii 27.
graste, pa. part. graced, favoured, vi. xii. 16.
                                                   grudge, sb. ill will, resentment, 111, iv. 61, 11
grate, to fret, harass, t. i. 19, tt. i. 56, ttt. ix.
 14. Hubberd 1334.
                                                   grudgeing, vb. to complain, murmur, v. vn.
gratulate, to greet, welcome, Amor. Ded. 1.
                                                     37; pres. part, murmuring, 11. 1. 42; ppl. ad,
grayle', grail; holy vessel said to have been
                                                     complaining, repining, 1. ii. 19, v. x. 37.
 used at the Last Supper, 11. x. 53.
                                                   grutch, to murmur, complain, 11, 11, 34.
grayle ', see graile.
                                                   gryfon, -phon, griffin, vulture, 1. v. 8, 11
greaue, grove, thicket, III. x. 42, vi. ii. 43.
                                                     xı. 8.
gree 1, station, rank, degree, S. C. July 215.
                                                   gryping, vbl. sb. grip, grasp, 1, xi. 20. Ci.
gree 2, favour, goodwill, i. v. 16, ii. ii. 5; in
                                                     gripe.
 gree = with favour, p. 410; to take it well
                                                   grysie, hornble, gnm, grisly, 11, x1, 12, 111, xn.
 in g. = to take in good part, to consent, v. vi.
                                                   guarisht, pret. healed, Iv. iii. 20. Cf. garish.
greedie, -y (transf.), greedily pursued, v. iv.
                                                   guerdon, reward, I. x. 59, IV, III, 16, V, III, 14,
  43, VI. Xi. 17.
                                                     S. C. Nov. 45, Clout 943.
greet, to congratulate, 1. i. 27, v. iii. 14, 15, xi.
                                                   guilen, to beguile, deceive, iii. ix. 7.
                                                   guiler, deceiver, 11. vii. 64, 111. x. 37.
greete, sb. weeping, lamentation, S. C. Aug. 66.
                                                   guilt, gilded, vii. vii. 28.
                                                   guise, -se, -yse, mode (of life), behaviour, 1.
greete, vb. to weep, S. C. Apr. 1.
gren, to grin, vt. xii. 27. grenning, pres.
                                                     iv. 20, vi. 25, v. xi. 19, vi. v. 2; custom, mode,
 part. 1. vi. 11; ppl. adj. 1v. vii. 24.
                                                     fashion, 111. i. 39, 1v. x. 6, 49, vt. ii. 6; condi-
gride, -yde, to pierce (lit. and fig.), 11. viii. 36,
                                                     tion, vi. vi. 32.
  111, i. 62, ix. 20, IV. vi. 1, Gnat 254.
                                                   gulfe, voracious appetite; 'maw,' S. C. Sept.
  ·yde, pa. part. 111. it. 37, S. C. Feb. 4, Aug.
                                                     185.
                                                   gurmandize, see gourmandize
 griefull, -if-, sorrowful, IV. i. 16, VI. VIII. 40.
                                                   gust, taste, flavour, vii. vii. 39.
 griesie, gryesy, grey, grizzled, 1. ix. 35, 111.
                                                   gut, stomach, Hubberd 212.
  i. 67.
                                                   gybe, to jibe, jeer, S. C. p. 427, Hubberd 714.
 griesly, isely, -lie, adj. horrible, grim, ghastly,
                                                   gyeld, meeting-place of a guild, guild-house,
  1. i. 37, v. 20, 30, ix. 21, 11. i. 39, vi. 18, ix. 29,
                                                     11. vii. 43.
  xii. 6, 111. i. 14, iv. 52, vi. 37, xii. 11, iv. iii. 13,
                                                   gynne, gynst, see gin.
  S. C. Nov. 55, Dec. 68; adv. IV. vii. 40.
                                                   gyre, whirl, revolution, 11. v. 8; ring, circle,
 grieuaunce, hurt, pain, IV. iv. 26.
                                                     III. i. 23.
 grieued, ppl. adj. injured, 1, v.ii. 17.
                                                   gyu'd, pa. fart. bound, fettered, v. iv. 35.
```

11

haberjeon, -geon, a siecveless coat of mail, ii. vi. 29, 111, iii. 57, v. v. 2.

habiliment, sing. 1. vi. 30; plur. 1. in. 17, xii. 5, 11. i. 22, vi. iv. 4, Hubberd 110; equipment, dress, clothes.

hability, ability, vi. iii. 7.

habitaunce, dwelling, 11. vii. 7.

hable, able, powerful, t. vi. 19, vit. vii. 31.

haoqueton, a stuffed jacket worn under the mail, 11, viii. 38.

had ywist (lit. had I known and vain regret, Hubberd 803.

hagard, wild, untamed, 1, xi, 19.

hale, 3b, well-being, weifare, Past, Elegie 103, hale, hayle, vb, to drag, pull, 11, 1v, 8, 14, 111, iv, 31, v, 11, 26, vt, 1, 17.

halfen, half: halfen eye half sight, one eye, iii. x. 5.

halfendeale, adv. halt, iii. ix. 53.

hallidome, only in asseveration: hy my h., Hubberd 545.

hallow, to consecrate, iii, iv. 10; fa. fart., S. C. Feb. 210.

hallowing, free, part, shouting, hallooing,, vi.

ham, thigh, 11. 111. 27, v. v. 2.

han, fl. have, S. C. March 62, May 49, 168, July 40, 203, Seft. 163, Oct. 16, 117, Dec. 112.

hand: out of h = at once, iii v. 3, v. iv. 32. handeled, fret, used, iii. i. ii.

handsell, reward, vi. xi. 15.

handsome, handy, suitable, iii. vii. 60.

hap, sb. lot, fortune, fate, 1 iv. 49, ii. iv. 43, iv. ii. 43, vi. iv. 36, Worlds Vanitie 45, Efrgrams p. 607; by hap : by chance, Amor. p. 577

haplesse, bearing misfortune, Iv. iv. 21.

happily, -ely, by chance, 11. Prol. 3, 1v. 1v. 6, x1. 52, x11. 32, S. C. March 31.

happy, successful, III. i. 10.

harbenger, host, e itertamer, Daphn. 470. harbour, -brough, shelter, i. i. 7, S. C. June 18.

hard, pret. heard, 11t. ii. 21, Hubberd 267; pa. part. 11. ix. 25.

hardiment, courage, boldness, audacity, 1. 1. 14, 1x. 12, 11. i. 27, 11. 37, 111. i. 2, v. 10, v. viii. 23, Amor. p. 577; daring exploit, 111. ix. 53. hardnesse, rudeness, 1v. viii. 60.

hardyhoddo, -hed, boldness, audacity, courage, p. 416, t. iv. 38, R. R. 143 (hardie head), Msiop. 27.

harnesse, arms, weapons, v. iv. 36; Aurnessebearing = armour-bearing, ii. xi. 43. Harpalus, pseudonym, Ciout 380.

harrow, interj. a cry of distress or alarm, it, vi. 43, 49, viii, 46.

harrowd, pret, harried, t. x. 40.

harton, to incite, encourage, R. R. 300; pa. part, iv. ix. 34.

hartie, courageous, 1. ix. 25.

hartie-hale, healthy, Mutop. 188.

hartlesse, -les, timid, without courage, disheartened, it, ii. 7, Hubberd 1355, Clout 9, 228. hart roote, depth of the heart, S. C. Dec. 93, hart sore, cause of grief, ii. i. 2.

harta cano, tranquility, peace of mind, Epitaph (2) 25.

haske, rush or wicker basket, S. C. Nov. 16. hatching, vbl. sb. process of production, Three Lett. p. 611.

hauberque, -berk, -bergh, coat of mail, II.

haught, noble, 1, vi. 29. haulst, fret, embraced, tv. iii. 49.

hault, haughty, vi. it. 23.

haulting, ppl. adj. halt, lame, Two Lett. p. 640. haunt, haunton, to frequent, visit, i. at. 2, S.C. March 111, July 78; to pursue, molest (fig.,)

1, xi, 27. hauoour, -iour, bearing, deportment, behaviour, 11, 11, 15, 111, vi, 52, xii, 3, S. C. Apr. 66.

hayling, hayld, see hale. haynous, hemous, hateful, vs. i. 18.

hazarded, pret. endangered, Muiop. 378.

hazardize, perilous position, condition, 11. xii. 19. hazardry, venturesomeness, 11. v. 13; gaming. playing at dice, 111, i. 57.

headinesso, hastiness, rashness, S. C. p. 417. headlesse hood, Itt. hood without a head; hence, perh. -- brainless head, S. C. Fab. 86. headpeace, head, S. C. May 242.

heape, sb. multitude, troop, 1, iv. 16.

heaped, ppl. adj. profuse, v. viii. 23. heard 1, herd, iii. vii. 1, iv. iv. 35.

beard 2, keeper of a herd of cattle, vi. ix. 4, 10,

heardgroome, herdsman, vt. xi. 39, S. C. Feb. 35, Aug. 45.

heardman, herdsman, S. C. Feb. Arg.

heare, sb. hair, 1. vin. 32, 11. ix. 13, 111. xii 17, Thest. 26, Past. Aeglogue 118.

heare, vb. to be spoken of, 1. v. 23.

hearte, -y, hairy, 111. i. 16, 1v. viii. 12. heast, heat, bidding, command, behest, 1. vii.

18, iv. iii. 39, v. v. 25, 43, H. Love 161, Amer. p. 578; vow, vi. xii. 24; name, iv. xi. 50. heben, -e, 3b. ebony-tree, ii. vii. 52; ebony-

wood, Petrarch 16; adj. of ebony wood, 1. Prol. 3, vii. 37, IV. V. 8. hedded, ppl. adj. : ill h. = with the head affected by wine, 1v. i. 3. hedstall, the part of a bridle that fits round the head, v. iii. 33. heed, sb. care, caution, v. x:i. 18. heed, ub. to notice, perceive, v. viii. 4. heedfull, careful, v. viii. 32. heedinesse, heedfulness, caution, v. vi. 34; attentiveness, vi. vi. 26. heedy, heedie, careful, v. ix. 13, S.C. Sept. 167. heeling, heel-piece of a stocking, Hubberd 213. hoft, pret. raised, 1. xi. 39; threw, 1v. iii. 12. helme, helmet, Iv. ii. 17. helpless, inevitable, that cannot be helped, 1. iv. 49, vii. 39; affording no help, from which rescue is impossible, 11. xii. 4. hom, them, S. C. May 129, 304, 313, June 76, Sept. 113, 157. heme (1597 heame), adv. home, S. C. Nov. 98. hend, to seize, grasp, v. xi. 27. henge, axis (of earth), 1. xi. 21. hent, pret. took, seized, 11. ii. 1, iv. 12, xi. 17, vii. vii. 32, S. C. Feb. 195, March 89. hent, hentest, in hand = undertook, 111. vii. 61, S. C. July 37. hent, pa. part. taken, seized, 11. vi. 49, vi. xi. 31, R. T. 677. hept, pret. heaped, dealt in large quantities, 111. vii. 33. Cf. heaped. her 1, their, S. C. May 160, Sept. 39. her 1, he, him, S. C. Sept. 1, 2, 3, 4. herbar, herb-garden, 11. ix. 46. here by there, here and there, S. C. Sept. 63. herneshaw, heron, vi. vii. 9. hersall, rehearsal, 111. xi. 18. herse, ceremonial, 111. ii. 48; the solemn obsequy in a funeral, S. C. Nov. 60, 70, &c., 200. hery, -ye, to praise, glorify, S. C. Feb. 62, Nov. 10. herried, heried, fa. part. honoured, praised, 11. xii. 13, 111. i. 43. hest, see heast. hether, hither, 1.3. 43, vi. viii. 46, S. C. Apr. hetherto, hitherto, S. C. p. 420. hetherward, hither, S. C. Aug. 46. hew 1, form, shape, condition (hue), 1. i. 46, ii. 40, iii. 11, ix. 20, 111, vi. 33, 35. hew 1, hacking, slaughter, v1. viii. 49. heydeguye, a kind of country dance, S.C. June 27. hidder, a young male sheep, S. C. Seft. 211. hide, see hye.

hight, sb.: on h. = aloud, vi. vi. 24.

31; pres. means, purports, S. C. Sept. 172:11 called, p. 409; pret. was called, 11. ii. 35, 111. i. 24, IV. xi. 50; pa. part. committed, entrusted. 1, iv. 6, 1v. x. 38; called, 11. iv. 41, ix. 50; appointed, designated, Iv. vii. 17; assigned, ordained, IV. viii. 54, V. iV. 9; meant, directed, v. xi. 8 : destined, v1. iv. 36 : called, summoned. Daphn, 11. hild, pret. held, 1v. iii. 42, xi. 17. hinder, adj. back, at the back, 1. iv. 5, 111, vi. 32, S. C. May 243, Muiop. 403. hipp, fruit of the wild rose, Hubberd 948. hippodame, sea-horse, II. ix. 50, III. xi. 40. hire, hyre, sb. wages, vi. xii. 6; reward, bribe, vii. vi. 43, 45. hire, vb. to bribe, Hubberd 682. hoare, hore, frosty, 11. xii. 10, 1v. xi. 46; grev, 1. iii. 10, Clout 57; ancient, 11. vii. Arg. hoarie, hoary, grey, Muiop. 328; h. frost = hoar-frost, I. x. 48, S. C. 7an. 33. hodgepodge, mixture, medley, S. C. p. 417. hold, sb. retuge, shelter, 11. ii. 44. hole, whole, well, better (of a wound), 111. v. 43, xii. 38. holme, holm-oak, Gnat 215. holpen, pa. part. helped, vi. viii. 25. homely, adv. kindly, vi. ix. 17; familiarly, Three Lett. p. 614. hong, pa. part, hung, 111. vi. 18. hont, to hunt, S. C. Dec. 82. hood, state, condition, v. vii. 21. hoord, vb. to conceal, iv. xi. 43, vi. iv. 29; pret. piled, Gnat 657; ppl. adj. stored up. treasured, IV. ix. 12. hooued, pret. waited, lingered, Clout 666. Cf. houing, vb.3 hopelesse, unhoped for, unexpected, 111. v. 34. hore, see hoare. horld, pa. part. hurled, R. R. 274. horrid, bristling, rough, 1. vii. 31, 111. xi. 44. horror, roughness, I. vi. 11. horsefoot Helicon, Hippocrene H. (so called because it was fabled to have been produced by a stroke of Pegasus' hoof), Teares 271. hospitage, position of a guest; guestship, III. x. 6. host, hoste, vb. to entertain, receive as a guest, 111, ix. Arg., 1v. viii. 27; to be a guest, lodge, vi. ix. Arg. to h. = to be guests, Gnat 196. hoste, sb. army, v. xi. 42. hostlesse, inhospitable, III. xi. 3 hostry, lodging, shelter, v. x. 23. hot, hote, fret. was called, 1. xi. 29, 1v. iv. 40, S. C. Sept. 194; named, mentioned, S. C. July hight, vo. to designate, choose, name, v. vii. 164. Cf. hight, vo.

houre, howre, time, II, iii. 34; plur. VI. V. 35 = the seven daily offices of the church; good h. = good fortune, vt. ix. 39. housling, sacramental (transf.), 1. xii. 37. hone, vo.1 to rise, 1, ii. 31. houing, vb.2 pres. part. floating, 111. vii. 27. houed, pret. waited, lingered, 111, x. 20. Cf. hooued. how be, although, S. C. July 95. howlet, owl, owlet, Three Lett. p. 621. hove, a small vessel, 11. x. 64. hoyse, to raise up, Three Lett. pp. 615, 618. hububs, shouts, noise, III. x. 43. huckstor: h. man - man who bargains, Hubberd 925. hugger mugger, concealment, secrecy, Hubberd 139. humane, human, IV. ii. 51, Clout 351. humblesse, humbleness, humility, t. n. 21, iii. 26, xii. 8, Amor. Son. 2. humors, -ours, fluids in the body which were supposed to affect or determine a person's temperament, R. R. 320; proud h. = pride, 1. x. 26; sad k. = sadness, 1v. x. 50; sleep, 1. i. 36. hurly-burly, commotion, tumult, v. iii. 30. hurtle, hurtlen, to rush, dash, 1. iv. 16, 40, viii. 17, 1v. 1v. 29; to brandish, wave, 11. vii. 43. hurtlesse, harmless, 1. vi. 31. husband, farmer, husbandman, tv. iii. 29, Hubberd 266; husband farme = iatm, IV. IV. 35. husher, usher, 1. iv. 13. hy, hye, high, 1. i. 8, Proth. 28. hysoine, hyacinth (precious stone), 11. xii. 54 hydra, -dre, a fabulous many-headed snake, supposed to have been killed by Hercules, 11. zii. 23, vi. zii. 32. hye, hie, to haste 1, 1v. xi. 6, S. C. Apr. 128. May 317. hide, pret. hastened, 11. xi. 25. hylding, base, worthless, vi. v. 25. hynd, hynde, servant, rustic labourer, vi. viii. 12, x. 3, xi. 27, R. R. 244. hyppocrase, a cordial made of wine flavoured with spices, Three Lett. p. 615.

idee, idea, conception, H. Love 284. idle, ydle, causeless, baseless, I. Xii. 9, III. Vi. 54; empty, 1. v. 8. idole, image, counterpart, imitation, n. ii. 41, 1V. V. 15. incénse, sb., Bellay 143, Epigrams p. 608. ill-faste, evil-faced, ugly, 11. xii. 36. incessantly, immediately, without pausing, v. ilfauouredly, in a bad or unpleasing way, Three Lett. p. 611. Cf. fauoured.

iv. 2.

ill fauored, ppl. edj. evil-looking, t. i. 15. illude, to elude, evade, u. v. 9. illustrate, to render illustrious, Amor. p. 562. imáge, Teares 201. imbeziled, pa. part. taken away, stolen, R. T. p. 470. imbrast, pa. part. embraced, IV. viii. 89. imbrew, to thrust, t. vi. 38; to stain, vi. v. 5; pa. part. spilt, 111, iii. 38. Cf. embrew. immeasurd, -ed, unmeasured, enormous, 11. x. 8, xii, 23. immixing, pres. part. mingling, iv. iii. 47. imp, ymp, -e, sb. scion, child, offspring (lit. and fig.), 1. Prol. 3, 111. v. 53, xii. 7, 1v. xi. 10, vi. ii. 38, p. 410, R. T. 272; young shoot, scion, iv. xi. 26, v. xi. 16, Teares 75. impacable, inappeasable, implacable, iv. iz. 22. R. T. 395. impart, to allow, grant, 111. ii. I. impe (a wing), so, to engraft feathers in a wing so as to improve the powers of flight, H. Beautie 135. ympt, pa. part. (transf.), fastened, IV. ix. 4. impeach, to hinder, prevent, Gnat 576. Cf. empeach. imperceáble, not pierceable, 1. xi. 17. impertinent, irrelevant, S. C. p. 419. impictured, pa. part. impressed as with a picture, Past. Elegie 163. ímplacáble, III. vii. 35. implore, entreaty, II. v. 37. imployd, pret. found employment for, Epitabk (1) 25. implye, to enfold, 1. iv. 31, vi. 6; to entangle. 1. xi. 23; to contain, 111. vi. 34. importable, unbearable, 11. viii. 35. importune, adj. heavy, severe, grievous, I. xi. 53, xii. 16, 11. vi. 29, viii. 38, xi. 7, vi. i. 20, Muiop. 230; troublesome, 111. iii. 44, Daphn. 387; persistent, pertinacious, vi. xi. 6. importune, vb. to portend, import, 111. 1. 16. importunely, importunately, urgently, it. viii. impresse, to affect, influence, Love 170. imprest, pret. stamped, marked, 11. xi. 5; produced by pressure, imprinted, Iv. iii. 34; pa. part. imprinted, III. xii. 33. improuided, unforeseen, 1. xii. 34 in, inne, abode, lodging, dwelling (lit. and fig.), 1. i. 33, 11. xii. 32, 111. iii. 30, Dapha. inburning, ppl. adj. burning internally, iii. i. 53, IV. Viii. 17.

incline, to apply oneself, vi. iii. 3. incontinent, forthwith, immediately, 1. vi. 8, 1v. iii. 18, v. ix. 18, vii. vii. 17, Elegie 61. indew, to put on, III. vi. 35. indewed, pret. took in, 'inwardly digested,' III. x. q. indewd, pa, part, invested, 11, ii, 6, 111, iii, 38, Cf. endew. indifferent, fair, just, 111, ii. 1; impartial, v. ix. 36. indifferently, impartially, vii. vii. 14. indignaturce, indignation, 111, xi. 13. indigne, unworthy, Iv. i. 30. indignifie, to dishonour, treat with indignity, Clout 583. -fyde, pret. vi. i. 30. indited, pa. part. indicted, vi. vii. 35. infant, a youth of noble or gentle birth, II, viii. 56, xi. 25, v. viii. 41, vi. viii. 25. inford, pa. part. inflicted, vi. viii. 31. infest, adj. hostile, vi. iv. 5, vi. 41. infest, vb. to attack, assail (fig.), 1. xi. 6, Worlds Vanitie 53. infestred, ppl. adj. festered, vi. xi. 24. infinite, 11. ix. 50, 111. vi. 35. inflame, to set on fire, Gnat 510. influence, an ethereal fluid supposed to flow from the stars or heaven and affect the destiny of men, 1, viii. 42. inforcement, compulsion, v. xi. 52. informed, pa. part, formed, fashioned, 111. vi. 8. infuse, infusion, H. Love 47. ingate, entrance, IV. X. 12, R. T. 47. ingenerate, ppl. adj. innate, 111. vi. 3. ingoe, ingot, mass of cast metal, 11, vii. 5. inherite, to receive as one's lot, vi. ix. 25. inholder, tenant, vii. vii. 17. inly, inwardly, 11. xi. 21, xii. 28, 111. i. 55, ii. 11, xi. 27, vi. v. 38, vii. vi. 25, S. C. May 38 (Glosse entirely), Gnat 275, Muiof. 343, Three Lett. p. 628; thoroughly, S. C. Sept. 161. inquere, to inquire, seek information, 1. i. 31. inquest, quest, search, knightly expedition, 111. ii. 4, v. i. 13, vt. xi. 42. inquire, -quyre, to call, name, 11. x. 12; to seek, request, v. xi. 58. insight, 111, iii. 11, v. ix. 39. insolence, pride, Teares 72; exultation. Clout 622. insolencie, pride, S. C. May 118. insolent, rude, barbarous, 111. iv. 50. inspyre, to breathe, blow, 11. iii. 30.

insu'th, follows, Elegie 83. Cf. ensue.

38; directed, 1v. i. 27.

intend, to call, name, vii. vi. 9; fret. reft.

directed, 11. iv. 46; ppl. adj. outstretched, 1. ix.

intendiment, attention attentive considera-

tion, 1. xii. 31; knowledge, understanding, ti v. 32, xii. 5, Teares 144. intendment, intention, design, p. 408. intent, purpose, intention, 11. i. 22, vr. viii. 15. Gnat 274, R. R. 288, Amor. Son. 25; quest. v. viii. 3. in this i. = in this respect, vi, ix. intentive, attentive, v. 1x. 14. interesse, interest, vii. vi. 33. interlace, to intermingle, cross each other intricately, v. iii. 23 (intr.); pres. part. interspersing, vr. xii. 33. intermedled, pa. part. intermixed, p. 408. intermitted, pa. part. suspended, left off, Tuo Lett. p. 635. intimate, to communicate, 111, ix. 30, vi. 141. intire, sincere, genuine, v. vni. 12. Cf. entire. intreat, to prevail upon, induce, 11, ii, 35; to describe, treat of, v. i. 1. Cf. entreat. intreatfull, supplicating, full of entreaty, v x. 6. intrinsecall, interior, internal, Three Lett. p. 615. introld, obscure reading in 11. ii. 44 (v. 11. entrold, enrold). intuse, bruise, 111. v. 33. inure, to practise, exercise, Amor. Son. 21. Cf. enure. inuade, to go, enter, 11, x, 6, 111, vi. 37; to intrude upon, attack, vr. iii. 8. inuent, to find, discover, 1. vi. 15, 111. v. 10, v. 11. 20, Amor. Son. 82. inuest, to put on, IV. V. 18. irke, to weary, Iv. vii. 15. irkesome, yrkesome, tired, 1. i. 55, ii. 6. irrenowmed, unrenowned, 11. i. 23. isope, hyssop, Muiop. 190. issew, sb. issue, 111. ix. 15, xii. 43. isséwed, -'d, 111. vii. 19, ix. 15, xii. 3, 5, 27. Iv. vi. 3, v. iii. 20; issuing, v. iv. 50;

issue.

issú'd, v. iii. 4; issúde, Elegie 231; to

1 (1 iacke of both sides, a person who sides first with one side and then with another, a trimmer, Three Lett. p. 621. iackemate, companion, Three Lett. p. 622. Iacobs, Iaakob staffe, a pilgrim's staff, 1. vi. 35, Dathn. 41.

iade, contemptuous name for a horse, hack, III. i. 17, vi. vii. 40; term of reprobation applied to a woman, 11, xi. 31.

iane, small silver coin of Genoa introduced | kemd, par, part, combed, v. vii, 4. into England towards the end of the fourteenth century, 111. vii. 58.

iarro, discord, dissension, quarrelling, 11. ii. 26, iv. 41. v. 16.

inap, jasper, Bellay 25.

iauel, -ell, rascal, Hubberd 309, 712.

ieopardee, -ie, danger, peril, Hubb rd 98; in his i. = into danger at his hands, ii. iv. 43.

iessemyne, jasmine, Amor. Son. 64. iesses, straps of leather, silk, &c., fastened round the legs of hawks, vi. iv. 19.

iollity, -ee, revelry, 11, xii, 60, 111, i. 40, S.C. May 102.

iolly, -io, gallant, brave, fine, 1. i 1, 11, 11, 111. 1. 45, 1v. i. 32; cheerful, Hubberd 422; big, S. C. Sept. 165.

iollyhead, jollity, merriment, vi. xi. 32. iollyment, mirth, enjoyment, joyfulness, 11. vi. 3, 1v. xi. 12, vi. n. 16.

iott, least portion, 1. x. 26.

iournall, daily, diurnal, 1, xi. 31, p. 210. louysaunce, -isaunce, mernment, mirth,

S. C. May 25, Nov. 2

iouial, under the influence of the planet Jupiter, regarded as the source of joy and happiness, 11, XII. 51.

ioy, to enjoy. ioyed, ioyd, pret. 1. iv. 46, 11. x. 53, 111. i. 37. 10ying, fres. fart, trans. deriving enjoyment from, 111, vi. 48; to rewice, delight, 1. vi. 1, 17, Mutop. 99. 10y'd, fret., Hubberd, 707. ioying, fres. fart , R. R. 198.

ioyance, -aunce, emoyment, mirth, jov, L iv. 37, 111, xii. 18, Minop. 208, Past. Elegie 25;

enjoyment (of a person), vi. xi. 7. ioynted, pret. disjointed, dismembered, v. xi.

iuncats, -ates, sweetmeats, delicacies (jonkets), v. iv. 49, Amor. Son. 77.

kaies, keys, IV. x. 18. keasars, see kesars.

keep, keepe, ib. heed, care; to take 1, = (1) to take heed, notice, t. i. 40, III. x. 38, v. ix. 13, xii. 42, Gnat 241; (2) to take care (of, S. C. Dec. 8; that which is kept, a charge, S. C. July 133; keeping, care, charge, Hubberd 200.

keepe, vb. to tend, guard, S. C. May 129, July 200, Dec. 137.

keeping: bee at your k. = be on your guard, t. Xi. 2.

keight, fret. caught, m.ii. 30, v. vi. 29.

ken, to ascertain, discover, Beautie 88. kend, pa. part. known, 1. xii. 1; ascertained, discovered, 11. viii, 19; recognized, S. C. May 137. kent, kend, pret. discovered, iii. vii. 19; recognized, 1v. x. 14; knew, v. xi. 20; caught sight of, descried, v. xi. 43, Clost 272. kenst . knowest, S. C. Feb. 83, March 18, Acr. 21, May 215.

kornos, rustics, peasants, S. C. July 199.

kerue, to pierce, cut, iv. i. 4.

kosars, koasars, kaisers, emperors, 11, vii. 5, IV. VII. 1, Teares 570.

kest, pa. part. 1. xi. 31; pret. 11. x . 42, vi. XII. 15: Cast.

kostroll, lit. a small hawk; applied as a contemptuous designation; base, 11, in. 4. ketch, to catch, 11, i. 4, 111, vi. 37.

key colde, cold as a key (fig.), Three Lett. p. 621.

kight, kite, 11. vni. 16.

kind, kynd, -e, nature, 1, 11, 43, iii. 44, 11, ii. 36, v. 28, 111, ii. 40, vi. 8; fashion, manner, 11, m. 40, 111, xii. 22; sex, 111, 11, 4; family kin, p. 411; respect, manner, S. C. p. 418. kindly, -oly, natural, innate, 1, iii, 28, via, 11, x. 47, m. ix. 33, Two Lett. p. 636.

kinred, kindred, 11, x. 35, S. C. May 271. kirtle, a tunic, originally a garment reaching to the knees or lower, 1. iv. 31, S.C. Ang.

knack, trinket, knick-knack, S. C. May 286. knee, projection, crag, I. IX. 34.

knife, sword, 11. v. 9.

knowe, pa. part. known, S. C. Sept. 161. kodpeand, ppl. adj. furnished with a cod-piece or bagged appendage to the front of the closefitting hose or breeches worn by men from the fifteenth to the seventeenth century, Three

Lett. p. 625. kon, to know, Clou' 294. kond, pret. v. vi. 35. Cf. con.

kurre, dog, cur, S. C. Sept. 182. kydst, fret, knewest, S. C. Dec. 92.

kynded, fa. part. begotten, v. v. 40.

# I.

L., Lord, S. C. p. 420. lace, thread, 111, it. 50. lacke, loss, absence, Epitafh (2) 12. lackey, to act as a lackey, run as a footman, VI. ii. 15. lad, pret. led, 11. xii. 84, 111. xii. 16, 1v. viii.

2, v. xii. 37.

lade, to load, v. v. 54-

vi. I.

lacsie, -y, lazy, idle, 1. iv. 36, 111. vii. 12. leach-craft, medicine, III. iii. 17. leachour, lecher, debauchee, 1. iii. Arg. S. C. Feb. 9, July 33, Clout 372, 766. leade, to live, pass one's life, S. C. July 101. laire, resting-place (of a corpse); grave, IV. 185. leafe, trust, faith: 1. and love, Amor. Son. lamentable, lamenting, mournful, vt. iv. 29, 28. lamping, ppl. adj. flashing, resplendent, 111. leake, leaky, 1. v. 35, vi. viii. 24. leames, gleams, rays, Epigrams p. 608. iii. 1. Amor. Son. 1. leaneth, depends, S. C. p. 420. lanck, slim, slender, 111. vi. 18, ix. 21. leany, lean, thin, S. C. July 199. landheards, flocks, Clout 277. leapes, baskets in which to catch or keep fish. langourous, sorrowful, 11. i. q. languishment, suffering, trouble, IV. viii, 16, S. C. p. 466. xii. 23, R. T. 150. leare, lore, 'art', 111. xi. 16, IV. iii. 40, VI. IV 4. leares = lessons, 111, vii. 21. lap, to fold, wrap up, 11. iii. 30, 111. v. 51; pa. part. lapped in, enfolded, surrounded learnd, pa. part. taught, 1. vi. 12. with (fig.), v. vi. 6. leasing, lesing, lie, falsehood, 1. vi. 48, 11 ix. 51, xi. 10, IV. viii. 24, V. ii. 33, S. C. larded, pret, fattened, S. C. Feb. 110. May 285, Hubberd 699, 733, Clout 696; lylare, pasture, IV. viii. 29. ing, falsehood, S. C. Sept. 150, Clout 102. large, at l. = at length, IV. vii. 34. largebelled, ppl. adj. adorned with large least, conj. lest, 111. viii. 24, v. xi. 26, vi. viii bells, Three Lett. p. 625. I, xi. 43. larumbell, alarm bell, 11. ix. 25. least, adv: at l = at last, m. x. 68. latched, vb.1 pret. caught, S. C. March 93. loau'd, pret. raised, 11. x. 31. latch, vb. to fasten, S. C. May 201. leauy, leafy, iv. x. 45. ledden, speech, IV. xi. 19, Clout 744. later, recent, last, t. i. 32. lee, river, v. ii. 19, R. T. 603. latest, last, Daphn. 263. leese, to lose, S. C. Sept. 135. lattice, screen, III. xii. 15. launce, scale, balance, III. vii. 4. lefte, pret. lifted, 11. iii. 34. launch, to pierce, vi. ii. 6, viii. 48. launcht, legierdemaine, sleight of hand, v. ix. 13. pret. 1. iii. 42. launohed, pret. darted, 11. Hubberd 701. vi. 20. launcht, pa. part. 1. iv. 46, 1v. vi. leman, lemman, lover, 1. i. 6, vii. 14, 11. v. 40, x. 1. launched, 11. i. 38, 111. ii. 37, vi. 28, 111, ii. 20, viii. 40, IV. i. 9, V. Viii. 2. 52, Amor. Son. 57. launchedst, Iv. vii. 1. lend, to give, II. ix. 58; to cause, IV. xii 21; lauer, basin, 11. xii. 62. pret. gave, dealt, 11. v. 6, v. i. 21; pa. part. lawnds, open spaces among woods, glades, 1v. granted, given, v. xi. 42. lengd, pret. tarried, remained, S. C. May 250. laxatiue, profuse, copious, Two Lett. p. 639. lenger, longer, 1. i. 22, iii. 19. lay, laye, so.1 song, t. x. 54, 11. x. 59, p. lere, sb. lesson, S. C. May 262; instruction, 409; 'strain,' 11. i. 35, v1. xi. 5, Clout 423. lore, Clout 783; plur. vi. ii. 31. lere, vb. to learn, S. C. Dec. 4. lay, sb.2 = lea, 111, viti. 15, x. 23, Gnat 110. lay, vb,: lay on load, lode = to deal heavy lessoned, pret. instructed, III. vi. 51. blows, 11. xi. 29, 1v. iv. 23, ix. 22, 33; to lest, to listen, vi. i. 17. deposit, 11. xii. 3. layd, pa. part. brought let, sb. hindrance, obstacle, 1. viii. 13, 11. xi. 31, down, reduced (of a swelling), S. C. Oct. 119; IV. i. 12; hesitation, VI. vi. 20. ppl. adj. subdued, S. C. Oct. 12. let, vb.1 to leave, 11. vi. 16. let be (imper.) = laye 1, ? place of rest, 111. xii. 44; pl., S. C. cease from, 11. iii, 16. let, vb.2 to hinder, prevent, 1, vii. 20, 11, i. 47, Nov. 15. laye 3, laity, S. C. May 76. viii. 28, 111. v. 17, v. ii. 4, ix. 7, Past Elegie laye <sup>8</sup>, law, 11. x. 42. 126. let, pa. part. vi. xii. 1. lay-stall, dung-heap, refuse-heap, 1. v. 53. leuell, to direct, III. ix. 1. leueled, pret. II. lazars, lepers, I. iv. 3. XII. 34. lea, open ground, meadow land, plain, S. C. louer, rather, 1. ix. 32, 111, ii. 6. me l. were Feb. 158, July 122; the watry l. = the water, = I would rather, III. v. 7. Cf. liefe, liefer. leuin, lightning, III. v. 48, v. vi. 40, S.C. leach, doctor, 1. v. 17, 111. iii. 18, iv. 4 July 91, Aug. 87. levin-brond = flash of

lightning, vii. vi. 30.

owd, poor, 'sorry,' S. C. Feb. 245; foolish, H. Love 8. ewdly, wickedly, basely, IV. viii. 24, VI. Vi. 17, S. C. Feb. 9. owdnesse, -nes, wickedness, III. iv. 58, v. in. 38. ibbard, leopard, 1. vi. 25, 11. iii. 28, vii. vii. ich, like, 111. vii. 29. idge, ledge, v. vi. 36. ief, liefe, sb. and adj. dear, beloved, 1. iii. 28, ix. 17, 11. i. 16, ix. 4, 111. i. 24, ii. 33, 1v. iii. 52, vi. xii. 17, S. C. July 165, Clout 16; agreeable, In. viii. 42; liefe or loth, in. ix. 13, vi. i. 44; l. or sory, vii. vi. 8 = willing or unwilling. liefer (comp.), preferable, 11. iv. 28, 111. i. 24. liefest (superl.), dearest, 11. i. 52, 111. ii. 33, x. 15, S. C. Aug. 192. liege, sb. lord; superior to whom one owes allegiance and service, 11. iii. 8, ix. 4 (fig.), vi. vii. 23. liege, adj. loyal, faithful, Clout 703. liegeman, a vassal sworn to the service and support of his superior lord, 11. iii. q; plur. 111. i. 30. lien, lyen, pa. part. lain, IV. ix. 4, p. 412. lifull, lyfull, giving or bestowing life, vi. xi. 45, Epith. 118. lig, ligge, liggen, to lie, vt. iv. 40, S. C. May 125, 217, Sept. 118, Oct. 12, 63. light, vb. to relieve, unload, 1. xii. 42; to remove, 111. v. 31; to happen, befall, v. xi. 55. light, pa. part. lit, 1. v. 19, 111. i. 58. light, adv. easily, quickly, 1. vini. 10, Hubberd 1056. lightly, easily, 111. v. 25, viii. 19. lightsome, -som, radiant, 1. vii. 23, 111. vii. 48, vii. vii. 51, S. C. Aug. 87, Thest. 82. lignage, lineage, I. vi. 20. like, to please, Hubberd 945; likt, prel. 11. vii. 27; to like well m to thrive, S. C. July 105. like as, as if, v. v. 2. likely, similar, alike, Beautie 198. likelynesse, likeness, resemblance, v. vii. 39. liker, more like, v. x. 21. lilled, pret. put out (the tongue), 1. v. 34. limbeck, alembic, retort, vii. vii. 31. limehound, bloodhound, v. ii. 25. limming, vbl. sb. painting, Beautie 84. limned, pa. part. depicted, Teares 202. lin, 1. i. 24, v. 35, 111. iii. 22, 30, viii. 24, Daphn. 467; linne, Two Lett. p. 641: to cease, desist.

line, lyne, linen, v. vii. 6, Muiop. 364.

list, to wish, desire, choose, pres. II. ix. I, III.

ix. 7, S. C. May 164, June 17; pret. 1. il. 22, 111, ii, 18; Aim, thee, me, &c., Ast (impers.) = it pleased him, &c., he liked, t. vii. 35, 11. vii. 18, 19, 1v. ix. 35. listfull, attentive, v. i. 25, Clout 7. lite, lyte, so. to fall (of a blow), t. viii, 18, 11. viii. 38; to befall, vi. vi. 17; to alight, vi. vii. 40; to come across, discover, S. C. Sept. 259; lite in = to deal with, treat of, iii. ii. 3. Cf. light, vb. lites, lungs, vs. iii. 26. liuelihead, -hed, inheritance, 11. ii. 2 (cf. liuelod), living original, 11. ix. 3; life, liveliness, VI. vii. 20. liuslod, livelihood, income, prosperity, v. iv. 9, Hubberd 147. liuelood, vigour, vt. iii. 7. liuely, living, lifelike, 1. ii. 24, vii. 20, 11. iz. 2, 111. i. 38, viii. 5, 6, H. Love 171; adv. in a lifelike way, III. xi. 39. liuorey : l, and seisin - the delivery of property into the corporal possession of a person by handing over a token, vi. iv. 37. liues end, death, R. R. 188. load, blows, 11. ii. 23. See lay, vb. loast, ppl. adj. loosened, unfastened, Bellay 115. Cf. lose. loathfulnesse, reluctance, IV. xii. 32. loathly, loathsome, Iv. i. 27, v. xi. 31, Teares 335. Lobbin, pseudonym, Clout 736. lodge, dwelling (fig.), 11. viii. 32. lodgings, bedrooms, sleeping quarters, t. i. 36. loft, sky, upper region, 1. i. 41; ceiling or flooring of a room, v. vi. 27. lome, loam, clay, mud, vi. ix. 16. lompe, mass, Epigrams p. 607. lompish, low-spirited, dejected, III. xii. 18. Cf. lumpish. long, to belong, 1. iv. 48, 111. iii. 58, vi. ii. 8, p. 409, Three Lett. p. 625. loord, lout, 111. vii. 12, S.C. July 33. loos, praise, renown, vt. xii. 12. loose 1, to loosen, 1. viii. 19; to solve, v. xi. 25. loose 2, to lose, 1. iv. 39 lope, pret. leapt, S. C. March 81. lopp, smaller branches and twigs of trees, such as are not measured for timber; l. and topp, S. C. Feb. 57 (fig.). lord, to rule, domineer, S. C. July 176; pres. part., S. C. Dec. 70. lordings, lords, v. ii. 38. lore, sb. teaching, doctrine, s. i. 5, ss. iii. 2; advice, 111, xi. 18; learning, 1v. iii. 42; story,

language, Iv. xi. 23; speech, v. xi. 61.

lore, pret. left, lost, 111. xii. 44, v. x. 38. Iorne, pa. part, left, deserted, I. iv. 2, S. C. Sept. 57; forlorn, S. C. Jan. 62. loring, vbl. sb. instruction, v. vii. 42. lorrell, rogue, blackguard, S. C. July 93. Cf. lose, losen, to loosen, unfasten, 11. xii. 67, 111. viii. 51, xii. 2; to release, free, 111. vi. 48, vi. viii. 29. losed, pa. part. released, R. R. 264. lo'st. pa. part, released, set free, III. iv. 13. losell, -zell, profligate, scoundrel, 11. iii. 4, v. iii. 20, vi. iv. 10, S. C. p. 447, Hubberd 67, 813, Teares 226, 324. Cf. lorrell. losse, destruction, I. vii. 10. lot, division, 11. vii. 19; share, 1v. iv. 33; fate. vi. i. 30. lothfull, lothe-, unpleasant, III. iv. 52; hateful, loathsome, Hubberd 735; reluctant, bashful, Hubberd 1314. loup, loop, loophole. 11. ix. 10. loupes, loop (in needlework), Muiop. 366. lout, lowt, to bow, 1. i. 30, x. 44, 11. iii. 13, ix. 26, 111. x. 23, 1v. ii. 23, iii. 5, S. C. July 137, R. T. 202. loue-affamisht, Amor. Son. 88. See affamisht. louely, adj. affectionate, loving, friendly, i. iii. 30, 1v. ii. 30, iii. 42; of love, 1v. vi. 40, vı. vii. 28. louely, adv. lovingly, 11. xii. 51, 1v. iii. 49. louer, louvre; a domed turret-like erection with lateral openings for the passage of smoke or the admission of light, vi. x. 42. lowce, louse, Two Lett. p. 639. lowe, humble, meck, S. C. July 165. lowre, loure, to lour, scowl (let. and fig.), 1. ii. 22, 111. xii. 24, 1v. v. 19, 24. lugs, poles, perches (measure of land), II. A. II. lumining, pres. part. illumining, H. Love 280. lumpish, heavy, clumsy, dull, 1. i. 43, 111. iv. lurdane : feuer l. = fever-lurdan, laziness, S. C. luskishnesse, laziness, slothfulness, vi. i. 35. lust, desire, 11. ii. 39, 1v. i. 34, iv. 44, Xi. 51; pleasure, v. xi. 31. lust, w., pres. to please, choose, II. vii. II; to desire, wish for, S. C. Nov. 21. lust, pret. wished, v. iii. 6, viii. 22. Cf. list. luster, lustre, brightness, v. xi. 58. lustfull, vigorous, lusty, S. C. Jan. 37. lustihede, -head, -yhed, lustie head, lustfulness, libidinousness, pleasure, 1. ii. 3, S. C. May 42, 204, Oct. 51; lustiness, 1

energy, vigour, 111. x. 45, v11. vii. 33, Muior. 54, Epith. 22.

lustlesse, feeble, listless, 1. iv. 20, 111. iv. 56, v1. i. 35, S. C. Feb. 78.

lusty, beautiful, pleasant, S. C. Feb. 131.

lybicke, Libyan; belonging to Libya. the ancient name of a large country in North Africa, 11. ii. 22.

lymiter, a friar licensed to beg within certain limits, Hubberd 85.

lynage, lineage, 1, i. 5. Cf. lignage.

lynce, lynx, 11. xi. 8.

lythe, pliant, supple, S. C. Feb. 74, Gnat 221,

Maa, pseudonym, Clout 523. mace, sceptre, II. x. 4. macerate, to fret, vex, Guat 94. madding, ppl. adj. foolish, frenzied, S. C. Apr. 25, July 87. made, ppl. adj. artificial, Muiop. 166. mage, magician, III. iii. 14. magnes stone, magnet, II. xii. 4. magnificke, renowned, glorious, v. Prol. 11, p. 410. magnify, to become greater (refl.), v. vii. 17; to praise, Teares 324. magnifide, pret. glorified, 111, vii, 31; pa. part, vii, vi. 26. Mahoune, Mahomet, Iv. viii. 44. maiden-headed, bearing a representation of the Virgin Mary, IV. iv. 17. mailes, mail-armour (composed of interlaced rings or overlapping plates), IV. ii. 17, V. V. 3. maine, mayne, sb. force, I. vii. 11, viii. 7, 11. xi. 15, 1v. iv. 18, 44; ocean, 111. vii. 34, viii. 51: adj., ocean m. = ocean, IV. V. 45. mainly, maynly, strongly, violently, 1. vii. 12, 111. i. 21. mainsheat, mainsail, v. xii. 18. maintaine, maintaine, to uphold (a quarrel); to back up, vi. vi. 35. main-, mayntenaunce, condition of life or subsistence, 111. vii. 59; deportment, behaviour, S. C. Sept. 160.

maisterdome, mayster-, masterful behaviour, 1v. i. 46; mastery, victory, v. ii. 15.

maisterie, superior force, 111. i. 25; flur. feats of strength, vi. ix. 43; shewes maysteries = performs wonderful feats, 11. vi. 1. maistring, mayst-, ppl. adj. controlling, 11.

maistring, mayst-, ppl. adj. controlling, 11. v. 2, 111. vii. 2, 1v. ix. 2; superior, v. xii. 38, H. Beautie 214.

make, sb. companion, mate, 1. vii. 7, 111. xi. 2, xii. 40, 1v. ii. 30, vi. viii. 33, Past. Aeglogue 18, Past. Elegie 178, Epith. 87.

make, so. to compose verses, S. C. Apr. 19, June 82. making, vol. sb. poetic composition, S. C. p. 416, Clout 188, malefices, evil deeds, Hubberd 1154. malengine, deceit, iii. i. 53. malicing, fres. part, vi. x. 39; maliced, pret., Mutop. 257; malist, pa. part., H. Love 238: to regard with malice, to envy. maligne, to grudge, envy, m. iv. 39, v. vni. 18; to speak evil of, vi. ix. 45. mall, sb. a (wooden) club, mallet, I. vii. 51, IV. v. 42. mall. vb. to knock down, v. xi. 8. maltalent, ill will, malevolence, m. iv. 61. mand, pa. fart, filled up with men, vi, xi. 46. manner, custom, behaviour, vi. i. 27; all m. all kinds of, iv. x. 7. Mansilia, pseudonym, Clout 508. mantle, to spread one wing and then the other over the corresponding outstretched leg for exercise, vi. ii. 32, Amor. Son. 72 (fig.). many, manie, multitude, company, i. xii. 9, 111. 1x. 11, x11. 23, 1v. xii. 18, v. xi. 3, 65, S. C. May 23, Hubberd 1194. mard, pret. marred, destroyed, III. 1. 30; fa. part, spoilt, 111, x. 31, S. C. Jan. 24. marge, margin, edge, 11. v. 6, 1v. vini, 61. margent, margin, edge, 11. xn. 63, 111. iv. 34, v. x. 3. Marian, pseudonym, Clout 505. marishes, marshes, v. x. 23. marke, a com value 13s. 4d., Iv. iv. 15. markewhite, bull's-eye of a target (fig.), v. v. 35. marle, earth, 11. xi. 33. Mart 1, Mars, 1. Prol. 3. mart 3, traffic, profit, S. C. Sept. 37; mar one's mart, lit. spoil one's trade, rum one, 1, 111. Arg., Elegie 172. martelled, fret, hammered, 111, vii. 42. martyrest, tormentest, afflictest, Iv. vii. 2. martyrize, to make a martyr of (transf., Clout 473. maruaile, to wonder, marvel, vi. vi. 9. maske, to disguise oneself, itself (as with a mask), 1. vi. 1, S. C. Jan. 24, Nov. 19; to conceal, III. iii. 51; to take part in a masque (fig.), Teares 180. masking, ppl. adj. as if forming a masque, 111. xii. 26. masker, one who takes part in a masque, III. xii. 6; transf. deceiver, R. T. 202. massacre, sb. and vb. 111. iii. 35, xi. 29, vii. vii. 19, Amor. Son. 10. masse, wealth, 111. ix. 4; plastic substance, 1v. x. 39.

masseponie, lit. an offering of money made at Mass, S. C. p. 443 (attrib.). massy, -ie, heavy, solid, iii. iii. 57. mant, fruit of trees used as food for swine, S. C. Feb. 109. matchlesse, odd, not a pair, iv. i. 28. mate, sb. fellow, 11. 11. 8. mate, vb. to overcome, confound, IV. viil. 17; pa, part. 1, ix. 12. Cf. amate. matting, morning song (of a bird), Epith. maugre, maulgre, mauger, in spite of, iv. 1. 48, vii. vii. 17, S. C. Nov. 163, Hubberd 816; unwillingly, reluctantly, 111. v. 7, xi. 27, v. i. 20; a curse upon 1 11. v. 12, 111. iv. 39. mauis, thrush, Amor. Son. 85, Epith. 81. may, maiden, S. C. Nov. 39. maydenhead, firstfruits, S. C. p. 418. may-game, laughing-stock, object of ridicule, v. vii. 40. mazd, mazed, mazde, fret. wondered, iv. ix. 11; fa. fart. stupefied, bewildered, iv. i. 43, Bellay 107; 1fl. adj. IV. vi. 37, v. viii. 38. maze, bewilderment, stupor, iv. iv. 18. mazeful, bewildering, confounding, Epith. 190. maser, (1) a hard wood (properly maple) used as a material for drinking cups: mazer bowle, 11, xii. 49; (2) a bowl or drinking-cup made of such wood, S. C. Aug. 26. mazie, like a maze, S. C. Dec. 25. mealt'th, melteth, i. ix. 31. meane, sb. medium, average, middling condition, 11, vii. 16, vi. ix. 11, x. 27, H. Love 86; middle part in a musical composition, alto or tenor (fig.), 11. xii. 33; means, 111. xii. 40; in the m. = in the meantime, ii. i. 58; middle m. medium, vii. vii. 22; by meanes = because of, on account of, vi. viii. 25. meane, adj. ordinary, middling, 111. i. 33meanesse, -nesse, humble birth, iv. vii. 16, meaner, one who intends or purposes, III. V. moaneth, intendeth, Iv. vi. 6. meanly, fairly, moderately, Hubberd 297. mear'd, pret. bounded, R. R. 296. meare, ib. boundary, iii. ix. 46 (2) (lit. and fig.), R. T. 63. meare, ady. pure, 11. xi. 34. measure i, moderation, vi. viii. 43, xi. 14. messure 2, song, melody, Teares 547. measured, pret. proportioned, adjusted, 11. xil. measurelesse, boundless, Teares 516. meawes, sea-gulls, 11. xii. 8.

```
medmwart, meadow-sweet (Spiraa Ulmaria),
 11. viii. 20.
medicynd, pa. part. cured, healed, Clout 877.
medle, to mix, mingle, S. C. Aug. 144.
 medling, pres. part. 11. i. 61. medled,
 pret., S. C. May 263; pa. part., S. C. Apr.
 68.
meed, -e, reward, gain, 1. ii. 37, vii. 23, v.
 Prol. 3, xi. 61, R. T. 398; booty, gain, 1.
 vii. 14; requital, v. ix. 42, Hubberd 331.
meere, perfect, Misc. Sonn 111. Cf. meare, adj.
meet, vb. to be in accord, blend, 11. xii. 71.
meet, adj. proper, 1. xii. 39, 11. xii. 71.
meiger, thin, Iv. viii. 12.
meint, meynt, pa. part. joined in marriage,
 111. xi. 36; mingled, mixed, S. C. Nov. 203;
 pret. mingled, S. C. July 84. Cf. ment 2
melampode, black hellebore, S. C. July 85,
 106.
meláncholicke, v. vi. 19.
melánoholie, -y, Iv. vi. 2, vii. 38, v. vii. 17.
mell, to meddle, 1. i. 30, v11. vii. 9; to mix
 together (intr.), v. ix. I. melling, vbl. sb.
 interference, meddling, v. xii. 35, S. C. July
 208.
member, limb, III. iv. 37.
memories, services for the dead, Hubberd 454.
menage, sb. handling, control, 111. xii. 22,
 p. 410.
menage, vb. to handle (a horse), 1. vii. 37;
 (a rod, weapons), 11. ii. 18, iv. 8, ix. 27; to
 control, vi. ix. 46, H. Beautie 194.
mendes, amends, reparation, 11, i. 20.
mene, sb. means, v. ix. 42, vi. vi. q. Cf.
 meane, sb.
ment 1, intended, purposed, meant, pret. 11, iii.
  11, 111. xii. 33, v. ix. 10, v1. vii. 29; pa. part.
  v. ix. 7.
 ment 2, pa. part. joined, mixed, mingled, 1. ii.
  5, V. V. 12, VI. Vi. 27.
 merciable, merciful, S. C. Sept. 174.
 mercie, -y, pardon, 11. i. 27; favour, 11. v. 18.
 mercifide, pa. part. pitied, vi. vii. 32.
 mercilesse, obtaining no mercy, 1v. viii, 64.
 Meriflure, pseudonym, Clout 389.
 merimake, merry-, merry-making, festivity,
  11. vi. 21, v. x. 19, S. C. May 15, Nov. 9.
 meriment, joy, merry-making, 111. 1. 57, 1v.
  ii. 5, Clout 30.
 meruaile, vb. to marvel, wonder, iv. vi. 30.
 mory, pleasant, delightful, charming, 1. x. 61,
  Proth. 128; sweet, having a pleasant voice,
  11. v. 31.
 mesprise, -prise 1, contempt, scom, insolence,
  11. vii. 39, 111. ix. 9, 1v. iv. 11.
 mesprine , mistake, 11. xii. 19.
```

met, meet, fitting, vi. viii. 45. Metaposcopus, Three Lett. p. 621. mettall, mettle, quality, Three Lett. p. 610. mew, -e, sb. den, secret place, I. v. 20, II. vii 19, v. ix. 14, Amor. Son. 80; prison, place of confinement, 11. v. 27, Bellay 110. mew, vb. to shut up, confine, 111. ix. 5; pa. part. 11. iii. 34. mickle, much, great, 11. i. 6, iv. 7, 111, iv. 20. ix. 53, S. C. July 16, Hubberd 944. mid, middle, midst, IV. ii. 48. middest, adj. most central, in the middle, 1, iv. 15, 11, ii. 13; sb. midst, middle, iv. iv. 44, vi. iii. 25, p. 408. mieue, to move, affect, Iv. xii. 26. militant, engaged in warfare, 11. viii. 2. minoing, ppl. adj. affected, 11. ii. 37. mind, to bring to mind, II. ii. 10; to intend, contemplate, wish, 11. iv. 40, S. C. p. 420. mineon, mistress, paramour, 11, ii. 37. minime, a musical note, minim (transf.), vi. miniments, things with which a person is provided, articles, 1v. viii. 6. minisht, ppl, adj. diminished, 1. xi. 43. minister, to provide, furnish, III. vi. q. ministered, pret., Gnat 505. mirke, dark, obscure, S. C. Sept. 103. mirkesome, dark, obscure, 1. v. 28. mirrhour, mirror, I. iv. 10. mis, to lack, II. iii. 39; to go wrong, err, II. iii, 40, 111, ix. 2. misauised, ppl. adj. ill-advised, 111, ii, 9. misaymed, ppl. adj. badly aimed, 1. viii. 8. miscall, to revile, abuse, IV. viii. 24. mischalenge, wrong challenge, Iv. iii. 11. mischance, unhappiness, Clout 427. mischiefe, mischiefe, misfortune, 111, x, 18, v. viii. 7. mischfeuous, 111. vi. 14, 1v. vi. 2, v. vi. 31. misconceipt, misconception, Iv. vi. 2. miscounselled, ppl. adj. ill-advised, Hubberd 1 28. miscreant, -aunt, wretch, villain, t. v. 13, vi. AI. miscreate, pa. part. wrongly created, 11. x. 38. miscreated, ppl. adj. misshapen, misformed, 11. vii. 42. miscreaunce, false faith, 11. viii. 51, S. C. May 91. misdeeme, to form an unfavourable judgement of, think evil of, 1. vii. 49; misdempt, pa. part. III. x. 29; to have a wrong opinion about, misjudge, 1. xi. 55, v1. Prol. 4, Hubberd 375. misdeeming, ppl. adj. dark, suspicious, 1, ii. 3; vol. sb. misjudging, 1, iv. 2,

misdesert, undeservingness, vi. i. 12. misdid, pret. did wrong, 1v. iv. 27. misdiet, improper feeding, 1, iv. 23, 11, xi. 12. misdight, pa. part. ill-clothed (fig.), v. vii. 37. misdonne, inf. to misdo, do wrong, III. iz. 7. misdoubting, pres. part. fearing, suspecting, VI. iv. 47, Xi. 43. miser, wretch, ii. i. 8, iii. 8. misfare, mishap, misfortune, 1v. v. 30, vi. 3, viii. 5, 27, xii. 12, v. xi. 48, vi. iii. 24, xii. 14. misfaring, vol. sb. wrongdoing, Clout 758. misfeigning, feigning with an evil intention, 1. iii. 40. misgone, pa. part. gone astray, S. C. July 201. misgotten, ppl. adj. ill-gotten, vi. i. 18. misgouernaunce, mismanagement, misuse, S. C. May 90; misbehaviour, S. C. Nov. 4. misguyde, sb. wrongdoing, trespass, H. Love 144. misguyde, vb. to misdirect, vi. iii. 47. mishappen, to happen amiss, 1, iii, 20, mishapt, ppl. adj. misshapen, 111. vii. 22. misintended, ppl. adj. maliciously aimed. Amor. Son. 16. misleeke, to dislike, v. ii. 49. mislike, to disapprove of, S. C. May 162; to be ill-pleasing to, iii. viii. 51. misliue, to live a bad life, S. C. May 87. misregard, lack of care, 1v. viii. 29. missay, -e, to speak wrongly, say what is wrong, S. C. Sept. 2; pa. part. missayd, vi. xii. 2; to speak evil of, abuse, S. C. Sept. 106: pa. part. missayd, Iv. vi. 27. misseeme, to misbecome, 111. iii. 53, viii. 26, Hubberd 801. misseeming, ppl. adj. unseemly, 1. ix. 23, 11. ii. 31; vol. sb. false show, 1, vii, 50. mis-shape, deformity, v. xii. 29. misshapen, ppl. adj. deformed, 11. xi. 8. missing, pres. part. failing, Iv. xi. 2. mistake, to imagine erroneously, IV. viii. 55; pret. mistooke, III. xi. 13; mistooke, pret. fell upon grievously, v. viii. 8. mister, myster, (what, such) kind or sort of, 1. ix. 23, 111. v. 5, 1v. vii. 10, x11. 22, 11. x1. 39, S. C. July 201, Sept. 103. misthought, wrong opinion, Iv. viii. 58. mis-trayned, pa. part. misled, v. xi. 54. mistroth, is necessary, 111. vii. 51. misusage, abuse, S. C. July 184. miswandred, ppl. adj. gone astray, 111. vii. 18. misweene, to have a wrong opinion, think wrongly, 11. Prol. 3, Past. Elegie 101. misween'd, pa. part. mistaken, v. viii. 46. misweening, vol. sb. misjudgement, 1. iv. 1. miswend, to go astray (fig.), Hubberd 128. miswent, ffl. adj. IV. V. 10.

mizzle, to rain in fine drops, to drizzle, S. C. Nov. 208. mo, moe, more, 1. iz. 44, 111. zi. 45, 1v. i. 24; other m. = many others, S. C. May 68. mochell, much, S. C. Feb. 109, Aug. 23. Cf. muchell. mocke, act of derision, S. C. Aug. 120; mockes and mowes - derisive gestures, vi. vii. 49. mode, wrath, iv. iv. g. mold 1, mole, spot on the skin, vi. xii. 7. mold', see mould. moldwarpe, -e, mole, Clout 763, Love 182. mollify, to melt, soften (lit.), Amor. Son. 33; pa. part. mollifide, m. vi. 7. mollifide, pa. part. rendered less obdurate, IV. xii. 13. molt, pret. melted, ii. v. 8. molten, ppl. adj. 'dissolved' in emotion, Gnat 245. moly, a herb of the liliaceous genus Allium, Amor. Son. 26. mome, blockhead, vii. vi. 49. monastere, monastery, vi. xii. 23. mone, sb. plea, 111. ix. 12; grief, vi. v. 4; lamentation, S. C. Apr. 89 (makes m.), Teares 6. mone, vb. to hewail, bemoan, 1. iv. 49, Teares moniment, trace, something serving to identify, 1. v. 38, v. viii. 43, Gnat 589; mark, figure, 11. vii. 5, xii. 80; record, 11. ix. 89; token, memorial, v. viii. 45. monoceros, a fish with a 'horn', as a saw-fish. sword-fish, or narwhal, 11, xii. 23. moralise, to supply with a moral, 1. Prol. 1. mores 1, roots, plants, vii. vii. 10. Mores , Moors, vi. vii. 43. morion, -an, a kind of helmet, without beaver or visor, worn by soldiers in the 16th and 17th c., vii. vii. 28, Muiop. 322, Bellay 201, Epigrams p. 608. morish, moorish, swampy, marshy, 1v. xi. 29, Gnat 251. morrow, morow, -e, morning, 111, xii, 28, v iii. 7, 8. C. March 3, 46, May 19. mortality, mortal existence; the estate of mortal man, 1, x, 1, mortall, deadly, 11. iii, 22. most, greatest, Iv. zi. 9, vii. vii. 17; most what = for the most part, S. C. July 46, Sept. 104, Clout 757. mot, moto, pres. may, 11. i. 33, v1. viii. 46, x. 3, Daphn. 265; pret. sing. might, could, 1. ii. 29, 11. iii. 18, 1v. ii. 8, vii. 47, v. viii. 26; moten, plur. 111. vi. 31; must, 111. x. 7, v. viii. 5. motioned, pa. part. proposed, suggested Hubberd 125.

mott, pret. measured, appraised, Clout 365. mought 1, pret. might, could, 1, i, 42, 111, x. 18, v. ix. 34, S. C. March 53. mought2, must, S. C. p. 416, May 74, 157, July 153, Sept. 133. mould, sb.1 dross, vi. ix. 33. mould, mold, sb.2 form, shape, 1, ii, 30, vii. 26, 111, ii. 25, Iv. ii. 41; structure, I. iv. 5, vii. 33; bodily shape, body, 11. vii. 42; stature, IV. X. 10. mould, vb. to moulder (fig.), 11. iii. 41. mount, mound, Gnat 660, 686, Clout 284. mountenance, space, distance, extent, iii. viii. 18, xi. 20, v. vi. 36. mouth'd, ppl. adj. having a mouth, 11. xi. 12. moue, to attempt, propose, iv. ix. 31; moned speech = spoke, vi. iii. 14. mowes, grimaces, vi. vii. 49. moyity, half, 11. xii. 31. moyle, to defile, H. Love 220. moystie, damp, vi. ix. 13. muchell, much, great, 1. iv. 46, vi. 20, 111. Ci. mickle. vii. 32, x. 31. mum, not a word, iv. vii. 44. mumming, vbl. sb. masking, Hubberd 802. munifience, fortification, defence, II. x. 15. mured, pret. blocked up, closed, vi. xii. 34. murrins, plagues, diseases, 111. iii. 40. murther, to kill, murder, vi. vi. 26. muse, sb. wonderment, 1. xii. 29. muse, vb. to wonder, II. i. Iq. musicall, music, S. C. May 28. must, new wine, vii. vii. 39. mysterie, trade, profession, Hubberd 221.

# N

name, quality, reputation, t. xn. 13. namely, particularly, above all, vii. vii. 48. napron, apron, v. v. 20. narre, nearer, S. C. July 97; near, close, R. R. nas, has not, S. C. May 61. nathemoe, II. iv. 8; nathemore, I. viii. 13, 1x. 25, 11, v. 8, 111, v. 22, 1v. v. 20, vi. xii, 32; never the more. nathlesse, nathe-, -les, naytheles, nevertheless, none the less, 11. i. 5, 22, v. 6, 111. i. 55, IV. V. 20, VI. 38, Hubberd 375, 1073, Beautie 159. nation, class, kind (of animals), 11. xii. 36; brutish nation = animal creation, Past. Elegie 08. natiue, natural, II. iv. I, v. vi. 27. natúre, v. viii. 41. nay: if nay = if not, Daphn. 130. naythles, see nathlesse.

nor, 1. vi. 11. Neæra, pseudonym, Clout 524. neat, cattle, vi. ix. 4. neate, clear, bright, Gnat 110. neatheard, one who looks after cattle, S. C. Aug. Arg. 5. needments, necessaries, 1. i. 6, vi. 35, Clout neesing, vbl. sb. sneezing, Three Lett. p. 615; (/.g.) p. 618. neglect, pa. part. neglected, Thest. 96. nempt, pa. part. named, called, III, x. 20. nephew, descendant, grandchild, 1. v. 22, 11. vin. 29, 111. iv. 22, R. R. 104. nest, lodging, retreat, IV. V. 32, VI. xi. 42. net. pure, clean, 111. xii. 20, v1. viii. 45. C1. neste. netheless, nevertheless, S. C. pp. 418, 419 Cf nathlesse. nether, no one, v. vi. 35. new, anew, again, v. ii. 36; of new = over again, afresh, vi. xi. 43. newell, novelty, S.C. May 276. newfanglenesse, novelty of fashion, innovation, 1. iv. 25, Hubberd 675. nice, fastidious, particular, 1v. x. 22, vi. ix. 7, nicer = too fastidious, I. viii. 40. nicely, cautiously, gently, III. xii. 10. nicenesse, luxury, effeminacy, IV. viii. 27. nicetie, -itee, reserve, coyness, 1. x. 7, 11. ii. 3 nigardise, niggardliness, meanness, IV. viii. 15. S. C. p. 458. nigheth, approaches, S.C. March 4. Cf. nye. nighly, niggardly, sparingly, S. C. July 171. ni'll, nill, will not, 1. ix. 15, 11. vii. 32, 111. v. 11, xi. 14, S.C. May 131, 151; will or nill = willing or unwilling, 1. iii. 43. willed or nilled, pret. were willing or unwilling, iv. vii. 16. nimblesse, nimbleness, v. ix. 20. nip, to slander, Hubberd 712. nis, nys, is not, S. C. May 144, June 19, Aug. 38, Nov. Q. noblesse, nobility, 1, viii, 26. nominate, to name, designate, 1. x. 64. nonce, nones: for (the) n. = tor the purpose, but used as a metrical tag or stop-gap, Bellay 74, Three Lett. p. 626. noriture, nour-, nurture, upbringing, t. ix. 5, 11. in. 2. Norueyses, Norwegians, III. iii. 33. nosethrill, nostril, 1. xi. 22, 111. ix. 22, xi. 41. note, no'te, know not, 1. xii. 7, S. C. Sept. 110; cannot, 11. Prol. 4; could, might not,

ne, nor, not, 1, i. 22, vi. 1, 111. iv. 56, p. 413, S.C.

May 152, Nov. 10; ne . . . ne = neither . . .

1v. xii. 20, v. iii. 7. jothing, adv. not at all, i. iv. 4, ii. vi. 15. totifide, pa. fart. proclaimed, known, iii. iii. lought, adj. bad, useless, 11. ix. 32. sould, -e, would not, t. vi. 17, v. viii. 41, vi. iii. 26, vii. 36, S. C. Feb. 192, 199. noule, head, vii. vii. 39. nource, ice, nurse (fig.), S. C. May 118, R. T. noursle, to train, foster, rear, vi. iv. 35; fret. 1. vi. 23, v. i. 6. noursling, nursling; object of a nurse's care (transf.), 11. viii. 20, Teares 564, Gnat 284, R. R. 200. nourtred, pa. fart. trained, skilled, Past. Elegie 71. nousell, to train, foster (fig.), S. C. p. 443-Cf. noursle. nousling, pres. part., Clout 763; ppl. adj. IV. xi. 32: burrowing. nouells, news, S. C. Feb. 95. noy, to annoy, vex, grieve, Two Lett. p. 643. noyd, fret. 1. x. 24, xi. 45. noyance, annoyance, noxiousness, 1, i. 23, 111. Noyes, Noah's, 11. x. 15. noyous, troublesome, harmful, noxious, t. v. 45, viii. 40, xi. 50, 11. 1x. 32, 111. i. 43, Teares 483. noysome, harmful, noxious, vi. x. 7, S. C. July 22, R. R. 54. nye, to draw near, S. C. May 316.

oaker, ocher, R. T. 204. object, to reproach, accuse, vi. vii. 26. óblique, 11. 1x. 52. obliquid, directed obliquely, vii. vii. 54. obsequy, funeral rites, 11. i. 60. doccasions, reasons, 11. v. 21; pretexts, 1v. x. 13. soddes, difference, v. Prol. 1; advantage, vi. ii. 18. of, by, 1.ii. 5, iv. 17, v. 8, 23, 11. vii. 2, ix. 18, xii. 31, iv. xi. 25, v. vin. 16; off, S. C. May 199; on, IV. IV. I 1. 4. offal, dregs, scum (fig.), II. III. 8. offend, to harm, injure, 11. vin. 8, xii. 63, 111. x. 1, v1. iv. 25, ix. 6. offer, attempt, v. viii. 42. off-scum, scum, refuse (fig.), vii. vi. 30. off-shakt, ta. part. shaken off, 11. xi. 33. ofspring, origin, source, 11. x. 09. on, one, R. T. 1.

II. iv. 4, 13, vii. 39, III. iii. 50, vi. 40, xii. 26, | onely, alone, I. vii. 13, xii. 29, Iv. vi. 46, v. xi. 30, Daran. 503; singly, 1v. viii. 28. on hed, shead, Muiop. 420. ope, open, iv. iii. 46, vi. vi. 19. Topprest, pa. part, fallen upon, taken by surprise, 11. xii. 81. or, before, ere, Hubberd 501; or . . . or = whether . . . or, 1, vi. 15. ordaind, ppl. adj. arrayed, drawn up (of a battle), 11. x. 18; set up, v. il. 19. order, sb. usage, practice, vi. viii. 36; plur. ranks, 11. ix. 15. order, vo. to prepare, arrange, II. ix. 31, III. ix. 11; pa. part. determined, S. C. p. 423. ordinario, archbishop or bishop; one who has jurisdiction in ecclesiastical cases, Hubberd ordinance, -aunce, arrangement, 11. ix. 30, Hubberd 173; ordnance, artillery, II, xi. 14; equipment, furniture, 111. xi. 53; decree, Hubberd 1162. oricalche, yellow ore or alloy of copper, Mulop. 78. orifis, opening of a wound, 1v. xii. 22. origane, plant of the genus Origanum, probably Wild Marjoram, I. ii. 40. orpine, a succulent herbaceous plant, Sedum Telephium, Muiop. 193. other, one of the two; left (hand, leg), 11. iv. 4, v. xii. 36; other some = some others, S.C.p. 417; otherwhere, other where = elsewhere, 11. xii. 45. vi. xi. 25; otherwhiles, other whiles = at times, sometimes, 111. x. 8, vi. vii. 49; other . . . other - some . . . other, Iv. i. 7. ought, pret. owned, 1. iv. 39, 11, vili, 40, vi. vii. 16; owed, 111. i. 44. out alasso, excl. of grief, Amor. p. 577. outbarre, to bar out, ii. x. 63. out find, to discover, IV. xii. 25. outgoe, to exceed, surpass, IV. V. II. outhyred, pa. part. let out for hire, v. Prol. 2. outlaunched, pa. part. thrust out, Muiop. 82. Cf. launce, -ch. outlearne, to find out, elicit, Iv. viii. 22. outly, outwardly, externally, Three Lett. p. 626. outrage, violent outcry, clamour, 1, xi. 40, want of moderation, excess, 11. ii. 28. outragious, violent, v. xi. 29. outraigned, pa. part, reigned to the end of, 11. X. 45. outstrained, pa. part. stretched out tightly, Gnat 280. out ward, to ward off, keep out, v. i. 10. outweare, to wear out, away (fig.), 1v. ii. 33.

outwore. bret., -worne pa. part. spent, passed

(time), 111. xii. 29, Amor. Son. 87; to wear longer than, S. C. p. 467. outwell, to pour forth, I. i. 21. outwelde. pret., Gnat 502. outwent, pret. outstripped, v. viii. 4; surpassed, S. C. Apr. 16. Cf. outgo. out win, to get out of, Iv. i. 20. outwind, to disentangle, extricate, v. iii, q. outwrest, to draw out, extract (fig.), 11. iv. 23. outwrought, pa, part, completed, 11, vii, 65. ousell, blackbird, Epith. 82. ouer all, in every part, all over, 1, xi. 9, Amor. Son. 20; everywhere, 1, xi. 46, Hubberd 1180. ouerbore, pret. overthrew, Iv. iv. 40. ouercame, pret. covered, spread over, 111. vii. 4. ouercast, pa. part, covered over, 11, i. 24. Cf. ouerkest. ouercaught, pret. overtook, iv. vii. 31. ouercraw, to exult over, 1. ix. 50; pa. part. S. C. Feb. 142. overdight, over dight, pa, part. overspread, covered over, 11. vii. 53, 1v. viii. 34, Clout 493, H. Beautie 03. ouer-giue, ouergiue, to give, hand over, III. iii. 41; to give up, Hubberd 249. ouergo, to overcome, v. ii. 7. ouergone, pa. part. excelled, S. C. Aug. 128. ouergrast, pa. part. overgrown with grass, S. C. Sept. 130. ouerhaile, to draw over, S. C. Jan. 75. ouerhent, pret. overtook, 11. x. 18, 111. v. 25, v. iii. 11, x. 36; pa. part. overtaken, 111. vn. 19. v. viii. 4. ouerkest, pret. III. vi. 10; pa. part., R. T. 457: covered, overspread. Cf. overcast. ouerlade, to overwhelm, v. xii, 10. ouerlay, to overwhelm, v. xi. 51. ouerlooke, to look over, peruse, 111, xii, 36; to look after, oversee, Hubberd 270, ouerlookt, pa, part, considered, Hubberd 306. ouerpasse, to cause to pass, alleviate, vi. iii. 14. ouerpast, pa. part. passed over, 1. ii. ouerplast, ppl. adj. overhanging, 1, i, 24. ouer raught, pa. part. extended over, v. xii. 30; pret. overtook, vi. iii. 50. ouer-red, pret, read over, 111. xi. 50. ouerren, to oppress, v. ii. 19; pret. ouerran, v. iv. 44. ouerrun, pa. part. crushed, run down, v. xi. 6. ouersee, to overlook, fail to see, 11, ix, 44; to overlook, look down upon, IV. x. 30; to overvi. ix. 11, Clout 451; emulation, comparise look, look after, Hubberd 283. 111. iii. 54, ix. 2, 1v. v. q, v. iii. 24, Muiop. 2 Clout 344, Amor. Son. 66; mate, companie ouerset, ppl. adj. oppressed, vi. v. 22. ouer side, over the side of, v. vi. 39. IV. i. 33, S. C. p. 458; consort in marriage,

ouersight, escape, 1. vi. I. ouerstrooke. pret. struck above, v. xi. 11. ouerswim, to swim over, III, iii, 33, ouert, open, 111. ix. 46. ouerthwart, opposite, IV, X, 51. ouerture, open or exposed place, S. C. July 28. ouerwent, ouer-went, pret, went over traversed, 111. iv. 18, p. 413; pa. part, overcome, overwhelmed, v. viii. 7, S. C. March 2. owches, gems, jewels, 1, ii. 13, x, 31, 111, iv. 23, owe: owe her fall = is bound to fall, R. R. 38owre, ore, 11. vii. 5, 111. iv. 18. oystriges, ostriches, 11. xi. 12.

pace, step, 1, iv. 3; place through which one passes, tract, III. i. 10. pack, ub. to go away, depart, vii. vi. 12; go pack, Teares 308. packe, sb. burden, vi. ii. 21. packed, ppl. adj. heaped up, amassed, S.C. P. 443. paddocks, toads, S. C. Dec. 70. paine, payne, sb. pains, care, 1, vi. 33, 11, x 15; punishment, 11. vii. 21. paine, payne, vb. refl. to take pains, exer oneself, 1. iv. 15, v. xii. 10. paynd, pret. ii painefull, payne-, troublesome, laboriosvi. vii. 35; careful, painstaking, Two Lett.; 636. paint out, to depict, S. C. June 79. paire, to impair, I, vii, 41. Palemon = Thomas Churchyard, Clout 306. paled 1, ppl. adj. : paled part per part = furnis e or marked with (vertical) stripes; in herald: paly, v1. ii. 6. paled 2, ppl, ad1, fenced in with pales, 1, 1, 5 Palin, pseudonym, Clout 392. pall, sb. robe, cloak (esp. of rich material), ix. 37, v. v. 24, S. C. July 173. pall, vb. to subdue, daunt, iv. iv. 5. palle ppl. adj. enseebled, Past. Elegie 163. palled, ? pallid, Past. Elegie 163. panaches, a reputed herb of healing virtu all-heal, 111, v. 32. pance, paunce, pawnce, pansy, 111, i. 36, 37, S. C. Apr. 142. pangues, pangs, III. xi. 44. pannikell, brain-pan, skull, iii. v. 23. paragon, equal, match, 111, ii, 13, 1v, ix.

x. 43: pattern or model of supreme excellence, vi. i. 1, Clout 548; rival, competitor, Hubberd 1026. paramour, lover, i. i, 9 (fig.), iv. v. 5, S. C. Apr. 139, Gnat 678; rival, vi. ix. 39 parauaunt, ant, before, m. ii. 16; in front, vi. x. 15; pre-eminently, Clout 941. parbreake, vomit, 1. i. 20. parcell, part, H. Beautie 105. pardale, panther or leopard, 1. vi. 26. parentage, parent, 11, x. 27. parget, ornamental work in plaster on a wall, ceiling, &c., Bellay 23, Fpigrams p. 607. part, sb. side, v. vii. 3, vi. viii. 40; flur. conduct, habits, v. ix. 2, vi. v. 33; part per part, vi. ii. 6 (see paled). part, vb. to share, divide, iii. ix. 43, S. C. Afr. 153. parted, pret. departed, i. iii. 22. -artake, to share (a thing) with another, 1. x1. 32; to make a sharer of, 11. iv. 20; to carry through (a purpose), in. ni. 25, v. i. (pertake). articularities, particulars, Three Lett. p. 618. arture, departure, 111. viii. 46. arty, side, Iv. iv. 20, VI. i. 19. as, passe, to surpass, excel, 1, 1v. 11, 11, vi. 25. 111. iv. 23, 1x 50, 1v. 11. 2, v. 11. 17, x. 3, vi. x. 5, S. C. June 74, Aug. 10; to disregard, take no notice, 11. vi. 37; to care, reck, Hubberd 1150; fas by = care about, regard; to be beyond, Clout 837; pres. part. surpassing, H. Beautie 70; ppl. adj. 1. x. 24, 31, Clorinda passant, (her.) walking, looking towards the dexter side, with three paws on the ground and the dexter fore-paw raised, III. i. 4. passion, sorrow; grief, 1, ii, 26, 1v. viii. 3. passionate, adj. that moves to compassion, pitiful, Clout 427. passionate, vb. to express with feeling, 1. xii. 16. passioned, pa. part. expressed with feeling, iii. pastor, -oure, shepherd, S.C. Sept. 140, Past. Elegie 9, p 409. pasture, food, 111. x. 59. patcheries, things made of patches or fragments (fig.), Three Lett. p. 632. patience, a species of dock, called by old herbalists Patientia (= Rumex Patientia, Linn.), Gnat 678. patronage, defence, 11. viii. 26. patronesse, temale protector, 1. x. 44paulting, paw-, trifling, paltry, Three Lett. pp. 619, 629. paund, pawnd, pa. part. pawned, pledged, Iv. iii. 3, S. C. Sept. 95.

pauilions, tents, tabernacles, S. C. p. 420. pauone, peacock, III. xi. 47. pawnce, or pance. paynim, pagan, 1. iv. 41. payad, pa. part. posed, 11. x. 5. Cf. poise. pealing, fres. part. appealing, vit. vit. Arg. peare, pere, peer, equal, ii. iv. 18; companion, v. i. 6, vi. ii. 31; rival, Worlds Vani-40 75. pearling, pere-, pres. part. forming pearllike drops, Cloud 507; ppl. adj., Epith. 155. peasant, attrib. base, vi. iii. 31. pease, pea; not worth a pease of no value, S. C. Oct. 69. pease, blow, 111. ii. 20. Cf. peise. peece, piece of work, structure, 1. x 59; (of a fortress, or stronghold), 11, xi, 14, 111, x. 10, V. 11. 21; (of a sea-vessel), 11. Xii. 44. poocod, fpl. adj. pieced, imperfect, S. C. Oct. 87. peeretree, pear-tree, S. C. March 111. peouishnesse, folly, perverse conduct, vi. vii. peinet, to paint, S.C. Feb. 121. poise, -ze, to balance, weigh, v. 11 46; to press downwards by its weight, Clout 849. pele, real, v. ix. 39. pelfe, wezith, 11. vii. 7, 111. ix. 4, S. C. p. 443. pen, to restrain, confine, v. ii. 19. pend, pa. part., S. C. Oct. 73. Cf. pont. pendant, something hanging (said of foliage or fruit), Elegie 5; plur. ornaments hanging down from a vault or roof, IV. x. 6. penie masses, masses at which offerings are made, Hubberd 452 Cf. masse penie. pennes, feathers, 1. xi. 10. pensifenesse, anxious thought, iv. v. 38. pent, pa. part. enclosed, v. ix. 10. penurie, lack of food, 1. ix. 35, v. v. 22 penurious, poverty-stricken, destitute, v. v. 46. perceable, penetrable, 1. i. 7. percen, to pierce, t. vii. 33. perdie, -y, indeed, veri y, truly, certainly, interj. 1. vi. 42, 11. iii. 18, 111. x. 7, 39. xi. 24, S. C. May 37, Aug. 19; adv. 111. 11 27, S. C. March 104. peregall, equal, S. C. Aug. 8. péremptórie, -y, 111. vill. 16, v. ix. 44. perfit, perfect, Two Lett. p. 640. perfited, ga. part. perfected, Three Lett. p. perforce, -forse, of necessity, ii. iii. 3, S.C. Nov. 127. perke, pert, S. C. Feb. 8. perlous, perilous, dangerous, II. ix. 17, III. i. 19. vii. 28, xii. 42, Iv. x. 28.

```
persant, piercing, 1. x. 47, 11, 11i, 23; that is
 pierced, 111, ix. 20.
perse, to pierce, t. ix. 48. perst, pa. part. 1.
perseline, parsley, Muiop. 100.
perséuer, to continue, Amor. Son. 9. persé-
 uered, -uer'd, pret. III. xii. 2, IV. X. II.
personable, handsome, well-made, in. iv. 5.
personage, representation of a person; image,
 11. in. 5, 111. ii. 26.
pérsue, track, 111. v. 28.
perswade, persuasion, v. x. 25.
port, unconcealed, open, S. C. Sept. 162.
 pertake, to endure, IV. VIII. Q.
pheere, companion, Thest. 100. See fere.
 philbert, filbert-tree, Elegie 17
 phill, the last syllable of 'Astrophill'. Elegie 192.
 Philomele, S. C. Nov. 141; Philumene,
  Daphn. 475: the nightingale.
 Phyllis, pseudonym, Clout 540.
 physnomy, countenance, vii. vii. 5
 pible stone, pebbles, Gnat 163
 pickethanks, flatterers, sycophants, Three
  Lett. p. 621.
 pickstrawes, triffers, Three Lett. p. 621.
 picturals, pictures, II. IX. 53.
 pide, particoloured, dappled, Gnat 250.
 pight, pret. placed, 1. n. 42; pitched, anghted,
   v. viii. 8; fa. part, fixed, placed, set, 1. viii. 37,
   x. 43, xii. 25, 111. v. 40, vt. ix. 44, S. C. Feb
   106, Dec. 134.
  pill, pil, to rob, plunder, v. ii. 6, vi. x. 5, Hul-
   berd 1198, R. R. 418.
  pilloures, pillars, Bellay 43.
  pillów, 111. iv. 53.
  pinckt, fa. part. ornamented, vt. 11. 6.
  pine, pyne, sb. suffering, grief, i. ix. 35, v. v.
    22; famme, hunger, S. C. July 24.
  pine, vb. pined, pyn'd, pret, languished, tv.
    xii. 19. ptl.adj. 1. vni. 40, 111. in. 52, 1v. vii.
   41, pa. part. 1. x. 48; exhausted or wasted by
    suffering or hunger. done to pine = caused to
    die, vi. v. 28.
   pinnoed, pa. part. bound, pinioned, v. iv 22.
   pitch, sb. altitude, elevation, 1. xi. 31; extent,
    v. ii. 34.
   pitcht, pret. fixed, fastened, v. ii. 19. Cl pight.
   piteously, compassionately, vi. vii. 37.
   pitifull, compassionate, merciful, 11. v. 24.
   pitteous, compassionate, pitiful, 11. x. 44.
   pittie, to move to pity, grieve, vi. xii 9.
   place, rank,t v. viii. 14, v. ix. 38; in p. = on the
     spot, 1. v. 36; come in p. = be present, 111. 1x.
     26; to take p. = to find acceptance, 111, ix. 26.
    plaine, to complain, complain of, 11, in. 13, viii.
     19, 111, v. 39, xi. 16, vt. viii. 21. playned,
```

```
playnd, pret. 1. i. 47, 111. v. 44, xi. 23, S.C.
 7an. 12.
plaintiffe, plaintive, v. iv. 40.
platane, the oriental plane-tree, 1. i. 9.
plaudite, applause, Three Lett. p. 624.
pleasaunce, -auns, plea-, courtesy, pleasing
 behaviour, 1. ii. 30; pleasantness, 1. iv. 38
 loy, pleasure, enjoyment, S. C. Jan. Arg. 10.
 S. C. Feb. 223, Mar. Arg. 3, Amor. Son. 17.
 21, 89; delightful things, S C. May 7; parts
 of a garden laid out ornamentally (plur.), 11. x11
 50.
pled, pret, pleaded, v. ix. 43.
plesh, puddle, pool, 11. viii. 36.
plight, sb. fold, pleat, 11, 111, 26, ix. 40, v. 1x. 28,
 condition, 111. i. 1, 1v. i. 38, v. xii. 16, S. C.
  Apr. 49, Oct. 87; health, good condition, iii.
  vii, 21, ix. 19; attire, array, iii. xii. 8.
plight, vb.1 plighted, pledged, pa. part. v. xi.61,
  pret. S. C. Aug. 25.
 plight, vb.2 pa. part. planted, woven, 11. vi. 7,
  vi. vii. 43; ppl. adj. pleated, iii. ix. 21.
 plot, map, chart, R. R. 363.
 plough-yrons, coulter and share of a plough
  vii. vii. 35.
 ply, to apply (refl.), III. vii. 12; to move
  towards, iv. i. 38.
 poase, to puzzle, Three Lett. p. 618.
 poesie, poesye, poem; motto or short in
  scription, S. C. pp. 422, 423, 435.
  poetresse, poetess, Teares 576.
  point, sb.: full p = full stop, 11. v. 68; /
   point = completely, fully, 1. 1. 16, 11. 12
   exactly, 111. ii. 16.
  point, vb. to appoint, t. ix. 41; pret. IV. 11
   51, v. xii. 9, Hubberd 1115; pa part. 11
   vii. 12.
  poise, poyse, force, 1. vi. 54, v. xii. 3
   R. R. 214; weight, v. n. 34.
  poke, bag, pouch, iv. vii. 6.
  pollicy, statecraft, 1. iv. 12, 11, 1x, 48, 53.
   31), vii. vi. 6, p. 410.
  pols, levies a tax upon, v. ii. 6.
  polygony, plant of the genus Polygonus
   Snakewood, III. v. 32.
  poore, to pour, S. C. June 80.
  porcpisces, porpoises, Clout 249.
  porphyre, porphyry; a beautiful hard rocl
    often used poetically to mean granite
    marble, R. K. 441.
   port, carriage, bearing, 11. iii. 28, 111. viii. 4
    Amor. Son. 13, Three Lett. p. 621 (plur.
    station, rank, III. vii. 15, xi. 46.
   portance, -aunce, carriage, bearing, deme-
    our, 11. iii. 5, 21, vii. 41, 111. ii. 27, VI. V. 1
    vii. 6.
```

portend, to signify, v. vii. 4. pret, pressed, thronged, it, vii. 44; prev. part. portesse, portable breviary, 1, iv. 19. advancing, IV. X. 10, VII. Vi. 10. portlinesse, stateliness, dignity, Amor. Son. 5. precedent, pattern, model, p. 412. portly, stately, dignified, Amor. Son. Epith. 148. 1 166. possesse, to accomplish, obtain, 111, 111, 111, 51; to occupy, Muiop, 150. post: in p. = in haste, at express speed, vi. vu. 35. potshares, potsherds, broken pieces of earthen-Ware, vi. 1. 37. pottle, measure equal to two quarts, Three Lett. p. 615. Pouke, Puck; an evil spirit or goblin, also called Robin Goodfellow and Hobgoblin, Epith. 341. pouldred, fa. part. crushed, powdered, i, vii. 12; ppl. adj. spotted, iii. ii. 25; reduced to 1201. powder, R. R. 378. pounce, claw or talon of a bird of prev, i. vi. 19, 1. 11. 42. pounching, fres. fart. poking, prodding, vi. 11. 22. pound: in p. = in a balance, v. ii. 36 pourtrahed, fa. fart. drawn, portrayed, t. VIII. 33, II 18, 33, III, I. 34 pourtraiet, .b. image, representation, likeness 11. iii. 22. xii. 23, 10. Prol. 1, 1v. v. 13, R. R. 346. pourtraint, por-, th. to portray, iv. v. 12, p. 407, S. C. p. 417. pourtraiture, -acture, -aicture, image. portrait, representation, 1, 1v. 17, Hubberd 611, Daphu. 303. pousse, pulse, pease, S. C. Aug. 46. powre, to pour, R. T. 131. poynant, poin-, sharp, piercing, i. vii. 19, ii. vm. 36, 10. i. 5, iv. m. 9. practick, -e, crafty, cunning, artful, 1. xii. 34 11. i. 3, 10. 9; skilful, 1v. 10. 7, v. vn. 29, vr. 1. 36. practise, actions, conduct, 111. 111. 28, v. vi. 27. 31; artifice, stratagem, Hulberd 8:6. practiz'd, still adj. skilled, iv. ii. 10. práctiz'd, fa fart, plotted, schemed, v. ix. 41. prancke, vb.1 to fold, plait, i. iv. 14. prancke, ib.2 to dress, deck (refl.), 11. 11. 36; to show off, 11 iii. 6. pranke, sh. evil deed, v. i. 15. pray, to take possession of, make prey of, v. iv. 14. prayde, pa. tart. captured as booty

(fig.), vi. x. 35.

S. C. Oct. 70.

preace, -se, -sse, sb. multitude, press, crowd 1. 14. 3, 11. vii. 46, 111. i. 23, 1v. iii. 4. iv. 34;

to put in preace = to exercise, put in practice,

precuing, vol. so. trial, probation, Hubberd preferre, to promote, Cloud 818. prefard. pret, preterred, liked, m. viii, 14; pa, part. proferred, Iv. ii. 27. profixt, pa. part, fixed, settled (beforehand), v. XI. 40. preifo, ve priefe. prejudice, vb. to influence, Three Lett. p. presudize, sb. prognostication, presaging, It. prepense, to consider, iii. xi. 14. prescript, command, instruction, Hubberd present, immediate, instant, S. C. p. 447. president, precedent, example, v. iv. 2, Three Lett. p. 623. prest, adj. ready; at hand, 11. viii. 28; prepared, iv. ni. 22; adv. quickly, immediately, vii. vi. 16. protence, design, intention, II, IV, I, V. 33, vni. 10. pretend, to attempt, ii, xi, 15; pa. farl. portended, vi. iv. 10, stretched out, vi. xi. 19. preuent, to forestall, anticipate, pre., part, tv. 41, vi. vol. 15; prel. vi. 1. 38. preuie, preuelie, see priuie, priuely. price, .b. value, 1. x. 31, Clorinda 100. price, -ze, vb. to pay the price for, pay for, 1, v. 26, ix. 37, Il. Love 175. prizde, pa. fart, revenged, paid for, R. T. 116. prick, vb. to si ut, ride fast, pres. part. t. i. 1; fret. 11. i. ±0, v. 1. 19. pricke, sb. point, pitch, ii. xiv. 1; target, bull's-cye S. C. Sept. 122. pricket, a brok in its second year, S. C. Dec. priefe, expenence, t. vni. 43, tt. i. 48, iv. 28; test, trial, i. ix. 17, vi. iv. 34; proved or tested power, 1. x. 24; pro f, S. C. Ang. 116. preife, trial, Hubberd 4c8. Cl. proofe. prieue, to prove, vi. xii. 18; pa. part. v. iv. 33. Cf. proue. prime, spring, spring-time, t. it. 40, vi. 13, 11. xi1. 75, 111. vi. 42, vii. vii. 18, 43, S. C. Feb. 16, 167, Past. Elegie 47; simrise, morn-111g, 11. 1x. 25. primitias, first fruits, Hulberd 518. primrose, best, finest, S. C. Feb. 166, Clout 560. principals, the two principal feathers in each preace, 1b. to press, strive, contend, 1. xii. 19; | wing (falcoury), S. C. p. 418.

principle, beginning, x. xi. 2. prisd, ppl. adj. with the price fixed, vi. xi. 14. prise, sb.1 price, vi. xi. 14; worth, value, R. R. 403. Cf. price, sb. prise, sb.2 contest, enterprise, vi. viii. 25. priuate, personal, particular, Clorinda 89. priuely, priuily, -lie, preu-, secretly, 1. V. v. vii. 14, S. C. May 252, Sept. 160, Worlds Vanitie 78. priuie, preuie, priue, adj. secret, S. C. March 35, H. Beautie 236; secret, hidden, concealed, vi. v. 24, Elegie 179, S. C. Sept. 162; to make privie = to make cognizant, familiar, S. C. March 30, Hubberd 70, Three Lett. p. 626. priuitie, -y, design, plan, 1v. v. 1; secret thoughts, Iv. ix. 19. prise, prisde, see price, vb. procure, to endeavour to cause, II. ii. 32, xii. 48, v. ix. 39; to cause, v. viii. 1; pret. 1v. xii. 23; pa. part. urged, pressed, iii. i. 1; pret. induced, prevailed upon, v1. viii. 29. prodigious, ominous, portentous, Iv. i. 13. professe, to indicate, vi. vi. 10. proffer, offer, vi. ix. 33. progrésse, journey, 111. xi. 20. project, to throw, cast, vi. i. 45. prolling, pres. part. prowling, S. C. Sept. 160. prolong, to postpone, Iv. iv. 12; to delay, v. xi. I. prone, yielding, III. ii. 23. proofe, experience, IV. VII. 37, VIII. 44; effect v. ix. 42; arm'd to p. = with tested weapons; put in p. = tried, Hubberd 1252. proper, own, 111. ii. 1, v. iv. 24, R. R. 431; proper good = private property, v. i. 23. propertis, characteristics, 11. ix. 58. protense, extension, duration, 111. iii. 4. protract, duration, length, Amor. Son. 87. proue, prooue, to try, test, i. i. 50, iii. xii. 31, 1v. vi. 4, vi. xi. 5, Amor. p. 578; pret. III. i. 60, v. ii. 46; to experience, endure, feel, Iv. vi. 34, viii. 3, ix. 31; pret. Clout, 664. prouokement, provocation, IV. iv. 4. prow, brave, 111. iii. 28; prowest (superl.), 1. iv. 41, v. 14, 11. iii. 15, viii. 18, 111. iii. 24. prowes, prowess, I. ix. 17. proynd, pret. preened, Thest. 137. prune, to trim or dress the feathers with the beak, to preen, 11. iii. 36, Teares 402; refl. Past. Aeglogue 24. pryse, to pay for, iv. xi. 5. Cf. price, vb. puddle, foul, muddy water, IV. V. 33. puissant (2 syll.), mighty, powerful, 1. vi. 45, 1v. xi. 15. puissa(u nee (3syll.), power, 1. ii. 17, 111. xi. 4. | quell, trans. to frighten, daunt, v. iii. 16

pumy, pumie stones, pumice stones, ii. v. 30, 111. v. 30, S. C. March 89. pumies. plur. pieces of pumice stone. pupillage, minority, 11. x. 64, (fig.) p. 412. purchase, sb. acquisition, I. iii. 16; booty. vi. xi. 12, Hubberd 854, Gnat 591. purchase, vb. to obtain, 11. iii. 18; to acquire. win, v. x. 24. purchast, pret. won, v. vin. 25, 26. purfied, pa. part. decorated with an ornamental border, 1. 11. 13, 11. iii. 26. purport, outward bearing, 111. i. 52. purpos, -e, sb. intention, 1. ii. 30; discourse, conversation, 1. vii. 38, xii. 13, 111. ii. 4, viii. 14, 1v. i. 7; S. C. March. Arg. 3; plur. riddles, games, III. x. 8; to purpose = to the purpose, ii. iv. 39; p. was moved = it was suggested, III. ix. 32. purpose, vb. to discourse, II. xii. 16. pursuiuant, -siuant, follower, attendant, 11. viii. 2; warrant-officer, Hubberd 565. puruay, to provide, II. iii. 15 (of), v. xii. 10. purueyance, provision, 1. xii. 13; preparation, management, III. i. 11; equipment, III. i. 33, xi. 53. puttock, kite or buzzard, 11. xi. 11, v. v. 15, xii. 30. pyonings, vbl. sb. diggings, excavations, 11. x. O

quadrate, rectangle, 11. 1x. 22. quaile, to become dismayed, 1. ix. 49; to become seeble, fail, 111. ii. 27; to fade, wither, S. C. Nov. 91, quayld, quaild, pa. part. subdued, overpowered, 11. 1v. 14, 111. viii. 34. quaint, queint, fastidious, 111. vii. 10; artful, iv. i. 5; pretty, iv. x. 22; strange, iv. vii. 45, S. C. Oct. 114; fine, elegant, vi. ix. 35; adv. strangely, 111. vii. 22. qualifyde, fa. fart. modified, moderated, II. vi. 51. quarrell, quar'le, square-headed arrow, II. XI

quarrey, ie, the bird flown at or killed by ? bird of prey, 11. xi. 43, 111. vii. 39, v. iv. 42. quart, quarter, region, II. x. 14. quartred, pret. divided into quarters (ker.), 11

24, 33.

i. 18. quayd, pa. part. for quayld, daunted, sub dued, 1. viii. 14. queane, a worthless woman, IV. viii. 28. queint, adj. See quaint.

queint, pa. part. extinguished, 11. v. 11.

Queld, pa. part. v. ni. 26, xii. 16; to overcome, kill, vi. x. 36; pe. part. ii. vii. 40, vi. xii. 30; intr. to perish, vii. vii. 42; to abate, S. C. March 8. Queme, to please, S. C. May 15. quest, expedition, search, 111. viii. 53, 1v. vi. 42. quick, vb. to stir, v. ix. 33. Quicke, adj. alive, 11. i. 30; sb. living thing, S. C. March 74. quidams, somebodies, certain persons, S. C. p. 419. fuidditie, essence, Three Lett. p. 614. Guiet age, tranquillity, quietness, IV. in. 43. Quight, adj. free, R. R. 108. quight, vb. to release, set free, t. viii. 10; to requite, repay, 1. x. 67, 111. v. 45, x. 35. Cf. quight, adv. quite, 1. i. 45, 111. v. 41, v. xi. 60, quip, vb. to jeer, vi. vii. 44 quipa, sb. sneers, taunts, Hubberd 707. quire, company, vi. viii. 48. quire, quyre, a company of singers, 11. vi. 24, Clorinda 63, Amor. Son. 19. quit, quite, quyte, to return (a salutation), 1.

x. 15 quited, fret. 1. i. 30; to return, repay, requite, 1, ii, 17, viii, 26, vii. vi. 44, Clout 681; to free, release, 1. vi. 6, vi. viii. Arg., S. C. Feb. 213; pa. part. quitt, 1. v. 11, x. 63; quitted, pa, part. taken away, IV. i. 12; Quit, inf. refl. to clear oneself of, II, i. 20.

quite clame, to release, discharge, vi. ii. 14. quod, quoth, said, Amor. Son. 50, Amor. p. 578, Epigrams p. 606-7.

quooke, pret. quaked, 111, x, 24, v, viii, Q, vi. vii. 24, vii. vi. 30. Hubberd 1060.

# rab(b)lement, rabble, mob, 1. vi. 8, 11. xi.

17, 111. xi. 46, Hubberd 1270; confusion,

race, sb. act of riding rapidly on horseback;

onset, rush, 1v. vi. 3, v. x. 34.

tumult, 1. xii. 9.

race, vb.1 to raze, destroy, 11. xii, 83, 111, iii, 34, v. ii. Arg. raced, pret. v. ii. 28; pa. part., R. R. 22; raced, pa. part. erased, v. ix. 26, raced, vô.2, pa, parl. cut away, v. v. 11. rackt, pa. part. extorted, Hubberd 1306. rad 1, pret. rode, v. ii. 13. rad 2, see read, vb.2 raft, pret. cut away, t. i. 24; pa. part. deprived, S. C. Aug. 14. Ci. reave, reft. rag'd, ragged, torn, v. xii. 28. ragged, rugged, 1. v. 38, vi. iv. 21, Clout 114; rough, S. C. Feb. 5.

raid, pa. part. smeared, soiled, III, viii. Cf. ray, ub.

raile, rayle, to flow, gush, 1, vi. 43, 11, viii. 37, 111. xi. 46, 1v. ii. 18, Bellay 155; rayling, ppl. edj. III. iv. 57; railing, pres. part., R. T. 12.

rain, -e, vb. to reign, 1. v. 40, Amor. Son. 4. raine, rayne, raign, 16, kingdom, rule, domain, 11. vii. 21, 111. iv. 49, iv. iii. 27, v. xi. 35, vi. ii. 0, vii. vii. 15, R. T. 63.

rakehell, rascal, scoundrelly, v. xi. 44. rakehellye, worthless, rascally, S. C. p. 417. ramp, to rage, I. iii. 41, v. 28; ramping, ppl. adj. 1. iii. 5. rampt, pret. seized, vi.

xii. 20. rancke, ranke, so. row, iv. v. 33, v. xi, q; series, S. C. p. 419.

ranoke, adj. violent, fierce, S. C. Feb. 1: thick, dense, S. C. July 4. rancke, ranke, adv. fiercely, violently, 11. iii.

6, IV. V. 33. ranckorous, bitter, sharp, S. C. Feb. 185. randon, random, 11. iv. 7, 111. viii. 20, Clout

rape, ab. robbery, iv. vii. g.

rape, vb. to carry off, iii, x. Arg.

rapt, pa. part, carried off, seized, 1, iv. 0, v. viii. 43.

rase, to erase, destroy, Amor. G. W. to Author; to graze, iii, i. 6g. rast, pa. part. 11. xii, 80, 111. iii. 43, 1v. i. 21. Cf. race, vo.1 rash, to cut, slash, Iv. ii, 17, v. iii, 8,

rashly, hastily, quickly, iii. i. 62, xii. 33; suddenly, Iv. ii. 17.

raskall, base, worthless, 1. xii, Q, 11. xi. 10. 111. xi. 46.

rate, sb. amount, allowance, sv. viii. 19: manner, IV. x. 52.

rate, vb. to reprove angrily, 111, ix. 14; to drive away by rating, Iv. ix. 31.

rathe, soon, 111. iii. 28, S. C. Dec. 98; swiftly, S. C. July 78. rather, comp. earlier (born). S. C. Feb. 83.

raught, pret. and pa. part. reached, 1. vi. 20, 11. ix. 19, v. i. 6, 8, vi. xi. 33; handed, i. ix. 51, 11. iv. 5; took, took away, 111. i. 5, 1v. iv. 20, vt. xii. 3; granted, Hubberd 441.

raunch, to pull, pluck, S. C. Aug. 07.

raunge, row, vi. xil. 26; fire-grate, ii. vil. 35. rauin, -e, plunder, booty, prey, 1. v. 8, xi. 12, IV. vii. 5; voracity, V. xi. 24.

raulshment, ecstasy, vi. ix. 26.

raw-bone, raw-boned, showing the bone, L ix. 35.

ray, sb. array, equipment, v. ii. 50, R. T. 640: order, v. xi. 34.

ray, vb. to soil, defile, 11. i. 40, v1. iv. 23, Bellay 167. See raid.

rayle, sb. abuse, IV. i. 43.

rayle, vb. to utter abusive language, complain, S. C. May 146; pa. part. 11. iv. Arg. railing, ppl. adj. abusive, R. T. 538.

rayons, rays, Bellay 21.

reach, sb. penetration, v. ix. 39; device, scheme, Hubberd 1141.

reach, vb. to give, yield, 1v. ii. 12; to launch, direct, aim, Hubberd 840.

read.reed.-e, sb. saying, motto, iv. x. 10. S. C. July 11; speech, IV. X. 34; counsel, advice, Iv. xii. 27, v. Prol. 11, i. 26, vi. ii. 30, vi. 5. read, rede, vb.1 to counsel, advise, I. i. 13, S. C. Feb. 137, Hubberd 114, Clout 925;

red, pa, part. vi, ii. 30.

read, -e, reed, -e, vb.2 to see, discern, distinguish, perceive, 1.i. 21, H. Love 16; pret. rad, vi. i. 4; red, Epith. 189; pa. part. red, i. vi. 36, viii. 33, 111. i. 33, H. Beautie 165; rad, 111. ix. 2, 1v. vii. 24, v. xii. 29; read, v. xii. 39; redd, p. 411;-to discover, guess, perceive, 11. xii. 70, 1v. iv. 39, v. xii. 18, vi. v. 10, Clout 336; pa. part. red, IV. vii. 40, Clout 270; rad, v. vi. 10;-to tell, say, declare, 11. i. 17, 18, vii. 7, 111. ii. 14, iii. 25, vi, xi, 20, Hubberd 604; pret. red, 111. x. 44, IV. XII. 25, V. IX. 43, VI. X. 30; pa. part. red, 1. x. 67, v. viii. 13;-to call, name: red, pret. 111, vi, 28; pa. part. 1, vii, 46; 11. vi. q;-to deem, think, imagine, take to be, 11. vii. 2, 7, 12, v. iii. 21, vi. ii. 25, iii. 31, viii, 31, Misc. Sonn. i.; red, pa. part., v. Prol. 2, R. T. 633. readen, to describe, 111, xii, 26; redd, pa. part. 11, vii, 51. red, pa. part, counted, IV. xii. 2; to foresee, predict. Hubberd 608.

remdifye, to rebuild, 11, x. 46. re-allie, to form again, vii. vi. 23.

reame, realm, IV, viii, 45.

reare, rearen, to raise, t. v. 13, vi. 37, viii. 10, 40, x. 35, 11, x1, 17, 111, x. 52, 1v. iv. 41, vi. 25, vi. ii. 42; to arouse, cause, bring about, 11. iv. 5, vi. 21, xii. 22, 111. i. 9, 1v. i. 34; to take away, 111. viii. 19, x. 12, 1v. vi. 6; to gather, collect, v. xii. 6; refl. to rise up, Hubberd 237.

reason, ratio, proportion, 11. ii. 15; a reasonable amount, Hubberd 887.

reaue, to take away, 1. iii. 36, xi. 41, 11. i. 17, xi. 19, 111. viii. 14, v. xi. 27, Hubberd 24; reaued, pret. Beautie 279; to deprive, 11. viii. 15; to release, p. 412.

rebuke, shame, disgrace, 111. i. 55.

rebut, to recoil, 1. ii. 15; to repel, drive account of, vi. xi. 14.

back, 11. ii. 23; rebutted, pret. 1. xi. 53. 111. viii. 10; pa. part. IV. iv. 18; rebut. ting, pres. part. v. x. 35.

rechlesse, reckless, Hubberd 950.

reclame, sb. recall, bringing back, 111. x. 16. reclame, -ayme, vb. to recall, v. xii. 9; to recant, vi. iii. 43.

recomfort, to refresh, recreate (refl.), Hubberd 758.

recomfortlesse, without comfort, v. vi. 24. record, -e. to call to mind, meditate on, n. xii. 10: to sing, S. C. Apr. 30.

recourse, sb. retiring (to rest), 111. ix. 26; flow, iv, vi. 29; had recourse = came back, v. ii. 2.

recoursing, pres. part. recurring, p. 408. recower, -coure, to recover, IV. iii. 20, ix. 25. recoyle, to retire, retreat, t. x. 17, v. ix. 9, Hubberd 754. recule, cuile, to recoil, v. Xi. 47. VI. i. 20.

recure, to restore (to health), 1, v. 44, ix. 2, 11. i. 54, Amor. Son. 21; to recover, 111. v. 34, IV. iv. 37, viii. 45, VI. V. 12; to remedy, 11. x. 23, v. x. 26, S. C. Feb. 154, p. 417; to cure, heal, vi. vi. 1, 15, Amor. p. 578. redisbourse, to pay back again, Iv. iii. 27. redoubted, ppl. adj. reverenced, iii. ix. 1;

dreaded, feared, v. i. 3.

redound, to flow, overflow, 1, vi. 30 (fig.) v. ix. 33, Amor. Son. 18, H. Love 165, H. Beautie 75; to result, arise, 111. ii. 26; to be redundant, in excess, IV. X. 1. redounding, ppl. adj. overflowing, 1. iii. 8; pres. part. tilled, Gnat 189.

redresse, to cure, repair, put right again, 1. v. 36; to put in order, vi. v. 10. redrest, pa. part. relieved, IV. v. 39.

reduce, to bring back, restore, vi. vi. 3. reeking, pres. part. smoking, S. C. Sept. 117 reele, to roll, 1. v. 35; pret. staggered, 111. vii.

42. refection, refreshment, iv. xii. 34.

reflex, reflection, Amor. Son. 66.

reformed, pret. punished, chastised, v. i. 21. refraine, to restrain, IV. ix. 3.

reft, pret. took away, Iv. ii. 4, v. iii. 37; cut off, Iv. iii. 20, v. xii. 23; pa. part. seized, taken away, 1. iii. 41, ix. 26, 11. xii. 67, 1v. iii, 21, iv. 8; bereaved, deprived, 111, iv. 36, Cf. raft, reave.

refúge, vi. iii. 40.

regalitie, sovereignty, 11. i. 57.

regard, plur. interests, objects of care, 11. vii. 33; considerations, v. ix. 43; sing. value, vi. xi. 13; in r = in comparison, vi. x. 9; on regardfull, heedful, Iv. vii. 22; worthy of repaire, to draw back, v. xi. 13. repast, refreshment, repose, t. ii. 4, v. iii. 40. regard or esteem, Clout 185. Repent, ab. Repentance, III. xii. 24. regiment, kingdom, domain, ii. ix. 59, Clout repent, vo. to grieve, mourn, III. viii. 47. 233; office of a ruler, 11. x. 30; rule, power, repine, to grumble, complain, iv. ii, 51; to 111. m. 40, 1v. vni. 30, v. vni. 30, v11. vi. 2. regret, -greet, sorrow, pam, 11, viii. 45, vi. fret or murmur at, vi. vii. 26. repining, ppl, adj. angry, 1. ii. 17. ii. 23, Teares 304. rehearse, to relate, recount, R. T. 255. repleuie, to recover for, or restore to, the owner by replevin, i.e. upon his giving secur-Teares 1, Past. Elegie 216. ity to have the matter tried in a court of reincreast, pa. parl, increased again, vi. vi. 15. justice and to return the goods if the case is rekes, tecks, cates, S. C. July 34. decided against him, 1v. xii. 31. relate, to bring back, iii. viii. 51. release, ce, to revoke, remit, ii. i. 60; to report, to convey (news), II. i. 33, x. 3. repriefe, reproof, reproach, 1, 1x. 29, 11, iv. give up, iv. ii. 19; to withdraw, vi. i. 43. 28, 111, in. 5, iv. 11, viii. 1. fret, relest, transferred, iv. iv. 36; releast, reprine, to rescue, ii. i. 55, v. iv. Aig.; to relaxed, vi. i. 36. relent, sb. delay, v. vii. 24. reprieve, iv. xii. 31. reprise, to take again, it. xi. 44, iv. iv. 8. relent, vb. to slow, slacken, abate, 11. xi. 27, 111. 1v. 49, vii. 2, 1v. ii. 18, m. 26; to repent, requere, to demand, 1. ini. 12, vi. 27, vi. i. 43. require, to request, ask, demand, Iv. i. 12, regret, iii. vi. 25; to solten, cause to relent, v. 1. 21, ii. 2, 11, vi. v. 11, S. C. Nov. Arg., 111. vi. 39, 40; to be gentle, Amor. Son. 82. Hubberd 325. relide, pret. rallied, iv. ix. 26. requests, demands, II. ii. 32. reliques, remains, II. x. 57. requight, -quite, to pay back, revenge, t. iv. reliue, en, to come to life again, S. C. 42; to salute in return, 1. x. 49, Hubberd p. 419, Nov. 88. reliu'd, fa. fart, tevived, 587; fret. requit, iv. in. 47. restored to life, 1, 1x, 52, 111, iv. 35, viii. 3, pret, tepaved, v. vu. 33. VI. XI. 24. reseized, fa. part, restored, replaced, it. x. 48. remaine : mr. == 25 an inheritance, iii. ix. 37. resemblance, -aunce, demonstration of remeasure, to retrace, iii. vii. 18. affection, 111. vii, 16; appearance, v. 1x. 22. remédilesse, without hope of rescue, or resiant, resident, IV. XI. 28. cure, 1. v. 36, 111, xii. 34. resolu'd, pa. part. relaxed, slackened, Gnat remercied, pret. thanked, 11. xi. 16. remitted, fa. fart. put back, reinstated, resort, visiting, frequenting of a person's com-Hubberd 1254. remorse, pity, ii. iv. 6, iii. vii. 43; biting or pany, 111, ix. 5. cutting force, iv. ii. 15; without r. = without respect, care, attention, v. xu. 21. respire, -yre, to take breath, rest, t. vi. 44. mitigation, S. C. Nov. 131. ix, 8, x1, 28, 111, 111, 36, x11, 45; to breathe, remoue, to conceal, 11. iv. 27; to change, 111. viii. 42. remoud, fret. went away, 111. ix. 11. iv. 16. respondence, answer, response, 11. xii. 71. rest 1: set his r. = took up his abode, vi. x. 2. rencounter, b. encounter, III. 1. 9. rest 2, a contrivance to hold a lance or spear, rencountring, fres. part. engaging in battle, v. viii. 5, 9. 1. IV. 39. restore, sb. restitution, 111. v. 19; restoration, renflerst, fa. part. rendered fierce, II. viii. 45. renforst, pret, made a strong effort, II. iv. 14; Epicaph (2) 34. restore, vb. to reward, 1. viii. 27. ta. part. forced again, II. x. 48. renne, to run, S. C. Apr. 118, July 60; pa. resty, restive, v. viii. 39. retourned, -turnd, pret. turned (back), H. part., S. C. Aug. 3; renning, vbl. sb., Past. ini. 19, 111. viii. 18. Elegie 73. retrate, sb.1 retiring, retreat, Iv. x. 57. renowmd, -ed, pa. part. renowned, F. Q. retrate, .b.2, -ait, portrait, picture, 11. iii. Dedic. p. 2, 11. iv. 41. renowning, vol. sb. making famous, glorificaix. 4. retrate. vb. to retreat, 1. i. 13, viii. 12, IV. i tion, R. T. p. 471. retyre, retirement, vi. ix. 27. rent, to propel violently, v. x. 34. reuell rout, uproarious revelry, Hubb renuerst, pret. v. iii. 37; pa. part. 1. iv. 41;

reversed\_

revengement, revenge, Hubberd 21

```
reuénue, v. ii. Q.
rouerse, to bring back, t. ix. 48; to remove,
 divert, 111, ii. 48; to return, 111. iv. 1, R. R.
rouest, to clothe, II. i. 22.
reuoke, to check, restrain, 11. ii. 28; to with-
 draw, 11. viii. 39, 111. xi. 21.
reuolt, to turn back, 111. xi. 25.
rouyld, pret. scolded, 1. xii. 11.
row, sb.1 row, order, 111. vi. 17, 35, v. v. 22;
 in r. = in turn, older, Teares 173, 233, &c.
rew, sb.2 rue, a perennial evergreen shrub, III.
  ii. 4Q.
rew. vb. to pity, 1. i. 51, vi. 31, 111. v. 30; to
  repent, lament, be sorry, 1. i. 53, v. 42, 11. i.
  25, v. xi. 30. Cf. rue
 reynold, reynard, fox, Hubberd 556.
 ribaudrie, rybaudrye, tibaldry, obscenity,
  S. C. Oct. 76, Teares 213.
 ribauld, a wicked, dissolute person, 11. i. 10;
  an obscene composition, S. C. p. 459.
 richesse, riches, 1. iv. 28, 11. vii. 24.
 rid 1, pret. ride, v. iii. 10, v1. iii. 37.
 rid 2, pa. part. (for red), seen, perceived, vii.
  vi. 54. See read, reed, vb.2
 riddes, dispatches, 1. i. 36.
 ridling, ppl. adj. that can expound riddles;
  divining, 111. xi. 54.
 rife, ryfe, adj. strong, deep, 11, ii. 32; abun-
  dant, Gnat 146; common, S. C. July 11;
  adv. deeply, strongly, abundantly, 1. ix. 44,
   82, 111, v. 31, Iv. iii. 12, v. ix. 48, vi. v. 5.
 rifelye, copiously, abundantly, S. C. Dec. 94.
 rift, sb. split, fissure, t. ii. 30; fragment, II.
   xii. 4.
  rift, pa. parl. rent asunder, 1. xi. 54, 11. vii. 23.
  right, territory, domain, v. vni. 26.
  rigorous, violent, fierce, 1. xi. 16, 111, xii. 27
  rigour, violence, force, 1. viii. 18, 111. v. 23,
   v. viii. 32.
  rine, rinde, bark, rind, S. C. Feb. 111, R. R.
   389.
  ring, to encircle, vi. Prol. 7.
  riotise, -ise, riotous life, conduct, expendi-
   ture; extravagance, 1. iv. 20, 111. i. 33, xii.
    25, Hubberd 805, 1310.
  rip up, to open up, 1v. ix. 37, S. C. Sept. 13.
  riuage, bank, shore, Iv. vi. 10.
  riue, ryue, to split, tear, pierce, 1. ii. 19, v. ii.
    50, Gnat 519; ryu'd, pret. III. v. 37; pa.
    part. riu'd, ryued, III. i. 6, viii. 3, Iv. iii.
    18, Past. Elegie 1 20; riuen, Hubberd 540.
   rise, to come to hand, it. ix. 59; to accrue,
   Hubberd 806.
      ke, distaff, IV. ii. 48.
       3, roadstead, 1. xii. 42; raid, vt. viii. 35.
```

rong, pret, rang, 111, i, 62. ronte, ox or cow of a small breed or size, S.C. Feb. 5. roode, cross, crucifix, vi. v. 35. roome, place, position, 11. x. 60. rosiere, rose-tree, II. ix. IQ. rosmarine 1, rosemary, Muiop. 200. rosmarines2, walruses, 11. xii. 24. rote, a mediaeval musical instrument, probably of the violin class, 11. x. 3, 1v. ix. 6. roules, rolls, records, vi. vii. 33. rounded, pret. whispered, 111. x. 30. roundelay, a short simple song with a retrain, S. C. June 49, Aug. 56. roundell, circle, III. iv. 33. roundle, rondeau, rondel, short poem, S. C. Aug. 125. rout, crowd, troop, 1. iv. 36, v. 51, 11, 1x 15. v. 11, 51, v. 5, v1. ix. 8, S. C. Oc'. 26, Hubberd 558. rouze, rowse, to shake, ruffle, 1. xi. 9. 11. 111. 35; rouzed, ppl. adj. 1. xi. 9. roue, to shoot with arrows (fig.), 1. Prol. 3, III. i. 50; rou'd, roude, -ed, pret. III. IX. 28, v. v. 35, S.C. Aug. 79. rowels, knobs on a horse's bit, 1. vii. 37. rowme, place, space, room, 1. iv. 13, S. C. Apr. 114, S. C. Dec. 68. royne, to roar, growl, v. ix. 33. rubin, -e, ruby, 11. iii. 24. xii. 54. rudded, pa. part. reddened, Epith. 173. ruddock, redbreast, robin, Epith. 82. rudenesse, uncouthness, S. C. p. 416. rue, to cause to pity, 1. ii. 21. ruing, pres. part. pitying, v. x. 4. Cf. rew. vb. ruefull, pitifull, 11. xii. 36. ruefully, pitiably, 111. vin. 30. ruefulnesse, dismalness, pathos, 1. iv. 25. ruffed, pa. part. 111. ii. 27; ppl. adj., Teares 402 : ruffled. ruffing, pres. part. ruffling, 111. xi. 32. ruffin, sb. the ruff, Acerina cernua, IV. xi. 33. ruffin, adj. ruffian, disorderly, t. iv. 34. ruinate, to ruin, 11. xii. 7, 111. viii 28, R. R. 94; pa. part. v. x. 26, Hubberd 1040. rulesse, lawless, Gnat 431. rushrings, rings of rush, S. C. Nov. 116. ruth, pity, grief, t. i. 50, 111, v. 7, v. 1x, 50, R. T. 480. ruthfull, piteous, grievous, S. C. June 116. rutty, full of ruts, Proth. 12. S .s. = scilicet, S. C. pp. 418, 447.

sacrament, solemn oath or engagement, v. i.

sacred, accursed, 1. viii. 35, 11. xii. 37, v. xii. 1. mad. grave, serious, 1. i. 20, 11. ii. 28; darkcoloured, sober-coloured, t. x. 7, xii. 5; grievous, 11, i, 38; heavy, 11, i, 45, viii, 30; constant. III. Xi. 45. safe, save, except, 111. vii. 60. safegard, safety, III. ix. 41. saine, sayne, to say, 3rd pers. plur. pres. 111. ix. 40, vii. vii. 55; inf., S. C. May 158, Sept. 108, 110, 123, Nov. 03. sake, cause, 1. i. 52; regard, consideration, 1. v. sale, net made out of sallow or willow branches, S. C. Dec. 81. salowd, pret. saluted, greeted, IV. vi. 25. Cf. salued. saliaunce, assault, sally, 11. i. 20. galuage, adi. savage, wild, 1. iii. 5 (tranyf.), III. iii. 45, x. 39, iv. iv. 42, vi. i. 9, v. 27, p. 411. R. T. 564, Teares 589; sb. vi. v. 41. salued, pret. saluted, greeted, 11. viii. 23. salue, sb. remedy, t. v. 40, 111. iv. 43, v. 50, S. C. Aug. 103, Amor. Son. 50. salue, vb. 1 to remedy, Iv. iv. 27, p. 417; pret. remedied, made amends for, 11. x. 21. salue, vb.2 to save, v. v. 43; to arrange, contrive, Iv. i. 11; to preserve unblemished, Iv. iv. 27. saluing, vol. sb. restoration, vindication, it. i. sam, together, 1. x. 57, S. C. May 168. samite, rich silk fabric, III. xii. 13. sample, example, S. C. July 119. sanguine, blood-red colour, 11. i. 39, 111. viii. 6. sans, without; in the names Sans foy faithless, Sans joy joyless, Sans loy lawless, 1. ii. 25. sardonian, sardonic, v. ix. 12. saufgard, guard, defence, II. v. 8. saulge, sage, Muiop. 187. saue, to meet or overcome (a doubt), Hubberd 194. sauegard, to guard, protect, 111. viii. 46. sauine, small bushy evergreen shrub, Juniperus Sabina, bearing a small, round, bluishpurple berry, 111. ii. 49. sauing, without, in default of, S. C. p. 419 sauorie, plant of the genus Satureia, used for flavouring, Muiop. 198. saw, decree, command, Clout 884. say, saye 1, 2 cloth of fine texture resembling serge; in the 16th c. sometimes partly of silk, subsequently woollen, 1. iv. 31, 111. xii. 8, S. C. Aug. 66. 88.7 8, temper, vi. xi. 47. sould, a scabby disease, 1. viii. 47. seard, tret, burned, 1. xi. 26. scalp, crown of the head, skull, v. ii. 6.

soand, pa. part, examined, v. ix. 37; claubed, vii. vi. 8. soanne, to attempt (a high ascent), S. C. Oct. scape, sb. escape, deliverance, Gnat 664 scape, 16. to escape, 1. iv. 3, 111. xi. 34. scaraboo, beetle, Worlds Vanitie 44. scarmoges, skirmishes, 11. vi. 34. south, harm, damage, injury, loss, 1. iv. 35, xii. 34, 11, v. 18, 111, i. 37, x. 11, S. C. Dec. 100, Amor. Son, 31; harmful nature, v. viii. 49. scattered, pa. part. dropped, 11. ii. 2. scatterlings, vagrants, 11, x.63. scene, stage, Teares 102. soerne, to discern, III. x. 22. schoolery, education, Clout 702. solaunder, slander, v. ix. 26. solauo, slave, 11. vii. 33. solonder, slender, thin, 111. i. 47, vil. 36, v. vil. 7. scolopendraes, a kind of fabulous sea-fishes, 11, xit. 23. scope, object of desire or pursuit, III. iv. 53; extent, space, 111. ix. 46; mark for shooting at (lit. and fig.), vi. iii. 5, S. C. Nov. 155, Hubberd a60. score, number, vi. ix. 21. scorse, .b. exchange, 11. ix. 55. scorse, vb.1 to exchange, iii. ix. 16. scorsed, ub. pret. chased, vi. ix. 3. soould, pret. scowled, 11. ii. 35. scowre, to run, pursue, 1. ii. 20, Gnat 564. scowring, vbl. sb. dirt or scum, Gnat 229. soriene, screen, doorway, v. ix. 25. sorike, to shrick, vi. iv. 18. scrine, scryne, chest for the safe keeping of books and documents, 1. Prol. 2, 11. ix. 56. scrip, bag, wallet, 1. vi. 35. soruse, to squeeze, III. v. 33; sorusd, pret. 11. xii. 56; pa. part. 11. xii. 46. soryde, pa fart, descried, perceived, v. xii. 38. souchin, scutchin, -ion, escutcheon, shield, coat of arms, 111. iv. 16, Iv. i. 34, iii. 5, v. xi. souith guiridh (Welsh), green shield; y soutth gogh, the red shield, 11. x. 24. adaine, adeigne, sb. disdain, v. v. 51, Amor. sdeigne, vb. to disdain, 111. i. 55. p. 411; pret, adeigned, iii. i. 40, Hubberd 679; pa. part. sdayned, v. v. 44. sdeignfull, s'deign , sdein-, disdainful, III. vii. 10, v. ii. 33, Teares 71, Daphn. 549. sdeignfully, disdainfully, Hubberd 1234. seabeate, pa. part. besten by the ses,

weather-beaten, S. C. Feb. 34.

senarie, verse consisting of six feet, each of seare, adj. burning, 1. xi. 13; sere, withered, S. C. Nov. 147. sea-satyre, some kind of maritime monster, 11. xii. 24. sease, to reach, attain, III. v. 19. seasd, pret. penetrated, 1. xi. 38. Cf. seize. sea-shouldring, ppl. adj. with shoulders that displace the sea, 11. xii. 23. seasure: made s. = took possession, Iv. ix. 12. seat, to lie down, vi. ix. 4. Secretaries of nature, men acquainted with the secrets of nature, Three Lett. p. 615. sectaries, disciples, Teares 73, Hubberd 833. secure, free from apprehension, careless, vi. v. 16, Muiop. 382. securitie, carelessness, S. C. p. 427. see, seat, throne, III. vi. 2; dwelling-place, abode, 1v. x. 30. seeld, adj. rare, uncommon, Elegie 171. seeld, adv. seldom, Epitaph (1) 11. seeled, pa. part. made blind, 1. vii. 23. seeling, ceiling, Bellay 23. seely, simple, innocent, 1. vi. 10, 11. iii, 6, S. C. July 30. Cf. silly. seem, to be seemly, becoming, S. C. May 158, Hubberd 35, Clout 618. seemelesse, unseemly, shameful, v. ii. 25. seemely, comely, handsome, 11. xii. 27, 111. xii. 19, v. iv. 4. seeming, vbl. sb. opinion, Two Lett. p. 635. seemlyhed, a becoming appearance, IV. VIII. soone, ppl. adj. : well s. = well-versed, skilled, 1v. ii. 35, v. iii. 5, S. C. p. 417. seisin, vi. iv. 37. See liverey. seize, seise, to fasten upon, 1. iii. 19, viii. 15, v. iv. 40; to arrive at, attain, I. xii. 17; to penetrate, 11. viii. 38, 111. vii. 40. seized of, fa. part. = possessed of, vi. iv. 30, xii. 5, Hubberd 1111. selcouth, strange, IV. viii. 14. select, pa. part. chosen, Clorinda 63. selfe, himself, 1v. v. 34, vi. 17, H. Love 145; herself, Iv. i. 2, Gnat 505; itself, Iv. vii. 36. Bell, saddle, 11. ii. 11, iii. 12, viii. 31, 111. i. 6, iii. 60, IV. iv. 30, vi. 13. semblably, similarly, p. 411. semblance, -aunce, demeanour, expression, 111. vii. 16; joyous, faire s., 1v. vii. 44, vi. iv. 14. somblant, -aunt, likeness, resemblance, 1. ii. 12, p. 413, Amor. Son. 45; outward appearance, 11. i. 21, ix. 2, 111. ii. 38, 40; false appearance, pretence, 11. xii. 49, 111. iv. 54, Gnat 93; demeanour, IV. X. 31, VI. X. 23; signs, appearance, vi. v. 4; fair s. = favour, v. v. 56. seminarie, seed-plot, III. vi. 30.

which is either an iambus or some foot which the law of the verse allows to be substituted. Two Lett. p. 640. sencelesse, insensible, unfeeling, Amor. Son. 30, 54. senight, week, R. T. p. 470. sens, since, ago, IV. V. 23. sense, sence, perception, 1. i. 50; senses, feelings, 1v. vi. 21 l. 7, Gnat 11. sensefull, sensible, vi. iv. 37, ix. 26. sensibly, feelingly, sensitively, 1v. viii. 4. sent, perception, 1. i. 43; scent, 111. vii. 23. sented: well s. = gifted with keen perception, S. C. p. 418. sere, withered, S. C. Jan. 37. seru'd, brought into action, 11. x. 55. seruewe, to examine, survey, S. C. Feb. 145. set: set by = make much of, esteem, IV. II 46; set (a person) by = deprive him of, Elegie 174. setuale, zedoary, East Indian plant having aromatic and medicinal properties, Muiop. 196. seuerall, adj. diverse, I. iii. 16; adv. separately in different directions, vi. 1. 10. sew, to follow, pursue (lit. and fig.), 11. ii. 17 111. iv. 50, x. 9, 1v. ix. 26, vi. ix. 2, x. 2, xi. 5 Hubberd 743; serve and sew, 11. vii. 9, 111. v 47; seeke and sew, Beautie 153; to solicit plead, IV. xii. 29. shade, to shadow, represent, v. vii. 3; to hide disguise, v. viii. 14, ix. 12. shadow, dissimulation, pretence, vi. xi. 6 shade, Gnat 143. shagged, pret. hung in a shaggy mass, v. ix. 10 shaires, parts, divisions, 11. X. 37. shallop, sloop, a light boat, 111. vii. 27. shallówes, III. iv. 9. shame, to feel ashamed, 11. xii. 23, v. IV. 24. shamefast, modest, bashful, 1. x. 15, v. v. 25 shamefastnesse, modesty, v. iii. 23. shard, bourn, boundary, 11. vi. 38. share, sb. piece, portion, 1. ii. 18. share, vb. to cut, pierce, Iv. ii. 17; pre shard, shared, IV. vi. 19, V. i. 10, V. divided, Clout 138. sharpe, to sharpen, p. 413; sharped, pj adj. sharpened, tapering, R. R. 16. shaume, musical instrument of the oboe clas 1. xii. 1 3, V. V. 4. shauelings, rascals, S. C. p. 443. sheare, sheere, adj. clear, bright, 111. xi. VII. vii. 25. sheare, shere, vb. to cut, divide, cleave, II.

5, 111. iv. 33, 42, 1v. v. 34. sheard, pret.

vi. 31.

```
sheares, wings (as if made to cut the air),
 11. VIII. 5.
shed, to pour out, emit, S. C. Oct. 35, Worlds
  Vanitie 78; pa. part. 11. vii. 30.
sheene, shene, bright, beautiful, fair, 11. i.
 10, ii. 40, iii. i. 65, iv. 51, v. vii . 29, x. 25,
 S. C. Nov. 38.
shend, to disgrace, 1. i. 53, 11. vi. 35, viii. 12,
 111. ix. 1, 1v. i. 51, S.C. July 172; to use
 injuriously, v. iv. 24, to surpass, Proth. 121.
 shont, pret. reproached, reproved, 11. v. 5;
 disgraced, v. in. 37; pa. part. disgraced, ii. i.
  11, 27, 111, 1x. 33, v. vm. 23; injured, 111, 1v.
  50, 58.
shere, bright, clear, iii. ii. 44, iv. vi. 20. Cf.
  sheare, adj.
 shew, sheow, pretence, 1, 1, 46, 111, vii. 29;
  sign, trace, 1, iii. 10.
 shidder, young temale sheep, S. C. Sept. 211.
  Cf. hidder.
 shield: God s. = God forbid, S. C. July 9.
 shift, movement, in. i. 61; artifice, Clout 694.
 shifted, pret. succeeded, Hubberd 659.
 shine, bright, iv. iii. 3.
 shinie-beame, glittering ray, v. iv. 45.
 shit, pa. part. shut, Clout 700
 shiuering, ppl. adj. quivering, iv. i. 49, ii.
 shole, troop, band, S. C. May 20.
 shole, adj. shallow, vii. vi. 40.
 shonne, to shun, avoid, 111. i. 52, v1. xii. 35,
   Gnat 176.
 shope, pret. framed, shaped, v. v. 39.
 shot, advanced (in years), v. vi. 19
 shouldred, pa. part. pushed, butfeted, Clout
 shred, fa. part. cut, Thest. 75.
 shrieches, shricks, vi iv. 18.
 shriech oule, scrich-, shriekowle, screech-
   owl, R. T. 130, Teares 283, Epith. 345.
 shrieue, to question, IV. xII. 26; to confess,
   S. C. Aug. 55.
  shrifts, contessions, Hubberd 453.
  shright, sb. shrick, 11. vn. 57, v1. iv. 2.
  shright, pret. shricked, 111. viii. 32.
  shrike, sb. shrick, cry, R. T. 471, Teares 358,
   Past. Aeglogue 108.
  shrike, vb. to shrick, Iv. v. 41, Teares 229.
  shrill, sb. shrill sound, R. T. 581
  shrill, vb. to give forth a shrill sound, re-
   sound, vi. viii. 46, Daphn. 323, Past. Elegie
   44; shrild, pret., S. C. Nov. 71, Gnat
                                                     i. 54; process of discrimination, v. iv. 1.
   518.
                                                    skill, so. to care, 111. i. 50, v1. iv. 38; to avail,
  shrilling, ppl. adj. shrill, resounding, 111. vin.
                                                     matter, v. iv. 14; to have perception of, Three
   29, IV. II. 32.
  ahriuing, confession, Hubberd 543.
                                                     Lett. 623.
```

shrowd, -e, to take shelter, hide, t. i. 6, S. C. Feb. 122, Gnat 176. shrouded, shrowded, pa. part. hidden, sheltered, S. C. Mar. 68, Apr. 32. shyne, brightness, 1. x. 67. sib, sibbe, sybbe, akin, related, 111. iii. 26, vi. vii. 41, S.C. May 269; transf., Three Lett. p. 621, Two Lett. p. 043. sich, such, 111. vii. 29, S. C. Sept. 79, 165. sicker, adv. certainly, surely, assuredly, S. C. Feb. 55, March 7, Apr. 158, May 19, 55, Aug. 43, Sept. 76; adj. secure, Hubberd 430. sickernesse, safety, security, III. vii. 26, xi. 55. side, adv. at the sides, Epigrams p. 607. siege, seat, throne, 11. ii. 39, vii. 44. steld, pa. part, 'ceiled', adorned on the walls and ceiling, v. v. 21. sielyng, ceiling, Epigrams p. 607. sient, scion, v. i. 1. might, pret. sighed, 11. i. 47, v1. xi. 25. nigne, emblem, ensign, iv. i. 22; plur. insignia, Hubberd 1016. sike, such, S. C. Feb. 211, May 82, July 201, 203, Aug. 50, 52, Sept. 13, 113, 140, Nov. 11, 18. milly, simple, innocent, harmless, t. i. 30, ii. 21, vi. 35, 11. ni. 36, 111. vii. 8, x. 45, Teares 339. simplesse, simplicity, S. C. July 171. sin, since, vi. xi. 44. sinamon, connamon, S. C. Feb. 136. singled, pret. separated, emerged, 1v. iv. 17. singular, emment, noble, Misc. Sonn. 1. singults, -es, sobs, 111. xi. 12, v. vi. 13, Teares 232, Clout 168. sited, pa. part. 111. vi. 31; site, p. 210; situated, set. sith, conj. since, 11. i. 22, iii. 3, viii. 52, p. 411, Muiop. 219; sith that a since, 1. v. 43; adv., with of late = since, recently, 111, viii. 36. mith, mithem, sb. plur. times; thousand s., 111. x. 33, S. C. Jan. 49. sithens, -co, adv. since, R. T. p. 471, Hubberd 1210, R. R. 117, Amor. Son. 3; ago, S. C. March 46; conj. 1. iv. 51, ix. 8, 11. vi. 48. sitte, sittes, is becoming, behoves, 1. i. 30, S. C. May 77, June 75, Nov. 26. situate, pa. fart. situated, 11. xii. 42. skand, pa. part, understood, Daphn. 178. skanning, fpl. adj. understanding. p. 409. Cf. scand. skill, sb. sense of what is right and fitting, 11. skilful, having a good knowledge of, vt. v. 16. sole, foot, I. x. q; lowest part, v. ii. 28. solein, sad, S. C. May 213. skippet, small boat or skiff, 11. xii. 14. solemnize, sb. solemnization, 1. x. 4. skreene, entrance door, v. x. 37. Cf. scriene. sólemnis'd, pa. part. celebrated, renowned. skyen, skies, 1. iv. Q. 111. ii. 18; solémnis'd, v. ii. 3. sky-threating, towering up to the sky, v. x. soly, alone, Iv. ix. 18, Clout 801. 23. See threat. somd, pa. part. properly of a hawk, having slacke, remiss, 111. vi. 19. the full complement of feathers (fig.), S. C. slake, to slacken, neglect, III. iii. 10; to abate, moderate, v. vii. 5; pa. part. relieved, rendered p. 418. somedele, somewhat, S. C. May 56, Dec. 40. less acute, 1. vii. 28. slauered, pret. slabbered, v. xii. 20. sometime, formerly, Thest. 16. somewhat, something, S. C. Nov. 4. sledge, hammer, 11. ii. 22. sleight, slight, device, artifice, trickery, 1. iti. somme, sun, whole, v. vi. 8. sondry, separate, III. vi. 35. 17, xii. Arg., 1v. i. 44, vt. v. 13, vii. vi. 27, vii. 25, Hubberd 346, Worlds Vanitie 147; sonet, song, S. C. Dec. 15. song, pret. sang, 11. vi. 3, 111. v. 40, S. C. trick, v. ix. 13; design, pattern, 1. vii. 30. slipper, slippery, unstable, S. C. Nov. 153. Dec. 15. sonned, ppl. adj. exposed to the sun, S. C. slipt the coller ( fig.), drawn back, Hubberd Jan. 77. soote, adv. sweetly, S. C. Apr. 111, Oct. 90. slombred, ppl. adj. unconscious, 1. vii. 15. sooth, soth, truth, S. C. May 158, p. 443, slombry, sleepy, 111. vi. 26. Sept. 154; adv. truly, 111. iii. 13, 54, IV. IX. slouth, sloth, idleness, 1. v. 35, 11. i. 23. 27, v. x. 9, vi. ii. 9. slug, to idle, live idly, 11. i. 23, 111. vii. 12. soothlich, III. ii. 14; soothly, v. x. 8, vi. ii. aly, wise, clever, 11. viii. 47; cleverly made, 11. 13: truly. ix. 46. soothsay, prediction, prophecy, it. ix. 51, iv. small, sb. little, vi. ix. 20. ii. 35; omen, portent, III. vin. 50. smallage, wild celery, Daphn. 347. sopps in wine, the common garden pink, smight, to smite, strike, 11. it. 23. smit, Dianthus plumarius, S. C. Apr. 138, May pret. 1. ii. 18, v. xi. 7, vi. xi. 28; pa. part. 111. i. 34, ii. 35, xi. 12, iv. i. 14. smot, pret. 111. sorrow, to cause sorrow to, to grieve, IV. IX. i. 28; pa. part. 111. ii. 46. smirke, neat, trim, S. C. Feb. 72. 38. sort, sb. manner, fashion, 1. iv. 37, 1v. ii. 29, smoothering, smothering, 1. xi. 13. vii. vi. 29, Teares 198, 319, Hubberd 662; smouldring, ppl. adj. suffocating, 11. v. 3. company, 111. i. 40, v1. ix. 5, x. 2, xi. 9, Past. smouldry, suffocating, 1. vii. 13, 111. xi. 21. Elegie 130; swarm, flock, v. iv. 36, vii. vi. anaggy, jagged, knotty, 1. vii. 10. 28. In sort as = the same as, 1. xii. 20, v. vi. anaga, knots, stumps, 11. xi. 23, 1v. vii. 7 17, vi. x. 32, Past. Elegie 216; in equall enakie-paced, moving like a snake, R. R. sort = in the same way, Amor. Son. 10. 178. sort, vb. to consort, Epitaph (1) 20, Amor. anaky-wreathed, wrapped round with a snake Son. 66. or snakes, vii. vi. 18. souce, -se, sowse, vb. to strike, 1. v. 8; pret. snar, to snarl, growl, vi. xii. 27. snarled, ppl. adj. twisted, tangled, 111. XII. 17. soust, iv. iii. 25; sowst, iv. iv. 30; soused, snebbe, snib, to reprove, chide, S. C. Feb. iv. v. 36; to descend, swoop, iii. iv. 16. soust, pa. part. thrown down, IV. vii. 9; 126, Hubberd 372. steeped, dipped, 1. iii. 31. anubbes, knobby protuberances, snags, t. vin. souldan, sultan, v. viii. 24. souse, sowce, sb. swoop, pounce (of a hawk), so, provided that, Hubberd 1150. 11. xi. 36, 1v. iii. 19, v. iv. 42; blow, stroke, so that, as if, III, ii, 19. IV. VIII. 44, V. IV. 24, XII. 23. soare faulcon, a falcon of the first year, sout, soot, 11. vii. 3. H. Beautie 26. sook, light shoe worn by the ancient actors of southsayes, prophecies, omens, Iv. xi. 13. Cf. comedy; hence comedy, Teares 176. soothsay. souenaunce, remembrance, care, II. vi. 8, softly, gentle, vi. vii. 6. viii. 51, S. C. May 82, Nov. 5. aold, so. pay, remuneration, 11. ix. 6. sold, fa. parl. given, IV. X. 54. sownd, sb. swoon, III. v. Arg. Cf. swound.

```
sownd, vb. ? to wield, 1. xii. 5.
sowne, sound, 1. i. 41, 11. v. 30, vi. 47,
 p. 400.
soyle, dirt, 111, vni. 32; body, 1v. 1ii, 16,
 Bellay 83.
space, to move, walk, roam, iv. ii. 44, viii.
 54, v. i. 11, VII. VI. 55.
spalles, shoulders, 11. vi. 29.
span, pret. w. ii. 49; pil. adj., Three Lett.
 p. 621; spun.
apangs, spangles, IV. XI 45.
sparckle, to emit sparklingly, til. i. 32.
spare, sb. niggardliness, sparing, iii. i. 51.
 spare, vb. to testrain, tv. viii. 37. spard, p.r.
  part. iv. vii. 6, S. C. May 84; spared, ppl. adj .
  S. C. Oct. Q: saved.
 sparely, sparingly, S. C. May 41.
 sparke, to emit sparklingly, vi. xi. 21.
 sparkle, spark; beam of light, 1. iv. 33, Three
  Lett. D. 618.
 sparre, bar, bolt, v. xi. 4.
 spect, pa. part, specked, spotted, 111. vii. 22.
 spectácle, III. v. 22.
 speculation, seeing, vision, H. Beautie 134.
 speed, sb. fortune, success, 111. viii. 50, 1v. v. 22.
 apeed, vb. to succeed, 111. viii. 51, Hubberd
  800; pret. spedd, Hubberd 357.
 spell, verse used as charm, S. C. March 54.
 spend, pa. part. spent, used, S. C. May 71.
 sperre, to bolt, bar, v. x. 37, S. C. May 224.
   233. Cf. sparre.
  spersed, ppl. adj. 1. i. 39; sperst, pa. part.
   1. iv. 48, Bellay 195; speist, pret. v. iii. 37,
   Bellay 111: dispersed, scattered.
  spials, spies, watchers, 11. i. 4.
  spiceree, -y, spyc-, spices, 11. X1. 49, 111. i. 42;
   aromatic effluence, 111, vi. 46, Elegie 40.
  spies, spyes, glances, looks, 1. 11. 17, vi. viii.
   43; eyes, 111. i. 36.
  spight, sb. spite, disgrace, injury, 1. i. 53, 11.
    v. 12, S. C. Jan. 2, Feb. 180.
  spight, vb. to grudge, envy, bear ill will to, III.
    v. 7, v. v. 29, vi. in. 20, vii. vi. 32, S. C. May
    198.
  apill, to destroy, 1, iii, 43, 111, vii, 54, v. xii,
    36, vii. vi. 50, Clorinda 12, Amor. Son. 23;
    to spoil, injure, 11. ix. 37, 111. viii. 26, v. vi. 1.
    vni. 19, S. C. Feb. 52, July 68, Gnat 248,
    Hubberd 716, Amor. Son. 17.
   spilt, pa. part. ? lavishly adorned, iv. x. 5.
   spire, to cause to shoot, send forth, 111. v. 52;
    ta. part. produced, R. T. p. 471.
   spoile, to ravage, carry off, it. vii. 45, v. viii.
    18; refl. to rid oneself, ii. ii. 33. spoild,
    spoyled, pa. fart. deprived, bereit, 1. ii. 24,
                                                      startuppe, rustic half-boot or buskin, described
    S. C. p. 427.
```

```
spoilefull, rapacious, 11. x. 63.
sponne, pret. spurted, gushed, IV. ix. 42.
sporten, to play, frolic, S. C. March 10.
spot, to blame, iii. vi. 13.
spousall, 1. 11. 23; plur. v. iii. Arg.: mar-
 riage.
spousd, ppl. adj. betrothed, 1. x. 4.
spoyle, mury, 111. viii. 32.
sprad, fa. part. spread, v. ix. 25, vi. ii. 5.
apray, branch, vii. vii. 42, Daphn. 330, Amor.
spred, spredden, to spread over, cover, iii. i.
  20. R. R. 272.
sprent, fa. part. sprinkled, 11. xii. 45, 1v. ii. 18,
  Mujor. 239.
 spright, spirit, 1. i. 55, vii. 40, 52, p. 409,
  111. i. 59, Clout 623; breath, vi. i. 4, 111. 20.
 sprinckle: holy water s. = aspergillum or
  brush for sprinking holy water, iii. xii. 13.
 spring = springal, Muiop. 292.
 springals, youths, striplings, v. x. 6.
 spring-headed, ppl. adj. having heads that
  spring afresh, 11, xii. 23.
 sprites, spirits, t. viii. 36.
 sprong, pret. sprang, in. i. 62, iv. 3.
 spurne, to spur, III. i. 5.
 squaimishe, squeamish, fastidious, Three Lett.
 square: out of s. = out of its course, out
  of order, v. Prol. 1, vii. vii. 52; in s. - square,
   Bellay 30.
 squib, a paltry trifling fellow, Hubberd 371.
  squire, square, carpenter's rule, ii. i. 58.
  stablish, to establish, arrange, ii. ii. 37.
  stablishment, establishment, v. viii. 21.
  stadle, prop, staff, 1. vi. 14.
  staid, constant, fixed, 1. vii. 41.
  state, duration, Clout 98.
  staine, to dim, deface, it. iv. 15; to eclipse,
   excel, R. T. 525, Daphn. 112.
  staire, step, III. v. 54.
  stald, stalled, pa. part. confined (lit, and fig.),
    S. C. S.ft. 120, Epitaph (2) 2.
  stal'd, rescued, released, Hubberd 1245.
  atalos, snares, baits, II. i. 4, VI. X. 3.
  stalke, stride, 11. vii. 26.
  stanck, weary, exhausted, S.C. Sept. 47.
  stare, to shine, glitter, 111. vii. 39; fret. stood
    stiffly on end, iii. xii. 36.
   starke, adj. stiff, strong, 1. i. 44, 11. i. 42;
    adv., s. lame = quite lame, S. C. May 279.
   star-read, knowledge of the stars, astronomy.
    v. Prol. 8.
   start, prel. started, rose, 1. ii. 5. starte, pa.
    part. gone away, S. C. Apr. 25.
```

```
stonisht, ppl. adj. astonisht, alarmed, v. xi.
in the 16th c. as laced above the aukle,
 S. C. p. 427.
state, sb. v. xi. 3.
state, adj. stately, S. C. Sept. 45.
state, adv. stately, S. C. Sept. 45.
stay, sb. restraint, Epith. 250.
stay, vb. to support, hold up, 1. vi. 35, vii. 10,
 111. xi. 23; to hinder, cause to stay, 1. ix. 25,
 x. 45, 11. ix. 8, vi. iii. 6; to place, fix, Bellay
  14, Epigrams p. 606; to stop, cease, Elegie 65;
 stayed, ppl. adj. constant, steady, resolute, II.
  v. 1, xii. 29, vi. v. 36. Cf. staid.
 stead, sted, -dd, -dde, sb. place, situation, t.
  viii. 17, ix. 41, xi. 46, 11. it. 21, iv. 42, 111. ii.
  16, xi. 50, iv. vi. 7, vi. i. 42, vii. vii. 13,
  S. C. May 43, Hubberd 861; condition,
  plight, v. xii. 23; while, space of time, vi. vii
 stead, vb. to assist, avail, 11. ix. 9.
 steale, handle, stale, v. xii. 14.
 steane, stone, vii. vii. 42.
 steare, steer, 111. xi. 42, 1v. vi. 37, vi. viii. 12.
 stearne, stern, Hubberd 1250.
 steedie, steady, II. i. 34.
                                                      43.
 steely, of steel, v. i. 9.
 steemed, pa. part. iv. iv. 3; pret. vi. x. 35.
 steep, to dye, stain, III. i. 65.
  Stella, pseudonym, Clout 532.
  stelths, thefts, 1. ini. 16.
  steme, to exhale, 11. vi. 27.
  stemme, sh. stock, race, vii. vi. 2.
  stemme, vb.1 to dash against, iv. ii. 16.
  stemme, vb.2 to encircle, vi. x. 12.
  stent, to cease, stop, II. iv. 12. Cr. stint, vb.
  sterue, to die, II. vi. 34, IV. i. 4, 26; to starve,
    Hubberd 580, Love 200.
  steuen, cry, voice, S. J. Sept. 224.
  stew, a hot, steaming place, I. XI. 44
  stile, title, v. xi. 55; composition, S.C. Jan. 10.
   still, to drop, trickle, iii. 29; stild, fret.
    Iv. vii. 35.
   stint, sb. limit, bound, Thest. 51.
   stint, vb. to stop, cease, 11. ii. 22, 111. iv. 8, iv.
    iii, 18, ix Arg., 15.
   stire, styre, to stir, move, inci.e, 11. i. 7, 1. 2,
    ix. 30, 111. vii. 45.
   stocke, flock, Gnat 237.
   atockes, stockings, socks, S.C. p. 459-
    stole, mantle, 1. i. 4. 45, xir. 22.
    stomachous, resentful, angry, 11. vini. 23.
    atomacke, temper, it. vii. 41; courage, spirit,
     Hubberd 1103.
    atonda, stands, defences, 11. xi. 15.
    stonied, pa. part. astonished, alarmed, v. xi.
      30.
```

```
20; pa. part. vii. vii. 52.
stoopegallaunt, (?), S. C. Feb. 00.
stop, obstruction, obstacle, 1. viii. 13.
store ; in s. = at hand, Iv. i. Q.
stound, stownd, -e, sb.1 moment, 1. viii. 38:
 in the s., ? at this moment, vi. viii. 16; time.
 1. xi. 36, 111. v. 29, vi. i. 42, S. C. Sept. 56.
 Hubberd 26.
stound, stownd, sb.2 stroke, blow, 11. viii. 32,
 v iii, 22, S.C. Oct. 49, Muiop. 62; force ot
 a blow, iv. vi. 37; aftack, as ault, affray, iii.
 i. 21, 63, vii. vi. 37; peril, vi. iii. 10; noise,
 S. C. Dec. 140, Hubberd 1353; ? violence,
 virulence, vi. vi. 5.
stound, stownd, sb.3 amazement, bewilder-
  ment, IV. vi. 12, VI. iii. 30, Elegie 53; trouble,
  sorrow, 1. vii. 25, viii. 25, 111. ii. 26, vt. ii. 41,
  v. 6, 28, S.C. May 257, Daphn. 560, Hubberd
 stound, vb. pret. stunned, bewildered, i. vu.
  12; fa. part. v.xi. 29.
 stoupe, b. concession, v. ix. 34.
 stoupe, vb. to stoop, I. v. 12; to swoop, II XI.
 stoure, stowre, tumult, disturbance; conflict,
   encounter, 1. ii. 7, v. 51, 11. x. 19, 111. i. 34, 11.
   6, iv. 13, iv. ii. 15, v. 25, ix. 22, 39, v. iii. 21,
   vi. vii. 8, p. 413, S. C. Jan. 27, 51, May 150,
   Teares 597, Beautie 73; peni, 1. iii. 30, iv.
   46, vii. 12, 11, viii. 35, 111, ix. 13, 1v. xii. 19,
   v. v. 18; cusis, 11. in. 34; fit, paroxysm, 111. 11.
  stout, bold, brave, doughty, i. vi. 39, 111, 111.
   54. IV. i. 11, ii. 27, vi. 26, Past. Elegie 117.
  stowte, sb. a bold man, Three Lett. p. 625.
  straine, sb. lineage, IV. viii. 33.
  straine, strayne, vb. to wield, stretch forth,
    11. vii. 21, 111. v. 21, vi. iv. 22; to constrain,
    force, S. C. Oct. 12.
   straint, strain, v. ii. 14.
   strait, a narrow passage, 11. vii. 40.
   strake, fret. struck, 11. iii. 32, 111. vii. 44, v. iii.
    33, vi. vii. 11, Gnat 307, Petrarch 23.
   strakes, streaks, 11. iv. 15.
   straunge, added, borrowed, III. XII. 11.
   strawen, of straw, v. v. 50.
   strayne, to put into verse, S. C. Nov. 52.
   streight, close, iv. viii. 63; strict, strait, nar-
    row, v. v. 33, xii. 10, Amor. Son. 71.
   streightly, strictly, II. viii. 29, S. C. p. 459;
    closely, 111. ii 34.
   streightnesse, straitness, v. vi. 2.
   streigned, fa. fart. restrained, Hubberd 1190.
   strene, strain, race, v. ix. 32, vi. vi. 9.
   stresse, sb. distress, 111. xi. 18.
```

stressed, ppl. adj. distressful, 11, x. 37. strew, pret, strewed, scattered, 11, x1, 28. strich, screech-owl, 11, xii, 36. strifull, stry-, strife-, full of strite, contentions, II. ii. 13, 111, n. 12, 14, m. 10, v. 24, 30, Hubberd 1021. stripe, blow, stroke, v. xi, 27. stroke, strooke, pret. 11, x11, 86, v. 11, 53, v. 10, 11, viv. 9; stroken, pa. part. vi. u. 7; strond, strand, shore, 11, vi. 19, 111, vo. 26. strong, fa. part. strung, Gnat 16. strow, to scatter, v. vi. 40; strowd, fret. 1 1. 35; to display, S. C. July 75. stubs, stumps of trees, 1, 1x, 34. studde, trunk, stem, S. C. March 13. stud. tree, shrub, Gnat 84 sturre, sb. disturbance, tumuit, 1, 1v. 40. sturre, 1b. to stir, S. C. Sept. 183. sty. -e. stie, to ascend, mount, 1, xi. 25, 11, vii. 46, iv. ix. 33, p. 411, Bellay 148. subject, ppl. adj. 1-x1. 19; fa. part. 111. x11. 4 situated beneath. submisse, submissive, humble, iv. x. 51. subtile, deficate, finely-spon, 11, xn. 77. subuerst, ppl adj. 111. xii. 42; pa. part, Hubberd 1234, subverted. succeed, to approach, vi iv. 8. successe, succession, it. x. 45, Gnat 30; issue, result, 1v. 1x. 24. sude, pa. part. woodd, vi viii. 20. Ct. sow. sufferance, -aunce, patience, endurance, t. i. 50, 11, via. 47, 1v 1, 54, viii. 1 | fee in see property retinied after the title to it has ceased, S C. May 106 suffisaunce, abundance, Microp. 207. sufficed, ffl. adj. satisfied, 1, ii. 43. sugred, p/l. adj. sweet, 11, v. 33. suit, -e, parsuit, ii. vii. 10, iii. xi. 5, v. viii. 3. stat and service a service as followers, vi vii. Cí. sew. 34. sunder: in s = asunder, Three Lett. p. 619. sundry, different, distinct, Etitaph (2) 12; canary way - parting of the wiv, it. xi. 35. sunneshine, sunsh ny, S. C. Jan. 3. suppled, pret, made supple, 111, v. 33. supplie, to reinforce, Teares 537. supplyde, fa, part, made up for, vi. viii. 9. suppress, to keep down, overcome, vi. viii. 18, x-i. 31. supprest, pa. fart. 1. vi. 40. surpate, to bruse, batter, 111, iv. 34. surbet, fa. farl. 11. ii. 22. surceasse, -cease, to leave off, refrain finally, stop, cause to stop, 111. i. 23, IV. II. 19, VI. Vi. 43, S. C. Apr. 125, Hubberd 1221, Amor. Son. 11. surceast, pret. 111, iv. 31; pa. part. | sythe, time, Clout 23. Cf. sith.

v. n. 37. surceasing, vol. so. stoppage, Three Lett. p. 635. auroharged, pret, charged with renewed vigour, 1v. ix. 30; pa. part. overladen, 1v. vii. 32. sure, surely, v. ix. 38. surplusage, excess, 11, vii. 18. surprise, to seize suddenly, vi. x. 34. surprysall, capture, surprising, Guat \$36. surquedry, -io, presumption, arrogance, 11. xii. 31, 30, 111. 1. 13, hi. 46, iv. 7, x. 2, v. ii. 30, S. C. Feb. 49, Worlds Vanitie 105. suruew, -e, to survey, S. C. Feb. 145, R. R. 101; to overlook, 11, ix, 45, Gnat 221. surui : wo. survey, examination, Two Lett. D. 640. suspect, suspicion, I, vi. 13, III, xii. 14, v. vii. 38, vi. m. 23. suspence, in doubt, iv. vi. 34. auspition, suspicion, Muiop. 376. awaine, awayne, boy, youth, man, t. n. 4, 11, x1, 28, x1, vii 22, S, C, March 79, R. P. 234; labourer, rustic, Hubberd 303, Daph 524. sware, pret. swore, 1, 61, 16, swart, dark, swarthy, 11, x, 15. swarue, to swerve, turn, retreat, t. x. 14, t. m. 43, vm. 30, 36, m. i. 11. swat, pret. sweated, 111, v. 3, v. 11, 46. away, sh. swing, r pid motion, blow, t. vol. 8, 11. vin. 38, xii. 20; force, 11, xi. 36, v. v. 0, vi. viii. 11. sway, vb. to brandish, wield, strike, 10, vni, 40, 111, 1, 65; to advance, attack, 11, x. 49 sweard, sword, w. m. 31, 33, Clout 314. sweathbands, swaddling-bands, vi. iv. 23. sweld, pret. swelled (with anger), Hubberd swelt', / ret. swelled, raged, t. vn. 6, 111, xi, 27. swelt 1, fret. swooned, fainted, iv. vii. 9, v. xii. 21. swet, prel. sweated, iv. x. 38, swinck, sb. toil, labour, S. C. May 36. July 34. awinck, swinke, vh. to toil, labour, it. vii. 8, 11. iv. 32, S. C. Syl. 132. swinged, feet, singed, t. xt. 6. swound, swownd, swowne, .b. swoon, t. t. 41, v. 19, x. 52, 11. xi. 35, 111. vi. 7, 1v. vii. 9, vi. iii. 10, v. 6, Dajhn. 545. swowned, ja. jart. sunk, d owned (as in a swoon), v. v. 36. ayker, surely, S. C. July 33, 93. Cf. sicker. sympathize, to agree, or harmonize with, H. Beautte 192. synd, pa. part. signed, Amor. Son. 7 ... syrlye, surly, S. C. July 203.

tenor, manner or fashion of behaviour, conduct, iv. vii. 47; second tenor, countertenor or

T

second part in a musical composition; hence table, picture, i. ix. 59; tablet, 111. iv. 10. lower tone or strain, I. xi. 7. toribinth, the turpentine tree, Pistacia Teretabrere, player on the tabor or drum, S. C. binthus, S. C. July 86. terme, terms, v. xi. 56; condition, Amor. Son. 21. tackles, tackle; equipment of a ship, 1, x1i, 42. termelesse, boundless, endless, H. Love 75. taduaunce, to advance, S. C. Feb. 86. Theana, pseudonym, Clout 492. taking, plight, condition, S. C. Apr. 156. theatre, iii. xii. 3: theatre, iv. iii. 37. talaunts, -ants, claws, 1. viii. 48, xi. 41, xii. thee, to prosper, thrive, 11, i. 33. theeuerie, -y, theft, III. xi. 45, Hubberd 315, tamburins, small tabors or drums, S. C. June tane, pa, part. taken, Daphn, 365, Thest. thelement, the elements, S. C. Feb. 116. then, than, 1. vi. 3, 45, 11. iv. 15, p. 407 &c. thend, the end, S. C. Feb. 237. tapet, tapestry, figured cloth, 111, xi, 20, Mulop. thereout, thence, Hubberd 484. 276. therewithal, with that, vi. vii. 35. targe, shield, 11. v. 6, 1v. xii. 14, vi. ii. 44. tarras, terrace, v. ix. 21. thetch, to thatch, Hubberd 264. thether, thither, vi, ix. 4. Tartar. -e. Tartarus: the infernal regions, il. xii. 6, Gnat 444, Hubberd 1294. thewed, trained, instructed in morals and manners; ppl. adj. 11. vi. 26; pa. part., S. C. tassell gent, tercel, a male faicon or gos-Feb. 96, Beautie 137. hawk, 111. iv. 49. thelf, the elf, S. C. March 55. tasswags, to assuage, S.C. Nov. 2. tawdrie lace, a silk 'lace' or necktie, originally thewes, manners, habits, i. ix. 3, x. 4, ii. i. 33, lace sold at fairs during the festival of St. x. 59, IV. ix. 14, VI. ii. 2, 31, iv. 38. Audrey (Ethelreda), S. C. Apr. 135. thicke, dense part of a wood, thicket, 11. i. teade, -e, torch, 1. xii. 37, Muiop. 293, Epith. 39, S. C. March 73. thilk(e), this, S. C. 7an. 61, March 12, 49, tedula, trochilus or crocodile-bird, Worlds Apr. 154. May 6, July 1, Sept. 66, 98, Oct. Vanitie 35. teemed, ppl. adj. harnessed in a team, Gnat tho(e), then, thereupon, 1. i. 18, 50, 111. i. 23, S. C. Jan. 11, Feb. 218, March 73; adv. then, 314. teene, tone, sb. affliction, grief, sorrow, 1. ix. 111. v. 6, S.C. Feb. 160, March 19, 22, May 34, 11. i. 58, 111. v. 40, S. C. Nov. 41, Daphn. 21; 100. injury, hurt, I. xii. 18. tho, pron. those, S. C. Sept. 32. teene, vb. to appoint, allot, 11. i. 59. thone, the one, S. C. p. 420. tell, to count, II. vii. 19. teld, pret, told, vi. thorough, through, 1. i. 32. i. 44; pa. part. vII. vi. 27, vii. 13. thother, the other, S. C. p. 420. thous, thou art, S. C. July 33, Clout 292. teme, team, 1. v. 28. thraldome, subjection, captivity, 111. xi. 16, 1v. temed, ppl. adj. yoked in a team, 111. iv. 34. Cf. teemed. i. 8, v. v. 32, temewise, in a team, 111. xi. 40. thrall, sb. slave, 1. v. 51, v11. vii. 19, R. T. temper, to govern, control, Hubberd 1294. 114, Amor. Son. 82; ad . subject, enslaved, tempring, pres. part. restraining himself, 11. captive, 1. vii. 44, 1v. x1. 7, v11. vii. 17, 54, vi. 26; tempred, pret. Iv. x. 33. H. Love 184. temperature, proportion, combination, Amor. thrall, vb. to make captive, enslave, v. v. 29 Son. 13. (fig.); thrald, thralled, pa. part. 11. i. 54. 111. tend, vb. to attend, v. vii. q; ? to be suitable or xi. 15, vi. viii. 7, 11, vii. vi. 7; ?to dominate opportune, v. iii. 40; prel., ? directed his way, (intr.), vi. xi. 44. Elegie 52. threasure, treasure, 11. vii. Arg. tendance, waiting in expectation, Hubberd threasury, store of treasure, 11, vii, 4. 908. threat, to threaten, iv. vi., 37, v. xii. 18: to tender, to cherish, foster, treat with tendermove threateningly, vi. v. 10. ness, 111. v. g 1, vi. g 1, v1. xii. I 1; to hold precious, threatfull, threatening, 111. xii. 37, 1v. vi. 10, Muiop. 85. v. vii. 45, vi. iii. 11.

tire, tyre, pb. to attire, array, vii. vii. 11. three-square, with three equal sides, 1, vi. 41, 1 111. i. 4, iv. 16. Gnat 108. threah, to thrash, strike, III. vii. 32. thresher, instrument for thrashing or striking, v. vi. 20. threttie, thirty, S. C. Feb. 17. thrid, thread, IV. ii. 48, 50. thrill, to pierce, penetrate (lit. and fig.), 111. v. 20: thrild, thrilled, pret. 1. vi. 37, 11. x11. 78, 1v. vii. 31; pa. part. 1. viii. 39, 111. v. 21, iv. vii. 36; ppl. adj. iii. ii. 32; thri ling, ppl. adj. 1. iii. 42, S. C. May 208. thrillant, piercing, penetrating, 1. xi. 20, 11. 11. **4**6. thrise, by a great deal, III. viii. 7. thrist, sb. thirst, 11. vi. 17. thristed, pret. thirsted, 1. vi. 38. thristy, ie, thirsty, 1, x, 38, 11, v, 30, S.C. May 138. throng, to press, crush, III. ix. 45. throughly, thoroughly, 11. vii. 58, 1v. xii. 22, 23, v. iii. 17, p. 407. throw1, time, instant, III. iv. 53. throw2, thro, pang, throe, 1, x, 41, vi. xii. 17, Muiop. 414. throw's, throe, thrust, throw (of a weapon's, 11. v. Q. viti. 41, 111. v. 21, IV. 111. 26, 33, v. viti. 35, Teares 134. thrust, sb. thirst, iii. vii. 50. thrust, vb. to thirst, 11. ii. 29. thwart, athwart, across, 111. vii. 43. thwarting, pres. part. laying across, Gnat 514. tickle, unstable, inconstant, uncertain, III. IV. 28, vi. iii. 5, vii. vii. 22, viii. 1, S.C. July 14, Petrarch 85. tickle, vb. intr. to tingle, thrill, vii. vi. 46, Muiop. 394. tide, tyde, time, opportunity, 1. 11. 29, 111. vi. 21, ix. 32, iv. vi. 47, vii. 47, Maiop. 405, Protk. 177. tight, pret. tied, vi. xii. 34. timbered, massive, v. ii. 50. timelesse, untimely, Epitafh (1) 12. timely, passing (of time), 1. 1v. 4; keeping time, 1. v. 3; seasonable, S. C. Jan. 38. tinct, tinged, C. S. Nov. 107. tind, tynd, tynde, pret. 11. vin. 11, 111. 111. 57. 1v. vii. 30 (?), Gnat 344; pa. part. 111. v.t. 15, x. 13, Gnat 504: kindled. tine, tyne, sb. pain, sorrow, affliction, 1. 1x. 15, iv. iii. 37, xii. 34, xi. viii. 33, Teares 3, Muiop. 12; hate, anger, III. xi. I. Cf. teen, sb. tine, vb. to grieve, suffer, II. xi. 21. tire, sb.1 train, series, i. iv. 35. tire, tyre, sb.2 attire, dress, 1. viii. 46, 11. i. 57, ii. 36, ix. 40, IV. X. 31.

titmose, tit, tomtit, S. C. Nov. 26. to, as, for: to name, friend, t. i. 28, v. ix. 43. tobrusd, ppl. adj. complete'y battered, v. viii. todde, thick bush, S. C. March 67. tofore, before, iv. iv. 7, v. vii. 38, vi. vi. 9. tonnell, opening of a channey, flue, it, ix, too, very, S. C. Feb. 136; too-too, too very = exceedingly, vit. vi. 55, S. C. May 175; too or fro = for or against, Two Lett. p. 640. tooles, weapons, II. iii. 37. tooting, pres. part. spying out, searching, S.C. March 66. top, head, 1. vii. 29. topside turuey, topsy-turvy, v. viii. 42. to ront, pa. part. torn asunder, iv. vii. 8, v. viii. 4. tort. -e. wrong, injury, 1. xii. 4, 11. v. 17, 111. ii. 12, 1v. viii. 31, R. T. 167, Hubberd 1078. tortious, wrong, wicked, injurious, 11, ii. 18, IV. ix. 12, v. vni. 30, 51, vii. vi. 10. tosse, to agitate, 1, vii. 27. tossen, to brandish, wield, in. ii. 6. to torne, pa. part, torn to pieces, v. ix. 10. totty, -ie, unsteady, dizzy, vii. vii. 39, S. C. Feb. 55. touch, touchstone: true as t. - absolutely true. 1. m. 2. tourney, ab. encounter, III. II. 9. tourney, vb. to joust, tilt, 11. i. 6. tound, pa. part. harasud, worried, 11. xi. 33. toward, approaching, near at hand, 11. iv. 22, 111. i. 9, Daphn. 280; promising, Muiop. 26. towards, forward, II. i. 26, iii. 34. to worne, fa. part, wern out, v. ix. 10. toy, 16. play, amorous sport, 11. vi. 37, xii. 60. toy, vb. intr. to play, II. Ix. 35. toylos, nets, snares, Part. Elegie 97. trace, ib. path, track, vi. i. 6, S. C. June 27. trace, ub. to walk, 1. viii. 31, Guat 251; to travel, go forward, sv. vii. 28, viii. 34, v. ix. 7, vi. i. 7, ni. 29; to track, ni. vii. 23; to step, pace, dance, vi. ix. 42. tract, ib.1 course, process (of time), v. iv. 8, S. C. May 117, Amor. Son. 18. tract, sb.2 trace, track, footprint, 1. i. 11, 11. iii. 19, vi. iv. 24, xii. 22, Gnat 279, Ilubberd **406.** tract, ub. to trace, track, II. i. 12, vi. vii. 3; tracted, pa. parl. 11. vi. 39. trade, tread, track, 11. vi. 39, Teares 275;

occupation, II. xii. 30, S.C. June 45; conduct, 111. i. 67. tradefull, busy in traffic, Amor. Son. 15. traduction, transfer, IV. iii, 13. traine, trayne, artifice, wile, snare, t. vi. 3, vii. 1, ix. 31, xii. 36, 111. iii. 11, x. 11, 1v. viii. 31, v. viii. 2, 19, xii. 40, Gnat 241, Muiop. 398, Clout 118, Past. Elegie 97; trail, track, v. ii. 15; assembly, v. ii. 33. tramels, nets (for the hair), 11, 11, 15, 111, ix. 20. transfard, pret. transformed, III. xi. 31. translated, transferred, v. vii. 20. transmew, to transform, transmute, i. vii. 35, 11. ini. 37, 111. i. 38. transmoue, to transform, III. xi. 43. transuerse: by t. = in a haphazard way, vii. vii, 56. trap, to furnish with trappings, it. viii. 16. trap fals, trap-doors so made as to give way beneath the feet, pitfalls, v. 11. 7. trast, pret. moved, ran, v. viii. 37. υb. trauayler, worker, Two Lett. p. 640. traueled, -eiled, pa. part. troubled, S. C. Jan. Arg. 6; laboured, R. R. 117. trauell, :b. toil, travail, vi. vii. 19, ix. 2. trauell, vb. to travail, labour (in childbirth) (fig.), iv. ix. 17. trayle, ab, woven pattern, Mulop, 200. trayled, pa. part, interwoven with a pattern, V. V. 2. trayned, pa, part. vi. vi. 39; pret. vi. vi. 42; allured. treachetour, traitor, 11. x. 51, vi. viii 7. treachour, traitor, cheat, 1, iv. 41, ix. 32, ii. i. 12, iv. 27, Hubberd 1255. treague, truce, II. II. 33. treat, ab. parley, 111. viii. 17. treat, -en, wh. to speak, talk (of), 1. vii. 40, vini. 43, IV. i. 16. treaty, arrangement, III. i. 11. treen, of trees, I, ii. 39, vii. 26. trenchand, -ant, sharp, piercing, 1. i. 17, xi. 24. V. V. Q. trentals, services of thirty masses for the dead on as many successive days, Hubberd 453. trespassed, pa. part. committed, Gnat 448. trild, pret. flowed, trickled, 11. xii. 78. p. 607. trim, neat, well-formed, 111. i. 36, Past. Elegie twist, fabric made with a double and hence 42; pleasing, 111. i. 40. heavy thread, coarse cloth, Hubberd 460. trimly, neatly, S. C. Afr. 29. twyfold, twofold, 1. v. 28. trinall, threefold, 1, x i. 30, H. Love 64. tyhyhing, pres. part. tittering, Three Lett triplicities, trinities, triads, 1. xii. 39, H. p. 618. Love 64. tyned, pret. were lost, perished, Iv. xi. 36. triúmph, triúmphing, IV. ii. 24, iv. 28. type, emblem, pattern, model, Teares 70 trode, troad, -e, footstep, trace, track, path, Gnat 557.

111. ix. 49, vi. x. 5, S. C. July 14, Sept. 01 Hubberd 406. tromp(e), trumpet, III. iii. 3, p. 412; trumpeter herald, R. T. 434. troncheon, headless spear, cudgel, 11, va 28. IV. III. 12. troth, truth, 11. i. 11, ii. 34. troublous, agitated, d sturbed, 11. ii. 24; tee. less, 11. iii. 4. trow(e), to believe, think, ii. v. 13, v. ii. 14 S. C. March 56, July 107. trump, trumpet, Amor. Son. 29, 85. C tromp. truncked, ppl. adj. truncated, beheaded. 1 viii. 10, 11, v. 4. trusse, sb. bundle, S. C. May 239. trusse, vb. to seize and carry off, t. xi. to, to vii. 18; to pack up, 111. x. 46. trustily, -ely, faithfully, vi. iii, 19; with confidence, Hubberd 55. truth, trust, care, 1. vi. 12, 11. iii. 2. try(e), trie, vb. to experience, iv. vii. 11 R. T. 233; trido, pret. iv. vii. 2; tryde. pa. part. vi. iii. 2; to prove (oneself), Hubberd 913. tryde, pa. part. purified, 11. it. 9 tride, ppl. adj. firm, faithful, vi. viii. 33. trye, adj. choice, select, v. ii. 25. tunes, tones, strams, Elegie 193. turmoyle, sb. trouble, agitation, Amor. Son. 11 turmoyle, vb. intr. to labour amid trouble. Grat 152; tr. to disturb, agitate, R. R. 261. Petrarch 21, turmoild, pa. tart, troubled, 1v. ix. 39. turney, sb. tournament, encounter, iv. vi. 6. ix. 36. Cf. tourney. turney, vb. to joust, tilt, iv. v. 7, v. ni. Arg Cf. tourney. turribant, turban, Iv. xi. 28. twaine : into even t. = into two even portions Hubberd 1024. tway, two, twain, 1, vii. 27, 11, vi. 31, 111, W. 11, 14, 1i, 13, 4, 1v, 35, S. C. July 152. twight, to twit, v. vi. 12. twine, twyne, &. coil, band, t. vi. 14, S.C. Aug. 30, Oct. 111. twine, vb. to twist, iv. ii. 51. twinne, pair, couple, Bellay 70, Epigrami tyranne, tyrant, S. C. Oct. 98. tyrannesse, female tyrant, 1. v 46. tyrannical: t. colours, S. C. p. 447. tyranning, tyrannizing, 1v. vii. 1. tyre, head-dress, 1. x. 31. Ci. tire, sb.<sup>2</sup> tyreling, tired, fatigued, 111. 1 17, vi. vii. 40.

Į

vmbriere, a defence for the face, attached to

vgly, horrible, 1, ix. 48,

a helmet, 111, 1, 42, 1v, 1v, 44,

vnncquainted, strange, unknown, 1, x, 20, vnaduised, ppl. adj. unperceived, p. 412. vnawares, suddenly, mexpected, iv. viii. 7. Cí. vnwares. vnbid, ppl. adj. not praved for, 1, 1x, 54. vnblest, pfl. adj. unwounded, v. n. 12. vnbrace, to unfasten, 11, 1v. 9. vncase, to strip, Hubberd 1380; fa. fart. revealed, v. m. Arg., 39, Hubberd 930. vnchearefull, cheerless, depressing, Etith. 21. vncivile, uncivilized, wild, ii. vn. 3. vncomely, unbecoming, vi, vm. 51 vncomptrold, uncontrolled, Clout 662. uncouth, strange, unusual, 1. i. 15, 11. v. 20. vi. 43, 111, x. 34, 1v. vii. 45, x. 45, v. v. 37, vii. vii. 6, 35; unknown, S. C. S 11, 60. vnorudded, uncurdied, Efith. 175. vndefide, unchallenged, 11, vm. 31. underfong, to ensuare, entrap, deceive, v. ii. 7, S. C. June 103; to undertake, S. C. Nov. 22. vnder hand, secretly, iv xi 34. vnderkeep, to keep under, subdue, oppress, 111. vii. 33, Teares 77. vnderlay, to overpower, surpass, Gnat 99. vnderminde, to undermore, deceive, v. vi. 32. vndersaye, to say in contradiction, S. C. Sept. vindersong, burden of a song, telran, S. C. Aug. 127, Daphn. 245, 194, Clout 168, Pro'n. 110. vndertake, to hear, understand, v. to. 34. vadertane, pa. part. promised, v. vi i. 3vndertime, the time or the midder meal (undern), 101. vii. 13. vnderuerse, following or second verse, S. C. P. 451. vndight, to take off, 111. v. 31, ix. 19, v. viii. 2; fret. 1. in. 4; ta. parl. vi. vii. 19; fa. parl. unloosened, 11. xii. 15, 111. vi. 18.

vneasy, uncomfortable, disagrecable, 1. v. 36.

vneath, -eth, vnneath, adj. difficult, 1. x. 31. 111. v. 17, 1v. vii. 40, Dajkn. 447; adv. with

difficulty, uneasily, 1. ix. 38, xi. 4, 11. i. 56, 111.

i. 33, x. 2, 1v. ix. 25, S. C. Sept. 48, Past. Arglogue 51. vneathes, vnnethos, aiv. with difficulty, it, vi. 1, S. C. Jan. 6. vnespyde, fa. part. unseen, in. i. 37. vneuen, ill-matched, vi. v. 9. vnfilde, pri. adi. unpolished, in. vii. 20. vingentle, discourteous, rude, iii. i. 67. vngentlenesse, harshness, discourtesy, 111, v. 2. vnguilty, innocent, 111, ii. 26. vnhable, unable, incapable, t. iv. 23, vt. i, 16, 10, 46, vnhappy, -ie, unfortunate, inauspicious, tt. vi. 44; unsuccessful, vi. iv. 31; unhappie witted . with minds full of tricks, Hubberd 40. vnhastie, slow, i. m. 4. virheale, -hele, to disclose, uncover, ii. xii, 64. IV. V. 10. vinherat, fret, removed from a hearse or monument, v. m. 37. vnhurtfull, doing no harm, Teares 197. vnkempt, rough, unpolished (fig.), in, x, 20. S. C. Nov. 51. wnkend, t, unknown, iv. xi. 13, p. 416. vnkinde, unnatural, 111. ii. 43, Hubberd 52. vnkindly, unnaforal, 11. x. 9, S. C. Jan. 26. vnkodpeased, ffl. adj. without a cod-piece, Three Lett. p. 625. See kodpeasd. vnlast, fa. fart, unlaced, vi. i. 30. valich, unlike, 1. v. 28. vnliko, unik ly, v. v. 38. vnlustye, feeble, S. C. p. 458. vnnethes, see vneath. viimanurd, ffl. adj. untilled, uncultivated, 11. x. 5. vnmard, fa. fart, unspoiled, vi. x. 7. vnmeete, unit, unsuitable, unbecomi, g. unscendy, 111. vi. 50, Iv. i. 27, vi. iv. 37, via. vnmercifully, extremely, v. vii, 31, vnnoble, ignoble, base, Teares 435. vnplained, -playnd, pil. adj. not bewared or lamented, Daphn. 79; fa. fart., Past. Elegie 136. vi.proued, pfl. adj. not tested, untried, i. vii. vnpuruaide, fa. part. deprived, vn. vi. 14. vnreaue, to disentangle, take to pieces, Amor. vnred, p.l. adj. untold, iv. xii. 2. vnredrest, ppl. adj. without redress, iv. viii. 41. vnremédied (cf. remédilesse), Clorinda 8. vnreproued, pfl. adj. blameless, 11. vii. 16. vnrestfulnesse, restlessness, uneasiness, S. C.

vphild, pa. part. upheld, vi. xi. 21. vnruliment, unruliness, IV. ix. 23. vphoorded, ppl. adj. hoarded up, Teares 553 wnruly, unrestrained, excessive, vi. vi. 5. vpknit, to explain, sum up, IV, vi. 30. vnseason, to strike or affect disagreeably, vpleaning, pres. part. leaning upon, Gnat p. 413. vnseene, unrevealed, incognito, 1v. iv. 3. vprear, -e, to raise up, 1. xi. 15, 11. i. 20, 111 vnshed, ppl. adj. unparted, Iv. vii. 40. vnsoote, not sweet, S. C. Dec. 118. iii. 45, IV. i. 55, VI. i. 19, 31, Daphn. 187. vprightly, honestly, really, S. C. p. 451. vaspide, pa. part. unseen, 111. vi. 7. vpryst, pa. part. risen up, S. C. March 18. vnstayd, unsteady, vi. i. 20. vpstaring, pres. part. bristling, standing up. vnstedfastnesse. instability, Epigram. 1. ix. 22. p. 6c6. vpstart, adj. starting up, bristling, 111. x. 54. vnthrifty, wicked, 1. iv. 35. vpstart, vb. to start, rise up, 11, 1v. 9, vni. 18, vnthriftyhed, -ihead, unthriftiness, 11. xii. 18, vi. viii. 40; vpstarting, ppl. ad., ii. xii, 30. 111. xii. 25. vpstayd, pret. supported, III, xii, 21, IV, I. vntill, -til, unto, towards, 1. xi. 4, S. C. Nov. 185. 37. vptyde, pa. part, ned up, wound up, 11, 11, 1. vntimely, unfortunately, v. v. 29. VI. iv. 24. vntitled, ppl. adj. without a title, claim, v. vp-wound, pa. part. coiled up, 1. 1. 15. ix. 42. Vrania, pseudonym, Clout 487. vntride, ppl. adj. not felt, experienced, 1v. vrchins, hedgehogs, 11. xi. 13. vii. 11. Cf. try, vb. vntrust, ppl. adj. unbound, Past. Aeglogue vsage, behaviour, conduct, 1v. vii. 45, Muiop. 120. 56. vnualewd, ppl. adj. inestimable, Amor. Son. vsaunce, -ance, use, 11. vii. 7, Daphn. 503. vse, sb. habit, conduct, 11. v. 19, 111. xi. 4. vse, vb. to be wont, accustomed, iv. v. 3, v. vnwares, unexpectedly, suddenly, 1. v. 18, viii. 17; to practise, iv. v. 3; did vse = used, 111. i. 37, 1v. iv. 31, S. C. March Arg., May 275; unknown, iv. iv. 27; unknowingly, IV. viii. 5. vsurped, pa. part. used, affected, S. C. Sept. Gnat 631. vnwarie, unexpected, 1. xii. 25. P. 455. vsury, -ie, interest, vi. viii. q, Clout 30, vnweeting, adj. not knowing, unconscious, 1. iii, 65, x, 65, 66, 11, xii. 22; unknown, 111, iii, Clorinda 22. vtmost, last, 11. i. 49; most outward, 11. x11. 57; adv. unwittingly, 1. ii. 40, Hubberd 606. 20, 21, vi. xii. 26; uttermost, iii. xi. 25, vnweetingly, unwittingly, v. vni. 15. H. Love 108; furthest, 11. x. 12. vnweldy, adj. unwieldy, 1. viii, 24; adv. in vtter, adj. outer, 11, 11, 34, 1v. x. 11. an unwieldy manner, vi. viii. 28. vtter, vb. to put out or torth, S. C. March 15. ✓nwist, unknown, 111. ii. 26, ix. 21, 1v. iv. 27, v. i. Q. 22. vnwont, unaccustomed, vi. xi. 40, S. C. Feb. vnworthy, undeserved, vi. iv. 34. vade, to vanish, depart, 111. ix. 20, v. 1i. 40, vnwreaked, pa. part. unrevenged, iii. xi. q. R. R. 270. vaile, vayle 1, to let down, III. Ix. 20, Three vpblowing, pres. part. blowing up, 111. iv. 13. vp-blowne, fa. part. inflated, 1. iv. 21. Lett. p. 625. vaile 3, to veil, conceal, p. 409. wpbounden, fa. part. bound up, tied, 111. ix. vaine, sb. poetic vein, S. C. Oct. 23; humour, disposition, Hubberd 799. vpbraide, reproach, abuse, 1v. ix. 24, 28, v. vaine, adj. weak, frail, iv. ii. 48. xi. 41, Hubberd 2. vainesse, vanity, R. T. 459, Bellay 26; vpbrast, pret. burst asunder, vi. xi. 43 folly, Worlds Vanitie 83. vpbray, vo. to bring reproach on, 11. iv. 45; to upbraid, IV. i. 42. valiaunce, valour, 11. iii. 14, viii. 51, 111. iii. vpbrayes, upbraidings, reproaches, 111. vi. 50. 28. valorous, brave, valiant, 11. iv. 1, xi. 34. vpbrought, pret. brought up, reared, vi. iv.

vpcheard, pret. encouraged, vi. i. 44.

vpfild, pa. part. filled up, IV. iii, 42.

value, valour, 11. vi. 29, 111. xi. 14.

variable, various, 111. v. 1, Proth. 13.

valure, valour, Epitath (1) 46.

warlet, young man, II. iv. 37vauncing, pres. part. advancing, Iv. iv. 17. vaunt, to display, exhibit, iii. ii. 16; vaunted, ppl. adj. iv. iv. 7. vauntage, advantage, opportunity, III. vii. 51. vauntfull, boastful, Muiop. 54. vaut, vawte, sb. vault, 11, vii. 28, 1x. 29. Gnal 444, Hubberd 1229. vaute, vb. to vault, jump, leap, Hubberd 693. vauted, pa. parl. III. iv. 43; ppl. adj., Clout 611: vaulted, arched. veale, iv. v. 10, Three Lett, p. 611; vele, i. i. 4, vin. 19, 11, Prol. 5, 111, i. 59; veil (ld. and fig.). vellenage, slavery (fig.), it. xi. I. vollet, velvet, S. C. May 185. venery, hunting (fig.), 1. vi. 23. vengeable, eager for vengeance, ii. iv. 30. vengement, revenge, IV, VII. 30, VI. III. 18. venger, avenger, i. iii. 20. venim(e), venoni, poison, Muiop. Worlds Vanitie 39. vent, to snuff, S. C. Feb. 75. vented, prel. lifted up so as to give air, iii. i. 42. ventayle, -taile, movable front or mouthpiece of a helmet, which may be raised to admit fresh air, 111, 11. 24, 14. vi. 19, v. viii. venterously, daringly, Two Lett. p. 640. ventred, pret. ventured, Iv. vii. 31. ventrous, venturous, daring, adventurous, 11. xii. 44, 1v. ii. 27, vi. 4, v. x. 30. verdit, judgement, opinion, decision, vii. vii. 27, Three Lett. p. 618. vere, to turn, shift, I. xii. I, v. xii. 18. vermell, -eill, sb. 11. x. 24; adj. 111. i. 46, 1v. ix. 27, Proth. 33 : vermilion. vermily, ib. vermilion, 111. viii. 6. vermin, (a noxious) insect, Worlds Vanilie 77. vertue, power, worth, v. i. 10. vertuous, potent, powerful, 11. xii. 86. Voruon, vervain; one of several weedy plants of the genus Verbena, which formerly had sacred associations, Muiop. 197. vestiment, vestment, garment, 1. iii. 17, 111. xii. 29, v. ix. 10. vetchy, of vetch, S. C. Sept. 256. vild, vylde, adj. vile, 1. iii. Arg., vi. 3, 111. vii. 15, v. xi. 18; adv. vilely, vi. i. Arg. wildly, vilely, 1. i. 20, iii. 43. virelayes, a short light song or poem written to an old French measure, III. x. 8, S. C. Nov. 21, Daphu. 317. virginals, keyed instrument of the harpsichord class, Two Lett. p. 636.

Muiop. 310, Amor. Son. 48, Misc. Sonn. II. Ci. physnomy. visour, mask, disguise, t. vii. I. vitall, necessary to life, life-giving, IL i. 2, R. R. 342, Darkn. 197. voide, voyd, to avoid, turn aside, iv. vi. 3 . pa, parl, turned aside, removed, vi. vii. 431 cleared, removed, v. iv. 46; to go, depart, S. C. Aug. 164, Epitaph (2) 35. voydnesse, emptiness, Clout 850. vow, will, wish, vit. vi. 22 vulgar, -e, the common people, i. v. 8, iii. xii. 4, v. ii. 33, Teares 194.

wad, bundle, H. Love 226. wade, to go, pass, 1. i. 13. wae, woe, S. C. Sept. 25. wag, to move, IV. iv. 18, v. i. 22. wage, sb. pledge, t. iv. 39. wage, vb. to let out for pay, 11, vii. 18 waged, ppl. adj. paid, Clout 382. wagmoires, quagmires, S. C. Sept. 130. waide, pa. pari. weighed, proved, tv. ix. 38. Cf. Way. waift, waif, a thing blown by the wind or carried in by the sea, Iv. xii. 31. Cf. weft, so. waild, pret. bewailed, Thest. 128. Cf. wayle. wailefull, wayl-, mournful, m. iv. 38, v. vi. 26, S. C. Feb. 81, May 201, Muiop. 12. waine, wayne, wagon, 1. iv. 19, v. 41, 111. iv. 60. wained, pa. fart. carried along, moved, vii. vi. 10. wait, -e, wayt, vb. to watch for, ii. iv. 17; to await, 1. v. 3. v. xii. 12; to watch, 111, xi. 21. wakefull, watchful, 111. ix. 7. waladay, interj. alas! Gnat 417. walke, to move, wag, 11. iv. 5. walkt, pret. tolled, 111. xii. 12. wallowed, ppl. adj. grovelling, 111. xi. 7. wan, adj. pale, faint, 11. vi. 41; sorrowful, sad, S. C. O.t. 85. wanne, feeble, S. C. Jan. 47. wan, sb. pret. won, gained, st. ii. 17, vi. 41, VII. 54. wand, bough, branch, v. iz. 17. wanton, playful, t. xii. 7; wild, ttt. vi. 23. war, worse, S. C. Sept. 108. ward, sb. guard, garrison, 11. xi. 15. ward, so. to guard, 1. viii. 3. v. ix. 22, S. C. July 42; to ward off, repel, 1. ix. 10. ware, adj. wary, sharp, 1. vii. 1; aware, 111. ix. 28. ware, sb. pret. wore, t. iv. 47. visnomie, -y, visage, countenance, v. iv. 11, /warelesse, unaware; unawares, iv. ii. 3, v. v.

weasand pipe, windpipe, Iv. iii. 12. 52; heedless, unwary, 1v. x. 20, v. v. 17; wesand. unperceived, v. i. 22. weather, to expose to the air, v. iv. 42, Mujor. warely, carefully, warily, 1. xii. 36. war-hable, fit for war, 11. x. 62. weaued, fret. wavered, v. iv. 10. wariment, caution, Iv. iii. 17. weed, undergrowth, IV. vii. 4. warke, work, 11. i. 32, S. C. May 145, Nov. weed(e), weeds, clothes, dress, attire, 1. Prol. 65, Bellay 44. 1, vii. 19, 11, iii. 27, iv. 29, viii. 16, p. 409, war-monger, a mercenary soldier, III. x. 29. S. C. July 168, Hubberd 1321, Clout 711. warne, to deny, forbid, prevent, Clorinda 12. weeke, wick, ii. x. 30. warrant, rule, licence, Two Lett. pp. 630, 640. weeldlesse, unwieldy, 1v. iii. 19. warrayd, -eyd, -eid, pret, waged war on, ween(e), -en, to expect, suppose, think, t. i. attacked, 1. v. 48, 11. x. 21, 50; intr. struggled, 10, x, 58, 11, iv. 28, viii. 26, 111, ii. 13, vi. 54, warred (fig.), 111. v. 48; pa. part. assailed, v. ii. 25; to tell, IV. xi. 27. Amor. Son. 44. warre, sb. knob or protuberance on a tree, S. C. weet(e), -en 1, to know, learn, perceive, discover, 1.iii.6, vi. 34, vii. 11, 11. iii. 11, 111. i. 19, Aug. 26. warre, adv. in a worse manner, iv. viii. 31. ii. 6, v. 31, iv. i. 41, 43, vi. ii. 30; to w. = to wit, 1. iii. 17, 111. vi. 54, 1v. iv. 40, xi. 28, v. x. Cf. war. warriouresse, female warrior, v. vii. 27. 1 . vi. iii. 3. weet 1, to wet, IV. ix. 33. wasserman, male sea-monster of human form, weeting, knowledge, v. x. 39. 11. xii. 24. weetingly, wittingly, knowingly, vi. iii. 11, wast, sb. waist, 11, xi, 12, v. x. 8. Past, Elegie 22. wast(e), adj. idle, uscless, wasted, 1, i. 42, S. C. Feb. 133; stray, deserted, S. C. Sept. 198. weetlesse, unconscious, ignorant, thoughtless, 111. ii. 26, ix. 41, vi. viii. 47, S. C. July 35. wast, vb. to lay waste, devastate, iv. i. 45; wasted, pa. part., S. C. Jan. 19. weft, sb. =waift, 111, x, 36, 1v, ii, 4, v, iii, 27. vi i, 18. wast(e)full, desolate, waste, barren, 1. iii. 3, weft, vb.: pa. part. wafted, carried, 11. vi. 18, 11, vii. 2, xii. 8, 111, xi. 53, 1v. viii. 8, S. C. June 50; devastating, S. C. Jan. 2. vi. v. 23; waived, avoided, iii. iv. 36. weighing, fres. part. considering, S. C. p. wastnesse, wilderness, 1. iii. 3. watchet, light or pale-blue colour, 111. iv. 40, 417. Cf. way. welaway, excl. of distress, Amor. p. 577. 1v. xi. 27, Elegie 3. water-sprinkles, drops, splashes of water, welaway the while, alas the time! S. C. Sept. 58. IV. iii. 25. wav'd, pa. part. watered, having a sort of weld(e), to wield, 1. xi. 28, S. C. May 206; pattern on which there is a changeable play to govern, manage, control, iv. Prol. 1, v. ix. 11, vt. viii. 11, R. T. 447, Hubberd 1232, of light, 1v. xi. 45. Clout 130; to bear, S. C. Oct. 40; intr. to WAWOS, WAVES, II. XII. 4. waxe, to grow, become, ii. x. 30; waxen, exert oneself, iv. i. 37. pa. part., Hubberd 599. Cf. wex, wox(en). wele, weal, v. xi. 16. way, to weigh, v. ii. 46, 49; to consider, welfare, may (it) prosper, 111. ii. 42. esteem, vii. vi. 55: to weigh (fig.), consider, welhead, -hed, well head, source, fountain vii. viii. 1; wayd, fret. 1. x. 40; pa. part. (lit. and fig.), 11, ii. 6, vii. 15, v. ix. 26. welke, to fade, wane, 1. i. 23; welked, fpl. vii. vii. 58; fa. part. weighed, determined, adj., S. C. Jan. 73; pa. fart., S. C. Nov. 13. 1v. i. 7. welkin, sky, heaven, t. iv. 9 (attrib.), ttt. ix. 'way'd, pret. journeyed, Iv. ii. 12. 11, S. C. Sett. 187. wayle, to bewail, lament, mourn, Daphn. 510; well, sb. weal, happiness, 1, 11 43. wayld, pa. fart. 1. v. 23. wayment, sb. lamentation, 111. iv. 35, R. T. well, vb. to pour forth (lit. and fig.), 11. x. 26, vi. Prol. 7. 390. wayment, vb. to lament, n. i. 16, Teares 355. well away, wel-, wellawaye, interj. alas! weale, happiness, Past. Aeglogue 134. 11. vi. 43, viii. 46, v. i. 15, S. C. Aug. 19. weanell, weanling, a lamb or kid newly well to donne, welldoing, 1. x. 33. weltre, to roll, wallow, S. C. July 197. weaned, S. C. Sept. 198. weare, to pass, spend (time), 1. i. 31. wend 1, to turn, go, 1. i. 28, 17. viii. 50. wearish, wizened, withered, 1v. v. 34. wend 2, tret, thought, vii. vi. 11. Cf. ween.

```
wield, to sway, influence, v. x. 24.
wene, to think, S. C. March 25. Ci. ween.
went, course, journey, Iv. v. 46; resort, haunt,
 IV. ii. 47; turning, veering, vi. vi. 3.
wesand, windpipe, v. ii. 14, S. C. Sept. 210.
west, to set (of the sun), v. Prol. 8,
wex, sb. wax, 111, viii, 6.
wex(e), vb. to wax, grow, become, 1, ii. 4, iv.
 30, 11. iii. 9, x. 20, 111. i. 47, vii. 24, ix. 13, vi.
 i. Arg., xii. 11, S. C. Feb. 124, June 103,
 Clout 851; wexen, 3rd pers. plur. pres.,
 S. C. Aug. 96, Oct. 42; pa. fart., R. T. 472.
 wext, pa. part. increased, Iv. ii. 52.
 wexen, waven, S. C. Dec. 68.
 wey, to weigh, consider, Hubberd 112. Cf. way
 whally, having a greenish tinge, 1. iv. 24.
 what, fare, things, vi. ix. 7.
 what (is he) for a (ladde), what kind of
  (a lad is he), S. C. Apr. 17.
 wheare, place, m. iv. 19.
 wholky, knobby, rounded, Gnat 105.
 whelmd, pa. part. 11. ii. 43; pret. vii. vi. 53:
  overwhelmed, crushed. whelming, pfl. adj.
  11. iv. 17.
  whenas, when, 1, ii, 32, 11, 1x, 10, 14, p. 413.
  whereas, where-as, where, 11. XII. 42, VII.
   vi. 17, 47, 48.
  whet, fa. part, whetted, sharpened, vi. viii. 45.
  whether, pron., adj. which (of two), i. ii. 37.
   iv. ni. 37, ix. 1, 10, v. ii. 17, vii. vii. 57, Hub-
   berd 997.
  whether, adv. whither, v. viii. 48, Clout 251.
  whight, white, 11. ini. 26.
  while, time, Iv. i. 7, S. C. Jan. 8; the whyles
    - while, vi. vi. 44.
  whilere, whyl-, -eare, crewhile, lately,
    formerly, 1, 1x, 28, 111, vi. 26, x, 17, 1v. v. 8,
    Past. Aeglogue 142; already, III. IX. 13.
   whiles, while, II. iv. 34.
   whilom, -e, whyl-, formerly, once, i. Prol.
     1, 111, vii. 47, p. 410, S. C. Afr. 23.
   whirlpooles, sea-monsters of the whale kind,
     11. All. 23.
   whist, fa. part. silenced, vii. vii. 59.
    whistler, ? plover or pewit, 11. x11. 36.
   /whit: no w. = nothing at all, not at all, 11. viii.
     54, IV. VII. 44.
    white, mark, Three Lett. p. 619.
    whot, whott(e), hot, 1. x. 26, 11. i. 58, viii.
     11, ix. 29, 111. vii. 49, S. C. March 41, Sept.
      112. whotest, hottest, S. C. p. 447.
    wicked, baneful, cruel, 111. xi. 24.
    widder, wider, S. C. Sept. 210.
    wide, wyde, round about, vi. zi. 18; away,
      1. i. 34, xi. 5, 11. viii. 36.
     widow, bereaved, Past. Aeglogue 112.
     widowhead, widowhood, Teares 240.
```

```
wight, 16.1 creature, person, human being, L
 ii. 30, 42, v. 36, ix. 23, 11, xi. 8, 111, iii. 60, ix.
 21, 1v. vii. 10, xii. 19, v. Prol. 9, S. C. Apr. 47.
wight, sb. blame, S. C. June 100. Cf. wite, sb.
wight, adj. nimble, active, S. C. March 91.
wightly, quickly, S. C. Sept. 5.
wildings, crab-apples, III. vii. 17.
wile, wyle, to beguile, iii. x. f.
 will, sb. desire, Beautie 158.
 will, so, to wish, request, v. xn. 8, 9. wild,
 pret. ordered, vi. vii. 35. will or nill = willy
  milly, 1. in. 43.
 wimble, nimble, S. C. March 91.
 wimple, covering of linen worn by women on
 the head, cheeks, and neck, 1, xii, 22.
 wimpled, fa. part. t. i. 4; fret. vii. vii. 5;
  laid, lay in plaits or folds.
 win, to reach, get to, vi. i. 23.
 winde, to perceive or follow by the scent, v.
  ii. 25.
 wine-fats, vats of wine, vii. vii. 39.
 wisards, sages, wise men, wizards, i. iv. 12,
   11. ix. 53. v. Prol. 8.
  wise, wize, manner, guise, 111. i. 55, 11. 24,
   vi, ix, 6, vii, vin 18, Teares 170.
  wishful, desirable, v. ix. 10.
  wist, fret. knew, 1. 11. 40, 111. 11. 23, 1v. i. 7,
   xii. 17. Cf. wot.
  wit, witt, knowledge, intelligence, 11. Ait. 44,
   111, i. 12, 1v. 1v. 39; mind, Clout 707.
  witche, witch-elm, S. C. June 20.
  wite, b. blame, censure, vi. iii. 16, xii. 41.
  wite, witen, wyte, vb. to blame, reproach.
    censure, 11. x11. 16, 111. 1v. x2, 1v. Prol. 1,
    v. xi. 57, S. C. May 159, 7, ly 210, Aug. 136,
    Hubberd 348, Clout 749, 916.
   witelesse, blameless, S. C. Aug. 136.
   withdraw, to carry off, iii. xi. 30.
   with hault, pret. withheld, n. xi. 9.
   without, outside, vii. vii. 52.
    withouten, without, 11, vin. 47, 1v. vin. 2, v.
     xii. 39, vii. vii. 53, S. C. Oct. 29, Hubberd
     158, 186.
    witnesse, a rough edge (as in the leaves of
     books), Three Lett. p. 625.
    wittily, wisely, sensibly, 11. ix. 53.
    winehood, state of being a wife, iv. v. 3.
    wiuely, wifelike, iv. v. 3.
    wo, woe, sad, 11. viii. £3, 1v. i. 38.
    womanhead, -hed, womanhood, womankind,
     11. xii. 55, v. 1x. 45, Muiop. 345; womanli-
      ness, vi. ii. 15, Clout 512. womanhood,
     womanly feeling, vi. viii. 51.
    won, wonne, sb. abode, dwelling-place, re-
     treat, 11. vii. 20, xii. 11, 111. iii. 7, viii. 37,
```

1v. viii. 22, v. ix. 8, vi. iii. 37, xi. 35, Clout wreake, sb. revenge, punishment, 1, viii, 43, WOD, vb.1: did won = was wont, used, 111. ix. 21. wonned, pret, was wont, S. C. Feb. 110. Wonst, is wont, Muiop, 11. wondred, wonderful, 11. xii. 44, 1v. xi. 49. won(e), wonne, vb. to dwell, live, abide, 1. vi. 39, 11. i. 51, iii. 18, vii. 49, xii. 69, 111. i. 3, il. 14, iii. 26, v. 27, IV. vi. 5, xi. 37, VI. ii. 25, S. C. Feb. 184, Clout 307. wonne, vb.3; pret. 1. vi. 39 (intr.); pa. part., Hubberd 751 (tr.): conquered. wonning, dwelling-place, vi. iv. 13. wont, ppl. adj. wonted, accustomed, v. iii, I. Cf. won, vb. wont, pret. was, were accustomed, IV. vii. 6, 40; used to be, S. C. Feb. 108. wontes, wonts, is accustomed, 11. ii. 42, Amor. Son. 39. Cf. won, vb. wontlesse, unaccustomed, Beautie 2. wood, mad, furious, 1. iv. 34, v. 20, 11. iv. 11. 1v. ix. 29, S. C. March 55, Aug. 75, Hubberd 1352 woodnesse, madness, 111. xi. 27. wooe, to obtain by solicitation, IV. X. 57. woon, to dwell, Gnat 18, Clout 774. Cf. won, 20.2 word, motto, IV. iv. 39. wore, pret. passed, IV. ix. 19. Cf. weare. world: worlds pride = earthly magnificence, R. R. 422. worship, glory, honour, 1. i. 3. 111. ii. 8. worth, sb.: in w., in good w. = in good part, pp. 411, 412, 413. worth, vb. : wo worth = woe betide, 11. vi. 32, Epitaph (2) 13. worthy, deserved, 1. i. 26, S. C. June 100. wot, wote, to know, I. i. 13, 32, ii. 18, ix. 43, 11. iii. 16, 111. ix. 7, v11. vi. 33, S. C. Feb. 85, March 102. wound, pa. part. weaved, 11. xii. 82. woundlesse, unwounded, S. C. Oct. 41. wowed, pret. wooed, vi. xi. 4, Past. Elegie 67. wox(e), pret.waxed, became, grew, 11. viii. 9, 47, 2. 17, xil. 22, 111. iil. 17, iv. 52, iv. viii. 31, v. iz. 46, S. C. Jan. 5, Hubberd 1103. woxen, pa. part. become, grown, 1. iv. 34, x. 29, 111. v. 29, x. 60, vii. vi. 6,p. 411, Past. Aeglogue 113. wrack(e), wreck, destruction, 1. vi. 1, 1v. ix. 25, Teares 400; violence, S. C. Feb. 10. wrackfull, avenging, destructive, vi. ix. 27. wrast, to wrest, v. xii. 21. wrastling, wrestling, Three Lett. p. 616. wrate, pret. wrote, III. xii. 31. wrawling, pres. part. mewing (as a cat), vi. xii. 27.

xii, 16; destruction, ruin, 111, vii, 48; wreck. Teares 124, R. R. 33. wreak, -e, vb. to avenge, 1. iv. Arg., 11. iii. 14. 1v. i. 39, 52, vi. 38 (intr.), Gnat 579. wreakfull, avenging, v. i. 8. wreath, to turn, twist, 11. i. 56, Bellay 74. wreathed, ppl. adi. writhing, Gnat 253; twisted, Clout 245. wrecke, to avenge, v. iv. 24. wreckfull, destructive, vi. viii. 36. wrest, vb. to wrench, twist, turn. 11. xii. 81, v. xii. 34, Beautie 158. wrest 1, wrist, 1, v, 6, 11, ii, 21, viii, 22, 111, vii, 2, IV. XI. 5 I. wrest 1, wrench, 11, xi. 42. wretch, wretched, vi. ix. 30. wrethed, ppl. adj. twisted, coiled, 1. i. 18. wrigle, wriggling, S. C. Feb. 7. wring, to distress, t. xi, 30; to turn, twist, vt. vii. 9; to turn or divert the course of, to affect, Worlds Vanitie 126. writ, written document, 1. xii. 25. writs, plur. writings, 111. ii. 1, 1v. ii. 33, vi. xii. 41, Teares 582. wrizled, ppl, adj. wrinkled, shrivelled, 1. viii. 47. wroke, 11. v. 21, 1v. vii. 26; wroken, 1v. ii. 21, vi. ii. 7, S. C. March 108, Muiop. 99; pa. part. avenged. wrought, pa. part. app. released, freed, v. v. wrye, awry, S. C. Feb. 28. wull, will, Epith. 252. wynd, to extricate, vi. iv. 26.

y-, archaic prefix used to form the past participle, e.g. ybrought, brought, 1. v. 5. ymounted, mounted, 1. ii. 20. fate, gate, S. C. May 224. ybent, turned, III. iv. 47. 'y bet, beaten, 1v. iv. 0. yblent, blinded, dazzled, t. ii. 5, tt. vii. I, S. C. Apr. 155. ybore, born, III. iv. 21. brent, burnt out, III. ix. 53. yelad, yeled, clothed, 1. i. 1, iv. 38. ycleepe, to call, Clout 65. ycleped, called, named, 111. v. 8. Yoond, learnt, S. C. May 262. ydlease, idleness, vi. ii. 31. 'ydrad, dreaded, 1. i. 2, v. xi. 3, xii. 37. yearne, to cam, vi. i. 40, vii. 15. yede, yeed, yead, to go, 1. xi. 5, 11. iv. 2, S. C. July 109, Sept. 145. yeeld, to admit, grant, 11, ix. 38.

youen, given, S. C. April 114. yfere, together, in company with, t. ix. 1, 11. i. 35, ix. 2, 111, vii. 48, ix. 13, x. 16, vii. vi. 31, S. C. Apr. 68, July 143. yglaunst, pret. glanced, glided, 11. vi. 31. Tgoo, pa. part. gone, S. C. May 67, Nov. 76. ygoe, adv. 2go, 1. ii. 18, 111. v. 9, x11. 41, S. C. Nov. 81; late y. = lately, 11, 1, 2, yield, to admit, grant, II. Prol. 4. yirk, to lash, vi. vii. 44. yliko, alike, i. iv. 27; y. a. alike, S. C. May -6. ylke, that (same), S. C. Aug. 142. ymolt, melted, iii. vi. 25. ympt, see impe, th. Ynd, India, 1. v. 4, vi. 2. ynne, inn, abode, S. C. Feb. 89, Nov. 16. yod, yode, pret. went, 1. x. 53, 11, vii. 2, 111. i. 1, 4, vni. 19, 45, iv. vii. 34, vii. vii. 35, S. C. May 22, 178, July 182; yodest, Past. Aeglogue 88. See yede. yold, pret. 111. xi. 25; pa, part. 111. xi. 17 (2), vii vii. 30 : yielded. yond, adj. mad, furious, 11. viii. 40, 111. vii. 26. yond, adv. yonder, iv. i. 33, 35, vi. xii. 18. yongmen, young men, Gnat 431. yongth, yongthly, v.il. for yougth, yougthly. yonker, younker, young man, youngster, Iv. i. 11, S. C. p. 426, Three Lett. p. 621. yonkerly, youthful, Three Lett. pp. 629, 641. yougthes folke, young people, S. C. May 9.

yougthly, youthful, Muiop. 431. youngling, young of man or beast, 1. x. 57, v. viii. 46, S. C. May 100, 182, 211, Aug. 17. youngth, youth, S. C. Feb. 52, 87, Nov. 20, Muiop. 34. youthly, adj. youthful, 1. v. 7, 11. iii. 38, 111. ix. 48, 1v. ii. 45, vi. vii. 5. youthly, adv. youthfully, i. xi. 34. ypent, pent up, S. C. Jan. 4, July 216. ypight, placed, set, 1. ix. 33yplast, placed, 1. iv. 28. yplight, pledged, 11. ni. 1. yrapt, rapt, Clout 623. Syrent, torn to pieces, iv. vii. 15, S. C. Sept. 148. yriu'd, torn, IV. vi. 15. yrke, to trouble, iii. viii. 48, vi. x. 29. yron braced, iron sinewed, II. v. 7. fysame, together, vii. vii. 32. yse, ice, Amor. Son. 30. yshend, to disgrace, spoil, S. C. Aug. 139. ct. shend. yshrilled, pret. sounded shrill, Clout 63. yssew, to get out, p. 408. ythundered, fa. part. struck by a thunderbolt, Teares 8. ytont, disturbed, S. C. June 12. ywis, -sso, certainly, it. i. 19, iii. vii. 53, S. C. May 109, Two Lett. p. 640. ywrake, ywroke, ywroken, avenged, tevenged, 1v. vi. 23, vii. 14, xi. 5, vi. vi. 18, Clout 911.

## INDEX OF FIRST LINES

## OF MINOR POEMS.

PAGE

A Gentle Shepheard borne in Arcady						547
A mighty Lyon, Lord of all the wood .						522
A Shepeheards boye (no better doc him call).						421
After at sea a tall ship did appeare .					525,	606
After long stormes and tempests sad assay .						573
After so long a race as I have run						575
Ah Colin, whether on the lowly plaine .						562
Ah for pittie, wil rancke Winters rage						424
Ah whither, Loue, wilt thou now carrie mee?.						590
Ah why hath nature to so hard a hart .						567
All that is perfect, which th'heauen beautenes						512
All that which Aegypt whilome did deuise						513
An hideous Dragon, dreadfull to behold						521
And ye, braue Lord, whose goodly personage.						411
Arion, when through tempests cruel wracke .						568
As Diane hunted on a day			•			577
As men in Summer fearles passe the foord .						511
As that braue sonne of Aeson, which by charmes						510
As then, no winde at all there blew						556
At last so faire a Ladie did I spie		·			526,	
At length, even at the time, when Morpheus .		·	·	Ċ	525,	
Ay me, to whom shall I my case complaine .	•	•	•	•		549
is me, to whom such a my take companie	•	•	•	•	•	J47
Be nought dismayd that her vnmoued mind .			_			563
Being my selfe captyued here in care		•	•	•		574
Being one day at my window all alone .	•	•	•		5 <b>25,</b>	
Bellay, first garland of free Poesie	•	•	•	•		
Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile	•	•	•	•		514 521
peside the trutted office of movidie true	•	•	•	•	•	J**
Calme was the day, and through the trembling ay	ere .					601
Colin my deare, when shall it please thee sing.		·	·			460
Colin, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd	•	•	•	•		554
Collyn I see by thy new taken taske	•	•	•	•		334 409
Come forth ye Nymphes come forth, forsake your	watrulu	nu tes	•	•		
Comming to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found)	watty in	UNICO	•	•		550
Cuddie, for shame hold up thy heavye head .	•	•	•	•		573
Caddle, for shame now up thy manye man.	•	•	•	•	•	456
Darke is the day, when Phabus face is shrowded						562
Dayly when I do seeke and sew for peace .	•	•	•	•		
Diggon Dauie, I bidde her god day	•	•	•	•		564
Doe I not see that fayrest ymages	•	•	•	•		452
Due I not see that layrest ymages	•	•	•	•	•	57 I
Faire proud now tell me why should faire be prou	v1					-6-
Fayre bosome fraught with vertues richest tresure		•	•	•		567
	с.	•	•	•	•	575
Fayre cruell, why are ye so fierce and cruell?	•	•	•	•	•	579
Fayre eyes, the myrrour of my mazed hart .	•	•	•	•	•	563

					F	AGE
Fayre is my loue, when her fayre golden heares						576
Fayre Thamis streame, that from Ludds stately town	e					400
Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and vnkind .						571
Fresh spring the herald of loues mighty king.						574
						317
Gentle Mistresse Anne, I am plaine by nature						629
Goe little booke: thy selfe present						416
Grave Muses march in triumph and with prayses						409
Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise .						509
Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny						568
•				-	-	300
Happy ye leaves when as those lilly hands .						562
Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire					·	524
Hard by a rivers side, a wailing Nimphe .						607
Haruey, the happy aboue happiest men						603
He that hath seene a great Oke drie and dead.						513
High on a hill a goodly Cedar grewe					·	522
Hope ye my verses that posteritie					•	514
How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure .					•	566
, , , , ,			•	•	•	300
I but once loued before, and shee for sooth was a	Susann	ie.			_	629
I loy to see how in your drawen work .				•	•	574
I saw a fresh spring rise out of a rocke				•	•	608
I saw a Phœnix in the wood alone			Ċ	•	e 26	, 606
I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes .			•	•	320	524
I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle .			•	•	•	524
I saw a Wolfe vnder a rockie caue		•	•	•	•	523
I saw a Woman sitting on a beast			•	•	•	503 603
I saw an vgly beast come from the sea .	-	•	•	•	•	608
I saw in secret to my Dame		-	•	•	•	577
I saw new Earth, new Heauen, sayde Saint Iohn			•	•	•	608
I saw raisde vp on pillers of Iuorie			•	•	•	60;
I saw raysde vp on yuorie pillers tall			·	•	•	523
I saw the Bird that can the Sun endure .		•	•	•	•	
I saw the birde that dares beholde the Sunne .			•	•	•	524 607
I sing of deadly dolorous debate			•	•	•	516
If so be goods encrease, then dayly encreaseth a	roods f	riends	•	•	•	626
If the blinde furie, which warres breedeth oft.			•	•	•	512
In Summers day, when Phabus fairly shone .			·	_	•	521
In that proud port, which her so goodly graceth			•	•	•	564
In vain I thinke right honourable Lord .		•	•	•	•	412
In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace .		-	•	•	•	565
In youth before I waxed old		•	•	•	•	
Innocent paper, whom too cruell hand .			•	•	•	577
loy of my life, full oft for louing you		•	•	•	•	570
Is it her nature or is it her will		•	•	•	•	576
Is not thilke same a goteheard prowde .	•	•	•	•	•	509
Is not thilke the mery moneth of May?		:	•	•	•	444
It chaunced me on day beside the shore .			•	•	•	430
It fell vpon a holly eue			•	•	•	471
It was the month, in which the righteous Maide			•	•	•	449
It was the time, when rest soft sliding downe.	-	-	•	•	•	495
It was the time when rest the gift of Gods .		:	:	•	•	523 606
	•	•	•		•	000
Lackyng my loue I go from place to place .						575

INDEX OF FIRS	ST LII	NES.			733
					PAGE
Leaue lady in your glasse of christall clene .					. 579
Let not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre .					. 570
Like as the seeded field greene grasse first showes					. 515
Like as whilome the children of the earth .	•				. 510
Like as ye see the wrathfull Sea from farre .		•			. 511
Lo Colin, here the place, whose pleasaunt syte				•	441
Loe I have made a Calender for every yeare .					. 467
Long having deeply gron'd these visions sad .	•		•		. 525
Long languishing in double malady				•	• 579
Long-while I sought to what I might compare				•	. 564
Looking far foorth into the Ocean wide .				•	. 52
Loue is a thing more fell, than full of Gaule, t	than of	Honny	•	•	. 627
Loue, lift me vp vpon thy golden wings .		•	•	•	· 593
Loue, that long since hast to thy mighty powre	•			•	. 580
Lyke as a huntsman after weary chace .	•				57
Lyke as a ship that through the Ocean wyde.	•		•	•	. 568
Lyke as the Culuer on the bared bough .	•	•	•	•	• 57
Magnificke Lord, whose vertues excellent .		_			. 41
Mark when she smiles with amiable cheare .				·	. 560
Mars shaming to have given so great head .					. 510
Maruell not, what I meane to send these Verse	es at Ei	ensong			. 62
Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it .					• 57
Me thought I saw the grave, where Laura lay .					. 40
More then most faire, full of the living fire .					. 56
Most glorious Lord of lyfe, that on this day .					. 57.
Most happy letters fram'd by skilfull trade .					. 57
Most Noble Lord the pillar of my life					41:
Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee .					. 52
My hungry eyes through greedy couctize .					568, 57
My loue is lyke to yse, and I to fyre		•			. 56
My Song thus now in thy Conclusions.	•	•	•	•	. 60
Ne may I, without blot of endlesse blame .					. 41
New yeare forth looking out of lanus gate .		·	•		56
Noble Alexander, when he came to the tombe	of Achs	lles			. 62
No otherwise than raynie cloud, first fed .			·		. 51
Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring .			·		. 51
Not the like Virgin againe, in Asia, or Afric,	or Euro	ρc.		•	. 62
Oakaa Ilalaha William Basa Laasa					
O that I had the Thracian Poets harpe	•	•	•	•	. 51
O warie wisedome of the man, that would .		•	•	•	. 51
Of Honny, and of Gaule, in Loue there is stor	re .	•	•	•	. 62
Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay	•	•	•	•	. 57
Of twhen my spirit doth spred herbolder winges	•	•	•	•	• 57
On high hills top I saw a stately frame	•	•	•	•	. 52 . 60
On hill, aframe an hundred cubites hie One day as I vnwarily did gaze	•	•	•	•	. 56
	•	•	•	•	
One day I sought with her hart-thrilling eies. One day I wrote her name vpon the strand.	•	•	•	•	. 56
One day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe	•	•	•	•	· 57
Our merry dayes, by theeuish bit are pluckt,	and ton	ne awau	•	•	. 64
on many dayes, by theedish bit are pluckt,			•	•	
Penelope for her Vlisses sake			•		. 56
Piers, I have piped erst so long with payne	•	•		•	. 62

						P	AGE
Rapt with the rage of mine owne rauisht thou	ıght	•	•				596
Receiue most noble Lord a simple taste	•	•	•	•			411
Receiue most Noble Lord in gentle gree					•		410
Redoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind		•	•	•	•		411
Rehearse to me ye sacred Sisters nine.			•	•			480
Remembraunce of that most Heroicke spirit			•	•			413
Renowmed Lord, that for your worthinesse		•					412
Retourne agayne my forces late dismayd		•					564
Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts desire			•	•		•	503
Carta at a tita ta tita ta							
See how the stubborne damzell doth depraue		٠,	•	•	•	•	567
See yee the blindefoulded pretie God, that fee	unerea A	ircner	•	•	•	٠	611
Shall I then silent be or shall I speake?	•	•	•	•	•	•	56x
She, whose high top aboue the starres did sor		•		•	•	•	50.
Shepheards that wont on pipes of oaten reed		•	•	•	•	•	547
Sic malus egregium, sic non inimicus Amic		•	•	•	•	•	637
Silence augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth		•	•	•	•	٠	559
Since Galateo came in, and Tuscanisme gar	n vsurpe		•	•	•	•	625
Since I did leave the presence of my love	•	•		•	•	٠	577
Since I have lackt the comfort of that light	•		•	•	•	•	577
So long as loues great Bird did make his fligh	t	•	•			•	511
So oft as homeward I from her depart	•		•	•			571
So oft as I her beauty doe behold .	•			•			571
Soone after this I saw an Elephant .		٠					522
Soone said, soone writ, soon learnd: soon	e trimly	done u	n prose,	or vers	e	•	643
Such as the Berecynthian Goddesse bright			•				500
Sweet is the Rose, but growes vpon a brere	•						501
Sweet smile, the daughter of the Queene of lo		•					5/4
Sweet warriour when shall I have peace with	you?	•	•	•		•	573
Tell me good Hobbinoll, what garres thee gre	nta 2						
Tell me Perigot, what shalbe the game	ete.	•	•	•	•	•	4,31
Tell me when shall these wearie woes have en	i	•	•	•	•	•	445
Tempora furtiuo labuntur dulcia cursu	ч	•	•	•	•	•	512
Tempora furtiuo morsu laniantur amoena	•	•	•	•	•	•	61
	•	•	•	•	•	•	64
That Mantuane Poetes incompared spirit That same is now nought but a champian wic	· 1_	•	•	•	•	•	41.
That which I gate did I joy and that which	ie Lungalila	1	•	•	•	•	511
That which I eate, did I ioy, and that which I The antique Babel, Empresse of the East	i greedny	gorgea		•	•	•	611
The Chian Peincter, when he was required	•	•	•	•	•	•	60
	•	•	•	•		•	41,
The doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre love, is The famous warriors of the anticke world	vaine	•	•	•	•	•	57.
The gentle shepheard satte beside a springe	•	•	•	•	•	•	57.
	•	•	•	•	•	•	46.
The glorious image of the makers beautie	•	•	•	•	•	•	57
The glorious pourtraict of that Angels face		•	•	•	•	•	56
The kingly Bird, that beares loues thunder-c	lap	•	•	•	•	•	52
The laurell leafe, which you this day doe wea	re	•	٠.	•	•	•	56
The love which me so cruelly tormenteth	•	•	•	•	•	•	500
The Panther knowing that his greated had	•	•	•	•	•	•	56
The Panther knowing that his spotted hyde		•	•	•	•	•	57
The paynefull smith with force of feruent hea	it Catal	•	•	•	•	•	56
The prayse of meaner wits this worke like pro	out bring	S	•	•		•	400
The rolling wheele that runneth often round	•	•	•	•	•	•	56
The sacred Muses have made alwaies clame	•	•	•	•	•	•	411
The same which Pyrrhus, and the puissaunce							512

						P	AG
The shepheards boy (best knowen by that nar	ne)		•				53
The souerayne beauty which I doo admyre			•				56
The weary yeare his race now having run			•				57
The world that cannot deeme of worthy thing	s						57
Then all astonied with this mighty ghoast							52.
Then all astonned with this nightly ghost							60
Then did a sharped spyre of Diamond bright							52
Then did appeare to me a sharped spire	•						60
Then heavenly branches did I see arise						526,	60
Then I behelde the faire Dodoman tree			,				60
Then might I see vpon a white horse set							60
Then was the faire Dodonun tree far seene							52
't here grewe an aged Tree on the greene							42
These heapes of stones, these old wals which y	e see						511
These pleasant dayes, and Monthes, and year	res, by	stelth do	Dasse	apace			64
They that in course of heavenly spheares are s	kild						57
Thilke same Kidde (as I can well deuise)							437
This holy season fit to fast and pray .							560
Thomalin, why sytten we see							4 28
Those prudent heads, that with theire counsel-	wise						410
Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome her see							500
Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold					-		513
Thrise happie she, that is so well assured					•		574
Through armes and vassals Rome the world su	bdu'd		_		•		51¢
To all those happy blessings which ye haue			•	•	•		573
To be wize, and eke to Loue					•		513 627
To looke vpon a worke of rare deutse .					•		410
To praise thy life, or waile thy worthie death .				•	•		558
To thee that art the sommers Nightingale				•	•		33° 413
To you right noble Lord, whose carefull brest				•	•		410
Toward the sea turning my troubled eve				•	•		521
Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes				•	•		579
,	•			•	•		314
Venemous tongue, tipt with vile adders sting .							576
Vertue sendeth a man to Renowne, Fame		Abound	annce	•	•		524 624
Vnhappie Verse, the witnesse of my vnhappie				•	•		636
Vinquiet thought, whom at the first I bred	*****			•	•		·
Vnrighteous Lord of loue, what law is this				•	•		562
Vp then Melpomene thou mournefulst Muse of	nyne	•		•	•		564 461
Vpon a day as loue lay sweetly slumbring	,	•		•	•		•
Vpon a hill I saw a kindled flame				•	•		577
Vpon an hill a bright flame did I see				•	•		608
pott and many mante dreat see .				•	•	•	524
Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne							
Was it the worke of nature or of Art .				•	•		575
We now have playde (Augustus) wantonly				•	•		566
Weake is th'assurance that weake flesh repose	1 1.	• •		•	•		487
What euer man he be, whose heavie minde	(11			•	•		572
What guyle is this, that those her golden tress				•	•		528
What might I call this Tree? A Laurell? Ot		· ·		•	•		568
What time the Romaine Empire bore the rains		aultii .		•	•		625
When I behold that beauties wonderment				•	•		522
When I behold this tickle trustles state				•	•		566
		•		•	•		526
When my abodes prefixed time is spent When stout Ashilles board of University				•	•		579
When stout Achilles heard of Helens rape .				•			410

When that beaus has some of the Total						PAGE
When that braue honour of the Latine name .		•	•			512
When these sad sights were ouerpast and gnoe						-
When those renoumed noble Peres of Greece .	_			-	. •	522
Wherefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt .	•	•	•	•	•	560
Whilet your Possess and Catalog Lills C.	~ ;	:	. •	•		6c;
Whilst your Bearnes are fatte, whilst Cofers	stuffd	with abou	ndaunce			620
whilst your Kitches abound, your friends w	ill play	the Place	boes	_		020
who euer gaue more honourable prize	• •		-	•	•	
Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure .	•	•	•	•	•	412
Who lists to see, what ever nature, arte	•	•	•	•		513
Who so miles to see, what ever hature, are	•	•	•			500
Who so wil seeke by right deserts t'attaine						601
within this wood, out of a rocke did rise			_		F 26	,600
Wrong'd, yet not daring to expresse my paine		•	•	•		
o v,	•	•	•	•	•	485
Ye cruell starres, and eke ye Gods vnkinde .						
Vo de de la tarres, and eke ye Gods vnkinde	•	•				510
Ye dayntye Nymphs, that in this blessed Brook	е.					4,32
Ye heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie		_		•	•	
Ye learned sisters which have oftentimes .	-	•	•	•	•	500
Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoasts	•	•	•	•	•	5≿0
Ve secred raines and we are delicated	•	•	•	•	•	511
Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights						510
Ye tradefull Merchants, that with weary toyle				_	•	
Ye wastefull woodes beare witnesse of my woe			•	•	•	565
	•	•	•	•	•	4.5C

SET IN GREAT BRITAIN AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD AND PRINTED BY J. AND J. GRAY, EDINBURGH

STATE CONTRACT LIBRARY. 56A, B. T. Mu., Calcutta 50